
2 The Plays and
Sonnets of
William Shakespeare
Volume One

Edited by William George Clarke and William Aldis Wright

WILLIAM BENTON *Publisher*

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA INC

CHICAGO LONDON TORONTO GENOVA SYDNEY TOKYO



THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

The Great Books

*is published with the editorial advice of the faculties
of The University of Chicago*

○

1953

BY ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANICA, INC.

COPYRIGHT UNDER INTERNATIONAL COPYRIGHT UNION

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED UNDER U.S. AMERICAN AND UNIVERSAL COPYRIGHT
CONVENTIONS BY ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANICA, INC.

BIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE, 1564-1616

SHAKESPEARE was baptized in the parish church of Stratford-on-Avon in Warwickshire on April 26 1564. His father John Shakespeare was a burgess of the recently constituted corporation of Stratford and filled certain municipal offices including that of high bailiff. By occupation he was a glover although he appears to have dealt from time to time in various kinds of agricultural produce and may have combined a certain amount of farming with the practice of his trade. His wife and the mother of the dramatist Mary Arden came of a distinguished Catholic family and had brought her husband a farm of about fifty or sixty acres known as the Asbies. There were at least eight children, William being the third child and eldest son.

Stratford possessed a free grammar school and Shakespeare presumably obtained his education there. When he was about thirteen his father's fortunes took a turn for the worse and it seems likely that Shakespeare was apprenticed to some local trade. According to one story he killed calves for his father, and would do it in a high style and make a speech. In November 1582 he married Anne Hathaway a woman eight years his senior and their first child Susanna, was baptized on May 26 1583 followed by twins Hamnet and Judith, in 1585. Before the birth of the twins Shakespeare's career in Stratford seems to have come to a tempestuous close. One tradition coming from two different sources asserts that he got into trouble through poaching on the estates of a considerable Warwickshire magnate, Sir Thomas Lucy, and found it necessary to leave town. But from this event until he emerges as an actor and rising playwright in 1592 his history is unknown. His entry into the theatrical world according to the stage tradition was in a menial capacity perhaps even as a holder of horses at the doors.

By 1592 when he was twenty-eight Shakespeare had begun to emerge as a playwright and had evoked the jealousy of at least one of the group of sedate poets who claimed a monopoly of the scene. Robert Greene in an invective against the play actors remarks that one of his friends came from *Henry VIII* and speaks of an upstart crow who is not content with the only Shakespeare in the company. What the theatre was doing for 1592 is not known. One of the first plays Shakespeare wrote for the

hanced his literary reputation by the publication of *Venus and Adonis* and *Lucrece*. It is also probable that the first of his sonnets then began to circulate privately although they were not published as a whole until 1609.

After the reopening of the theatres in 1594, Shakespeare is listed among the 'servauntes of the Lord Chamberlayne,' the company for which he wrote and acted throughout his life. His acting seems to have been limited to such roles as the Ghost in *Hamlet* and Adam in *As You Like It* but as a dramatist he was the mainstay of the company for some fifteen years. As early as 1598 the *Palladis Tamia*, a kind of literary handbook published by Francis Meres extols Shakespeare as 'the most excellent in both kinds (i.e. comedy and tragedy) for the state and one of the most passionate among us to bewaile and bemoane the perplexities of love; it also provides a list of twelve plays already written which serves as a starting point for modern attempts at a chronological arrangement of his work. Shakespeare seems to have written more rapidly during these early years than later but on an average he wrote for his company about two plays a year. His fellow-dramatists writing for the Chamberlain's men included Ben Jonson, Dekker, Beaumont and Fletcher and Tourneur. He seems to have been particularly intimate with Jonson; there are stories of their jests and drinking bout and Jonson later declared 'I lov'd the man and do honour his memory (on this side idolatry) as much as any.'

In addition to being both actor and playwright Shakespeare was also a shareholder in the company and his prosperity was joined with that of his theatre. They were frequently asked to play at court, and *The Merry Wives of Windsor* is said to owe its origin to Elizabeth's desire to see Falstaff in love. James I on his accession took the company under his patronage and during the remainder of Shakespeare's connection with the scene they were the king's men. The records of performances at court show that they were by far the most favoured of the companies. Shakespeare was particularly popular for his comedies but it is probable that he also wrote tragedies and histories. James I appears to have been on excellent terms with Shakespeare and one of his first letters to the poet and

own will be paid a similar compliment to three of his theatrical associates

Shakespeare's increasing prosperity is reflected in the restored fortunes of his family at Stratford. The prosecutions of John Shakespeare for debt ceased and in 1596 his application for a coat of arms made at the time he was bailiff was at length granted. In 1597 the playwright purchased New Place, one of the largest houses in Stratford. Here he established his wife and two children, his son having died the year before. Until 1610 he apparently lived and worked in London, making only occasional visits to Stratford but in that year he seems to have returned to his birthplace. He lived as a retired gentleman on friendly terms with the richest of his neighbours and showed interest in local affairs which might affect his income or his comfort, such as a bill for the improvement of the highway in 1611 or a proposed enclosure of the open fields in

1614. His retirement did not imply a complete break with London life: his plays were still being produced and he was providing new ones although the last few may have been written at Stratford. As late as 1613 he is known to have bought a house in London at the Blackfriars perhaps for purposes of investment rather than residence. It is likely that his connection with the king's company ended when the Globe theatre was burnt down during a performance of *Henry VIII* in 1613.

In March of 1616 Shakespeare made his will leaving to his daughter Susanna the bulk of his estate and to his wife the second best bed with the furniture although she also legally enjoyed until her death a third of his lands and houses. A month after his will was signed on April 23, 1616 Shakespeare died and as a tithe owner was buried in the chancel of the parish church.

Contents, Volume One



Biographical Note, v

The First Part of KING HENRY THE SIXTH, 1

The Second Part of KING HENRY THE SIXTH, 33

The Third Part of KING HENRY THE SIXTH, 69

The Tragedy of KING RICHARD THE THIRD, 105

THE COMEDY OF ERRORS, 149

TITUS ANDRONICUS, 170

THE TAMING OF THE SHREW, 199

THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA, 229

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST, 254

ROMEO AND JULIET, 285

The Tragedy of KING RICHARD THE SECOND, 320

A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM, 352

The Life and Death of KING JOHN, 376

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE, 406

The First Part of KING HENRY THE FOURTH, 434

The Second Part of KING HENRY THE FOURTH, 467

MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING, 503

The Life of KING HENRY THE FIFTH, 532

JULIUS CAESAR, 568

AS YOU LIKE IT, 597

The First Part of **KING HENRY THE SIXTH**

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY THE SIXTH	ENGLISH CAPTAIN
DUKE OF GLOUCESTER <i>uncle to the King and Lord Protector</i>	CAPTAIN of Talbot's Army
DUKE OF BEDFORD, <i>uncle to the King and Regent of France</i>	ENGLISH SOLDIER
HENRY BEAUFORT BISHOP OF WINCHESTER <i>great-uncle to the King afterwards CARDINAL</i>	CHARLES Dauphin and afterwards King of France
THOMAS BEAUFORT, DUKE OF EXETER <i>great uncle to the King</i>	REIGNIER Duke of Anjou and Main and titular King of Naples and Jerusalem
JOHN BEAUFORT LARD OF SOMERSET afterwards DUKE	DUKE OF BURGUNDY
RICHARD PLANTAGENET <i>son of Richard late Earl of Cambridge, afterwards DUKE OF YORK</i>	DUKE OF ALENÇON
LORD OF WARWICK	BASTARD OF ORLEANS
LORD OF SALISBURY	GOVERNOR OF PARIS
WILLIAM DE LA POLE EARL OF SUFFOLK	MASTER-GUNNER of Orleans
LORD TALBOT, afterwards Lord of Shrewsbury	BOY of Master-Gunner
JOHN TALBOT his son	GENERAL of the French Forces in Bourdeaux
EDMUND MORTIMER <i>Earl of March</i>	FRENCH SERGLANT
SIR JOHN FASTOLF	FRENCH SENTINEL
SIR WILLIAM LUCE	PORTER
SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE	SHEPHERD father to Joan La Pucelle
SIR THOMAS GARCRAVE	FRENCH SOLDIER
MAYOR OF LONDON	WATCHMAN of Rouen
OFFICER of the Mayor of London	FRENCH SCOUT
WOODVILLE, Lieutenant of the Tower	PAPAL LEGATE
VERNON, of the White Horse or York faction	MARGARET daughter to Reignier afterwards married to King Henry
BASSET of the Red Rose or Lancaster faction	COUNTESS of ALBERT
LAWYER	JOAN LA PUCELLE, commonly called Joan of Arc
GAOLER	NON-SPEAKING French Herald Ambassador's Soldiers Gaolers Serjeants Attendants and Friends appearing to Joan La Pucelle
SIX MESSENGERS	
TWO GUARDS	
THREE SERVANTS to Gloucester	
SERVANT to Talbot	SCENE Partly in England and partly in France



ACT I

SCENE I Westminster Alley

Dead March. Enter the Herald of King Henry the Fifth a letter by the DUKE OF BEDFORD Regent of France the DUKE OF GLOUCESTER Protector, the DUKE OF EXETER the EARL OF WARWICK the BISHOP OF WINCHESTER the DUKE OF SOMERSET Herald &c

Red Henry be the heaven with black yield day tonight!

*Comers importing dire confusions and treasons
 Landish your cruelties with the sky
 And with their own pethel distorting stars
 The heaven made off with a side of
 And Henry the Fifth too far from velvet
 To be so much a king of peace with*

*Glo! England ne'er had a king until his time
 Virtue he had deserving to command
 His brandish'd sword did blind men with his
 beams
 His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings
 His sparkling eyes replete with wrathful fire
 Moved as he land'd me back his comers
 Thrum'd his shrewd heels on a proud face
 Wha should his heels exceed all good
 Here enter Philip's all comers
 For when a man's a what a man were in
 that*

*Here enter the Duke of Burgundy
 Upon a white horse wear a
 And he had a side of stars
 Whether a side of stars
 Whether a side of stars
 Whether a side of stars*

Wha' shall we curse the planets of mishap
That plotted thus our glory so to overthrow?
Or shall we think the subtle witted French
Conjurors and sorcerers that afraid of him
By magic verses have concerned his end?

If in life was a king blessed of the kin of
Kins

Unto the French the dreadful judgment-day
A dreadful will not be as was his sight 30
The battles of the Lord of hosts he fought
The church's prayers made him so prosperous
Goes The church! where is it? Had not church
men pray'd

His thread of life had not so soon decay'd
None do you like but an effeminate prince
Whom, like a school boy, you may overawe
In Gloucester, whatever we like, thou art
protector

And look'st to command the prince and realm
Thy wife's proud she holdeth thee in awe
More than God or religious churchmen may 40
Call Name not religion for thou lovest the
flesh

And neither thou hast the year to church thou
go'st

Except it be to pray against thy foes

Bed Cease cease these jars and rest your minds
in peace

Let's to the altar heralds wait on us
In teal of gold we'll offer up our arms
A new arms avail not now that Henry, a dead
intensity await for wretched years
When at their mothers' moist eyes babes shall
suck

Our life be made a nourishment of salt tears 50
And none but women left to wait the dead
Henry the Fifth, thy ghost I invoke
Protect this realm keep it from civil broils
Crown it with adverse planets in the heavens
A far more glorious star thy soul will make
Than Julius Caesar or bright—

Enter a messenger

Mess My honourable lords health to you all!
Said I was Henry I to you out of France
Of late said here and somewhere
Come Champaigne Rheims Orleans 60
Paris Calais Picquiers a call to rest
Said Who say you there, man, before dead
Henry is come?

Says Why not the loss of those great towns
Will make him be with a dead and rise from earth
Call Paris lost? at Rouen yielded up?
If Henry were dead I do not fear
These news would do us but once more yield
the throne

For How were they lost? what treachery was
used?

Mess No treachery but want of men and
money

Amongst the soldiers this is muttered 70
That here you maintain several factions
And whilst a field should be dispatched and
fought

You are disputing of your generals
One would have lingering wars with little cost
Another would fly swift but wanteth wings
A third thinks without expense at all
By gulfed fair words peace may be obtained
Awake awake English nobility!
Let not sloth dim your honours new begot
Cropp'd are the flower-de-luces in your arms 80
Of Lorraine's coat one half is cut away

For Were our tears wanting to this funeral
These tidings would call forth their flowing tides
Bed Me they concern Regent I am of France
Give me my steeled coat I'll fight for France
Away with these disgraceful waiting robes!
Wounds will I lend the French instead of eyes
To weep their intermissive miseries

Enter to them a second messenger

and Mess Lords view these letters full of bad
mischance

France is revolted from the English quite 90
Except some petty towns of no import
The Dauphin Charles is crowned king in Rheims
The Bastard of Orleans with him is joined
Reignier Duke of Anjou doth take his part
The Duke of Alençon flieth to his side

For The Dauphin crowned king, all fly to him!
O whether shall we fly from this reproach?
Glau We will not fly but to our enemies
there

Bedford if thou be slack I'll fi he it our
Bed Gloucester why doubt'st thou of my for-
wardness? 100

An army have I muster'd in my thousand
Wherewith already France is overrun

Enter a third messenger

3rd Mess My gracious lords to add to your
lamentations

Wherewith you now bedew him Henry a
hearse

I must inform you of a dismal fight
Between the stout Lord Talbot and the French
How? What? wherein Talbot overcame? is it so?
3rd Mess O no wherein Lord Talbot was over-
thrown

The circumstance I'll tell you more at large
The tenth of August last this dreadful lord 110

Retiring from the siege of Orleans,
Having full scarce six thousand in his troop,
By three and twenty thousand of the French
Was round encompassed and set upon
No leisure had he to enrank his men,
He wanted pikes to set before his archers,
Instead whereof sharp stakes pluck'd out of
hedges

They pitched in the ground confusedly
To keep the horsemen off from breaking in
More than three hours the fight continued 120
Where valiant Talbot above human thought
Enacted wonders with his sword and lance
Hundreds he sent to hell and none durst stand
him,

Here there, and every where, enraged he flew
The French exclaim'd the devil was in arms,
All the whole army stood amazed on him
His soldiers spying his undaunted spirit,
"A Talbot! a Talbot!" cried out again
And rush'd into the bowels of the battle
Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up 130
If Sir John Fastolfe had not play'd the coward
He, being in the vaward placed behind
With purpose to relieve and follow them
Cowardly fled not having struck one stroke
Hence grew the general wreck and massacre,
Enclosed were they with their enemies
A base Walloon to win the Dauphin's grace
Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back
Whom all France with their chief assembled
strength

Durst not presume to look once in the face 140

Bed. Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself,
I or living idly here in pomp and ease
Whilst such a worthy leader wanting aid
Unto his dastard foemen is betray'd

3rd Mess. O no he lives but is took prisoner
And Lord Scales with him and Lord Hungerford
Most of the rest slaughter'd or took likewise

Bed. His ransom there is none but I shall pay
I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne
His crown shall be the ransom of my friend 150
Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours
Farewell my masters to my task will I
Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make
To keep our great Saint George's feast withal
Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take
Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe
quake

3rd Mess. So you had need for Orleans is
besieged

The English army is grown weak and faint
The Earl of Salisbury craves their pardon
And hardly keeps a smothered peace 160
Sweeten'd, so few, with such a cruel war

Exe. Remember, lords your oaths to Henry
sworn,

Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,
Or bring him in obedience to your yoke
Bed. I do remember it, and here take my leave,
To go about my preparation [Exit
Glou. I'll to the Tower with all the haste I can,
To view the artillery and munition
And then I will proclaim young Henry king [Exit

Exe. To Eltham will I, where the young king is
Being ordain'd his special governor, 171
And for his safety there I'll best devise [Exit
Win. Each hath his place and function to
attend

I am left out, for me nothing remains
But long I will not be Jack out of office
The king from Eltham I intend to steal
And sit at chiefest stern of public weal [Exit

SCENE II France Before Orleans

*Sound a flourish. Enter CHARLES ALFANÇON and
REIGNIER, marching with drum and Soldiers*

Char. Mars his true moving, even as in the
heavens

So in the earth to this day is not known
Late did he shine upon the English side,
Now we are victors upon us he smiles
What towns of any moment but we have?
At pleasure here we lie near Orleans
Otherwhiles the famish'd English like pale
ghosts

Faintly besiege us one hour in a month

Rei. They want their porridge and their fa-
bulous bevers

Either they must be dieted like mules 10
And have their provender tied to their mouths
Or perished they will look like drowned mice

King. Let's raise the siege why live we idly here?
Talbot is taken whom we wont to fear
Remaineth none but mad brain'd Salisbury
And he may well in fretting spend his gall
Not men nor money hath he to make war

Char. Sound sound alarm! we will rush on
them

Now for the honour of the solemn French
Hill I forgive my death that kills him 20
When he sees me go I'll choke for ever [Enter
*Here a great shout is heard. Enter Salisbury
and Reignier*

Char. Whomever saw this white man here!
Devil or god I'll challenge him he's dead!
Part he's left me I'll revenge
King. I'll make no more of him
He's a villain who wears an owl's face

What! shall we curse the planets of mishap
That plotted thus our glory, & overthrow?
Or shall we think the subtle witted French
Conjurers and sorcerers, that afraid of him
By magic verses have contrived his end?

It is He was a king blessed of the kin of
Kings

Unto the French the dreadful judgement day
So dreadful, all not be as was his sight 30
The battle of the Lord of hosts he fought
The church's prayers made him so prosperous
Glou. The church where is it? Had not church
men pray'd

His thread of life had not so soon decay'd
None do you like but an effeminate prince
Whom like a school boy you may overawe
It is Gloucester where'er we like thou art
protector
And lookest to command the prince and realm
Thy wife is proud, she holdeth thee in awe
More than God or religious churchmen may 40
Gl. Name not religion for thou wast the
flesh

And never throughout the year to church thou
go'st

Except it be to pray against thy foes
Bed. Cease cease these jars and rest your minds
in peace

Let's to the altar, heralds wait on us
In teal's gold we'll offer up our arms
Send arm a ail now that Henry's dead
I sterily await my wretched years
When at their mothers' most eyes babes shall
suck

Our milk be made a nourish of salt tears 50
And none but women left to wail the dead
Herry the Fifth, thy ghost I invoke
I prosper this realm, keep it from all broils
Combat with adverse planets in the heavens
A far more glorious star thy soul will make
Than Julius Cæsar or his throne—

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess. My honourable lords, health to you all!
Salt water brings I to you out of France
Officers of state and comfort
Come Champagne, Rhim's Orleans 60
Paris, Calvots, Picquiers, are a league lost
Bed. What say'st thou, man, be'st thou dead
Henry's come?

Speak, or I'll strike a stone reat town
Will make my bed, I'll lead and I'll come from death
Canst thou say what's become of Henry?
If Henry were really dead, I fear
Thy news we'd hear him once more yield
the play

Exe. How were they lost? what treachery was
used?

Mess. No treachery, but want of men and
money

Amongst the soldiers this is muttered 70
That here you maintain several factions
And whilst a field should be dispatch'd and
sought

You are disputing of your generals
One would have lingering wars with little cost
Another would fly swift but wanteth wins
A third thinks without expense at all
By gullful fair words peace may be obtain'd
Awake, awake, English nobility!
Let not sloth dim your honours new begot
Cropp'd are the flower-de-luces in your arms 80
Of England's coat one half is cut away

Exe. Were our tears wanting to this funeral
These tidings would call forth their flowing tides
Bed. Methinks concern Regent I am of France
Grieve me my steeld coat I'll fight for France
Away with these disgraceful wailing robes!
Wounds will I lend the French instead of eyes
To weep their intermissive miseries

Enter to them a SECOND MESSENGER

2nd Mess. Lords, view these letters full of bad
mischance
France is revolted from the English quite 90
Except some petty towns of no import
The Dauphin Charles is crowned king in Rheims
The Bastard of Orleans with him is join'd
Reignier Duke of Anjou doth take his part
The Duke of Alençon lieth to his side
Exe. The Dauphin crowned king! all fly to him!
O whether shall we fly from this reproach?
Glou. We will not fly, but to our enemies
throats

Bedford, if thou be slack, I'll fight it out
Bed. Gloucester, why doubt'st thou of my for-
wardness? 100

An army have I muster'd in my thoughts
Wherewith already France is overrun

Enter a THIRD MESSENGER

3rd Mess. My gracious lords, to add to your
laments
Wherewith you now bedew King Henry's
hearse
I must inform you of a dismal fight
Between the stout Lord Talbot and the French
It is What! wherein Talbot overcame? *It is* 80
3rd Mess. O no, where a Lord Talbot was over-
thrown

The circumstance I'll tell you more at large
The tenth of August last this dreadful lord 110

Retiring from the siege of Orleans,
 Having full scarce six thousand in his troop,
 By three and twenty thousand of the French
 Was round encompassed and set upon
 No leisure had he to enrank his men,
 He wanted pikes to set before his archers,
 Instead whereof sharp stakes pluck'd out of
 hedges

They pitched in the ground confusedly
 To keep the horsemen off from breaking in
 More than three hours the fight continued 120
 Where valiant Talbot above human thought
 Enacted wonders with his sword and lance
 Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst stand
 him,

Here, there, and everywhere, enraged he flew
 The French exclaim'd, the devil was in arms,
 All the whole army stood amazed on him
 His soldiers spying his undaunted spirit
 "A Talbot! a Talbot!" cried out amain
 And rush'd into the bowels of the battle
 Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up 130
 If Sir John Fastolfe had not play'd the coward
 He being in the vaward, placed behind
 With purpose to relieve and follow them
 Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke
 Hence grew the general wreck and massacre
 I enclosed were they with their enemies
 A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,
 Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back
 Whom all France with their chief assembled
 strength

Durst not presume to look once in the face 140

Bed! Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself,
 For living idly here in pomp and ease
 Whilst such a worthy leader wanting aid
 Unto his dastard foemen is betray'd

3rd Mess. O no he lives but is took prisoner
 And Lord Seales with him and Lord Hungerford
 Most of the rest slaughter'd or took likewise

Bed! His ransom there is none but I shall pay
 I'll hate the Dauphin headlong, from his throne
 His crown shall be the ransom of my friend 150
 Four of their lords I'll charge for one of ours

I farewell my masters to my task will I
 Bonfires in France forthwith I'll make
 To keep our great Saint George's feast withal
 Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take
 Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe
 quake

3rd Mess. So you have need for Orleans is
 besieged

He hath his army grown weak and faint
 The English soldiers crave their pay
 And he daily keeps his men from pay 160
 So he they, so few, watch what he will do

Exe. Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry
 sworn

Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,
 Or bring him in obedience to your yoke
 Bed! I do remember it and here take my leave,
 To go about my preparation [Exit
 Glou. I'll to the Tower with all the haste I can,
 To view the artillery and munition
 And then I will proclaim young Henry king [Exit

Exe. To Eltham will I, where the young king is
 Being ordain'd his special governor 171

And for his safety there I'll best devise [Exit
 W'm. Each hath his place and function to
 attend

I am left out for me nothing remains
 But long I will not be Jack out of office
 The king from Eltham I intend to steal
 And sit at chiefest stern of public weal [Exeunt

SCENE II France Before Orleans

Sound a flourish Enter CHARLES ALFONSON and
 REIGNIER, marching with drum and soldiers

Char. Mars his true moving even as in the
 heavens

So in the earth to this day is not known
 Late did he shine upon the English side,
 Now we are victors upon us he smiles
 What towns of any moment but we have?
 At pleasure here we lie near Orleans
 Otherwhiles the famish'd English like pale
 ghosts

Faintly besiege us one hour in a month

Hen. They want their porridge and their fat
 bull beeces

Lither they must be dieted like mules 10
 And have their provender tied to their mouths
 Or piteous they will look like drowned mice

Reig. Let raise the siege why live we idly here?
 Talbot is taken whom we wont to fear
 Remaineth none but mad brain'd Salisbury,
 And he may well in fretting spend his gall
 Nor men nor money hath he to make war

Cl. r. Sound, sound alarm! we will rush on
 them

Now for the honour of the forlorn French!

Hen. I forgive my death that kills me 20

When he sees me go back one foot more [Exeunt

Here a rumour that we have taken by the French

21st Mess. Enter CHARLES ALFONSON

22nd Mess. Enter

Char. Whoever saw the late what now have I?

Dye now I'd as lief I would never have been

Born, if I had not seen this morning

180 I see the English made me a show of

But what now we are of this life

The other lords like lions wanting food,
Do rush upon us as their hungry prey
Alen Froissart a countryman of ours records
England all O'wers and Rowlands I red 30
During the time Edward the Third did reign
More truly now may this be verified
For none but Samsons and Coliases
It scoldeth forth to skirmish. One to ten?
Lean raw boned rascals who would else suppose
They had such courage and audacity?

Char Let's leave this town for they are here
brain'd slaves
And hunger will enforce them to be more eager
Of old I know them rather with their teeth 39
The walls they'll tear down than forsake the
siege

Re I think by some odd gimmors or device
Their arms are set like clocks still to strike on
Else ne'er could they hold out so as they do
By my consent we'll even let them alone
Alen Be it so

Enter the BASTARD OF ORLEANS

But Where's the Prince Dauphin? I have news
for him

Char Bastard of Orleans thine welcome to us
But Methinks your looks are sad your cheer
is pallid

Hath the late overthrow wrought in this offence?
Be not dismay'd for succour is at hand 50
A holy maid hath therewith me I bring

Whithersoever sent to her from heaven
O'lain'd is to raise this tedious siege
And drive the English forth the bounds of France
The mirror of deep prophecies she hath
I need not the needs-bells of old Rome
What's past and what's to come she can descry
Speak shall I call her in? Believe my words,
For they are certain and unfaillible

Char Can call her in [*He calls*]? But first
to try her skill. 60

Enter *Enter* stand thou as Dauphin in my place
Q' mother proutly let this too she stern
I'll see a shew we sound what skill she
hath

*Enter the BASTARD OF ORLEANS and JOAN
LA PUCELLE*

Re I'll trust him, I'll trust him, do these
wordless feats?

But *Enter* *Enter* with what think'st to beguil
me?

What's the Devil's name? Come come from
behind

How then we'll show he never seen before
Be not amazed, these words are in his name

In private will I talk with thee apart 69
Stand back you lords and give us leave awhile
King She takes upon her bravely at first dash
But Dauphin I am by birth a shepherd's
daughter

My wit untrun'd in any kind of art
Heaven and our Lady gracious hath it pleased
To shine on my contemptible estate
Lo whilst I waied on my tender lambs
And to sun's parching heat display'd my cheeks
God's mother deigned to appear to me
And in a vision full of majesty

Will'd me to leave my base vocation 80
And free my country from calamity
Her aid she promised and assured success
In complete glory she reveal'd herself
And whereas I was black and swart before
With those clear rays which she infused on me
That beauty am I bless'd with which you see
Ask me what question thou canst possible
And I will answer unprenudicated
My courage try by combat if thou darest
And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex 90
Resolute on this thou shalt be fortunate
If thou receive me for thy warlike mate

Char Thou hast astonish'd me with thy high
terms

Only this proof I'll of thy valour make
In single combat thou shalt buckle with me,
And if thou vanquishest thy words are true
Otherwise I renounce all confidence

But I am prepared here is my keen-edged
sword

Deck'd with five flower-de-luces on each side
The which at Touraine in Saint Katharine's
churchyard 100

Out of a great deal of old iron I chose forth

Char Then come o' God's name I fear no
woman

But And while I live I'll ne'er fly from a man
Here they fight and JOAN LA PUCELLE overcomes
Char Stay stay thy hands thou art an Amazon
And fight with the sword of Deborah
But Christ's mother helps me else I were too
weak

Char Whoe'er helps thee tis thou that must
help me

Impatiently I burn with thy desire
My heart and hands thou hast at once subdued
Excellent Pucelle if thy name be so 110
Let me thy servant and my sovereign be
Tis the French Dauphin sueth to thee thus
But I must not yield to any rites of love
For my profession's sacred from above
When I have chased all thy foes from hence
Then will I think upon a recompense

Char Meantime look gracious on thy prostrate thrall

Reig My lord, methinks, is very long in talk

Alen Doubtless he shrives this woman to her smock,

Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech

Reig Shall we disturb him, since he keeps no mean? 121

Alen He may mean more than we poor men do know

These women are shrewd tempters with their tongues

Reig My lord, where are you? what devise you on?

Shall we give over Orleans, or no?

Puc Why, no I say, distrustful recreants!

Fight till the last gasp, I will be your guard

Char What she says, I'll confirm: we'll fight it out

Puc Assign'd am I to be the English scourge
This night the siege assuredly I'll raise 130

Expect Saint Martin's summer halcyon days,

Since I have entered into these wars

Glory is like a circle in the water

Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself

Till by broad spreading it disperse to nought

With Henry's death the English circle ends,

Dispersed are the glories it included

Now am I like that proud insulting ship

Which Caesar and his fortune bare at once

Char Was Mahomet inspired with a dove? 141

Thou with an eagle art inspired then

Helen, the mother of great Constantine

Nor yet Saint Philip's daughters were like thee

Bright star of Venus fall'n down on the earth

How may I reverently worship thee enough?

Alen Leave off delays: and let us raise the siege

Reig Woman, do what thou canst to save our honours

Drive them from Orleans and be immortalized

Char Presently we'll try: come let us away

aloud 150

No prophet will I trust if she proves false 151

SCENE III. London. Before the Tower

Enter the Duke of Gloucester, with his Serving men and Officers

Glouc I am come to survey the Tower this day

Since Henry's death: Here there is constance

Where he that watch'd this day was true

fore

Open the gates: and let us see the walls

Enter a Servant

Glouc [To the Servant] Whose voice? a knock

at the gate?

1st Serv It is the noble Duke of Gloucester
2nd Warder [Within] Whoe'er he be, you may not be let in

1st Serv Villains, answer you so the lord protector?

1st Warder [Within] The Lord protect him! so we answer him

We do no otherwise than we are will'd 10

Glouc Who will'd you? or whose will stands but mine?

There's none protector of the realm but I

Break up the gates: I'll be your warrantize

Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms?

Gloucester's men rush at the Tower Gates, and Woodville, the Lieutenant, speaks within

Wood What noise is this? what traitors have we here?

Glouc Lieutenant: is it you whose voice I hear?

Open the gates: here's Gloucester that would enter

Wood Have patience, noble duke, I may not open

The Cardinal of Winchester forbids

From him I have express commandment 20

That thou nor none of thine shall be let in

Glouc I am hearted Woodville, prizest him 'fore me?

Arrogant Winchester that haughty prelate,
Whom Henry, our late sovereign, ne'er could brook?

Thou art no friend to God or to the king

Open the gates: or I'll shut thee out shortly

Servant Open the gates unto the lord protector

Or we'll burst them open if that you come not quickly

Enter the Lord Protector at the Tower Gates, with his men

Prot How now, ambitious Humphrey! what means this?

Glouc Peel'd priest, dost thou even bid me to be shut out? 30

Prot I do the most usurping proditor

And not protector of this poor realm

Glouc Say that thou art a crop-kill

Thou'lt reap most fruitful corn: death's

Thou'lt give where'er thou tread'st

I'll reap thee rather than fear that thou

Wilt oppress with thy lawless

Prot Say that thou art a lawless

Thou'lt reap thee rather than fear that thou

Wilt oppress with thy lawless

Glouc I'll reap thee rather than fear that thou

Wilt oppress with thy lawless

Thy scarlet robes as a child's bearing-cloth
 I'll use to carry thee out of this place
Win Do what thou darest I heard thee to thy
 face
Glou What! am I dared and bearded to my
 face?

Draw men for all this privileged place
 Blue coats to tawny coats Prie t beware your
 beard

I mean to tug it an I to cuff you soundly
 Under my feet I stamp thy cardinal's hat
 In spite of Pope or dominions of church 50
 Here by the cheeks I'll draw thee up and down

Win Gloucester thou wilt answer this before
 the Pope

Glou Winchester goose I cry a rope! a rope!
 Now beat them hence why do you let them
 at 50

Thou'll chase hence thou wolf in sheep's array
 Out tawny coats out scarlet hypocrisy!

*Here Gloucester's men beat out the Cardinal's men
 and enter in the hurly burly the Mayor of London
 and his officers*

May Fie lords! that you being supreme
 magistrates

Thus contumeliously should break the peace!

Glou Peace mayor! thou know'st little of my
 wrongs

Here's Beaufort that regards nor God nor
 king

Hath here distrain'd the Tower to his use 61

Win Here's Gloucester a foe to citizens
 One that still motions war and never peace
 Overcharging your free purses with large fines
 That seeks to overthrow religion

Because he is protector of the realm

And would have armour here out of the Tower

To crown himself king and suppress the prince

Glou I will not answer thee with words but
 blows *[Here they skirmish again]*

Alfy Nought rests for me in this tumultuous
 strife 70

But to make open proclamation

Come officer as loud as e'er thou canst

Cry

Off All manner of men assembled here in arms
 this day against God's peace and the King's we
 charge and command you in his Highness's name
 to repair to your several dwelling places and not
 to wear handle or use any sword weapon or
 dagger henceforward upon pain of death

Glou Cardinal I'll be no breaker of the law

But we shall meet and break our minds at large

Win Gloucester we will meet to thy cost be
 sure

Thy heart blood I will have for this day's work
 May I'll call for clubs if you will not away
 This cardinal's more hateful than the devil
Glou May or farewell thou dost but what thou
 mayst

Win Abominable Gloucester guard thy head
 For I intend to have it ere long

*[Exeunt severally GLOUCESTER and WIN
 CHESTER with their servants]*

May See the coast clear'd and then we will
 depart

Good God these nobles should such stomachs
 bear! 80

I myself fight not once in forty year *[Exeunt]*

SCENE IV Before Orleans

Enter on the walls a MASTER GUNNER and his boy

Gun Sirrah thou know'st how Orleans is
 besieged

And how the English have the suburbs won

Poy Father I know and oft have shot at them

How'er unfortunate I miss'd my aim

Gun But now thou shalt not Be thou ruled by
 me

Chief master gunner am I of this town

Something I must do to procure me grace

The prince's espials have informed me

How the English in the suburbs close intrench'd

Went through a secret grate of iron bars 10

In yonder tower to overpeer the city

And thence discover how with most advantage

They may vex us with shot or with assault

To intercept this inconvenience

A piece of ordnance against me I have placed

And even these three days I have I watch'd

If I could see them

Now do thou watch for I can stay no longer

If thou spy'st any run and bring me word

And thou shalt find me at the governor's *[Exit]*

Boy Father I warrant you take you no care

If I'll never trouble you if I may spy them *[Exit]*

*Enter on the ditches the LORDS SALISBURY and TAL
 BOT SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE SIR THOMAS GAR
 RAY and others*

Sir Talbot my life my joy again return'd!

How wert thou handled being prisoner?

Or by what means got'st thou to be released?

Discourse I prithee on this turret's top

Tal The Duke of Bedford had a prisoner

Call'd the brave Lord Ponton de Santrailles

For him was I exchanged and ransomed

But with a baser man of arms by far 30

Once in contempt they would have bastard me

Which I disdaining scorn'd and craved death

Rather than I would be so vile-esteem'd

In fine redeem'd I was as I desired
 But O! the treacherous Fastolf wounds my heart,
 Whom with my bare fists I would execute
 If I now had him brought into my power
Sal Yet tell st thou not how thou wert en-
 certain d

Tal With scoffs and scorns and contumelious
 taunts
 In open market place produced they me, 40
 To be a public spectacle to all
 Here said they, is the terror of the French
 The scarecrow that affrights our children so
 Then broke I from the officers that led me,
 And with my nails digg'd stones out of the ground,
 To hurl at the beholders of my shame
 My grisly countenance made others fly
 None durst come near for fear of sudden death
 In iron walls they deem'd me not secure
 So great fear of my name 'mongst them was
 spread

That they supposed I could rend bars of steel 51
 And spurn in pieces posts of adamant
 Wherefore a guard of chosen shot I had
 That walk'd about me every minute while,
 And if I did but stir out of my bed
 Ready they were to shoot me to the heart

Enter the boy with a linstock

Sal I grieve to hear what torments you en-
 dured
 But we will be revenged sufficiently
 Now it is supper time in Orleans
 Here through this grate I count each one 60
 And view the Frenchmen how they fortify
 Let us look in the sight will much delight thee
Sir Thomas Gargrave and *Sir William Glans-
 dale*
 Let me have your express opinions
 Where is best place to make our battery next
Gar I think at the north gate for there stand
 do do
Glansdale And I here at the bulwark of the bridge
Sal For aught I see this city must be furnish'd
 Or with high skirmishes encircled

Henry the Fifth he first train'd to the wars
 Whilst any trumpet did sound or drum struck up
 His sword did ne'er leave striking in the field 81
 Yet livest thou Salisbury? though thy speech
 doth fail

One eye thou hast to look to heaven for grace
 The sun with one eye vieweth all the world
 Heaven be thou gracious to none alive,
 If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands!
 Bear hence his body, I will help to burn it
Sir Thomas Gargrave hast thou any life?
 Speak unto Talbot may look up to him
 Salisbury cheer thy spirit with this comfort 90
 Thou shalt not die whiles—
 He beckons with his hand and smiles on me
 As who should say When I am dead and gone,
 Remember to avenge me on the French
 Plantagenet I will and like thee Nero
 Play on the lute beholding the towns burn
 Wretched shall France be only in my name
 Here an alarm, and it thunders and lightens
 What stir is this? what tumult is in the heavens?
 Whence cometh this alarm and the noise?

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess My lord my lord the French have
 gather'd head 100
 The Dauphin with one Joan la Pucelle join'd
 A holy prophetess new risen up
 Is come with a great power to raise the siege
 Here Salisbury lifteth himself up and groans
Tal Hear hear how dying Salisbury doth
 groan!
 It irks his heart he cannot be revenged
 Frenchmen I'll be a Salisbury to you
 Pucelle or puzzel dolphin or dogfish's
 Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's heels,
 And make a quagmire of your muddled brains
 Convey me Salisbury in a horse 110
 And then we'll try what these day and I trench
 mendare [*Alarum*]

See the Alarm

Here is a' alarm again and Talbot perceiveth it
 and see with him them on the way

And straightway give thy soul to him thou
servest

Puc Come come tis only I that must disgrace
thee [*Here they fight*]

Tal Heavens can you suffer hell so to pre-
vail? 9

My breast I'll burst with straining of my courage
And from my shoulders crack my arms asunder
But I will chastise this high minded strumpet

They fight again

Puc Talbot farewell thy hour is not yet come
I must go victual Orleans forthwith

A short alarm then enter the town with soldiers
O'ertake me, if thou canst I scorn thy strength
Go go cheer up thy hungry starved men
Help Salisbury to make his testament

This day is ours as many more shall be [*Exit*]

Tal My thoughts are whirled like a potter's
wheel

I know not where I am nor what I do 20

A scotch by fear not force like Hannibal
Drives back our troops and conquers as she lists
So bees with smoke and doves with noisome stench
Are from their hives and houses driven away
They call'd us for our fierceness English dogs
Now like to whelps we crying run away

A short alarm

Hark countrymen! either renew the fight
Or tear the lions out of England's coat
Renounce your soil give sheep in lions' stead
Sheep run not half so treacherous from the wolf
Or horse or oven from the leopard 31
As you fly from your oft subdued slaves

Alarm Here another skirmish

It will not be retire into your trenches
You all consented unto Salisbury's death
For none would strike a stroke in his revenge
Pucelle is enter'd into Orleans
In spite of us or aught that we could do
O would I were to die with Salisbury!
The shame hereof will make me hide my head
[*Exit TALBOT Alarm retreat flourish*]

SCENE VI The same

Enter on the walls LA PUCELLE CHARLES REIGNIER ALENÇON and Soldiers

Puc Advance our waving colours on the walls
Rescued is Orleans from the English

Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word

Chor Divinest creature Astraea's daughter

How shall I honour thee for this success?

Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens
That one day bloom'd and fruitful were the next
France triumph in thy glorious propheticess!
Recover'd is the town of Orleans

More blessed hap did ne'er befall our state 10

Reg Why ring not out the bells aloud through
out the town?

Dauphin command the citizens make bonfires

And feast and banquet in the open streets

To celebrate the joy that God hath given us

Alen All France will be replete with mirth and
joy

When they shall hear how we have play'd the
men

Char 'Tis Joan not we by whom the day is
won

For which I will divide my crown with her

And all the priests and friars in my realm

Shall in procession sing her endless praise 0

A stately pyramid to her I'll rear

Than Rhodope or Memphis ever was

In memory of her when she is dead

Her ashes in an urn more precious

Than the rich jewel'd coffer of Darius

Transported shall be at high festivals

Before the kings and queens of France

No longer on Saint Denis will we cry

But Joan la Pucelle shall be France's saint

Come in, and let us banquet royally 30

After this golden day of victory

[*Flourish Exit*]

ACT II

SCENE I Before Orleans

Enter a SERGEANT of a band with two SENTINELS

Serg Sirs take your places and be vigilant

If any noise or soldier you perceive

Near to the walls by some apparent sign

Let us have knowledge at the court of guard

1st Sent Sergeant you shall [*Exit Sergeant*]

Thus are poor servitors

When others sleep upon their quiet beds

Constrain'd to watch in darkness rain and cold

*Enter TALBOT BEDFORD BURGUNDY and forces
with scaling ladders their drums beating a dead
march*

Tal Lord Regent and redoubted Burgundy

By whose approach the regions of Artois

Wallon and Picardy are friends to us 10

Thus happy night the Frenchmen are secure

Having all day caroused and banqueted

Embrace we then this opportunity

As fitting best to quittance their deceit

Contrived by art and baleful sorcery

Bed Coward of France! how much he wrongs
his fame

Despairing of his own arm's fortitude

To join with witches and the help of hell!

Bur Traitors have never other company
But what's that Pucelle whom they term so
pure?

20

Tal A maid, they say

Bed A maid! and be so martial!

Bur Pray God she prove not masculine ere
'long

If underneath the standard of the French
She carry armour as she hath begun

Tal Well, let them practise and converse with
spirits

God is our fortress, in whose conquering name
Let us resolve to scale their flinty bulwarks

Bed Ascend brave Talbot, we will follow
thee

Tal Not all together better far I guess,
That we do make our entrance several ways, 30
That, if it chance the one of us do fail,

The other yet may rise against their force

Bed Agreed I'll to yond corner

Bur And I to this

Tal And here will Talbot mount or make his
grave

Now, Salisbury, for thee and for the right
Of English Henry shall this night appear
How much in duty I am bound to both

1st Sent Arm! arm! the enemy doth make
assault!

Cry "St George," "A Talbot!" *The English*
scale the walls

The French leap over the walls in their shirts Enter,
several ways, the BASTARD OF ORLEANS, ALEN-
çon, and REIGNIER, half ready, and half unready

Alen How now, my lords! what all unready
so?

Bast Unready! ay and glad we've scaped so
well 40

Reig 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and leave
our beds,

Hearing alarums at our chamber-doors

Alen Of all exploits since first I followed arms,
Ne'er heard I of a warlike enterprise

More venturesome or desperate than this

Bast I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell

Reig If not of hell the heavens sure, favour
him

Alen Here cometh Charles I marvel how he
sped

Bast Tut, holy Joan was his defensive guard

Enter CHARLES and LA PUCELLE

Char Is this thy cunning thou deceitful dame? 50

Didst thou at first so flatter us withal,
Make us partakers of a little gain

That now our loss might be ten times so much?
Puc Wherefore is Charles impatient with his
friend?

At all times will you have my power alike?
Sleeping or waking must I still prevail,
Or will you blame and lay the fault on me?
Improvident soldiers! had your watch been good,
This sudden mischief never could have fall'n

Char Duke of Alençon, this was your
default, 60

That being captain of the watch to-night,
Did look no better to that weighty charge

Alen Had all your quarters been as safely kept
As that whereof I had the government,
We had not been thus shamefully surprised

Bast Mine was secure

Reig And so was mine my lord
Char And for my self most part of all this
night,

Within her quarter and mine own precinct

I was employ'd in passing to and fro,

About relieving of the sentinels 70

Then how or which way should they first
break in?

Puc Question my lords no further of the case,
How or which way 'tis sure they found some
place

But weakly guarded, where the breach was made

And now there rests no other shift but this,

To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispersed,
And lay new platforms to endamage them

Alarum Enter an ENGLISH SOLDIER crying 'A
Talbot! a Talbot! They fly, leaving their
clothes behind

Sold I'll be so bold to take what they have left

The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword,

For I have loaden me with many spoils, 80
Using no other weapon but his name [Exit

SCENE II Orleans Within the town

Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD BURGUNDY a CAPTAIN,
and others

Bed The day begins to break and night is fled,
Whose pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth
Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit

[Retreat sounded]

Tal Bring forth the body of old Salisbury,
And here advance it in the market place
The middle centre of this cursed town
Now have I paid my vow unto his soul
For every drop of blood was drawn from him
There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-night
And that hereafter ages may behold 10
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him
Within their chiefest temple I'll erect

A tomb wherein his corpse shall be interr'd
 Upon the which that every one may read
 Shall be engrav'd the sack of Orleans
 The treacherous manner of his mournful death
 And what a terror he had been to France
 But lords in all our bloody massacre
 I muse we met not with the Dauphin's grace
 His new-come champion virtuous Joan of Arc,
 Nor any of his false confederates 21
Bed 'Tis thought Lord Talbot when the fight
 began

Roused on the sudden from their drowsy beds
 They did amongst the troops of armed men
 Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field
But Myself as far as I could well discern
 For smoke and dusky vapours of the night
 Am sure I scared the Dauphin and his trull
 When arm in arm they both came swiftly
 running

Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves 30
 That could not live asunder day or night
 After that things are set in order here
 We'll follow them with all the power we have

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess All hail my lords! Which of this
 princely train
 Call ye the warlike Talbot for his acts
 So much applauded through the realm of France?
Tal Here is the Talbot who would speak with
 him?

Mess The virtuous lady Countess of Auvergne
 With modesty admiring thy renown
 By me entreats great lord thou wouldst vouch
 safe 40

To visit her poor castle where she lies
 That she may boast she hath beheld the man
 Whose glory fills the world with loud report

But Is it even so? Nay then I see our wars
 Will turn unto a peaceful comic sport
 When ladies crave to be encounter'd with

You may not my lord despise her gentle suit
Tal No, or trust me then for when a world of
 men

Could not prevail with all their oratory
 Yet hath a woman's kindness over ruled 50
 And therefore tell her I return great thanks
 And in submiss on will attend on her
 Will not your honours bear me company?

Bed No truly it is more than manners will
 And I have heard it said unbidden guests
 Are often welcomest when they are gone

Tal Well then alone, since there's no remedy
 I mean to prove this lady's courtesy
 Come hither captain [*Whispers*] You perceive
 my mind?

Capt I do my lord and mean accordingly
 [*Exeunt* 60

SCENE III Auvergne The Countess's castle

Enter the COUNTESS and her PORTER

Count Porter remember what I gave in charge
 And when you have done so bring the keys to me
Port Madam I will [*Exit*

Count The plot is laid if all things fall out
 right

I shall as famous be by this exploit
 As Scythian Tomyris by Cyrus' death
 Great is the rumour of this dreadful knight
 And his achievements of no less account
 Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears
 To give their censure of these rare reports 70

Enter MESSENGER and TALBOT

Mess Madam
 According as your ladyship desired
 By message craved so is Lord Talbot come
Count Ah! he is welcome! What! is this the
 man?

Mess Madam it is
Count Is this the scourge of France?
 Is this the Talbot so much fear'd abroad
 That with his name the mothers still their babes?

I see report is fabulous and false
 I thought I should have seen some Hercules
 A second Hector for his grim aspect 20

And large proportion of his strong knit limbs
 Alas! this is a child a silly dwarf!
 It cannot be this weak and writhled shrump
 Should strike such terror to his enemies

Tal Madam I have been bold to trouble you
 But since your ladyship is not at leisure,
 I'll sort some other time to visit you

Count What means he now? Go ask him
 whither he goes

Mess Stay my Lord Talbot for my lady
 craves

To know the cause of your abrupt departure 30
Tal Marry for that she's in a wrong belief
 I go to certify her Talbot's here

Re-enter PORTER with keys

Count If thou be he then art thou prisoner
Tal Prisoner! to whom?

Count To me blood thirsty lord
 And for that cause I train'd thee to my house
 Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,
 For in my gallery thy picture hangs
 But now the substance shall enlure the like
 And I will chain these legs and arms of thine
 That hast by tyranny these many years
 Wasted our country slain our citizens 40

And sent our sons and husbands captivate

Tal Ha ha ha!

Count Laughest thou, wretch? thy mirth shall turn to moan

Tal I laugh to see your lady ship so fond

To think that you have aught but Talbot's shadow

Whereon to practise your severity

Count Why, art not thou the man?

Tal I am indeed

Count Then have I substance too

Tal No no I am but shadow of my self 50

You are deceived my substance is not here,

For what you see is but the smallest part

And least proportion of humanity

I tell you madam, were the whole frame here,

It is of such a spacious lofty pitch

Your roof were not sufficient to contain 't

Count This is a riddling merchant for the nonce,

He will be here, and yet he is not here

How can these contrarieties agree?

Tal That will I show you presently 60

Winds his horn Drums strike up a peal of ordnance *Enter Soldiers*

How say you, madam? are you now persuaded

That Talbot is but shadow of himself?

These are his substance, sinews, arms and strength,

With which he yoketh your rebellious necks

Razeth your cities, and subverts your towns

And in a moment makes them desolate

Count Victorious Talbot! pardon my abuse

I find thou art no less than fame hath bruited

And more than may be gather'd by thy shape

Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath, 70

For I am sorry that with reverence

I did not entertain thee as thou art

Tal Be not dismay'd fair lady nor misconstrue

The mind of Talbot, as you did mistake

The outward composition of his body

What you have done hath not offended me,

Nor other satisfaction do I crave

But only with your patience that we may

Taste of your wine and see what cates you have,

For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well 80

Count With all my heart, and thank me

honoured

To feast so great a warrior in my house [*Exeunt*

SCENE IV *London The Temple garden*

Enter the EARLS OF SOMERSET SUFFOLK and WARWICK, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, VERNON, and another LAWYER

Plan Great lords and gentlemen what means this silence?

Dare no man answer in a case of truth?

Suf Within the Temple-hall we were too loud,

The garden here is more convenient

Plan Then say at once if I maintain'd the truth,

Or else was wrangling Somerset in the error?

Suf Faith I have been a truant in the law,

And never yet could frame my will to it,

And therefore frame the law unto my will

Som Judge you my Lord of Warwick then,

between us 10

War Between two hawks which flies the

higher pitch,

Between two dogs, which hath the deeper mouth,

Between two blades, which bears the better

temper,

Between two horses which doth bear him best,

Between two girls, which hath the merriest eye,

I have perhaps some shallow spirit of judgement,

But in these nice sharp quilllets of the law

Good faith I am no wiser than a daw

Plan Tut tut, here is a mannerly forbearance

The truth appears so naked on my side 20

That any purblind eye may find it out

Som And on my side it is so well apparell'd,

So clear so shining and so evident

That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye

Plan Since you are tongue-tied and so loath to speak

In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts

Let him that is a true born gentleman

And stands upon the honour of his birth,

If he suppose that I have pleaded truth

From off this brier pluck a white rose with

me 30

Som Let him that is no coward nor no flatterer,

But dare maintain the party of the truth

Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me

War I love no colours and without all colour

Of base insinuating flattery

I pluck this white rose with Plantagenet

Suf I pluck this red rose with young Somerset

And say withal I think he held the right

Ver Stay, lords and gentlemen, and pluck no more,

Till you conclude that he upon whose side 40

The fewest roses are cropp'd from the tree

Shall yield the other in the right opinion

Som Good Master Vernon, it is well objected

If I have fewest, I subscribe in silence

Plan And I

Ver Then for the truth and plainness of the case,

I pluck this pale and maiden blossom here,

Giving my verdict on the white rose side

Som Prick not your finger as you pluck it off, Lest bleeding you do paint the white rose red 50

And fall on my side so against your will
Ver If I lord for my opinion bleed
 Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt
 And keep me on the side where still I am
Som Well well come on who else?
Law Unless my study and my books be false
 The argument you held was wrong in you
 To SOMERSET

In sign whereof I pluck a white rose too
Plan Now Somerset where is your argument?
Som Here in my scabbard meditating that
 Shall dye your white rose in a bloody red 61
Plan Meantime your cheeks do counterfeit our
 roses

For pale they look with fear as witnessing
 The truth on our side
Som No Plantagenet
 'Tis not for fear but anger that thy cheeks
 Blush for pure shame to counterfeit our roses
 And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error
Plan Hath not thy rose a canker Somerset?
Som Hath not thy rose a thorn Plantagenet?
Plan Ay sharp and piercing to maintain his
 truth 70

Whiles thy consuming canker eats his falsehood
Som Well I'll find friends to wear my bleeding
 roses

That shall maintain what I have said is true
 Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen
Plan Now by this maiden blossom in my hand
 I scorn thee and thy fashion peevish boy
Suf Turn not thy scorn this way Plantagenet
Plan Proud Pole I will and scorn both him
 and thee
Suf I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat
Som Away away good William de la Pole!
 We grace the yeoman by conversing with him 81
War Now by God's will thou wrong'st him
 Somerset

His grandfather was Lionel Duke of Clarence
 Third son to the third Edward King of England
 Spring crestless yeomen from so deep a root?
Plan He bears him on the place's privilege
 Or durst not for his craven heart say thus
Som My hum that made me I'll maintain my
 words

On any plot of ground in Christendom
 Was not thy father Richard Earl of Cambridge
 For treason executed in our late king's days? 91
 And by his treason stand'st not thou attainted
 Corrupted and exempt from ancient gentry?
 His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood
 And till thou be restored thou art a yeoman
Plan My father was attached not attainted
 Condemn'd to die for treason but no traitor
 And that I'll prove on better men than Somerset

Were growing time once ripen'd to my will
 For your partaker Pole and you yourself 100
 I'll note you in my book of memory
 To scourge you for this apprehension
 Look to it well and say you are well warn'd
Som Ah thou shalt find us ready for thee still
 And know us by these colours for thy foes
 For these my friends in spite of thee shall wear
Plan And by my soul this pale and angry rose
 As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate
 Will I for ever and my faction wear
 Until it wither with me to my grave 110
 Or flourish to the height of my degree
Suf Go forward and be choked with thy
 ambition!

And so farewell until I meet thee next [Exit
Som I have with thee Pole farewell ambitious
 Richard [Exit

Plan How I am braved and must perforce
 endure it?
War This blot that they object against your
 house

Shall be wiped out in the next parliament
 Call'd for the truce of Winchester and
 Gloucester

And if thou be not then created York
 I will not live to be accounted Warwick 120
 Meantime in's scorn of my love to thee,
 Against proud Somerset and William Pole
 Will I upon thy party wear this rose
 And here I prophesy this I saw to-day
 Grown to this faction in the Temple-garden
 Shall send between the red rose and the white
 A thousand souls to death and deadly night
Plan Good Master Vernon I am bound to you
 That you on my behalf would pluck a flower
Ver In your behalf still will I wear the same
Law And so will I 131

Plan Thanks gentle sir
 Come let us four to dinner I dare say
 This quarrel will drink blood another day [Exit

SCENE V The Tower of London

Enter MORTIMER brought in a chair and
 GAOLERS

Mor Kind keepers of my weak decaying age
 Let dying Mortimer here rest himself
 Even like a man new haled from the rack
 So fare my limbs with long imprisonment
 And these grey locks the pursuivants of death
 Nestor-like aged in an age of care
 Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer
 These eyes like lamps whose wasting oil is
 spent
 Wax dim as drawing to their exigent

Weak shoulders, overborne with burthening
grief,
And pithless arms like to a wither'd vine 11
That droops his sapless branches to the ground
Yet are these feet, whose strengthless stay is
numb,

Unable to support this lump of clay,
Swift-winged with desire to get a grave,
As witting I no other comfort have
But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come?
1st Gaol Richard Plantagenet, my lord, will
come

We sent unto the Temple, unto his chamber
And answer was return'd that he will come 20

Mor Enough my soul shall then be satisfied
Poor gentleman! his wrong doth equal mine
Since Henry Monmouth first began to reign,
Before whose glory I was great in arms,
This loathsome sequestration have I had
And even since then hath Richard been obscured,
Deprived of honour and inheritance
But now the arbitrator of despairs,
Just death kind umpire of men's miseries
With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me hence
I would his troubles likewise were expired, 31
That so he might recover what was lost

Enter RICHARD PLANTAGENET

1st Gaol My lord your loving nephew now is
come

Mor Richard Plantagenet my friend is he
come?

Plan Ay noble uncle, thus ignobly used
Your nephew late despised Richard comes

Mor Direct mine arms I may embrace his neck,
And in his bosom spend my latter gasp

O, tell me when my lips do touch his cheeks,
That I may kindly give one fainting kiss 40

And now declare, sweet stem from York's
great stock

Why didst thou say of late thou wert despised?

Plan First lean thine aged back against mine
arm

And in that ease, I'll tell thee my disease

This day in argument upon a case,
Some words there grew twixt Somerset and me,

Among which terms he used his lavish tongue
And did upbraid me with my father's death

Which obloquy set bars before my tongue,
Else with the like I had requited him 50

Therefore, good uncle for my father's sake,
In honour of a true Plantagenet

And for alliance sake declare the cause

My father, Earl of Cambridge, lost his head

Mor That cause, fair nephew, that imprison'd
me

And hath detain'd me all my flowering youth
Within a loathsome dungeon there to pine,
Was cursed instrument of his decease
Plan Discover more at large what cause that
was

For I am ignorant and cannot guess 60

Mor I will if that my fading breath permit
And death approach not ere my tale be done
Henry the Fourth grandfather to this king
Deposed his nephew Richard, Edward's son
The first begotten and the lawfull heir
Of Edward king the third of that descent
During whose reign the Percies of the north
Finding his usurpation most unjust
Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne
The reason moved these warlike lords to this 70
Was for that—young King Richard thus
removed,

Leaving no heir begotten of his body—
I was the next by birth and parentage,
For by my mother I deriv'd am
From Lionel Duke of Clarence, the third son
To King Edward the Third whereas he
From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,
Being but fourth of that heroic line
But mark as in this haughty great attempt
They labour'd to plant the rightful heir, 80
I lost my liberty and they their lives
Long after this when Henry, the Fifth
Succeeding his father Bolingbroke, did reign,
Thy father Earl of Cambridge, then derived
From famous Edmund Langley, Duke of York,
Marrying my sister that thy mother was,
Again in pity of my hard distress
Levied an army, weening to redeem
And have install'd me in the diadem
But as the rest, so fell that noble earl 90
And was beheaded Thus the Mortimers
In whom the title rested, were suppress'd

Plan Of which my lord your honour is the last

Mor True and thou seest that I no issue have
And that my fainting words do warrant death
Thou art my heir the rest I wish thee gather
But yet be wary in thy studious care

Plan Thy grave admonishments prevail with
me

But yet methinks my father's execution
Was nothing less than bloody tyranny 100

Mor With silence, nephew be thou politic
String-fixed is the house of Lancaster
And like a mountain, not to be removed
But now thy uncle is removing hence
As princes do their courts when they are cloy'd
With long continuance in a settled place

Plan O uncle, would some part of my young
years

And fall on my side so against your will
 If I my lord for my opinion bleed
 Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt
 And keep me on the side where still I am
Som Well well come on who else?
Law Unless my study and my books be false
 The argument you held was wrong in you

To SOMERSET

In sign whereof I pluck a white rose too
Plan No v Somerset where is your argument?
Som Here in my scabbard meditating that
 Shall dye your white rose in a bloody red 61
Plan Meantime your cheeks do counterfeit our
 roses

For pale they look with fear as witnessing
 The truth on our side

Som No Plantagenet

'Tis not for fear but anger that thy cheeks
 Blush for pure shame to counterfeit our roses
 And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error
Plan Hath not thy rose a canker Somerset?

Som Hath not thy rose a thorn Plantagenet?

Plan Ay sharp and piercin to maintain his
 truth 70

While thy consuming canker eats his falsehood
Som Well I'll find friends to wear my bleeding
 roses

That shall maintain what I have said is true

Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen

Plan Now by this maiden blossom in my hand
 I scorn thee and thy fashion peevish boy

Suf Turn not thy scorn this way Plantagenet

Plan Proud Pole, I will and scorn both him
 and thee

Suf I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat

Som Away away good William de la Pole!

We grace the yeoman by conversing with him 81

War Now by God's will thou wrong'st him
 Somerset

His grandfather was Lionel Duke of Clarence
 Third son to the third Edward King of England
 Springing crestless yeomen from so deep a root?

Plan He bears him on the place's privilege
 Or durst not for his craven heart say thus

Som By him that made me I'll maintain my
 words

On any plot of ground in Christendom
 Was not thy father Richard Earl of Cambridge
 For treason executed in our late king's days? 91
 And by his treason stand'st not thou attainted

Corrupted and exempt from ancient gentry?

His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood
 And, till thou be restored, thou art a yeoman

Plan My father was attainted not attainted
 Condemn'd to die for treason but no traitor
 And that I'll prove on better men than Somerset

Were grown in time once ripen'd to my will
 For your partaker Pole and you yourself 100
 I'll note you in my book of memory
 To scourge you for this apprehension
 Look to it well and say you are well warn'd

Som Ah thou shalt find us ready for thee still
 And know us by these colours for thy foes

For these my friends in spite of thee shall wear

Plan And by my soul this pale and angry rose

As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate

Will I for ever and my faction wear

Until it wither with me to my grave 110

Or flourish to the height of my degree

Suf Go forward and be choked with thy
 ambition!

And so farewell until I meet thee next {Exit

Som Ha e with thee Pole Farewell ambitious

Richard {Exit

Plan How I am braved and must perforce
 endure it!

War This blot that they object against your
 house

Shall be wiped out in the next parliament

Call'd for the truce of Winchester and

Gloucester

And if thou be not then created York
 I will not live to be accounted Warwick 120

Meantime in signal of my love to thee,

Against proud Somerset and William Pole,

Will I upon thy party wear this rose

And here I prophesy this brawl to-day

Grown to this faction in the Temple-garden

Shall send between the red rose and the white

A thousand souls to death and deadly night

Plan Good Master Vernon I am bound to you

That you on my behalf would pluck a flower

If in your behalf still will I wear the same

Law And so will I 131

Plan Thanks gentle sir

Come let us four to dinner I dare say

This quarrel will drink blood another day
 {Exeunt

SCENE V The Tower of London

Enter MORTIMER brought in a chair and
 GAOLERS

Mor Kind keepers of my weak decaying age

Let dying Mortimer here rest himself

Even like a man new haled from the rack

So fare my limbs with long imprisonment

And these grey locks the pursuivants of death

Nestor-like aged in an age of care

Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer

These eyes like lamps whose wasting oil

spend

Wax dim as drawing to their exigent

Believe me, lords, my tender years can tell
Civil dissension is a viperous worm
That gnaws the bowels of the commonwealth
[*A noise within, "Down with the tawny-coats!"*]

What tumult is this?

War An uproar I dare warrant,
Begun through malice of the bishop's men
[*A noise again, "Stones! stones!"*]

Enter MAYOR

May O, my good lords and virtuous Henry,
Pity the city of London, pity us!
The bishop and the Duke of Gloucester's men
Forbidden late to carry any weapon
I have fill'd their pockets full of pebble stones 80
And banding themselves in contrary parts
Do pelt so fast at one another's pate
That many have their giddy brains knock'd out
Our windows are bro' down in every street
And we for fear compell'd to shut our shops

Enter SERVING-MEN, in skirmish, with bloody pates

King We charge you on allegiance to ourself
To hold your slaughtering hands and keep the peace

Pray, uncle Gloucester mitigate this strife
1st Serv Nay, if we be forbidden stones, we'll
fall to it with our teeth 90

2nd Serv Do what ye dare we are as resolute
[*Skirmish again*]

Glou You of my household, leave this peevish
broil

And set this unaccustom'd fight aside

3rd Serv My lord we'll now your grace to be a
man

Just and upright, and, for your royal birth,
Inferior to none but to his majesty
And ere that we will suffer such a prince,
So kind a father of the commonweal
To be disgraced by an inkhorn mate
We and our wives and children all will fight 100
And have our bodies slaughter'd by thy foes

1st Serv Ay, and the very parings of our nails
Shall pitch a field when we are dead

Begin again

Glou Stay, stay, I say!

And if you love me, as you say you do
Let me persuade you to forbear awhile

King O, how this discord doth afflict my soul!

Can you my Lord of Winchester, behold

My sighs and tears and will not once relent?

Who should be pitiful if you be not?

Or who should study to prefer a peace, 110
If holy churchmen talc delight in broils?

War Yield my lord protector, yield, Win-
chester,

Except you mean with obstinate repulse
To slay your sovereign and destroy the realm
You see what mischief and what murder too
Hath been enacted through your enmity,

Then be at peace except ye thirst for blood

Win He shall submit or I will never yield

Glou Compassion on the king commands me
stoop,

Or I would see his heart out, ere the priest 120
Should ever get that privilege of me

War Behold, my Lord of Winchester the duke

Hath banish'd moody discontented fury,

As by his smoothed brow it doth appear

Why look you still so stern and tragical?

Glou Here Winchester, I offer thee my hand

King Fie uncle Beaufort! I have heard you
preach

That malice was a great and grievous sin,

And will not you maintain the thing you teach,

But prove a chief offender in the same? 130

War Sweet king! the bishop hath a kindly gird

For shame, my lord of Winchester relent!

What, shall a child instruct you what to do?

Win Well, Duke of Gloucester, I will yield to
thee.

Love for thy love and hand for hand I give

Glou [*Aside*] Ay, but, I fear me with a hollow
heart —

See here my friends and loving countrymen,

This token serveth for a flag of truce

Between ourselves and all our followers

So help me God as I dissemble not! 140

Win [*Aside*] So help me God as I intend it not!

King O loving uncle, I and Duke of Gloucester,

How joyful am I made by this contract!

Away, my masters' trouble us no more,

But join in friendship as your lords have done

1st Serv Content I'll to the surgeon's

2nd Serv And so will I

3rd Serv And I will see what physic the tavern
affords

[*Exeunt SERVING-MEN, MAYOR &c*]

War Accept this scroll most gracious
sovereign

Which in the right of Richard Plantagenet 150

We do exhibit to your majesty

Glou Well urged my Lord of Warwick for
sweet prince,

As if your grace mark every circumstance

You have great reason to do Richard right

Especially for those occasions

At Eltham Place I told your majesty

King And those occasions uncle were of force,
Therefore my loving lords our pleasure is

That Richard be restored to his blood

War Let Richard be restored to his blood
So shall his father's wrongs be recompensed 161

Win As will the rest so will the Winchester

King If Richard will be true not that alone

But all the whole inheritance I give

That doth belong unto the house of York

From whence you spring by lineal descent

Plan Thy humble servant vows obedience

And humble service till the point of death

King Stoop then and set your knee against
my foot

And in requerdon of that duty done 170

I gird thee with the valiant sword of York

Rise Richard like a true Plantagenet

And rise created princely Duke of York

Plan And to thrive Richard as thy foes may
fall

And as my duty springs so perish they

That grudge one thought against your majesty

All Welcome high prince the mighty Duke
of York

Som [Aside] Perish base prince, ignoble
Duke of York

Glou Now will it best avail your majesty

To cross the seas and to be crown'd in France

The presence of a king engenders love 181

Amongst his subjects and his loyal friends

As it disanimates his enemies

King When Gloucester says the word King
Henry goes

For friendly counsel cuts off many foes

Glou Your ships already are in readiness

[Sennet Flourish *Exeunt all but EXETER*

Exe Ay we may march in England or in France
Not seeing what is likely to ensue

Thy late dissension grown betwixt the peers

Burns under tedious ashes of forged love 190

And will at last break out into a flame

As fester'd members rot but by degree

Till bones and flesh and sinews fall a way

So will this base and envious discord breed

And now I fear that fatal prophecy

Which in the time of Henry named the Fifth

Was in the mouth of every sucking babe

That Henry born at Monmouth should win all

And Henry born at Windsor lose all

Which is so plain that Exeter doth wish 200

His days may finish ere that hapless time [Exit

SCENE II France Before Rouen

*Enter LA PUCELLE disguised with four SOLDIERS
with sacks upon their backs*

Puc These are the city gate the gates of
Rouen

Through which our policy must make a breach

Take heed be wary how you place your words

Talk like the vulgar sort of market men

That come to gather money for their corn

If we have entrance as I hope we shall

And that we find the slothful watch but wail

I'll by a sign give notice to our friends

That Charles the Dauphin may encounter them

1st Sol Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the
city 10

And we be lords and rulers over Rouen

Therefore we'll knock [A knock]

Watch [Within] Who est is?

Puc *Paysons pauvres gens le France*

Poor market folks that come to sell their corn

Watch Enter go in the market bell is rung

Puc Now Rouen I'll shake thy bulwarks to
the ground [Exeunt]

Enter CHARLES the BASTARD OF ORLEANS

ALECON REIGNIER and forces

Char Saint Denis bless this happy stratagem!

And once again we'll sleep secure in Rouen

Bast Here enter'd Pucelle and her practisants

Now she is here how will she specify 1

Where is the best and safest passage in?

Reign By thrusting out a torch from yonder
tower

Which once discern'd shows that her meaning
is

No way to that for weakness which she
enter'd

*Enter LA PUCELLE on the top thrusting out a
torch burning*

Puc Behold this is the happy wedding torch

That joineth Rouen unto her countrymen

But burning fatal to the Talbotites! [Exit]

Bast See noble Charles the beacon of our
friend

The burning torch in yonder turret stands 30

Char Now shine it like a comet of revenge

A prophet to the fall of all our foes!

Reign Defer no time, delays have dangerous
ends

Enter and cry The Dauphin! presently

And then do execution on the watch

[Alarm *Exeunt*

An alarm *Enter TALBOT in an excursion*

Tal France thou shalt rue this treason with
thy tears

If Talbot but survive thy treachery

Pucelle that witch that damned sorceress

Hath wrought this hellish mischief unawares

That hardly we escaped the pride of France 40
[Exit]

An alarm excursions BEDFORD brought in sick in a chair Enter TALBOT and BURGUNDY without within LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, BASTARD, ALLENÇON, and REIGNIER, on the walls

Puc Good morrow, gallants! want ye corn for bread?

I think the Duke of Burgundy will fast
Before he'll buy again at such a rate
'Twas full of darnel, do you like the taste?

Bur Scoff on vile fiend and shameless courtesan!

I trust ere long to choke thee with thine own
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn

Chr Your grace may starve perhaps before that time

Bed O let no words, but deeds, revenge this treason!

Puc What will you do, good grey beard?
break a lance, 50

And run a tilt at death within a chair?

Tal Foul fiend of France and hag of all despite,
Incompass'd with thy lustful paramours!

Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age
And twit with cowardice a man half dead?

Damsel, I'll have a bout with you again
Or else let Talbot perish with this shame

Puc Are ye so hot sir? yet, Pucelle, hold thy peace,

If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow

The English whisper together in council
God speed the parliament! who shall be the speaker? 60

Tal Dare ye come forth and meet us in the field?

Puc Belike your lordship takes us then for fools,
To try if that our own be ours or no

Tal I speak not to that railing Hecate,
But unto thee, Alençon and the rest,
Will ye like soldiers, come and fight it out?

Alen Signior, no

Tal Signior, hang! base muleters of France!
Like peasant foot boys do they keep the walls
And dare not take up arms like gentlemen 70

Puc Away captains! let's get us from the walls,
For Talbot means no goodness by his looks
God be wi' you my lord! we came but to tell you

That we are here [*Exeunt from the walls*]

Tal And there will we be too ere it be long,
Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest fame!

Vow Burgundy, by honour of thy house
Prick'd on by public wrongs sustain'd in France,
Either to get the town again or die
And I, as sure as English Henry lives 80
And as his father here was conqueror,

As sure as in this late betray'd town
Great Cœur-de-lion's heart was buried
So sure I swear to get the town or die
Bur My vows are equal partners with thy vows

Tal But ere we go regard this dying prince,
The valiant Duke of Bedford! Come my lord
We'll bestow you in some better place,
Fitter for sickness and for crazy age

Bed Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me
Here will I sit before the walls of Rouen 90

And will be partner of your weal or woe
Bur Courageous Bedford! let us now persuade you

Bed Not to be gone from hence, for once I read
That stout Pendragon in his litter sick
Came to the field and vanquished his foes
Methinks I should revive the soldiers' hearts,
Because I ever found them as my self

Tal Undaunted spirit in a dying breast!
Then be it so! heavens keep old Bedford safe!
And now no more ado! brave Burgundy, 100
But gather we our forces out of hand
And set upon our boasting enemy

[*Exeunt all but BEDFORD and Attendants*]

An alarm excursions Enter SIR JOHN FASTOLFE and a CAPTAIN

Cap Whither away, Sir John Fastolfe in such haste?

Fast Whither away! to save myself by flight
We are like to have the overthrow again

Cap What! will you fly and leave Lord Talbot?

Fast Ay

All the Talbots in the world to save my life

Cap Cowardly knight! ill fortune follow thee! [*Exit*]

[*Exit*]

Retreat excursions LA PUCELLE ALLENÇON, and CHARLES, enter from the town and fly

Bed Now quiet soul depart when heaven please, 110

For I have seen our enemies overthrow
What is the trust or strength of foolish man?
They that of late were daring with their scoffs
Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves

[*Bedford dies, and is carried in by two in his chair*]

An alarm Re-enter TALBOT BURGUNDY, and the rest

Tal Lost and recover'd in a day again!
This is a double honour Burgundy
Yet heavens have glory for this victory!

Bur Warlike and martial Talbot Burgundy
Enshrines thee in his heart and there erects
Thy noble deeds as valour's monuments 120
Tal Thanks gentle Duke But where is Pucelle
now?

I think her old familiar is asleep
Now where's the Bastard's braves and Charles
his gleeks?
What all amors? Rouen hangs her head for grief
That such a valiant company are fled
Now will we take some order in the town,
Placing therein some expert officers
And then depart to Paris to the kin
For there young Henry with his nobles lie
Bur What wills Lord Talbot pleaseth

Burgundy 130
Tal But yet before we go let's not forget
The noble Duke of Bedford late deceased
But see his exequies fulfill'd in Rouen
A braver soldier never couched lance
A gentler heart did never sway in court
But kin's and mightiest potentates must die
For that's the end of human misery [Exeunt

SCENE III *The plains near Rouen*

*Enter CHARLES the BASTARD OF ORLEANS
ALENÇON LA PUCELLE and forces*

Puc Dismay not princes at this accident
Nor grieve that Rouen is so recovered
Care is no cure but rather corrosive
For things that are not to be remedied
Let frantic Talbot triumph for a while
And like a peacock's sweep along his tail
Will pull his plumes and take away his train
If Dauphin and the rest will be but ruled
Char We have been guided by thee hitherto
And of thy cunning had no diffidence 10
One sudden foil shall never breed distrust

Bast Search out thy wit for secret policies
And we will make thee famous through the world
Alen We'll set thy statue in some holy place
And have thee revered like a blessed saint
Employ thee then sweet virgin for our good

Puc Then thus it must be this doth Joan devise
By fair persuasions mix'd with sugar d'words
We will entice the Duke of Burgundy
To leave the Talbot and to follow us 20

Char Ay marry sweetening if we could do that
France were no place for Henry's warriors
Nor should that nation boast it so with us
But be extirped from our provinces

Alen For ever should they be expelled from
France

And not have title of an earldom here

Puc Your honours shall perceive how I will
work

To bring this matter to the wished end

Drum sounds afar off

Hark! by the sound of drum you may perceive
Their powers are marching unto Paris ward 30
*Here sound an English march Enter and pass over
at a distance TALBOT and his forces*

There goes the Talbot with his colours spread,
And all the troops of English after him

*French march Enter the DUKE OF BURGUNDY
and forces*

Now in the rearward comes the duke and his
Fortune in favour makes him lag behind
Summon a parley we will talk with him

Trumpets sound a parley

Char A parley with the Duke of Burgundy!

Bur Who craves a parley with the Burgundy?

Puc The princely Charles of France thy
countryman

Bur What say'st thou Charles? for I am
marching hence

Char Speak Pucelle and enchant him with thy
words 40

Puc Brave Burgundy undoubted hope of
France!

Stay let thy humble handmaid speak to thee

Bur Speak on but be not over-credulous

Puc Look on thy country look on fertile
France

And see the cities and the towns defaced

By wasting ruin of the cruel foe

As looks the mother on her lowly babe

When death doth close his tender dying eyes

See see the pining malady of France 49

Behold the wounds the most unnatural wounds

Which thou thyself hast given her woful breast

O turn thy edged sword another way

Strike those that hurt and hurt not those that
help

One drop of blood drawn from thy country's
bosom

Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign
gore

Return thee therefore with a flood of tears

And wash away thy country's stained spots

Bur Either she hath bewitch'd me with her
words

Or nature makes me suddenly relent

Puc Besides all French and France exclaims
on thee 60

Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny

Who join in thou with but with a lordly nation

That will not trust thee but for profit's sake?

When Talbot hath set footing once in France

And fashion'd thee that instrument of ill

Who then but English Henry will be lord

And thou be thrust out like a fugitive?
 Call we to mind and mark but this for proof,
 Was not the Duke of Orleans thy foe?
 And was he not in England prisoner? 70
 But when they heard he was thine enemy,
 They set him free without his ransom paid,
 In spite of Burgundy and all his friends
 See, then thou fightst against thy countrymen
 And join'st with them will be thy slaughter men
 Come come, return, return, thou wandering lord
 Charles and the rest will take thee in their arms
Bur I am vanquished, these haughty words
 of hers

Have batter'd me like roaring cannon shot,
 And made me almost yield upon my knees 80
 Forgiv' me, country, and sweet countrymen,
 And lords, accept this hearty kind embrace
 My forces and my power of men are yours
 So farewell, Talbot, I'll no longer trust thee
Puc [*Aside*] Done like a Frenchman turn and
 turn again!

Char Welcome, brave duke! thy friendship
 makes us fresh
Bur And doth beget new courage in our breasts
Alen Pucelle hath bravely play'd her part in this,
 And doth deserve a coronet of gold
Char Now let us on my lords, and join our
 powers, 90
 And seek how we may prejudice the foe
 [*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *Paris The palace*

*Enter the KING GLOUCESTER BISHOP OF WIN-
 CHESTER, YORK [RICHARD PLANTAGENET] SUFFOLK,
 SOMERSET, WARWICK, EXETER VERNON,
 BASSET and others To them with his Soldiers,
 TALBOT*

Tal My gracious prince, and honourable peers,
 Hearing of your arrival in this realm,
 I have awhile given truce unto my wars,
 To do my duty to my sovereign
 In sign whereof, this arm that hath reclaim'd
 To your obedience fifty fortresses
 Twelve cities and seven walled towns of strength,
 Beside five hundred prisoners of esteem
 Lets fall his sword before your highness feet, 10
 And with submissive loyalty of heart
 Ascribes the glory of his conquest got
 First to my God and next unto your Grace
 [*Kneels*]

King Is this the Lord Talbot, uncle Gloucester,
 That hath so long been resident in France?

Glou Yes if it please your majesty, my liege
King Welcome brave captain and victorious
 lord!

When I was young, as yet I am not old,

I do remember how my father said
 A stouter champion never handled sword
 Long since we were resolved of your truth, 20
 Your faithful service, and your toil in war,
 Yet never have you tasted our reward,
 Or been requerdon'd with so much as thanks
 Because till now we never saw your face
 Therefore, stand up and for these good deserts,
 We here create you Earl of Shrewsbury,
 And in our coronation take your place

[*Sennet Flourish Exeunt all but VERNON and
 BASSET*]

Ver Now sir, to you that were so hot at sea,
 Disgracing of these colours that I wear
 In honour of my noble Lord of York 30
 Darest thou maintain the former words thou
 spakest?

Bas Yes, sir, as well as you dare patronage
 The envious barking of your saucy tongue

Against my lord the Duke of Somerset

Ver Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is

Bas Why, what is he? as good a man as York

Ver Hark ye, not so in witness, take ye
 that [*Strikes him*]

Bas Villain, thou know'st the law of arms is
 such

That whoso draws a sword 'tis present death,
 Or else this blow should broach thy dearest
 blood 40

But I'll unto his majesty, and crave
 I may have liberty to venge this wrong,
 When thou shalt see I'll meet thee to thy cost

Ver Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon as
 you,

And after, meet you sooner than you would
 [*Exeunt*]

ACT IV

SCENE I *Paris A hall of state*

*Enter the KING GLOUCESTER, BISHOP OF WIN-
 CHESTER, YORK SUFFOLK, SOMERSET, WAR-
 WICK TALBOT, EXETER the GOVERNOR OF PARIS,
 and others*

Glou Lord Bishop set the crown upon his
 head

Win God save King Henry, of that name the
 Sixth!

Glou Now Governor of Paris, take your oath,
 [*GOVERNOR kneels*]

That you elect no other king but him
 Esteem none friends but such as are his friends,
 And none your foes but such as shall pretend
 Malicious practices against his state

This shall ye do so help you righteous God!

[*Exeunt GOVERNOR and train*]

Enter sir JOHN FASTOLFE

Fast My gracious sovereign as I rode from
Calais

To haste unto your coronation 10
A letter was deliver'd to my hands
Writ to your grace from the Duke of Burgundy
Tal Shame to the Duke of Burgundy and thee!
I vow'd base knight when I did meet thee next
To tear the Garter from thy craven's leg
Plucking it off

Which I have done because unworthily
Thou wast installed in that high degree
Pardon me princely Henry and the rest
This dastard at the battle of Patay
When but in all I was six thousand strong 20
And that the French were almost ten to one
Before we met or that a stroke was given
Like to a trusty squire did run away
In which assault we lost twelve hundred men
Myself and divers gentlemen beside
Were there surpris'd and taken prisoners
Then judge great lords if I have done amiss
Or whether that such cowards ought to wear
This ornament of knighthood yea or no

Glou To say the truth this fact was infamous
And ill beseeeming any common man 31

Much more a knight a captain and a leader
Tal When first this order was ordain'd my
lords

Knights of the Garter were of noble birth
Valiant and virtuous full of haughty courage,
Such as were grown to credit by the wars
Not fearing death nor shrinking for distress
But always resolute in most extremes
He then that is not furnish'd in this sort
Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight 40
Profaning this most honourable order
And should if I were worthy to be judge
Be quite degraded like a hedge born swain
That doth presume to boast of gentle blood

King Stain to thy countrymen thou hast set
thy doom!

Be packing therefore thou that wast a knight
Henceforth we banish thee on pain of death

[*Exit FASTOLFE*]

And now my lord protector view the letter
Sent from our uncle Duke of Burgundy

Glou What means his grace that he hath
changed his style? 50

No more but plain and bluntly To the king!
Hath he forgot he is his sovereign?
Or doth this churlish superscription
Pretend some alteration in good will?
What's here? [*Reads*] I have upon especial
cause

Moved with compassion of my country's wreck,
Together with the pitiful complaints
Of such as your oppression feeds upon
Forsaken your pernicious faction
And join'd with Charles the rightful king of 60
France

O monstrous treachery! can this be so
That in alliance amity and oaths
There should be found such false dissembling
guile?

King What! doth my uncle Burgundy revolt?

Glou He doth my lord and is become your foe

King Is that the worst this letter doth contain?

Glou It is the worst and all my lord he
writes

King Why then Lord Talbot there shall talk
with him

And give him chastisement for this abuse

How say you my lord? are you not content? 70

Tal Content my liege! yes but that I am
prevented

I should have begg'd I might have been employ'd

King Then gather strength and march unto him
straight

Let him perceive how ill we brook his treason

And what offence it is to flout his friends

Tal I go my lord in heart desiring still

You may behold confusion of your foes [*Exit*]

Enter VERNON and BASSET

Ver Grant me the combat gracious sovereign

Bas And me my lord grant me the combat too

York This is my servant hear him noble
prince 80

Som And this is mine sweet Henry favour
him

King Be patient lords and give them
leave to speak

Say gentlemen what makes you thus exclaim?

And wherefore crave you combat? or with
whom?

Ver With him my lord for he hath done me
wrong

Bas And I with him for he hath done me
wrong

King What is that wrong whereof you
both complain?

First let me know and then I'll answer you

Bas Crossing the sea from England into France

This fellow here with envious carping tongue
Upbraided me about the rose I wear 91

Saying the samour colour of the leaves

Did represent my master's blushing cheeks

When stubbornly he did repugn the truth

About a certain question in the law

Argued betwixt the Duke of York and him

With other vile and ignominious terms
In confutation of which rude reproach
And in defence of my lord's worthiness,
I crave the benefit of law of arms

Ver And that is my petition noble lord
For though he seem with forged quaint conceit
To set a gloss upon his bold intent
Yet know, my lord, I was provoked by him,
And he first took exceptions at this badge
Pronouncing that the paleness of this flower
Bewray'd the faintness of my master's heart
York Will not this malice, Somerset be left?
Som Your private grudge, my Lord of York,
will out,

Though ne'er so cunningly you smother it
King Good Lord, what madness rules in
brainsick men,

When for so slight and frivolous a cause
Such factious emulations shall arise!
Good cousins both of York and Somerset
Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace
York Let this dissension first be tried by fight,
And then your highness shall command a peace
Som The quarrel toucheth none but us alone
Betwixt ourselves let us decide it then

York There is my pledge accept it Somerset
Ver Nay, let it rest where it began at first
Bas Confirm it so, mine honourable lord
Glow Confirm it so! Confounded be your strife!

And perish ye, with your audacious prate!
Presumptuous vassals are you not ashamed
With this immodest clamorous outrage
To trouble and disturb the king and us?
And you, my lords, methinks you do not well
To bear with their perverse objections,
Much less to take occasion from their mouths
To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves
Let me persuade you take a better course
Exe It grieves his Highness good my lords,
be friends

King Come hither, you that would be
combatants
Henceforth I charge you, as you love our favour,
Quite to forget this quarrel and the cause
And you, my lords, remember where we are,
In France amongst a fickle wavering nation
If they perceive dissension in our looks
And that within ourselves we disagree
How will their grudging stomachs be provoked
To wilful disobedience and rebel!
Beside, what infamy will there arise,
When foreign princes shall be certified
That for a toy a thing of no regard
King Henry's peers and chief nobility
Destroy'd themselves, and lost the realm of
France!

O think upon the conquest of my father,
My tender years, and let us not forego
That for a trifle that was bought with blood!
Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife
I see no reason if I wear this rose,

Putting on a red rose
That any one should therefore be suspicious
I more incline to Somerset than York
Both are my kinsmen and I love them both
As well they may upbraid me with my crown
Because forsooth the King of Scots is crown'd
But your discretions better can persuade
Than I am able to instruct or teach
And therefore as we hither came in peace,
So let us still continue peace and love
Cousin of York, we institute your Grace
To be our Regent in these parts of France
And good my Lord of Somerset, unite
Your troops of horsemen with his bands of foot,
And, like true subjects, sons of your progenitors,
Go cheerfully together and digest
Your angry choler on your enemies
Ourself, my Lord Protector and the rest
After some respite will return to Calais
From thence to England, where I hope ere long
To be presented, by your victories
With Charles, Alençon and that traitorous rout
[*Flourish* *Exeunt all but YORK, WARWICK, EXETER and VERNON*]

War My Lord of York, I promise you the king
Prettily, methought, did play the orator
York And so he did but yet I like it not,
In that he wears the badge of Somerset
War Tush, that was but his fancy, blame
him not
I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no
harm
York An if I wist he did—but let it rest,
Other affairs must now be managed
[*Exeunt all but Exeter*]
Exe Well didst thou, Richard to suppress thy
voice

For had the passions of thy heart burst out,
I fear we should have seen decipher'd there
More rancorous spite, more furious raging
broils
Than yet can be imagined or supposed
But howsoever, no simple man that sees
This jarring discord of nobility,
This shouldering of each other in the court,
This factious bandying of their favourites
But that it doth presage some ill event
Tis much when sceptres are in children's hands,
But more when envy breeds unkind division,
There comes the ruin there begins confusion
[*Exit*]

SCENE II *Before Bourdeaux**Enter TALBOT with trumpet and drum*

Tal Go to the gates of Bourdeaux trumpet
Summon their general unto the wall

Trumpet sounds Enter GENERAL and others aloft

English John Talbot Captains calls you forth
Servant in arms to Harry King of England
And thus he would Open your city gates
Be humble to us call my sovereign yours
And do him homage as obedient subjects
And I will withdraw me and my bloody power
But if you frown upon this proffer'd peace
You tempt the fury of my three attendants
Lean famine quartering steel and climbing fire
Who in a moment even with the earth
Shall lay your stately and air-brain'd towers
If you forsake the offer of their love

Gen Thou ominous and fearful owl of death
Our nation's terror and their bloody scourge!
The period of thy tyranny approacheth
On us thou canst not enter but by death
For I protest we are well fortified
And strong enough to issue out and fight
If thou retire the Dauphin well appointed
Strands with the snares of war to rangle thee
On either hand thee there are squadrons pitch'd
To wall thee from the liberty of flight
And no way canst thou turn thee for redress
But death doth front thee with apparent spoil
And pale destruction meets thee in the face
Ten thousand French have taken the sacrament
To rive their dangerous artillery
Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot
Lo there thou stand'st a breathing valiant man
Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit!
This is the latest glory of thy praise
That I thy enemy due thee withal
For ere the glass that now begins to run
Finish the process of his sandy hour
These eyes that see thee now well coloured
Shall see thee wither'd bloody pale and dead

Drum afar off

Hark! hark! the Dauphin's drum a warning bell
Sings heavy music to thy timorous soul
And mine shall ring thy dire departure out

[Exit GENERAL etc]

Tal He fables not I hear the enemy
Out some light horsemen and peruse their wings
O negligent and heedless discipline!
How are we park'd and bounded in a pale
A little herd of England's timorous deer
Mazed with a yelping kennel of French curs!
If we be English deer be then in blood
Not rascal like to fall down with a pinch

But rather moody mad and desperate stags
Turn on the bloody hounds with heads of steel
And make the cowards stand aloof at bay
Sell every man his life as dear as mine
And they shall find dear deer of us my friends
God and Saint George Talbot and England's
right
Prosper our colours in this dangerous fight!
[Exit]

SCENE III *Plains in Gascony*

Enter a MESSENGER that meets YORK Enter YORK with trumpet and many Soldiers

York Are not the speedy scouts return'd again
That doted the merry army of the Dauphin?
Alas They are return'd my lord and give it
out
That he is march'd to Bourdeaux with his power
To fight with Talbot as he march'd along
By your espials were discovered
Two mightier troops than that the Dauphin led
Which join'd with him and made their march for
Bourdeaux

York A plague upon that villain Somerset
That thus delays my promised supply
Offhorsemen that were levied for this siege!
Renowned Talbot doth expect my aid
And I am low'd by a traitor villain
And cannot help the noble chevalier
God comfort him in this necessity!
If he miscarry farewell wars in France

Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY

Lucy Thou princely leader of our English
strength
Never so needful on the earth of France
Spur to the rescue of the noble Talbot
Who now is girdled with a waist of iron
And hemm'd about with grim destruction
To Bourdeaux warlike duke to Bourdeaux
York!
Else farewell Talbot France and England's
honour
York O God that Somerset who in proud
heart
Doth stop my cornets were in Talbot's place!
So should we save a valiant gentleman
By forsaking a traitor and a coward
Mad ire and wrathful fury makes me weep
That thus we die while remiss traitors sleep
Lucy O send some succour to the distress'd
lord!
York He dies we lose I break my warlike
word
We mourn France smiles we lose they daily
get

All 'long of this vile traitor Somerset

Lucy Then God take mercy on brave Talbot's soul,

And on his son young John, who two hours since I met in travel toward his warlike father!

This seven years did not Talbot see his son,
And now they meet where both their lives are done

York Alas, what joy shall noble Talbot have
To bid his young son welcome to his grave? 40

Away! vexation almost stops my breath,
That sunder'd friends greet in the hour of death
Lucy, farewell no more my fortune can,
But curse the cause I cannot aid the man
Mame Blois, Poitiers and Tours are won away,
'Long all of Somerset and his delay

[*Exit, with his soldiers*]

Lucy Thus, while the vulture of sedition
Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders,
Sleeping neglect doth betray to loss
The conquest of our scarce cold conqueror, 50
That ever living man of memory,
Henry the Fifth whiles they each other cross,
Lives, honours, lands and all hurry to loss [*Exit*]

SCENE IV *Other plains in Gascony*

Enter SOMERSET, with his army, a CAPTAIN of TALBOT'S with him

Som It is too late I cannot send them now
This expedition was by York and Talbot
Too rashly plotted all our general force
Might with a sally of the very town
Be buckled with the over daring Talbot
Hath sullied all his gloss of former honour
By this unheeded, desperate, wild adventure
York set him on to fight and die in shame
That, Talbot dead, great York might bear the name

Cap Here is Sir William Lucy, who with me
Set from our o'ermatch'd forces forth for aid 11

Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY

Som How now, Sir William? whither were you sent?

Lucy Whither, my lord? from bought and sold Lord Talbot

Who, ring'd about with bold adversity,
Cries out for noble York and Somerset
To beat assailing death from his weak legions
And whiles the honourable captain there
Drops bloody sweat from his war wearied limbs
And in advantage lingering looks for rescue,
You, his false hopes the trust of England's honour, 20

Keep off aloof with worthless emulation
Let not your private discord keep away

The levied succours that should lend him aid,
While he, renowned noble gentleman,
Yields up his life unto a world of odds
Orleans the Bastard Charles, Burgundy,
Alençon Reigner, compass him about,
And Talbot perisheth by your default
Som York set him on, York should have sent him aid

Lucy And York as fast upon your grace exclaims, 30

Swearing that you withhold his levied host,
Collected for this expedition

Som York lies, he might have sent and had the horse,

I owe him little duty, and less love,
And take foul scorn to fawn on him by sending

Lucy The fraud of England not the force of France,

Hath now entrapp'd the noble minded Talbot
Never to England shall he bear his life,

But dies, betray'd to fortune by your strife
Som Come, go, I will dispatch the horsemen straight 40

Within six hours they will be at his aid

Lucy Too late comes rescue he is ta'en or slain

For fly he could not, if he would have fled,
And fly would Talbot never though he might

Som If he be dead brave Talbot, then adieu!

Lucy His fame lives in the world, his shame in you [*Exeunt*]

SCENE V *The English camp near Bourdeaux*

Enter TALBOT and JOHN his son

Tal O young John Talbot! I did send for thee

To tutor thee in stratagems of war,

That Talbot's name might be in thee revived

When sapless age and weak unable limbs

Should bring thy father to his drooping chair

But, O malignant and ill boding stars!

Now thou art come unto a feast of death,

A terrible and unavoided danger

Therefore dear boy, mount on my swiftest horse,

And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape 10

By sudden flight come dally not be gone

John Is my name Talbot? and am I your son?

And shall I fly? O, if you love my mother,

Dis honour not her honourable name,

To make a bastard and a slave of me!

The world will say he is not Talbot's blood

That basely fled when noble Talbot stood

Tal Fly, to revenge my death if I be slain

John He that flies so will ne'er return again

Tal If we both stay we both are sure to die 20

John Then let me stay, and father do you fly

Your loss is great, so your regard should be,

My worth unknown no loss I know in me
 Upon my death the French can little boast
 In yours they will in you all hopes are lost
 Fly he cannot stain the honour you have won
 But mine it will that no exploit have done
 You fled for vanitie every one will swear
 But if I bow they'll say it was for fear
 There is no hope that ever I will stay
 If the first hour I shrink and run away
 Here on my knee I bet mortalities
 Rather than life preserved with infamy
 Tal Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one
 tomb?

John Ay rather than I'll shame my mother's
 tomb

Tal Upon my blessing I command thee go

John To fight I will but not to fly the foe

Tal Part of thy father may be saved in thee

John No part of him but I will be shame in me

Tal Thou never hadst renown nor canst not
 lose it

John Yes your renowned name shall sit he
 abuse it

Tal Thy father's charge shall clear thee from
 that stain

John You cannot witness for me, being slain
 If death be so apparent then both fly

Tal And leave my followers here to fight and
 die?

My name was never tainted with such shame

John And shall my youth be guilty of such
 blame?

No more can I be severed from your side

Than can yourself in twain divide

Stray go do what you will the like do I

For live I will not if my father die

Tal Then here I take my leave of thee fair
 son

Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon

Come side by side together live and die

And so I with soul from France to heaven fly
 [Exit]

SCENE VI A field of battle

Alarum excursions. Enter JOHN TALBOT
 hemmed about and TALBOT rescues him

Tal Saint George and victory! fly he soldiers
 fight

The Regent hath with Talbot broke his word

And left us to the rage of France his sword

Where is John Talbot? Pause and take thy
 breath

I gave thee life and rescued thee from death

John O twice my father's vice am I thy son!

The life thou gavest me first was lost and done

Till with thy valiant sword despite of fate

To my determined time thou gavest new date
 Tal When from the Dauphin's crest thy sword
 struck fire

It warmed thy father's heart with proud desire
 Of bold faced victory Then leaden age
 Quickened with youthful spleen an I warlike
 race

30 Bear down Alençon Orleans Burgundy
 And from the pride of Gallia rescued thee
 The wretches Bastard Orleans that drew blood
 From thee my boy and had the maidenhood
 Of thy first fight I soon encountered

And interchanging blows I quickly shed
 Some of his bastard blood and in disgrace
 Bespoke him thus Contaminated base
 And misbegotten blood I spill of thine
 Mean and right poor for that pure blood of
 mine

Which thou didst force from Talbot my brave
 boy

Here purposing the Bastard to destroy
 Came in strong rescue Speak thy father's care

Art thou not weary John? how dost thou fare?

Will it thou yet leave the battle boy and fly

Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?

Fly to revenge my death when I am dead

30 The help of one stands me in little stead
 O too much folly is it well I wot

To hazard all our lives in one small boat!

If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage

To-morrow I shall die with mickle age

By me they nothing gain an if I stay

'Tis but the horrening of my life one day

In thee thy mother dies our household a name

50 My death's revenge thy youth and England's
 shame

All these and more we hazard by thy stay

40 All these are saved if thou wilt fly away

John The sword of Orleans hath not made me
 smart

These words of yours draw life-blood from my
 heart

On that advantage bought with such a shame,

To save a paltry life and slay bright fame

Before you? Talbot from old Talbot fly

The coward horse that bears me fall and die!

And like me to the peasant boy's of France

To be shame's scorn and subject of mischance!

50 Surely by all the glory you have won,

An if I fly I am not Talbot's son

Then talk no more of flight it is no boot

If son to Talbot die at Talbot's foot

Tal Then follow thou thy desperate sire of
 Crete

The Uleasus thy life to me is sweet

If thou wilt fight with thy father's side

And, commendable proved, let's die in pride

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE VII *Another part of the field*

Alarum excursions Enter old TALBOT

led by a SERVANT

Tal Where is my other life? mine own is gone,
O where's young Talbot? where is valiant John?
Triumphant death, smear'd with captivity,
Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee
When he perceived me shrink and on my knee,
His bloody sword he brandish'd over me,
And, like a hungry lion, did commence
Rough deeds of rage and stern impatience,
But when my angry guardant stood alone,
Tendering my ruin and assail'd of none
Dizzy eyed fury and great rage of heart
Suddenly made him from my side to start
Into the clustering battle of the French,
And in that sea of blood my boy did drench
His over-mounting spirit, and there died,
My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride
Serv O my dear lord lo, where your son is
borne!

Enter Soldiers, with the body of JOHN TALBOT

Tal Thou antic death, which laugh'st us here
to scorn
Anon from thy insulting tyranny,
Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,
Two Talbots, winged through the lither sky,
In thy despite shall scape mortality
O thou, whose wounds become hard favour'd
death
Speak to thy father ere thou yield thy breath!
Brave death by speaking, whether he will or no,
Imagine him a Frenchman and thy foe
Poor boy! he smiles, methinks, as who should say,
Had death been French, then death had died
to-day
Come come and lay him in his father's arms
My spirit can no longer bear these harms
Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have,
Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave
[*Dies*]

*Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, BURGUNDY, BASTARD,
LA PUCELLE, and forces*

Char Had York and Somerset brought rescuein,
We should have found a bloody day of this
Bast How the young whelp of Talbot's raging-
wood,
Did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood!
Puc Once I encounter'd him, and thus I said
"Thou maiden youth, be vanquish'd by a maid"
But, with proud majestical high scorn,

He answer'd thus "Young Talbot was not born
To be the pillage of a giglot wench"
So, rushing in the bowels of the French,
He left me proudly, as unworthy fight
Bur Doubtless he would have made a noble
knight
See where he lies inhearsed in the arms
Of the most bloody nurser of his harms!
Bast Hew them to pieces, hack their bones
asunder,
Whose life was England's glory, Gallia's wonder
Char O, no forbear! for that which we have
fled
During the life, let us not wrong it dead
*Enter SIR WILLIAM LUCY, attended, Herald of the
French preceding*
Lucy Herald conduct me to the Dauphin's tent
To know who hath obtained the glory of the day,
Char On what submissive message art thou
sent?
Lucy Submission, Dauphin! 'tis a mere French
word,
We English warriors wot not what it means
I come to know what prisoners thou hast ta'en
And to survey the bodies of the dead
Char For prisoners ask st thou? hell our
prison is
But tell me whom thou seek'st
Lucy But where's the great Alcides of the
field
Valiant Lord Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury,
Created, for his rare success in arms,
Great Earl of Washford, Waterford and Valence,
Lord Talbot of Goodrig and Urchinfield
Lord Strange of Blackmere, Lord Verdun of
Alton,
Lord Cromwell of Wingfield Lord Furnival of
Sheffield,
The thrice victorious Lord of Falconbridge,
Knight of the noble order of Saint George,
Worthy Saint Michael and the Golden Fleece,
Great marshal to Henry the Sixth
Of all his wars within the realm of France?
Puc Here is a silly stately style indeed!
The Turk, that two and fifty kingdoms hath
Writes not so tedious a style as this
Him that thou magnifiest with all these titles
Stinking and fly blown lies here at our feet
Lucy Is Talbot slain, the Frenchmen's only
scourge,
Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis?
O were mine eye balls into bullets turn'd,
That I in rage might shoot them at your faces!
O that I could but call these dead to life!
It were enough to fright the realm of France

Were but his picture left amongst you here
 It would amaze the proudest of you all
 Give me their bodies that I may bear them hence
 And give them burial as becometh their worth
Puc I think this upstart is old Talbot's ghost
 He speaks with such a proud commanding spirit
 For God's sake, let him have em to keep them
 here

They would but stink and putrefy the air 90
Char Go take their bodies hence
Lucy I'll bear them hence but from their ashes
 shall be reared

A phoenix that shall make all France afraid
Char So we be rid of them do with em what
 thou wilt

And now to Paris in this conquering vein
 All will be ours now bloody Talbot's slain
 [Exeunt]

ACT V

SCENE I London The palace

Scotnet Enter KING GLOUCESTER and EYETER

King Have you perused the letters from the
 Pope,

The Emperor and the Earl of Armagnac?

Glou I have my lord and their intent is this
 They humbly sue unto your Excellence
 To have a godly peace concluded of

Between the realms of England and of France

King How doth your Grace affect their motion?

Glou Well my good lord and as the only means
 To stop effusion of our Christian blood
 And stablish quietness on every side 10

King Ay marry uncle for I always thought
 It was both impious and unnatural

That such immanity and bloody strife

Should reign among professors of one faith

Glou Beside my lord the sooner to effect

And surer bind this knot of amity

The Earl of Armagnac, near knit to Charles

A man of great authority in France

Proffers his only daughter to your grace 19

In marriage with a large and sumptuous dowry

King Marriage uncle! alas my years are
 young!

And fitter in my study and my books

Than wanton dalliance with a paramour

Yet call the ambassadors and as you please,

So let them have their answers every one

I shall be well content with any choice

Tends to God's glory and my country's weal

Enter WINCHESTER in Cardinal's habit a PAPAL
 LEGATE and two Ambassadors

Exe What! is my Lord of Winchester install'd

And call'd unto a cardinal's degree?

Then I perceive that will be verified 30

Henry the Fifth did sometime prophesy

If once he come to be a cardinal

He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown

King My Lords Ambassadors your several
 suits

Have been consider'd and debated on

Your purpose is both good and reasonable

And therefore are we certainly resolved

To draw conditions of a friendly peace

Which by my Lord of Winchester we mean

Shall be transported presently to France 40

Glou And for the proffer of my lord your
 master

I have inform'd his highness so at large

As likeness of the lady's virtuous gifts

Her beauty and the value of her dower

He doth intend she shall be England's Queen

King In argument and proof of which contract

Bear her this jewel pledge of my affection

And so my Lord Protector see them guarded

And safely brought to Dover where instopp'd
 Commit them to the fortune of the sea 50

[Exeunt all Enter WINCHESTER and LEGATE

Win Stay my Lord Legate you shall first re-
 ceive

The sum of money which I promised

Should be deliver'd to his Holiness

For clothing me in these grave ornaments

Leg I will attend upon your lordship's leisure

Win [Aside] Now Winchester will not submit
 I trow

Or be inferior to the proudest peer

Humphrey of Gloucester thou shalt well perceive

That neither in birth or for authority

The bishop will be overcome by thee 60

I'll either make thee stoop and bend thy knee

Or sack this country with a mutiny [Exeunt]

SCENE II France Plains in Anyou

Enter CHARLES BURGUNDY ALENÇON BASTARD

FEIGNIER LA PUCELLE and forces

Char These news my lords may cheer our
 drooping spirits

'Tis said the stout Parisians do revolt

And turn again unto the warlike French

Alen Then march to Paris royal Charles of
 France

And keep not back your powers in dalliance

Puc Peace be amongst them if they turn to us
 Else ruin combat with their palaces!

Enter SCOUT

Scout Success unto our valiant general
 And happiness to his accomplices!

Char What tidings send our scouts? I prithee,
speak. 10
Scout The English army that divided was
into two parties is now conjoin'd in one,
And means to give you battle presently
Char Somewhat too sudden, sirs, the warning
is
But we will presently provide for them
Bur I trust the ghost of Talbot is not there
Now he is gone, my lord you need not fear
Puc Of all base passions fear is most accursed
Command the conquest, Charles, it shall be
thine,
Let Henry fret and all the world repine 20
Char Then on, my lords and France be fortunate!
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III Before Angiers

Alarum *Excursions* Enter LA PUCELLE
Puc The Regent conquers, and the Frenchmen
fly
Now help, ye charming spells and periapts,
And ye choice spirits that admonish me
And give me signs of future accidents [Thunder
You speedy helpers, that are substitutes
Under the lordly monarch of the north,
Appear and aid me in this enterprise

Enter Fiends

This speedy and quick appearance argues proof
Of your accustomed diligence to me
Now ye familiar spirits that are cull'd 10
Out of the powerful regions under earth,
Help me this once that France may get the field

They walk, and speak not

O, hold me not with silence over long!
Where I was wont to feed you with my blood,
I'll lop a member off and give it you
In earnest of a further benefit
So you do condescend to help me now

They hang their heads

No hope to have redress? My body shall
Pay recompense, if you will grant my suit

They shake their heads

Cannot my body nor blood sacrifice 20
Entreat you to your wonted furtherance?
Then take my soul, my body soul and all
Before that England give the French the foil

They depart

See they forsake me! Now the time is come
That France must vail her lofty plumed crest
And let her head fall into England's lap
My ancient incantations are too weak,
And hell too strong for me to buckle with
Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust
[*Exit*]

Excursions Enter BURGUNDY and YORK fighting
hand to hand The French fly LA PUCELLE is
brought in captive

York Damsel of France, I think I have you
fast 30

Unchain your spirits now with spelling charms
And try if they can gain your liberty

A goodly prize fit for the devil's grace!
See how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,
As if with Circe she would change my shape!

Puc Changed to a worser shape thou canst not
be

York O, Charles the Dauphin is a proper man,
No shape but his can please your dainty eye

Puc A plaguing mischief light on Charles and
thee!

And may ye both be suddenly surprised 40
By bloody hands in sleeping on your beds!

York Fell banning hag enchantress, hold thy
tongue!

Puc I prithee, give me leave to curse awhile

York Curse miscreant, when thou comest to
the stake [*Exeunt*]

Alarum Enter SUFFOLK with MARGARET in his
hand

Suf Be what thou wilt thou art my prisoner
[*Gazes on her*]

O fairest beauty, do not fear nor fly!
For I will touch thee but with reverent hands,

I'll kiss these fingers for eternal peace,
And lay them gently on thy tender side
Who art thou? say, that I may honour thee 50

Mar Margaret my name, and daughter to a
king

The King of Naples, whosoe'er thou art

Suf An earl I am and Suffolk am I call'd

Be not offended nature's miracle,
Thou art allotted to be taken by me
So doth the swan her downy cygnets save,
Keeping them prisoner underneath her wings
Yet if this servile usage once offend
Go and be free again as Suffolk's friend

[*She is going*]

O stay! [*Aside*] I have no power to let her pass 60
My hand would free her, but my heart says no

As plays the sun upon the glassy streams,
Twinkling another counterfeited beam

So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes

Fain would I woo her yet I dare not speak

I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind

Gie de la Pole disable not thyself

Hast not a tongue? is she not here?

Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's sight?

Ay, beauty's princely majesty is such, 70

Were but his picture left amongst you here,
It would amaze the proudest of you all
Give me their bodies that I may bear them hence
And give them burial as becoms their worth

Puc I think this upstart is old Talbot's ghost
He speaks with such a proud commanding spirit
For God's sake, let him have em to keep them
here

They would but stink and putrefy the air 90

Char Go take their bodies hence

Lucy I'll bear them hence but from their ashes
shall be reard

A phoenix that shall make all France afraid

Char So we be rid of them do with em what
thou wilt

And now to Paris in this conquering vein

All will be ours now bloody Talbot's slain
(*Exeunt*)

ACT V

SCENE I London The palace

Sennet Enter KING GLOUCESTER and KEXETER

King Have you perused the letters from the
Pope,

The Emperor and the Earl of Armagnac?

Glou I have my lord and their intent is thus

They humbly sue unto your Excellence

To have a godly peace concluded of

Between the realms of England and of France

King How doth your Grace affect their motion?

Glou Well my good lord and as the only means

To stop effusion of our Christian blood

And establish quietness on every side 10

King Ay marry uncle for I al ways thought

It was both impious and unnatural

That such immanity and bloody strife

Should reign among professors of one faith

Glou Beside my lord the sooner to effect

And surer bind this knot of amity

The Earl of Armagnac, near knit to Charles

A man of great authority in France

Proffers his only daughter to your grace 19

In marriage with a large and sumptuous dowry

King Marriage, uncle! alas my years are
young!

And fitter is my study and my books

Than war-ton dalliance with a paramour

Yet call the ambassadors and as you please

So let them have their answers every one

I shall be well content with any choice

Tends to God's glory and my country's weal

Enter WINCHESTER in Cardinal's habit a PAPAL
LEGATE and two Ambassadors

Exe What! is my Lord of Winchester install d

And call d unto a cardinal's degree?

Then I perceive that will be verified 30

Henry the Fifth did sometime prophesy

If once he come to be a cardinal

He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown

King My Lords Ambassadors your several
suits

Have been consider d and debated on

Your purpose is both good and reasonable

And therefore are we certainly resolv'd

To draw conditions of a friendly peace

Which by my Lord of Winchester we mean

Shall be transported presently to France 40

Glou And for the proffer of my lord your
master

I have inform'd his highness so at large

As liking of the lady's virtuous gifts

Her beauty and the value of her dower

He doth intend she shall be England's Queen

King In argument and proof of which contract

Bear her this jewel pledge of my affection

And so my Lord Protector see them guarded

And safely brought to Dover where inshipp'd

Commit them to the fortune of the sea 50

(*Exeunt all but WINCHESTER and LEGATE*)

Win Stay my Lord Legate you shall first re-
ceive

The sum of money which I promised

Should be deliver'd to his Holiness

For clothing me in these grave ornaments

Leg I will attend upon your lordship's leisure

Win [Aside] Now Winchester will not subm-

I trow

Or be inferior to the proudest peer

Humphrey of Gloucester thou shalt well perceive

That neither in birth or for a authority

The bishop will be overborne by thee 60

I'll either make thee stoop and bend thy knee

Or sack this country with a mutiny (*Exeunt*)

SCENE II France Plains in Anjou

Enter CHARLES BURGUNDY ALANCON BASTARD

REIGNIER LA PUCELLE and forces

Char These news my lords may cheer our
drooping spirits

Tis said the stout Parisians do revolt

And turn again unto the warlike French

Allen Then march to Paris royal Charles of
France,

And keep not back your powers in dalliance

Puc Peace be amongst them if they turn to us

Else ruin combat with their palaces!

Enter SCOUT

Scout Success unto our valiant general
And happiness to his accomplishments!

My daughter shall be Henry's if he please

Suf That is her ransom, I deliver her

And those two counties I will undertake

Your grace shall well and quietly enjoy

Reig And I again, in Henry's royal name

As deputy unto that gracious king

Give thee her hand for sign of plighted faith

Suf *Reignier* of France, I give thee kingly thanks

Because this is in traffic of a king

[Aside] And yet, methinks, I could be well content

To be mine own attorney in this case

I'll over then to England with this news

And make this marriage to be solemnized

So farewell, *Reignier* set this diamond safe

In golden palaces as it becomes 170

Reig I do embrace thee as I would embrace

The Christian prince King Henry, were he here

Mar Farewell, my lord good wishes praise and prayers

Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret *[Going]*

Suf Farewell, sweet madam but hark you,

Margaret,

No princely commendations to my king?

Mar Such commendations as becomes a maid

A virgin and his servant, say to him

Suf Words sweetly placed and modestly directed

But madam, I must trouble you again, 180

No loving token to his majesty?

Mar Yes, my good lord, a pure unspotted heart

Never yet taint with love I send the King

Suf And this withal *[Kisses her]*

Mar That for thyself I will not so presume

To send such peevish tokens to a king

[Exeunt REIGNIER and MARGARET]

Suf O, wert thou for myself? But Suffolk, stay,

Thou mayst not wander in that labyrinth

There Minotaurs and ugly treasours lurk

Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise

Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount,

And natural graces that extinguish art

Repeat their semblance often on the seas

That, when thou comest to kneel at Henry's feet

Thou mayst bereave him of his wits with wonder *[Exit]*

SCENE IV *Camp of the DUKE OF YORK
in Anjou*

Enter YORK, WARWICK, and others

York Bring forth that sorceress condemn'd to burn

Enter LA PUCELLE guarded and a SHEPHERD

Shep Ah Joan thus kills thy father's heart outright!

Have I sought every country far and near

And now it is my chance to find thee out,

Must I behold thy timeless cruel death?

Ah Joan, sweet daughter Joan I'll die with thee!

Puc Decrepit miser! base ignoble wretch!

I am descended of a gentler blood

Thou art no father nor no friend of mine

Shep Out out! My lords an please you, tis not so

I did beget her all the parish knows

Her mother liveth yet can testify

She was the first fruit of my bachelorship

War Graceless! wilt thou deny thy parentage

York This argues what her kind of life hath been

Wicked and vile and so her death concludes

Shep Tie Joan that thou wilt be so obstacle!

God knows thou art a collop of my flesh,

And for thy sake have I shed many a tear

Deny me not, I prithee gentle Joan 21

Puc Peasant aunt! You have suborn'd this man,

Of purpose to obscure my noble birth

Shep 'Tis true I gave a noble to the priest

The morn that I was wedded to her mother

Kneel down and take my blessing good my girl

Wilt thou not stoop? Now cursed be the time

Of thy nativity! I would the milk

Thy mother gave thee when thou suck'st her breast

Had been a little ratsbane for thy sake!

Or else when thou didst keep my lambs a field

I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee! 31

Dost thou deny thy father cursed drab?

O burn her, burn her! hanging is too good

[Exit]

York Take her away for she hath lived too long

To fill the world with vicious qualities

Puc First let me tell you whom you have condemn'd

Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,

But issued from the progeny of kings,

Virtuous and holy chosen from above,

By inspiration of celestial grace,

To work exceeding miracles on earth

I never had to do with wicked spirits

But you that are polluted with your lusts

Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents

Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices

Because you want the grace that others have,

You judge it strange a thing impossible
To compass wonders but by help of devils
No misconceived! Joan of Arc hath been
A virgin from her tender infancy
Chaste and immaculate in every thought
Whose maiden blood thus rigorously effused
Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven
York Ay ay away with her to execution!
War And hark ye sirs because she is a
maid

Spare for no faggots let there be enough
Place barrels of powder upon the fatal stake
That so her torture may be shortened
Puc Will nothing turn your unrelenting
hearts?

Then Joan discover thine infirmity
That warranteth by law to be thy privilege
I am with child ye bloody homicides
Murder not then the fruit within my womb
Although ye hale me to a violent death
York Now heaven forfend! the holy maid
with child

War The greatest miracle that e'er ye
wrought
Is all your strict preciseness come to this?
York She and the Dauphin have been jug-
gling

I did imagine what would be her refuge
War Well go to we'll have no bastards
in

Especially since Charles must father it
Puc You are deceived my child is none of
his

It was Alençon that enjoy'd my love
York Alençon! that notorious Machiavel!
It dies as if it had a thousand lives
Puc O give me leave I have deluded you
Twas neither Charles nor yet the duke I named
But Reigner King of Naples that prevail'd
War A married man! that's most intolerable
York Why here's a girl! I think she knows
not well

There were so many whom she may accuse
War It's sign she hath been liberal and free
York And yet forsooth she is a virgin pure
Strumper thy words condemn thy brat and
thine

Use no entreaty for it is in vain
Puc Then lead me hence with whom I leave
my curse

May never glorious sun reflex his beams
Upon the country where you make abode
But darkness and the gloomy shade of death
Environ you, till mischief and despair
Drive you to break your necks or hang your
selves!
[Exit guarded

York Break thou in pieces and consume to
ashes
Thou foul accursed minister of hell!

50 *Enter* CARDINAL BEAUFORT {WINCHESTER}
attended

Car Lord Regent I do greet your Excellence
With letters of commission from the King
For know my lords the states of Christendom
Moved with remorse of these outrageous broils
Have earnestly implored a general peace
Between our nation and the aspiring French
And here at hand the Dauphin and his train
Approacheth to confer about some matter
York Is all our travail turn'd to this effect?

60 After the slaughter of so many peers
So many captains gentlemen and soldiers
That in this quarrel have been overthrow'n
And sold their bodies for their country's benefit
Shall we at last conclude effeminate peace?
Have we not lost most part of all the towns
By treason, falsehood and by treachery
Our great progenitors had conquered?
O Warwick! Warwick! I foresee with grief
The utter loss of all the realm of France
War Be patient York if we conclude a
peace
It shall be with such strict and severe covenants
As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby

70 *Enter* CHARLES ALENÇON BASTARD REIGNIER,
and others

Char Since lords of England it is thus
arr'd
That peaceful truce shall be proclaim'd in France
We come to be informed by yourselves
What the conditions of that league must be
York Speak Winchester for boiling choler
chokes

80 The hollow passage of my poison'd voice
By sight of these our baleful enemies
Car Charles and the rest it is enacted thus
That in regard King Henry gives consent
Of mere compassion and of lenity
To ease your country of distressful war
And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace
You shall become true liegemen to his crown
And Charles upon condition thou wilt swear
To pay him tribute and submit thy self
Thou shalt be placed as viceroy under him
And still enjoy thy regal dignity

Alen Must he be then as shadow of himself?
Adorn his temples with a coronet
And yet in substance and authority
Retain but privilege of a private man?
This proffer is absurd and reasonless

FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI

SCENE IV

Char 'Tis known already that I am possess'd
With more than half the Gallian territories
And therein revered for their law full king 140
Shall I for lucre of the rest unanquish'd,
Detract so much from that prerogative
As to be call'd but viceroy of the whole?
No Lord Ambassador I'll rather keep
That which I have than covering for more
Be cast from possibility of all
York Insulting Charles' hast thou by secret
means

Used intercession to obtain a league
And, now the matter grows to compromise,
Standst thou aloof upon comparison? 150
Either accept the title thou usurp'st
Of benefit proceeding from our king
And not of any challenge of desert
Or we will plague thee with incessant wars
Reig My lord you do not well in obstinacy
To cavil in the course of this contract
If once it be neglected, ten to one
We shall not find like opportunity

Alen To say the truth it is your policy 160
To save your subjects from such massacre
And ruthless slaughters as are daily seen
By our proceeding in hostility
And therefore take this compact of a truce
Although you break it when your pleasure serves
War How sayst thou, Charles? shall our
condition stand?

Char It shall
Only reserved, you claim no interest
In any of our towns of garrison
York Then swear allegiance to his majesty 170
As thou art knight, never to disobey
Nor be rebellious to the crown of England
Thou nor thy nobles to the crown of England
So now dismiss your army when ye please
Hang up your ensigns let your drums be still
For here we entertain a solemn peace [Exeunt]

SCENE V London The palace

*Enter SUFFOLK in conference with the KING
GLOUCESTER and EXETER*

King Your wondrous rare description noble
earl
Of beauteous Margaret hath astonish'd me
Her virtues graced with external gifts
Do breed loves settled passions in my heart
And like as rigour of tempestuous gusts
Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide
So am I driven by breath of her renown
Either to suffer shipwreck or arrive
Where I may have fruition of her love
Suf Tush my good lord this superficial tale
Is but a preface of her worthy praise

The chief perfections of that lovely dame,
Had I sufficient skill to utter them
Would make a volume of enticing lines,
Able to ravish any dull conceit
And which is more, she is not so divine,
So full replete with choice of all delights,
But with as humble lowliness of mind
She is content to be at your command
Command I mean of virtuous chaste intents, 20
To love and honour Henry as her lord
King And otherwise will Henry ne'er pre-
sume

Therefore, my Lord Protector give consent
That Margaret may be England's royal Queen
Glou So should I give consent to flatter sin
You know my lord your highness is betroth'd
Unto another lady of esteem
How shall we then dispense with that contract,
And not deface your honour with reproach? 30

Suf As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths,
Or one that at a triumph having owed
To try his strength forsaketh yet the lists
By reason of his adversary's odds
A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,
And therefore may be broke without offence
Glou Why what I pray is Margaret more
than that?

Her father is no better than an earl,
Although in glorious titles he excel
Suf Yes my lord her father is a king, 40
The King of Naples and Jerusalem
And of such great authority in France
As his alliance will confirm our peace
And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance
Glou And so the Earl of Armagnac may do,
Because he is near kinsman unto Charles
Exe Beside his wealth doth warrant a liberal
dower,

Where Reigrier sooner will receive than give
Suf A dower my lords' disgrace not so your
king

That he should be so abject base and poor,
To choose for wealth and not for perfect love 50
Henry is able to enrich his queen
And not to seek a queen to make him rich
So worthless peasants bargain for their wives,
As market men for oxen sheep or horse
Marriage is a matter of more worth
Than to be dealt in by attorney ship
Nor whom we will but whom his Grace affects,
Must be companion of his nuptial bed
And therefore lords since he affects her most,
It most of all these reasons bindeth us
In our opinions she should be preferred
For what is wedlock forced but a hell
An age of discord and continual strife? 60

Whereas the contrary bringeth bliss
And is a pattern of celestial peace
Whom should we match with Henry being a
king

But Margaret that is daughter to a king
Her peerless feature joined with her birth
Approves her fit for none but for a king
Her valiant courage and undaunted spirit
More than in women commonly is seen
Will answer our hope in issue of a king
For Henry son unto a conqueror
Is likely to beget more conquerors
If with a lady of so high resolve
As is fair Margaret he be linked in love
Then yield my lords and here conclude with me
That Margaret shall be queen and none but she
Alas Whether it be through force of your
report

My noble Lord of Suffolk or for that
My tender youth was never yet attained
With any passion of inflamming love
I cannot tell but this I am assured
I feel such sharp dissonance in my breast
Such fierce alarms both of hope and fear
As I am sick with working of my thoughts

Take therefore shipping post my lord to
France

Agree to any covenants and procure
That Lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come
To cross the seas to England and be crowned
King Henry's faithful and anointed queen
For your expenses and sufficient charge
Among the people gather up a tenth
Be gone I say for till you do return
I rest perplexed with a thousand cares
And you good uncle banish all offence
If you do censure me by what you were,
Not what you are I know it will excuse
This sudden execution of my will
And so conduct me where from company
I may revolve and ruminate my grief
Glorious grief I fear me both at first and last

[Exit GLOUCESTER and EVERARD]
So Thus Suffolk hath prevailed and thus he
goes

As did the youthful Paris once to Greece
With hope to find the like event in love
But prosper better than the Trojan did
Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the king
But I will rule both her the king and realm

[Exit]

2 The Second Part of KING HENRY THE SIXTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY THE SIXTH
HUMPHREY DUKE OF GLOUCESTER *his uncle*
CARDINAL BEAUFORT, BISHOP OF WINCHESTER
great uncle to the King
RICHARD PLANTAGENET DUKE OF YORK
EDWARD
RICHARD *sons of the Duke of York*
DUKE OF SOMERSET
WILLIAM DE LA POLE DUKE OF SUFFOLK
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM
LORD CLIFFORD
YOUNG CLIFFORD *his son*
EARL OF SALISBURY
EARL OF WARWICK *York Faction*
LORD SCALES
LORD SAY
SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD
WILLIAM STAFFORD *his brother*
SIR JOHN STANLEY
VAUX
SEA-CAPTAIN
MASTER
MASTER'S MATE
WALTER WHITMORE
TWO GENTLEMEN *prisoners with Suffolk*
JOHN HUME
JOHN SOUTHWELL *priests*
BOLINGBROKE *a conjurer*
THOMAS HORNER *an armourer*
PETER THUMP *his man*
CLERK of Chatham
MAYOR of Saint Albans

*King's
Party*

SIMPSON *an imposter*
ALEXANDER IDEN *a Kentish gentleman*
JACK CADE *a rebel*
GEORGE BEVIS
JOHN HOLLAND
DICK *the butcher*
SMITH *the weaver*
MICHAEL
TWO MURDERERS
FIVE MESSENGERS
TWO PETITIONERS
SPIRIT
BEADLE
TWO PRENTICES
THREE NEIGHBORS TO HORNER
SERVANT to Gloucester
SHERIFF
HERALD
A POST
COMMONS
A CITIZEN
A SOLDIER
MARGARET Queen to King Henry
ELEANOR, Duchess of Gloucester
MARGARET JOURDAIN *a witch*
WIFE to Simpcor

NON-SPEAKING Matthew Goffe Petitioners Guards
Serrants Attendants Citizens Prentices Officers of
the Sheriff Lords Ladies and Soldiers

SCENE England



ACT I

SCENE I London The palace

*Flourish of trumpets then hautboys Enter the KING,
DUKE OF GLOUCESTER SALISBURY WARWICK
and CARDINAL BEAUFORT, on the one side, the
QUEEN, SUFFOLK YORK SOMERSET and BUCK-
INGHAM on the other*

Suf As by your high imperial majesty
I had in charge at my depart for France
As procurator to your Excellence
To marry Princess Margaret for your Grace
So in the famous ancient city Tours
In presence of the Kings of France and Sicil
The Dukes of Orleans, Calaber Bretagne and
Alençon,
Seven earls twelve barons and twenty reverend
bishops,

I have perform'd my task and was espoused
And humbly now upon my bended knee,
In sight of England and her lordly peers
Deliver up my title in the Queen
To your most gracious hands that are the sub-
stance
Of that great shadow I did represent
The happiest gift that ever marquess gave
The fairest queen that ever king received
King Suffolk arise Welcome Queen Mar-
garet
I can express no kinder sign of love
Than this kind kiss O Lord that lends me
life
Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness!
For thou hast given me in this beauteous face
A world of earthly blessings to my soul
As sympathy of love unite our thoughts

10

20

Queen Great King of England and my gracious lord

The mutual conference that my mind hath had
By day by night waking and in my dreams
In courtly company or at my beads

With you mine alder liefeſt ſovereign

Makes me the bolder to ſalute my king

With ruder terms ſuch as my wit affords

And over joy of heart doth miſter

King Her ſight did raviſh but her grace in ſpeech

Her words y clad with wiſdom's majeſty

Makes me from wondering fall to weeping joys

Such is the fulneſſ of my heart's content

Lords with one cheerful voice welcome my love

All [*kneeling*] Long live Queen Margaret Eng-
land's happineſſ

Queen We thank you all [*Flouriſh*]

Suf My Lord Protector ſo it pleaſe your

Grace

Here are the articles of contracted peace

Between our ſovereign and the French king

Charles

For eighteen months concluded by conſent

Glou [*Reads*] *Imprimis* It is agreed between

the French king Charles and William de la Pole

Marqueſſ of Suffolk ambaffador for Henry king

of England that the ſaid Henry ſhall eſpouſe the

Lady Margaret daughter unto Reigner King of

Naples Sicilia and Jeruſalem and crown her

Queen of England ere the thirtieth of May next

enſuing *Item* that the duchy of Anjou and the

county of Maine ſhall be releaſed and delivered

to the king her father — [*Lets the paper fall*]

King Uncle how now?

Glou Pardon me gracious lord

Some ſudden qualm hath ſtruck me at the heart

And dimm'd mine eyes that I can read no fur-

ther

King Uncle of Wincheſter I pray read on

Car [*Reads*] *Item* It is further agreed between

them that the duchies of Anjou and Maine ſhall

be releaſed and delivered over to the king her

father and ſhe ſent over of the king of England's

own proper coſt and charges without having any

dowry

King They pleaſe us well Lord Marqueſſ

kneel down

We here create thee the firſt Duke of Suffolk

And gird thee with the ſword Cousin of York

We here diſcharge your Grace from being regent

of the parts of France till term of a threen

months

Be full expreſſ Thanks uncle Wincheſter

Glouceſter York Buckingham Somerſet

Salisbury and Warwick

We thank you all for this great favour done

In entertainment to my princely queen

Come let us in and with all ſpeed provide

To ſee her coronation be perform'd

[*Exeunt KING QUEEN and SUFFOLK*]

Glou Brave peers of England pillars of the

ſtate

To you Duke Humphrey muſt unload his grief

Your grief the common grief of all the land

What did my brother Henry ſpend his youth,

His valour com and people in the wars?

Did he ſo often lodge in open field

In winter's cold and ſummer's parching heat

To conquer France his true inheritance?

And did my brother Bedford toil his wits

To keep by policy what Henry got?

Have you yourſelves Somerſet Buckin'ham,

Brave York Salisbury and victorious Warwick

Received deep ſcars in France and Normandy?

Or hath mine uncle Beaufort and my ſelf

With all the learned council of the realm

Studied ſo long ſat in the council houſe

Early and late debating to and fro

How France and Frenchmen might be kept in

awe

And had his highneſſ in his infancy

Crowned in Paris in deſpite of foes?

And ſhall theſe labours and theſe honours die?

Shall Henry's conquest Bedford's vigilance

Your deeds of war and all our counſel die?

O peers of England ſhameful is this league!

Fatal this marriage cancelling your fame,

Blotting your names from books of memory

Razing the characters of your renown

Defacing monuments of conquer'd France

Undoing all as all had never been!

Car Nephew what means this paſſionate diſ-

course

This peroration with ſuch circumſtance?

For France tis ours and we will keep it ſtill

Glou Ay uncle we will keep it if we can

But now tis impoſſible we ſhould

Suffolk the new made duke that rules the roaſt

Hath given the duchy of Anjou and Maine

Unto the poor King Reigner whoſe large ſtyle

Agrees not with the leanneſſ of his purſe

Sal Now by the death of him that died for all

Theſe counties were the keys of Normandy

But wherefore weeps Warwick my valiant ſon?

War For grief that they are paſt recovery

For were there hope to conquer them again

My ſword ſhould ſhed hot blood mine eyes no

tears

Anjou and Maine! myſelf did win them both

Theſe provinces theſe arms of mine did conquer

And are the cities that I got with wounds

Deliver'd up again with peaceful words?

Mort Dieu!

York For Suffolk's duke may he be suffocate,
That dims the honour of this warlike isle!
France should have torn and rent my very heart,
Before I would have yielded to this league
I never read but England's kings have had
Large sums of gold and dowries with their wives
And our King Henry gives away his own 130
To match with her that brings no vanities

Glou A proper jest, and never heard before,
That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth
For costs and charges in transporting her!
She should have stay'd in France and starv'd in
France,

Before—

Car My Lord of Gloucester now ye grow too
hot

It was the pleasure of my lord the King

Glou My Lord of Winchester I know your
mind,

'Tis not my speeches that you do dislike, 140

But 'tis my presence that doth trouble ye

Rancour will out proud prelate, in thy face

I see thy fury if I longer stay

We shall begin our ancient bickerings

Lordings, farewell and say when I am gone,

I prophesied France will be lost ere long [Exit

Car So there goes our Protector in a rage

'Tis known to you he is mine enemy,

Nay, more an enemy unto you all

And no great friend I fear me to the King 150

Consider, lords he is the next of blood

And heir apparent to the English crown

Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,

And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west

There's reason he should be displeased at it

Look to it, lords let not his smoothing words

Bewitch your hearts be wise and circumspect

What though the common people favour him

Calling him 'Humphrey, the good Duke of

Gloucester, 159

Clapping their hands, and crying with loud voice,

"Jesu maintain your royal Excellence"

With God preserve the good Duke Humphrey!

I fear me lords for all this flattering gloss,

He will be found a dangerous protector

Buck Why should he then, protect our sovereign

He being of age to govern of himself?

Cousin of Somerset join you with me

And all together, with the Duke of Suffolk

We'll quickly hoise Duke Humphrey from his
seat

Car Thus weighty business will not brook delay, 170

I'll to the Duke of Suffolk presently [Exit

Som Cousin of Buckingham, though Humphrey's pride

And greatness of his place be grief to us,

Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal

His insolence is more intolerable

Than all the princes in the land beside

If Gloucester be displaced he'll be Protector

Buck Or thou or I, Somerset, will be Protector,

Despite Duke Humphrey or the Cardinal 179

[Exit BUCKINGHAM and SOMERSET

Sal Pride went before ambition follows him

While these do labour for their own preferment,

Behoves it us to labour for the realm

I never saw but Humphrey Duke of Gloucester

Did bear him like a noble gentleman

Of late I seen the haughty Cardinal,

More like a soldier than a man of the church,

As stout and proud as he were lord of all

Swear like a ruffian and demean himself

Unlike the ruler of a common weal

Warwick my son, the comfort of my age, 190

Thy deeds thy plainness, and thy housekeeping,

Hath won the greatest favour of the commons,

Excepting none but good Duke Humphrey

And brother York, thy acts in Ireland,

In bringing them to civil discipline,

Thy late exploits done in the heart of France,

When thou wert regent for our sovereign,

Have made thee fear'd and honour'd of the

people

Join we together for the public good

In what we can to bridle and suppress 200

The pride of Suffolk and the Cardinal,

With Somerset and Buckingham's ambition,

And as we may, cherish Duke Humphrey's

deeds

While they do tend the profit of the land

War So God help Warwick as he loves the

land

And common profit of his country!

York [Aside] And so says York for he hath

greatest cause

Sal Then let's make haste away and look unto

the main

War Unto the main! O father, Maine is lost,

That Maine which by main force Warwick did

win, 210

And would have kept so long as breath did last!

Main chance, father, you meant, but I meant

Maine

Which I will win from France or else be slain

[Exit WARWICK and SALISBURY

York Anyon and Maine are given to the French,

Paris is lost the state of Normandy

Stands on a tickle point, now they are gone

Suffolk concluded on the articles

The peers agreed and Henry was well pleased
To change two dukedoms for a duke's fair daughter

I cannot blame them all what is't to them? 220

'Tis thine they give away and not their own
Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their pillage

And purchase friends and give to courtizans
Still revelling like lords till all be gone

While as the silly owner of the goods
Weeps over them and wrings his hapless hands
And shake his head and trembling stands aloof
While all is shared and all is borne away

Ready to starve and dare not touch his own
So York must sit and fret and bite his tongue 230
While his own lands are bargain'd for and sold
Methinks the realms of England France and Ireland

Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood
As did the fatal brand Althaea burn'd

Unto the Prince's heart of Calydon
Anjou and Maine both given unto the French?
Cold news for me for I had hope of France

Even as I have of fertile England's soil
A day will come when York shall claim his own

And therefore I will take the Nevils' parts : 240
And make a show of love to proud Duke Humphrey

And when I spy advantage claim the crown
For that is the golden mark I seek to hit

Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right
Nor hold the sceptre in his childish fist
Nor wear the diadem upon his head

Whose church like humours fits not for a crown
Thou York be still awhile till time do serve

Watch thou and wake when others be asleep
To pry into the secrets of the state 250

Till Henry surfeiting in joys of love
With his new bride and England's dear bought queen,

And Humphrey with the peers be fall'n at jars
Then will I raise aloft the milk-white rose
With whose sweet smell the air shall be perfumed

And in my standard bear the arms of York
To grapple with the house of Lancaster
And force perforce I'll make him yield the crown,

Whose bookish rule hath pull'd fair England down [Exit

SCENE II *The Duke of Gloucester's house*

Enter DUKE HUMPHREY and his wife ELEANOR

Duch. Why droops my lord like over-ripen'd corn,

Hanging the head at Ceres' plenteous load?

Why doth the great Duke Humphrey knit his brows

As frowning at the favours of the world?

Why are thine eyes fix'd to the sullen earth
Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight?

What seest thou there? King Henry's diadem
Enchased with all the honours of the world?

If so gaze on and grovel on thy face,
Until thy head be circled with the same 10

Put forth thy hand reach at the glorious gold
What is't too short? I'll lengthen it with mine

And having both together heaved it up
We'll both together lift our heads to heaven,

And never more abase our sight so low
As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground!

Glou. O Nell sweet Nell if thou dost love thy lord

Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts
And may that thought when I imagine ill

Against my king and nephew virtuous Henry 20
Be my last breathing in this mortal world!

My troublous dream this night doth make me sad

Duch. What dream'd my lord? tell me and I'll requite it

With sweet rehearsal of my morning's dream
Glou. Methought this staff mine office bad me in court

Was broke in twain by whom I have forgot
But as I think it was by the Cardinal

And on the pieces of the broken wand
Were placed the heads of Edmund Duke of Somerset

And William de la Pole first Duke of Suffolk 30

This was my dream what it doth bode God knows

Duch. Tut this was nothing but an argument
That he that breaks a stick of Gloucester's grove

Shall lose his head for his presumption
But list to me my Humphrey my sweet duke

Methought I sat in seat of majesty
In the cathedral church of Westminster

And in that chair where kings and queens are crown'd

Where Henry and dame Margaret kneel'd to me
And on my head did set the diadem 40

Glou. Nay Eleanor then must I chide outright
Presumptuous dame ill-nurtured Eleanor

Art thou not second woman in the realm
And the Protector's wife beloved of him?

Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command
Above the reach or compass of thy thought?

And wilt thou still be hammering treachery
To tumble down thy husband and thyself

From top of honour to disgrace's feet?

Away from me, and let me hear no more! 50
Duch What, what my lord! are you so choleric
 With Eleanor, for telling but her dream?
 Next time I'll keep my dreams unto myself,
 And not be check'd
Glou Nay, be not angry, I am pleased again

Enter MESSENGER

Mess My Lord Protector, 'tis his Highness' pleasure
 You do prepare to ride unto Saint Alban
 Where as the King and Queen do mean to hawl
Glou I go Come, Nell, thou wilt ride with us?
Duch Yes, my good lord, I'll follow presently
[Exit MR GLOUCESTER and MESSENGER]
 Follow I must I cannot go before 61
 While Gloucester bears this base and humble mind

Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood
 I would remove these tedious stumbling blocks
 And smooth my way upon their headless necks,
 And, being a woman, I will not be slack
 To play my part in Fortune's pageant
 Where are you there? Sir John! nay fear not,
 man,
 We are alone, here's none but thee and I

Enter HUME

Hume Jesus preserve your royal majesty! 70
Duch What say'st thou? majesty! I am but Grace
Hume But, by the grace of God, and Hume's advice
 Your Grace's title shall be multiplied
Duch What say'st thou, man? hast thou as yet conferr'd
 With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch,
 With Roger Bolingbroke the conjurer?
 And will they undertake to do me good?
Hume They have promised, to show your highness
 A spirit raised from depth of under ground
 That shall make answer to such questions 80
 As by your Grace shall be propounded him
Duch It is enough, I'll think upon the questions
 When from Saint Alban we do make return,
 We'll see these things effected to the full
 Here Hume, take this reward, make merry,
 man,
 With thy confederates in this weighty cause *[Exit]*

Hume Hume must make merry with the Duchess gold
 Marry, and shall But, how now Sir John Hume!
 Seal up your lips and give no words but mum
 The business asketh silent secrecy 90

Dame Eleanor gives gold to bring the witch
 Gold cannot come amiss, were she a devil
 Yet have I gold flies from another coast,
 I dare not say from the rich Cardinal
 And from the great and new made Duke of Suffolk

Yet I do find it so, for, to be plain,
 They, knowing Dame Eleanor's aspiring humour,
 Have hired me to undermine the Duchess
 And buz these conjurations in her brain
 They say, "A crafty knave does need no broker",
 Yet am I Suffolk and the Cardinal's broker 101
 Hume if you take not heed, you shall go near
 To call them both a pair of crafty knaves
 Well so it stands, and thus, I fear, at last
 Hume's knavery will be the Duchess' wreck,
 And her attainure will be Humphrey's fall
 Sort how it will, I shall have gold for all *[Exit]*

SCENE III *The palace*

Enter three or four PETITIONERS, PETER the Armourer's man being one

1st Petit My masters, let's stand close my Lord Protector will come this way by and by, and then we may deliver our supplications in the quill
2nd Petit Marry the Lord protect him, for he's a good man! Jesu bless him!

Enter SUFFOLK and QUEEN

Peter Here a comes, methinks, and the Queen with him I'll be the first sure

2nd Petit Come back, fool this is the Duke of Suffolk and not my Lord Protector 10

Suf How now, fellow! wouldst any thing with me?

1st Petit I pray, my lord pardon me, I took ye for my Lord Protector

Queen *[Reading]* 'To my Lord Protector! Are your supplications to his lordship? Let me see them what is thine?'
1st Petit Mine is, an't please your Grace against John Goodman my Lord Cardinal's man for keeping my house, and lands and wife, and all, from me 21

Suf Thy wife too! that's some wrong indeed What's yours? What's here! *[Reads]* Against the Duke of Suffolk for enclosing the commons of Melford How now sir knave!
2nd Petit Alas sir I am but a poor petitioner of our whole township

Peter *[Giving his petition]* Against my master Thomas Horner, for saying that the Duke of York was rightful heir to the crown 30

Queen What say'st thou? did the Duke of York say he was rightful heir to the crown?

Peter That my master was? no, forsooth my

master said that he was and that the king was an usurper

Suf Who is there? *[Enter Servant]* Take this fellow in and send for his master with a pursuivant presently we'll hear more of your matter before the king *[Exit Servant with PETER]*

Queen And as for you that love to be protected Under the wings of our Protector's grace *41*
Begin your suits anew and sue to him *[Tears the supplications]*

Away base cullions! Suffolk let them go

All Come let's be gone *[Exeunt]*

Queen My Lord of Suffolk say is this the guise Is this the fashion in the court of England?

Is this the ornament of Britain's isle

And this the royalty of Albion's king?

What shall King Henry be a pupil still

Under the surly Gloucester's governance? *50*

Am I a queen in title and in style

And must be made a subject to a duke?

I tell thee Pole when in the city Tours

Thou ranst a tilt in honour of my love

And stolest away the ladies' hearts of France

I thought King Henry had resembled thee

In courage, courtship and proportion

But all his mind is bent to holiness

To number Ave Marias on his beads

His champions are the prophets and apostles *60*

His weapons holy saws of sacred writ

His study is his tilt yard and his loves

Are brazen images of canonized saints

I would the college of the cardinals

Would choose him Pope and carry him to Rome,

And set the triple crown upon his head

That were a state fit for his holiness

Suf Madam be patient as I was cause

Your Holiness came to England so will I

In England work your Grace's full content *70*

Queen Beside the haughty Protector have we

Baufort

The imperious churchman, Somerset, Buck-

ingham

And grumbling York and not the least of these

But can do more in England than the king

Suf And he of these that can do most of all

Cannot do more in England than the Nevils

Salisbury and Warwick are no simple peers

Queen Not all the clod driveth me half so

much

As that proud dame the Lord Protector's wife

She sneeps it through the court with troop of

ladies

More like an empress than Duke Humphrey's

wife *80*

Strangers in court do take her for the Queen

She bears a duke's revenues on her back

And in her heart she scorns our poverty

Shall I not live to be avenged on her?

Contemptuous base born caller as she is

She vaunted amongst her minions the other day

The very train of her worst wearing gown

Was better worth than all my father's lands *89*

Till Suffolk gave two dishdoms for his daughter

Suf Madam myself have lured a bush for her

And placed a quire of such enticing birds

That she will light to listen to the larks

And never mount to trouble you again

So let her rest and madam list to me

For I am bold to counsel you in this

Although we fancy not the Cardinal

Yet must we join with him and with the lords,

Till we have brought Duke Humphrey in dis-

grace

As for the Duke of York this late complaint *100*

Will make but little for his benefit

So one by one we'll weed them all at last

And you yourself shall steer the happy helm

Soun! a sennet. Enter the KING, DUKE HUMPHREY

OF GLOUCESTER, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, BUCKING-

HAM, YORK, SOMERSET, SALISBURY, WAR-

WICK, and the DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER

King For my part noble lords I care not which

Or Somerset or York all's one to me

Is it? If York have ill demean'd himself in

France

Then let him be deny'd the regenship

Som If Somerset be unworthy of the place,

Let York be regent I will yield to him *109*

War Whether your Grace be worth/ yea or

no

Dispute not that York is the worthier

Car Ambitious Warwick let thy betters speak

War The Cardinal's not my better in the field

Buck All in this presence are thy betters *War-*

wick

War Warwick may live to be the best of all

Sal Peace son! and show some reason *Buck-*

ingham

Why Somerset should be preferred in this

Queen Because the king forsooth will have it

so

Glor Madam the king is old enough himself

To give this censure these are no women's matters

Queen If he be old enough what needs your

Grace *121*

To be Protector of his Excellence?

Glor Madam I am Protector of the realm

And at his pleasure will resign my place

Suf Resign it then and leave thine insolence

Since thou wert king—as who is king, but thou?—

The commonwealth hath daily run to wreck

The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas,
And all the peers and nobles of the realm
Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty 130
Car The commons hast thou rack'd, the clergy's bags

Are lank and lean with thy extortions
Som Thy sumptuous buildings and thy wife's attire

Have cost a mass of public treasury

Buck Thy cruelty in execution
Upon offenders hath exceeded law
And left thee to the mercy of the law

Queen Thy sale of offices and towns in France,
If they were known as the suspect is great,
Would make thee quickly hop without thy head
[*Exit GLOUCESTER* *The QUEEN drops her fan*]

Give me my fan what, minion! can ye not? 141

She gives the DUCHESS a box on the ear

I cry you mercy madam, was it you?

Duch Was't I? yea, I it was, proud French-woman

Could I come near your beauty with my nails,

I'd set my ten commandments in your face

King Sweet aunt be quiet, 'twas against her will

Duch Against her will? good King, look to't in time,

She'll hamper thee, and dandle thee like a baby

Though in this place most master wear no breeches

She shall not strike Dame Eleanor unrevenged
[*Exit*]

Buck Lord Cardinal, I will follow Eleanor
And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds
She's tickled now, her fume needs no spurs
She'll gallop far enough to her destruction [Exit]

Re-enter GLOUCESTER

Glou Now, lords, my choler being overblown
With walking once about the quadrangle,
I come to talk of commonwealth affairs

As for your spiteful false objections

Prove them, and I lie open to the law

But God in mercy so deal with my soul 160

As I in duty love my king and country!

But to the matter that we have in hand

I say my sovereign York is meepest man

To be your regent in the realm of France

Suf Before we make election give me leave

To show some reason of no little force,

That York is most unmeet of any man

York I'll tell thee Suffolk why I am unmeet 170

First for I cannot flatter thee in pride

Next if I be appointed for the place,

My Lord of Somerset will keep me here

Without discharge money, or furniture,

Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands

Last time I danced attendance on his will

Till Paris was besieged, famish'd and lost

War That can I witness and a fouler fact

Did never traitor in the land commit

Suf Peace headstrong Warwick!

War Image of pride, why should I hold my peace?

Enter HORNER, the Armourer, and his man PETER, guarded

Suf Because here is a man accused of treason

Pray God the Duke of York excuse himself! 181

York Doth any one accuse York for a traitor?

King What mean'st thou, Suffolk tell me, what are these?

Suf Please it your Majesty, this is the man
That doth accuse his master of high treason
His words were these that Richard Duke of York

Was rightful heir unto the English crown

And that your majesty was an usurper

King Say, man, were these thy words?

Hor An't shall please your Majesty I never
said nor thought any such matter God is my witness,
I am falsely accused by the villain

Pet By these ten bones, my lords he did speak
them to me in the garret one night, as we were
scouring my Lord of York's armour

York Base dunghill villain and mechanical!

I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's speech

I do beseech your royal Majesty

Let him have all the rigour of the law 199

Hor Alas, my lord hang me if ever I spake the words
My accuser is my prentice, and when I did correct him for his fault the other day he did
vow upon his knees he would be even with me I have good witness of this therefore I beseech
your Majesty do not cast away an honest man for a villain's accusation

King Uncle what shall we say to this in law?

Glou This doom my lord if I may judge

Let Somerset be regent over the French

Because in York this breeds suspicion 210

And let these have a day appointed them

For single combat in convenient place

For he hath witness of his servant's malice

This is the law and this Duke Humphrey's doom

Som I humbly thank your royal Majesty

Hor And I accept the combat willingly

Pet Alas my lord I cannot fight for God's sake
pity my case The spite of man prevaileth against me
O Lord have mercy upon me! I shall never be able to fight a blow O Lord my heart!

Glou Sirrah or you must fight, or else be hang'd

King Away with them to prison and the day
of combat shall be the last of the next month
Come Somerset we'll see thee sent away

[Flourish. Exit]

SCENE IV Gloucester's garden

Enter MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUME, SOUTH
WELL, and BOLINGBROKE

Hume Come my masters the Duchess I tell
you expects performance of your promises

Boling Master Hume we are therefore provid-
ed will her ladyship behold and hear our exor-
cisms?

Hume Ay what else? fear you not her courage

Boling I have heard her reported to be a woman
of an invincible spirit but it shall be convenient
Master Hume that you be by her aloft while we
be busy below and so I pray you, go in God's
name and leave us *[Exit Hume]* Mother Jour-
dain be you prostrate and grovel on the earth
John Southwell read you and let us to our work

Enter DUCHESS aloft *HUME following*

Duch Well say my masters and welcome all
To this gear the sooner the better

Boling Patience good lady wizards! now their
times

Deep night dark night the silent of the night
The time of night when Troy was set on fire 20
The time when screech-owls cry and ban dogs
howl

And spirits walk and ghosts break up their graves
That time best fits the work we have in hand
Madam sit you and fear not whom we raise
We will make fast within a hallow diverge

*Here they do the ceremonies belonging, and make
the circle BOLINGBROKE or SOUTHWELL reads
Conjuro te &c It thunders and lightens
terribly then the Spirit riseth*

Spir Adram

Al Jourdain Asmath

By the eternal God whose name and power
Thou tremblest at answer that I shall ask
For till thou speak thou shalt not pass from
hence 30

Spir Ask what thou wilt That I had said and
done!

Boling *[Reading out of a paper]* First of the
king what shall of him become?

Spir The duke yet lives that Henry shall de-
pose

But him outlive and die a violent death

*As the Spirit speaks SOUTHWELL writes the an-
swer*

Boling What fates await the Duke of Suf-
folk?

Spir By water shall he die and take his end

Boling What shall befall the Duke of Somer-
set?

Spir Let him shun castles

Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains

Than where castles mounted stand 40

Have done for more I hardly can endure

Boling Descend to darkness and the burning
lake!

False fiend avoid!

[Thunder and lightning Exit SPIRIT]

Enter the DUKE OF YORK and the DUKE OF
BUCKINGHAM with their guard and break in

York Lay hands upon these traitors and their
trash

Beldam I think we watch'd you at an inch

What madam are you there? the king and com-
monwealth

Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains

My Lord Protector will I doubt it not

See you well rewarded for these good deserts

Duch Not half so bad as thine to England's
king 50

Injurious duke that threat'st where's no cause

Buck True, madam none at all what call you
this?

Away with them! let them be clapp'd up close

And kept asunder You madam shall with us

Seaford take her to thee

[Exit above DUCHESS and HUME, guarded]

We'll see your trickers here all forthcoming

All away!

[Exit guard with JOURDAIN, SOUTHWELL, &c]
York Lord Buckingham methinks you watch'd
her well

A pretty plot well chosen to build upon!

Now pray my lord let's see the devil's writ 60

What have we here? *[Reads]*

The duke yet lives that Henry shall depose

But him outlive and die a violent death

Why this is just

As the Duchess Romanos vincere posse

Well to the rest

Tell me what fate awaits the Duke of Suffolk?

By water shall he die and take his end

What shall betide the Duke of Somerset?

Let him shun castles

Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains 70

Than where castles mounted stand

Come come my lords

These oracles are hardly attain'd

And hardly understood

The king is now in progress towards Saint

Alban's

With him the husband of this lovely lady

Thither go these news, as fast as horse can carry them

A sorry breakfast for my Lord Protector

Buck Your grace shall give me leave, my Lord of York, 80

To be the post, in hope of his reward

York At your pleasure, my good lord Who's within there, ho!

Enter a Servingman

Invite my Lords of Salisbury and Warwick

To sup with me to-morrow night Away! *[Exeunt]*

ACT II

SCENE I *Saint Alban's*

Enter the KING QUEEN, GLOUCESTER CARDINAL, and SUFFOLK, with FALCONERS halloing

Queen Believe me, lords, for flying at the brook,

I saw not better sport these seven years' day

Yet, by your leave the wind was very high,

And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out

King But what a point, my lord, your falcon made,

And what a pitch she flew above the rest!

To see how God in all his creatures works!

Yea man and birds are fain of climbing high

Suf No marvel an it like your Majesty

My Lord Protector's hawks do tower so well, 10

They know their master loves to be aloft

And bears his thoughts above his falcon a pitch

Glou My lord 'tis but a base ignoble mind

That mounts no higher than a bird can soar

Car I thought as much he would be above the clouds

Glou Ay, my Lord Cardinal? how think you by that?

Were it not good your Grace could fly to heaven?

Amg The treasury of everlasting joy

Car Thy heaven is on earth, thine eyes and thoughts

Beat on a crown the treasure of thy heart 20

Pernicious Protector, dangerous peer,

That smooth st it so with king and commonweal!

Glou What, Cardinal is your priesthood grown peremptory?

Tantene animis celestibus iræ?

Churchmen so hot? good uncle hude such malice,

With such holiness can you do it?

Suf No malice, sir, no more than well becomes

So good a quarrel and so bad a peer

Glou As who my lord?

Suf Why as you my lord

Ant like your lordly Lord protectorship 30

Glou Why, Suffolk, England knows thine insolence

Queen And thy ambition, Gloucester

King I prithee, peace good queen,

And what not on these furious peers,

For blessed are the peacemakers on earth

Car Let me be blessed for the peace I make,

Against this proud Protector with my sword!

Glou *[Aside to CARDINAL]* Faith holy uncle,

would 'twere come to that!

Car *[Aside to GLOUCESTER]* Marry, when thou dar'st

Glou *[Aside to CARDINAL]* Make up no factious numbers for the matter, 40

In thine own person answer thy abuse

Car *[Aside to GLOUCESTER]* Ay where thou dar'st not peep an if thou dar'st,

This evening, on the east side of the grove

King How now my lords!

Car Believe me, cousin Gloucester,

Had not your man put up the fowl so suddenly

We had had more sport *[Aside to GLOUCESTER]*

Come with thy two-hand sword

Glou True, uncle

Car *[Aside to GLOUCESTER]* Are ye advised? the

east side of the grove?

Glou *[Aside to CARDINAL]* Cardinal, I am with you

King Why, how now, uncle Gloucester!

Glou Talking of hawking, nothing else, my lord 50

[Aside to CARDINAL] Now, by God's mother, priest, I'll shave your crown for this,

Or all my fence shall fail

Car *[Aside to GLOUCESTER]* *Medice teipsum—*

Protector see to t well protect yourself

King The winds grow high, so do your stomachs lords

How irksome is this music to my heart!

When such strings jar what hope of harmony?

I pray, my lords let me compound this strife

Enter a TOWNSMAN of Saint Alban's, crying
"A miracle!"

Glou What means this noise?

Fellow, what miracle dost thou proclaim? 60

Towns A miracle! a miracle!

Suf Come to the king and tell him what miracle

Towns Forsooth, a blind man at Saint Alban's shrine,

Within this half hour hath received his sight,

A man that ne'er saw in his life before

King Now, God be praised that to believing souls

Gives light in darkness comfort in despair!

*Enter the MAYOR of Saint Alban's and his brethren
Leaving SIMPCOX between TWO in a chair 51*
Cox's wife following

Car Here com's the townsmen on procession,
To present your highness with the man

King Great is his comfort in this earthly
state

Although by his sight his sin be multiplied 71
Glow Stand by my masters bring him near the
king

His highness pleasure is to talk with him

King Good fellow tell us here the circum-
stance

That we for thee may glorify the Lord
What hast thou been long blind and now re-
stored?

Simp Born blind an't please your Grace

Wife Ay indeed vas he

Suf What woman is this?

Wife His wife an't like your worship 80
Glow Hadst thou been his mother thou couldst
have better told

King Where wert thou born?

Simp At Berwick in the north an't like your
Grace

King Poor soul God's goodness hath been
great to thee

Let never day nor night unhallow'd pass
But still remember what the Lord hath done

Queen Tell me good fellow camest thou here
by chance

Or of devotion to this holy shrine?

Simp God knows of pure devotion being
call'd

A hundred times and oftener in my sleep 90
By good Saint Alban who said Simpcox
come

Come offer at my shrine and I will help thee

Wife Most true forsooth and many time and
oft

Myself have heard a voice to call him so

Car What art thou lame?

Simp Ay God Almighty help me!

Suf How camest thou so?

Simp A fall off of a tree

Wife A plum tree master

Glow How long hast thou been blind?

Simp O born so master

Glow What and wouldst climb a tree?

Simp But that in all my life when I was a
youth

Wife Too true and bought his climbing very
dear 100

Glow Mass thou lovedst plums well, that
wouldst venture so

Simp Alas good master my wife desired some
damsons

And made me climb with danger of my life

Glow A subtle knave! but yet thou shalt not serve

Let me see thine eyes wink now now open
them

In my opinion yet thou see'st not well

Simp Ye master clear as day I thank God
and Saint Alban

Glow Say'st thou me so? What colour is this
cloak of

Simp Red master red as blood 110

Glow Why that's well said What colour is my
gown of?

Simp Black forsooth coal black as jet

King Why then thou know'st what colour
jet is of?

Suf And yet I think yet did he never see

Glow But cloaks and gowns before this day
a many

Wife Never before this day in all his life

Glow Tell me sirrah what's my name?

Simp Alas master I know not

Glow What's his name?

Simp I know not 120

Glow Not his?

Simp No indeed master

Glow What's thine own name?

Simp Saunder Simpcox and if it please you
master

Glow Then Saunder sit there the lyingest
knave in Christendom If thou hadst been born
blind thou might'st as well have known all our
names as thus to name the several colours we do
wear Sight may distinguish of colours but sud-
denly to nominate them all it is impossible My
lords Saint Alban here hath done a miracle and
would ye not think his cunning to be great that
could restore this cripple to his legs again?

Simp O master that you could!

Glow My masters of Saint Alban's have you
not beadles in your own and things called
whips?

May Yes my lord if it please your Grace

Glow Then send for one presently

May Sirrah, to fetch the beadle hither straight

(Exit an Attendant 141)

Glow Now fetch me a stool hither by and by
Now sirrah if you mean to save yourself from
whipping leap me over this stool and run away

Simp Alas master I am not able to stand
alone

You go about to torture me in vain

Enter a BEADLE with whips

Glow Well sir we must have you find your

legs Sirrah, beadle whup him till he leap over that same stool

Bead I will, my lord Come on, sirrah, off with your doubler quickly

Smp Alas, master, what shall I do? I am not able to stand

After the BEADLE hath hit him once, he leaps over the stool and runs away, and they follow and cry, "A miracle!"

King O God seest Thou this, and bearest so long?

Queen It made me laugh to see the villain run

Glou Follow the knave, and take this drab away

Wife Alas, sir, we did it for pure need

Glou Let them be whipped through every market town, till they come to Berwick, from whence they came

160

[Exeunt WIFE BEADLE, MAJOR &c]

Car Duke Humphrey, has done a miracle to-day

Suf True, made the lame to leap and fly away

Glou But you have done more miracles than I, You made in a day, my lord, whole towns to fly

Enter BUCKINGHAM

King What tidings with our cousin Buckingham?

Buck Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold
A sort of naughty persons, lewdly bent,
Under the countenance and confederacy
Of Lady Eleanor, the Protector's wife
The ringleader and head of all this rout, 170
Have practised dangerously against your state,
Dealing with witches and with conjurers
Whom we have apprehended in the fact,
Raising up wicked spirits from under ground,
Demanding of King Henry's life and death
And other of your Highness privy council,
As more at large your Grace shall understand

Car *[Aside to GLOUCESTER]* And so my Lord Protector, by this means

Your lady is forthcoming yet at London
This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge 180

'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour
Glou Ambitious churchman leave to afflict my heart

Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my powers,
And vanquish'd as I am I yield to thee
Or to the meanest groom

King O God, what mischiefs work the wicked ones,

Heaping confusion on their own heads thereby!

Queen Gloucester, see here the tainture of thy nest

And look thyself be faultless, thou wert best

Glou Madam for myself, to heaven I do appeal

190

How I have loved my king and commonweal

And for my wife, I know not how it stands,

Sorry I am to hear what I have heard

Noble she is, but if she have forgot

Honour and virtue and conversed with such

As like to pitch, defile nobility,

I banish her my bed and company

And give her as a prey to law and shame,

That hath dishonour'd Gloucester's honest name

King Well, for this night we will repose us here 200

To morrow toward London back again

To look into this business thoroughly

And call these foul offenders to their answers

And poise the cause in justice' equal scales,

Whose beam stands sure, whose rightful cause

prevails

[Flourish Exeunt]

SCENE II *London The Duke of York's garden*

Enter YORK, SALISBURY, and WARWICK

York Now my good Lords of Salisbury and Warwick

Our simple supper ended give me leave

In this close walk to satisfy myself,

In craving your opinion of my title

Which is infallible to England's crown

Sal My Lord I long to hear it at full

War Sweet York, begin and if thy claim be good

The Nevils are thy subjects to command

York Then thus

Edward the Third, my lords, had seven sons 10

The first Edward the Black Prince, Prince of Wales

The second William of Hatfield, and the third

Lionel Duke of Clarence next to whom

Was John of Gaunt the Duke of Lancaster

The fifth was Edmund Langley, Duke of York,

The sixth was Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester,

William of Windsor was the seventh and last

Edward the Black Prince died before his father

And left behind him Richard his only son

Who after Edward the Third's death reign'd as king, 20

Till Henry Bolingbroke, Duke of Lancaster,

The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt,

Crown'd by the name of Henry the Fourth

Seized on the realm depos'd the rightful king

Sent his poor queen to France, from whence she came,

And him to Pomfret where as all you know

Harmless Richard was murder'd traitorously

War Father the Duke hath told the truth
Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown
York Which now they hold by force and not by
right 30

I or Richard the first son's heir being dead
The issue of the next son should have reign'd
Sal But William of Hatfield died without an
heir

York The third son Duke of Clarence from
whose line

I claim the crown had issue Philippe a daughter
Who married Edmund Mortimer Earl of March
Edmund had issue Roger Earl of March

Roger had issue Edmund Anne and Eleanor
Sal This Edmund in the reign of Bolingbroke
As I have read laid claim unto the crown 40
And but for Owen Glendower had been king
Who kept him in captivity till he died
But to the rest

York His eldest sister Anne
My mother born heir unto the crown
Married Richard Earl of Cambridge who was
son

To Edmund Langley Edward the Third's fifth
son 50

By her I claim the kingdom she was heir
To Roger Earl of March who was the son
Of Edmund Mortimer who married Philippe
Sole daughter unto Lionel Duke of Clarence 50
So if the issue of the elder son
Succeed before the younger I am king

War What plain proceeding is more plain than
this?

Henry doth claim the crown from John of Gaunt
The fourth son York claims it from the third
Till Lionel's issue fails his should not reign
It fails not yet but flourishes in thee

And in thy sons fair slips of such a stock
Then father Salisbury kneel we together
And in this private place be we the first
That shall salute our rightful sovereign 60
With honour of his birthright to the crown

Both Long live our sovereign Richard Eng-
land's king!

York We thank you lord But I am not your
king

Till I be crown'd and that my sword be stain'd
With hear blood of the house of Lancaster
And that's not suddenly to be perform'd
But with advice and silent secrecy
Do you as I do in these dangerous days
Work at the Duke of Suffolk's violence 70
At Beaufort's pride at Somerset's ambition
At Buckingham and all the crew of them
Till they have snared the shepherd of the flock
That virtuous prince the good Duke Humphrey

'Tis that they seek and they in seeking that
Shall find their deaths if York can prophesy
Sal My lord break we off we know your
mind at full

War My heart assures me that the Earl of
Warwick

Shall one day make the Duke of York a king
York And Nevil this I do assure myself
Richard shall live to make the Earl of Warwick
The greatest man in England but the king
{*Exeunt*}

SCENE III A hall of justice

Sound trumpets Enter the KING the QUEEN GLOUCESTER YORK SUFFOLK and SALISBURY the DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER MARGERY JOURDAIN SOUTHWELL HUME and BOLINGBROKE under guard

King Stand forth Dame Eleanor Cobham
Gloucester's wife

In sight of God and us your guilt is great
Receive the sentence of the law for sins
Such as by God's book are adjudged to death
You four from hence to prison back again
From thence unto the place of execution
The witch in Smithfield shall be burnt to ashes
And you three shall be strangled on the gallows
You madam for you are more nobly born
Despoiled of your honour in your life 10
Shall after three days open penance done
Live in your country here in banishment
With Sir John Stanley in the Isle of Man.

Duch Welcome is banishment welcome were
my death

Glou Eleanor the law thou see'st hath
judged thee

I cannot justify whom the law condemns

{*Exeunt DUCHESS and other prisoners guarded*}

Mine eyes are full of tears my heart of grief
Ah Humphrey this dishonour in thine age
Will bring thy head with sorrow to the ground!
I beseech your Majesty give me leave to go 20
Sorrow would solace and mine age would ease
King Stay Humphrey Duke of Gloucester
ere thou go

Give up thy staff Henry will to himself
Protector be and God shall be my hope
My stay my guide and lantern to my feet
And go in peace Humphrey no less beloved
Than when thou wert Protector to thy king

Queen I see no reason why a king of ours
Should be to be protected like a child
God and King Henry govern England's realm 30
Give up your staff sir and the King his realm

Glou My staff? here noble Henry is my staff
As willingly do I the same resign

As e'er thy father Henry made it mine,
And even as willingly at thy feet I leave it
As others would ambitiously receive it
Farewell, good king when I am dead and gone,
May honourable peace attend thy throne! [Exit

Queen Why, now is Henry I king, and Margaret
queen,
And Humphrey Duke of Gloucester scarce him-
self 40

That bears so shrewd a maim, two pulls at once,
His lady banish'd and a limb lopp'd off
This staff of honour raught, there let it stand
Where it best fits to be in Henry's hand

Suf Thus droops this lofty pine and hangs his
sprays,

Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest days
York Lords let him go Please it your majesty,
This is the day appointed for the combat
And ready are the appellant and defendant
The armourer and his man, to enter the lists, 50
So please your Highness to behold the fight

Queen Ay, good my lord, for purposely there
fore

Left I the court, to see this quarrel tried

King O God's name, see the lists and all things
fit

Here let them end it and God defend the right!

York I never saw a fellow worse bested,
Or more afraid to fight than is the appellant
The servant of this armourer, my lords

*Enter at one door, HORNER, the Armourer, and his
NEIGHBOURS drinking to him so much that he is
drunk, and he enters with a drum before him and
his staff with a sand bag fastened to it, and at the
other door PETER, his man, with a drum and sand-
bag and PRENTICES drinking to him*

1st Neigh Here neighbour Horner I drink to
you in a cup of sack and fear not neighbour you
shall do well enough 61

2nd Neigh And here, neighbour, here's a cup
of charneco

3rd Neigh And here's a pot of good double
beer, neighbour drink, and fear not your man

Hor Let it come, I faith and I'll pledge you all,
and a fig for Peter!

1st 'Pren Here, Peter, I drink to thee and be
not afraid

2nd 'Pren Be merry, Peter and fear not thy
master fight for credit of the prentices 71

Peter I thank you all drink and pray for me
I pray you, for I think I have taken my last
draught in this world Here Robin an if I die I
give thee my apron and Will thou shall have
my hammer and here Tom take all the money
that I have O Lord bless me! I pray God! for

I am never able to deal with my master, he hath
learnt so much fence already

Sal Come leave your drinking and fall to
blows Surrah what's thy name? 81

Peter Peter, forsooth

Sal Peter! what more?

Peter Thump

Sal Thump! then see thou thump thy master
well

Hor Masters I am come hither as it were up-
on my man's instigation to prove him a knave
and myself an honest man and touching the
Duke of York I will take my death, I never
meant him any ill, nor the King, nor the Queen
and therefore Peter, have at thee with a down-
right blow!

York Dispatch this knave's tongue begins to
double

Sound trumpets alarum to the combatants!

Alarum They fight, and PETER strikes him down

Hor Hold, Peter, hold! I confess, I confess
treason [Dies

York Take away his weapon Fellow, thank
God, and the good wine in thy master's way 99

Peter O God have I overcome mine enemy in
this presence? O Peter, thou hast prevailed in
right!

King Go take hence that traitor from our
sight,

For by his death we do perceive his guilt

And God in justice hath reveal'd to us

The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,
Which he had thought to have murder'd wrong-
fully

Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward

[So and a flourish Exeunt

SCENE IV A street

Enter GLOUCESTER and his SERVINGMEN, in
mourning cloaks

Glou Thus sometimes hath the brightest day
a cloud,

And after summer evermore succeeds

Barren winter with his wrathful nipping cold
So cares and joys abound as seasons fleet
Sirs, what's o'clock?

Serv Ten my lord

Glou Ten is the hour that was appointed me
To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess
Uncouth may she endure the flinty streets
To tread them with her tender feeling feet
Sweet Nell ill can thy noble mind abrook 10
The object people gazing on thy face,
With envious looks laughing at thy shame
That erst did follow thy proud chariot wheels

When thou didst ride in triumph through the streets

Bu sofe! I think she comes and I'll prepare
My tear stain'd eyes to see her miseries

Enter the DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER in a white sheet and a paper burn'd in her hand with Sir JOHN STANLEY the Sheriff and Officers

Ser. So please your Grace we'll take her from the sheriff

Glou No stir not for your lives let her pass by

Duch Come you my lord to see my open shame

Now thou dost penance too Look how they gaze!

See how the giddy multitude do point

And nod their head and throw their eyes on thee

Ah Gloucester hide thee from their hateful looks

And in thy closet pelt up rue my shame

And ban thine enemies both mine and thine!

Glou Be patient gentle Nell forget this grief

Duch Ah Gloucester teach me to forget my self

For whilst I think I am thy married wife

And thou a prince Protector of this land

Metinks I should not thus be led along

Maid d up in shame with papers on my back

And follow'd with a rabble that rejoice

To see my tears and hear my deep-set groans

The ruthless flint doth cut my tender feet

And when I start the envious people laugh

And bid me be advi'd how I tread

Ah Humphrey can I bear this shameful joke?

Trow se thou that ere I'll look upon the world

Or count them happy that enjoy the sun?

No dark shall be my light and night my day

To think upon my pomp shall be my hell

Sometime I'll say I am Duke Humphrey's wife

And he a prince and ruler of the land

Yet so he ruled and such a prince he was

As he stood by whilst I his forlorn duchess

Was made a wonder and a pointing stock

To every idle rascal follower

But be thou wif'd and blush not at my shame

Nor stir at nothing till the air of death

Hang over thee sure it shortly will

For Suffolk he that can do all in all

With her that hateth thee and hates us all

And York and impious Beaufort that false priest

Have all lined bushes to betray thy wings

And fly thou how thou canst they'll tangle thee

But fear not thou until thy too be snared

Nor never seek prevention of thy foes

Glou Ah Nell forbear thou amnest all awry

I must offend before I be arraigned

And had I twenty times so many foes

And each of them had twenty times their power

All these could not procure me any scar

So long as I am loyal true and crimeless

Wouldst have me rescue thee from this reproach?

Why yet thy scandal were not wiped away

But I in danger for the breach of law

Thy greatest help is quiet gentle Nell

I pray thee sort thy heart to patience

These few days wonder will be quickly worn

Enter a HERALD

Her I summon your Grace to his Majesty's parliament

Hold'n at Bury the first of this next month

Glou And my consent ne'er ask'd herein before!

This is close dealing Well I will be there

[Exit HERALD]

My Nell I take my leave and master sheriff

Let not her penance exceed the King's commission

Sher An't please your Grace here my commission stays

And Sir John Stanley is appointed now

To take her with him to the Isle of Man

Glou Must you Sir John, protect my lady here?

Ser So am I, when in charge may't please your Grace

Glou Entreat her not the worse in that I pray

You use her well the world may laugh again

And I may live to do you kindness if

You do it her and so Sir John farewell!

Duch What gone my lord, and bid me not farewell

Glou Witness my tears I cannot stay to speak

[Exit GLOUCESTER and SERVINGMEN]

Duch Art thou gone too? all comfort go with thee!

For none abides with me my joy is death

Death at whose name I oft have been afraid

Because I wish'd this world's eternity

Stanley I prithee go and take me hence

I care not whither for I beg no favour

Only convey me where thou art commanded

Ser Why madam that is to the Isle of Man

There to be used according to your state

Duch This is bad enough for I am but reproach

And shall I then be used reproachfully?

Ser Like to a duchess and Duke Humphrey's lady

According to that state you shall be used

Duch Sheriff farewell and better than I fare

Although thou hast been conduct of my shame

Ser It is my office and madam pardon me

Duch Ay, ay farewell, thy office is discharged

Come, Stanley, shall we go?

Stan Madam, your penance done, throw off
this sheet

And go we to attire you for our journey

Duch My shame will not be shifted with my
sheet

No it will hang upon my richest robes

And show itself, attire me how I can

Go, lead the way I long to see my prison 110

[*Exeunt*]

ACT III

SCENE I *The Abbey at Bury St Edmund's*

Sound a sennet Enter the KING the QUEEN, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SUFFOLK YORK BUCKINGHAM SALISBURY and WARWICK to the Parliament

King I muse my Lord of Gloucester is not
come

'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man,
Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now

Queen Can you not see? or will ye not observe

The strangeness of his altered countenance?

With what a majesty he bears himself

How insolent of late he is become

How proud, how peremptory and unlike him-
self?

We know the time since he was mild and affable

And if we did but glance a far off look, 10

Immediately he was upon his knee

That all the court admired him for submission

But meet him now, and be it in the morn,

When every one will give the time of day,

He knits his brow and shows an angry eye

And passeth by with stiff unbowed knee,

Disdaining duty that to us belongs

Small curs are not regarded when they grin

But great men tremble when the lion roars,

And Humphrey is no little man in England 20

First note that he is near you in descent

And should you fall he is the next will mount

Me seemeth then it is no policy,

Respecting what a rancorous mind he bears

And his advantage following your decease

That he should come about your royal person

Or be admitted to your Highness' council

By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts,

And when he please to make commotion

'Tis to be feared they all will follow him 30

Now 'tis the spring and weeds are shallow-
rooted

Suffer them now and they'll o'ergrow the garden

And choke the herbs for want of husbandry

The reverent care I bear unto my lord

Made me collect these dangers in the Duke

If it be fond call it a woman's fear

Which fear if better reasons can supplant,

I will subscribe and say I wrong'd the Duke

My Lord of Suffolk Buckingham, and York,

Reprove my allegation, if you can, 40

Or else conclude my words effectual

Suf Well hath your Highness seen into this
duke,

And had I first been put to speak my mind,

I think I should have told your Grace's tale

The Duchess by his subornation,

Upon my life began her devilish practices

Or if he were not privy to those faults,

Yet by reputed of his high descent

As next the King he was successive heir,

And such high vaunts of his nobility, 50

Did instigate the bedlam brain-sick Duchess

By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall

Smooth runs the water where the brook is deep,

And in his simple show he harbours treason

The fox barks not when he would steal the lamb

No, no my sovereign Gloucester is a man

Unsounded yet and full of deep deceit

Car Did he not contrary to form of law,

Devise strange deaths for small offences done?

York And did he not in his protectorship 60

Levy great sums of money through the realm

For soldiers' pay in France and never sent it?

By means whereof the towns each day revolted

Buck Tut these are petty faults to faults

unknown,

Which time will bring to light in smooth Duke

Humphrey

King My lords at once the care you have of

us,

To mow down thorns that would annoy our foot,

Is worthy praise but, shall I speak my con-
science

Our insman Gloucester is as innocent

From meaning treason to our royal person 70

As is the sucking lamb or harmless dove

The Dulc is virtuous mild and too well given

To dream on evil or to work my downfall

Queen Ah, what's more dangerous than this

fond affiance?

Seems he a dove? his feathers are but borrow'd,

For he's disposed as the hateful raven

Is he a lamb? his skin is surely lent him,

For he's inclined as is the ravenous wolf

Who cannot steal a shape that means deceit?

Take heed my lord the welfare of us all 80

Hangs on the cutting short that fraudulent man

Enter SOMERSET

Som All health unto my gracious sovereign!

King Welcome Lord Somerset What news
from France?

Som That all your interest in those territories
is utterly bereft you all is lost

King Cold news Lord Somerset but Gods
will be done!

York [Aside] Cold news for me for I ha I hope
of France

As firmly as I hope for fertile England
Thus are my blossoms blasted in the bud
And caterpillars eat my leaves away
But I will remedy this gear ere long
Or sell my title for a glorious grave

Enter GLOUCESTER

Glor All happiness unto my lord the king!
Pardon my liege that I have stay'd so long
Sif Nay Gloucester know that thou art
come too soon

Unless thou wert more loyal than thou art
I do arrest thee of high treason here

Glor Well Suffolk thou shalt not see me
blush

Nor change my countenance for this arrest
A heart unspotted is not easily daunted
The purest spring is not so free from mud
As I am clear from reason to my sovereign
Who can accuse me? wherein am I guilty?

York 'Tis thought my lord that you took
bribes of France

And being Protector stay'd the soldiers pay
By means whereof his Highness hath lost France

Glor Is it but thought so? what are they that
think it?

I never robb'd the soldiers of their pay
Nor ever had one penny bribe from France
So help me God as I have watch'd the night
Ay night by night in studying good for Eng-
land

That dost that ever I wrested from the king
Or any great I hoarded to my use
Be brought against me at my trial-day!
No many a pound of mine own proper store
Because I would not tax the needy commons
Have I d' spurs'd to the garrisons
And never ask'd for rest tuition

Car It serves you well my lord to say so
much

Glor I say no more than truth so help me
God!

York In your protectorship you did devise
Strange tortures for offenders never heard of
That England was defamed by tyranny

Glor Why 'tis well known that whilst I was
Protector

Pity was all the fault that was in me
For I should melt at an offenders tears

And lowly words were ransom for their fault
Unless it were a bloody murderer
Or foul felonious thief that flood poor passen-
gers

I never gave them condign punishment
Murder indeed that bloody sin I tortured

Above the felon or what trespass else

Suf My lord these faults are easy quickly
answer'd

But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge

Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself

I do arrest you in his Highness name

And here commit you to my Lord Cardinal

To keep until your further time of trial

King My Lord of Gloucester 'tis my special
hope

That you will clear yourself from all suspect

My conscience tells me you are innocent

Glor Ah gracious lord these days are dan-
gerous

Virtue is choked with foul ambition
And charity chased hence by rancour's hand
Foul subornation is predominant

And equity exiled your Highness land

I know their complor is to have my life

And if my death might make this island happy

And prove the period of their tyranny

I would expend it with all willingness

But mine is made the prologue to their play

For thousands more that yet suspect no peril

Will not conclude their plotted tragedy

Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's
malice

And Suffolk's clouds I row his stormy hate

Sharp Buckingham unburthens with his tongue

The envious load that lies upon his heart

And dogged York that reaches at the moon

Whose overweening arm I have pluck'd back

By false accuse doth level at my life

And you my sovereign lady with the rest

Causless have laid disgraces on my head

And with your best endeavor have stirr'd up

My liege to be mine enemy

Ay all of you have laid your heads together—

Myself had notice of your conventicles—

And all to make away my guiltless life

I shall not want false witness to condemn me

Nor store of treasons to augment my guilt

The ancient proverb will be well effected

A staff is quickly found to beat a dog

Car My liege his railing is intolerable

If those that care to keep your royal person

From treason's secret knife and traitors' rage

Be thus upbraided chid and rated at

And the offender granted scope of speech

I will make them cool in zeal unto your Grace

Suf Hath he not twit our sovereign lady here
With ignominious words though clerkly
couch'd,
As if she had suborned some to swear 180
False allegations to overthrow his state?

Queen But I can give the loser leave to chide
Glou Far truer spoke than meant I lose,
indeed,

Beshrew the winners, for they play'd me false!
And well such losers may have leave to speak

Buck He'll wrest the sense and hold us here all
day

Lord Cardinal, he is your prisoner

Car Sirs, take away the Duke, and guard him
sure

Glou Ah! thus King Henry throws away his
crutch

Before his legs be firm to bear his body 190

Thus is the shepherd beaten from thy side

And wolves are gnarling who shall gnaw thee first

Ah, that my fear were false! ah, that it were!

For, good King Henry, thy decay I fear
[*Exit guarded*]

Amg My lords, what to your wisdoms seem-
eth best,

Do or undo, as if ourself were here

Queen What, will your Highness leave the par-
liament?

Amg Ay, Margaret, my heart is drown'd with
grief

Whose flood begins to flow within mine eyes,
My body round engirt with misery, 200

For what's more miserable than discontent?

Ah, uncle Humphrey! in thy face I see

The map of honour truth and loyalty

And yet good Humphrey is the hour to come

That e'er I proved thee false or fear'd thy faith

What louring star now envies thy estate,

That these great lords and Margaret our queen

Do seek subversion of thy harmless life?

Thou never didst them wrong nor no man wrong,

And as the butcher takes away the calf 210

And binds the wretch and beats it when it strays,

Bearing it to the bloody slaughter house,

Even so remorseless have they borne him hence

And as the dam runs lowing up and down,

Looking the way her harmless young one went

And can do nought but wail her darling's loss

Even so myself bewails good Gloucester's case

With sad unhelpful tears and with dimm'd eyes

Look after him and cannot do him good 220

So mighty are his vowed enemies

His fortunes I will weep and twit each groan

Say "Who's a traitor? Gloucester he is none"

[*Exeunt all but QUEEN CARDINAL BEAUFORT*
SUFFOLK, and YORK, SOMERSET remains apart]

Queen Free lords, cold snow melts with the
sun's hot beams

Henry my lord is cold in great affairs,

Too full of foolish pity and Gloucester's show

Beguiles him as the mournful crocodile

With sorrow snares relenting passengers,

Or as the snake roll'd in a flowering bank

With shining checker'd slough, doth sting a

child

That for the beauty thinks it excellent 230

Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I—

And yet herein I judge mine own wit good—

This Gloucester should be quickly rid the world,

To rid us from the fear we have of him

Car That he should die is worthy policy,

But yet we want a colour for his death

'Tis meet he be condemn'd by course of law

Suf But in my mind that were no policy

The King will labour still to save his life,

The commons haply rise, to save his life, 240

And yet we have but trivial argument

More than mistrust, that shows him worthy

death

York So that, by this, you would not have him

die

Suf Ah, York, no man alive so fair as I!

York 'Tis York that hath more reason for his

death

But my Lord Cardinal, and you, my Lord of

Suffolk,

Say as you think and speak it from your souls,

Were't not all one, an empty eagle were set

To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,

As place Duke Humphrey for the King's Pro- 250

tectress?

Queen So the poor chicken should be sure of

death

Suf Madam, 'tis true and were't not madness,

then

To make the fox surveyor of the fold?

Who being accused a crafty murderer,

His guilt should be but idly posted over,

Because his purpose is not executed

No, let him die in that he is a fox

By nature proved an enemy to the flock,

Before his chaps be stain'd with crimson blood,

As Humphrey proved by reasons to my liege

And do not stand on quilllets how to slay him 261

Be it by guns, by snares by subtlety

Sleeping or waking 'tis no matter how

So he be dead for that is good deceit

Which mates him first that first intends deceit

Queen Thrice noble Suffolk, 'tis resolutely

spoke

Suf Not resolute except so much were do

For things are often spoke and seldom mean

But that my heart accordeth with my son we,
 Seeing the deed is meritorious 270
 And to preserve my sovereign from his foe
 Say but the word and I will be his priest
Car But I would have him dead my Lord of
 Suffolk

Ere you can take due orders for a priest
 Say you consent and censure well the deed
 And I'll provide his executioner
 I tender so the safety of my liege
Suf Here is my hand the deed is worthy
 doing

Queen And so say I

York And I and now we three have spoke
 it 280
 It skills not greatly who impugns our doom

Enter a Post

Post Great lords from Ireland am I come
 again

To signify that rebels there are up
 And put the Englishmen unto the sword
 Send succours lords and stop the rane betume
 Before the wound do grow incurable
 For being green there is great hope of help
Car A breach that craves a quick expedient
 stop¹

What counsel give you in this weighty cause?

York That Somerset be sent as revent thither
 'Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ'd 291

Witness the fortune he hath had in France
Som If York with all his far set policy
 Had been the regent there instead of me
 He never would have stay'd in France so long

York No not to lose it all as thou hast done
 I rather would have lost my life betimes
 Than bring a burthen of dishonour home
 By stay in there so long till all were lost
 Show me one scar character'd on thy skin 300
 Men's flesh preserved so whole do seldom win

Queen Nay then, this spark will prove a burning
 fire

If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with
 No more good York's viceroy Somerset be still
 Thy fortune York hadst thou been regent there
 Might happily have proved far worse than his
York What worse than nought? nay then a
 shame take all!

Som And, in the number thee that wishest
 shame!

Car My Lord of York try what your fortune is
 The uncivil kerns of Ireland are in arms 310
 And temper clay with blood of Englishmen
 To Ireland will you lead a band of men
 Collected choicely from each county some
 And try your hap against the Irishmen?

York I will my lord so please his Majesty
Suf Why our authority is his consent
 And what we do establish he confirms
 Then, noble York take thou this task in hand
York I am content provide me soldiers lords
 Whiles I take order for mine own affairs 320
Suf A charge Lord York that I will see per
 form'd

But now return we to the false Duke Humphrey
Car No more of him for I will deal with him
 That henceforth he shall trouble us no more
 And so break off the day is almost spent
 Lord Suffolk you and I must talk of that event
York My Lord of Suffolk within fourteen days
 At Bristol I expect my soldiers

For there I'll ship them all for Ireland
Suf I'll see it truly done my Lord of York

[Exeunt all but York]

York Now York or never steel thy fearful
 thoughts 331

And change misdoubt to resolution
 Be that thou hopest to be or what thou art
 Resign to death it is not worth the enjoying
 Let pale faced fear keep with the mean born man
 And find no harbour in a royal heart
 Faster than spring time showers comes thought
 on thought

And not a thought but thinks on dignity
 My brain more busy than the labouring spider
 Weaves tedious snares to trap mine enemies 340
 Well nobles well 'tis politicly done
 To send me packing with an host of men
 I fear me you but warm the starved snake
 Who cherish'd in your breasts will sting your
 hearts

'Twas men I lack'd and you will give them me
 I take it kindly yet be well assured
 You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands
 Whiles I in Ireland nourish a mighty band
 I will stir up in England some black storm
 Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven or hell
 And thus fell tempest shall not cease to rage 351
 Untill the golden circuit on my head

Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams
 Do calm the fury of this mad bred flaw
 And for a minister of my intent
 I have seduced a headstrong Kentishman,
 John Cade of Ashford

To make commotion as full well he can
 Under the title of John Mortimer
 In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade 360
 Oppose himself against a troop of kerns
 And fought so long till that his thighs with darts
 Were almost like a sharp-quill'd porpentine
 And in the end being rescued I have seen
 Him caper upright like a wild Morisco

Shaking the bloody darts as he his bells
 Full often, like a shag-hair'd crafty kern,
 Hath he conversed with the enemy,
 And undiscover'd come to me again
 And given me notice of their villainies 370
 This devil here shall be my substitute,
 For that John Mortimer, which now is dead,
 In face, in gait, in speech he doth resemble
 By this I shall perceive the commons' mind,
 How they affect the house and claim of York
 Say he be taken, rack'd and tortured,
 I know no pain they can inflict upon him
 Will make him say I moved him to those arms
 Say that he thrive, as 'tis great like he will
 Why, then from Ireland come I with my strength
 And reap the harvest which that rascal sow'd, 381
 For Humphrey being dead, as he shall be
 And Henry put apart, the next for me [Exit]

SCENE II *Bury St Edmund's A room of state*

Enter certain MURDERERS, hastily

1st Mur Run to my Lord of Suffolk let him
 know
 We have dispatch'd the Duke as he commanded
 2nd Mur O that it were to do! What have we
 done?
 Didst ever hear a man so penitent?

Enter SUFFOLK

1st Mur Here comes my lord
 Suf Now sirs have you dispatch'd this thing?
 1st Mur Ay, my good lord, he is dead
 Suf Why, that's well said Go, get you to my
 house,
 I will reward you for this venturous deed
 The King and all the peers are here at hand 10
 Have you laid fair the bed? Is all things well,
 According as I gave directions?
 1st Mur 'Tis, my good lord
 Suf Away! be gone [Exit MURDERERS]

*Sound trumpets Enter the KING the QUEEN CARDI-
 NAL BEAUFORT, SOMERSET with Attendants*

King Go, call our uncle to our presence
 straight,
 Say we intend to try his Grace to-day,
 If he be guilty as 'tis published
 Suf I'll call him presently my noble lord [Exit]
 King Lords, take your places, and, I pray you
 all,
 Perceive no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloucester
 Than from true evidence of good esteem 21
 He be approved in practice culpable
 Queen God forbid any malice should prevail,
 That faultless may condemn a nobleman!

Pray God he may acquit him of suspicion!
 King I thank thee, Meg, these words content
 me much

Re enter SUFFOLK

How now! why look'st thou pale? why tremblest
 thou?

Where is our uncle? what's the matter, Suffolk?

Suf Dead in his bed my lord, Gloucester is
 dead

Queen Marry, God forfend! 30

Car God! secret judgement I did dream to-
 night

The Duke was dumb and could not speak a word

The KING swoons

Queen How fares my lord? Help! lords! the
 King is dead

Som Rear up his body wring him by the nose

Queen Run, go, help! help! O Henry, open thine
 eyes!

Suf He doth revive again madam, be patient

King O heavenly God!

Queen How fares my gracious lord?

Suf Comfort, my sovereign! gracious Henry,
 comfort!

King What, doth my Lord of Suffolk comfort
 me?

Came he right now to sing a raven's note, 40

Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers,

And thinks he that the chirping of a wren

By crying comfort from a hollow breast

Can chase away the first conceived sound?

Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words

Lay not thy hands on me, forbear, I say

Their touch affrights me as a serpent's sting

Thou baleful messenger out of my sight!

Upon thy eye balls murderous tyranny

Sits in grim majesty to fright the world 50

Look not upon me for thine eyes are wounding

Yet do not go away come basilisk,

And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight

For in the shade of death I shall find joy

In life but double death, now Gloucester's dead

Queen Why do you rate my Lord of Suffolk
 thus?

Although the Duke was enemy to him

Yet he most Christianly lamented his death

And for myself foe as he was to me

Might liquid tears or heart-offending groans 60

Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life

I would be blind with weeping sick with groans,

Look pale as primrose with blood-drinking sighs,

And all to have the noble Duke alive

What know I how the world may deem of me?

For it is known we were but hollow friends

It may be judged I made the Duke away

So shall my name with slander & tongue be
wounded

And princes' courts be fill'd with my reproach
This get I by his death: ay, me, unhappy! 70
To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy!

King. Ah, woe is me for Gloucester wretched
man

Queen. Be woe for me more wretched than he
is

What dost thou turn away and hide thy face?
I am no loathsome leper: look on me
What art thou, like the adder, waxen deaf?
Be poisonous too and kill the forlorn queen
Is all thy comfort shut in Gloucester's tomb?
Why then, Dame Margaret was ne'er thy joy
Erect his statua and worship it 80
Art thou make my image but an alms-house sign?
Was I for this nigh wreck'd upon the sea
And twice by awkward wind from England's
bank

Drove back again unto my native clime?
What boded this but well forewarning wind
Did seem to say: "Seek not a scorpion's nest,
Nor set no footing on this unkind shore?"
What did I then, but cursed the gentle gusts
And he that loosed them forth their brazen caves
And bid them blow to ward England's blessed
shore 90

Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock?
Yet Æolus would not be a murderer
But left that hateful office unto thee
The pretty vaulting sea refused to drown me
Knowing that thou wouldst have me drown'd on
shore

With tears as salt as sea through thy unkindness
The splitting rocks cower'd in the sinking sands
And would not dash me with their ragged sides
Because thy sinny heart, more hard than they
Might in thy palace perish Margaret 100
As far as I could ken thy chalky cliffs
When from thy shore the tempest beat us back
I stood upon the hatches in the storm
And when the dishy sky began to rob
My earnest-gaping sight of thy land's view
I took a costly jewel from my neck
A heart it was bound in with diamonds
And threw it towards thy land: the sea received
it

And oh I wish'd thy body might hit my heart
And even with this I lost fair England's view 110
And bid mine eyes be pack'd up with my heart
And call'd them blind and dusty spectacles
For losing ken of Albion's wished coast
How often have I tempt'd Suffolk's tongue,
The agent of thy foul inconstancy
To sit and watch me as Ascanius did

When he to madding Dido would unfold
His father's acts commenced in burning Troy!
Am I not wretched like her? or thou not false like
him?

Ay me! I can no more! die, Margaret! 120
For Henry weeps that thou dost live so long

None within. Enter WARWICK, SALISBURY
and many COMMONS

War. It is reported mighty sovereign
Thy good Duke Humphrey traitorously is murder'd

By Suffolk and the Cardinal Beaufort's means
The commons like an angry hive of bees
That wait their leader scatter up and down
And call for who they sting in his revenge
Myself have calm'd their spleenful mutiny
Until they hear the order of his death

King. That he is dead, good Warwick, is too
true 130

But how he died God knows: not Henry
Enter his chamber view his breathless corpse
And comment then upon his sudden death

War. That shall I do my liege: stay Salis-
bury

With the rude multitude till I return {Exit
King. O Thou that judgest all things stay my
thoughts

My thoughts that labour to persuade my soul
Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey's
life!

If my suspect be false forgive me God
For judgement only doth belong to thee 140
Fain would I go to chafe his pale lips
With twenty thousand kisses and to drain
Upon his face an ocean of salt tears
To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk
And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling
But all in vain are these mean obsequies
And to survey his dead and earthly image
What were it but to make my sorrow greater?

*Re-enter WARWICK and others bearing Gloucester's
body on a bier*

War. Come hither gracious sovereign view
this body

King. That is to see how deep my grave is
made 150

For with his soul fled all my worldly solace
For seeing him I see my life in death

War. As surely as my soul intends to live
With that dread king that took our state upon
him

To free us from his father's wrathful curse,
I do believe that violent hands were laid
Upon the life of this thrice-famed duke

Suf A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn tongue!

What instance gives Lord Warwick for his vow?

War See how the blood is settled in his face

Of have I seen a timely-parted ghost, 161

Of ashy semblance meagre, pale and bloodless

Being all descended to the labouring heart

Who in the conflict that it holds with death,

Attracts the same for aidance 'gainst the enemy,

Which with the heart there cools and ne'er returneth

To blush and beautify the cheek again

But see, his face is black and full of blood,

His eye balls further out than when he lived

Staring full ghastly like a strangled man, 170

His hair uprear'd, his nostrils stretched with struggling,

His hands abroad display'd as one that grasp'd

And tugg'd for life and was by strength subdued

Look, on the sheets his hair, you see is sticking,

His well proportion'd beard made rough and rugged,

Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodged

It cannot be but he was murder'd here,

The least of all these signs were probable

Suf Why Warwick, who should do the Duke to death?

Myself and Beaufort had him in protection 180

And we, I hope, sir, are no murderers

War But both of you were vow'd Duke Humphrey's foes

And you, forsooth had the good Duke to keep

'Tis like you would not feast him like a friend,

And 'tis well seen he found an enemy

Queen Then you, belike, suspect these noble-men

As guilty of Duke Humphrey's timeless death

War Who finds the heifer dead and bleeding fresh

And sees fast by a butcher with an axe

But will suspect 'twas he that made the slaughter?

Who finds the partridge in the puttock's nest 191

But may imagine how the bird was dead

Although the kite soar with unbloodied beak?

Even so suspicious is this tragedy

Queen Are you the butcher, Suffolk? Where's your knife?

Is Beaufort term'd a kite? Where are his talons?

Suf I wear no knife to slaughter sleeping men,

But here's a vengeful sword rusted with ease,

That shall be scour'd in his rancorous heart 199

That slanders me with murder's crimson badge

Say, if thou darest proud Lord of Warwickshire

That I am faulty in Duke Humphrey's death

[*Exeunt* CARDINAL, SOMERSET and others

War What dares not Warwick, if false Suffolk dare him?

Queen He dares not calm his contumelious spirit Nor cease to be an arrogant controller

Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times

War Madam, be still, with reverence may I say,

For every word you speak in his behalf

Is slander to your royal dignity

Suf Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demeanour!

If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much, 211

Thy mother took into her blameful bed

Some stern untutor'd churl and noble stock

Was graft with crab-tree slip whose fruit thou art

And never of the Nevils' noble race

War But that the guilt of murder bucklers thee

And I should rob the deathsmen of his fee

Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames,

And that my sovereign's presence makes me mild 219

I would false murderous coward on thy knee

Make thee beg pardon for thy passed speech

And say it was thy mother that thou meant'st,

That thou thyself wast born in bastardy,

And after all this fearful homage done,

Give thee thy hire and send thy soul to hell,

Pernicious blood sucker of sleeping men!

Suf Thou shalt be waking while I shed thy blood,

If from this presence thou darest go with me

War Away even now, or I will drag thee hence

Unworthy though thou art I'll cope with thee 230

And do some service to Duke Humphrey's ghost

[*Exeunt* SUFFOLK and WARWICK

King What stronger breastplate than a heart untainted!

Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel just,

And he but naked though lock'd up in steel,

Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted

A noise within

Queen What noise is this?

Re-enter SUFFOLK and WARWICK, with their weapons drawn

King Why, how now, lords! your wrathful weapons drawn

Here in our presence! dare you be so bold?

Why what tumultuous clamour have we here?

Suf The traitorous Warwick with the men of Bury 240

Set all upon me mighty sovereign

Sal [*To the commons entering*] Sirs, stand apart the King shall know your mind

Dread lord the commons send you word by me,

Unless Lord Suffolk straight be done to death,

Or banished fair England's territories
They will by violence tear him from your palace
And torture him with grievous lingering death
They say by him the good Duke Humphrey
died

They say in him they fear your Highness' death
And mere instinct of love and loyalty 250
Free from a stubborn opposite intent
As being thought to contradict your liking
Makes them thus forward in his banishment
They say in care of your most royal person
That if your Highness should intend to sleep
And charge that no man should disturb your rest
In pain of your dislike or pain of death
Yet notwithstanding such a strait edict
Were there a serpent seen with forked tongue
That slyly glided towards your Majesty 260
It were but necessary you were waked
Lest being suffered in that harmful slumber
The mortal worm might make the sleep eternal
And therefore do they cry though you forbid
That they will guard you whether you will or
no

From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is
With whose envenomed and fatal sting
Your loving uncle twenty times his worth
They say is shamefully bereft of life
Commons [Hithin] An answer from the king
my Lord of Salisbury! 270
Suf 'Tis like the commons' rude unpolish'd
hands

Could send such message to their sovereign
But you my lord were glad to be employ'd
To show how quaint an orator you are
But all the honour Salisbury hath won
Is that he was the lord ambassador
Sent from a sort of tinkers to the king
Commons [Hithin] An answer from the king
or we will all break in!

Am Go Salisbury and tell them all from me
I thank them for their tender loving care 280
And had I not been cited so by them
Yet did I purpose as they do entreat
For sure my thoughts do hourly prophesy
Mischaunce unto my state by Suffolk's means
And therefore by His majesty I swear
Whose far unworthy deputy I am
He shall not breathe infection in this air
But three days longer on the pain of death

[*Exit Salisbury*]
Que O Henry let me plead for gentle Suffolk!
King Ungentle queen to call him gentle Suffolk!
folk! 290

No more I say if thou dost plead for him
Thou wilt but add increase unto my wrath
Had I but said, I would have kept my word,

But when I swear it is irrevocable
If after three days' space thou here be st found
On any ground that I am ruler of
The world shall not be ransom for thy life
Come Warwick come good Warwick go with
me

I have great matters to impart to thee

[*Exeunt all but Queen and Suffolk*]
Queen Mischaunce and sorrow go along with
you! 300

Heart's discontent and sour affliction
Be playfellows to keep you company!
There's two of you the devil make a third!
And threefold vengeance tend upon your steps!
Suf Cease gentle queen, these execrations
And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave
Queen Fie coward woman and soft hearted
wretch!

Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemy?
Suf A plague upon them! wherefore should I
curse them?

Would curses kill as doth the mandrake's groan
I would invent as bitter searching terms 310
As curse as harsh and horrible to hear
Deliver d strongly through my fixed teeth
With full as many signs of deadly hate,
As lean faced Envy in her loathsome cave
My tongue should stumble in mine earnest words
Mine eyes should sparkle like the beaten flint
Mine hair be fix'd on end as one distract
Ay every joint should seem to curse and ban
And even now my burthen'd heart would break
Should I not curse them? Poison be their
drink! 320

Gall worse than gall the daintiest that they
taste!
Their sweetest shade a grove of cypress trees!
Their chiefest prospect murdering basilisks!
Their softest touch as smart as lizards' stings!
Their music frightful as the serpent's hiss
And boding screech-owls make the concert full!
All the foul terrors in dark seated hell—

Queen Enough sweet Suffolk thou torment'st
thyself
And these dread curses like the sun against glass
Or like an overcharged gun, recoil 330
And turn the force of them upon thyself
Suf You bade me ban and will you bid me
leave?

Now by the ground that I am banish'd from
Well could I curse away a winter's night
Though standing naked on a mountain top
Where biting cold would never let grass grow
And think it but a minute spent in sport
Queen O let me entreat thee cease Give me
thy hand

That I may dew it with my mournful tears, 340
Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place,
To wash away my woful monuments
O, could this kiss be printed in thy hand,
That thou might'st think upon these by the seal,
Through whom a thousand sighs are breathed
for thee!

So get thee gone, that I may know my grief,
'Tis but surmised whiles thou art standing by,
As one that surfeits thinking on a want
I will repeal thee or, be well assured
Adventure to be banished my self 350
And banished I am, if but from thee
Go, speak not to me, even now be gone
O go not yet! Even thus two friends condemn'd
Embrace and kiss and take ten thousand leaves,
Loather a hundred times to part than die
Yet now farewell and farewell life with thee!
Suf Thus is poor Suffolk ten times banished
Once by the king, and three times thrice by thee
'Tis not the land I care for wert thou thence,
A wilderness is populous enough, 360
So Suffolk had thy heavenly company
For where thou art, there is the world itself,
With every several pleasure in the world,
And where thou art not, desolation
I can no more live thou to joy thy life,
Myself no joy in nought but that thou livest

Enter VAUX

Queen Whither goes Vaux so fast? what news,
I prithee?

Vaux To signify unto his Majesty
That Cardinal Beaufort is at point of death,
For suddenly a grievous sickness took him, 370
That makes him gasp and stare and catch the air,
Blaspheming God and cursing men on earth
Sometime he talks as if Duke Humphrey's ghost
Were by his side sometime he calls the King
And whispers to his pillow as to him
The secrets of his overcharged soul
And I am sent to tell his Majesty
That even now he cries aloud for him

Queen Go tell this heavy message to the King
[Exit VAUX]

Alas! what is this world! what news are these!
But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loss, 380
Omitting Suffolk's exile, my soul's treasure?
Why only, Suffolk, mourn I not for thee
And with the southern clouds contend in tears
Theirs for the earth's increase mine for my
sorrow?

Now get thee hence the King, thou know'st, is
coming

If thou be found by me thou art but dead
Suf If I depart from thee I cannot live,

And in thy sight to die, what were it else
But like a pleasant slumber in thy lap? 390
Here could I breathe my soul into the air,
As mild and gentle as the cradle-babe
Dying with mother's dug between its lips
Where from thy sight I should be raging mad
And cry out for thee to close up mine eyes
To have thee with thy lips to stop my mouth,
So shouldst thou either turn my flying soul,
Or I should breathe it so into thy body,
And then it lived in sweet Elysium
To die by thee were but to die in jest, 400
From thee to die were torture more than death
O let me stay befall what may befall!

Queen Away! though parting be a fretful corro-
sive

It is applied to a deathful wound
To France sweet Suffolk let me hear from thee,
For wheresoe'er thou art in this world's globe,
I'll have an Iris that shall find thee out

Suf I go

Queen And take my heart with thee
Suf A jewel lock'd into the wofull st cask
That ever did contain a thing of worth 410
Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we
Thus way fall I to death

Queen This way for me
[Exeunt severally]

SCENE III A bedchamber

Enter the KING SALISBURY WARWICK, to the
CARDINAL in bed

King How fares my lord? speak, Beaufort, to
thy sovereign

Car If thou be'st death, I'll give thee England's
treasure

Enough to purchase such another island,
So thou wilt let me live and feel no pain

King Ah what a sign it is of evil life,
Where death's approach is seen so terrible!

War Beaufort it is thy sovereign speaks to thee

Car Bring me unto my trial when you will
Died he not in his bed? where should he die?

Can I make men live, whether they will or no? 10
O torture me no more! I will confess

Alive again? then show me where he is
I'll give a thousand pound to look upon him
He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them
Comb down his hair, look, look! it stands up-
right

Like lime twigs set to catch my winged soul
Give me some drink and bid the apothecary

Bring the strong poison that I bought of him
King O thou eternal Mover of the heavens,

Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch! 20
O beat away the busy meddling fiend

That lays strong siege unto this wretch's soul
And from his bosom purge this black despair!
War See how the pangs of death do make him
grim!

Sir Disturb him not: let him pass peaceably
King Peace to his soul: if God's good pleasure
be!

Lord Cardinal: if thou think'st on heaven's bliss
Hold up thy hand: make signal of thy hope
He dies: and makes no sign. O God, forgive
him!

War So bad a death argues a monstrous life

King Forbear to judge: for we are sinners all
Close up his eyes and draw the curtain close
And let us all to meditation [Exeunt

ACT IV

SCENE I The coast of Kent

All rum Fight at sea. Ordinance goes off. Enter a
CAPTAIN & MASTER & MASTER'S-MATE WALTER
WHITMORE and others with him SUFFOLK dis-
guised and other gentlemen prisoners

Capt The gaudy blabbing and remorseful day
Is crept into the bosom of the sea

And now loud howling wolves arouse the jades
That draw the tragic melancholy night
Who with their drowsy slow and flagging
win-
dows

Clip dead men's graves and from their rusty
jaws

Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air
Therefore bring forth the soldiers of our prize
For whilst out pinnace anchors in the Downs
Here hall they make their ransom on the sand 10
Or with their blood stain the discoloured shore
Master: this prisoner freely give I thee
And thou that art his mate: make boot of this

The other: Walter Whitmore is thy share
1st Gent What is my ransom, master? let me
know

Master A thousand crowns: or else lay down your
head

Master And so much shall you give: or off goes
yours

Capt What think you much to pay two thousand
sand crowns

And bear the name and port of Kent? Men
Cut both the villains' throats: for die you shall
The lives of those which we have lost in fight 21
Be counterpoised with such a pretty sum!

1st Gent I'll give it sir: and therefore spare my
life

2nd Gent And so will I: and will come home for it
straight

Whit I lost mine eye in laying the prize aboard

And therefore to revenge it: shalt thou die

[To SUFFOLK

And so should these: if I might have my will

Capt Be not so rash: take ransom: let him live

Suf Look on my George: I am a gentleman
Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid 30

Whit And so am I: my name is Walter Whit-
more

How now! why start'st thou? what doth death
affright?

Suf Thy name affrights me, in whose sound is
death

A cunning man did calculate my birth

And told me that by water I should die

Yet let not this make thee be bloody minded

Thy name is Gaultier: being rightly sounded

Whit Gaultier or Walter: which it is I care
not

Never yet did base dishonour blur our name,
But with our sword we wiped away the blot 40

Therefore when merchant like I sell revenge,

Broke be my sword: my arms torn and detached,

And I proclaim'd a coward through the world!

Suf Stay: Whitmore: for thy prisoner is a
prince

The Duke of Suffolk: William de la Pole

Whit The Duke of Suffolk muffled up in
rags!

Suf Ay: but these rags are no part of the
duke

Jove sometime went disguised: and why not I?

Capt But Jove was never slain: as thou shalt be

Suf Obscure and lowly swain: King Henry's
blood 50

The honourable blood of Lancaster

Must not be shed by such a jaded groom

Hast thou not kiss'd thy hand and held my stir-
rup?

Bare-headed plodded by my foot-cloth mule
An I thought thee happy when I shook my head!

How often hast thou waited at my cup

Fed from my trencher: kneel'd down at the
board

When I have feasted with Queen Margaret?

Remember it: and let it make thee crest-fall'n, 60

Ay: and allay this thy abortive pride

How in our voiding lobby hast thou stood

And duly waited for my coming forth?

Thus hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf

And therefore shall it charm thy riotous tongue
Whit Speak, captain: hall I stab thee forelorn
swain?

Capt First let my words stab him: as he hath
me

Suf Base slave: thy words are blunt: and so art
thou

Cap Convey him hence and on our long boat side
Strike off his head
Suf Thou dar'st not, for thy own
Cap Yes, Pole
Suf Pole'
Cap Pool! Sir Pool! lord! 70

Ay, kennel, puddle, sink, whose filth and dirt
Troubles the silver spring where England drinks
Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth
For swallowing the treasure of the realm
Thy lips that kiss'd the queen shall sweep the
ground,
And thou that smil'd at good Duke Humphrey's
death

Against the senseless winds shalt grin in vain,
Who in contempt shall hiss at thee again
And wedded be thou to the hags of hell,
For daring to affy a mighty lord 80
Unto the daughter of a worthless king,
Having neither subject wealth, nor diadem
By devilish policy art thou grown great
And, like ambitious Sylla, overgorged
With gobbets of thy mother's bleeding heart
By thee Anjou and Maine were sold to France,
The false revolting Normans thorough thee
Disdain to call us lord and Picardy
Hath slain their governors surprised our forts
And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home 90
The princely Warwick, and the Nevils all
Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in
vain,

As hating thee, are rising up in arms
And now the house of York, thrust from the
crown
By shameful murder of a guiltless king
And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,
Burns with revenging fire, whose hopeful colours
Advance our half faced sun, striving to shine
Under the which is writ "*Invictus nubibus*" 100
The commons here in Kent are up in arms
And, to conclude, reproach and beggary
Is crept into the palace of our king

And all by thee Away! convey him hence
Suf O that I were a god to shoot forth
thunder

Upon these paltry, servile abject drudges!
Small things make base men proud this villain
here,
Being captain of a pinnace threatens more
Than *Bargulus* the strong Illyrian pirate
Drones suck not eagles' blood but rob bee hives
It is impossible that I should die 110
By such a lowly vassal as thyself
Thy words move rage and not remorse in me
I go of message from the Queen to France,

I charge thee waft me safely cross the Channel
Capt Walter,—
Whit Come, Suffolk, I must waft thee to thy
death

Suf *Gelidus timor occupat artus*, it is thee I fear
Whit Thou shalt have cause to fear before I
leave thee

What are ye daunted now? now will ye stoop?
1st Gent My gracious lord, entreat him, speak
him fair 120

Suf Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and rough,
Used to command, untaught to plead for favour
Far be it we should honour such as these
With humble suit no, rather let my head
Stoop to the block than these knees bow to any
Save to the God of heaven and to my king,
And sooner dance upon a bloody pole
Than stand uncover'd to the vulgar groom
True nobility is exempt from fear

More can I bear than you dare execute 130

Cap Hail him away, and let him talk no more
Suf Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye can,
That this my death may never be forgot!
Great men oft die by vile bezonians
A Roman sword and banditto slave
Murder'd sweet Tully, Brutus' bastard hand
Stab'd Julius Cæsar, savage islanders
Pompey the Great and Suffolk dies by pirates

[*Exeunt WHITMORE and others with SUFFOLK*]

Cap And as for these whose ransom we have
set,

It is our pleasure one of them depart 140

Therefore come you with us and let him go
[*Exeunt all but the FIRST GENTLEMAN*]

Re-enter WHITMORE with SUFFOLK's body

Whit There let his head and lifeless body lie
Until the queen his mistress bury it [Exit]

1st Gent O barbarous and bloody spectacle!
His body will I bear unto the king
If he revenge it not, yet will his friends,
So will the Queen that living held him dear
[Exit with the body]

SCENE II Blackheath

Enter GEORGE BEVIS and JOHN HOLLAND

Bevis Come, and get thee a sword, though made
of a lath they have been up these two days
Holl They have the more need to sleep now,
then

Bevis I tell thee Jack Cade the clothier means
to dress the commonwealth and turn it and set a
new nap upon it

Holl So he had need for us threadbare Well, I
say it was never merry world in England since
gentlemen came up 10

Bevis O miserable age! virtue is not regarded in handicrafts-men

Holl The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons

Bevis Nay more the King's council are no good workmen

Holl True and yet it is said, Labour in thy vocation which is as much to say as Let the magistrates be labouring men and therefore should we be magistrates 20

Bevis Thou hast hit it for there's no better sign of a brave mind than a hard hand

Holl I see them! I see them! There's Best's son, the tanner of Winham—

Bevis He shall have the skins of our enemies to make dog's leather of

Holl And Dick the Butcher—

Bevis Then is sin struck down like an ox and iniquity's throat cut like a calf

Holl And Smith the weaver— 30

Bevis Argo their thread of life is spun

Holl Come come let's fall in with them

Drum Enter CADE, DICK the Butcher with the Weaver and a Sawyer with infinite numbers

Cade We John Cade, so termed of our supposed father—

Dick [Aside] Or rather of stealing a cade of herrings

Cade For our enemies shall fall before us inspired with the spirit of putting down kings and princes—Command silence

Dick Silence! 40

Cade My father was a Mortimer—

Dick [Aside] He was an honest man and a good bricklayer

Cade My mother a Plantagenet—

Dick [Aside] I knew her well she was a mud wife

Cade My wife descended of the Lacies—

Dick [Aside] She was indeed a podder's daughter and sold many laces 49

Smith [Aside] But now of late not able to travel with her furred pack she washes bucks here at home

Cade Therefore am I of an honourable house

Dick [Aside] Ay by my faith the field is honourable and there was he born under a hedge for his father had never a house but the cage

Cade Valiant I am

Smith [Aside] A must needs for beggary is valiant

Cade I am able to endure much 60

Dick [Aside] No question of that for I have seen him whipped three market-days together

Cade I fear neither sword nor fire

Smith [Aside] He need not fear the sword for his coat is of proof

Dick [Aside] But methinks he should stand in fear of fire being burnt the hand for stealing of sheep

Cade Be brave then for your captain is brave and vows reformation There shall be in England seven halfpenny loaves sold for a penny the three hooped pot shall have ten hoops and I will make it felony to drink small beer all the realm shall be in common and in Cheapside shall my palfrey go to grass and when I am king as king I will be—

All God save your majesty!

Cade I thank you good people there shall be no money all shall eat and drink on my score and I will apparel them all in one livery that they may agree like brothers and worship me their lord

Dick The first thing we do let's kill all the lawyers

Cade Nay that I mean to do is not this lamentable thing that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment? that parchment being scribbled over should undo a man? Some say the bee stings but I say tis the bee's wax for I did but seal once to a thing and I was never mine own man since How now! who's there? 91

Enter some bringing forward the CLERK OF CHATHAM

Smith The clerk of Chatham he can write and read and cast account

Cade O monstrous!

Smith We took him setting of boys' copies

Cade Here's a villain!

Smith Has a book in his pocket with red letters in it

Cade Nay then, he is a conjurer

Dick Nay he can make obligations and write court hand 101

Cade I am sorry for it the man is a proper man of mine honour unless I find him guilty he shall not do Come hither surrah I must examine thee what is thy name?

Clerk Emmanuel

Dick They use to write it on the top of letters twill go hard with you

Cade Let me alone Do it thou use to write thy name? or hast thou a mark to thyself like an honest plain dealing man? 111

Clerk Sir I thank God I have been so well brought up that I can write my name

All He hath confessed away with him! he's a villain and a traitor

Cade Away with him, I say! hang him with his

pen and ink horn about his neck

[*Exit one with the CLERK*]

Enter MICHAEL

Much Where's our general?

Cade Here I am, thou particular fellow 119

Much Fly, fly, fly! Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother are hard by, with the King's forces

Cade Stand, villain stand, or I'll fell thee down
He shall be encountered with a man as good as himself he is but a knight, is a?

Much No

Cade To equal him, I will make myself a knight presently [*Kneels*] Rise up Sir John Mortimer [*Rises*] Now have at him!

Enter SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD and WILLIAM STAFFORD, his Brother, with drum and soldiers

H Staf Rebelious hunds, the filth and scum of Kent, 130

Mark'd for the gallows, lay your weapons down,
Home to your cottages, forsake this groom
The King is merciful, if you revolt

W Staf But angry, wrathful, and inclined to blood,

If you go forward, therefore yield, or die

Cade As for these silken coated slaves, I pass not

It is to you, good people, that I speak
Over whom, in time to come I hope to reign,
For I am rightful heir unto the crown

H Staf Villain, thy father was a plasterer, 140
And thou thyself a sheerman, art thou not?

Cade And Adam was a gardener

W Staf And what of that?

Cade Marry this Edmund Mortimer, Earl of March,

Married the Duke of Clarence' daughter, did he not?

H Staf Ay, sir

Cade By her he had two children at one birth

W Staf That's false

Cade Ay, there's the question, but I say, 'tis true

The elder of them, being put to nurse, 150
Was by a beggar-woman stolen away,
And ignorant of his birth and parentage
Became a bricklayer when he came to age

His son am I, deny it, if you can

Dick Nay, 'tis too true, therefore he shall be king

Smuli Sir, he made a chimney in my father's house, and the bricks are alive at this day to testify it, therefore deny it not

H Staf And will you credit this base drudge's words,

That speaks he knows not what?

160

All Ay, marry, will we, therefore get ye gone
W Staf Jack Cade, the Duke of York hath taught you this

Cade [*Aside*] He lies, for I invented it myself
Go to, sirrah, tell the King from me that for his father's sake, Henry the Fifth in whose time boys went to span counter for French crowns, I am content he shall reign, but I'll be Protector over him

Dick And furthermore, we'll have the Lord Say's head for selling the dukedom of Maine 170

Cade And good reason, for thereby is England maimed, and fain to go with a staff, but that my puissance holds it up Fellow kings I tell you that that Lord Say hath gelded the commonwealth, and made it an eunuch and more than that, he can speak French, and therefore he is a traitor

H Staf O gross and miserable ignorance!

Cade Nay answer if you can the Frenchmen are our enemies, go to, then I ask but this can he that speaks with the tongue of an enemy be a good counsellor, or no?

All No no, and therefore we'll have his head
W Staf Well, seeing gentle words will not prevail

Assail them with the army of the King

H Staf Herald away and throughout every town

Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade,
That those which fly before the battle ends
May, even in their wives and children's sight
Be hang'd up for example at their doors 190
And you that be the King's friends, follow me

[*Exeunt the TWO STAFFORDS and soldiers*]

Cade And you that love the commons, follow me

Now show yourselves men, 'tis for liberty
We will not leave one lord, one gentleman
Spare none but such as go in clouted shoon,
For they are thrifty honest men and such
As would but that they dare not, take our parts

Dick They are all in order and march toward us

Cade But then are we in order when we are most out of order Come, march forward 200

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III Another part of Blackheath

Alarums to the fight wherein both the STAFFORDS are slain *Enter CADE and the rest*

Cade Where's Dick the butcher of Ashford?

Dick Here, sir

Cade They fell before thee like sheep and oxen, and thou behav'dst thyself as if thou hadst been in thine own slaughter-house therefore thus will

I reward thee the Lent shall be as long again as it is and thou shalt have a licence to kill for a hundred lacking one

Dick I desire no more 10

Cade And to speak truth thou deservest no less This monument of the victory will I bear [putting on Sir Humphrey's brigandine] and the bodies shall be dragged at my horse heels till I do come to London where we will have the mayor's sword borne before us

Dick If we mean to thrive and do good break open the gaols and let out the prisoners

Cade Fear not that I warrant thee Come let's march towards London [Exeunt 20]

SCENE IV London The palace

Enter the KING with a supplication and the QUEEN with Suffolk's head the DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM and the LORDS

Queen O! have I heard that grief softens the mind

And makes it fearful and degenerate

Think therefore on revenge and cease to weep

But who can cease to weep and look on this?

Here may his head lie on my throbbing breast

But where's the body that I should embrace?

Buck What answer makes your grace to the rebel's supplication?

King I'll send some holy bishop to entreat For God forbid so many simple souls 10

Should perish by the sword! And I myself

Rather than bloody war shall cut them short

Will parley with Jack Cade their general

But stay I'll read it over once again

Queen Ah barbarous villains! hath this lovely face

Ruled like a wandering planet over me

And could it not enforce them to relent

That were unworthy to behold the same?

King Lord Say Jack Cade hath sworn to have thy head

Say Ay but I hope your Highness shall have his 20

King How now madam!

Still lamenting and mourning for Suffolk's death?

I fear me love if that I had been dead

Thou wouldest not have mourn'd so much for me

Queen No my love I should not mourn, but die for thee

Enter a MESSENGER

King How now what news? why comest thou in such haste?

Messenger The rebels are in Southwark fly my lord!

Jack Cade proclaims himself Lord Mortimer

Descended from the Duke of Clarence house

And calls your Grace usurper openly 30

And vows to crown himself in Westminster

His army is a ragged multitude

Of hinds and peasants rude and merciless

Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death

Hath given them heart and courage to proceed

All scholars lawyers courtiers gentlemen,

They call false caterpillars and intend their death

King O graceless men! they know not what they do

Buck My gracious lord retire to Killingworth Until a power be raised to put them down 40

Queen Ah were the Duke of Suffolk now alive

These Kentish rebels would be soon appeased!

King Lord Say the traitors hate thee

Therefore away with us to Killingworth

Say So might your Grace's person be in danger

The sight of me is odious in their eyes

And therefore in this city will I stay

And live alone as secret as I may

Enter another MESSENGER

Messenger Jack Cade hath gotten London bridge 50

The citizens fly and forsake their houses

The rascal people thirsting after prey

Join with the traitor and they jointly swear

To spoil the city and your royal court

Buck Then linger not my lord away take horse

King Come Margaret God our hope will succour us

Queen My hope is gone now Suffolk is deceased

King Farewell my lord trust not the Kentish rebels

Buck Trust nobody for fear you be betray'd

Say The trust I have is in mine innocence 60

And therefore am I bold and resolute [Exeunt]

SCENE V London The Tower

Enter LORD SCALDS upon the Tower talking

Then enter two or three CITIZENS below

Scalds How now! is Jack Cade slain?

Citizen No my lord not likely to be slain for they have won the bridge killing all those that withstand them the Lord Mayor craves aid of your honour from the Tower to defend the city from the rebels

Scalds Such aid as I can spare you shall command

But I am troubled here with them myself

The rebels have assayed to win the Tower

But get you to Smithfield and gather head 10

And thither I will send you Matthew Gosse

Fight for your king your country and your lives

And so, farewell for I must hence again

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE VI *London Cannon Street*

Enter JACK CADE and the rest, and strikes his staff on London stone

Cade Now is Mortimer lord of this city. And here, sitting upon London stone, I charge and command that, of the city's cost, the pissing-conduit run nothing but claret wine this first year of our reign. And now henceforward it shall be treason for any that calls me other than Lord Mortimer.

Enter a SOLDIER, running

Sold Jack Cade! Jack Cade!

Cade Knock him down there [*They kill him*]

Smith If this fellow be wise he'll never call ye Jack Cade more. I think he hath a very fair warring.

Dick My lord, there's an army gathered together in Smithfield.

Cade Come, then, let's go fight with them but first, go and set London bridge on fire and if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come let's away [*Exeunt*]

SCENE VII *London Smithfield*

Alarums MATTHEW GOFFE is slain and all the rest. Then enter JACK CADE, with his company

Cade So, sirs, now go some and pull down the Savoy, others to the inns of court down with them all.

Dick I have a suit unto your lordship.

Cade Be it a lordship, thou shalt have it for that word.

Dick Only that the laws of England may come out of your mouth.

Holl [*Aside*] Mass, twill be sore law then for he was thrust in the mouth with a spear and 'tis not whole yet.

Smith [*Aside*] Nay, John, it will be stinking law for his breath stinks with eating toasted cheese.

Cade I have thought upon it, it shall be so. Away, burn all the records of the realm; my mouth shall be the parliament of England.

Holl [*Aside*] Then we are like to have biting statutes, unless his teeth be pulled out.

Cade And henceforward all things shall be in common.

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess My lord, a prize, a prize! here's the Lord Say, which sold the towns in France, he that made us pay one and twenty fifteens, and one

shilling to the pound, the last subsidy.

Enter GEORGE BEVIS with the LORD SAY

Cade Well, he shall be beheaded for it ten times. Ah, thou say, thou serge, nay, thou buckram lord! now art thou within point-blank of our jurisdiction regal. What canst thou answer to my Majesty for giving up of Normandy unto Mounsieur Basimecu, the dauphin of France? Be it known unto thee by these presence, even the presence of Lord Mortimer, that I am the besom that must sweep the court clean of such filth as thou art. Thou hast most traitorously corrupted the youth of the realm in erecting a grammar school; and whereas before, our forefathers had no other books but the score and the tally, thou hast caused printing to be used, and, contrary to the King, his crown and dignity, thou hast built a paper mill. It will be proved to thy face that thou hast men about thee that usually talk of a noun and a verb, and such abominable words as no Christian ear can endure to hear. Thou hast appointed justices of peace, to call poor men before them about matters they were not able to answer. Moreover, thou hast put them in prison, and because they could not read, thou hast hanged them, when, indeed, only for that cause they have been most worthy to live. Thou dost ride in a foot cloth, dost thou not?

Say What of that?

Cade Marry, thou oughtest not to let thy horse wear a cloak, when honest men than thou go in their hose and doublets.

Dick And work in their shirt too, as myself for example, that am a butcher.

Say You men of Kent—

Dick What say you of Kent?

Say Nothing but this, 'tis *bona terra, melius gens*.

Cade Away with him, away with him! he speaks Latin.

Say Hear me but speak, and bear me where you will.

Kent, in the *Commentaries* Caesar writ, Is term'd the civil st place of all this isle. Sweet is the country, because full riches The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy, Which makes me hope you are not void of pity. I sold not Maine, I lost not Normandy, Yet, to recover them, would lose my life. Justice with favour have I always done. Prayers and tears have moved me, gifts could never.

When have I aught exacted at your hands But to maintain the King the realm and you? Large gifts have I bestow'd on learned clerk. Because my bool preferr'd me to the King,

And seeing ignorance is the curse of God
Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heaven
Unless you be possess'd with devilish spirits so
You cannot but forbear to murder me
This tongue hath parley'd unto foreign kings
For your behoof—

Cade Tut when struckst thou one blow in the field?

Say Great men have reaching hands oft have I struck

Those that I never saw and struck them dead

Geo O monstrous coward! what to come be hind folks?

Say These cheeks are pale for watching for your good 90

Cade Give him a box o' the ear and that will make em red again

Say Long sitting to determine poor men's causes

Hath made me full of sickness and diseases

Cade Ye shall have a hempen caudle then and the help of hatchet

Dick Why dost thou quiver man?

Say The palsy and not fear provokes me

Cade Nay he nods at us as who should say I'll be even with you I'll see if his head will stand steady on a pole or no Take him away and behead him

Say Tell me wherein have I offended most?

Have I affected wealth or honour? speak

Are my chests fill'd up with extorted gold?

Is my apparel sumptuous to behold?

Whom have I injured that ye seek my death?

These hands are free from guiltless blood shedding

This breast from harbouring foul deceitful thou'hts

O let me live! 110

Cade [Aside] I feel remorse in myself with his words but I'll be true he shall die as it be but for plead so well for his life Away with him! he has a familiar under his tongue he speaks not o' God's name Go take him away I say and strike off his head presently and then break into his son in law's house Sir James Cromer and strike off his head and bring them both upon two poles hither

All It shall be done 120

Say Ah countrymen! if when you make your prayers

God should be so obdurate as yourselves

How would it fare with your departed souls?

And therefore yet relent and save my life

Cade Away with him! and do as I command ye

[Exit some with Lord Say]
The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear a

head on his shoulders unless he pay me tribute there shall not a maid be married but she shall pay to me her maidenhead ere they have it men shall hold of me in capite and we charge and command that their wives be as free as heart can wish or tongue can tell

Dick My lord when shall we go to Cheapside and take up commodities upon our bills?

Cade Marry presently

All O brave

Re-enter one with the h. ads

Cade But is not this brave? Let them kiss one another for they loved well when they were alive Now part them again lest they consult about the giving up of some more towns in France Soldiers defer the spoil of the city until night for with these borne before us instead of of maces will we ride through the streets and at every corner have them kiss Away! [Exit]

SCENE VIII Southwark

Alarm and ret. at Enter CADE and all his rabblement

Cade Up Fish Street! down Saint Magnus Corner! kill and knock down! throw them into Thames! [Sound a peal] What noise is this I hear? Dare any be so bold to sound retreat or parley when I command them kill?

Enter BUCKINGHAM and old CLIFFORD attended

Buck Ay here they be that dare and will disturb thee

Know Cade we come ambassadors from the King

Unto the commons whom thou hast misled

And here pronounce free pardon to them all

That will forsake thee and go home in peace 10

Cl What say ye countrymen? will ye relent

And yield to mercy whilst tis offer'd you

Or let a rebel lead you to your deaths?

Who loves the King and will embrace his pardon

Fling up his cap and say God save his Majesty!

Who hareth him and honours not his father

Henry the Fifth that made all France to quake

Shake he his weapon at us and pass by

All God save the King! God save the King!

Cade What Buckingham and Clifford are ye so brave? And you base peasants do ye believe him? will you needs be hanged with your pardons about your necks? Hath my sword therefore brake through London gates that you should leave me at the Whire Hart in Southwark? I thought ye would never have given out these arms till you had recovered your ancient free

dom but you are all recreants and dastards and delight to live in slavery to the nobility Let them break your backs with burthens take your houses over your heads, ravish your wives and daughters before your faces for me, I will make shift for one and so God's curse light upon you all!

All We'll follow Cade, we'll follow Cade!

Clif Is Cade the son of Henry the Fifth That thus you do exclaim you'll go with him? Will he conduct you through the heart of France, And make the meanest of you earls and dukes? 40

Alas, he hath no home, no place to fly to Nor knows he how to live but by the spoil Unless by robbing of your friends and us Were't not a shame, that whilst you live at jar The fearful French, whom you late vanquished, Should make a start o'er seas and vanquish you? Methinks already in this civil broil

I see them lording it in London streets Crying 'Villago!' unto all they meet Better ten thousand base-born Cades miscarry 49 Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman's mercy

To France, to France and get what you have lost

Spare England for it is your native coast Henry hath money you are strong and manly God on our side, doubt not of victory

All A Clifford! a Clifford! we'll follow the King and Clifford

Cade Was ever feather so lightly blown to and fro as this multitude? The name of Henry the Fifth hales them to an hundred mischiefs and makes them leave me desolate I see them lay their heads together to surprise me My sword make way for me, for here is no straying In despite of the devils and hell through the very midst of you! and heavens and honour be witness that no want of resolution in me but only my followers' base and ignominious treasons, makes me betake me to my heels [Exit

Buck What is he fled? Go some, and follow him,

And he that brings his head unto the King Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward 70 [Exeunt some of them

Follow me, soldiers we'll devise a mean To reconcile you all unto the King [Exeunt

SCENE IX. *Kentworth Castle*

Sound trumpets Enter KING RICHARD and SOMERSET on the terrace

King Was ever king that joy'd an earthly throne, And could command no more content than I? No sooner was I crept out of my cradle

But I was made a king at nine months old Was never subject long'd to be a king As I do long and wish to be a subject

Enter BUCKINGHAM and old CLIFFORD

Buck Health and glad tidings to your Majesty!

King Why, Buckingham, is the traitor Cade surprised?

Or is he but retired to make him strong?

Enter, below multitudes with halters about their necks

Clif He is fled my lord, and all his powers do yield 10

And humbly thus, with halters on their necks, Expect your Highness doom of life or death

King Then, heaven, set ope thy everlasting gates

To entertain my vows of thanks and praise! Soldiers this day have you redeem'd your lives And show'd how well you love your prince and country

Continue still in this so good a mind, And Henry, though he be unfortunate, Assure yourselves, will never be unkind And so, with thanks and pardon to you all, 20 I do dismiss you to your several countries

All God save the King! God save the King!

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess Please it your grace to be advertised The Duke of York is newly come from Ireland, And with a puissant and a mighty power Of gallowglasses and stout kerns Is marching hitherward in proud array, And still proclaimeth as he comes along His arms are only to remove from thee The Duke of Somerset whom he terms a traitor

King Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade and York distress'd 31

Like to a ship that having 'scaped a tempest Is straightway calm'd and boarded with a pirate But now is Cade driven back, his men dispersed, And now is York in arms to second him I pray thee, Buckingham go and meet him And ask him what's the reason of these arms Tell him I'll send Duke Edmund to the Tower, And Somerset we'll commit thee thither, Until his army be dismiss'd from him 40

Som My lord,

I'll yield myself to prison willingly Or unto death to do my country good

King In any case, be not too rough in terms For he is fierce and cannot brook hard language

Buck I will my lord and doubt not so to deal As all things shall redound unto your good

King Come wife let us in and learn to govern
better
For yet may England curse my wretched reign
[Flourish. Exeunt]

SCENE X *Kent Iden's garden*

Enter CADE

Cade *Fie on ambition! fie on myself that have a sword and yet am ready to famish! These five days have I hid me in these woods and durst not peep out for all the country is laid for me but now am I so hungry that if I might have a lease of my life for a thousand years I could stay no longer Wherefore on a brick wall have I climbed into this garden to see if I can eat grass or pick a sallot another while which is not amiss to cool a man's stomach this hot weather And I think this word sallot was born to do me good for many a time but for a sallot my brain pan had been cleft with a brown bill and many a time, when I have been dry and bravely march'd, hath served me instead of a quart pot to drink in and now the word sallot must serve me to feed on*

Enter IDEN

Iden Lord who would live tormented in the court

And may enjoy such quiet walks as these?
This small inheritance my father left me 20
Contenteth me, and worth a monarchy
I seek not to wax great by others' waning
Or gather wealth I care not with what envy
Sufficieth that I have maintrains my state
And sends the poor well pleased from my gate

Cade Here is the lord of the soil come to seize me for a stray for entering his fee simple with out leave Ah villain thou wilt betray me and get a thousand crowns of the King by carrying my head to him but I'll make thee eat iron like an ostrich and swallow my sword like a great pin ere thou and I part

Iden Why rude companion, whatsee'er thou be I know thee not why then should I betray thee? Is't not enough to break into my garden
And like a thief to come to rob my grounds
Climbing my walls in spite of me the owner
But thou wilt brave me with these saucy terms?

Cade Brave thee say by the best blood that ever was broached and beard thee too Look on me well I have eat no meat these five days yet come thou and thy five men, and if I do not leave you all as dead as a door nail I pray God I may never eat grass more

Iden Nay it shall ne'er be said while England stands

That Alexander Iden an esquire of Kent
Took odds to combat a poor famish'd man
Oppose thy steadfast-gazing eyes to mine
See if thou canst outface me with thy looks
Set limb to limb and thou art far the lesser 50
Thy hand is but a finger to my fist
Thy leg a stick compared with this truncheon
My foot shall fight with all the strength thou hast
And if mine arm be heaved in the air
Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth
As for words whose greatness answers words
Let thus my sword report what speech forbears

Cade By my valour the most complete champion that ever I heard! Steel if thou turn the edge or cut not out the burly boned clown in chins of beef ere thou sleep in thy sheath I beseech God on my knees thou mayst be turned to hobnails [Here they fight CADE falls]

O I am slain! famine and no other hath slain me let ten thousand devils come against me and give me but the ten meals I have lost and I'll defy them all With'er garden and be henceforth a burying place to all that do dwell in this house because the unconquered soul of Cade is fled 70

Iden Is't Cade that I have slain that monstrous traitor?

Sword I will hallow thee for this thy deed
And hang thee o'er my tomb when I am dead
Ne'er shall this blood be wiped from thy point
But thou shalt wear it as a herald's coat
To emblaze the honour that thy master got

Cade Iden, farewell and be proud of thy victory Tell Kent from me she hath lost her best man and exhort all the world to be cowards for I that never feared any am vanquished by famine not by valour [Dies 80]

Iden How much thou wrong'st me heaven be my judge

Die damned wretch the curse of her that bare thee

And as I thrust thy body in with my sword
So wish I I might thrust thy soul to hell
Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels
Unto a dunghill which shall be thy grave
And there cut off thy most ungracious head
Which I will bear in triumph to the King 89
Leaving thy trunk for crows to feed upon [Exit]

ACT V

SCENE I *Fields between Dartford and Blackheath*

Enter YORK and his army of Irish with drum and colours

York From Ireland thus comes York to claim his right

And pluck the crown from feeble Henry's head
Ring bells, aloud, burn, bonfires, clear and
bright,

To entertain great England's lawful king
Ah! *sancta majestas* who would not buy thee
dear?

Let them obey that know not how to rule,
Thus hand was made to handle nought but gold
I cannot give due action to my words,
Except a sword or sceptre balance it
A sceptre shall it have, have I a soul
On which I'll toss the flower-de luce of France

Enter BUCKINGHAM

Whom have we here? Buckingham, to disturb
me?

The King hath sent him sure I must dissemble
Buck York if thou meanest well, I greet thee
well

York Humphrey of Buckingham, I accept thy
greeting

Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure?

Buck A messenger from Henry our dread liege,
To know the reason of these arms in peace

Or why thou being a subject as I am,
Against thy oath and true allegiance sworn
Should raise so great a power without his leave,
Or dare to bring thy force so near the court

York [*Aside*] Scarce can I speak, my choler is
so great

O I could hew up rocks and fight with flint,

I am so angry at these abject terms,

And now, like Ajax Telamonius,

On sheep or oxen could I spend my fury

I am far better born than is the King

More like a king more kingly in my thoughts

But I must make fair weather yet a while

Till Henry be more weak and I more strong —

Buckingham I prithee, pardon me

That I have given no answer all this while,

My mind was troubled with deep melancholy

The cause why I have brought this army hither

Is to remove proud Somerset from the King

Seditious to his Grace and to the state

Buck That is too much presumption on thy
part

But if thy arms be to no other end,

The King hath yielded unto thy demand

The Duke of Somerset is in the Tower

York Upon thine honour is he prisoner?

Buck Upon mine honour he is prisoner

York Then, Buckingham, I do dismiss my
powers

Soldiers I thank you all *disperse your selves*

Meet me to-morrow in Saint George's field

You shall have pay and everything you wish

And let my sovereign, virtuous Henry,
Command my eldest son, nay, all my sons,
As pledges of my fealty and love,
I'll send them all as willing as I live
Lands, goods horse, armour, any thing I have,
Is his to use, so Somerset may die
Buck York, I commend this kind submission
We twain will go into his Highness' tent

Enter KING and Attendants

King Buckingham, doth York intend no harm
to us

That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm?

York In all submission and humility

York doth present himself unto your Highness

King Then what intends these forces thou dost
bring?

York To heave the traitor Somerset from hence,
And fight against that monstrous rebel Cade,
Who since I heard to be discomfited

Enter IDEN, with Cade's head

Iden If one so rude and of so mean condition

May pass into the presence of a king

Lo I present your Grace a traitor's head,

The head of Cade whom I in combat slew

King The head of Cade! Great God, how just
art Thou!

O let me view his visage, being dead,
That living wrought me such exceeding trouble
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that slew
him?

Iden I was an aide to your Majesty

King How art thou call'd and what is thy de-
gree?

Iden Alexander Iden, that serves your name

A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king

Buck So please it you, my lord, were not amiss,
He were created knight for his good service

King Iden kneel down [*He kneels*] Rise up a
knight

We give thee for reward a thousand marks,
And all that thou fenceforth attend on us

Iden May Iden live to merit such a bounty,
And never live but true unto his liege! [*Rites*]

Enter QUEEN and SOMERSET

King See, Buckingham, Somerset come with
the queen

Couldst thou hide him quickly from the Duke

Queen For thou and York he shall not hide his
head

Put hobble and front him to his face

York How now! is Somerset at liberty?

Iden York, unless thy liege
thrusts,

And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart
 Shall I endure the sight of Somerset? 90
 False King! why hast thou broken faith with me

Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse?
 King did I call thee? no, thou art not King
 Not fit to govern and rule multitudes
 Which darest not, no, nor canst not rule a traitor
 That head of thine doth not become a crown
 Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer's staff
 And not to grace an awful princely sceptre
 That gold must round engrave these brows of mine
 Whose smile and frown like to Achilles' spear
 Is able with the change to kill and cure 101

Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up
 And with the same to act controlling laws
 Give place, by heaven, thou shalt rule no more
 O'er him whom heaven created for thy ruler

Som. O monstrous traitor! I arrest thee, York
 Of capital treason gamin the King and crown
 Obey audacious traitor, kneel for grace
 York. Wouldst have me kneel? first let me ask
 of these

If they can brook I bow a knee to man 110
 Sirrah, call in my sons to be my bail

[Exit Attendant]
 I know ere they will have me go to ward
 They'll pawn their swords for my enfranchise-
 ment

Queen. Call hither Clifford, bid him come again
 To say if that the bastard boys of York
 Shall be the surety for their traitor father

[Enter BUCKINGHAM]
 York. O blood bespotted Neapolitan,
 Outcast of Naples, England's bloody scourge!
 The sons of York, thy betters in their birth,
 Shall be their father's bail and bane to those 120
 That for my surety will refuse the boys!

Enter EDWARD and RICHARD
 See where they come! I'll warrant they'll make
 it good

Enter old CLIFFORD and his son
 Queen. And here comes Clifford to deny their
 bail

Cliff. Health and all happiness to my lord the
 King! [Kneels]

York. I thank thee, Clifford, say what news
 with thee?

Nay, do not fright us with an angry look
 We are thy sovereign, Clifford, kneel again
 For thy mistaking so we pardon thee

Cliff. This is my King, York, I do not mistake
 But thou mistakest me much to think I do 130
 To Bedlam with him, is the man grown mad?

King. Ay, Clifford, a bedlam and ambitious
 humour

Makes him oppose himself against his King
 Cliff. He is a traitor, let him to the Tower

And chop away that factious pate of his
 Queen. He is arrested, but will not obey
 His sons, he says, shall give their words for him
 York. Will you not sons?

Edw. Ay, noble father, if our words will serve
 Rich. And if words will not, then our weapons
 shall 140

Cliff. Why, what a brood of traitors have we
 here!

York. Look in a glass, and call thy image so
 I am thy King, and thou a false heart traitor
 Call hither to the stake my two brave bears
 That with the very shaking of their chains
 They may astonish these fell lurking curs
 Bid Salisbury and Warwick come to me

Enter the EARLS OF WARWICK and SALISBURY

Cliff. Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy bears
 to death

And manacle the bear-ward in their chains
 If thou darest bring them to the baiting place 150

Rich. Oft have I seen a hot orwearing cur
 Run back and bite, because he was withheld
 Who, being suffer'd with the bear, fell paw
 Hath clapp'd of his tail between his legs and cried
 And such a piece of service will you do
 If you oppose yourselves to match Lord War-
 wick

Cliff. Hence, heap of wrath, foul indigested
 lump

As crooked in thy manners as thy shape!

York. Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly anon

Cliff. Take heed, lest by your heat you burn
 yourselves 160

King. Why, Warwick, hath thy knee forgot to
 bow?

Old Salisbury. Shame to thy silver hair
 Thou mad misleader of thy brain-sick son!
 What wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian
 And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles?

O, where is faith? O, where is loyalty?
 If it be banish'd from the frosty head

Where shall it find a harbour in the earth?

Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war
 And shame thine honourable age with blood? 170

Why art thou old, and wantst experience?

O, wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it?

For shame, in duty bend thy knee to me

That bows unto the grave with mickle age

Sid. My lord, I have consider'd with myself

The title of this most renowned duke
 And in my conscience do repute his Grace

The rightful heir to England's royal seat

King Hast thou not sworn allegiance unto me?

Sal I have 180

King Canst thou dispense with heaven for such an oath?

Sal It is great sin to swear unto a sin,

But greater sin to keep a sinful oath

Who can be bound by any solemn vow

To do a murderous deed to rob a man,

To force a spotless virgin's chastity,

To reave the orphan of his patrimony,

To wring the widow from her custom'd right,

And have no other reason for this wrong

But that he was bound by a solemn oath? 190

Queen A subtle traitor needs no sophister

King Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself

York Call Buckingham, and all the friends thou hast

I am resolved for death or dignity

Clif The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true

War You were best to go to bed and dream again,

To keep thee from the tempest of the field

Clif I am resolved to bear a greater storm

Than any thou canst conjure up to-day,

And that I'll write upon thy burghet, 200

Might I but know thee by thy household badge

War Now by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest,

The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff,

This day I'll wear aloft my burghet,

As on a mountain top the cedar shows

That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm

Even to affright thee with the view thereof

Clif And from thy burghet I'll rend thy bear

And tread it under foot with all contempt

Despite the bear-ward that protects the bear 210

Y *Clif* And so to arms victorious father,

To quell the rebels and their complices

Rich Fie! charity, for shame! speak not in spite,

For you shall sup with Jesu Christ to-night

Y *Clif* Foul stigmatic, that's more than thou canst tell

Rich If not in heaven you'll surely sup in hell

[*Exeunt severally*]

SCENE II *Saint Alban's*

Alarums to the battle Enter *WARWICK*

War Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls

And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear

Now when the angry trumpet sounds alarm

And dead men's cries do fill the empty air

Clifford I say, come forth and fight with me

Proud northern lord Clifford of Cumberland,
Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms

Enter *YORK*

How now, my noble lord! what, all afoot?

York The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed

But match to match I have encounter'd him 10

And made a prey for carrion kites and crows

Even of the bonny beast he loved so well

Enter old *CLIFFORD*

War Of one or both of us the time is come

York Hold Warwick, seek thee out some other chase,

For I myself must hunt this deer to death

War Then, nobly, York, 'tis for a crown thou fight'st

As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day,

It grieves my soul to leave thee unassail'd [Exit

Clif What seest thou in me York? why dost thou pause?

York With thy brave bearing should I be in love, 20

But that thou art so fast mine enemy

Clif Nor should thy prowess want praise and esteem,

But that 'tis shown ignobly and in treason

York So let it help me now against thy sword

As I in justice and true right express it

Clif My soul and body on the action both!

York A dreadful lay! Address thee instantly

They fight, and CLIFFORD falls

Clif *La fin couronne les œuvres* [Dies

York Thus war hath given thee peace for thou art still

Peace with his soul, Heaven if it be thy will! 30
[Exit

Enter *YOUNG CLIFFORD*

Y *Clif* Shame and confusion! all is on the rout,

Fear frames disorder, and disorder wounds

Where it should guard O war, thou son of hell,

Whom angry heavens do make their minister,

Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part

Hot coals of vengeance! Let no soldier fly

He that is truly dedicate to war

Hath no self love, nor he that loves himself

Hath not essentially but by circumstance

The name of valour [Seeing his dead father]

O let the vile world end

And the premised flames of the last day

Kind earth and heaven together!

Now let the general trumpet blow his blast

Particularities and petty sounds

To cease! Wast thou ordain'd dear father 40

To lose thy youth in peace and to achieve
The silver livery of advised age
And in thy reverence thy chair-days thus
To die in ruffian battle? Even at this sight 49
My heart is turn'd to stone and whole tis mine,

It shall be stony York not our old men spares
No more will I their babes' tears virginal
Shall be to me even as the dew to fire
And beauty that the tyrant oft reclaims
Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax
Henceforth I will not have to do with pity
Meet I an infant of the house of York
Into as many goblets will I cut it
As wild Medea young Absyrtus did
In cruelty will I seek out my fame 60
Come thou new ruin of old Clifford's house
As did Æneas old Anchises bear
So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders
But then Æneas bare a living load
Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine

[Exit I a ming off his father]

Enter RICHARD and SOMERSET to fight
SOMERSET is kill'd

Rich So lie thou there
For underneath an alchouse paltry sign,
The Castle in Saint Alban's Somerset
Hath made the wizard famous in his death 69
Sword hold thy temper heart be wrathful still

Priests pray for enemies but princes kill [Exit

Fight scurions Enter KING QUEEN and
others

Queen Away my lord you are slow for shame
away!

King Can we outrun the heavens? good Margaret stay

Queen What are you made of? you'll nor fight
nor fly

Now is it manhood wisdom and defence
To give the enemy way and to secure us
By what we can, which can no more but fly

Alarm afar off

If you be ta'en we then should see the bottom
Of all our fortunes but if we haply scape
As well we may if not through your neglect 80
We shall to London get where you are loved
And where this breach now in our fortunes
made

May readily be stopp'd

Re enter YOUNG CLIFFORD

Y Clif But that my heart's on future mischief
set

I would speak blasphemy ere bid you fly
But fly you must incurable discomfit
Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts
Away for your relief and we will live
To see their day and then our fortune give
Away my lord away! [Exit]

SCENE III Fields near St Alban's

Alarm Retr at Enter YORK RICHARD WARWICK
and Soldiers with drum and colours

York Of Salisbury who can report of him
That winter lion who in rage forgets
Aged contusions and all brush of time,
And like a gallant in the brow of youth
Repairs him with occasion? This happy day
Is not itself nor have we won one foot
If Salisbury be lost

Rich My noble father

Three times to-day I help him to his horse
Three times bestrid him thrice I led him off
Persuaded him from any further act 10
But still where danger was still there I met him
And like rich hangings in a homely house
So was his will in his old feeble body
But noble as he is look where he comes

Enter SALISBURY

Sal Now by my sword well hast thou fought
to-day

By the mass so did we all I thank you Richard
God knows how long it is I have to live
And it hath pleased him that three times to-day
You have defended me from imminent death
Well lords we have not got that which we have 21
Tis not enough our foes are this time fled
Being opposites of such repairing nature

York I know our safety is to follow them
For as I hear the King is fled to London
To call a present court of parliament
Let us pursue him ere the writs go forth
What says Lord Warwick? shall we after them?

War After them? nay before them if we can
Now by my faith lords 'twas a glorious day
Saint Alban's battle won by famous York 30
Shall be eternized in all age to come
Sound drums and trumpets and to London all
And more such days as these to us befall!

[Exit]

The Third Part of KING HENRY THE SIXTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY THE SIXTH
EDWARD PRINCE OF WALES *his son*
LEWIS XI *King of France*
DUKE OF SOMERSET
DUKE OF EXETER
EARL OF OXFORD
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND
EARL OF WESTMORELAND
LORD CLIFFORD
RICHARD PLANTAGENET DUKE OF YORK
EDWARD *Earl of March afterwards King*
EDWARD IV
EDMUND, *Earl of Rutland*
GEORGE, *afterwards DUKE OF CLARENCE*
RICHARD, *afterwards DUKE OF GLOUCESTER*
DUKE OF NORFOLK
MARQUESS OF MONTAGUE
EARL OF WARWICK
EARL OF PEMBROKE
LORD HASTINGS
LORD STAFFORD
SIR JOHN MORTIMER
SIR HUGH MORTIMER
LORD RIVERS, *brother to Lady Grey*
SIR WILLIAM STANLEY

*his
sons*

SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY
SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE
TUTOR TO RUTLAND
MAYOR OF YORK
LIEUTENANT OF THE TOWER
NOBLEMAN
TWO KEEPERS
HUNTSMAN
SON *that has killed his father*
FATHER *that has killed his son*
SEVEN MESSENGERS
POST
SOLDIER

QUEEN MARGARET
ELIZABETH WOODVILLE LADY GREY *afterwards*
QUEEN *to Edward IV*
BONA, *sister to the French Queen*

NON-SPEAKING Henry, *Earl of Richmond, Mayor of*
Corentry Admiral called Bourbon, Nurse, Alder-
men, Soldiers, Attendants

SCENE *England and France*

ACT I

SCENE I *London The Parliament house*

Alarm. Enter the DUKE OF YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers

War I wonder how the King escaped our hands
York While we pursued the horsemen of the north,

He shily stole away and left his men
Whereat the great Lord of Northumberland,
Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat
Cher'd up the drooping army, and himself
Lord Clifford and Lord Stafford, all abreast,
Charged our main battle's front and breaking in
Were by the swords of common soldiers slain
Edw. Lord Stafford's father, Duke of Bucking-
ham

Is either slain or wounded dangerously,
I cleft his beaver with a downright blow
That this true father behold his blood
Mont And brother here's the Earl of Wiltshire's blood,

Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd
Rich Speak thou for me and tell them what I
did [*Throwing down the Duke of Somerset's head*]

York Richard hath best deserved of all my sons
But is your Grace dead my Lord of Somerset?
Norff Such hope have all the line of John of
Gaunt!

Rich Thus do I hope to shake King Henry's
head

War And so do I Victorious Prince of York,
Before I see thee seated in that throne
Which now the house of Lancaster usurps
I vow by heaven these eyes shall never close
This is the palace of the fearful king,
And thus the regal seat possess it York
For this is thine and not King Henry's heirs

York Assist me then, sweet Warwick and I
will

For hither we have broken in by force
Norff We'll all assist you, he that flies shall die
York Thanks, gentle Norfolk stay by me, my
lords,

And soldiers stay and lodge by me this night
(They go up)

War And when the king comes offer him no violence

Unless he seek to thrust you out perforce

York The Queen this day here holds her parliament

But little thinks we shall be off her council

By words or blows here let us win our right

Rh Arm'd as we are let's stay within this house

War The bloody parliament shall this be call'd

Unless Plantagenet Duke of York be king 40

And bashful Henry deposed whose cowardice

Hath made us by words to our enemies

York Then leave me not my lords be resolute

I mean to take possession of my right

War Neither the king nor he that loves him best

The proudest he that holds up Lancaster

Dares stir a wing if Warwick shake his bells

I'll plant Plantagenet root him up who dares

Resolve thee Richard claim the English crown

Flourish Enter KING HENRY CLIFFORD NORTH
LUMBERLAND WESTMORELAND EXETER and the
rest *See ing red roses*

Rh My lords look where the sturdy rebel
sits 50

Even in the chair of state behke he means

Back'd by the power of Warwick that false
peer

To aspire unto the crown and reign as king

Earl of Northumberland he slew thy father

And thine Lord Clifford and you both have
sworn'd revenge

On him his sons his favourites and his friends

North If I be not heavens be revenged on me!

Cliff The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn in
steel

War What shall we suffer then? let's pluck
him down

My heart for anger burns I cannot brook it 60

Rh Be patient gentle Earl of Westmoreland

Cliff Patience is for poltroons such as he

He durst not sit there had your father lived

My gracious lord here in the parliament

Let us assail the family of York

North Well hast thou spoken cousin be it so

Rh Ah know you not the city favours
them

And they have troops of soldiers at their beck?

Exe But when the Duke is slain they'll quickly
fly

Rh Far be the thought of this from Henry's
heart 70

To make a shambles of the parliament house!

Cousin of Exeter frowns words and threats

Shall be the war that Henry means to use

Thou factious Duke of York descend my throne

And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet

I am thy sovereign

York I am thine

Exe For shame come down he made thee

Duke of York

York 'Twas my inheritance as the earldom

was

Ex Thy father was a traitor to the crown

War Exeter thou art a traitor to the crown

In following this usurping Henry 81

Cliff Whom should he follow but his natural
king?

War True Clifford and that's Richard Duke
of York

Rh And shall I stand and thou sit in my
throne?

York It must and shall be so content thyself

War Be Duke of Lancaster let him be king

War He is both king and Duke of Lancaster

And that the Lord of Westmoreland shall main-
tain

War And Warwick shall disprove it You for-
get 89

That we are those which chased you from the
field

And slew your fathers and with colours spread

March'd through the city to the palace gates

North Yes Warwick I remember it to my
grief

And by his soul thou and thy house shall rue it

War Plantagenet of thee and these thy sons

Thy kinsmen and thy friends I'll have more
lives

Than drops of blood were in my father's veins

Cliff Urge it no more lest that instead of
words

I send thee Warwick such a messenger

As shall revenge his death before I stir 100

War Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless
threats!

York Will you we show our title to the crown?

If not our swords shall plead it in the field

Rh What title hast thou traitor to the
crown?

Thy grandfather Roger Mortimer Earl of

March

I am the son of Henry the Fifth

Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop

And seized upon their towns and provinces

War Talk not of France, sith thou hast lost it
all 110

A Hen The Lord Protector lost it, and not I
When I was crown'd I was but nine months old

Rich You are old enough now, and yet, methinks you lose

Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head

Edw Sweet father, do so, set it on your head

Mont Good brother, as thou lovest and honour'st arms,

Let's fight it out and not stand cavilling thus

Rich Sound drums and trumpets, and the King will fly

York Sons, peace!

K Hen Peace, thou! and give King Henry leave to speak 120

War Plantagenet shall speak first hear him, lords,

And be you silent and attentive too

For he that interrupts him shall not live

K Hen Think st thou that I will leave my kingly throne,

Wherein my grandsire and my father sat?

No first shall war unpeople this my realm,

Ay, and their colours often borne in France,

And now in England to our heart's great sorrow,
Shall be my winding sheet Why faint you, lords?

My title's good and better far than his 130

War Prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be King

A Hen Henry the Fourth by conquest got the crown

York 'Twas by rebellion against his king

K Hen [Aside] I know not what to say, my title's weak —

Tell me may not a king adopt an heir?

York What then?

K Hen An if he may, then am I lawful king,

For Richard in the view of many lords

Resign'd the crown to Henry the Fourth

Whose heir my father was and I am his 140

York He rose against him, being his sovereign,

And made him to resign his crown perforce

War Suppose, my lords he did it unconstrain'd,
Think you 'twere prejudicial to his crown?

Exe No for he could not so resign his crown

But that the next heir should succeed and reign

A Hen Art thou against us Duke of Exeter?

Ex His is the right and therefore pardon me

York Why whisper you my lords and answer not?

Exe My conscience tells me he is lawful king

A Hen [Aside] All will revolt from me and turn to him 151

North Plantagenet for all the claim thou lay'st,

Think not that Henry shall be so deposed

War Deposed he shall be in despite of all

North Thou art deceived 'tis not thy southern power

Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,
Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,
Can set the Duke up in despite of me

Clif King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,
Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence 160

May that ground gape and swallow me alive
Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father!

K Hen O Clifford how thy words revive my heart!

York Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown
What matter you, or what conspire you lords?

War Do right unto this princely Duke of York,
Or I will fill the house with armed men

And over the chair of state, where now he sits,
Write up his title with usurping blood

[He stamps with his foot, and the Soldiers show themselves

K Hen My Lord of Warwick, hear me but one word 170

Let me for this my life time reign as king

York Confirm the crown to me and to mine heirs,

And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou livest

King I am content Richard Plantagenet,
Enjoy the kingdom after my decease

Clif What wrong is this unto the Prince your son!

War What good is this to England and himself?

West Base fearful and despairing Henry!

Clif How hast thou injured both thy self and us!

West I cannot stay to hear these articles

North Nor I 181

Clif Come, cousin, let us tell the Queen these news

West Farewell, faint hearted and degenerate king,

In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides

North Be thou a prey unto the house of York,

And die in bands for this unmanly deed!

Clif In dreadful war may st thou be overcome,

Or live in peace abandon'd and despised!

[Exeunt NORTHUMBERLAND CLIFFORD,
and WESTMORELAND

War Turn this way Henry and regard them not

Exe They seek revenge and therefore will not yield 190

A Hen Ah Exeter!

War Why should you sigh my lord?

A Hen Not for my self Lord Warwick but my son

Whom I unnaturally shall disinheri

But be it as it may I here entail

The crown to thee and to thine heirs for ever

Conditionally that here thou take an oath
To cease this civil war and whilst I live
To honour me as thy king and sovereign,
And neither by treason nor hostility
To seek to put me down and reign thy self 200
York This oath I willingly take and will per-
form

War Long live King Henry! Plantagenet em-
brace him

K Hen And long live thou and these thy for-
ward sons

York Now York and Lancaster are reconciled
Exe Accused be he that seeks to make them
foes!

Sennet Her they come down

York Farewell my gracious lord I'll to my
castle

War And I'll keep London with my soldiers

Norfolk And I to Norfolk with my followers

Mont And I unto the sea from whence I came

[*Exeunt YORK and his Sons WARWICK
NORFOLK MONTAGUE their Sol-
diers and Attendants*]

K Hen And I with grief and sorrow to the
court 210

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET and the PRINCE OF
WALES*

Exe Here comes the Queen, whose looks be-
wray her anger

I'll steal away

K Hen Exeter so will I

Q Mar Nay go not from me I will follow
thee

K Hen Be patient gentle queen and I will stay

Q Mar Who can be patient in such extremes?

Ah wretched man would I had died a maid

And never seen thee never borne thee son

Seeing thou hast proved so unnatural a father!

Hath he deserved to lose his birthright thus?

Hadst thou but loved him half so well as I 20

Or felt that pain which I did for him once

Or nourish'd him as I did with my blood

Thou wouldst have left thy dearest heart blood
there

Rather than have made that savage duke thine
heir

And disinherited thine only son

Princ Father you cannot disinherit me

If you be king why should not I succeed?

K Hen Pardon me Margaret pardon me
my sweet son

The Earl of Warwick and the Duke enforced me

Q Mar Enforced thee? art thou king and wilt
be forced? 230

I shame to hear thee speak Ah, turbulent wretch!

Thou hast undone thyself thy son, and me
And given unto the house of York such head
As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance
To entail him and his heirs unto the crown,
What is it but to make thy sepulchre
And creep into it far before thy time?

Warwick is chancellor and the lord of Calais
Stem Falconbridge commands the narrow seas
The Duke is made Protector of the realm 240

And yet shalt thou be safe? such safety finds
The trembling lamb environed with wolves

Had I been there which am a silly woman

The soldiers should have toss'd me on their pikes

Before I would have granted to that act

But thou preferst at thy life before thine honour

And seeing thou dost I here divorce my self

Both from thy table Henry and thy bed

Until that act of parliament be repeal'd

Whereby my son is disinherited 250

The northern lords that have forsworn thy col-
ours

Will follow mine, if once they see them spread

And spread they shall be to thy foul disgrace

And utter ruin of the house of York

Thus do I leave thee Come son let's away

Our army is ready come we'll after them

K Hen Stay gentle Margaret and hear me
speak

Q Mar Thou hast spoke too much already
get thee gone

K Hen Gentle son Edward thou wilt stay
with me?

Q Mar Ay to be murder'd by his enemies

I must When I return with victory from the
field 261

I'll see your Grace till then I'll follow her

Q Mar Come, son away we may not linger
thus

[*Exeunt QUEEN MARGARET and the PRINCE*]

K Hen Poor queen! how love to me and to her
son

Hath made her break out into terms of rage!

Revenge may be on that hateful duke

Whose haughty spirit winged with desire

Will cost my crown and like an empty eagle

Tire on the flesh of me and of my son

The loss of those three lords torments my heart

I'll write unto them and entreat them fair 271

Come cousin, you shall be the messenger

Exe And I I hope shall reconcile them all
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II Sandal Castle

Enter RICHARD EDWARD and MONTAGUE

Rich Brother though I be younger give me
leave

Edw No, I can better play the orator
Mont But I have reasons strong and forcible

Enter the DUKE OF YORK

York Why, how now, sons and brother! at a strife?

What is your quarrel? how began it first?

Edw No quarrel, but a slight contention

York About what?

Rich About that which concerns your Grace and us

The crown of England, father, which is yours 9

York Mine, boy? not till King Henry be dead

Rich Your right depends not on his life or death

Edw Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now

By giving the house of Lancaster leave to breathe,
 It will outrun you, father, in the end

York I took an oath that he should quietly reign

Edw But for a kingdom any oath may be broken

I would break a thousand oaths to reign one year

Rich No, God forbid your Grace should be forsworn

York I shall be if I claim by open war

Rich I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me speak 20

York Thou canst not, son it is impossible

Rich An oath is of no moment being not took

Before a true and lawful magistrate,

That hath authority over him that swears

Henry had none, but did usurp the place

Then seeing 'twas he that made you to depose,

Your oath my lord is vain and frivolous

Therefore, to arms! And, father do but think

How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown,

Within whose circuit is Elysium 30

And all that poets feign of bliss and joy

Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest

Until the white rose that I wear be dyed

Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart

York Richard, enough, I will be King or die

Brother, thou shalt to London presently,

And whet on Warwick to this enterprise

Thou Richard shalt to the Duke of Norfolk,

And tell him privily of our intent

You *Edw* shall unto my Lord Cobham 40

With whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise

In them I trust for they are soldiers,

Witty, courteous, liberal full of spirit

While you are thus employ'd what resteth

more,

But that I seek occasion how to rise

And yet the King not privy to my drift

Nor any of the house of Lancaster?

Enter a MESSENGER

But stay what news? Why comest thou in such post?

Mess The Queen with all the northern earls and lords

Intend here to besiege you in your castle 50

She is hard by with twenty thousand men,

And therefore fortify your hold my lord

York Ay, with my sword What! thinkst thou that we fear them?

Edward and Richard you shall stay with me,

My brother Montague shall post to London

Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,

Whom we have left protectors of the King,

With powerful policy strengthen themselves,

And trust not simple Henry nor his oaths 59

Mont Brother I go, I'll win them, fear it not

And thus most humbly I do take my leave [Exit

Enter SIR JOHN MORTIMER and SIR HUGH MORTIMER

York Sir John and Sir Hugh Mortimer, mine uncles,

You are come to Sandal in a happy hour,

The army of the Queen mean to besiege us

Sir John She shall not need, we'll meet her in the field

York What with five thousand men?

Rich Ay, with five hundred father for a need

A woman's general, what should we fear?

A march afar off

Edw I hear their drums let's set our men in order,

And issue forth and bid them battle straight 70

York Five men to twenty! though the odds be great,

I doubt not uncle, of our victory

Many a battle have I won in France

When as the enemy hath been ten to one

Why should I not now have the like success?

[Alarum Exeunt]

SCENE III *Field of battle betwixt Sandal Castle and Wakefield*

Alarums Enter RUTLAND and his TUTOR

Rut Ah whether shall I fly or scape their hands?

Ah tutor look where bloody Clifford comes!

Enter CLIFFORD and Soldiers

Clif Chaplain away! thy priesthood saves thy life

As for the brat of this accursed duke

Whose father slew my father he shall die

Tut And I my lord, will bear him company

Clif Soldiers away with him!
Tut Ah Clifford murder not this innocent child

Lest thou be hated both of God and man!

[*Exit dragged off by Soldiers*]

Clif How now! is he dead already? or is it fear

10

That makes him close his eyes? I'll open them

Rut So looks the pent up lion o'er the wretch

That trembles under his devouring paws

And so he walks insulting o'er his prey

And so he comes to rend his limbs asunder

Ah gentle Clifford kill me with thy sword

And not with such a cruel threatening look

Sweet Clifford hear me speak before I die

I am too mean a subject for thy wrath

Be thou revenged on men and let me live

20

Clif In vain thou speak'st poor boy my father's blood

Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words should enter

Rut Then let my father's blood open it again
 He is a man and Clifford cope with him

Clif Had I thy brethren here their lives and thine

Were not revenge sufficient for me

No if I'd gild up thy forefathers graves

And hung their rotten coffins up in chains

It could not slake mine ire nor ease my heart

The sight of any of the house of York

30

Is as a fury to torment my soul

And till I root out their accursed line

And leave not one alive I live in hell

Therefore— [*Lifting his hand*]

Rut O let me pray before I take my death!

To thee I pray sweet Clifford pity me!

Clif Such pity as my rapier's point affords

Rut I never did thee harm why wilt thou slay me?

Clif Thy father hath

Rut But 'twas ere I was born

Thou hast one son for his sake pity me

40

Lest in revenge thereof with God is just

He be as miserably slain as I

Ah let me live in prison all my days

And when I give occasion of offence

'Then let me die for now thou hast no cause

Clif No cause!

Thy father slew my father therefore die [*Stabs him*]

Rut *Di faciant laudis summas tibi tue!* [*Dies*

Clif Plantagenet! I come Plantagenet!

And thus thy son's blood cleaving to my blade

Shall rust upon my weapon till thy blood

Congel'd with this do make me wipe off both

[*Exit*]SCENE IV *Another part of the field*

Alarum Enter RICHARD DUKE OF YORK

York The army of the Queen hath got the field

My uncles both are slain in rescuing me

And all my followers to the eager foe

Turn back and fly like ships before the wind

Or lambs pursued by hunger starved wolves

My sons God know what hath bechanced them

But thus I know they have demean'd themselves

Like men born to renown by life or death

Three times did Richard make a lane to me

And thrice cried Courage father! fight it out!

And full as oft came Edward to my side

11

With purple falchion painted to the hilt

In blood of those that had encounter'd him

And when the hardest warriors did retire

Richard cried Charge! and give no foot of ground!

And cried A crown or else a glorious tomb!

A sceptre or an earthly sepulchre!

With this we charged again but out alas!

We boded again as I have seen a swan

With bootless labour swim against the tide

20

And spend her strength with over matching

waves [*A short alarum within*]

Ah hark! the fatal followers do pursue

And I am faint and cannot fly their fury

And were I strong I would not shun their fury

The sands are number'd that make up my life

Here must I stay and here my life must end

Enter QUEEN MARGARET CLIFFORD NORTHUMB

BERLAND the PRINCE OF WALES and Soldiers

Come bloody Clifford rough Northumberland

I dare your quenchless fury to more rage

I am your butt and I abide your shot

29

North Yield to our mercy proud Plantagenet

Clif Ay to such mercy as his ruth! as arm

With downright payment show'd unto my father

Now Phaethon hath tumbled from his car

And made an evening at the noontide prick

York My ashes as the phoenix may bring forth

A bird that will revenge upon you all

And in that hope I throw mine eyes to heaven

Scorning whatever you can afflict me with

Why come you not? what multitudes and fear?

Clif So cowards fight when they can fly no further

40

So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons

So desperate thieves all hopeless of their lives

Bre the out invectives against the officers

York O Clifford but bethink thee once again

And in thy thought o'er run my former time

And if thou canst for blushing view this face

And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with
cowardice

Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly ere
this!

Clif I will not bandy with thee word for word,
But buckle with thee blows, twice two for one 50

Q Mar Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thousand
causes

I would prolong awhile the traitor's life
Wrath makes him deaf speak thou, Northum-
berland

North Hold, Clifford! do not honour him so
much

To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart
What valour were it when a cur doth grin,
For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,
When he might spurn him with his foot away?
It is war's prize to take all advantages,

And ten to one is no impeach of valour 60

They lay hands on YORK, who struggles

Clif Ay, ay, so strives the woodcock with the
gun

North So doth the cony struggle in the net
York So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd
booty,

So true men yield, with robbers so o'ermatch'd

North What would your grace have done unto
him now?

Q Mar Brave warriors, Clifford and Northum-
berland,

Come, make him stand upon this molehill here
That raught at mountains with outstretched arms,
Yet parted but the shadow with his hand

What! was it you that would be England's king?

Was it you that revell'd in our parliament 71

And made a preachment of your high descent?

Where are your mess of sons to back you now?

The wanton Edward, and the lusty George?

And where's that valiant crook back prodigy,

Dicky your boy, that with his grumbling voice

Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?

Or, with the rest where is your darling Rutland?

Look, York! I stain'd this napkin with the blood

That valiant Clifford with his rapier's point, 80

Made issue from the bosom of the boy

And if thine eyes can water for his death,

I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal

Alas poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,

I should lament thy miserable state

I prithee grieve, to make me merry, York

What hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine en-
trails

That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?

Why art thou patient man? thou shouldst be
mad

And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus 90

Stamp, rave and fret, that I may sing and dance
Thou wouldst be fee'd I see to make me sport
York cannot speak, unless he wear a crown
A crown for York! and, lords, bow low to him
Hold you his hands, whilst I do set it on

Putting a paper crown on his head

Ay, marry, sir, now looks he like a king!

Ay, this is he that took King Henry's chair,

And this is he was his adopted heir

But how is it that great Plantagenet

Is crown'd so soon and broke his solemn oath?

As I bethink me you should not be king 101

Till our King Henry had shook hands with death

And will you pale your head in Henry's glory,

And rob his temples of the diadem,

Now in his life, against your holy oath?

O 'tis a fault too too unpardonable!

Off with the crown, and with the crown, his
head

And, whilst we breathe take time to do him dead

Clif That is my office for my father's sake

Q Mar Nay, stay, let's hear the orisons he
makes 110

York She-wolf of France, but worse than wolves
of France,

Whose tongue more poisons than the adder's
tooth!

How ill beseeeming is it in thy sex
To triumph, like an Amazonian trull,

Upon their woes whom fortune captivates!

But that thy face is visard like unchanging,

Made impudent with use of evil deeds

I would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush

To tell thee whence thou camest of whom de-
rived,

Were shame enough to shame thee wert thou
not shameless 120

Thy father bears the type of King of Naples,

Of both the Sicils and Jerusalem,

Yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman

Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult?

It needs not nor it boots thee not proud queen,

Unless the adage must be verified

That beggars mounted run their horse to death

'Tis beauty that doth oft make women proud

But God he knows thy share thereof is small

'Tis virtue that doth make them most admired

The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at 131

'Tis government that makes them seem divine,

The want thereof makes thee abominable

Thou art as opposite to every good

As the Antipodes are unto us

Or as the south to the septentrion

O tiger's heart wrapt in a woman's hide!

How couldst thou drain the life blood of the
child,

To bid the father wipe his eyes withal
 And yet be seen to bear a woman's face? 140
 Women are soft mild pitiful and flexible
 Thou stern obdurate flinty rough remorseless
 Bidst thou me rage? why now thou hast thy
 wish

Wouldst have me weep? why now thou hast thy
 will

For raging wind blows up incessant showers
 And when the rage allays the rain begins
 These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies
 And every drop cries vengeance for his death
 Against thee fell Clifford and thee false French
 woman

North Beshrew me but his passion moves me
 so 150

That hardly can I check my eyes from tears
 York That face of his the hungry cannibals
 Would not have touch'd would not have stain'd
 with blood

But you are more inhuman more inexorable
 O ten times more than tigers of Hyrcania
 See ruthless queen a hapless father's tears
 This cloth thou dip'st in blood of my sweet boy
 And I with tears do wash the blood away
 Keep thou the napkin and go boast of this
 And if thou tell'st the heavy story right 160
 Upon my soul the hearers will shed tears
 Yea even my foes will shed fast falling tears
 And say Alas it was a piteous deed
 There take the crown and with the crown my
 curse

And in thy need such comfort come to thee
 As now I reap at thy too cruel hand!
 Hard-hearted Clifford take me from the world
 My soul to heaven my blood upon your heads!
 North Had he been slaughter man to all my
 kin

I should not for my life but weep with him 170
 To see how only sorrow grips his soul
 Q Mar What weeping ripe my Lord North
 umberland?

Think but upon the wrong he did us all
 And that will quickly dry thy melting tears
 Cliff Here's for my oath here's for my father's
 death *[Stabs him]*

Q Mar And here's to right our gentle-hearted
 king *[Stabs him]*

York Open Thy gate of mercy gracious
 God

My soul flies through these wounds to seek out
 Thee *[Dies]*

Q Mar Off with his head and set it on York
 gates

So York may overlook the town of York 180
[Flourish Extant]

ACT II

SCENE I A plain near Mortimer's Cross in
 Herefordshire

A march Enter EDWARD RICHARD and their
 power

Edw I wonder how our princely father escap'd
 Or whether he be escap'd away or no
 From Clifford's and Northumberland's pursuit
 Had he been taken we should have heard the
 news

Had he been slain, we should have heard the
 news

Or had he escap'd methinks we should have
 heard

The happy tidings of his good escape
 How fares my brother? why is he so sad?

Rich I cannot joy until I be resolved
 Where our right valiant father is become 10
 I saw him in the battle range about
 And watch'd him how he singled Clifford
 forth

Methought he bore him in the thickest troop
 As doth a lion in a herd of deer
 Or as a bear encompass'd round with dogs
 Who having punch'd a few and made them cry
 The rest stand all aloof and bark at him

So far'd our father with his enemies
 So fled his enemies my warlike father
 Methinks 'tis prize enough to be his son 20
 See how the morning opens her golden gates
 And takes her farewell of the glorious sun!
 How well resembles it the prime of youth
 Trimm'd like a youngster prancing to his love!
 Edw Dazzle mine eyes or do I see three
 suns?

Rich Three glorious suns each one a perfect
 sun

Not separated with the racking clouds
 But sever'd in a pale clear shining sky
 See see! they join embrace and seem to kiss
 As if they vow'd some league inviolable 30
 Now are they but one lamp one light one sun
 In this the heaven figures some event

Edw 'Tis wondrous strange the like yet never
 heard of

I think it cures us brother to the field
 That we the sons of brave Plantagenet
 Each one already blazing by our deeds
 Should notwithstanding join our lights together
 And over shine the earth as this the world
 Whatever it bodes henceforward will I bear
 Upon my target three fair shining suns 40

Rich Nay bear three daughters by your leave
 I speak it

You love the breeder better than the male

Enter a MESSENGER

But what art thou whose heavy looks foretell
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue?

Mess Ah one that was a woe'ful looker-on
When as the noble Duke of York was slain
Your princely father and my loving lord!

Edw O, speak no more, for I have heard too much

Rich Say how he died, for I will hear it all

Mess Environed he was with many foes, 50
And stood against them, as the hope of Troy
Against the Greeks that would have enter'd

Troy
But Hercules himself must yield to odds,
And many strokes, though with a little axe
Hew down and fell the hardest timber'd oak
By many hands your father was subdued,
But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm
Of unrelenting Clifford and the Queen,
Who crown'd the gracious Duke in high despite,
Laugh'd in his face, and when with grief he wept

The ruthless Queen gave him to dry his cheeks 61
A napkin steeped in the harmless blood
Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford slain
And after many scorns, many foul taunts,
They took his head, and on the gates of York
They set the same and there it doth remain,
The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd

Edw Sweet Duke of York our prop to lean upon,

Now thou art gone, we have no staff no stay
O Clifford, boisterous Clifford! thou hast slain 71
The flower of Europe for his chivalry,

And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,
For hand to hand he would have vanquish'd thee
Now my soul's palace is become a prison

Ah, would she break from hence, that thus my body

Might in the ground be closed up in rest!

For never henceforth shall I joy again

Never, O never shall I see more joy!

Rich I cannot weep, for all my body's moisture
Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning heart

Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great burthen 81

For selfsame wind that I should speak withal
Is kindling coals that fires all my breast
And burns me up with flames that tears would quench

To weep is to make less the depth of grief
Tears then for babes blows and revenge for me
Richard I bear thy name I'll avenge thy death,
Or die renowned by attempting it

Edw His name that valiant duke hath left with thee,

His dukedom and his chair with me is left 90

Rich Nay, if thou be that princely eagle & bird,
Show thy descent by gazing against the sun
For chair and dukedom throne and kingdom say,
Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his

March Enter WARWICK MARQUESS OF MONTAGUE, and their army

War How now fair lords! What fare? what news abroad?

Rich Great Lord of Warwick, if we should recount

Our baleful news, and at each word's deliverance
Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told
The words would add more anguish than the wounds

O valiant lord the Duke of York is slain! 100

Edw O Warwick! Warwick! that Plantagenet,
Which held thee dearly as his soul's redemption,
Is by the stern Lord Clifford done to death

War Ten days ago I drown'd these news in tears,

And now to add more measure to your woes,
I come to tell you things sith then befall'n
After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,
Where your brave father breathed his latest gasp,
Tidings, as swiftly as the posts could run,
Were brought me of your loss and his depart 110
I, then in London keeper of the King,
Mustered my soldiers gather'd flocks of friends,
And very well appointed as I thought
March'd toward Saint Alban's to intercept the Queen

Bearing the King in my behalf along
For by my scouts I was advertised
That she was coming with a full intent
To dash our late decree in parliament
Touching King Henry's oath and your succession

Short tale to make we at Saint Alban's met 120

Our battles join'd and both sides fiercely fought
But whether 'twas the coldness of the King
Who look'd full gently on his warlike Queen
That robb'd my soldiers of their heated spleen
Or whether 'twas report of her success

Or more than common fear of Clifford's rigour
Who thunders to his captives blood and death
I cannot judge but to conclude with truth
Their weapons like to lightning came and went
Our soldiers like the night-owl's lazy flight 130
Or like an idle thresher with a flail
Fell gently down as if they struck their friends
I cheer'd them up with justice of our cause
With promise of high pay and great rewards

But all in vain they had no heart to fight
 And we in them no hope to win the day
 So that we fled the King unto the Queen
 Lord George your brother Norfolk and myself
 In haste post haste are come to join with you
 For in the marches here we heard you were 140
 Making another head to fight again

Edw. Where is the Duke of Norfolk gentle
 Warwick?

And when came George from Burgundy to Eng-
 land?

War. Some six miles off the Duke is with the
 soldiers

And for your brother he was lately sent
 From your kind aunt Duchess of Burgundy
 With aid of soldiers to this needful war

Rich. 'Twas odds belike, when valiant War-
 wick fled

Oft have I heard his praises in pursuit
 But ne'er till now his scandal of retire 150

War. Nor now my scandal Richard dost thou
 hear

For thou shalt know this strong right hand of
 mine

Can pluck the diadem from saint Henry's head
 And wring the awful sceptre from his fist
 Were he as famous and as bold in war
 As he is famed for mildness peace and prayer

Rich. I know it well Lord Warwick blame me
 not

'Tis love I bear thy glories makes me speak
 But in this troublous time what's to be done?
 Shall we go throw away our coats of steel? 160

And wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns
 Numbering our Ave Marias with our beads?

Or shall we on the helmets of our foes
 Tell our devotion with revengeful arms?

If for the last say ay and to it lords

War. Why therefore Warwick came to seek
 you out

And therefore comes my brother Montague
 Attend me lords The proud insulting Queen,
 With Clifford and the haught Northumberland

And of their feather many more proud birds 170
 Have wrought the easy melting King like wax

He swore consent to your succession,
 His oath enrolled in the parliament

And now to London all the crew are gone
 To frustrate both his oath and what beside

May make against the house of Lancaster
 Their power I think is thirty thousand strong

Now if the help of Norfolk and myself
 With all the friends that thou bearest Earl of

March

Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure 180
 Will but amount to five and twenty thousand

Why Via! to London will we march again,
 And once again bestride our foaming steeds
 And once again cry Charge upon our foes!
 But never once again turn back and fly
Rich. Ay now methinks I hear great Warwick
 speak

Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day
 That cries Retire, if Warwick bid him stay

Edw. Lord Warwick on thy shoulder will I
 lean 189

And when thou fallst—as God forbid the
 hour—

Must Edward fall which peril heaven forbend!
War. No longer Earl of March but Duke of

York

The next degree is England's royal throne
 For King of England shalt thou be proclaim'd

In every borough as we pass along
 And he that throw's not up his cap for joy
 Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head
 King Edward valiant Richard Montague,
 Say, we no longer dreaming of renown
 But sound the trumpets and about our task 200

Rich. Then Clifford, were thy heart as hard as
 steel

As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds
 I come to pierce it or to give thee mine

Edw. Then strike up drums God and Saint
 George for us!

Enter a SECOND MESSENGER

War. How now! what news?

2nd Mess. The Duke of Norfolk sends you word
 by me

The Queen is coming with a puissant host
 And craves your company for speedy counsel

War. Why then it sorts brave warriors let's
 away [Exit

SCENE II Before York

Flourish Enter KING HENRY QUEEN MARGARET
 the PRINCE OF WALES CLIFFORD and NORTH
 UMBERLAND with drum and trumpets

Q. Mar. Welcome my lord to this brave town
 of York

Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy
 That sought to be encompass'd with your crown
 Doth not the object cheer your heart my lord?

A. Hen. Ay as the rocks cheer them that fear
 their wreck

To see this sight it ricks my very soul
 Withhold revenge dear God! 'tis not my fault
 Nor wittingly have I infringed my vow

Clif. My gracious liege this too much lenity 10
 And harmful pity must be laid aside
 To whom do lions cast their gentle looks?

Not to the beast that would usurp their den
 Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick?
 Not his that spoils her young before her face
 Who 'scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting?
 Not he that sets his foot upon her back
 The smallest worm will turn being trodden on
 And doves will peck in safeguard of their brood
 Ambitious York did level at thy crown,
 Thou smiling while he knit his angry brows 20
 He, but a duke, would have his son a king,
 And raise his issue, like a loving sire,
 Thou, being a king, blest with a goodly son,
 Didst yield consent to disinherit him,
 Which argued thee a most unloving father
 Unreasonable creatures feed their young
 And though man's face be fearful to their eyes,
 Yet, in protection of their tender ones
 Who hath not seen them even with those wings
 Which sometime they have used with fearful
 flight 30
 Make war with him that climb'd unto their nest,
 Offering their own lives in their young's defence?

For shame my liege, make them your precedent!
 Were it not pity that this goodly boy
 Should lose his birthright by his father's fault,
 And long hereafter say unto his child,
 "What my great grandfather and grandsire got
 My careless father fondly gave away?"
 Ah, what a shame were this! Look on the boy,
 And let his manly face, which promiseth 40
 Successful fortune steel thy melting heart
 To hold thine own and leave thine own with him
 A Hen Full well hath Clifford play'd the orator,

Inferring arguments of mighty force
 But Clifford tell me didst thou never hear
 That things ill got had ever bad success?
 And happy always was it for that son
 Whose father for his hoarding went to hell?
 I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind,
 And would my father had left me no more! 50
 For all the rest is held at such a rate
 As brings a thousand fold more care to keep
 Than in possession any jot of pleasure
 Ah, cousin York! would thy best friends did know

How it doth grieve me that thy head is here!
 Q Mar My lord cheer up your spirits our
 foes are nigh
 And this soft courage makes your followers faint
 You promised knighthood to our forward son
 Unsheathe your sword and dub him presently 60
 Edw and kneel down
 A Hen Edward Plantagenet arise a knight
 And learn this lesson draw thy sword in right

Prince My gracious father, by your kingly
 leave,
 I'll draw it as apparent to the crown
 And in that quarrel use it to the death
 Clif Why that is spoken like a toward prince

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess Royal commanders be in readiness
 For with a band of thirty thousand men
 Comes Warwick backing of the Duke of
 York,
 And in the towns as they do march along, 70
 Proclaims him king and many fly to him
 Darraign your battle for they are at hand
 Clif I would your Highness would depart the
 field
 The Queen hath best success when you are absent
 Q Mar Ay, good my lord, and leave us to our
 fortune
 K Hen Why, that's my fortune too therefore
 I'll stay
 North Be it with resolution then to fight
 Prince My royal father cheer these noble lords
 And hearten those that fight in your defence
 Unsheathe your sword, good father cry 'Saint
 George! 80

March Enter EDWARD GEORGE, RICHARD, WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE and Soldiers

Edw Now perjured Henry! wilt thou kneel for
 grace
 And set thy diadem upon my head
 Or bide the mortal fortune of the field?
 Q Mar Go rate thy minions, proud insulting
 boy!
 Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms
 Before thy sovereign and thy lawful king?
 Edw I am his king and he should bow his knee,
 I was adopted heir by his consent
 Since when his oath is broke for as I hear
 You that are king though he do wear the crown,
 Have caused him by new act of parliament 91
 To blot out me and put his own son in
 Clif And reason too
 Who should succeed the father but the son?
 Rich Are you there, burcher? O I cannot
 speak!
 Clif Ay, crook back here I stand to answer
 thee
 Or any he the proudest of thy sort
 Rich 'Twas you that kill'd young Rutland
 was it not?
 Clif Ay, and old York and yet not satisfied
 Rich For God's sake, lords give signal to the
 fight 100

War What say'st thou Henry wilt thou yield the crown?

Q Mar Why how now long tongued War wick! dare you speak?

When you and I met at Samt Alban's last

Your legs did better serve than your hands

War Then 'twas my turn to fly and now 'tis thine

Clif You said so much before and yet you fled

War 'Twas not your valour Clifford drove me thence

North No nor your manhood that durst make you stay

Rich Northumberland, I hold thee reverently
Break off the parley for scarce I can refrain
The execution of my big swollen heart

Upon that Clifford that cruel child killer

Clif I slew thy father call'st thou him a child?

Rich Ay like a dastard and a treacherous coward

As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland

But ere sunset I'll make thee curse the deed

A Hen Have done with words my lords and hear me speak

Q Mar Defy them then or else hold close thy lips

A Hen I prithe thee give no limits to my tongue

I am a king and privileged to speak 120

Clif My liege the wound that bred this meeting here

Cannot be cured by words therefore be still

Rich Then executioner unsheathe thy sword

By him that made us all I am resolved

That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue

Edw Say Henry shall I have my right or no?

A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day

That ne'er shall dine unless thou yield the crown

War If thou deny their blood upon thy head

For York in justice puts his armour on 130

Prince If that be right which Warwick says is right

There is no wrong but every thing is right

Rich Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands

For well I wot thou hast thy mother's tongue

Q Mar But thou art neither like thy sire nor dam

But like a foul misshapen stigmatic,

Mark'd by the destinies to be avoided

As venom toads or lizards dreadful stings

Puck Iron of Naples hid with English gilt

Whose father bears the title of a king— 140

As if a channel should be call'd the sea—

Shamest thou not knowing whence thou art extracted?

To let thy tongue detect thy base born heart?

Edw A wisp of straw were worth a thousand crowns

To make this shameless callet know herself

Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou

Although thy husband may be Menelaus

And ne'er was Agamemnon's brother wrong'd

By that false woman, as this king by thee

His father revell'd in the heart of France, 150

And tamed the king and made the Dauphin stoop

And had he match'd according to his state

He might have kept that glory to this day

But when he took a bear to his bed

And graced thy poor sire with his bridal-day

Even then that sunshine brew'd a shower for him

That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France

And heap'd sedition on his crown at home

For what hath broach'd this tumult but thy pride?

Hadst thou been meek our title still had slept

And we in pity of the gentle king, 160

Had slipp'd our claim until another age

Geo But when we saw our sunshine made thy spring

And that thy summer bred us no increase,

We set the axe to thy usurping root

And though the edge hath something hit our selves

Yet know thou since we have begun to strike

We'll never leave till we have hewn thee down

Or bathed thy growing with our heated bloods

Edw And in this resolution I defy thee 170

Not willing any longer conference,

Since thou deniest the gentle king to speak

Sound trumpets! let our bloody colours wave!

And either victory or else a grave

Q Mar Stay Edward

Edw No wrangling woman, we'll no longer stay

These words will cost ten thousand lives this day
[Exeunt]

SCENE III A field of battle between Towton and Saxton in Yorkshire

Alarum Excursions Enter WARWICK

War Forspent with toil as runners with a race

I lay me down a little while to breathe

For strokes received and many blows repaid

Have robb'd my strong knit sinews of their strength,

And spite of spite needs must I rest awhile

Enter EDWARD running

Edw Smile gentle heaven! or strike ungentle death!

For this world frowns and Edward's sun is clouded.

War How now, my lord! what hap? what hope of good?

Enter GEORGE

Geo Our hap is loss our hope but sad despair,
Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us 10
What counsel give you? whither we fly?

Edw Bootless is flight, they follow us with wings,
And weak we are and cannot shun pursuit

Enter RICHARD

Rich Ah, Warwick, why hast thou withdrawn thyself?

Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath drunk,
Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's lance,
And in the very pangs of death he cried,
Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,
"Warwick, revenge! brother, revenge my death!"

So underneath the belly of their steeds, 20
That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking blood,

The noble gentleman gave up the ghost

War Then let the earth be drunken with our blood

I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly
Why stand we like soft hearted women here,
Wailing our losses while the foe doth rage,
And look upon, as if the tragedy

Were play'd in jest by counterfeiting actors?

Here on my knee I vow to God above

I'll never pause again never stand still, 30

Till either death hath closed these eyes of mine

Or fortune given me measure of revenge

Edw O Warwick, I do bend my knee with thine,

And in this vow do chain my soul to thine!

And, ere my knee rise from the earth's cold face,

I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,

Thou setter up and plucker down of kings,

Beseeking thee, if with thy will it stands

That to my foes this body must be prey

Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may open, 40

And give sweet passage to my sinful soul!

Now, lords take leave until we meet again,

Where'er it be in heaven or in earth

Rich Brother give me thy hand and gentle

Warwick

Let me embrace thee in my weary arms

I that did never weep now melt with woe

That winter should cut off our spring time so

War Away away! Once more sweet lords
farewell

Geo Yet let us all together to our troops 50
And give them leave to fly that will not stay

And call them pillars that will stand to us,
And if we thrive, promise them such rewards
As victors at the Olympian games
This may plant courage in their quailing breasts,
For yet is hope of life and victory
Forsook no longer, make we hence amain

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *Another part of the field*

Excursions Enter RICHARD and CLIFFORD

Rich Now, Clifford, I have singled thee alone
Suppose this arm is for the Duke of York
And this for Rutland, both bound to revenge,
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall

Clif Now, Richard, I am with thee here alone
This is the hand that stab'd thy father York
And this the hand that slew thy brother Rutland
And here's the heart that triumphs in their death
And cheers these hands that slew thy sire and brother

To execute the like upon thyself, 10
And so have at thee!

They fight WARWICK comes, CLIFFORD flies

Rich Nay Warwick, single out some other chase

For I myself will hunt this wolf to death

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE V *Another part of the field*

Alarum Enter KING HENRY alone

King This battle fares like to the morning's war,

When dying clouds contend with growing light,
What time the shepherd blowing of his nails,
Can neither call it perfect day nor night

Now sways it this way, like a mighty sea
Forced by the tide to combat with the wind,
Now sways it that way, like the selfsame sea
Forced to retire by fury of the wind
Sometime the flood prevails, and then the wind, 10
Now one the better than another best
Both tugging to be victors breast to breast,
Yet neither conqueror nor conquered

So is the equal poise of this fell war
Here on this molehill will I sit me down
To whom God will there be the victory!
For Margaret my queen and Clifford too
Have chid me from the battle swearing both
They prosper best of all when I am thence
Would I were dead! if God's good will were so,
For what is in this world but grief and woe? 20
O God! methinks it were a happy life
To be no better than a homely swain,
To sit upon a hill as I do now

To carve out dials quaintly point by point
Thereby to see the minutes how they run,

How many make the hour full complete
 How many hours bring about the day
 How many days will finish up the year
 How many years a mortal man may live
 When this is known then to divide the times 30

So many hours must I tend my flock
 So many hours must I take my rest
 So many hours must I contemplate
 So many hours must I sport myself
 So many days my ewes have been with young
 So many weeks ere the poor fools will can
 So many years ere I shall shear the fleece
 So minutes hours days months and years
 Pass do'er to the end they were created
 Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave 40
 Ah what a life were this! how sweet! how lovely!
 Gives not the hawthorn bush a sweeter shade
 To shepherds looking on their silly sheep
 Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy
 To kings that fear their subjects' treachery?
 O yes it doth a thousand fold it doth
 And to conclude the shepherd's homely curds
 His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle
 His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade
 All which secure and sweetly he enjoys 50
 Is far beyond a prince's delicacies
 His viands sparkling in a golden cup
 His body couched in a curious bed
 When care mistrust and treason waits on him

*Alarum Enter a son that has killed his father
 dragging in the dead body*

Son Ill blows the wind that profits nobody
 This man whom hand to hand I slew in fight
 May be possessed with some store of crowns
 And I that haply take them from him now
 May yet ere night yield both my life and them
 To some man else as this dead man doth me 60
 Who's this? O God it is my father's face
 Whom in this conflict I unawares have kill'd
 O heavy times begetting such events!
 From London by the King was I press'd forth
 My father being the Earl of Warwick's man
 Came on the part of York press'd by his master
 And I who in his hands received my life
 Have by my hands of life bereaved him
 Pardon me God I knew not what I did!
 And pardon father for I knew not thee! 70
 My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks
 And no more words till they have flow'd their
 fill

A Hen O piteous spectacle! O bloody times!
 Whiles lions war and battle for their dens
 Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity
 Weep wretched man, I'll add thee tear for tear
 And let our hearts and eyes like civil war

Be blind with tears and break o'ercharg'd with
 grief

*Enter a FATHER that has killed his son bringing
 in the body*

Fath Thou that so stoutly hast resisted me,
 Give me thy gold if thou hast any gold 80
 For I have bought it with an hundred blows
 But let me see is this our foeman's face?
 Ah no no no it is mine only son!
 Ah boy if any life be left in thee
 Throw up thine eyes! see see what showers arise
 Blown with the windy tempest of my heart
 Upon thy wounds that kill mine eye and heart!
 O pity God this miserable age!
 What stratagems how fell how butcherly
 Erroneous mutinous and unnatural 90
 This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!
 O boy thy father gave thee life too soon,
 And hath bereft thee of thy life too late!

A Hen Woe above woe! grief more than
 common grief!

O that my death would stay these ruthless deeds!
 O pity pity gentle heaven pity!
 The red rose and the white are on his face
 The fatal colours of our striving houses
 The one his purple blood right well resembles
 The other his pale cheeks methinks presenteth
 Wither one rose and let the other flourish 100
 If you contend a thousand lives must wither
 Son How will my mother for a father's death
 Take on with me and ne'er be satisfied!

Fath How will my wife for slaughter of my
 son

Shed seas of tears and ne'er be satisfied!

A Hen How will the country for these woful
 chances

Misthink the King and not be satisfied!

Son Was ever son so rued a father's death?

Fath Was ever father so bemoan'd his son?

A Hen Was ever king so grieved for subjects
 woe? 111

Much is your sorrow mine ten times so much

Son I'll bear thee hence where I may weep my
 fill *[Exit with the body]*

Fath These arms of mine shall be thy winding
 sheet

My heart sweet boy shall be thy sepulchre
 For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go
 My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell
 And so obsequious will thy father be,
 Even for the loss of thee having no more,
 As Priam was for all his valiant sons 120
 I'll bear thee hence and let them fight that will
 For I have murdered where I should not kill

[Exit with the body]

Hen Sad hearted men much overgone with care,
Here sits a king more woeful than you are

Alarums excursions Enter QUEEN MARGARET,
the PRINCE OF WALES, and EXETER

Prince Fly, father, fly! for all your friends are fled,
And Warwick rages like a chafed bull
Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit
Q Mar Mount you, my lord towards Berwick
post amain
Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds
Having the fearful flying hare in sight, 130
With fiery eyes sparkling for very wrath,
And bloody steel grasp d in their ireful hands,
Are at our backs, and therefore hence amain
Exe Away! for vengeance comes along with them
Nay, stay not to expostulate, make speed
Or else come after I ll away before
Hen Nay, take me with thee, good sweet
Exeter
Not that I fear to stay, but love to go
Whither the Queen intends Forward, away! 140
[Exeunt]

SCENE VI *Another part of the field*

A loud alarm Enter CLIFFORD wounded

Clif Here burns my candle out, ay, here it dies,
Which, whiles it lasted, gave King Henry light
O Lancaster, I fear thy overthrow
More than my body's parting with my soul!
My love and fear glued many friends to thee
And now I fall, thy tough commixture melts
Impairing Henry, strengthening misproud York,
The common people swarm like summer flies,
And whither fly the gnats but to the sun?
And who shines now but Henry's enemies? 10
O Phoebus hadst thou never given consent
That Phaethon should check thy fiery steeds,
Thy burning car never had scorched the earth!
And Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings should
do,
Or as thy father and his father did
Giving no ground unto the house of York
They never then had sprung like summer flies
I and ten thousand in this luckless realm
Had left no mourning widows for our death
And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in peace
For what doth cherish weeds but gentle air? 21
And what makes robbers bold but too much leni-
ty?
Bootless are plaints and cureless are my wounds
No way to fly nor strength to hold our flight
The foe is merciless, and will not pity

For at their hands I have deserved no pity
The air hath got into my deadly wounds,
And much effuse of blood doth make me faint
Come, York and Richard, Warwick and the rest,
I stabd d your fathers' bosoms, split my breast
[He faints]

Alarum and retreat Enter EDWARD GEORGE,
RICHARD, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers

Edw Now breathe we, lords good fortune bids
us pause, 31
And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful
looks
Some troops pursue the bloody minded Queen,
That led calm Henry though he were a king,
As doth a sail fill d with a fretting gust,
Command an argosy to stem the waves
But think you lords that Clifford fled with
them?
War No 'tis impossible he should escape
For, though before his face I speak the words,
Your brother Richard mark d him for the grave
And wheresoe'er he is he s surely dead 41
[CLIFFORD groans, and dies]

Edw Whose soul is that which takes her heavy
leave?

Rich A deadly groan, like life and death's de-
parting

Edw See who it is and, now the battle s ended,
If friend or foe, let him be gently used

Rich Revoke that doom of mercy for 'tis
Clifford

Who not contented that he lopp'd the branch
In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,
But set his murdering knife unto the root
From whence that tender spray did sweetly
spring,

I mean our princely father Duke of York 51

War From off the gates of York fetch down
the head

Your father's head which Clifford placed there,
Instead whereof let this supply the room
Measure for measure must be answered

Edw Bring forth that fatal screech-owl to our
house

That nothing sung but death to us and ours
Now death shall stop his dismal threatening
sound

And his ill boding tongue no more shall speak

War I think his understanding is bereft 60
Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to
thee?

Dark cloudy death overshades his beams of life,
And he nor sees nor hears us what we say

Rich O would he did! and so perhaps he do h
'Tis but his policy to counterfeit,

Because he would avoid such bitter taunts
Which in the time of death he gave our father
Go if so thou think it vex him with eager
words

Rich Clifford ask mercy and obtain no grace
Edw Clifford repent in bootless penitence 70
War Clifford devise excuses for thy faults
Geo While we devise fell tortures for thy faults
Rich Thou didst love York and I am son to
York

Edw Thou pitiest me Rutland I will pity thee
Geo Where's Captain Margaret to fence you
now?

War They mock thee, Clifford swear as thou
wast wont

Rich What not an oath? nay then the world
goes hard

When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath
I know by that he's dead and by my soul
If this right hand would buy two hours' life 80
That I in all despite might rail at him
This hand should chop it off and with the issuing
blood

Stifle the villain whose unslaked thirst
York and young Rutland could not satisfy

War Ay but he's dead off with the traitor's
head

And rear it in the place your father's stands
And now to London with triumphant march
There to be crowned England's royal king
From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to
France,

And ask the Lady Bona for thy queen 90
So shalt thou snew both these lands together
And having France thy friend thou shalt not
dread

The scatter'd foe that hopes to rise again
For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt
Yet look to have them buzz to offend thine ears
First will I see the coronation

And then to Brittany I'll cross the sea
To effect this marriage, so it please my lord

Edw Even as thou wilt sweet Warwick let it
be

For in thy shoulder do I build my seat 100
And never will I undertake the thing
Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting
Richard I will create thee Duke of Gloucester
And George of Clarence Warwick as ourself
Shall do and undo as him pleaseth best

Rich Let me be Duke of Clarence George of
Gloucester

For Gloucester's dukedom is too ominous

War But that's a foolish observation

Richard be Duke of Gloucester Now to Lon-
don,

To see these honours in possession

110

{Exit}

ACT III

SCENE I A forest in the north of England

Enter TWO KEEPERS with cross bows in their
hands

1st Keeper Under this thick-grown brake we'll
shroud ourselves

For through this laund anon the deer will come
And in this covert will we make our stand
Calling the principal of all the deer

2nd Keeper I'll stay above the hill so both may
shoot

1st Keeper That cannot be the noise of thy cross
bow

Will scare the herd and so my shoot is lost
Here stand we both and aim we at the best
And for the time shall not seem tedious
I'll tell thee what befel me on a day 10
In this self place where now we mean to stand
and keep Here comes a man let's stay till he
be past

Enter KING HENRY disguised with a
prayerbook

A Hen From Scotland am I stol'n even of pure
love,

To greet mine own land with my wishful sight
No Harry Harry tis no land of thine
Thy place is fill'd thy sceptre wrung from thee
Thy balm wash'd off wherewith thou wast
anointed

No bending knee will call thee Caesar now
No humble suitors press to speak for right
No not a man comes for redress of thee 0
For how can I help them and not myself?

1st Keeper Ay here's a deer whose skin's a
keeper's fee

This is the quondam king let's seize upon him

A Hen Let me embrace thee sour adversity

For wise men say it is the wisest course

2nd Keeper Why linger we? let us lay hands upon
him

1st Keeper Forbear awhile we'll hear a little
more

A Hen My queen and son are gone to France
for aid

And as I hear the great commanding Warwick
Is thither gone to crave the French king's sister
To wife for Edward if this news be true 31
Poor queen and son, your labour is but lost
For Warwick is a subtle orator
And Lewis is a prince soon won with moving
words

By this account then Margaret may win him,
 For she's a woman to be pitied much
 Her sighs will make a battery in his breast,
 Her tears will pierce into a marble heart
 The tiger will be mild whiles she doth mourn,
 And Nero will be tainted with remorse 40
 To hear and see her plaints her brinish tears
 Ay, but she's come to beg, Warwick, to give,
 She, on his left side, craving aid for Henry,
 He, on his right, asking a wife for Edward
 She weeps and says her Henry is deposed,
 He smiles, and says his Edward is install'd,
 That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no
 more,
 Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the
 wrong,
 Inferreth arguments of mighty strength,
 And in conclusion wins the King from her, 50
 With promise of his sister, and what else
 To strengthen and support King Edward's place
 O Margaret, thus 'twill be, and thou, poor soul,
 Art then forsaken, as thou wert'st forlorn'
2nd Keep Say, what art thou that talk'st of
 kings and queens?
A Hen More than I seem, and less than I was
 born to
 A man at least, for less I should not be,
 And men may talk of kings, and why not I?
2nd Keep Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a
 king
K Hen Why, so I am in mind, and that's
 enough 60
2nd Keep But, if thou be a king, where is thy
 crown?
A Hen My crown is in my heart not on my
 head,
 Not deck'd with diamonds and Indian stones,
 Nor to be seen my crown is called content
 A crown it is that seldom kings enjoy
2nd Keep Well, if you be a king encrown'd with
 content
 Your crown content and you must be contented
 To go along with us, for as we think
 You are the king King Edward hath deposed,
 And we his subjects sworn in all allegiance 70
 Will apprehend you as his enemy
A Hen But did you never swear and break an
 oath?
2nd Keep No never such an oath nor will not
 now
A Hen Where did you dwell when I was king
 of England?
2nd Keep Here in this country where we now
 remain
A Hen I was anointed king at nine months old
 My father and my grandfather were kings

And you were sworn true subjects unto me
 And tell me then have you not broke your oaths?
1st Keep No 80
 For we were subjects but while you were king
K Hen Why, am I dead? do I not breathe a
 man?
 Ah, simple men you know not what you swear!
 Look, as I blow this feather from my face,
 And as the air blows it to me again
 Obeying with my wind when I do blow,
 And yielding to another when it blows,
 Commanded always by the greater gust,
 Such is the lightness of you common men
 But do not break your oaths, for of that sin 90
 My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty
 Go where you will the king shall be command-
 ed
 And be you kings, command and I'll obey
1st Keep We are true subjects to the King King
 Edward
K Hen So would you be again to Henry,
 If he were seated as King Edward is
1st Keep We charge you, in God's name, and
 the King's,
 To go with us unto the officers
K Hen In God's name, lead, your king's name
 be obey'd
 And what God will that let your king perform,
 And what he will, I humbly yield unto 101
[Exeunt]

SCENE II London The palace

*Enter KING EDWARD GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE,
 and LADY GREY*

K Edw Brother of Gloucester, at Saint Alban's
 field
 This lady's husband Sir Richard Grey, was
 slain
 His lands then seized on by the conqueror
 Her suit is now to repossess those lands,
 Which we in justice cannot well deny,
 Because in quarrel of the house of York
 Thy worthy gentleman did lose his life
Glou Your highness shall do well to grant her
 suit
 It were dishonour to deny it her
K Edw It were no less but yet I'll make a
 pause 10
Glou *[Aside to CLARENCE]* Yea is it so?
 I see the lady hath a thing to grant
 Before the king will grant her humble suit
Clar *[Aside to GLOUCESTER]* He knows the
 game how true he keeps the wind!
Glou *[Aside to CLARENCE]* Silence!
K Edw Widow we will consider of your suit,
 And come some other time to know our mind

L. Gr. y Right gracious lord I cannot brook delay
 May it please your Highness to resolve me now
 And what your pleasure is shall satisfy me 20
Glou. [Aside to CLARENCE] Ay widow? then I'll warrant you all your lands
 As if it pleaseth him shall pleasure you
 Fight closer or good faith you'll catch a blow
Clar. [Aside to GLOUCESTER] I fear her not unless she chance to fall
Glou. [Aside to CLARENCE] God forbid that! for he'll take vengeance
A. Edw. How many children hast thou widow? tell me
Clar. [Aside to GLOUCESTER] I think he means to beg a child of her
Glou. [Aside to CLARENCE] Nay whp me then he'll rather give her two
L. Gr. y Three my most gracious lord
Glou. [Aside to CLARENCE] You shall have four if you'll be ruled by him 30
A. Edw. Twere pity they should lose their father's lands
L. Gr. y Be pitiful dread lord and grant it then
A. Edw. Lords give us leave I'll try this widow's wit
Glou. [Aside to CLARENCE] Ay good leave have you for you will have leave
 Till youth take leave and leave you to the crutch [GLOUCESTER and CLARENCE retire]
A. Edw. Now tell me madam do you love your children?
L. Grey Ay full as dearly as I love my self
A. Edw. And would you not do much to do them good?
L. Grey To do them good I would sustain some harm
A. Edw. Then get your husband's lands to do them good 40
L. Grey Therefore I came unto your Majesty
A. Edw. I'll tell you how these lands are to be got
L. Grey So shall you bind me to your Highness service
A. Edw. What service wilt thou do me if I give them?
L. Gr. y What you command that rests in me to do
A. Edw. But you will take exceptions to my boon
L. Gr. y No gracious lord except I cannot do it
A. Edw. Ay but thou canst do what I mean to ask
L. Gr. y Why then I will do what your grace commands

Glou. [Aside to CLARENCE] He plies her hard and much rain wears the marble 50
Clar. [Aside to GLOUCESTER] As red as fire! nay then her wax must melt
L. Grey Why stops my lord? shall I not hear my task?
A. Edw. An easy task 'tis but to love a king
L. Grey That's soon perform'd because I am a subject
A. Edw. Why then thy husband's lands I freely give thee
L. Grey I take my leave with many thousand thanks
Glou. [Aside to CLARENCE] The match is made she seals it with a curtsy
A. Edw. But stay thee 'tis the fruits of love I mean
L. Grey The fruits of love I mean my loving liege
A. Edw. Ay but I fear me in another sense 60
 What love, think'st thou I sue so much to get?
L. Grey My love till death my humble thanks my prayers
 That love which virtue begs and virtue grants
A. Edw. No by my troth I did not mean such love
L. Gr. y Why then you mean not as I thought you did
A. Edw. But now you partly may perceive my mind
L. Grey My mind will never grant what I perceive
 Your Highness aims at if I am aright
A. Edw. To tell thee plain I aim to lie with thee
L. Grey To tell you plain I had rather lie in prison 70
A. Edw. Why then thou shalt not have thy husband's lands
L. Gr. y Why then mine honesty shall be my dowry
 For by that loss I will not purchase them
A. Edw. Therein thou wrong'st thy children mightily
L. Grey Herein your Highness wrongs both them and me
 But mighty lord this merry inclination
 Accords not with the sadness of my suit
 Please you dismiss me either with ay or no
A. Edw. Ay if thou wilt say ay to my request
 No if thou dost say no to my demand 80
L. Gr. y Then no my lord My suit is at an end
Glou. [Aside to CLARENCE] The widow likes him not she knits her brows

Clar [*Aside to GLOUCESTER*] He is the bluntest wooer in Christendom
K Edw [*Aside*] Her looks do argue her replete with modesty,

Her words do show her wit incomparable,
 All her perfections challenge sovereignty
 One way or other, she is for a king,
 And she shall be my love or else my queen —
 Say that King Edward talc thee for his queen?

L Grey 'Tis better said than done, my gracious lord 90

I am a subject fit to jest withal,
 But far unfit to be a sovereign

K Edw Sweet widow, by my state I swear to thee

I speak no more than what my soul intends,
 And that is to enjoy thee for my love

L Grey And that is more than I will yield unto
 I know I am too mean to be your queen,
 And yet too good to be your concubine

K Edw You cavil, widow I did mean, my queen

L Grey 'Twill grieve your Grace my sons should call you father 100

K Edw No more than when my daughters call thee mother

Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children,
 And, by God's mother, I being but a bachelor
 Have other some why, 'tis a happy thing
 To be the father unto many sons

Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen

Glou [*Aside to CLARENCE*] The ghostly father now hath done his shrift

Clar [*Aside to GLOUCESTER*] When he was made a shrifer, 'twas for shift

K Edw Brothers you muse what chat we two have had

Glou The widow likes it not, for she looks very sad 110

K Edw Yould think it strange if I should marry her

Clar To whom, my lord?

K Edw Why Clarence to myself

Glou That would be ten days' wonder at the least

Clar That's a day longer than a wonder lasts

Glou By so much is the wonder in extremes

K Edw Well jest on brothers I can tell you both

Her suit is granted for her husband's lands

Enter a NOBILMAN

Nob My gracious lord Henry your foe is taken
 And brought your prisoner to your palace gate

K Edw See that he be conveyed unto the Tower 120

And go we, brothers to the man that took him,
 To question of his apprehension

Widow, go you along Lords use her honourably [*Exeunt all but GLOUCESTER*]

Glou Ay, Edward will use women honourably
 Would he were wasted, marrow, bones and all,
 That from his loins no hopeful branch may spring
 To cross me from the golden time I look for!

And yet, between my soul's desire and me—
 The lustful Edward's title buried— 129

Is Clarence Henry and his son young Edward,
 And all the unlook'd for issue of their bodies
 To take their rooms ere I can place myself
 A cold premeditation for my purpose!

Why, then I do but dream on sovereignty
 Like one that stands upon a promontory
 And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,
 Wishing his foot were equal with his eye
 And chides the sea that sunders him from thence,
 Saying he'll lade it dry to have his way

So do I wish the crown being so far off 140

And so I chide the means that keeps me from it,
 And so I say I'll cut the causes off,

Flattering me with impossibilities
 My eyes too quick, my heart overweening too much

Unless my hand and strength could equal them
 Well say there is no kingdom then for Richard,
 What other pleasure can the world afford?

I'll make my heaven in a lady's lap
 And deck my body in gay ornaments
 And witch sweet ladies with my words and looks
 O miserable thoughts! and more unlikely 151

Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns!

Why, lo! I forswore me in my mother's womb
 And for I should not deal in her soft laws,

She did corrupt frail nature with some bribe,
 To shrink mine arm up like a wither'd shrub

To make an envious mountain on my back,
 Where sits deformity to mock my body,
 To shape my legs of an unequal size,
 To disproportion me in every part 160

Like to a chaos or an unlick'd bear-whelp
 That carries no impression like the dam
 And am I then a man to be beloved?

O monstrous fault to harbour such a thought!

Then since this earth affords no joy to me,
 But to command to check to overbear such
 As are of better person than my self

I'll make my heaven to dream upon the crown
 And whiles I live to account this world but hell,

Until my misshap'd trunk that bears this head
 Be round impaled with a glorious crown 171

And yet I know not how to get the crown,
 For many lives stand between me and home

And I—like one lost in a thorny wood

That rends the thorns and is rent with the thorns
 Seeking a way and straying from the way
 Not knowing how to find the open air
 But toiling desperately to find it out—
 Torment myself to catch the English crown
 And from that torment I will free myself 180
 Or hew my way out with a bloody axe
 Whiles I can smile and murder whiles I smile
 And cry Content to that which gries my heart

And wet my cheeks with artificial tears
 And frame my face to all occasions
 I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall
 I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk
 I'll play the orator as well as Nestor
 Deceive more shily than Ulysses could
 And like a Sinon take another Troy 190
 I can add colours to the chameleon
 Change shapes with Proteus for advantages
 And set the murderous Machiavel to school
 Can I do this and cannot get a crown?
 Tut were it farther off I'll pluck it down [Exit]

SCENE III. *France. The King's palace*

*Flourish. Enter LEWIS the French king, his sister
 BONA, his Admiral called Bourbon, PRINCE ED-
 MUND, QUEEN MARGARET, and the EARL OF OX-
 FORD. LEWIS sits and riseth a pagan*

A. LEW. Fair Queen of England, worthy Mar-
 garet

Sit down with us; it ill befits thy state
 And birth that thou shouldst stand while Lewis
 doth sit

Q. MAR. No mighty king of France, now Mar-
 garet

Must strike her sail and learn awhile to serve
 Where kings command. I was, I must confess
 Great Albion a queen in former golden days
 But now mischance hath trod my tale down,
 And with dishonour laid me on the ground
 Where I must take the seat unto my fortune 20
 And to my humble seat conform myself

A. LEW. Why say fair queen, whence springs
 this deep despair?

Q. MAR. From such a cause as fills mine eyes
 with tears

And stops my tongue while heart is drown'd in
 cares

A. LEW. What'er it be, be thou still like thy-
 self

And sit thee by our side. [Seats her by him] yield
 not this neck

To fortune's yoke, but let thy daughter stand
 Still ride in triumph over all mischance
 Be plain, Queen Margaret, and tell thy grief
 It shall be eased if France can yield relief 20

Q. MAR. Those gracious words revive my
 drooping thoughts
 And gave my tongue tired sorrows leave to speak
 Now therefore be it known to noble Lewis
 That I Henry, sole possessor of my love
 Is of a king become a banish'd man
 And forced to live in Scotland a forlorn
 While proud ambitious Edward, Duke of York
 Usurps the regal title and the seat
 Of England's true anointed lawful king
 Thus is the cause that I poor Margaret 30
 With this my son Prince Edward, Henry's heir
 Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid
 And if thou fail us, all our hope is done
 Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help
 Our people and our peers are both misled
 Our treasure seized, our soldiers put to flight
 And as thou seest ourselves in heavy plight

A. LEW. Renewed queen, with patience calm
 the storm

While we bethink a means to break it off

Q. MAR. The more we stay, the stronger grows
 our foe

A. LEW. The more I stay, the more I'll succour
 thee

Q. MAR. O but impatience waiteth on true
 sorrow

And see where comes the breeder of my sorrow!

Enter WARWICK

A. LEW. What a he approacheth boldly to our
 presence?

Q. MAR. Our Earl of Warwick, Edward's great-
 est friend

A. LEW. Welcome, brave Warwick! What
 brings thee to France?

He demands Sharnbrook

Q. MAR. Ay, now begins a second storm to rise
 For this is he that moves both wind and tide

WAR. From worthy Edward, King of Albion
 My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend 30

I come in kindness and unfeigned love
 First to do greetings to thy royal person

And then to crave a league of amity

And lastly, to confirm that amity

With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant

That virtuous Lady Bona, thy fair sister

To England's king in lawful marriage

Q. MAR. [As if] If that go forward, Henry's

hope is done

WAR. [To Bona] And gracious madam, in our

king's behalf

I am commanded with your leave and favour 60

Humbly to kiss your hand and with my tongue

To tell the passion of my sovereign's heart
 Where fame late entering at his heedful ears

Hath placed thy beauty's image and thy virtue
Q Mar King Lewis and Lady Bona, hear me speak

Before you answer Warwick. His demand
 Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest love,

But from deceit bred by necessity,
 For how can tyrants safely govern home,
 Unless abroad they purchase great alliance? 70
 To prove him tyrant this reason may suffice,
 That Henry liveth still, but were he dead,
 Yet here Prince Edward stands, King Henry's son

Look therefore, Lewis, that by this league and marriage

Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour,
 For though usurpers sway the rule awhile,
 Yet heavens are just, and time suppresseth wrongs

War Injurious Margaret!
Prince And why not Queen?

War Because thy father Henry did usurp
 And thou no more art prince than she is queen 80
Oxf Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt,

Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain,
 And, after John of Gaunt, Henry the Fourth,
 Whose wisdom was a mirror to the wisest,
 And after that wise prince, Henry the Fifth,
 Who by his prowess conquered all France
 From these our Henry lineally descends

War Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth discourse,

You told not how Henry the Sixth hath lost
 All that which Henry the Fifth had gotten? 90
 Methinks these peers of France should smile at that

But for the rest, you tell a pedigree
 Of threescore and two years, a silly time
 To make prescription for a kingdom's worth

Oxf Why Warwick, canst thou speak against thy liege,

Whom thou obeyedst thirty and six years
 And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

War Can Oxford that did ever fence the right
 Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree? 99

For shame! leave Henry, and call Edward king

Oxf Call him my lying by whose injurious doom

My elder brother the Lord Aubrey Vere
 Was done to death? and more than so my father,

Even in the downfall of his mellow days
 When nature brought him to the door of death?

No Warwick! no while life upholds this arm,
 This arm upholds the house of Lancaster

War And I the house of York

K Lew Queen Margaret, Prince Edward and Oxford

Vouchsafe, at our request to stand aside, 110
 While I use further conference with Warwick

They stand aloof

Q Mar Heavens grant that Warwick's words bewitch him not!

K Lew Now, Warwick, tell me, even upon thy conscience,

Is Edward your true king? for I were loath
 To link with him that were not lawful chosen

War Thereon I pawn my credit and mine honour

K Lew But is he gracious in the people's eye?

War The more that Henry was unfortunate

K Lew Then further, all dissembling set aside,
 Tell me for truth the measure of his love 120

Unto our sister Bona

War Such it seems

As may beseem a monarch like himself

Myself have often heard him say and swear

That this his love was an eternal plant

Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground
 The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's sun,

Exempt from envy, but not from disdain,

Unless the Lady Bona quit his pain

K Lew Now, sister, let us hear your firm resolve 129

Bona Your grant or your denial shall be mine
 [To WARWICK.] Yet I confess that often ere this day,

When I have heard your king's desert recounted
 Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire

K Lew Then, Warwick, thus our sister shall be Edward's,

And now forthwith shall articles be drawn
 Touching the jointure that your king must make

Which with her dowry shall be counterpoised
 Draw near, Queen Margaret, and be a witness

That Bona shall be wife to the English king 139

Prince To Edward, but not to the English king

Q Mar Deceitful Warwick! it was thy device

By this alliance to make void my suit

Before thy coming Lewis was Henry's friend

K Lew And still is friend to him and Margaret

But if your title to the crown be weak

As may appear by Edward's good success

Then tis but reason that I be released

From giving aid which late I promised

Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand
 That your estate requires and mine can yield 150

War Henry now lives in Scotland at his ease,

Where having nothing nothing can he lose

And as for you yourself, our quondam queen

You have a father able to maintain you,

And better twere you troubled him than I France

Q Mar Peace unpudent and shameless War
wicked peace,
Proud setter up and puller down of kings!
I will not hence till with my talk and tears
Both full of truth I make king Lewis behold
Thy sly conveyance and thy lord's false love 160
For both of you are birds of selfsame feather
Post blows a horn within
K Lew Warwick this is some post to us or
thee

Enter a post

Post [To WARWICK] My lord ambassador these
letters are for you
Sent from your brother Marquess Montague
[To LEWIS] These from our king unto your ma-
jesty
[To MARGARET] And madam these for you
from whom I know not
Thy all read their letters
Qsf I like it well that our fair queen and mis-
tress
Smiles at her news while Warwick frowns at
his
Prince Nay mark how Lewis stamps as he
were nettled
I hope all's for the best 170
K Lew Warwick what are thy news? and
yours fair queen?
Q Mar Mine, such as fill my heart with un-
hoped joys
War Mine full of sorrow and heart's discon-
tent
K Lew What! has your king married the Lady
Grey?

And now to soothe your forgery and his
Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?
Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?
Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?
Q Mar I told your Majesty as much before
Thus proveth Edward's love and Warwick's hon-
esty 180

War King Lewis I here protest in sight of
heaven,

And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss
That I am clear from this murder of Edward's
No more my king for he'd shonours me,
But most himself if he could see his shame
Did I forget that by the house of York
My father came unquely to his death?
Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece?
Did I unpale him with the regal crown?
Did I put Henry from his name's right? 190
And am I querdoned at the last with shame?
Shame on himself for my desert is honour
And to repair my honour lost for him,

I here renounce him and return to Henry
My noble queen let former grudges pass
And henceforth I am thy true servitor
I will revenge his wrong to Lady Bona
And replant Henry in his former state
Q Mar Warwick these words have turn'd my
hate to love
And I forgive and quite forget old faults 200
And joy that thou becomest king Henry's friend
War So much his friend as his unfeigned
friend
That if king Lewis vouchsafe to furnish us
With some few bands of chosen soldiers
I'll undertake to land them on our coast
And force the tyrant from his seat by war
Tis not his new made bride shall succour him
And as for Clarence as my letters tell me
He's very likely now to fall from him 209
For matching more for wanton lust than honour
Or than for strength and safety of our country
Bona Dear brother how shall Bona be revenged
But by thy help to this distressed queen?
Q Mar Renowned prince how shall poor
Henry live
Unless thou rescue him from foul despair?
Bona My quarrel and this English queen's are
one
War And mine, fair lady Bona joins with yours
K Lew And mine with hers and thine and
Margaret's
Therefore at last I firmly am resolved
You shall have aid 220
Q Mar Let me give humble thanks for all at
once
K Lew Then England's messenger return in
post
And tell false Edward thy supposed king
That Lewis of France is sending over masquers
To revel in with him and his new bride
Thou seest what's past go fear thy king withal
Bona Tell him in hope he'll prove a widower
shortly
I'll wear the willow garland for his sake
Q Mar Tell him my mourning weeds are laid
aside
And I am ready to put armour on 230
War Tell him from me that he hath done me
wrong
And therefore I'll uncrown him ere it be long
There's thy reward be gone [Exit post]
K Lew But Warwick
Thou and Oxford with five thousand men
Shall cross the seas and bid false Edward battle
And as occasion serves this noble queen
And prince shall follow with a fresh supply
Yet ere thou go but answer me one doubt

What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty? 239

War This shall assure my constant loyalty,
That if our queen and this young prince agree,
I'll join mine eldest daughter and my joy
To him forthwith in holy wedlock bands

Q Mar Yes I agree, and thank you for your motion

Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous,
Therefore delay not, give thy hand to Warwick,
And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,
That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine
Prince Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it,

And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand 250

He gives his hand to WARWICK

K Lew Why stay we now? These soldiers shall be levied,

And thou Lord Bourbon our high admiral,
Shalt waft them over with our royal fleet
I long till Edward fall by war's mischance
For mocking marriage with a dame of France

[Exeunt all but WARWICK]

War I came from Edward as ambassador
But I return his sworn and mortal foe
Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,
But dreadful war shall answer his demand
Had he none else to make a stale but me? 260
Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow
I was the chief that raised him to the crown
And I'll be chief to bring him down again
Not that I pity Henry's misery
But seek revenge on Edward's mockery *[Exit]*

ACT IV

SCENE I London The palace

Enter GLOUCESTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, and MONTAGUE

Glou Now tell me, brother Clarence, what think you

Of this new marriage with the Lady Grey?

Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?

Clar Alas, you know, 'tis far from hence to France,

How could he stay till Warwick made return?

Som My lords forbear this talk, here comes the king

Glou And his well-chosen bride

Clar I mind to tell him plainly what I think

Flourish Enter KING EDWARD, attended, LADY GREY as Queen, PEMBROKE, STAFFORD HASTINGS and others Four stand on one side, and so on the other

K Edw Now brother of Clarence, how like you our choice,

That you stand pensive as half malcontent? 10

Clar As well as Lewis of France, or the Earl of Warwick

Which are so weak of courage and in judgement
That they'll take no offence at our abuse

K Edw Suppose they take offence without a cause

They are but Lewis and Warwick I am Edward,
Your king and Warwick's and must have my will

Glou And shall have your will because our king

Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well

K Edw Yea, brother Richard, are you offended too?

Glou Not I 20

No God forbid that I should wish them sever'd
Whom God hath join'd together, ay, and twere pity

To sunder them that yoke so well together

K Edw Setting your scorns and your mislike aside,

Tell me some reason why the Lady Grey
Should not become my wife and England's queen

And you too Somerset and Montague,

Speak freely what you think

Clar Then this is mine opinion that King Lewis

Becomes your enemy for mocking him 30

About the marriage of the Lady Bona

Glou And Warwick, doing what you gave in charge

Is now dishonoured by this new marriage

K Edw What if both Lewis and Warwick be appeased

By such invention as I can devise?

Mont Yet to have join'd with France in such alliance

Would more have strengthen'd this our common wealth

'Gainst foreign storms than any home bred marriage

Hast Why knows not Montague that of itself England is safe if true within itself? 40

Mont But the safer when 'tis back'd with France

Hast 'Tis better using France than trusting France

Let us be back'd with God and with the seas
Which He hath given for fence impregnable,

And with their helps only defend ourselves

In them and in ourselves our safety lies

Clar For this one speech Lord Hastings well deserves

To have the heir of the Lord Hungerford

K Edw Ay what of that? it was my will and grant

And for this once my will shall stand for law 50

Glou And yet methinks your Grace hath not done well

To give the hear and daughter of Lord Scales

Unto the brother of your loving bride

She better would have fitted me or Clarence

But in your bride you bury brotherhood

Clar Or else you would not have bestow'd the heir

Of the Lord Bonville on your new wife's son

And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere

K Edw Alas poor Clarence! is it for a wife

That thou art malcontent? I will provide thee 60

Clar In choosing for yourself you show'd your judgement

Which be not shallow you shall give me leave

To play the broker in mine own behalf

And to that end I shortly mind to leave you

K Edw Leave me or tarry Edward will be king

And not be tied unto his brother's will

Q El My lords before it pleased his Majesty

To raise my state to title of a queen

Do me but right and you must all confess

That I was not ignoble of descent 70

And meaner than myself have had like fortune

But as this title honours me and mine

So your dislike to whom I would be pleasing

Doth cloud my joy with danger and with sorrow

K Edw My love forbear to fawn upon their frowns

What danger or what sorrow can befall thee

So long as Edward is thy constant friend

And their true sovereign whom they must obey?

Nay whom they shall obey and love thee too

Unless they seek for hatred at my hands 80

Which if they do yet will I keep thee safe

And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath

Glou [Aside] I hear yet say not much but think the more

Enter a post

K Edw Now messenger what letters or what news

From France?

Post My sovereign liege no letters and few words

But such as I without your special pardon

Dare not relate

K Edw Go to we pardon thee therefore in brief

I tell me the words as near as thou canst guess them 90

What answer makes King Lewis unto our letters?

Post At my depart these were his very words

Go tell false Edward thy supposed king

That Lewis of France is sending over masquers

To tell it with him and his new bride

K Edw Is Lewis so brave? belike he thinks me Henry

But what said Lady Bona to my marriage?

Post These were her words uttered with mild disdain

Tell him in hope he'll prove a widower shortly

I'll wear the willow garland for his sake 100

K Edw I blame not her she could say little less

She had the wrong But what said Henry a queen?

For I have heard that she was there in place

Post Tell him quoth she my mourning weeds are done

And I am ready to put armour on

K Edw Belike she minds to play the Amazon

But what said Warwick to these injuries?

Post He more incensed against your Majesty

Than all the rest discharged me with these words

Tell him from me that he hath done me wrong 110

And therefore I'll uncrown him ere 't be long

K Edw H! 'durst the traitor breathe out so proud words?

Well I will arm me being thus forewarn'd

They shall have wars and pay for their presumption

But say to Warwick friends with Margaret?

Post As gracious sovereign they are so linked in friendship

That young Prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter

Clar Belike the elder Clarence will have the younger

Now brother King farewell and it you fast 119

For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter

That though I want a kingdom yet in marriage I may not prove inferior to yourself

You that love me and Warwick follow me

[Exit CLARENCE and SOMERSET follows]

Glou [Aside] Not I

My thoughts aim at a further matter I

Stay not for the love of Edward but the crown

K Edw Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick?

Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen

And haste is needful in this desperate case

Pembroke and Stafford you in our behalf 120

Go levy men and make prepare for war

They are already or quickly will be landed

My self in person will straight follow you

[*Exeunt PEMBROKE and STATFORD*]

But, ere I go, Hastings and Montague,
Resolve my doubt You twain, of all the rest,
Are near to Warwick by blood and by alliance
Tell me if you love Warwick more than me?
If it be so, then both depart to him,
I rather wish you foes than hollow friends
But if you mind to hold your true obedience, 140
Give me assurance with some friendly vow,
That I may never have you in suspect
Mont So God help Montague as he proves
true!

Hast And Hastings as he favours Edward's
cause!

Edw Now, brother Richard, will you stand
by us?

Glou Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand
you

Edw Why, so! then am I sure of victory
Now therefore let us hence, and lose no hour,
Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II *A plain in Warwickshire*

*Enter WARWICK and OXFORD, with French
soldiers*

War Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well,
The common people by numbers swarm to us

Enter CLARENCE and SOMERSET

but see where Somerset and Clarence comes!

Speak suddenly my lords, are we all friends?

Clar Fear not that, my lord

War Then gentle Clarence welcome unto
Warwick,

And welcome Somerset I hold it cowardice

To rest mistrustful where a noble heart

Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love

Else might I think that Clarence, Edward's

brother 10

Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings

But welcome, sweet Clarence, my daughter shall

be thine

And now what rests but in night's coverture,

Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd

His soldiers lurking in the towns about,

And but attended by a simple guard

We may surprise and take him at our pleasure?

Our scouts have found the adventure very easy 19

That as Ulysses and stout Diomed

With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus tents,

And brought from thence the Thracian fatal

steeds

So we, well cover'd with the night's black

mantle,

At unawares may beat down Edward's guard
And seize himself, I say not, slaughter him,
For I intend but only to surprise him
You that will follow me to this attempt,
Applaud the name of Henry with your leader

They all cry, 'Henry!'

Why then, let's on our way in silent sort
For Warwick and his friends God and Saint
George! [*Exeunt*]

SCENE III *Edward's camp near Warwick*

*Enter THREE WATCHMEN to guard the King's
tent*

1st Watch Come on, my masters each man take
his stand

The King by this is set him down to sleep

2nd Watch What will he not to bed?

1st Watch Why, no, for he hath made a solemn
vow

Never to lie and take his natural rest

Till Warwick or himself be quite suppress'd

2nd Watch To-morrow then belike shall be the
day,

If Warwick be so near as men report

3rd Watch But say, I pray what nobleman is
that

That with the King here resteth in his tent? 10

1st Watch 'Tis the Lord Hastings, the King's
chiefest friend

3rd Watch O is it so? But why commands the
King

That his chief followers lodge in towns about
him

While he himself keeps in the cold field?

2nd Watch 'Tis the more honour, because more
dangerous

3rd Watch Ay, but give me worship and quiet-
ness

I like it better than a dangerous honour

If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,

'Tis to be doubted he would waken him

1st Watch Unless our halberds did shut up his
passage 20

2nd Watch Ay, wherefore else guard we his
royal tent,

But to defend his person from night foes?

*Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET
and French soldiers, silent all*

War This is his tent and see where stand his
guard

Courage my masters! honour now or never!

But follow me and Edw and shall be ours

1st Watch Who goes there?

2nd Watch Stay or thou diest!

Warwick and th. rest cry all 'Warwick'

Warwick¹ and set upon the Guard who fly
cryin^g Arm¹ arm Warwick and the rest fol-
lowing them

*The drum playin^g and trumpet soundin^g re-enter
WARWICK SOMERSET and the rest bringing the
king out in his gown sittin^g in a chair RICHARD
and HASTINGS fly o^uer the stage*

Som What are they that fly there?

War Richard and Hastings let them go here is
The Duke

A Edw The Duke Why Warwick when we
parted 30

Thou callst me king

War Ay but the case is alter^d

When you disgrac^d me in my embassage

Then I degrad^d you from being kin^g

And come now to create you Duke of York

Alas! how should you govern any l^{an}gdom

That know not how to use ambassadors

Nor how to be contented with one wife

Nor how to use your brothers brotherly

Nor how to study for the people's welfare

Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies? 40

A Edw Yea brother of Clarence art thou here
too?

Nay then I see that Edward needs must down

Yet Warwick in despite of all mischance

Of thee thy self and all thy complices

Edward will alway bear himself as king

Though fortune's malice overthrow my state

My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel

War Then for his mind be Edward England's
king *[Tak^s off his crown]*

But Henry now shall wear the English crown

And be true king indeed thou bor^{est} the shadow 50

My Lord of Somerset at my request

See that forthwith Duke Edward be convey^d

Unto my brother Archbishop of York

When I have fought with Pembroke and his
fellows

I will follow you and tell what answer

Lewis and the Lady Bona send to him

Now for a while farewell good Duke of York

[They l^eave him and f^{ly} off]

A Edw What fates impose that men must
needs abide

It boots not to resist both wind and tide

*[F^{ir}st guarded
do]*

Os^f What now remains my lords for us to 60

But march to London with our soldiers?

War Ay that's the first thing that we have to
do

To free King Henry from imprisonment

And see him seated in the regal throne *[Exeunt]*

SCENE IV London The palace

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH and RIVERS

R^{iv} Madam what makes you in this sudden
change?

Q^{ue}n Why brother Rivers are you yet to
learn

What late misfortune is befallⁿ King Edward?

R^{iv} What! loss of some pitch^d battle against
Warwick?

Q^{ue}n No but the loss of his own royal person

R^{iv} Then is my sovereign slain?

Q^{ue}n Eli Ay almost slain for he is taken prison^{er}

Either betray^d by falsehood of his guard

Or by his foe surpris^d at unawares

And as I further have to understand 10

Is new committ^d to the Bishop of York

Fell Warwick a brother and by that our foe

R^{iv} These news I must confess are full of grief

Yer gracious madam bear it as you may

Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day

Q^{ue}n Eli Till then fair hope must hinder life's
decay

And I the rather wean me from despair

For love of Edward's offspring in my womb

This is it that makes me bridle passion

And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross

Ay ay for thus I draw in many a tear 21

And stop the rising of blood sucking sighs

Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown

King Edward's fruit true heir to the English
crown

R^{iv} But madam where is Warwick then be
come?

Q^{ue}n Eli I am inform^d that he comes towards
London

To set the crown once more on Henry's head

Guess thou the rest King Edward's friends must
down

But to prevent the tyrant's violence—

For trust not him that hath once broken faith—

I will hence forthwith unto the sanctuary 31

To save at least the heir of Edward's right

There shall I rest secure from force and fraud

Come therefore let us fly while we may fly

If Warwick take us we are sure to die *[Exeunt]*

SCENE V A park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire

*Enter GLOUCESTER LORD HASTINGS and SIR
WILLIAM STANLEY*

Glo^u Now my Lord Hastings and Sir William
Stanley

Leave off to wonder why I drew you further
into the ch^{ief}est thicket of the park

Thus stands the case you know our king my brother,
Is prisoner to the Bishop here, at whose hands
He hath good usage and great liberty
And often but attended with weak guard,
Comes hunting this way to disport himself
I have advertised him by secret means
That if about this hour he make this way 10
Under the colour of his usual game
He shall here find his friends with horse and men
To set him free from his captivity

Enter KING EDWARD and a HUNTSMAN with him

Hunt This way, my lord, for this way lies the game

A. Edw Nay, this way, man see where the huntsmen stand

Now, brother of Gloucester Lord Hastings and the rest,

Stand you thus close to steal the Bishop's deer?

Glou Brother, the time and case requireth haste
Your horse stands ready at the park corner

A. Edw But whither shall we then?

Hast To Lynn, my lord, 20

And ship from thence to Flanders

Glou Well guess'd, believe me, for that was my meaning

A. Edw Stanley, I will requite thy forwardness

Glou But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time to talk

A. Edw Huntsman, what say'st thou? wilt thou go along?

Hunt Better do so than tarry and be hang'd

Glou Come then, away let's have no more ado

A. Edw Bishop farewell shield thee from

Warwick's frown,

And pray that I may repossess the crown

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE VI London The Tower

Flourish *Enter* KING HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK, SOMERSET, young RICHMOND, OXFORD, MONTAGUE and LIEUTENANT OF THE TOWER

A. Hen Master lieutenant, now that God and friends

Have shaken Edward from the regal seat

And turn'd my captive state to liberty,

My fear to hope my sorrows unto joys

At our enlargement what are thy due fees?

Lieu Subjects may challenge nothing of their sovereigns,

But if an humble prayer may prevail

I then crave pardon of your Majesty

A. Hen For what, lieutenant? for well using me?

Nay, be thou sure I'll well requite thy kindness,

For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure

Ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds,

Conceive when after many moody thoughts

At last by notes of household harmony

They quite forget their loss of liberty

But Warwick, after God thou set'st me free,

And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee,

He was the author thou the instrument

Therefore that I may conquer Fortune's spite

By living low where Fortune cannot hurt me, 20

And that the people of this blessed land

May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars,

Warwick, although my head still wear the

crown,

I here resign my government to thee

For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds

War Your Grace hath still been famed for virtuous

And now may seem as wise as virtuous

By spying and avoiding Fortune's malice,

For few men rightly temper with the stars

Yet in this one thing let me blame your Grace, 30

For choosing me when Clarence is in place

Clar No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the sway,

To whom the heavens in thy nativity

Adjudged an olive branch and laurel crown,

As likely to be blest in peace and war,

And therefore I yield thee my free consent

War And I choose Clarence only for Protector

K. Hen Warwick and Clarence give me both your hands

Now join your hands and with your hands your hearts

That no dissension hinder government 40

I make you both Protectors of this land,

While I myself will lead a private life

And in devotion spend my latter days,

To sin's rebuke and my Creator's praise

War What answers Clarence to his sovereign's will?

Clar That he consents if Warwick yield consent

For on thy fortune I repose my self

War Why, then, though loath yet must I be content

We'll yoke together like a double shadow

To Henry's body and supply his place 50

I mean in bearing weight of government,

While he enjoys the honour and his ease

And Clarence now then it is more than needful

Forthwith that Edward be pronounced a traitor

And all his lands and goods be confiscate

Clar What else? and that succession be deter-

mined

War Ay therein Clarence shall not want his part
 K Hen But with the first of all your chief affairs

Let me enreat for I command no more 59
 That Margaret your queen and my son Edward
 Be sent for to return from France with speed
 For till I see them here by doubtful fear
 My joy of liberty is half eclipsed

Clar It shall be done my sovereign with all speed

K Hen My Lord of Somerset what youth is that

Of whom you seem to have so tender care?

Som My liege it is young Henry Earl of Richmond

K Hen Come hither England's hope [Lays his hand on his head] If secret powers

Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts

This pretty lad will prove our country's bliss 70

His looks are full of peaceful majesty

His head by nature framed to wear a crown

His hand to wield a sceptre and himself

Likely in time to bless a regal throne

Make much of him my lords for this is he

Must help you more than you are hurt by me

Enter a Post

War What news my friend?

Post That Edward is escaped from your brother

And fled as he hears since to Burgundy

War Unsavoury news! but how made he escape? 80

Post He was convey'd by Richard Duke of Gloucester

And the Lord Hastings who attended him

In secret ambush on the forest side

And from the Bishop's huntsmen rescued him

For hunting was his daily exercise

War My brother was too careless of his charge

But let us hence my sovereign to provide

A salve for any sore that may betide

[Exeunt all but SOMERSET RICHMOND and OXFORD]

Som My lord, I like not of this flight of Edward's

For doubtless Burgundy will yield him help 90

And we shall have more wars before 't be long

As Henry's late presaging prophecy

Did glad my heart with hope of this young Richmond

So doth my heart misgive me in these conflicts

What may befall him, to his harm and ours

Therefore Lord Oxford to prevent the worst

Forthwith we'll send him hence to Brittany

Till storms be past of civil enmity

Oxf Ay for if Edward repossess the crown,

'Tis like that Richmond with the rest shall down

Som It shall be so he shall to Brittany 101

Come therefore let's about it speedily [Exeunt]

SCENE VII Before York

Flourish Enter KING EDWARD GLOUCESTER
 HASTINGS and soldiers

K Ed... Now brother Richard Lord Hastings and the rest

Yet thus far Fortune maketh us amends

And says that once more I shall interchange

My waned state for Henry's regal crown

Well have we pass'd and now repass'd the seas

And brought desired help from Burgundy

What then remains we being thus arrived

From Ravenspurgh haven before the gates of York

But that we enter as into our dukedom?

Glou The gates made fast! Brother I like not this 10

For many men that stumble at the threshold

Are well foretold that danger lurks within

K Edw Tush man abodements must not now affright us

By fair or foul means we must enter in

For hither will our friends repair to us

Hast My liege I'll knock once more to summon them

Enter on the walls the MAYOR OF YORK and his Bethren

May My lords we were forewarned of your coming

And shut the gates for safety of ourselves

For now we owe allegiance unto Henry

K Edw But master mayor if Henry be your king 10

Yet Edward at the least is Duke of York

May True my good lord I know you for no less

K Edw Why and I challenge nothing but my dukedom

As being well content with that alone

Glou [Aside] But when the fox hath once got in his nose

He'll soon find means to make the body follow

Hast Why master mayor why stand you in a doubt?

Open the gates we are King Henry's friends

May Ay say you so? the gates shall then be open'd [They descend]

Glou A wise stout captain and soon persuaded!

Hast The good old man would fain that all were well 31

So twere not long of him but being enter'd

I doubt not I but we shall soon persuade

Both him and all his brothers unto reason

Enter the MAYOR and two Aldermen, below

A *Edw* So master mayor these gates must not be shut

But in the night or in the time of war

What! fear not man, but yield me up the keys,

[Takes his keys]

For Edward will defend the town and thee,

And all those friends that deign to follow me

March Enter MONTGOMERY, with drum and soldiers

Glow Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery,
Our trusty friend unless I be deceived

41

A *Edw* Welcome, Sir John! But why come you in arms?

Mont To help King Edward in his time of storm,

As every loyal subject ought to do

A *Edw* Thanks, good Montgomery, but we now forget

Our title to the crown and only claim

Our dukedom till God please to send the rest

Mont Then fare you well, for I will hence again

I came to serve a king and not a duke
Drummer, strike up, and let us march away

50

The drum begins to march

A *Edw* Nay, stay, Sir John, awhile, and we'll debate

By what safe means the crown may be recovered

Mont What talk you of debating? in few words,

If you'll not here proclaim yourself our king

I'll leave you to your fortune and be gone

To keep them back that come to succour you

Why shall we fight, if you pretend no title?

Glow Why, brother, wherefore stand you on nice points?

A *Edw* When we grow stronger, then we'll make our claim

Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our meaning

60

Hast Away with scrupulous wit! now arms must rule

Glow And fearless minds climb soonest unto crowns

Brother we will proclaim you out of hand

The bruit thereof will bring you many friends

A *Edw* Then be it as you will, for 'tis my right,

And Henry but usurps the diadem

Mont Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like himself

And now will I be Edward's champion

Hast Sound trumpet, Edward shall be here proclaimed

Come fellow soldier, make thou proclamation

Giving him a paper Flourish 70

Sold *[Reads]* 'Edward the Fourth by the grace of God, king of England and France, and lord of Ireland,' &c

Mont And whosoe'er gainsays King Edward's right,

By this I challenge him to single fight

Throws down his gauntlet

All Long live Edward the Fourth!

K *Edw* Thanks brave Montgomery, and thanks unto you all

If fortune serve me I'll requite this kindness

Now, for this night let's harbour here in York,

And when the morning sun shall raise his car 80

Above the border of this horizon

We'll forward towards Warwick and his mates,

For well I wot that Henry is no soldier

Ah, forward Clarence! how evil it becoms thee,

To flatter Henry and forsake thy brother!

Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and Warwick

Come on, brave soldiers doubt not of the day,

And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay

[Exeunt]

SCENE VIII London The palace

Flourish Enter KING HENRY WARWICK, MONTAGUE CLARENCE, EXETER and OXFORD

War What counsel, lords? Edward from Belgia,

With hasty Germans and blunt Hollanders,

Hath passed in safety through the narrow seas,

And with his troops doth march amain to London,

And many giddy people flock to him

K *Hen* Let's levy men and beat him back again

Clar A little fire is quickly trodden out,
Which, being suffered, rivers cannot quench.

War In Warwickshire I have true hearted friends,

Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war 10

Those will I muster up and thou son Clarence,

Shalt stir up in Suffolk Norfolk and in Kent

The knights and gentlemen to come with thee

Thou brother Montague, in Buckingham

Northampton and in Leicestershire shalt find

Men well inclined to hear what thou command'st

And thou brave Oxford wondrous well beloved

In Oxfordshire shalt muster up thy friends

My sovereign with the loving citizens

Like to his island girt in with the ocean 20

Or modest Dian circled with her nymphs

Shall rest in London till we come to him

Fair lords take leave and stand not to reply

Farewell my sovereign

K Hen Farewell my Hector and my Troy's
true hope

Clar In sign of truth I kiss your Highness
hand

K Hen Well minded Clarence be thou fortunate!

Mont Comfort my lord and so I take my
leave

Oxf And thus I seal my truth and bid adieu

K Hen Sweet Oxford and my loving Montague 30

And all at once once more a happy farewell

War Farewell sweet lords let's meet at Coventry

[Exeunt all but KING HENRY and EXETER]

K Hen Here at the palace will I rest awhile
Cousin of Exeter what thinks your lordship?
Methinks the power that Edward hath in field
Should not be able to encounter mine

Ex The doubt is that he will seduce the rest

K Hen That's not my fear my meed hath got
me fame

I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands
Nor posted off their suits with slow delays 40

My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds

My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs

My mercy dried their water flowing tears

I have not been desirous of their wealth

Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies

Nor forward of revenge though they much err'd

Then why should they love Edward more than
me?

No Exeter these graces challenge grace

And when the lion fawns upon the lamb

The lamb will never cease to follow him 50

Shout within A Lancaster! A Lancaster!

Ex Hark hark my lord what shouts are
these?

*Enter KING EDWARD GLOUCESTER and
soldiers*

K Edw Seize on the shame faced Henry bear
him hence

And once again proclaim us King of England

You are the fount that makes small brooks to
flow

Now stops thy spring my sea shall suck them
dry

And swell so much the higher by their ebb

Hence with him to the Tower let him not speak

[Exeunt sum. with KING HENRY]

And lords towards Coventry bend we our
course,

Where peremptory Warwick now remains

The sun shines hot and if we use delay 60

Cold biting winter mars our hoped for hay

Glouc Away betimes before his forces join,
And take the great grown traitor unawares
Brave warriors march again towards Coventry
[Exeunt]

ACT V

SCENE I Coventry

Enter WARWICK the Mayor of Coventry two

MESSENGERS and others upon the walls

War Where is the post that came from Salisbury
Oxford?

How far hence is this lord mine honest fellow?
1st Mess By this at Dunsmore marching hither
ward

War How far off is our brother Montague?

Where is the post that came from Montague?

2nd Mess By this at Daintry with a puissant

troop

Enter SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE

War Say Somerville what says my loving son?
And by thy guess how nigh is Clarence now?

Som At Southam I did leave him with his forces
And do expect him here some two hours hence

Drum heard

War Then Clarence is at hand I hear his drum

Som It is not his my lord here Southam lies

The drum your honour hears marcheth from

Warwick

War Who should that be? belike unlook'd for
friends

Som They are at hand and you shall quickly
know

*March flourish Enter KING EDWARD
GLOUCESTER, and soldiers*

K Edw Go trumpet to the walls and sound a
parle

Glouc See how the surly Warwick mans the
wall!

War O unbild spite! is sportful Edward come?

Where sleep our scouts or how are they seduced
That we could hear no news of his repair? 20

K Edw Now Warwick wilt thou open the city
gates

Speak gentle words and humbly bend thy knee

Call Edward king and at his hands beg mercy?

And he shall pardon thee these outrages

War Nay rather wilt thou draw thy forces
hence

Confess who set thee up and pluck'd thee down

Call Warwick patron and be penitent?

And thou shalt still remain the Duke of York

Glouc I thought at least he would have said the
king

Or did he make the jest against his will? 30
War Is not a dukedom, sir a goodly gift?
Glou Ay, by my faith for a poor earl to give
 I'll do thee service for so good a gift
War 'Twas I that gave the kingdom to thy brother
A. Edw Why then tis mine, if but by *Warwick's* gift
War Thou art no Atlas for so great a weight
 And weakling *Warwick* takes his gift again,
 And Henry is my king, *Warwick* his subject
A. Edw But *Warwick's* king is *Edward's* prisoner

And, gallant *Warwick*, do but answer this 40
 What is the body when the head is off?
Glou Alas that *Warwick* had no more forecast
 But, whiles he thought to steal the single ten,
 The king was slily finger'd from the deck!
 You left poor Henry at the Bishop's palace,
 And, ten to one you'll meet him in the Tower
K. Edw 'Tis even so, yet you are *Warwick* still

Glou Come *Warwick*, take the time kneel down kneel down
 Nay, when? strike now or else the iron cools
War I had rather chop this hand off at a blow 50
 And with the other fling it at thy face
 Than bear so low a sail to strike to thee
A. Edw Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy friend,

This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair,
 Shall whiles thy head is warm and new cut off
 Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood
 "Wind-changing *Warwick* now can change no more"

Enter OXFORD with drum and colours

War O cheerful colours! see where *Oxford* comes!
Oxf *Oxford Oxford* for Lancaster!
He and his forces enter the city
Glou The gates are open let us enter too 60
A. Edw So other foes may set upon our backs
 Stand we in good array, for they no doubt
 Will issue out again and bid us battle
 If not the city being but of small defence,
 We'll quickly rouse the traitors in the same
War O, welcome, *Oxford*! for we want thy help

Enter MONTAGUE, with drum and colours

Mont *Montague Montague* for Lancaster!
He and his forces enter the city
Glou Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason

Even with the dearest blood, our bodies bear
K. Edw The harder match'd the greater victory 70
 My mind presageth happy gain and conquest

Enter SOMERSET, with drum and colours

Som *Somerset Somerset*, for Lancaster!
He and his forces enter the city
Glou Two of thy name both Dukes of Somerset,
 Have sold their lives unto the house of York,
 And thou shalt be the third if this sword hold

Enter CLARENCE, with drum and colours

War And lo where *George of Clarence* sweeps along

Of force enough to bid his brother battle
 With whom an upright zeal to right prevails
 More than the nature of a brother's love!
 Come *Clarence* come, thou wilt if *Warwick* call 80

Clar Father of *Warwick* know you what this means?

Taking his red rose out of his hat
 Look here I throw my infancy at thee
 I will not rinate my father's house,
 Who gave his blood to line the stones together,
 And set up Lancaster Why throw'st thou *Warwick*

That *Clarence* is so harsh so blunt unnatural,
 To bend the fatal instruments of war
 Against his brother and his lawful king?
 Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath
 To keep that oath were more impiety 90
 Than *Jephthah's* when he sacrificed his daughter
 I am so sorry for my trespass made
 That to deserve well at my brother's hands
 I here proclaim my self thy mortal foe

With resolution wheresoe'er I meet thee—
 As I will meet thee if thou stir abroad—
 To plague thee for thy foul misleading me
 And so proud hearted *Warwick* I defy thee,
 And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks
 Pardon me, *Ldw*, I will make amends 100
 And *Richard* do not frown upon my faults
 For I will henceforth be no more unconstant

K. Edw Now welcome more and ten times more beloved

Than if thou never hadst deserved our hate
Glou Welcome, good *Clarence*, this is brother-like

War O passing traitor perjured and unjust!
K. Edw What *Warwick* wilt thou leave the town and fight?

Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears?
War Alas I am no coop'd here for defence!

I will away towards Barnet presently 110
 And bid thee battle Edward if thou darest
 A *Edw* Yes Warwick Edward dares and
 leads the way
 Lords to the field Saint George and victory!
*[Exeunt KING EDWARD and his company
 March WARWICK and his company
 follow]*

SCENE II *A field of battle near Barnet*

*Alarm and excursions Enter KING EDWARD
 bringing forth WARWICK wounded*

A *Edw* So lie thou there die thou and die our
 fear
 For Warwick was a bug that fear'd us all
 Now Montague sit fast I seek for thee
 That Warwick's bones may keep thine company
[Exit]

If 7 Ah who is nigh? come to me friend or
 foe
 And tell me who is victor York or Warwick?
 Why ask I that? my mangled body shows
 My blood my want of strength my sick heart
 shows
 That I must yield my body to the earth
 And by my fall the conquest to my foe 10
 Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge
 Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle
 Under whose shade the ramping lion slept
 Whose top-branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading
 tree
 And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful
 wind
 These eyes that now are dimm'd with death's
 black veil
 Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun
 To search the secret treasons of the world
 The wrinkles in my brows now fill'd with blood
 Were likend oft to kingly sepulchres 20
 For who liv'd king but I could dig his grave?
 And who durst smile when Warwick bent his
 brow?
 Lo now my glory smear'd in dust and blood!
 My parks my walks my manors that I had
 Even now forsake me, and of all my lands
 Is nothing left me but my body's length
 Why what is pomp rule reason, but earth and
 dust?
 And live we how we can yet die we must

Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET

Som Ah, Warwick Warwick! wert thou as we
 are,
 We might recover all our loss again 30
 The Queen from France hath brought a puissant
 power

Even now we heard the news ah couldst thou
 fly!

If 7 Why then I would not fly Ah Montague
 If thou be there sweet brother take my hand
 And with thy lips keep in my soul awhile!
 Thou lovest me not for brother if thou didst
 Thy tears would wash this cold congealed blood
 That glues my lips and will not let me speak
 Come quickly Montague or I am dead
Som Ah Warwick! Montague hath breathed
 his last 40

And to the latest gasp cried out for Warwick
 And said Commend me to my valiant brother
 And more he would have said and more he spoke
 Which sounded like a clamour in a vault
 That thou, he not be distinguish'd but at last
 I well might hear deliver'd with a groan
 O farewell Warwick!
 If 7 Sweet rest his soul! Fly lords and save
 yourselves
 For Warwick bids you all farewell to meet in
 heaven *[Dies]*
 Off Away away to meet the Queen's great
 power! *[Here they bear away his body
 Exeunt]*

SCENE III *Another part of the field*

*Flourish Enter KING EDWARD in triumph with
 GLOUCESTER CLARENCE, and the rest*

K *Edw* Thus far our fortune keeps an upward
 course
 And we are graced with wreaths of victory
 Bur in the midst of this bright shining day
 I spy a black suspicious threatening cloud
 That will encounter with our glorious sun
 Ere he attain his easeful western bed
 I mean my lords those powers that the Queen
 Hath rais'd in Gallia have arriv'd our coast
 And as we hear march on to fight with us 9
Clar A little gale will soon disperse that cloud
 And blow it to the source from whence it came
 The very beams will dry those vapours up
 For every cloud engenders not a storm
Glou The Queen is valued thirty thousand
 strong
 And Somerset with Oxford, fled to her
 If she have time to breathe be well assured
 Her faction will be full as strong as ours
 A *Edw* We are advertised by our loving
 friends
 That they do hold their course toward Tewks-
 bury
 We having now the best at Barnet field 20
 Will thither straight for willingness ride way
 And as we march our strength will be aug-
 mented

In every county as we go along
Strike up the drum, cry "Courage!" and away
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *Plains near Tewksbury*

March Enter QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE
EDWARD, SOMERSET, OXFORD, and soldiers

Q Mar Great lords, wise men ne'er sit and
wait their loss,

But cheerly seek how to redress their harms
What though the mast be now blown overboard,
The cable broke, the holding-anchor lost,
And half our sailors swallow'd in the flood?
Yet lives our pilot still Is't meet that he
Should leave the helm and like a fearful lad
With tearful eyes add water to the sea
And give more strength to that which hath too
much,

Whiles, in his moan, the ship splits on the rock,
Which industry and courage might have saved?
Ah, what a shame! ah, what a fault were this!
Say Warwick was our anchor, what of that?
And Montague our topmast, what of him?
Our slaughter'd friends the tackles, what of
these?

Why is not Oxford here another anchor?
And Somerset another goodly mast?
The friends of France our shrouds and tacking-ropes?
And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I
For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?
We will not from the helm to sit and weep
But keep our course though the rough wind say
no

From shelves and rocks that threaten us with
wreck

As good to chide the waves as speak them fair
And what is Edward but a ruthless sea?
What Clarence but a quicksand of deceit?
And Richard but a ragged fatal rock?
All these the enemies to our poor bark
Say you can swim alas, 'tis but a while!
Tread on the sand, why there you quickly sink
Bestride the rock the tide will wash you off
Or else you famish that's a threefold death

This speak I, lords to let you understand
If case some one of you would fly from us
That there's no hoped for mercy with the broth-
ers

More than with ruthless waves with sands and
rocks

Why, courage then! what cannot be avoided
'Twere childish weakness to lament or fear
Prince Methinks a woman of this valiant spirit
Should if a coward heard her speak these words
Infuse his breast with magnanimity
And make him, naked, foil a man at arms

I speak not this as doubting any here,
For did I but suspect a fearful man
He should have leave to go away betimes,
Lest in our need he might infect another
And make him of like spirit to himself
If any such be here—as God forbid!—
Let him depart before we need his help

Oxf Women and children of so high a courage,
And warriors faint! why, 'twere perpetual shame
O brave young prince! thy famous grandfather
Doth live again in thee long mayst thou live
To bear his image and renew his glories!

Som And he that will not fight for such a
hope

Go home to bed and like the owl by day,
If he arise, be mock'd and wonder'd at

Q Mar Thanks, gentle Somerset sweet Ox-
ford thanks

Prince And take his thanks that yet hath nothing
else

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess Prepare you, lords for Edward is at
hand,

Ready to fight, therefore be resolute

Oxf I thought no less it is his policy
To haste thus fast, to find us unprovided

Som But he's deceived we are in readiness

Q Mar This cheers my heart, to see your for-
wardness

Oxf Here pitch our battle, hence we will not
budge

Flourish and march Enter KING EDWARD,
GLOUCESTER CLARENCE, and soldiers

A Edw Brave followers yonder stands the
thorny wood,

Which by the heavens assistance and your
strength

Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night

I need not add more fuel to your fire,

For well I wot I may blaze to burn them out

Give signal to the fight and to it, lords!

Q Mar Lords, knights, and gentlemen what
I should say

My tears gainsay for every word I speak

Ye see I drink the water of mine eyes

Therefore no more but this Henry your sov-
er-
eign

Is prisoner to the foe his state usurp'd

His realm a slaughter-house, his subjects slain

His statutes cancell'd and his treasure spent

And yonder is the wolf that makes this spoil So

You fight in justice then in God's name, lords,

Be valiant and give signal to the fight

[*War in Retreat* *Exeunt*]

SCENE I *Another part of the field*

Flourish Enter KING EDWARD GLOUCESTER CLARENCE and soldiers with QUEEN MARGARET OXFORD and SOMERSET prisoners

A. Edw. Now here a period of tumultuous broils

Away with Oxford to Harnes Castle straight

For Somerset off with his guilty head

Go bear them hence I will not hear them speak

Oxf. For my part I'll not trouble thee with words

Som. Not I but stoop with patience to my fortune

[Exeunt OXFORD and SOMERSET guarded]

Q. Mar. So part we sadly in this troublous world,

To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem

A. Edw. Is proclamation made that who finds Edward

Shall have a hundred reward and he his life? 10

Glow. It is and so where youthful Edward comes

E. 1st sold etc. with PRINCE EDWARD

A. Edw. Bring forth the gallant let us hear him speak

What! can so young a chorn begin to prick?

Edward what satisfaction canst thou make

For bearing arms for stirring up my subjects

And all the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?

Prince. Speak like a subject proud ambitious York!

Suppose that I am now my father's mouth

Reston thy chair and where I stand kneel thou

Whilst I propose the selfsame words to thee 20

Which traitor thou wouldst have me answer to

Q. Mar. Ah that thy father had been so resolved!

Glow. That you might still have worn the petticoat

And never have stol'n the breech from Lancaster

Prince. Let Asop fable in a winter's night

His curish riddles sort not with this place

Glow. By heaven but I'll plague ye for that word

Q. Mar. Ay thou wast born to be a plague to men

Glow. For God's sake take away this captive scold

Prince. Nay take away this scolding crook back rather 30

A. Edw. Peace wilful boy or I will charm your tongue

Cl. Untutor'd lad thou art too malapert

Prince. I know my duty you are all undutiful

Lascivious Edward and thou perjured George
And thou must shapen Dick I tell ye all

I am your better traitors ye are

And thou usurp'st my father's right and mine

A. Edw. Take that thou likeness of this railer here *[Stabs him]*

Glow. Sprawl'st thou? take that to end thy agony *[Stabs him]*

Clare. And there's for twisting me with perjury *[Stabs him]* 40

Q. Mar. O kill me too!

Glow. Marry and shall *[Offers to kill her]*

A. Edw. Hold Richard hold for we have done too much

Glow. Why should she live to fill the world with words?

A. Edw. What doth she swoon? use means for her recovery

Glow. Clarence excuse me to the king my brother

I'll hence to London on a serious matter

Ere ye come there be sure to hear some news

Clare. What? what?

Glow. The Tower the Tower *[Exit]* 50

Q. Mar. O Ned sweet Ned! speak to thy mother boy!

Canst thou not speak? O traitors! murderers!

They that stabb'd Coxar shed no blood at all

Did not offend nor were not worthy blame

If this foul deed were by to equal it

He was a man thus in respect a child

And men never spend their fury on a child

What's worse than murderer that I may name it?

No no my heart will burst an if I speak

And I will speak that so my heart may burst 60

Butchers and villains! bloody cannibals!

How sweet a plant have you untimely cropp'd!

You have no children butchers! if you had

The thought of them would have sturr'd up remorse

But if you ever chance to have a child

Look in his youth to have him cut off

As deathmen you have rid this sweet young prince!

A. Edw. Away with her go bear her hence perforce

Q. Mar. Nay never bear me hence dispatch me here

Here sheathe thy sword I'll pardon thee my death

What wilt thou not? then Clarence do it thou

Clare. By heaven I will not do thee so much ease

Q. Mar. Good Clarence do sweet Clarence do thou do it

Clar Didst thou not hear me swear I would not do it?

Q Mar Ay, but thou usest to forswear thyself 'Twas sin before, but now 'tis charity What wilt thou not? Where is that devil's butcher,

Hard favour'd Richard? Richard where art thou?

Thou art not here murder is thy alms deed, Pettioners for blood thou never putst back 80

A Edw Away, I say, I charge ye, bear her hence

Q Mar So come to you and yours, as to this prince! *[Exit led out forcibly]*

A Edw Where's Richard gone?

Clar To London all in post, and as I guess To make a bloody supper in the Tower

A Edw He's sudden, if a thing comes in his head

Now march we hence discharge the common sort

With pay and thanks, and let's away to London

And see our gentle queen how well she fares

By this I hope, she hath a son for me 90

[Exeunt]

SCENE VI London The Tower

Enter KING HENRY and GLOUCESTER, with the
LIEUTENANT, on the walls

Glou Good day, my lord What, at your book so hard?

A Hen Ay, my good lord —my lord, I should say rather,

'Tis sin to flatter "good" was little better "Good Gloucester" and "good devil" were alike, And both preposterous, therefore not "good lord

Glou Sirrah, leave us to ourselves we must confer *[Exit LIEUTENANT]*

A Hen So flies the reckless shepherd from the wolf

So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece And next his throat unto the butcher's knife

What scene of death hath Roscius now to act? 10

Glou Suspicion always haunts the guilty mind,

The thief doth fear each bush an officer

A Hen The bird that hath been limed in a bush

With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush

And I the hapless male to one sweet bird

Have now the fatal object in my eye

Where my poor young was limed was caught and kill'd

Glou Why, what a peevish fool was that of Crete

That taught his son the office of a fowl? 19

And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd

K Hen I, Dædalus, my poor boy, Icarus Thy father, Minos, that denied our course The sun that sear'd the wings of my sweet boy Thy brother Edward, and thyself the sea Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life Ah, kill me with thy weapon not with words! My breast can better brook thy dagger's point Than can my ears that tragic history

But wherefore dost thou come? is't for my life? *Glou* Think st thou I am an executioner? 30

K Hen A persecutor I am sure, thou art If murdering innocents be executing,

Why, then thou art an executioner

Glou Thy son I kill'd for his presumption

K Hen Hadst thou been kill'd when first thou didst presume

Thou hadst not liv'd to kill a son of mine And thus I prophesy that many a thousand, Which now mistrust no parcel of my fear, And many an old man's sigh and many a widow's And many an orphan's water standing eye— 40

Men for their sons wives for their husbands And orphans for their parents timeless death—

Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born

The owl shriek'd at thy birth an evil sign,

The night-crow cried aboding luckless time,

Dogs howl'd and hideous tempest shook down trees,

The raven rook'd her on the chimney's top

And chattering pies in dismal discords sung

Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain

And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope,

To wit, an indigested and deformed lump 51

Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree

Teeth hadst thou in thy head when thou wast born

To signify thou camest to bite the world

And if the rest be true which I have heard

Thou camest—

Glou I'll hear no more die, prophet in thy speech *[Stabs him]*

For thus amongst the rest was I ordain'd

A Hen Ay, and for much more slaughter after this

O God forgive my sins and pardon thee! *[Dies]*

Glou What will the aspiring blood of Lancaster

Sink in the ground? I thought it would have mounted 61

See how my sword weeps for the poor king's death!

O may such purple tears be always shed

From those that wish the downfall of our house!

If any spark of life be yet remaining

Down down to hell and say I sent thee thither

[Stabs him again]

I that have neither pity love nor fear
 Indeed tis true that Henry told me of
 For I have often heard my mother say 70
 I came into the world with my legs forward
 Had I not reason think ye to make haste
 And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right?
 The midwife wonder'd and the women cried
 O Jesus bless us he is born with teeth
 And so I was which plainly signified
 That I should snarl and bite and play the dog
 Then since the heavens have shaped my body so
 Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it
 I have no brother I am like no brother 80
 And this word love which greybeards call
 divine
 Be resident in men like one another
 And not in me I am myself alone
 Clarence beware thou keepst me from the
 light
 But I will sort a pitchy day for thee
 For I will buz abroad such prophecies
 That Edward shall be fearful of his life
 And then to purge his fear I'll be thy death
 King Henry and the Prince his son are gone
 Clarence my turn is next and then the rest 90
 Counting myself but bad till I be best
 I'll throw thy body in another room
 And triumph Henry in thy day of doom
 [Exit with the body]

SCENE VII London The palace

Flourish Enter KING EDWARD QUEEN ELIZABETH
 CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER HASTINGS a Nurse
 with it young Prince Edward and Attendants
 K. Edw. Once more we sit in England's royal
 throne,

Re purchased with the blood of enemies
 What valiant foemen like to autumn's corn
 Have we mow'd down in tops of all their pride!
 Three Dukes of Somerset threefold renown'd
 For hardy and undoubted champions
 Two Clifords as the father and the son
 And two Northumberland two braver men
 Ne'er spurr'd their couriers at the trumpet's
 sound
 With them the two brave bears Warwick and
 Montague 10

That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion
 And made the forest tremble when they roar'd
 Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat
 And made our footstool of security
 Come hither Bess and let me kiss my boy
 Young Ned for thee thine uncles and myself
 Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night
 Went all afoot in summer's scalding heat
 That thou might'st repossess the crown in
 peace
 And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain 20
 Glou. [Aside] I'll blast his harvest if your head
 were laid
 For yet I am not look'd on in the world
 This shoulder was ordain'd so thick to heave
 And heave it shall some weight or break my
 back
 Work thou the way—and thou shalt execute
 K. Edw. Clarence and Gloucester love my
 lovely queen
 And kiss your princely nephew brothers both
 Clar. The duty that I owe unto your Majesty
 I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe
 Q. Eliz. Thanks noble Clarence worthy broth- 30
 er thanks
 Glou. And that I love the tree from whence
 thou sprang'st
 Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit
 [Aside] To say the truth so Judas kiss'd his
 master
 And cried All hail! when as he meant all
 harm
 K. Edw. Now am I seated as my soul delights
 Having my country's peace and brothers' loves
 Cla. What will your Grace have done with
 Margaret?
 Reniger her father to the King of France
 Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem
 And hither have they sent it for her ransom
 K. Edw. Away with her and waft her hence to
 France
 And now what rests but that we spend the time
 With stately triumphs mirthful comic shows
 Such as befits the pleasure of the court?
 Sound drums and trumpets! farewell sour annoy!
 For here I hope begins our lasting joy

[Exeunt]

The Tragedy of KING RICHARD THE THIRD

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING EDWARD THE FOURTH	
EDWARD PRINCE OF WALES afterwards	
KING EDWARD V later as a GHOST	sons to the King
RICHARD DUKE OF YORK later as a GHOST	
GEORGE DUKE OF CLARENCE later as a GHOST	brothers to the King
RICHARD DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, afterwards KING RICHARD III	
EDWARD EARL OF WARWICK son of Clarence	
HENRY, EARL OF RICHMOND afterwards KING HENRY VII	
CARDINAL BOURCHIER ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY	
THOMAS ROTHERHAM ARCHBISHOP OF YORK	
JOHN MORTON BISHOP OF ELY	
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM later as a GHOST	
DUKE OF NORFOLK	
EARL OF SURREY, his son	
EARL RIVERS brother to Elizabeth later as a GHOST	
MARQUIS OF DORSET	
LORD GREY later as a GHOST	sons to Elizabeth
EARL OF OXFORD	
LORD HASTINGS later as a GHOST	
LORD STANLEY later EARL OF DERBY	
LORD LOVEL	
SIR THOMAS VAUGHAN later as a GHOST	
SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF	
SIR WILLIAM CATESBY	
SIR JAMES TIRREL	
SIR JAMES BLUNT	
SIR WALTER HERBERT	
SIR ROBERT BRAKENBURY Lieutenant of the Tower	
CHRISTOPHER URSWICK a priest	
LORD MAYOR OF LONDON	
SHERIFF OF WILTSHIRE	
GENTLEMAN MOURNER	
TWO MURDERERS	
THREE CITIZENS	
SIX MESSENGERS	
PURSUIVANT	
PRIEST	
SCRIVENER	
PAGE to Richard III	
GHOSTS OF KING HENRY VI	
LORDS	
ELIZABETH queen to King Edward IV	
MARGARET widow of King Henry VI	
DUCHESS OF YORK mother to King Edward IV	
LADY ANNE widow of Edward Prince of Wales son to King Henry VI afterwards married to Richard, later as a GHOST	
MARGARET PLANTAGENET daughter of Clarence	
NON-SPEAKING Lords and other attendants	
Two Bishops Sir William Brandon Citizens Soldiers	

SCENE England

ACT I

SCENE I London a street

Enter RICHARD, DUKE OF GLOUCESTER, solus

Glou Now is the winter of our discontent
 Made glorious summer by this sun of York
 And all the clouds that lour'd upon our house
 In the deep bosom of the ocean buried
 Now are our brows bound with victorious
 wreaths,
 Our bruised arms hung up for monuments
 Our stern alarms changed to merry meetings
 Our dreadful marches to delightful measures
 Grim-visaged War hath smooth'd his wrinkled front
 And now instead of mounting barbed steeds
 To fright the souls of fearful adversaries
 He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber
 To the lascivious pleasing of a lute

But I, that am not shaped for sportive tricks
 Nor made to court an amorous looking glass,
 I that am rudely stamp'd and want love's majesty
 To strut before a wanton ambling nymph
 I that am curtail'd of this fair proportion
 Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,
 Deform'd unfinish'd sent before my time
 Into this breathing world scarce half made up
 And that so lamely and unfashionable
 That dogs bark at me as I halt by them
 Why I in this weak piping time of peace
 Have no delight to pass away the time
 Unless to spy my shadow in the sun
 And descent on mine own deformity
 And therefore since I cannot prove a lover,
 To entertain these fair well-spoken days,
 I am determin'd to prove a villain
 And hate the idle pleasures of these days
 Plots have I laid inductions dangerous

By drunken prophecies, libels, and dreams
 To set my brother Clarence and the King
 In deadly hate the one against the other
 And if King Edward be as true and just
 As I am subtle, false, and treacherous
 This day should Clarence closely be mewed up
 About a prophecy which says that G
 Of Edward's heirs the murderer shall be 40
 Dive thoughts down to my soul here Clarence
 comes

Enter CLARENCE, guarded and BRAKENBURY

Brother good day what means this armed guard
 That waits upon your Grace?

Clar His majesty
 Tendering my person's safety hath appointed
 This conduct to convey me to the Tower
Glou Upon what cause?

Clar Because my name is George
Glou Alack my lord that fault is none of
 yours

He should for that commit your godfathers
 O belike his Majesty hath some intent 49
 That you shall be new-christened in the Tower
 But what's the matter Clarence? may I know?

Clar Yea Richard when I know for I protest
 As I do not but as I can learn,
 He hearkens after prophecies and dreams
 And from the cross row plucks the letter G
 And says a wizard told him that by G
 His issue disinherited should be
 And for my name of George begins with G
 It follows in his thought that I am he 60
 These I learn and such like toys as these
 Have moved his Highness to commit me now
Glou Why this it is when men are ruled by
 women

'Tis not the King that sends you to the Tower
 My Lady Grey his wife Clarence is she
 That tempers him to this extremity
 Was it not she and that good man of worship
 Anthony Woodville her brother there
 That made him send Lord Hastings to the Tower
 From whence this present day he is deliver'd? 70
 We are not safe Clarence we are not safe
Clar By heaven, I think there's no man so secure
 But the Queen's kindred and night walking
 heralds

That rudge between the King and Mistress Shore.
 Heard ye not what an humble suppliant
 Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery?

Glou Humbly complaining to her deity
 Got my Lord Chamberlain his liberty
 I'll tell you what I think it is our way
 If we will keep in favour with the King
 To be her men and wear her livery 80

The jealous and erown widow and herself
 Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewomen
 Are mighty gossips in this monarchy

Brak I beseech your Graces both to pardon
 me

His Majesty hath straitly given in charge
 That no man shall have private conference
 Of what degree soever with his brother
Glou Even so an't please your worship

Brakenbury

You may partake of any thing we say
 We speak no treason man we say the King 90
 Is wise and virtuous and his noble queen
 Well struck in years fair and not jealous
 We say that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot
 A cherry lip a bony eye a passing pleasing
 tongue

And that the Queen's kindred are made gentle
 folks

How say you sir? can you deny all this?

Brak With this my lord myself have nought
 to do

Glou Naught to do with Mistress Shore? I
 tell thee fellow

He that doth naught with her excepting one
 Were best he do it secretly alone 100

Brak What one my lord?

Glou Her husband knave wouldst thou
 betray me?

Brak I beseech your Grace to pardon me
 and withal

Forbear your conference with the noble Duke

Clar We know thy charge Brakenbury and
 will obey

Glou We are the Queen's subjects and must
 obey

Brother farewell I will unto the King
 And whatsoever you will employ me in
 Were it to call King Edward's widow sister
 I will perform it to enfranchise you 110
 Meantime this deep disgrace in brotherhood
 Touches me deeper than you can imagine

Clar I know it pleaseth neither of us well

Glou Well your imprisonment shall not be
 long

I will deliver you or else lie for you
 Meantime have patience

Clar I must perforce Farewell
 [*Exeunt CLARENCE BRAKENBURY and Guard*]

Glou Go tread the path that thou shalt ne'er
 return

Simple plain Clarence! I do love thee so
 That I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,
 If heaven will take the present at our hands 120
 But who comes here? the new deliver'd Hast
 ings?

Enter LORD HASTINGS

Hast Good time of day unto my gracious lord!
Glou As much unto my good Lord Chamberlain!
 Well are you welcome to the open air
 How hath your lordship brook'd imprisonment?

Hast With patience noble lord as prisoners must

But I shall live, my lord to give them thanks
 That were the cause of my imprisonment

Glou No doubt, no doubt, and so shall

Clarence too,

For they that were your enemies are his,
 And have prevail'd as much on him as you

Hast More pity that the eagle should be mew'd,

While kites and buzzards prey at liberty

Glou What news abroad?

Hast No news so bad abroad as this at home

The King is sickly weak, and melancholy,
 And his physicians fear him mightily

Glou Now, by Saint Paul, this news is bad indeed

O he hath kept an evil diet long

And overmuch consumed his royal person

'Tis very grievous to be thought upon

What, is he in his bed?

Hast He is

Glou Go you before, and I will follow you

[Exit HASTINGS]

He cannot live, I hope and must not die

Till George be pack'd with post horse up to heaven

I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence

With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments,

And if I fail not in my deep intent

Clarence hath not another day to live

Which done, God take King Edward to his mercy,

And leave the world for me to bustle in!

For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest daughter

What though I kill'd her husband and her father?

The readiest way to make the wench amends

Is to become her husband and her father

The which will I, not all so much for love

As for another secret close intent

By marrying her which I must reach unto

But yet I run before my horse to market

Clarence still breathes Edward still lives and

reigns

When they are gone then must I count my gains

[Exit]

SCENE II The same another street

Enter the corpse of King Henry the Sixth
 GENTLEMEN with halberds to guard it among
 them TRESSSEL and BERKELEY, LADY ANNE being
 the mourner

Anne Set down, set down your honourable load

If honour may be shrouded in a hearse,
 Whilst I awhile obsequiously lament
 The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster

The coffin is set down

130 Poor key-cold figure of a holy king!

Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster!

Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood!

Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,

To hear the lamentations of poor Anne,

Wife to thy Edward to thy slaughter'd son

Stabb'd by the selfsame hand that made these wounds!

Lo in these windows that let forth thy life,

I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes

Cursed be the hand that made these fatal holes!

Cursed be the heart that had the heart to do it!

Cursed the blood that let this blood from hence!

More direful hap betide that hated wretch

That makes us wretched by the death of thee

Than I can wish to adders spiders toads

Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives!

If ever he have child abortive be it

Prodigious and untimely brought to light,

Whose ugly and unnatural aspect

May fright the hopeful mother at the view,

And that be heir to his unhappiness!

If ever he have wife, let her be made

As miserable by the death of him

As I am made by my poor lord and thee!

Come now towards Chertsey with your holy load

Taken from Paul's to be interred there

And still as you are weary of the weight

Rest you, whilst I lament King Henry's corse

Enter GLOUCESTER

Glo Stay, you that bear the corse and set it down

Anne What black magician conjures up this fiend

To stop devoted charitable deeds?

Glou Villains set down the corse or b San Paul

I'll make a corse of him that disobeys

Gent My lord stand back and let the coffin pass

Glo Unmanner'd dog! stand thou when I command

Advance thy halberd higher than my breast
Or by Saint Paul I'll strike thee to my foot
And spurn upon thee beggar for thy boldness
Anne What do you tremble? are you all
afraid?

Alas I blame you not for you are mortal
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil
Avaunt thou dreadful minister of hell
Thou hadst but power over his mortal body
His soul thou canst not have therefore be gone
Glorious Sweet saint for charity be not so carst
Anne Foul devil for God's sake hence and
trouble us not

For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell
Fill'd it with cursing cries and deep exclaims
If thou delighdest to view thy heinous deeds
Behold this pattern of thy butcheries
O gentlemen see see dead Henry's wounds
Open their congeal'd mouths and bleed afresh!
Blush bluish thou lump of foul deformity
For us thy presence that exhales this blood
From cold and empty veins where no blood
dwells
Thy deed inhuman and unnatural
Provokes this deluge most unnatural
O God which this blood madest revenge his
death!

O earth which this blood drinkst revenge his
death!
Either heaven with lightning strike the murderer
dead

Or earth gape open wide and eat him quick
As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,
Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butchered
Glorious Lady you know no rules of charity
Which renders good for bad blessings for curses
Anne Villain, thou knowst no law of God
nor man

No beast so fierce but knows some touch of pity
Glorious But I know none and therefore am no
beast

Anne O wonderful when devils tell the truth!
Glorious More wonderful when angels are so
angry

Vouchsafe divine perfection of a woman,
Of these supposed evils to give me leave
By circumstance but to acquit myself
Anne Vouchsafe defused infection of a man,
For these known evils but to give me leave
By circumstance to curse thy cursed self
Glorious Farther than tongue can name thee let
me have

Some patient leisure to excuse myself
Anne Foulter than heart can think thee thou
canst make

No excuse current but to hurt thyself

40 Glorious By such despair I should accuse myself
Anne And by despairing should I thou stand
excused

For doing worthy vengeance on thyself
Which didst unworthy slaughter upon others
Glorious Say that I slew them not?

Anne Why then they are not dead
But dead they are and devilish slave by thee
Glorious I did not kill your husband

Anne Why then he is alive
Glorious Nay, he is dead and slain by Edward's
hand

50 Anne In thy foul throat thou liest Queen
Margaret saw

Thy murderous falchion smoking in his blood
The which thou once didst bend against her
breast

But that thy brothers beat aside the point
Glorious I was provoked by her slanderous tongue
Which laid their guilt upon my guiltless
shoulders

Anne Thou wast provoked by thy bloody mind
Which never dreamt on aught but butcheries
60 Didst thou not kill this king?

Glorious I grant ye
Anne Dost grant me hedgehog? then, God
grant me too

Thou mayst be damned for that wicked deed!
O he was gentle mild and virtuous!

Glorious The fitter for the king of heaven that
hath him

Anne He is in heaven, where thou shalt
never come

Glorious Let him thank me that help to send
him thither

For he was fitter for that place than earth

Anne And thou unfit for any place but hell

Glorious Yes one place else if you will hear me
name it

Anne Some dungeon

Glorious Your bed chamber
Anne I'll rest beside the chamber where thou
liest!

Glorious So will it madam till I lie with you

Anne I hope so

Glorious I know so But gentle Lady Anne
To leave this keen encounter of our wits
And fall somewhat into a slower method,
Is not the causer of the timely deaths
Of these Plantagenets Henry and Edward
As blameful as the executioner?

Anne Thou art the cause and most accused
effect

Glorious Your beauty was the cause of that effect
Your beauty which did haunt me in my sleep
To undertake the death of all the world,

So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom
Anne If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,
 These nails should rend that beauty from my
 cheeks

Glou These eyes could never endure sweet
 beauty's wreck,

You should not blemish it if I stood by
 As all the world ~~is~~ cheered by the sun,

So I by that, it is my day, my life

Anne Black night o'ershade thy day, and
 death thy life!

Glou Curse not thyself, fair creature, thou
 art both

Anne I would I were, to be revenged on thee

Glou It is a quarrel most unnatural,

To be revenged on him that loveth you

Anne It is a quarrel just and reasonable

To be revenged on him that slew my husband

Glou He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband

Did it to help thee to a better husband

Anne His better doth not breathe upon the
 earth

Glou He lives that loves thee better than he
 could

Anne Name him

Glou Plantagenet

Anne Why that was he

Glou The selfsame name but one of better
 nature

Anne Where is he?

Glou Here [*She spitteth at him*]

Why dost thou spit at me?

Anne Would it were mortal poison for thy
 sake!

Glou Never came poison from so sweet a place

Anne Never hung poison on a fouler road

Out of my sight! thou dost infect my eyes

Glou Thine eyes, sweet lady have infected
 mine

Anne Would they were basilisks to strike
 thee dead!

Glou I would they were, that I might die at
 once

For now they kill me with a living death
 Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt
 tears

Shamed their aspect with store of childish drops
 These eyes, which never shed remorseful tear

No when my father York and Edward wept

To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made

When black-faced Clifford shook his sword at
 him

Nor when thy warlike father like a child

Told the sad story of my father's death

And twenty times made pause to sob and weep

That all the standers by had wet their cheeks

Like trees bedash'd with rain in that sad time

My manly eyes did scorn a humble tear,

And what these sorrows could not thence exhale,

Thy beauty hath and made them blind with
 weeping

I never sued to friend nor enemy,

My tongue could never learn sweet smoothing
 words

But, now thy beauty is proposed my fee

My proud heart sues and prompts my tongue to
 speak [*She looks scornfully at him*]

Teach not thy lips such scorn for they were made

For kissing lady not for such contempt

If thy revengeful heart cannot forgive,

Lo here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword,

Which if thou please to hide in this true bosom,

And let the soul forth that adoreth thee

I lay it naked to the deadly stroke

And humbly beg the death upon my knee

*He lays his breast open sh. offers at it with his
 sword*

Nay, do not pause, for I did kill King Henry

But 'twas thy beauty that provoked me

Nay, now dispatch, 'twas I that stabb'd young

Edward,

But 'twas thy heavenly face that set me on

Here she lets fall the sword

Take up the sword again, or take up me

Anne Arise, dissembler though I wish thy
 death

I will not be the executioner

Glou Then bid me kill myself and I will do it

Anne I have already

Glou Tush that was in thy rage

Speak it again and even with the word

That hand which for thy love, did kill thy love,

Shall for thy love, kill a far truer love

To both their deaths thou shalt be accessory

Anne I would I knew thy heart

Glou 'Tis figured in my tongue

Anne I fear me both are false

Glou Then never man was true

Anne Well well put up your sword

Glou Say then my peace is made.

Anne That shall you know hereafter

Glou But shall I live in hope?

Anne All men, I hope live so

Glou Vouchsafe to wear this ring

Anne To take is not to give

Glou Look, how this ring encompasseth thy
 finger

Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart

Wear both of them for both of them are thine

And if thy poor devoted suppliant may

But beg one favour at thy gracious hand

Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever

Anne What is it?

Glou That it would please thee leave these sad designs

To him that hath more cause to be a mourner
And presently repair to Crosby Place
Where after I have solemnly interr'd
At Chertsey monastery this noble king
And wet his grave with my repentant tears
I will with all expedient duty see you
For divers unknown reasons I beseech you
Grant me this boon

Anne With all my heart and much it joys me too

To see you are become so penitent
Tressel and Berkeley go along with me

Glou Bid me farewell

Anne 'Tis more than you deserve
But since you teach me how to flatter you
Imagine I have said farewell already

[*Exeunt* LADY ANNE TRESSSEL and BERKELEY

Glou Sirs take up the corse

Gent Towards Chertsey noble lord?

Glou No to White Friars there attend my coming
[*Exeunt* all but GLOUCESTER

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd?

Was ever woman in this humour won?

I'll have her but I will not keep her long

What! I that kill'd her husband and his father

To take her in her heart's extremest hate

With curses in her mouth tears in her eyes

The bleeding witness of her hatred by

Having God her conscience and these bars
against me,

And I nothing to back my suit at all

But the plain devil and dissembling looks

And yet to win her all the world to nothing!

Ha!

Hath she forgot already that brave prince

Edward her lord whom I some three months
saw

Stabb'd in my angry mood at Tewksbury?

A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,

Fram'd in the prodigal ty of nature

Young valiant wise and no doubt right royal

The spacious world cannot again afford

And will she yet debase her eyes on me

That dropp'd the golden prime of this sweet
prince

And made her widow to a woeful bed?

On me whose all not equals Edward's misery?

On me, that halt and am unshapen thus?

My dukedom to a beggarly denier

I do mistake my person all this while

Upon my life she finds although I cannot

Myself to be a marvellous proper man

I'll be at charges for a looking-glass

210 And entertain some score or two of tailors

To study fashions and adorn my body

Since I am crept in favour with my self

I will maintain it with some little cost

260 But first I'll turn you fellow in his grave

And then return lamenting to my love

Shine out fair sun till I have bought a glass

That I may see my shadow as I pass [Exit

SCENE III The palace

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH LORD RIVERS and
LORD GREY

Riv Have patience madam there's no
doubt his Majesty

Will soon recover his accustomed health

Grey In that you brook it ill it makes him
worse

Therefore for God's sake entertain good
comfort

And cheer his Grace with quick and merry words

Q. Elz If he were dead what would betide
of me?

Riv No other harm but loss of such a lord

Q. Elz The loss of such a lord includes all
harm

Grey The heavens have bless'd you with a
goodly son

To be your comforter when he is gone

Q. Elz Oh he is young and his minority

Is put unto the trust of Richard Gloucester

A man that loves not me nor none of you

Riv Is it concluded he shall be Protector?

Q. Elz It is determin'd not concluded yet
But so it must be if the king miscarry

Enter BUCKINGHAM and LORD STANLEY
EARL OF DERBY

Grey Here come the lords of Buckingham
and Derby

Buck Good time of day unto your royal Grace!

Stan God make your Majesty joyful as you
have been!

Q. Elz The Countess Richmond good my
Lord of Derby

To your good prayers will scarcely say amen

Yet Derby notwithstanding she's your wife

And loves not me be you good lord assured

I hate not you for her proud arrogance

Stan I do beseech you either not believe

The envious slanders of her false accusers

Or if she be accused in true report

Bear with her weakness which I think proceeds

From wayward sickness and no grounded malice

Riv Saw you the king to-day my Lord of
Derby?

Stan But now the Duke of Buckingham and I

Are come from visiting his majesty

Q Eliz What likelihood of his amendment, lords?

Buck Madam, good hope, his Grace speaks cheerfully

Q Eliz God grant him health! Did you confer with him?

Buck Madam we did he desires to make atonement

Between the Duke of Gloucester and your brothers

And between them and my Lord Chamberlain, And sent to warn them to his royal presence

Q Eliz Would all were well! but that will never be

I fear our happiness is at the highest

Enter GLOUCESTER, HASTINGS, and DORSET

Glou They do me wrong, and I will not endure it

Who are they that complain unto the King That I, forsooth, am stern and love them not?

By holy Paul, they love his Grace but lightly

That fill his ears with such dissentionous rumours

Because I cannot flatter and speak fair,

Smile in men's faces, smooth deceive and cog,

Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,

I must be held a rancorous enemy

Cannot a plain man live and think no harm,

But thus his simple truth must be abused

By silken slv, insinuating Jacks?

Riv To whom in all this presence speaks your Grace?

Glou To thee that hast nor honesty nor grace

When have I injured thee? when done thee wrong?

Or thee? or thee? or any of your faction?

A plague upon you all! His royal person—

Whom God preserve better than you would wish!—

Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing while

But you must trouble him with lewd complaints

Q Eliz Brother of Gloucester you must clear the matter

The King, of his own royal disposition

And not provoked by any suitor else

Aiming belike at your interior hatred

Which in your outward actions shows itself

Against my kindred brothers and myself

Makes him to send that thereby he may gather

The ground of your ill will and so remove it

Glou I cannot tell the world is grown so bad

That wrens make prey where eagles dare not perch

Since every Jack became a gentleman

There's many a gentle person made a Jack

Q Eliz Come come we know your meaning, brother Gloucester,

You envy my advancement and my friends'

God grant we never have need of you!

Glou Meantime, God grants that we have need of you

Our brother is imprisoned by your means,

Myself disgraced, and the nobility

Held in contempt whilst many fair promotions

Are daily given to ennoble those

That scarce some two days since were worth a noble

Q Eliz By Him that raised me to this careful height

From that contented hap which I enjoyed

I never did incense his Majesty

Against the Duke of Clarence but have been

An earnest advocate to plead for him

My lord you do me shameful injury

Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects

Glou You may deny that you were not the cause

Of my Lord Hastings late imprisonment

Riv She may, my lord for—

Glou She may Lord Rivers! why, who knows not so?

She may do more sir than denying that

She may help you to many fair preferments

And then deny her aiding hand therein

And lay those honours on your high deserts

What may she not? She may your marry, may she—

Riv What marry, may she?

Glou What marry may she! marry with a king

A bachelor a handsome stripling too

I was your grandam had a worse match

Q Eliz My Lord of Gloucester, I have too long borne

Your blunt upbraidings and your bitter scoffs

By heaven I will acquaint his Majesty

With those gross taunts I often have endured

I had rather be a country servant maid

Than a great queen with this condition

To be thus taunted scorn'd and baited at

Enter QUEEN MARGARET, led in

Small joy have I in being England's queen

Q Mar And lessened be that small God I beseech thee!

This honour state and seat is due to me

Glou What threat you me with telling of the King?

Tell him and spare no look who I have said

I will avouch in presence of the King

I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower
 'Tis time to speak my pains are quite forgot
Q Mar Out devil! I remember them too
 well
 Thou slewest my husband Henry in the Tower
 And Edward my poor son at Tewksbury 120
Glow Ere you were queen ye a your
 husband kill'd

I was a pack horse in his great affairs
 A weeder-out of his proud adversaries
 A liberal rewarder of his friend
 To royalise his blood I spilt mine own
Q Mar Yea and much better blood than his
 or thine

Clor In all which time you and your husband
 Grey
 Were factious for the house of Lancaster
 And Rivers so were you Was not your husband
 In Margaret's battle at Saint Alban slain? 130

Let me put in your minds if you forget
 What you have been ere now and what you are
 What I have been and what I am

Q Mar A murderous villain and to stall
 thou art
Glow Poor Clarence did forsake his father
 Warwick

Yea and forswore himself—which Jean
 pardon—

Q Mar Which God revenge!
Glow To fight on Edward's party for the
 crown

And for his meed poor lord he is mew'd up
 I would to God my heart were flint like
 Edward's 140

Or Edward's soft and pitiful like mine
 I am too childish foolish for this world
Q Mar Hie thee to hell for shame and leave
 the world

Thou cademon! there thy kingdom is
Ric My Lord of Gloucester in those busy
 days

Which here you urge to prove us enemies
 We follow'd then our lord our lawful king
 So should we you, if you should be our king
Glow If I should be I had rather be a pedlar
 Far be it from my heart the thought of it 150

Q Eli As little joy my lord as you suppose
 You should enjoy were you this country's king
 As little joy may you suppose in me
 That I enjoy being the queen thereof

Q Mar A little joy enjoys the queen thereof
 For I am she and also other joyless
 I can no longer hold me patient [*A Flanking*]
 Hear me your rarest pirates that fall out
 In sharing that which you have pill'd from me!
 Which of you trembles not that looks on me? 160

If not that I being queen you bow like subjects
 Yet that by you deposed you quake like rebels?
O gentle villain do not turn away!

Glow Foul wrinkled witch what makest thou
 in my sight?

Q Mar But repetition of what thou hast
 marr'd

That will I make before I let thee go

Glow Wert thou not banished on pain of death?

Q Mar I was but I do find more pain in
 banishment

Than death can yield me here by my abode
 A husband and a son thou owest to me 170

And thou a kingdom all of you allegiance

The sorrow that I have by right is yours

And all the pleasures you usurp are mine

Glow The curse my noble father laid on thee
 When thou didst crown his warlike brows with
 paper

And with thy scorn drew st rivers from his eyes
 And then to dry them gavest the Duke a clout

Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rutland—

His curses then from bitterness of soul 179

Denounced against thee are all fall'n upon thee

And God not we hath plagued thy bloody deed

Q Eli So just is God to right the innocent
Hast O 'twas the foulest deed to slay that
 babe

And the most merciless that e'er was heard of!

Ric Tyrants themselves wept when it was
 reported

Dor No man but prophesied revenge for it
Buck Northumberland then present wept
 to see it

Q Mar What! were you snarling all before I
 came

Ready to catch each other by the throat
 And turn you all your hatred now on me? 190

Did York a dread curse prelate so much with
 heaven

That Henry's death my lovely Edward's death

Their kingdom's loss my woeful banishment

Could all but answer for that peevish brat?

Can curses pierce the clouds and enter heaven?

Why then, give way dull clouds to my quick
 curses!

If not by war by surfeit die your king

As ours by murder make him a king!

Edward thy son, which now is Prince of Wales

For Edward my son which was Prince of Wales

Die in his youth by like untimely violence! 200

Thyself a queen for me that was a queen

Outlive thy glory I like my wretched self!

Long mayst thou live to wail thy children's loss

And see another I see thee now

Deck'd in thy rights as thou art stall'd in mine!

Long die thy happy days before thy death,
And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,
Die neither mother, wife, nor England's Queen!
Rivers and Dorset, you were standers by, 210
And so wast thou, Lord Hastings when my son
Was stabb'd with bloody daggers God, I pray
him,

That none of you may live your natural age,
But by some unlook'd accident cut off!

Glou Have done thy charm, thou hateful
wither'd hag!

Q Mar And leave out thee? stay, dog for
thou shalt hear me

If heaven have any grievous plague in store
Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee
O, let them keep it till thy sins be ripe,
And then hurl down their indignation 220

On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace!
The worm of conscience still begnaw thy soul!

Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou livest,
And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends!

No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine,
Unless it be whilst some tormenting dream

Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils!
Thou elvish mark'd, abortive rooting hog!

Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity
The slave of nature and the son of hell! 230

Thou slander of thy mother's heavy womb!
Thou loathed issue of thy father's loins!

Thou rag of honour! thou detested—
Glou Margaret

Q Mar Richard!

Glou Ha!

Q Mar I call thee not

Glou I cry thee mercy then, for I had
thought

That thou hadst call'd me all these bitter names
Q Mar Why, so I did, but look'd for no
reply

O let me make the period to my curse!
Glou 'Tis done by me and ends in Margaret!

Q Eliz Thus have you breathed your curse
against yourself -40

Q Mar Poor painted queen, vain flourish of
my fortune!

Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled spider,
Whose deadly web ensnareth thee about?

Fool! fool! thou wretch that knifed thyself
The time will come when thou shalt wish for me

To help thee curse that poisonous bunch back'd
toad

Hast False boding woman end thy frantic
curse,

Lest to thy harm thou move our patience
Q Mar Ioul shame upon you! you have
all moved mine

Riv Were you well served, you would be
taught your duty 250

Q Mar To serve me well you all should do
me duty,

Teach me to be your queen, and you my subjects
O serve me well, and teach yourselves that
duty!

Dor Dispute not with her, she is lunatic
Q Mar Peace, master marquess, you are
malapert

Your fire new stamp of honour is scarce current
O that your young nobility could judge
What 'twere to lose it and be miserable!

They that stand high have many blasts to shake
them, 259

And if they fall, they dash themselves to pieces
Glou Good counsel, marry learn it, learn it,
marquess

Dor It toucheth you, my lord, as much as me
Glou Yea, and much more but I was born
so high,

Our airy buildeth in the cedar's top,
And dallies with the wind and scorns the sun

Q Mar And turns the sun to shade, alas!
alas!

Witness my son, now in the shade of death,
Whose bright out shining beams thy cloudy
wrath

Hath in eternal darkness folded up
Your airy buildeth in our airy nest 270

O God that seest it do not suffer it
As it was won with blood lost be it so!

Buck Have done! for shame, if not for charity
Q Mar Urge neither charity nor shame to me
Uncharitably with me have you dealt

And shamefully by you my hopes are butcher'd
My charity is outrage, life my shame

And in that shame still live my sorrow's rage!
Buck Have done have done

Q Mar O princely Buckingham I'll kiss
thy hand, 280

In sign of league and amity with thee
Now fair befall thee and thy noble house!

Thy garments are not spotted with our blood
Nor thou within the compass of my curse

Buck Nor no one here for curses never pass
The lips of those that breathe them in the air

Q Mar I'll not believe but they ascend the sky,
And there awake God's gentle-sleeping peace

[*Aside to Buckingham*]
O Buckingham take heed of yonder dog!

Look when he fawns he bites and when he
bites

His venom tooth will rankle to the death
Have not to do with him beware of him

Sin death and hell have set their marks on him
50

And all their ministers attend on him

Glou What doth she say my Lord of
Buckingham?

Buck Nothing that I respect my gracious lord

Q Mar What dost thou scorn me for my
gentle counsel?

And soothe the devil that I warn thee from?

O but remember this another day

When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow

And say poor Margaret was a prophetess! 301

Live each of you the subjects to his hate

And he to yours and all of you to God's [Exit

Hast My hair doth stand on end to hear her
curses

Ri And so doth mine I muse why she's at
liberty

Glou I cannot blame her by God's holy
mother

She hath had too much wrong and I repent

My part thereof that I have done to her

Q Eli I never did her any to my knowledge

Glou But you have all the vantage of her
wrong 310

I was too hot to do somebody good

That is too cold in thinking of it now

Marry as for Clarence he is well repaid

He is frank'd up to fattening for his pains

God pardon them that are the cause of it!

Ri A virtuous and a Christian like conclusion

To pray for them that have done scathe to us

Glou So do I ever [Aside] being well advised

For had I cursed now I had cursed myself

Enter Catesby

Late Madam his Majesty doth call for you 320

And for your Grace and you my noble lords

Q Eli Catesby we come Lords will
you go with us?

Ri Madam we will attend your Grace

[Exeunt all but GLOUCESTER]

Glou I do the wrong and first begin to brawl

The secret mischiefs that I set abroad

I lay into the grievous charge of others

Clarence whom I indeed have laid in dark-
ness

I do beweepe to many simple gulls

Namely to Hastings Derby Buckingham

And say it is the Queen and her all 330

That stir the King against the Duke my brother

Now they believe it and withal whet me

To be revenged on Rivers Vaughan Grey

But then I sigh and with a piece of scripture,

Tell them that God bids us do good for evil

And thus I clothe my naked villainy

With old odd ends stolen out of holy writ

And seem a saint when most I play the devil

Enter TWO MURDERERS

But soft! here come my executioners

How now my hardy stout resolved mates! 340

Are you now going to dispatch this deed?

1st Murd We are my lord and come to
have the warrant

That we may be admitted where he is

Glou Well thought upon I have it here about
me [Gives the warrant]

When you have done repair to Crosby Place

But sirs be sudden in the execution

Withal obdurate do not hear him plead

For Clarence is well spoken and perhaps

May move your hearts to pity if you mark him
1st Murd Tush! 350

Fear not my lord we will not stand to prate

Talkers are no good doers be assured

We come to use our hands and not our tongues

Glou Your eyes drop millstones when fools
eyes drop tears

I like you lads about your business straight

Go go dispatch

1st Murd We will my noble lord [Exeunt]

SCENE IV London the Tower

Enter CLARENCE and BRAKENBURY

Brak Why looks your Grace so heavily to-day?

Clar O I have pass'd a miserable night

So full of ugly sights of ghastly dreams

That as I am a Christian faithful man

I would not spend another such a night

Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days

So full of dismal terror was the time!

Brak What was your dream? I long to hear
you tell it

Clar Methoughts that I had broken from the
Tower

And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy 10

And in my company my brother Gloucester

Who from my cabin tempted me to walk

Upon the hatches thence we look'd toward

England

And cited up a thousand fearful times

During the wars of York and Lancaster

That had befallen us As we paced along

Upon the giddy footing of the hatches

Methought that Gloucester stumbled and in
falling

Struck me that thought to stay him overboard 20

Into the tumbling billows of the main

Lord! Lord! methought what pain it was to
drown!

What dreadful noise of waters in mine ears!

What ugly sights of death within mine eyes!

Methought I saw a thousand fearful wrecks

Ten thousand men that fishes gnaw'd upon,
Wedges of gold great anchors, heaps of pearl,
Inestimable stones, unvalued jewels,
All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea
Some lay in dead men's skulls and, in those holes
Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept,
As twere in scorn of eyes, reflecting gems 31
Which woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep
And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd by
Brak Had you such leisure in the time of
death

To gaze upon the secrets of the deep?
Clar Methought I had, and often did I strive
To yield the ghost but still the envious flood
Kept in my soul and would not let it forth
To seek the empty, vast, and wandering air,
But smother'd it within my panting bulk, 40
Which almost burst to belch it in the sea
Brak Awaked you not with this sore agony?
Clar O, no, my dream was lengthen'd after life,
O, then began the tempest to my soul,
Who pass'd methought, the melancholy flood,
With that grim ferryman which poets write of,
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night
The first that there did greet my stranger soul
Was my great father-in law, renowned
Warwick,

Who cried aloud "What scourge for perjury 50
Can this dark monarchy afford false Clarence?"
And so he vanish'd then came wandering by
A shadow like an angel, with bright hair
Dabbled in blood, and he squeak'd out aloud,
"Clarence is come, false, fleeing, perjured
Clarence,

That stabb'd me in the field by Tewksbury,
Seize on him, Furies take him to your torments!"
With that, methoughts, a legion of foul fiends
Environ'd me about and howled in mine ears
Such hideous cries that with the very noise 60
I trembling wak'd and for a season after
Could not believe but that I was in hell
Such terrible impression made the dream
Brak No marvel, my lord, though it affrighted
you,

I promise you I am afraid to hear you tell it
Clar O Brakenbury I have done those things,
Which now bear evidence against my soul
For Edward's sake, and see how he requites me!
O God! if my deep prayers cannot appease thee
But thou wilt be avenged on my misdeeds, 70
Yet execute thy wrath in me alone
O spare my guiltless wife and my poor children!
I pray thee gentle keeper stay by me
My soul is heavy and I fain would sleep
Brak I will my lord God give you Grace
good rest! [*Clarence sleeps*]

Sorrow breaks seasons and reposing hours,
Makes the night morning, and the noon tide
night

Princes have but their titles for their glories,
An outward honour for an inward toil
And for unfelt imagination, 80
They often feel a world of restless cares
So that betwixt their titles and low names,
There's nothing differs but the outward fame

Enter the TWO MURDERERS

1st Murd Ho! who's here?

Brak In God's name what are you, and how
came you hither?

1st Murd I would speak with Clarence,
and I came hither on my legs

Brak Yea are you so brief?

2nd Murd O sir it is better to be brief than
tedious Shew him our commission, talk no
more

[*Brakenbury reads it*]

Brak I am in this commanded to deliver
The noble Duke of Clarence to your hands
I will not reason what is meant hereby,
Because I will be guiltless of the meaning
Here are the keys, there sits the Duke asleep
I'll to the King, and signify to him

That thus I have resign'd my charge to you

1st Murd Do so it is a point of wisdom
fare you well [*Exit BRAKENBURY* 100

2nd Murd What, shall we stab him as he
sleeps?

1st Murd No then he will say 'twas done
cowardly when he wakes

2nd Murd When he wakes! why, fool, he
shall never wake till the judgement-day

1st Murd Why, then he will say we stabbed
him sleeping

2nd Murd The urging of that word "judge-
ment hath bred a kind of remorse in me 110

1st Murd What art thou afraid?

2nd Murd Not to kill him having a warrant
for it but to be damned for killing him, from
which no warrant can defend us

1st Murd I thought thou hadst been resolute

2nd Murd So I am to let him live

1st Murd Back to the Duke of Gloucester,
tell him so 119

2nd Murd I pray thee stay a while I hope my
holy humour will change 'twas wont to hold me
but while one would tell twenty

1st Murd How dost thou feel thyself now?

2nd Murd Faith some certain dregs of
conscience are yet within me

1st Murd Remember our reward, when the
deed is done

2nd Murd Zounds he dies I had forgot the reward 19

1st Murd Where is thy conscience now?

2nd Murd In the Duke of Gloucester's purse

1st Murd So when he opens his purse to give us our reward thy conscience flies out

2nd Murd Let it go there's few or none will entertain it

1st Murd How if it come to thee again?

2nd Murd I'll not meddle with it it is a dangerous thing it makes a man a coward a man cannot steal but it accuseth him he cannot swear but it checks him he cannot lie with his neighbour's wife but it detects him 'tis a blushing shamefast spirit that mutinies in a man's bosom it fills one full of obstacles it made me once restore a purse of gold that I found it beggars any man that keeps it it is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing and every man that means to live well endeavours to trust himself and to live without it

1st Murd Zounds it is even now at my elbow persuading me not to kill the Duke 150

2nd Murd Take the devil in thy mind and believe him not he would insinuate with thee but to make thee sigh

1st Murd Tut I am strong framed he cannot prevail with me I warrant thee

2nd Murd Spoke like a tall fellow that respects his reputation Come shall we to this gear?

1st Murd Take him over the costard with the hilts of thy sword and then we will chop him in the malinsey but in the next room 161

2nd Murd O excellent device! make a sop of him

1st Murd Hark! he stirs shall I strike?

2nd Murd No first let's reason with him

Clar Where art thou keeper? give me a cup of wine

2nd Murd You shall have wine enough my lord anon

Clar In God's name what art thou?

2nd Murd A man, as you are 170

Clar But not as I am royal

2nd Murd Nor you as we are loyal

Clar Thy voice is thunder but thy looks are humble

2nd Murd My voice is now the King's my looks mine own

Clar How darkly and how deadly dost thou speak!

Your eyes do menace me why look you pale?

Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

Bo h To to to—

Clar To murder me?

Both Ay ay

Clar You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so 180

And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it Wherein my friends have I offended you?

1st Murd Offended us you have not but the King

Clar I shall be reconciled to him again

2nd Murd Never my lord therefore prepare to die

Clar Are you call'd forth from out a world of men

To slay the innocent? What is my offence?

Where are the evidence that do accuse me?

What lawful quest have given their verdict up

Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounced 190

The bitter sentence of poor Clarence death?

Before I be convict by course of law

To threaten me with death is most unlawful

I charge you as you hope to have redemption

By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous sins

That you depart and lay no hands on me

The deed you undertake is damnable

1st Murd What we will do we do upon command

2nd Murd And he that hath commanded is the King

Clar Erroneous vassal! the great King of kings 200

Hath in the tables of his law commanded

That thou shalt do no murder and wilt thou then,

Spurn at his edict and fulfil a man's?

Take heed for he holds vengeance in his hands

To hurl upon their heads that break his law

2nd Murd And that same vengeance doth he hurl on thee,

For false forswearing and for murder too

Thou didst receive the holy sacrament

To fight in quarrel of the house of Lancaster

1st Murd And like a traitor to the name of God 210

Didst break that vow and with thy treacherous blade

Unrip'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son

2nd Murd Whom thou wert sworn to cherish and defend

1st Murd How canst thou urge God's dreadful law to us

When thou hast broke it in so dear degree?

Clar Alas! for whose sake did I that ill deed?

For Edward for my brother for his sake

Why sirs

He sends ye not to murder me for this

For in this sin he is as deep as I

If God will be revenged for this deed

O know you yet he doth it publicly 220

Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm,
 He needs no indirect nor lawless course
 To cut off those that have offended him
1st Murd Who made thee, then, a bloody
 minister,
 When gallant-springing brave Plantagenet,
 That princely novice, was struck dead by thee?
Clar My brother's love, the devil and my rage
1st Murd Thy brother's love, our duty,
 and thy fault 230
 Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee
Clar Oh, if you love my brother hate not me,
 I am his brother and I love him well
 If you be hired for meed go back again
 And I will send you to my brother Gloucester,
 Who shall reward you better for my life
 Than Edward will for tidings of my death
2nd Murd You are deceived, your brother
 Gloucester hates you
Clar O, no he loves me and he holds me dear
 Go you to him from me
Both Ay, so we will 240
Clar Tell him when that our princely father
 York
 Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm
 And charged us from his soul to love each other,
 He little thought of this divided friendship
 Bid Gloucester think of this, and he will weep
1st Murd Ay, millstones, as he lesson'd us to
 weep
Clar O, do not slander him, for he is kind
1st Murd Right,
 As snow in harvest Thou deceivest thyself
 'Tis he that sent us hither now to slaughter thee
Clar It cannot be, for when I parted with him
 He hugged me in his arms and swore, with sobs
 That he would labour my delivery
2nd Murd Why, so he doth now he delivers
 thee
 From this world's thralldom to the joys of heaven
1st Murd Make peace with God, for you must
 die my lord
Clar Hast thou that holy feeling in thy soul
 To counsel me to make my peace with God
 And art thou yet to thy own soul so blind,
 That thou wilt war with God by murdering me?
 Ah sirs consider, he that set you on 261
 To do this deed will hate you for the deed
2nd Murd What shall we do?
Clar Relent and save your souls
1st Murd Relent! 'tis cowardly and womanish
Clar Not to relent is beastly savage, devilish
 Which of you if you were a prince's son
 Being pent from liberty as I am now
 If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,
 Would not entreat for life?

My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks,
 O if thine eye be not a flatterer,
 Come thou on my side and entreat for me,
 As you would beg, were you in my distress
 A begging prince what beggar pities not?
2nd Murd Look behind you my lord
1st Murd Take that, and that if all this will not
 do [*Stabs him*]
 I'll drown you in the malmsey-burt within
 [*Exit, with the body*]
2nd Murd A bloody deed and desperately
 dispatch'd!
 How fain like Pilate would I wash my hands
 Of this most grievous guilty murder done! 280

Re-enter FIRST MURDERER

1st Murd How now! what mean'st thou, that
 thou help'st me not?
 By heavens, the Duke shall know how slack thou
 art!
2nd Murd I would he knew that I had saved his
 brother!
 Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say,
 For I repent me that the Duke is slain [*Exit*]
1st Murd So do not I go coward as thou art
 Now must I hide his body in some hole
 Until the Duke take order for his burial
 And when I have my meed I must away,
 For this will out, and here I must not stay 290

ACT II

SCENE I London the palace

Flourish Enter KING EDWARD sick, QUEEN ELIZABETH, DORSET RIVERS HASTINGS, BUCKINGHAM, GREY, and others

K Edw Why, so now have I done a good
 day's work
 You peers continue this united league
 I every day expect an embassy
 From my Redeemer to redeem me hence,
 And now in peace my soul shall part to heaven,
 Since I have set my friends at peace on earth
 Rivers and Hastings take each other's hand
 Dissemble not your hatred swear your love
Riv By heaven, my heart is purged from grudging
 hate
 And with my hand I seal my true heart's love 30
Hast So thrive I as I truly swear the like!
K Edw Take heed you dally not before your
 King
 Lest he that is the supreme King of kings
 Confound your hidden falsehood and award
 Either of you to be the other's end
Hast So prosper I as I swear perfect love!
Riv And I as I love Hastings with my heart!

A. Edw. Madam yourself are not exempt in this
Nor your son Dorset Buckingham nor you
You have been factious one against the other
Wife love Lord Hastings let him kiss your hand

And what you do do it unfeignedly

Q. Eli. Here Hastings I will never more remember

Our former hatred so thrive I and mine!

A. Edw. Dorset embrace him Hastings
love lord marquess

Dor. This interchange of love I here protest

Upon my part shall be unviolable

Hast. And so swear I my lord

They embrace

A. Edw. Now princely Buckingham seal thou this league

With thy embracements to my wife's allies

And make me happy in your unity

Buck. Whenever Buckingham doth turn his hate

On you or yours *[to the QUEEN]* but with all dutious love

Doth cherish you and yours God punish me

With hate in those where I expect most love!

When I have most need to employ a friend

And most assured that he is a friend

Deep hollow treacherous and full of guile,

Be he unto me! this do I beg of God,

When I am cold in zeal to you or yours

They embrace

A. Edw. A pleasing cordal princely Buckingham

Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart

There wanteth now our brother Gloucester here,

To make the perfect period of this peace

Buck. And in good time here comes the noble Duke

Duke

Enter GLOUCESTER

Glou. Good morrow to my sovereign king and queen

And princely peers a happy time of day!

A. Edw. Happy indeed as we have spent the day

Brother we have done deeds of charity

Made peace of enmity fair love of hate

Between these swelling wrong incensed peers

Glou. A blessed labour my most sovereign beget

Amongst this princely heap if any here

By false intelligence or wrong surmise

I hold me a foe

If I unwittingly or in my rage

Have aught committed that is hardly borne

By any in this presence I desire

To reconcile me to his friendly peace

'Tis death to me to be at enmity

I hate it and desire all good men's love

First madam I entreat true peace of you

Which I will purchase with my dutious service

Of you my noble cousin Buckingham

If ever any grudge were lodged between us

Of you Lord Rivers and Lord Grey of you

That all without desert have frowned on me

Dukes earls lords gentlemen indeed of all

I do not know that Englishman alive

With whom my soul is any jot at odds

More than the infant that is born to-night

I thank my God for my humility

Q. Eli. A holy day shall this be kept hereafter

I would to God all strifes were well compounded

My sovereign liege, I do beseech your Majesty

To take our brother Clarence to your grace

Glou. Why madam have I offered love for this

To be so flouted in this royal presence?

Who knows not that the noble Duke is dead?

They all start

You do him injury to scorn his corpse

Riv. Who knows not he is dead? who knows

he is?

Q. Eli. All seeing heaven what a world is this!

Buck. Look I so pale Lord Dorset am I the rest?

Dor. Ay my good lord and no one in this

presence

But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks

A. Edw. Is Clarence dead? the order was

reversed

Glou. But he poor soul by your first order died

And that a winged Mercury did bear

Some tardy cripple bore the countermand

That came too lag to see him buried

God grant that some less noble and less loyal

Nearer in bloody thoughts but not in blood

Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did

And yet go current from suspicion!

Enter STANLEY

Stan. A boon my sovereign for my service done!

A. Edw. I pray thee peace my soul is full of sorrow

Stan. I will not rise unless your Highness grant

A. Edw. Then speak at once what is it thou demand'st

Stan. The forfeit sovereign of my servant's life

Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman

Lately attendant on the Duke of Norfolk

A. Edw. Have I a tongue to doom my brother's death,

And shall the same give pardon to a slave?

My brother slew no man, his fault was thought,
 And yet his punishment was cruel death
 Who sued to me for him? who, in my rage,
 kneel'd at my feet and bade me be advised?
 Who spake of brotherhood? who spake of love?
 Who told me how the poor soul did forsake
 The mighty Warwick and did fight for me? 110
 Who told me, in the field by Tewksbury,
 When Oxford had me down he rescued me
 And said, "Dear brother, live, and be a king?"
 Who told me, when we both lay in the field
 Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me
 Even in his own garments, and gave himself
 All thin and naked to the numb cold night?
 All this from my remembrance brutish wrath
 Sinfully pluck'd and not a man of you
 Had so much grace to put it in my mind 120
 But when your carters or your waiting vassals
 Have done a drunken slaughter and defaced
 The precious image of our dear Redeemer
 You straight are on your knees for pardon,
 pardon,
 And I, unjustly too, must grant it you
 But for my brother not a man would speak,
 Nor I, ungracious speak unto myself
 For him poor soul The proudest of you all
 Have been beholding to him in his life,
 Yet none of you would once plead for his life 130
 O God, I fear thy justice will take hold
 On me and you and mine and yours for this!
 Come, Hastings, help me to my closet Oh poor
 Clarence!

[*Exeunt some with KING and QUEEN*]

Glou This is the fruit of rashness! Mark d
 you not
 How that the guilty kindred of the Queen
 Look'd pale when they did hear of Clarence'
 death?

O, they did urge it still unto the King!
 God will revenge it But come let us in
 To comfort Edward with our company

Buck We wait upon your grace [*Exeunt*]

SCENE II *The palace*

Enter the DUCHESS OF YORK with the two children
 of CLARENCE, EDWARD EARL OF WARWICK and
 MARGARET PLANTAGENET

War Tell me good grandam, is our father
 dead?

Duch No, boy

War Why do you wring your hands and beat
 your breast,

And cry "O Clarence my unhappy son!"

Mar Why do you look on us and shake your
 head

And call us wretches orphans, castaways

If that our noble father be alive?

Duch My pretty cousins, you mistake me
 much,

I do lament the sickness of the King
 As loath to lose him, not your father's death, 10
 It were lost sorrow to wail one that's lost

War Then, grandam you conclude that he is
 dead

The King my uncle is to blame for this
 God will revenge it, whom I will importune
 With daily prayers all to that effect

Mar And so will I

Duch Peace, children, peace! the King doth
 love you well

Incapable and shallow innocents

You cannot guess who caused your father's death

War Grandam we can, for my good uncle
 Gloucester 20

Told me the King provoked by the Queen,
 Devised impeachments to imprison him
 And when my uncle told me so he wept
 And hugg'd me in his arm and kindly kiss'd my
 cheek

Bade me rely on him as on my father

And he would love me dearly as his child

Duch Oh, that deceit should steal such gentle
 shapes

And with a virtuous vizard hide foul guile!

He is my son, yea and therein my shame,

Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit 30

War Think you my uncle did dissemble,
 grandam?

Duch Ay, boy

War I cannot think it Hark! what noise is this?

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH, with her hair about her
 ears, RIVERS and DORSET after her

Q Eliz Oh, who shall hinder me to wail and
 weep

To chide my fortune and torment myself?

I'll join with black despair against my soul,

And to myself become an enemy

Duch What means this scene of rude
 impatience?

Q Eliz To make an act of tragic violence
 Edward my lord your son our king, is dead 40
 Why grow the branches now the root is
 wither'd?

Why wither not the leaves the sap being gone?

If you will live, lament if die, be brief

That our swift winged souls may catch the
 King's,

Or, like obedient subjects follow him

To his new kingdom of perpetual rest

Duch Ah so much interest have I in thy
 sorrow

As I had title in thy noble husband!
 I have bewept a worthy husband's death
 And I'ved by looking on his images 50
 But now two mirrors of his princely semblance
 A crack'd in pieces by malignant death
 And I for comfort have but one false glass
 Which grieves me when I see my shame in him
 Thou art a widow yet thou art a mother
 And hast the comfort of thy children left thee
 But death hath snatch'd my husband from mine 100

And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble limbs
 Edward and Clarence O what cause have I
 Thine being but a moiety of my grief 60
 To overtop thy plaints and drown thy cries?
 War Good aunt you wept not for our father's death

How can we aid you with our kindred tears?
 Mar Our fatherless distress was left unmoan'd
 Your widow's dolour likewise be unwept!
 Q Eli Give me no help in lamentation
 I am not barren to bring forth complaints
 All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes
 That I being govern'd by the watery moon
 May send forth plentiful tears to drown the world! 70

Oh for my husband for my dear lord Edward!
 War and Mar Oh for our father for our dear lord Clarence!

Duch Alas for both both mine Edward and Clarence!

Q Eli What stay had I but Edward? and he's gone

War and Mar What stay had we but Clarence? and he's gone

Duch What stays had I but they? and they are gone

Q Eli Was never widow had so dear a loss!

War and Mar Were never orphans had so dear a loss

Duch Was never mother had so dear a loss!
 Alas I am the mother of these moans! 80

Their woes are parcel'd mine are general
 She for an Edward weeps and so do I

I for a Clarence weep so doth not she
 These babes for Clarence weep and so do I

I for an Edward weep so do not they
 Alas you three, on me threefold distress'd

I pour all your tears I am your sorrow's nurse
 And I will pamper it with lamentations

Dor Comfort dear mother God is much displeased

That you take with unthankfulness his doing 90
 In common worldly things thus call'd ungrateful

With dull unwillingness to repay a debt
 Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent

Much more to be thus opposite with heaven
 For it requires the royal debt it lent you
 Rrv Madam bethink you like a careful mother
 Of the young prince your son send straight for him
 Let him be crown'd in him your comfort lives
 Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave
 And plant your joys in living Edward's throne 100

Enter GLOUCESTER BUCKINGHAM DERBY
 HASTINGS and RATCLIFF

Glou Madam have comfort all of us have cause
 To wail the dimming of our shining star
 But none can cure their harms by wailing them
 Madam my mother I do cry you mercy
 I did not see your Grace humbly on my knee
 I crave your blessing

Duch God bless thee and put meekness in thy mind

Love charity obedience and true duty!

Glou [Aside] Amen and make me die a good old man!

That's the butt end of a mother's blessing 110
 I marvel why her Grace did leave it out

Buck You cloudy princes and heart-sorrowing peers

That bear this mutual heavy load of moan
 Now cheer each other in each other's love

Though we have spent our harvest of this king
 We are to reap the harvest of his son

The broken rancour of your high-swoln hearts
 But lately splinter'd knit and join'd together

Must gently be preserved cherish'd and kept
 Me seemeth good that with some little train

Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be fetch'd 120

Hither to London to be crown'd our king

Rrv Why with some little train my Lord of Buckingham?

Buck Marry my lord lest by a multitude
 The new heal'd wound of malice should break out

Which would be so much the more dangerous
 By how much the estate is green and yet ungovern'd

Where every horse bears his commanding rein
 And may direct his course as please himself

As well the fear of harm as harm apparent 130
 In my opinion ought to be prevented

Glou I hope the king made peace with all of us
 And the compact is firm and true in me

Rrv And so in me and so I think in all
 Yet since it is but green it should be put

To no apparent likelihood of breach,
Which haply by much company might be urged
Therefore I say with noble Buckingham
That it is meet so few should fetch the Prince
Hast And so say I 140
Glou Then be it so, and go we to determine
Who they shall be that straight shall post to
Ludlow

Madam, and you, my mother, will you go
To give your censures in this weighty business?
Q Eliz With all our hearts
Duch }

[*Exeunt all but BUCKINGHAM and GLOUCESTER*
Buck My Lord, whoever journeys to the
Prince,

For God's sake let not us two be behind,
For, by the way, I'll sort occasion,
As index to the story we late talk'd of,
To part the Queen's proud kindred from the
king 150

Glou My other self my counsel's consistency,
My oracle, my prophet! My dear cousin,
I like a child, will go by thy direction
Towards Ludlow then for we'll not stay
behind [Exeunt

SCENE III *London a street*

Enter TWO CITIZENS, meeting

1st Cit Neighbour, well met whither away so
fast?

2nd Cit I promise you, I scarcely know myself
Hear you the news abroad?

1st Cit Ay, that the king is dead

2nd Cit Bad news, by r lady, seldom comes
the better

I fear, I fear twill prove a troublous world

Enter THIRD CITIZEN

3rd Cit Neighbours, God speed!

1st Cit Give you good morrow, sir

3rd Cit Doth this news hold of good king
Edward's death?

2nd Cit Ay, sir, it is too true, God help the
while!

3rd Cit Then masters, look to see a troublous
world

1st Cit No, no by God's good grace his son
shall reign 10

3rd Cit Woe to that land that's govern'd by a
child!

2nd Cit In him there is a hope of government,
That in his nonage council under him
And in his full and ripen'd years himself,
No doubt shall then and till then govern well

1st Cit So stood the state when Henry the Sixth
Was crown'd in Paris but at nine months old

3rd Cit Stood the state so? No, no good
friends God wot,
For then this land was famously enrich'd
With politic grave counsel then the King 20
Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace
1st Cit Why, so hath this both by the father and
mother

3rd Cit Better it were they all came by the
father,

Or by the father there were none at all
For emulation now, who shall be nearest
Will touch us all too near, if God prevent no-
O full of danger is the Duke of Gloucester!
And the Queen's sons and brothers haught and
proud

And were they to be ruled and not to rule,
This sickly land might solace as before 30

1st Cit Come, come, we fear the worst all shall
be well

3rd Cit When clouds appear, wise men put on
their cloaks,

When great leaves fall, the winter is at hand,
When the sun sets who doth not look for night?
Untimely storms make men expect a dearth
All may be well but, if God sort it so
'Tis more than we deserve, or I expect

2nd Cit Truly, the souls of men are full of
dread

Ye cannot reason almost with a man
That looks not heavily and full of fear 40

3rd Cit Before the times of change, still is it so

By a divine instinct men's minds mistrust

Ensuing dangers as by proof, we see

The waters swell before a boisterous storm

But leave it all to God Whither away?

2nd Cit Marry we were sent for to the justices

3rd Cit And so was I I'll bear you company
[Exeunt

SCENE IV *London the palace*

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK the young DUKE OF
YORK QUEEN ELIZABETH, and the DUCHESS OF
YORK*

Arch Last night, I hear, they lay at North-
ampton

At Stony Stratford will they be to-night
To-morrow or next day, they will be here

Duch I long with all my heart to see the Prince

I hope he is much grown since last I saw him

Q Eliz But I hear no they say my son of York

Hath almost overtaken him in his growth

York Ay mother, but I would not have it so

Duch Why my young cousin it is good to
grow

York Grandam one night, as we did sit at
supper,

My uncle Rivers talk'd how I did grow
 More than my brother Ay quod my uncle
 Gloucester
 Small herbs have grace great weeds do grow
 apace
 And sin'e, methinks I would not grow so fast
 Becau' sweet flowers are slow and weeds
 make haste
Duch Good faith good faith the saying did
 not hold
 In him that did object the same to thee
 He was the wretched st thing when he was young
 So long a-growing and so leisurely
 That if this rule were true he should be gracious
Arch Why madam so no doubt he is 21
Duch I hope he is but yet let mothers doubt
York Now by my troth if I had been
 remember'd
 I could have given my uncle's Grace a flout
 To touch his growth nearer than he touch'd
 mine
Duch How my pretty York? I pray thee let
 me hear it
York Marry they say my uncle grew so fast
 That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old
 'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth
 Grandam this would have been a biting jest 30
Duch I pray thee pretty York who told thee
 this?
York Grandam his nurse
Duch His nurse! why she was dead ere thou
 wert born
York If twere not she I cannot tell who told
 me
Q Eli A parlous boy go to you are too
 shrew'd
Arch Good madam be not angry with the child
Q Eli Pitchers have ears
 Enter a MESSENGER
Arch Here comes a messenger What news?
Mess Such news my lord as grieves me to
 unfold
Q Eli How fares the Prince?
Mess Well madam and in health 40
Duch What is thy news then?
Mess Lord Rivers and Lord Grey are sent to
 Pomfret
 With them Sir Thomas Vaughan prisoners
Duch Who hath committed them?
Mess The mighty dukes
 Gloucester and Buckingham
Q Eli For what offence?
Mess The sum of all I can I have disclosed
 Why or for what these nobles were committed
 It all unknown to me my gracious lady

Q Eli Ay me, I see the downfall of our
 house!
 The tiger now hath seized the gentle hind 50
 Insulting tyranny begins to jet
 Upon the innocent and aweless throne
 Welcome destruction death and massacre!
 I see as in a map the end of all
Duch Accursed and unquiet wangling days
 How many of you have mine eyes beheld!
 My husband lost his life to get the crown
 And often up and down my sons were toss'd
 For me to joy and weep their gain and loss
 And being seated and domestic broils 60
 Clean overblown themselves the conquerors
 Make war upon themselves blood against blood
 Self against self O preposterous
 And frantic outrage end thy damned spleen
 Or let me die to look on death no more!
Q Eli Come come my boy we will to
 sanctuary
 Madam fare well
Duch I'll go along with you
Q Eli You have no cause
Arch My gracious lady go
 And thither bear your treasure and your goods
 For my part I'll resign unto your Grace 70
 The seal I keep and so betide to me
 As well I tender you and all of yours!
 Come I'll conduct you to the sanctuary

[Exeunt]

ACT III

SCENE I London a street

The trumpets sound Enter the young PRINCE the
 Dukes of GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM CAR
 DINAL BOURCHIER CATESBY and others
Buck Welcome sweet prince to London to
 your chamber
Glou Welcome dear cousin my thoughts
 sovereign
 The weary way hath made you melancholy
 Prince No uncle but our crosses on the way
 Have made it tedious wearisome and heavy
 I want more uncles here to welcome me
Glou Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of
 your years
 Hath not yet dived into the world's deceit
 Nor more can you distinguish of a man
 Than of his out-ward show which God he knows
 Seldom or never jumpeth with the heart 11
 Those uncles which you want were dangerous
 Your Grace attended to their sugar'd words
 But look'd not on the poison of their hearts
 God keep you from them and from such false
 friends!

Prince God keep me from false friends! but they were none

Glou My lord, the Mayor of London comes to greet you

Enter the LORD MAYOR, and his train

May God bless your Grace with health and happy days!

Prince I thank you, good my lord, and thank you all

I thought my mother and my brother York, 20
Would long ere this have met us on the way
Fie, what a slug is Hastings that he comes not
To tell us whether they will come or no!

Enter LORD HASTINGS

Buck And, in good time here comes the sweating lord

Prince Welcome my lord what, will our mother come?

Hast On what occasion, God he knows, not I,
The Queen your mother, and your brother York,
Have taken sanctuary the tender prince
Would fain have come with me to meet your Grace

But by his mother was perforce withheld 30

Buck Fie, what an indirect and peevish course
Is this of hers! Lord Cardinal will your Grace
Persuade the Queen to send the Duke of York
Unto his princely brother presently?

If she deny, Lord Hastings go with him
And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce

Card My Lord of Buckingham if my weak oratory

Can from his mother win the Duke of York,
Anon expect him here but if she be obdurate

To mild entreaties God in heaven forbid 40
We should infringe the holy privilege
Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land
Would I be guilty of so deep a sin

Buck You are too senseless obstinate, my lord,
Too ceremonious and traditional

Weigh it but with the grossness of his age
You break not sanctuary in seizing him

The benefit thereof is always granted
To those whose dealings have deserved the place,

And those who have the wit to claim the place
This prince hath neither claim'd it nor deserv'd it,

And therefore in mine opinion cannot have it
Then taking him from thence that is not there,

You break no privilege nor charter there
Oft have I heard of sanctuary men

But sanctuary children ne'er till now
Card My lord, you shall o'er rule my mind

for once

Come on, Lord Hastings, will you go with me?

Hast I go my lord

Prince Good lords make all the speedy haste you may 60

[Exeunt CARDINAL and HASTINGS]

Say uncle Gloucester, if our brother come,
Where shall we sojourn till our coronation?

Glou Where it seems best unto your royal self
If I may counsel you some day or two

Your highness shall repose you at the Tower
Then where you please, and shall be thought

most fit

For your best health and recreation

Prince I do not like the Tower of any place
Did Julius Cæsar build that place my lord?

Buck He did, my gracious lord, begin that place, 70

Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified

Prince Is it upon record or else reported
Successively from age to age he built it?

Buck Upon record my gracious lord

Prince But say, my lord it were not register'd,
Methinks the truth should live from age to age,

As 'twere retail'd to all posterity

Even to the general all ending day

Glou *[Aside]* So wise so young they say, do never live long

Prince What say you uncle? 80

Glou I say without characters fame lives long

[Aside] Thus, like the formal vice Inquiry,
I moralize two meanings in one word

Prince That Julius Cæsar was a famous man,
With what his valour did enrich his wit,

His wit set down to make his valour live
Death makes no conquest of this conqueror,

For now he lives in fame though not in life
I'll tell you what my cousin Buckingham—

Buck What my gracious lord? 90

Prince An if I live until I be a man,

I'll win our ancient right in France again,

Or die a soldier, as I lived a king

Glou *[Aside]* Short summers lightly have a forward spring

Enter young YORK, HASTINGS and the CARDINAL

Buck Now in good time here comes the Duke of York

Prince Richard of York! how fares our loving brother?

York Well my dread lord, so must I call you now

Prince Ay brother to our grief as it is yours
Too late he died that might have kept that title
Which by his death hath lost much majesty 100

Glou How fares our cousin noble Lord of York?

York I thank you gentle uncle O my lord
You said that idle weeds are fast in growth
The prince my brother hath outgrown me far

Glouc He hath my lord

York And therefore is he idle³

Glouc O my fair cousin I must not say so

York Then he is more beholding to you than I

Glouc He may command me as my sovereign
But you have power in me as in a kinsman

York I pray you uncle give me this dagger

Glouc My dagger little cousin³ with all my heart

Prince A beggar brother³

York Of my kind uncle that I know will give
And being but a toy which is no grief to give

Glouc A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin

York A greater gift! O that's the sword to it

Glouc Ay gentle cousin were it light enough

York O then, I see you will part but with light gifts

In weightier things you'll say a beggar nay

Glouc It is too heavy for your Grace to wear

York I weigh it lightly were it heavier

Glouc What would you have my weapons little lord³

York I would that I might thank you as you call me

Glouc How³

York Little

Prince My Lord of York will still be cross in talk

Uncle your Grace knows how to bear with him

York You mean, to bear me not to bear with me

Uncle my brother mocks both you and me

Because that I am little like an ape

He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders

Buck [A *de* to Hastings] With what a sharp-provided wit he reasons!

To mutt gate the scorn he gives his uncle

He prettily and aptly taunts himself

So cunning, and so cunning is wonderful

Glouc My lord will please you pass along³

Myself and my good cousin Buck in ham

Will to your mother to entreat of her

To meet you at the Tower and welcome you

York What will you go unto the Tower my lord³

Prince My Lord Protector need'st will have it so

York I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower

Glouc Why what should I fear³

York Marry my uncle Clarence angry ghost

My grandam told me he was murdered there

Prince I fear no uncles dead

Glouc Nor none that live I hope

Prince An if they live I hope I need not fear

But come my lord and with a heavy heart

Thinking on them go I unto the Tower 150

[A *Sennet* *Exeunt* all but *GLOUCESTER*
BUCKINGHAM and *CATESBY*

Back Thank you my lord this little prating

York

Was not incensed by his subtle mother

To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously³

Glouc No doubt no doubt O tis a parlous boy

Bold quick ingenious forward capable

He is all the mother's from the top to toe

Buck Well let them rest Come hither Catesby

Thou art sworn as deeply to effect what we intend

As closely so conceal what we impart

Thou know at our reasons urged upon the way

What think at thou³ is it not an easy matter 161

To make William Lord Hastings of our mind

For the instalment of this noble duke

In the seat royal of this famous isle³

Cate He for his father's sake so loves the

Prince

That he will not be won to aught against him

Buck What think at thou then of Stanley³

what will he³

Cate He will do all in all as Hastings doth

Buck Well then no more but thus go gentle

Catesby

And as it were far off sound thou Lord Hastings

How he doth stand affected to our purpose 171

And summon him to-morrow to the Tower

To sit about the coronation

If thou dost find him tractable to us

Encourage him and show him all our reasons

If he be leaden icy-cold unwilling

Be thou so too and so break off your talk

And give us notice of his inclination

For we to-morrow hold divided councils

Wherein thyself shalt highly be employed 180

Glouc Commend me to Lord William tell him

Catesby

His ancient knot of dangerous adventures

To-morrow are let I load at Pomfret castle

And bid my friend for joy of this good news

Give Mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more

Buck Good Catesby go effect this business soundly

Cate My good lords both with all the heed I may

Glouc Shall we hear from you Catesby ere we sleep³

Cate You shall my lord

Glouc At Crosby Place there shall you find us

both [Exit CATESBY] 190

Buck Now, my lord, what shall we do if we perceive

Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots?
Glou Chop off his head, man somewhat we will do

And, look, when I am king claim thou of me
The earldom of Hereford, and the moveables
Whereof the King my brother stood possess'd
Buck I'll claim that promise at your Grace's hands

Glou And look to have it yielded with all willingness

Come, let us sup betimes, that afterwards
We may digest our complots in some form 200
[Exeunt]

SCENE II Before Lord Hastings' house

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess What ho! my lord!

Hast [Within] Who knocks at the door?

Mess A messenger from the Lord Stanley

Enter LORD HASTINGS

Hast What is t o'clock?

Mess Upon the stroke of four

Hast Cannot thy master sleep these tedious nights?

Mess So it should seem by that I have to say

First, he commends him to your noble lordship

Hast And then?

Mess And then he sends you word 10

He dreamt to-night the boar had razed his helm

Besides, he says there are two councils held,

And that may be determined at the one
Which may make you and him to rue at the other

Therefore he sends to know your lordship's pleasure,

If presently you will take horse with him
And with all speed post with him toward the north

To shun the danger that his soul divides

Hast Go, fellow, go return unto thy lord

Bid him not fear the separated councils 20

His honour and my self are at the one

And at the other is my servant Catesby

Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us

Whereof I shall not have intelligence

Tell him his fears are shallow wanting instance

And for his dreams I wonder he is so fond

To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers

To fly the boar before the boar pursues

Were to incense the boar to follow us

And make pursuit where he did mean no chase 30

Go bid thy master rise and come to me

And we will both together to the Tower

Where he shall see the boar will use us kindly

Mess My gracious lord I'll tell him what
you say [Exit]

Enter CATESBY

Cate Many good morrows to my noble lord!

Hast Good morrow Catesby, you are early stirring

What news what news, in this our tottering state?

Cate It is a reeling world indeed my lord,
And I believe twill never stand upright

Till Richard wear the garland of the realm 40

Hast How! wear the garland! dost thou mean the crown?

Cate Ay my good lord

Hast I'll have this crown of mine cut from my shoulders

Ere I will see the crown so foul misplaced

But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it?

Cate Ay, on my life, and hopes to find you forward

Upon his party for the gain thereof

And thereupon he sends you this good news,

That this same very day your enemies 49

The kindred of the Queen must die at Pomfret

Hast Indeed I am no mourner for that news,

Because they have been still mine enemies

But, that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,

To bar my master's heirs in true descent,

God knows I will not do it, to the death

Cate God keep your lordship in that gracious mind!

Hast But I shall laugh at this a twelve month hence,

That they who brought me in my master's hate,

I live to look upon their tragedy

I tell thee, Catesby— 60

Cate What, my lord?

Hast Ere a fortnight make me elder,

I'll send some packing that yet think not on it

Cate 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,

When men are unprepared and look not for it

Hast O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls it out

With Rivers, Vaughan Grey and so twill do

With some men else who think themselves as safe

As thou and I who as thou knowst are dear

To princely Richard and to Buckingham 70

Cate The Princes both make high account of you

[Aside] For they account his head upon the bridge

Hast I know they do and I have well deserved it

Enter LORD STANLEY

Come on come on where is your boar spear man?

Fear you the boar and go so unprovided?
Stan My lord good morrow good morrow
 Catesby

You may jest on but by the holy rood
 I do not like these several councils I

Hast My lord
 I hold my life as dear as you do yours
 And never in my life I do protest
 Was it more precious to me than tis now
 Think you but that I know our state secure
 I would be so triumphant as I am?

Stan The lords at Pomfret when they rode
 from London

Were jocund and supposed their state was
 sure

And they indeed had no cause to mistrust
 But yet you see how soon the day o'ercast
 This sudden stab of rancour I misdoubt

Pray God I say I prove a needless coward?
What shall we toward the Tower? the day is
 spent

Hast Come come have with you Wot you
 what my lord?

To-day the lords you talk of are beheaded

Stan They for their truth might better wear
 their heads

Than some that have accused them wear their
 hats

But come my lord let us away

Enter a PLURIBANT

Hast Go on before I'll talk with this good
 fellow {*Exeunt STANLEY and CATESBY*
 How now sirrah how goes the world with thee?

Puts The better that your lordship please
 to ask

Hast I tell thee man, tis better with me now
 Than when I met thee last where now we meet

Then was I going prisoner to the Tower

By the suggestion of the Queen's allies

But now I tell thee—keep it to thyself—

This day those enemies are put to death

And I in better state than ere I was

Puts God hold it to your honour a good
 content

Hast Gramercy fellow there drink that for
 me {*Throes him his purse*}

Puts God save your lordship! {*Exit*

Enter a PRIEST

Priest Well met my lord I am glad to see
 your honour

Hast I thank thee good Sir John with all my
 heart

I am in your debt for your last exercise

Come the next Sabbath and I will content you
He whispers in his ear

Enter BUCKINGHAM

Buck What talking with a priest Lord
 Chamberlain?

Your friends at Pomfret they do need the
 priest

Your honour hath no shriving work in hand

Hast Good faith and when I met this holy man

Those men you talk of came into my mind

What go you toward the Tower?

Buck I do my lord but long I shall not stay

I shall return before your lordship thence

Hast Tis like enough for I stay dinner there

Buck {*As it*} And supper too although thou
 knowst it not

Come will you go?

Hast I'll wait upon your lordship {*Exeunt*

SCENE III Pomfret Castle

*Enter SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF with halberds carry-
 ing RIVERS GREY and VAUGHAN to death*

Rat Come bring forth the prisoners

Riv Sir Richard Ratcliff let me tell thee this

To-day shalt thou behold a subject die

For truth for duty and for loyalty

O ye God keep the Prince from all the pack
 of you!

A knot you are of damned blood suckers

I aug' You live that shall cry woe for this
 hereafter

Rat Dispatch the limit of your lives is out

Riv O Pomfret Pomfret! O thou bloody
 prison

Fatal and ominous to noble peers!

Within the guilty closure of thy walls

Richard the Second here was hack'd to death

And for more slander to thy dismal seat

We give thee up our guiltless blood to drink

Gr'y Now Margaret's curse is fall'n upon our
 heads

For standing by when Richard stabb'd her son

Riv Then cursed she Hastings then cursed
 she Buckingham

Then cursed she Richard O remember God

To hear her prayers for them as now for us!

And for my sister and her princely sons

Be satisfied dear God with our true blood

Which as thou knowst unjustly must be spilt

Rat Make haste the hour of death is expiate

Riv Come Grey come Vaughan let us all
 embrace

80

90

99

{*Exit*

110

And take our leave, until we meet in heaven

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *The Tower of London*

Enter BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, the BISHOP OF ELY, RATCLIFF, LOVEL, with others, and take their seats at a table

Hast My lords, at once the cause why we are met

Is to determine of the coronation

In God's name speak when is the royal day?

Buck Are all things fitting for that royal time?

Stan It is, and wants but nomination

Ely To-morrow, then I judge a happy day

Buck Who knows the Lord Protector's mind herein?

Who is most inward with the noble Duke?

Ely Your Grace, we think, should soonest know his mind

Buck Who, I, my lord? we know each other's faces 10

But for our hearts, he knows no more of mine,

Than I of yours,

Nor I no more of his, than you of mine

Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love

Hast I thank his Grace, I know he loves me well,

But for his purpose in the coronation

I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd

His gracious pleasure any way therein

But you my noble lords may name the time, 20

And in the Duke's behalf I'll give my voice,

Which, I presume, he'll take in gentle part

Enter GLOUCESTER

Ely Now in good time, here comes the Duke himself

Glou My noble lords and cousins all good morrow

I have been long a sleeper but, I hope

My absence doth neglect no great designs

Which by my presence might have been concluded

Buck Had not you come upon your cue, my lord,

William Lord Hastings had pronounced your part—

I mean your voice—for crowning of the King

Glou Than my Lord Hastings no man might be bolder, 30

His lordship knows me well and loves me well

Hast I thank your Grace

Glou My lord of Ely?

Ely My lord?

Glou When I was last in Holborn

I saw good strawberries in your garden there

I do beseech you send for some of them

Ely Marry, and will, my lord with all my heart [Exit

Glou Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you *Drawing him aside*

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business,

And finds the testy gentleman so hot,

As he will lose his head ere give consent 40

His master's son as worshipful he terms it

Shall lose the royalty of England's throne

Buck Withdraw you hence, my lord, I'll follow you

[Exit GLOUCESTER, BUCKINGHAM following]

Stan We have not yet set down this day of triumph

To-morrow, in mine opinion, is too sudden

For I myself am not so well provided

As else I would be were the day prolong'd

Re-enter BISHOP OF ELY

Ely Where is my Lord Protector? I have sent for these strawberries

Hast His Grace looks cheerfully and smooth to-day 50

There's some conceit or other likes him well,

When he doth bid good morrow with such a spirit

I think there's never a man in Christendom

That can less hide his love or hate than he,

For by his face straight shall you know his heart

Stan What of his heart perceive you in his face

By any likelihood he shew'd to-day?

Hast Marry that with no man here he is offended,

For were he he had shown it in his looks

Stan I pray God he be not, I say 60

Re-enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM

Glou I pray you all tell me what they deserve

That do conspire my death with devilish plots

Of damned witchcraft and that have prevail'd

Upon my body with their hellish charms?

Hast The tender love I bear your Grace my lord

Makes me most forward in this noble presence

To doom the offenders whatsoever they be

I say my lord they have deserved death

Glou Then be your eyes the witness of this ill

See how I am bewitch'd behold mine arm 70

Is like a blasted sapling wither'd up

And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous

witch

Consorted with that harlot strumpet Shore,

That by their witchcraft thus have mark'd me

Hast If they have done this thing my gracious

lord—

Glou If thou protector of this damned
strumpet

Tellest thou me of ifs? Thou art a traitor
Off with his head! Now by Saint Paul I swear
I will not dine until I see the same
Love! and Ratcliff! look that it be done 80
The rest that love me rise and follow me

[*Exeunt all but HASTINGS, RATCLIFF and LOVE.*]

Hast Woe woe for England! not a whit for me
For I too fond might have prevented this
Stanley did dream the boar did raze his helm
But I disdain'd it and did scorn to fly
Three times to-day my foot cloth horse did
stumble

And startled when he look'd upon the Tower
As loath to bear me to the slaughter house
O now I want the priest that spake to me
I now repent I told the pursuivant 90
As were triumphing at mine enemies
How they at Pomfret bloodily were butcher'd
And I myself secure in grace and favour
O Margaret Margaret now thy heavy curse
Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head!

Rat Dispatch my lord the Duke would be at
dinner

Make a short shrift he longs to see your head
Hast O momentary grace of mortal men
Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!
Who builds his hopes in air of your good looks
Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast 101
Ready with every nod to tumble down
Into the fatal bowels of the deep

Love Come come dispatch tis bootless to
exclaim

Hast O bloody Richard! miserable England!
I prophesy the fearfullest time to thee
That ever wretched age hath look'd upon
Come lead me to the block bear him my head
They smile at me that shortly shall be dead

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE V The Tower-walls

*Enter GLOUCESTER and BLACKINGHAM in tattered
armour, marvellous ill favoured*

Glou Come cousin canst thou quake and
change thy colour

Murder thy breath in middle of a word
And then begin again, and stop again
As if thou wert distraught and mad with terror?

Buck Tut I can counterfeite the deep tragedian
Speak and look back and pry on every side
Tremble and start at wagging of a straw
Intending deep suspicion ghastly looks
Are at my service, like enforced smiles
And both are ready in their offices 10
At any time to grace my stratagems

But what is Catesby gone?

Glou He is and see he brings the Mayor
along

Enter the MAYOR and CATESBY

Buck Lord mayor—

Glou Look to the drawbridge there!

Buck Hark! a drum

Glou Catesby o'erlook the walls

Buck Lord Mayor the reason we have sent—

Glou Look back defend thee here are enemies

Buck God and our innocency defend and
guard us! 20

Glou Be patient they are friends Ratcliff and
Love!

Enter LOVE and RATCLIFF with HASTINGS head

Love Here is the head of that ignoble traitor

The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings

Glou So dear I loved the man that I must
weep

I took him for the plainest harmless creature
That breathed upon this earth a Christian
Made him my book wherein my soul recorded
The history of all her secret thoughts
So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue
That his apparent open guilt omitted 30
I mean his conversation with Shore's wife
He lived from all attainder of suspect

Buck Well well he was the covert shelter'd
traitor

That ever lived

Would you imagine or almost believe
Were't not that by great preservation
We live to tell it you the subtle traitor
This day had plotted in the council house
To murder me and my good Lord of Gloucester?

May What had he so? 40

Glou What think you we are Turks or infidels?

Or that we would against the form of law
Proceed thus rashly to the villain's death
But that the extreme peril of the case
The peace of England and our persons safely
Enforced us to this execution?

May Now fair befall you! he deserved his
death

And you my good lords both have well proceeded
To warn false traitors from the like attempts
I never look'd for better at his hands 50

After he once fell in with Mistress Shore

Glou Yet had not we determined he should die
Until your lordship came to see his death
Which now the loving haste of these our friends
Somewhat against our meaning have prevented
Because my lord we would have had you heard
The traitor speak and tumourously confess

The manner and the purpose of his treason,
That you might well have signified the same
Unto the citizens who haply may
Misconstrue us in him and wail his death
May But, my good lord, your Grace's word
shall serve

As well as I had seen and heard him speak
And doubt you not, right noble princes both,
But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens
With all your just proceedings in this cause
Glow And to that end we wish'd your lordship
here

To avoid the carping censures of the world
Buck But since you come too late of our intents,
Yet witness what you hear we did intend
And so, my good Lord Mayor, we bid farewell

[Exit MAYOR]

Glow Go, after after, cousin Buckingham
The Mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all
post

There at your meet'st advantage of the time
Infer the bastardy of Edward's children
Tell them how Edward put to death a citizen
Only for saying he would make his son
Heir to the crown, meaning indeed his house,
Which by the sign thereof, was termed so
Moreover, urge his hateful luxury,
And bestial appetite in change of lust
Which stretched to their servants' daughters,
wives,

Even where his lustful eye or savage heart,
Without control listed to make his prey
Nay for a need thus far come near my person
Tell them, when that my mother went with child
Of that unsatiate Edward noble York
My princely father then had wars in France,
And by just computation of the time
Found that the issue was not his begot,
Which well appeared in his lineaments
Being nothing like the noble Duke my father
But touch this sparingly as twere far off
Because you know, my lord, my mother lives

Buck Fear not, my lord, I'll play the orator
As if the golden fee for which I plead
Were for my self and so my lord adieu

Glow If you thrive well bring them to
Baynard's Castle,
Where you shall find me well accompanied
With reverend fathers and well learned bishops
Buck I go and towards three or four o'clock
Look for the news that the Guildhall affords

[Exit]

Glow Go Lovel with all speed to Doctor
Shaw
[To CATESBY] Go thou to Friar Penker, bid
them both

Meet me within this hour at Baynard's Castle
[Exit all but GLOUCESTER]
Now will I in, to take some privy order,
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight,
And to give notice that no manner of person
At any time have recourse unto the princes [Exit]

SCENE VI The same a street

Enter a SCRIVENER, with a paper in his hand

Scrv This is the indictment of the good Lord
Hastings,

Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd
That it may be this day read o'er in Paul's
And mark how well the sequel hangs together
Eleven hours I spent to write it over,
For yesternight by Catesby was it brought me,
The precedent was full as long a doing
And yet within these five hours lived Lord
Hastings

Untainted unexamined free, at liberty
Here's a good world the while! Why who's so
gross

That seeth not this palpable device?
Yet who's so blind but says he sees it not?
Bad is the world, and all will come to nought
When such bad dealing must be seen in thought

[Exit]

SCENE VII Baynard's Castle

Enter GLOUCESTER and BUCKINGHAM, at several doors

Glow How now, my lord, what say the citizens?

Buck Now by the holy mother of our Lord,
The citizens are mum and speak not a word
Glow Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's
children?

Buck I did with his contract with Lady
Lucy

And his contract by deputy in France,
The insatiate greediness of his desires,
And his enforcement of the city wits
His tyranny for trifles his own bastardy,
As being got your father then in France
And his resemblance being not like the duke
Withal I did infer your lineaments
Being the right idea of your father
Both in your form and nobleness of mind,
Laid open all your victories in Scotland
Your discipline in war wisdom in peace,
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility,
Indeed left nothing fitting for the purpose
Untouch'd or slightly handled in discourse
And when mine oratory grew to an end
I bid them that did love their country's good
Cry 'God save Richard England's royal king!'
Glow Ah! and did they so?

Buck No so God help me they spake not a word

But like dumb statues or breathing stones
Gazed each on other and look'd deadly pale
Which when I saw I reprehended them
And ask'd the May or what meant this wilful
silence

His answer was the people were not wont
To be spoke to but by the Recorder
Then he was urged to tell my tale again

30

Thus saith the Duke thus hath the Duke
inferred

But nothing spake in warrant from himself
When he had done some followers of mine own,
At the lower end of the hall hurl'd up their caps
And some ten voices cried Ood save King
Richard!

And thus I took the vantage of those few

Thanks gentle citizens and friends quoth I
This general applause and loving shout

39

Argues your wisdoms and your love to Richard
And even here brake off and came away

Glou What tongueless blocks were they?
would they not speak?

Buck No by my troth my lord

Glou Will not the May or then and his
brethren come?

Buck The May or is here at hand intend
some fear

Be not you spoke with but by mighty suit
And look you get a prayer book in your hand
And stand between two churchmen good my lord
For on that ground I'll build a holy descent
And be not easily won to our request

50

Play the maid's part still answer nay and take it

Glou I go and if you plead as well for them
As I can say nay to thee for my self

No doubt we'll bring it to a happy issue

Buck Go go up to the leads the lord Mayor
knocks [Exit GLOUCESTER]

Enter the Mayor and Citizens

Welcome my lord I dance attendance here
I think the Duke will not be spoke withal

Enter CATESBY

Here comes his servant how now Catesby
What says he?

Cate My lord he doth entreat your Grace
To visit him to-morrow or next day
He is within with two or three reverend fathers
Discreetly bent to meditate
And in no worldly suit would he be moved
To draw him from his holy exercise

60

Buck Return good Catesby to thy lord again
Tell him my self the May or and citizens
In deep desires and matters of great moment

No less importing than our general good
Are come to have some conference with his
Grace

Cate I'll tell him what you say my lord 70
[Exit]

Buck Ah ha my lord this prince is not an
Edward!

He is not lolling on a lewd day bed
But on his knees at meditation
Not dallying with a brace of courtizans
But meditating with two deep divines
Not sleeping to engross his idle body
But praying to enrich his watchful soul
Happy were England would this gracious prince
Take on himself the sovereignty thereof
But sure I fear we shall ne'er win him to it 80
May Marry God forbid his Grace should say
us nay!

Buck I fear he will

Re-enter CATESBY

How now Catesby what says your lord?

Cate My lord
He wonders to what end you have assembled
Such troops of citizens to speak with him
His Grace not being warn'd thereof before
My lord he fears you mean no good to him

Buck Sorry I am my noble cousin should
Suspect me that I mean no good to him
By heaven I come in perfect love to him 90
And so once more return and tell his Grace

[Exit CATESBY]

When holy and devout religious men
Are at their beads 'tis hard to draw them thence
So sweet is zealous contemplation

*Enter GLOUCESTER aloft between two bishops
CATESBY returns*

May See where he stands between two
clergymen!

Buck Tis of rops of virtue for a Christian
prince

To stay him from the fall of vanity
And see a book of prayer in his hand
True ornaments to know a holy man
Famous Plantagenet most gracious prince 100
Lend favourable ears to our request
And pardon us this interruption

Of thy devotion and right Christian zeal
Glou My lord there needs no such apology
I rather do beseech you pardon me
When earnest in the service of my God
Neglect the visitation of my friends

But leaving this what is your Grace's pleasure?
Buck Even that I hope which pleaseth God
above

And all good men of this ungovern'd isle 110

Glou I do suspect I have done some offence
That seems disgracious in the city's eyes,
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance

Buck You have my lord would it might
please your Grace,

At our entreaties to amend that fault!

Glou Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian
land?

Buck Then know, it is your fault that you
resign

The supreme seat the throne majestical,
The scepter'd office of your ancestors
Your state of fortune and your due of birth, 120

The lineal glory of your royal house,
To the corruption of a blemish'd stock
Whilst in the midst of your sleepy thoughts,

Which here we waken to our country's good,
This noble isle doth want her proper limbs,

Her face defaced with scars of infamy,
Her royal stock grafted with ignoble plants,

And almost shoulder'd in the swallowing gulf
Of blind forgetfulness and dark oblivion

Which to recure we heartily solicit 130

Your gracious self to take on you the charge

And kingly government of this your land,

Not as protector, steward substitute,

Or lowly factor for another's gain

But as successively from blood to blood

Your right of birth, your empery, your own

For this consorted with the citizens,

Your very worshipful and loving friends,

And by their vehement instigation

In this just suit come I to move your Grace 140

Glou I know not whether to depart in silence,

Or bitterly to speak in your reproof

Best fitteth my degree or your condition

If not to answer, you might haply think

Tongue tired ambition not replying yielded

To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,

Which fondly you would here impose on me,

If to reprove you for this suit of yours

So season'd with your faithful love to me

Then on the other side I check'd my friends 151

Therefore to speak and to avoid the last,

Definitively thus I answer you

Your love deserves my thanks but my desert

Unmeritable shuns your high request

First, if all obstacles were cut away

And that my path were even to the crown

As my ripe revenue and due by birth

Yet so much is my poverty of spirit 160

So mighty and so many my defects

As I had rather hide me from my greatness,

Being a bark to brook no mighty sea

Than in my greatness coveit to be hid,
And in the vapour of my glory smother'd
But, God be thanked, there's no need of me,
And much I need to help you if need were,
The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,
Which mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,
Will well become the seat of majesty,
And make no doubt, us happy by his reign 170
On him I lay what you would on me
The right and fortune of his happy stars,
Which God defend that I should wring from him!
Buck My lord, this argues conscience in your
Grace

But the respects thereof are nice and trivial,
All circumstances well considered
You say that Edward is your brother's son
So say we too but not by Edward's wife,
For first he was contract to Lady Lucy—
Your mother lives a witness to that vow— 180
And afterward by substitute betroth'd
To Bona sister to the King of France
These both put by a poor petitioner,
A care-crazed mother of a many children,
A beauty waning and distressed widow,
Even in the afternoon of her best days
Made prize and purchase of his lustful eye,
Seduced the pitch and height of all his thoughts
To base declension and loathed bigamy
By her, in his unlawful bed, he got 190
This Edward, whom our manners term the
Prince

More bitterly could I expostulate
Save that for reverence to some alive,
I give a sparing limit to my tongue
Then good my lord take to your royal self
This proffer'd benefit of dignity
If not to bless us and the land withal,
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry
From the corruption of abusing times
Unto a lineal true-derived course 200

May Do, good my lord, your citizens entreat
you

Buck Refuse not, mighty lord this proffer'd
love

Cate O make them joyful grant their lawful
suit!

Glou Alas, why would you heap these cares
on me?

I am unfit for state and majesty

I do beseech you take it not amiss

I cannot nor I will not yield to you

Buck If you refuse it—as in love and zeal

Loath to depose the child your brother's son,

As well we know your tenderness of heart 210

And gentle kind effeminate remorse

Which we have noted in you to your kin,

And egally indeed to all estates—
 Yet whether you accept our suit or no
 Your brother's son shall never reign our king
 But we will plant some other in the throne
 To the disgrace and downfall of your house
 And in this resolution here we leave you
 Come citizens, hounds! I'll entreat no more
Glou O do not swear my lord of Buckingham
 [Exit BUCKINGHAM with the Citizens]

Cate Call them again my lord and accept
 their suit 221
Another Do good my lord lest all the land
 do rue it
Glou Would you enforce me to a world of
 care?

Well call them again I am not made of stones
 But penetrable to your kind entreats
 Albeit against my conscience and my soul

Re-enter BUCKINGHAM and the rest

Cousin of Buckingham and you sage grave
 men
 Since you will buckle fortune on my back
 To bear her burthen whether I will or no
 I must have patience to endure the load 230
 But if black scandal or foul faced reproach
 Attend the sequel of your imposition
 Your mere enforcement shall acquittance me
 From all the impure blots and stains thereof
 For God he knows and you may partly see
 How far I am from the desire thereof
 May God bless your Grace! we see it and will
 say it

Glou In saying so you shall but say the truth
Buck Then I salute you with this kindly title
 Long live Richard England's royal king! 240
May and Cit Amen

Buck To-morrow will I please you to be
 crown'd?
Glou Even when you please since you will
 have it so
Buck To-morrow then we will attend your
 Grace

And so most joyfully we take our leave
Glou Come let us to our holy task again
 Farewell good cousin farewell gentle friends
 [Exeunt]

ACT IV

SCENE I Before the Tower

Enter on one side QUEEN ELIZABETH DUCHESS OF
 YORK and MARQUESS OF DORSET *on the other*
 ANNE, DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER leading LADY
 MARGARET PLANTAGENET Clarence's young
 Daughter

Duch Who meets us here? my niece Plantagenet
 Led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloucester?
 Now for my life she's wandering to the Tower
 On pure heart's love to greet the tender princes
 Daughter well met

Anne God give your Graces both
 A happy and a joyful time of day!

Q Eli As much to you good sister! Whither
 away?

Anne No farther than the Tower and as I
 guess

Upon the like devotion as yourselves

To gratulate the gentle princes there

Q Eli Kind sister thanks we'll enter all
 together

Enter BRAKENBURY

And in good time here the lieutenant comes
 Master lieutenant pray you fly your leave
 How doth the Prince and my young son of York?

Brak Right well dear madam By your
 patience

I may not suffer you to visit them

The king hath straitly charged the contrary

Q Eli The king? why who's that?

Brak I cry you mercy I mean the Lord
 Protector

Q Eli The Lord protect him from that kindly
 title! 20

Hath he set bounds betwixt their love and me?

I am their mother who should keep me from
 them?

Duch I am their father's mother I will see
 them

Anne Their aunt I am in law in love their
 mother

Then bring me to their sights I'll bear thy
 blame

And take thy office from thee on my peril

Brak No madam no I may not leave it so
 I am bound by oath and therefore pardon me
 [Exit]

Enter LORD STANLEY

Stan Let me but meet you ladies one hour
 hence

And I'll salute your Grace of York as mother 30
 And reverend looker on of two fair queens

[To Anne] Come madam you must straight to
 Westminster

There to be crown'd Richard's royal queen

Q Eli O cut my lace in sunder that my pent
 heart

May have some scope to beat or else I swoon
 With this dead killing news!

Anne Despiteful tidings! O displeasing news!

Dor Be of good cheer mother, how fares your Grace?

Q Eliz O Dorset, speak not to me get thee hence!

Death and destruction dog thee at the heels, 40

Thy mother's name is ominous to children
If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas
And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell
Go, hie thee, hie thee from this slaughter house,
Lest thou increase the number of the dead
And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse
Nor mother, wife nor England's counted queen
Stan Full of wise care is this your counsel,

madam
Take all the swift advantage of the hours,
You shall have letters from me to my son 50
To meet you on the way and welcome you
Be not so tardy by unwise delay

Duch O ill-dispersing wind of misery!
O my accursed womb, the bed of death!
A cockatrice hast thou hatch'd to the world,
Whose unavowed eye is murderous
Stan Come, madam, come, I in all haste was sent

Anne And I in all unwillingness will go
I would to God that the inclusive verge 60
Of golden metal that must round my brow
Were red hot steel to sear me to the brain!
Anointed let me be with deadly venom
And die ere men can say, 'God save the Queen!'

Q Eliz Go, go, poor soul I envy not thy glory,
To feed my humour, wish thyself no harm

Anne No! why? When he that is my husband now

Came to me as I follow'd Henry's corse
When scarce the blood was well wash'd from his hands

Which issued from my other angel husband
And that dead saint which then I weeping follow'd

O when I say I look'd on Richard's face 71
This was my wish "Be thou" quoth I
"accursed,

For making me so young so old a widow!

And when thou wedst let sorrow haunt thy bed
And be thy wife—if any be so mad—

As miserable by the life of thee
As thou hast made me by my dear lord's death!

Lo ere I can repeat this curse again
Even in so short a space my woman's heart 80
Grossly grew captive to his honey words
And prov'd the subject of my own soul's curse
Which ever since hath kept my eyes from rest
For never yet one hour in his bed
Have I enjoy'd the golden dew of sleep
But have been wak'd by his timorous dreams

Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick
And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me

Q Eliz Poor heart, adieu! I pity thy complaining

Anne No more than from my soul I mourn for yours

Q Eliz Farewell, thou woeful welcomer of glory! 90

Anne Adieu, poor soul that takest thy leave of it!

Duch [To *DORSET*] Go thou to Richmond and good fortune guide thee!

[To *ANNE*] Go thou to Richard, and good angels guard thee!

[To *QUEEN ELIZABETH*] Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts possess thee!

I to my grave where peace and rest lie with me!
Lighty odd years of sorrow have I seen

And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of teen

Q Eliz Stay, yet look back with me unto the Tower

Pity you ancient stones those tender babes
Whom envy hath unmured within your walls!
Rough cradle for such little pretty ones! 101
Rude ragged nurse old sullen playfellow
For tender princes use my babies well!

So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II London the place

Sennet Enter *RICHARD* in pomp crowned,
BUCKINGHAM *CATESBY* a PAGE and others

K Rich Stand all apart Cousin of Buckingham!
Buck My gracious sovereign?

K Rich Give me thy hand [Here he ascendeth his throne] Thus high by thy advice

And thy assistance in King Richard seated
But shall we wear these honours for a day?

Or shall they last and we rejoice in them?

Buck Still live they and for ever may they last!

K Rich O Buckingham now do I play the touch

To try if thou be current gold indeed
Young Edward lives think now what I would say 10

Buck Say on my loving lord

K Rich Why Buckingham I say I would be king

Buck Why so you are, my thrice renowned liege

K Rich Ha! am I king? tis so but Edward lives

Buck True noble prince

K Rich O bitter consequence,
That Edward still should live! True, noble prince!

Cousin thou wert not wont to be so dull
 Shall I be plain? I wish the bastards dead
 And I would have it suddenly perform'd
 What sayest thou? speak suddenly be brief 20

Buck Your Grace may do your pleasure

A Rich Tut tut thou art all ice thy kindness
 freezeeth

Say have I thy consent that they shall die?

Buck Give me some breath some little pause,
 my lord

Before I positively speak herein

I will resolve your Grace immediately [Exit

Cate [Aside to a stander by] The King is angry
 see he bites the lip

A Rich I will converse with iron-witted fools

And unrespective boys none are for me

That look into me with considerate eyes 30

How reaching Buckingham grows circumspect
 Boy

Lage My lord?

A Rich Knowst thou not any whom
 corrupting gold

Would tempt unto a close exploit of death?

Page My lord I know a discontented gentleman

Whose humble means match not his haughty
 mind

Gold were as good as twenty orators

And will no doubt tempt him to any thing

A Rich What is his name? 40

Page His name my lord is Tyrrel

A Rich I partly know the man go call him
 hither [Exit PAGE

The deep-revolving wily Buckingham

No more shall be the neighbour to my counsel

Hath he so long held out with me untired

And stops he now for breath?

Enter STANLEY

How now what news with you?

Stan My lord I hear the Marquis Dorset is fled

To Richmond, in those parts beyond the sea

Where he abides [Stands apart

A Rich Catesby?

Cate My lord? 50

A Rich Runnour it abroad

That Anne, my wife is sick and like to die

I will take order for her keeping close

Inquire me out some mean born gentleman,

Whom I will marry straight to Clarence

daughter

The boy is foolish and I fear not him

Look how thou dreamst! I say again give out

That Anne my wife is sick and like to die

About it for it stands me much upon 59

To stop all hopes whose growth may damage me

[Exit CATESBY

I must be married to my brother's daughter
 Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass
 Murder her brothers and then marry her!
 Uncertain way of gain! But I am in
 So far in blood that sin will pluck on sin
 Tear falling pity dwells not in this eye

Re-enter PAGE with TYRREL

Is thy name Tyrrel?

Tyr James Tyrrel and your most obedient
 subject

A Rich Art thou indeed?

Tyr Prove me my gracious sovereign

A Rich Darest thou resolve to kill a friend
 of mine? 70

Tyr Ay my lord

But I had rather kill two enemies

A Rich Why there thou hast two deep
 enemies

Foes to my rest and my sweet sleep's disturbers

Are they that I would have thee deal upon

Tyrrel I mean those bastards in the Tower

Tyr Let me have open means to come to them

And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them

A Rich Thou singst sweet music Hark come
 hither Tyrrel

Go by this token rise and lend thine ear 80
 [He whispers

There is no more but so say it is done

And I will love thee and prefer thee too

Tyr 'Tis done my gracious lord

A Rich Shall we hear from thee Tyrrel ere
 we sleep?

Tyr Ye shall my lord [Exit

Re-enter BUCKINGHAM

Buck My lord I have considered in my mind

The late demand that you did sound me in

A Rich Well let that pass Dorset is fled to
 Richmond

Buck I hear that news my lord

A Rich Stanley he is your wife's son well
 look to it 90

Buck My lord I claim your gift my due by
 promise

For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd

The earldom of Hereford and the moveables

The which you promised I should possess

A Rich Stanley look to your wife if she
 come

Letters to Richmond you shal answer it

Buck What says your Highness to my just
 demand?

A Rich As I remember Henry the Sixth

Did prophesy that Richmond should be king

When Richmond was a little peevish boy 100

A king perhaps, perhaps—

Buck My lord!

K Rich How chance the prophet could not at that time

Have told me, I being by that I should kill him?

Buck My lord, your promise for the earldom—

K Rich Richmond! When last I was at Exeter,
The mayor in courtesy show'd me the castle
And call'd it Rougemont at which name I started,

Because a bard of Ireland told me once,
I should not live long after I saw Richmond 110

Buck My lord!

K Rich Ay, what's o'clock?

Buck I am thus bold to put your Grace in mind
Of what you promised me

K Rich Well but what's o'clock?

Buck Upon the stroke of ten

K Rich Well, let it strike

Buck Why let it strike?

K Rich Because that like a Jack thou keep'st
the stroke

Between thy begging and my mediation

I am not in the giving vein to-day

Buck Why, then resolve me whether you will
or no 120

K Rich Tut tut,

Thou troublest me, I am not in the vein

[*Exeunt all but BUCKINGHAM*]

Buck Is it even so? rewards he my true service
With such deep contempt? made I him king for
this?

O let me think on Hastings, and be gone
To Brecknock while my fearful head is on!

[*Exit*]

SCENE III *The same*

Enter TYRREL

Tyr The tyrannous and bloody deed is done,
The most arch act of piteous massacre
That ever yet this land was guilty of
Dighton and Forrest whom I did suborn
To do this ruthless piece of butchery
Although they were flesh'd villains bloody dogs,
Melting with tenderness and kind compassion
Wept like two children in their deaths' sad
stories

"Lo thus, quoth Dighton, "lay those tender
babes

"Thus thus," quoth Forrest girdling one
another

Within their innocent alabaster arms
Their lips were four red roses on a stalk
Which in their summer beauty kiss'd each
other
A book of prayers on their pillow lay,

Which once," quoth Forrest "almost changed
my mind

But O! the devil —there the villain stopp'd,
Whilst Dighton thus told on We smothered
The most replenished sweet work of nature
That from the prime creation e'er she framed"
Thus both are gone with conscience and remorse,
They could not speak and so I left them both,
To bring this tidings to the bloody King
And here he comes

Enter KING RICHARD

All hail, my sovereign liege!

K Rich Kind Tyrrel am I happy in thy news?

Tyr If to have done the thing you gave in
charge

Beget your happiness be happy then,
For it is done, my lord

K Rich But didst thou see them dead?

Tyr I did, my lord

K Rich And buried gentle Tyrrel?

Tyr The chaplain of the Tower hath buried
them

But how or in what place I do not know 30

K Rich Come to me, Tyrrel soon at after
supper,

And thou shalt tell the process of their death.
Meantime but think how I may do thee good,
And be inheritor of thy desire

Farewell till soon [*Exit TYRREL*]

The son of Clarence have I pent up close,
His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage,
The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom,
And Anne my wife hath bid the world good
night

Now for I know the Breton Richmond aims 40
At young Elizabeth my brother's daughter
And by that knot looks proudly over the crown,
To her I go, a jolly thriving wooer

Enter RATCLIFF

Rat My lord!

K Rich Good news or bad that thou comest
in so bluntly?

Rat Bad news my lord Ely is fled to Richmond,
And Buckingham back'd with the hardy Welsh-
men

Is in the field and still his power increaseth

K Rich Ely with Richmond troubles me
more near

Than Buckingham and his rash levied army 50
Come I have heard that fearful commenting

Is leaden servitor to dull delay
Delay leads impotent and snail-paced beggary

Then fiery expedition be my wing
Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king!

Come muster men my counsel is my shield
We must be brief when traitors brave the field
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *Before the palace*

Enter QUEEN MARGARET

Q Mar So now prosperity begins to mellow
And drop into the rotten mouth of death
Here in these confines slyly have I hurl'd
To watch the waning of mine adversaries
A dire induction am I witness to
And will to France hoping the consequence
Will prove as bitter black and tragical
Withdraw thee wretched Margaret who comes
here?

Enter QUEEN ELIZABETH and the DUCHESS OF YORK

Q Elr Ah my young princes! ah my tender babes!
My unblown flowers new appearing sweets! 10
If yet your gentle souls fly in the air
And be not fix'd in doom perpetual
Hover about me with your airy wings
And hear your mother's lamentation!

Q Mar Hover about her say that right for
ribe
Hath dimm'd your infant morn to aged night
Duch So many miseries have crazed my voice
That my woe-vearied tongue is mute and dumb
Edw and Plantagenet why art thou dead?

Q Mar Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet
Edward for Edward pays a dying debt 21

Q Elr Wilt thou O God fly from such
gentle lambs
And throw them in the entrails of the wolf?
When didst thou sleep when such a deed was
done?

Q Mar When holy Harry died and my sweet
son

Duch Blind sight dead I see poor mortal
ling ghost
Woe's scene world's shame grieves due by
life usurp'd

Brief abstract and record of tedious days
Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth
Sitting down

Unlawfully made drunk with innocents' blood!

Q Elr O that thou wouldst as well afford a
grave 31

As thou canst yield a melancholy seat
Then would I hide my bones not rest them here
O who hath any cause to mourn but I?

Sitting down by her

Q Mar If ancient sorrow be most reverend
Give mine the benefit of senecy

And let my woes frown on the upper hand
If sorrow can admit society

Sitting down with them

Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine
I had an Edward till a Richard kill'd him 40
I had a Harry till a Richard kill'd him
Thou hadst an Edward till a Richard kill'd him
Thou hadst a Richard till a Richard kill'd him
Duch I had a Richard too and thou didst
kill him

I had a Rutland too thou help'dst to kill him

Q Mar Thou hadst a Clarence too and
Richard kill'd him

From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept
A hell hound that doth hunt us all to death
That dog that had his teeth before his eyes
To worry lambs and lap their gentle blood 50
That foul defacer of God's handiwork
That excellent grand tyrant of the earth
That reigns in gall'd eyes of weeping souls

Thy womb let loose to chase us to our graves
O upright just and true-disposing God
How do I thank thee that thus earnest cur
Preys on the issue of his mother's body
And makes her pew fellow with others' moan!

Duch O Harry's wife triumph not in my woes!
God witness with me I have wept for thine 60

Q Mar Bear with me I am hungry for revenge
And now I cloy me with beholding it

Thy Edward he is dead that stabb'd my Edward
Thy other Edward dead to quit my Edward
Young York he is but boot because both
they

Match not the high perfection of my loss
Thy Clarence he is dead that kill'd my Edward
And the beholders of this tragic play
The adulterate Hastings Rivers Vaughan,
Grey

Untimely smother'd in their dusky graves 70
Richard yet lives hell's black intelligencer

Only reserved their factor to buy souls
And send them thither but at hand at hand
Ensues his piteous and unpitied end
Earth gapes hell burns fiends roar saints pray
To have him suddenly convey'd away
Cancel his bond of life dear God I pray

That I may live to say The dog is dead
Q Elr O thou didst prophesy the time
would come

That I should wish for thee to help me curse 80
That bottled spider that foul bunch back'd toad!

Q Mar I call'd thee then vain flourish of my
fortune

I call'd thee then poor shadow painted queen
The presentation of but what I was
The flattering index of a direful pageant

One heaved a high to be hurl'd down below,
 A mother only mock'd with two sweet babes
 A dream of what thou wert, a breath a bubble,
 A sign of dignity, a garish flag,
 To be the aim of every dangerous shot,
 A queen in jest only to fill the scene
 Where is thy husband now? where be thy
 brothers?
 Where are thy children? wherein dost thou joy?
 Who sues to thee and cries "God save the
 Queen?"
 Where be the bending peers that flatter'd thee?
 Where be the thronging troops that follow'd thee?
 Decline all this, and see what now thou art
 For happy wife, a most distressed widow,
 For joyful mother, one that wails the name
 For queen, a very catiff crown'd with care 100
 For one being sued to, one that humbly sues,
 For one that scorn'd at me now scorn'd of me,
 For one being fear'd of all now fearing one,
 For one commanding all, obey'd of none
 Thus hath the course of justice wheel'd about,
 And left thee but a very prey to time,
 Having no more but thought of what thou wert,
 To torture thee the more, being what thou art
 Thou didst usurp my place and dost thou not
 Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow? 110
 Now thy proud neck bears half my burthen'd
 yoke,
 From which even here I slip my weary neck,
 And leave the burthen of it all on thee
 Farewell, York's wife, and queen of sad
 mischance
 These English woes will make me smile in
 France
Q Eliz O thou well skill'd in curses, stay
 awhile,
 And teach me how to curse mine enemies!
Q Mar Forbear to sleep the nights, and fast
 the days,
 Compare dead happiness with living woe
 Think that thy babes were fairer than they were 121
 And he that slew them fouler than he is
 Bettering thy loss makes the bad causer worse
 Revolving this will teach thee how to curse
Q Eliz My words are dull, O, quicken them
 with thine!
Q Mar Thy woes will make them sharp and
 pierce like mine [Exit
Duch Why should calamity be full of words?
Q Eliz Windy attorneys to their client woes
 Atry succeeders of intestate joys
 Poor breathing orators of miseries!
 Let them have scope though what they do
 impart 130
 Help not at all yet do they ease the heart

Duch If so then be not tongue tied go with me,
 And in the breath of bitter words let's smother
 My damned son which thy two sweet sons
 smother'd
 90 I hear his drum be copious in exclams

*Enter KING RICHARD, marching, with drums
 and trumpets*

K Rich Who intercepts my expedition?
Duch O she that might have intercepted thee,
 By strangling thee in her accursed womb
 From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast
 done!
Q Eliz Hidest thou that forehead with a
 golden crown, 140
 Where should be graven, if that right were right,
 The slaughter of the prince that owed that
 crown,
 And the dire death of my two sons and brothers?
 Tell me thou villain slave, where are my
 children?
Duch Thou toad thou toad where is thy
 brother Clarence?
 And little Ned Plantagenet his son?
Q Eliz Where is kind Hastings Rivers,
 Vaughan Grey?
K Rich A flourish, trumpets! strike alarum,
 drums!
 Let not the heavens hear these tell tale women
 Rail on the Lord's anointed strike I say! 150
Flourish Alarums
 Either be patient, and entreat me fair,
 Or with the clamorous report of war
 Thus will I drown your exclamations
Duch Art thou my son?
K Rich Ay, I thank God my father, and
 yourself
Duch Then patiently hear my impatience.
K Rich Madam I have a touch of your
 condition
 Which cannot brook the accent of reproof
Duch O let me speak!
K Rich Do then, but I'll not hear 159
Duch I will be mild and gentle in my speech
K Rich And brief good mother, for I am in
 haste
Duch Art thou so hasty? I have stay'd for thee,
 God knows in anguish pain and agony
K Rich And came I not at last to comfort you?
Duch No, by the holy rood, thou know'st it
 well
 Thou camest on earth to make the earth my hell
 A grievous burthen was thy birth to me
 Tetchy and awkward was thy infancy
 Thy school-days s frightful desperate wild and
 furious,

Thy prime of manhood darting bold and
venturous 170

Thy age confirm'd proud subtle bloody
treacherous

More mild but yet more harmful kind in hatred

What comfortable hour canst thou name

That ever graced me in thy company?

Rich Faith none but Humphrey Hour
that call'd your Grace

To breakfast once forth of my company

If I be so disgrac'd in your sight

Let me march on and not offend your Grace

Strike up the drum

Duch I prithee hear me speak

Rich You speak too bitterly

Duch Hear me a word 180

For I shall never speak to thee again

Rich So

Duch Either thou wilt die by God's just
ordinance

Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror

Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish

And never look upon thy face again

Therefore take with thee my most heavy curse

Which in the day of battle tire thee more

Than all the complete armour that thou wear'st

My prayers on the adverse party fight 190

And there the little sculs of Edw. and's children

Whisper the spirits of thine enemies

And promise them success and victory

Bloody thou art bloody wilt be thy end

Shame serves thy life and doth thy death attend

[Exit

Q Eli Though far more cause yet much less
spirit to curse

Abides in me I say amen to all

Rich Stay madam I must speak a word
with you

Q Eli I have no more sons of the royal
blood 199

For thee to murder for my daughters Richard

They shall be praying nuns not weeping queens

And therefore let's not to hit their lives

Rich You have a daughter call'd Elizabeth

Virtuous and fair royal and gracious

Q Eli And she must die for this? O let her
live

And I'll corrupt her manners stain her beauty

Slander myself as false to Edward's bed

Throw over her the veil of infamy

So she may live unscar'd of bleeding slau'ghter

I will confess she was not lady and a daughter

Rich Wrong not her birth she is of royal
blood 211

Q Eli To save her life I'll say she is not so

Rich Her life is only safest in her birth

Q Eli And only in that safety died her
brothers

Rich Lo at their births good stars were
opposite

Q Eli No to their lives bad friends were
contrary

Rich All unavoids is the doom of destiny

Q Eli True when avoided grace makes
destiny

My babes were destined to a fairer death

If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life 220

Rich You speak as if that I had slain my
cousins

Q Eli Cousins indeed and by their uncle
cozen'd

Of comfort kingdom kindred freedom life

Whose hand soever lanced their tender hearts

Thy head all indirectly gave direction

No doubt the murderous knife was dull and blunt

Till it was whetted on thy stone hard heart

To revel in the entrails of my lambs

But that still use of grief makes wild grief tame

My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys

Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes

And I in such a desperate bay of death

Like a poor bark of sails and racking reef

Rush all to pieces on thy rock bosom

Rich Madam so thrive I in my enterprise

And dangerous success of bloody wars

As I intend more good to you and yours

Than ever you or yours were by me wrong'd

Q Eli What good is cover'd with the face of
heaven

To be discover'd that can do me good? 240

Rich The advancement of your children
gentle lady

Q Eli Up to some scaffold there to lose
their heads?

Rich No to the dignity and height of
honour

The high imperial type of this earth's glory

Q Eli Flatter my sorrows with report of it

Tell me what state what dignity what honour

Canst thou denote to any child of mine?

Rich Even all I have yea and my self and
all

Will I withal endow a child of thine

So in the Lache of thy angry soul 250

Thou drown the sad remembrance of those

wrongs

Which thou supposest I have done to thee

Q Eli Be brief lest that the process of thy
kindness

Last longer telling than thy kinness date

Rich Then know that from my soul I love
thy daughter

Q Eliz My daughter's mother thinks it with
her soul

K Rich What do you think?

Q Eliz That thou dost love my daughter from
thy soul

So from thy soul's love didst thou love her
brothers, 259

And from my heart's love I do thank thee for it

K Rich Be not so hasty to confound my
meaning

I mean that with my soul I love thy daughter,
And mean to make her queen of England

Q Eliz Say then, who dost thou mean shall
be her king?

K Rich Even he that makes her queen who
should be else?

Q Eliz What, thou?

K Rich I even I what think you of it,
madam?

Q Eliz How canst thou woo her?

K Rich That would I learn of you,
As one that are best acquainted with her humour

Q Eliz And wilt thou learn of me?

K Rich Madam with all my heart 270

Q Eliz Send to her, by the man that slew her
brothers

A pair of bleeding hearts, thereon engrave
Edward and York, then haply she will weep
Therefore present to her—as sometime Margaret
Did to thy father, steep'd in Rutland's blood—
A handkerchief which, say to her, did drain
The purple sap from her sweet brother's body
And bid her dry her weeping eyes therewith
If this inducement force her not to love
Send her a story of thy noble acts 280

Tell her thou madest away her uncle Clarence
Her uncle Rivers yea and, for her sake

Madest quick conveyance with her good aunt
Anne

K Rich Come, come, you mock me this is
not the way

To win your daughter

Q Eliz There is no other way,

Unless thou couldst put on some other shape

And not be Richard that hath done all this

K Rich Say that I did all this for love of her

Q Eliz Nay, then indeed she cannot choose
but hate thee

Having bought love with such a bloody spoil

K Rich Look, what is done cannot be now
amended 291

Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes

Which after hours give leisure to repent

If I did take the kingdom from your sons

To make amends I'll give it to your daughter

If I have kill'd the issue of your womb

To quicken your increase I will beget
Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter
A grandam's name is little less in love

Than is the doting title of a mother 300

They are as children but one step below,

Even of your mettle, of your very blood,

Of all one pain, save for a night of groans

Endured of her, for whom you bid like sor-

row

Your children were vexation to your youth,

But mine shall be a comfort to your age

The loss you have is but a son being king,

And by that loss your daughter is made queen

I cannot make you what amends I would, 310

Therefore accept such kindness as I can

Dorset your son that with a fearful soul

Leads discontented steps in foreign soil

This fair alliance quickly shall call home

To high promotions and great dignity

The king, that calls your beauteous daughter

wife

Familiarly shall call thy Dorset brother,

Again shall you be mother to a king

And all the ruins of distressful times

Repair'd with double riches of content

What we have many goodly days to see 320

The liquid drops of tears that you have shed

Shall come again transform'd to orient pearl,

Advantaging their loan with interest

Of ten times double gain of happiness

Go then my mother to thy daughter go,

Make bold her bashful years with your

experience,

Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale

Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame

Of golden sovereignty acquaint the princess

With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys

And when this arm of mine hath chastised 331

The petty rebel dull brain'd Buckingham

Bound with triumphant garlands will I come

And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed,

To whom I will retail my conquest won

And she shall be sole victress Cæsar's Cæsar

Q Eliz What were I best to say? her father's

brother

Would be her lord? or shall I say, her uncle?

Or he that slew her brothers and her uncles?

Under what title shall I woo for thee 340

That God the law my honour and her love

Can make seem pleasing to her tender years?

K Rich Infer fair England's peace by this

alliance

Q Eliz Which she shall purchase with still

lasting war

K Rich Say that the king which may

entreats

Q Eli That at her hands which the king s
king forbids
A Rich Say she shall be a high and mighty
queen
Q Eli To wail the title as her mother doth
A Rich Say I will love her everlastingly
Q Eli But how long shall that title ever
last? 350

A Rich Sweetly in force unto her fair life s end
Q Eli But how long fairly shall her sweet
life last?
A Rich So long as heaven and nature lengthens
it

Q Eli So long as hell and Richard likes of it
A Rich Say I her sovereign am her subject
love

Q Eli But she your subject loathes such
sovereignty
A Rich Be eloquent in my behalf to her
Q Eli An honest tale speeds best being
plainly told

A Rich Then in plain terms tell her my
loving tale
Q Eli Plain and not honest is too harsh a
style 360

A Rich Your reasons are too shallow and too
quick
Q Eli O no my reasons are too deep and
dead

Too deep and dead poor infants in their grave
A Rich Harp not on that string madam that
is past

Q Eli Harp on it still shall I till heartstrings
break
A Rich Now by my George my Garter and
my crown—

Q Eli Profaned dishonour d and the third
usurp d
A Rich I swear—

Q Eli By nothing for this is no oath
The George profaned hath lost his holy honour
The Garter blenish d pawn d his knightly
virtue 370

The crown usurp d disgraced his kingly glory
If something thou wilt swear to be believed,
Swear then by something that thou hast not
wrong d

A Rich Now by the world—
Q Eli Tis full of thy foul wrongs

A Rich My father s death—
Q Eli Thy life hath that dishonour d

A Rich Then, by myself—
Q Eli Thyself thyself misuseth

A Rich Why then, by God—
Q Eli God s wrong is most of all

If thou hadst fear d to break an oath by Him,

The unity the king thy brother made
Had not been broken nor my brother slain 380
If thou hadst fear d to break an oath by Him
The imperial metal circling now thy brow
Had graced the tender temples of my child
And both the princes had been breathing here
Which now two tender playfellows for dust
Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms
What canst thou swear by now?

A Rich The time to come
Q Eli That thou hast wronged in the time
o erpast

For I myself have many tears wash 389
Hereafter time for time past wrong d by thee
The children live whose parents thou hast
slaughter d

Ungovern d youths to wail it in their age
The parents live whose children thou hast
butcher d
Old wither d plants to wail it with their age
Swear not by time to come for that thou hast
Misused ere used by time misused o erpast

A Rich As I intend to prosper and repent
So thrive I in my dangerous attempt
Of hostile arms! myself myself confound!
Heaven and fortune bar me happy hours! 400
Day yield me not thy light nor night thy rest!
Be opposite all planets of good luck

To my proceedings if with pure heart s love
Immaculate devotion holy thoughts
I tender not thy beauteous princely daughter!
In her consists my happiness and thine
Without her follows to this land and me
To thee herself and many a Christian soul
Death desolation ruin and decay

It cannot be avoided but by this 410
It will not be avoided but by this
Therefore good mother—I must call you so—
Be the attorney of my love to her
Plead what I will be not what I have been
Not my deserts but what I will deserve
Urge the necessity and state of times
And be not peevish fond in great designs

Q Eli Shall I be tempted of the devil thus?

A Rich Ay if the devil tempt thee to do good

Q Eli Shall I forget myself to be myself? 420

A Rich Ay if yourself s remembrance wrong
yourself

Q Eli But thou didst kill my children
A Rich But in your daughter s womb I bury
them

Where in that nest of spicery they shall breed
Selves of themselves to your recomforture

Q Eli Shall I go win my daughter to thy will?
A Rich And be a happy mother by the deed
Q Eli I go Write to me very shortly

And you shall understand from me her mind
K Rich Bear her my true love's kiss, and so,
 farewell [*Exit QUEEN ELIZABETH* 430
 Relenting fool, and shallow, changing woman!

Enter RATCLIFF, CATESBY following

How now! what news?

Rat My gracious sovereign, on the western coast

Rideth a puissant navy to the shore
 Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,
 Unarm'd, and unresolv'd to beat them back
 'Tis thought that Richmond is their admiral,
 And there they hull, expecting but the aid
 Of Buckingham to welcome them ashore

K Rich Some light-foot friend post to the
 Duke of Norfolk 440

Ratcliff thyself or Catesby, where is he?

Cate Here, my lord

K Rich Fly to the Duke [*To RATCLIFF*] Post
 thou to Salisbury

When thou comest thither—[*To CATESBY*] Dull,
 unmindful villain

Why stand'st thou still and go'st not to the
 Duke?

Cate First mighty sovereign let me know
 your mind,

What from your Grace I shall deliver to him

K Rich O, true good Catesby bid him levy
 straight

The greatest strength and power he can make,
 And meet me presently at Salisbury 450

Cate I go [*Exit*

Rat What is't your Highness' pleasure I shall do
 at Salisbury?

K Rich Why, what wouldst thou do there
 before I go?

Rat Your Highness told me I should post
 before

K Rich My mind is changed, sir, my mind is
 changed

Enter LORD STANLEY

How now, what news with you?

Stan None good my lord to please you with
 the hearing

Nor none so bad but it may well be told

K Rich I joy day, a riddle! neither good nor
 bad! 460

Why dost thou run so many mile about
 When thou may'st tell thy tale a nearer way?

Once more what news?

Stan Richmond is on the seas

K Rich There let him sink and be the seas on
 him!

White liver'd runagate, what doth he there?

Stan I know not mighty sovereign but by
 guess

K Rich Well sir, as you guess, as you guess?

Stan Sturr'd up by Dorset Buckingham and
 Ely,

He makes for England there to claim the crown

K Rich Is the chair empty? is the sword
 unsway'd? 470

Is the King dead? the empire unpossess'd?

What heir of York is there alive but we?

And who is England's king but great York's
 heir?

Then tell me what doth he upon the sea?

Stan Unless for that my liege I cannot guess

K Rich Unless for that he comes to be your
 liege,

You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman
 comes

Thou wilt revolt, and fly to him I fear

Stan No mighty liege therefore mistrust me
 not

K Rich Where is thy power, then, to beat
 him back? 480

Where are thy tenants and thy followers?

Are they not now upon the western shore,

Safe conducting the rebels from their ships?

Stan No my good lord my friends are in the
 north

K Rich Cold friends to Richard what do they
 in the north

When they should serve their sovereign in the
 west?

Stan They have not been commanded mighty
 sovereign

Please it your majesty to give me leave

I'll muster up my friends and meet your Grace

Where and what time your Majesty shall please

K Rich Ay thou wouldst be gone to join
 with Richmond

I will not trust you sir

Stan Most mighty sovereign

You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtful
 I never was nor never will be false

K Rich Well

Go muster men but hear you leave behind

Your son George Stanley look your faith be
 firm

Or else his head's assurance is but frail

Stan So deal with him as I prove true to you
 [*Exit*]

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess My gracious sovereign now in Devon-
 shire 500

As I by friends am well advertised

Sir Edward Courtenay and the haughty prelate

Bishop of Exeter his brother there
With many more confederates are in arms

Enter SECOND MESSENGER

2nd Mess My liege in Kent the Guildfords are
in arms
And every hour more competitors
Flock to their aid and still their power increaseth

Enter THIRD MESSENGER

3rd Mess My lord the army of the Duke of
Buckingham—
A Rich Out on you owls! nothing but songs
of death? [He striketh him]
Take that until thou bring me better news 510
3rd Mess The news I have to tell your Majesty
Is that by sudden floods and fall of waters
Buckingham's army is dispersed and scatter'd
And he himself wander'd away alone
No man knows whither
A Rich I cry thee mercy
There is my purse to cure that blow of thine
Hath any well advised friend proclaim'd
Reward to him that brings the traitor in?
3rd Mess Such proclamation hath been made
my liege

Enter FOURTH MESSENGER

4th Mess Sir Thomas Lovel and Lord
Marquis Dorset 520
'Tis said my liege in Yorkshire are in arms
Yet thus good comfort bring I to your Grace
The Breton navy is dispersed by tempest
Richmond in Dorsetshire sent out a boat
Unto the shore to ask those on the banks
If they were his assistants yea or no
Who answer'd him they came from Buckin'ham
Upon his party he mistrusting them
Hoisted sail and made away for Brittany
A Rich March on march on since we are
up in arms 530
If not to fight with foreign enemies
Yet to beat down these rebels here at home

Re-enter CATESBY

Cate My liege the Duke of Buckin'ham is
taken
That is the best news that the Earl of Richmond
Is with a mighty power landed at Milford
Is colder tidings yet they must be told
A Rich Away towards Salisbury! while we
reason here
A royal battle might be won and lost
Some one take order Buckin'ham be brought
To Salisbury the rest march on with me 540
[Flourish *Exeunt*

SCENE V *Lord Stanley's house*

Enter STANLEY and SIR CHRISTOPHER URSWICK
Stan Sir Christopher tell Richmond thus from
me

That in the sty of this most bloody boar
My son George Stanley is frank'd up in hold
If I revolt off goes young George's head
The fear of that withholds my present aid
But tell me where is princely Richmond now?

Chris At Pembroke or at Harford west in
Wales

Stan What men of name resort to him?

Chris Sir Walter Herbert a renowned soldier
Sir Gilbert Talbot Sir William Stanley 10
Oxford redoubt'd Pembroke Sir James Blunt
And Rice ap Thomas with a valiant crew
And many more of noble fame and worth
And towards London they do bend their course
If by the way they be not fought withal
Stan Return unto thy lord commend me to him
Tell him the Queen hath heartily consented
He shall espouse Elizabeth her daughter
These letters will resolve him of my mind
Farewell [Exeunt 20

ACT V

SCENE I *Salisbury an open place*

*Enter the SHERIFF and BUCKINGHAM with
halberd led to execution*

Buck Will not King Richard let me speak
with him?

Sher No my good lord therefore be patient

Buck Hastings and Edward's children Rivers
Grey

Holy King Henry and thy fair son Edward
Vaughan and all that have miscarried
By underhand corrupted foul injustice
If that your moody discontented souls
Do through the clouds behold this present hour
Even for revenge mock my destruction!
This is All Souls day fellows is it not? 10

Sher It is my lord

Buck Why then All Souls day is my body's
doomsday

This is the day that in King Edward's time
I wish'd might fall on me when I was found
False to his children or his wife's allies
Thus is the day wherein I wish'd to fall
By the false faith of him I trusted most
Thus this All Souls day to my fearful soul
Is the determin'd respite of my wrongs
That high All Seer that I dallied with 20
Hath turn'd my feigned prayer on my head
And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest

Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men
To turn their own points on their masters
bosoms

Now Margaret's curse is fallen upon my head,
"When he," quoth she, "shall split thy heart
with sorrow,

Remember Margaret was a prophetess "
Come, sirs, convey me to the block of shame,
Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of
blame [Exeunt

SCENE II *The camp near Tamworth*

Enter RICHMOND, OXFORD, BLUNT, HERBERT,
and others with drum and colours

Richm Fellows in arms, and my most loving
friends

Bruised underneath the yoke of tyranny,
Thus far into the bowels of the land
Have we march'd on without impediment
And here receive we from our father Stanley
Lines of fair comfort and encouragement
The wretched, bloody and usurping boar
That spoil'd your summer fields and fruitful
vines,

Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes his
trough

In your embowell'd bosoms, this foul swine 10
Lies now even in the centre of this isle

Near to the town of Leicester as we learn
From Tamworth thither is but one day's march
In God's name, cheerly on courageous friends
To reap the harvest of perpetual peace
By this one bloody trial of sharp war

Oxf Every man's conscience is a thousand
swords

To fight against that bloody homicide
Herb I doubt not but his friends will fly to us

Blunt He hath no friends but who are friends
for fear 20

Which in his greatest need will shrink from him

Richm All for our vantage Then in God's
name, march

True hope is swift and flies with swallow's
wings,

Kings it makes gods and meaner creatures kings
[Exeunt

SCENE III *Bosworth Field*

Enter KING RICHARD in arms with NORFOLK,
the EARL OF SURREY and others

K Rich Here pitch our tents even here in
Bosworth field

My Lord of Surrey why look you so sad?

Sur My heart is ten times lighter than my looks

K Rich My Lord of Norfolk—

Nor Here most gracious liege

K Rich Norfolk we must have knocks, ha!
must we not?

Nor We must both give and take my gracious
lord

K Rich Up with my tent there! here will I
lie to-night,

But where to-morrow? Well, all's one for that
Who hath descried the number of the foe?

Nor Six or seven thousand is their utmost
power

K Rich Why, our battalion trebles that
account

Besides the King's name is a tower of strength,
Which they upon the adverse party want
Up with my tent there! Valiant gentlemen,
Let us survey the vantage of the field
Call for some men of sound direction
Let's want no discipline make no delay,
For lords to-morrow is a busy day [Exeunt

Enter, on the other side of the field RICHMOND Sir
William Brandon OXFORD DORSET, BLUNT and
others Some of the Soldiers pitch Richmond's
tent

Richm The weary sun hath made a golden set,
And by the bright track of his fiery car 20
Gives signal of a goodly day to-morrow

Sir William Brandon you shall bear my standard

Give me some ink and paper in my tent

I'll draw the form and model of our battle,
Limit each leader to his several charge

And part in just proportion our small strength

My Lord of Oxford you Sir William Brandon,

And you Sir Walter Herbert stay with me

The Earl of Pembroke keeps his regiment

Good Captain Blunt bear my good night to him,

And by the second hour in the morning 31

Desire the Earl to see me in my tent

Yet one thing more good Blunt before thou go'st,

Where is Lord Stanley quarter'd dost thou
know

Blunt Unless I have mistaken his colours
much

Which well I am assured I have not done,

His regiment lies half a mile at least

South from the mighty power of the King

Richm If without peril it be possible 39

Good captain Blunt bear my good night to him,

And give him from me this most needful scroll

Blunt Upon my life, my lord I'll undertake it,

And so God give you quiet rest to-night!

Richm Good night good Captain Blunt

Come gentlemen,

Let us consult upon to-morrow's business

In to our tent, the air is raw and cold

[They with tents go to the tent

*Enter to his tent KING RICHARD NORFOLK
RATCLIFF CATESBY and others*

R. Rich. What is t o'clock?

Cate. It s supper time, my lord

It s nine o'clock

R. Rich. I will not sup to-night

Give me some ink and paper

What m my beaver easier than it was? 50

And all my armour laid into my tent?

Cate. It is my liege and all things are in
readiness

R. Rich. Good Norfolk hie thee to thy charge

Use careful watch choose trusty sentinels

Nor. I go my lord

R. Rich. Stir with the lark to-morrow gentle
Norfolk

Nor. I warrant you my lord [Exit

R. Rich. Catesby?

Cate. My lord?

R. Rich. Send out a pursuivant at arms

To Stanley s regiment bid him bring his power

Before sunrise lest his son George fall 61

Into the blind cave of eternal night

[Exit CATESBY]

Fill me a bowl of wine Give me a watch

Saddle wh te Surrey for the field to-morrow

Look that my staves be sound and nor too heavy

Ratcliff?

Rat. My lord?

R. Rich. Saw st thou the melancholy Lord

Northumberland?

Rat. Thomas the Earl of Surrey and himself

Much about cock shut time from troop to troop

Went through the army cheering up the

soldiers 71

R. Rich. So I am satisfied Give me a bowl of

wine

I have not that alacrity of spirit

Nor cheer of mind that I was wont to have

Set it down Is ink and paper ready?

Rat. It is my lord

R. Rich. Bid my guard watch leave me

Ratcliff about the mud of night come to my tent

And help to arm me Leave me I say

[Exit RATCLIFF and other Attendants]

*Enter STANLEY to RICHARD in his tent Lords
and others attending*

Stan. Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!

Rich. n All comfort that the dark night can
afford 80

Be to thy person noble father in law!

Tell me how f res our loving mother?

Stan. I by attorney bless thee from thy mother

Who prays continually for Richmond s good

So much for that The silent hours steal on
And flaky darkness breaks within the east
In brief—for so the season bids us be—

Prepare thy battle early in the morning
And put thy fortune to the arbitrement
Of bloody strokes and mortal staring war 90

I as I may—that which I would I cannot—

With best advantage will deceive the time

And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms

But on thy side I may not be too forward

Lest being seen thy brother tender George

Be executed in his father s sight

Farewell the leisure and the fearful time

Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love

And ample interchange of sweet discourse

Which so long sunder d friends should dwell

upon

God give us leisure for these rites of love! 101

Once more adieu be valiant and speed well!

Rich. Good lords conduct him to his regi-

ment

I ll strive with troubled thoughts to take a nap

Lest leaden slumber peise me down to-morro v

When I should mount with wings of victory

Once more good night kind lords and gentlemen

[Exit all but RICHMOND]

O Thou whose captain I account myself

Look on my forces with a gracious eye

Put in their hands thy bruising irons of wrath 110

That they may crush down with a heavy fall

The usurping helmets of our adversaries!

Make us thy ministers of chastisement

That we may praise thee in the victory!

To thee I do commend my watchful soul

Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes

Sleeping and waking O defend me still!

[Sleeps]

*Enter the GHOST OF PRINCE EDWARD son to
HENRY THE SIXTH*

Ghost [To RICHARD] Let me sit heavy on thy
soul to-morrow!

Think how thou stab d st me in my prime of
youth

At Tewksbury despair therefore and die 120

[To RICHMOND] Be cheerful Richmond for the
wroned souls

Of butcher d princes fight in thy behalf

King Henry s issue Richmond comforts thee

Enter the GHOST OF HENRY THE SIXTH

Ghost [To RICHARD] When I was mortal my
anointed body

By thee was punched full of deadly holes

Think on the Tower and me despair and die!

Harry the Sixth bids thee despair and die!

[To RICHMOND] Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror!

Harry, that prophesied thou shouldst be king
Doth comfort thee in sleep live, and flourish!

Enter the GHOST OF CLARENCE

Ghost [To RICHARD] Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow! 131

I that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine,
Poor Clarence, by thy guile betrayed to death!
To-morrow in the battle think on me
And fall thy edgeless sword despair and die!
[To RICHMOND] Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster,

The wronged heirs of York do pray for thee
Good angels guard thy battle! live, and flourish!

Enter the GHOSTS OF RIVERS GREY, and VAUGHAN

Ghost of R [To RICHARD] Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow

Rivers that died at Pomfret! despair, and die!

Ghost of G [To RICHARD] Think upon Grey, and let thy soul despair! 142

Ghost of V [To RICHARD] Think upon Vaughan and with guilty fear

Let fall thy lance despair and die!

All [To RICHMOND] Awake, and think our wrongs in Richard's bosom
Will conquer him! awake and win the day!

Enter the GHOST OF HASTINGS

Ghost [To RICHARD] Bloody and guilty guiltily awake

And in a bloody battle end thy days!

Think on Lord Hastings despair and die!

[To RICHMOND] Quiet untroubled soul awake awake!

Arm fight and conquer for fair England's sake!

Enter the GHOSTS OF THE TWO YOUNG PRINCES

Ghosts [To RICHARD] Dream on thy cousins smother'd in the Tower 151

Let us be lead within thy bosom Richard
And weigh thee down to ruin shame and death!

Thy nephew's souls bid thee despair and die!

[To RICHMOND] Sleep Richmond sleep in peace and wake in joy

Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy!

Live and beget a happy race of kings!

Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish

Enter the GHOST OF LADY ANNE

Ghost [To RICHARD] Richard thy wife that wretched Anne thy wife

That never slept a quiet hour with thee 160

Now fills thy sleep with perturbations

To-morrow in the battle think on me,

And fall thy edgeless sword despair, and die!

[To RICHMOND] Thou quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep,

Dream of success and happy victory!

Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee

Enter the GHOST OF BUCKINGHAM

Ghost [To RICHARD] The first was I that help'd thee to the crown,

The last was I that felt thy tyranny

O in the battle think on Buckingham

And die in terror of thy guiltiness! 170

Dream on dream on of bloody deeds and death

Fainting despair despairing yield thy breath!

[To RICHMOND] I died for hope ere I could lend thee aid

But cheer thy heart and be thou not dismay'd

God and good angels fight on Richmond's side,

And Richard falls in height of all his pride

[The GHOSTS & MIST KING RICHARD starts out of his dream]

K Rich Give me another horse bind up my wounds

Have mercy, Jesu!—Soft! I did but dream

O coward conscience how dost thou afflict me!

The lights burn blue It is now dead midnight

Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh

What do I fear? my self? there's none else by

Richard loves Richard that is, I am I

Is there a murderer here? No Yes I am

Then fly What from my self? Great reason why

Lest I revenge What myself upon myself

Alack I love my self Wherefore? for any good

That I myself have done unto my self?

O no! alas, I rather hate my self

For hateful deeds committed by my self! 190

I am a villain yet I lie I am not

Fool of thy self speak well fool do not flatter

My conscience hath a thousand several tongues

And every tongue brings in a several tale

And every tale condemns me for a villain

Perjury perjury in the high'st degree

Murder stern murder in the direst degree

All several sins all used in each degree

Throng to the bar crying all 'Guilty! guilty!'

I shall despair There is no creature loves me

And if I die no one shall pity me 201

Nay wherefore should they since that I myself

Find in myself no pity to my self?

Methought the souls of all that I had murder'd

Came to my tent and every one did threaten

To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard!

*Enter RATCLIFF**Rat* My lord!*A Rich* Zounds! who is there?*Rat* Ratcliff my lord tis I The early
villa e cock

Hath twice done salutation to the morn 210

Your friends are up and buckle on their armour

A Rich O Ratcliff I have dream'd a fearful
dream!What thinkest thou will our friends prove all
true?*Rat* No doubt my lord*A Rich* O Ratcliff I fear I fear—*Rat* Nay good my lord be not afraid of
shadows*A Rich* By the apostle Paul shadows to-night

Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard

Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers

Armed in proof and led by shallow Richmond

It is not yet near day Come go with me 220

Under our tents I'll play the eaves-dropper

To see if any mean to shrink from me [*Exeunt*]*Enter the LORDS to RICHMOND sitting in his tent**Lords* Good morrow Richmond!*Richm* Cry mercy lords and watchful
gentlemen,

That you have taken a tardy sluggard here

Lords How have you slept my lord?*Richm* The sweetest sleep and fairest boding
dreams

That ever entered in a drowsy head

Have I since your departure had my lords

Methought the souls whose bodies Richard
murder'd 230

Came to my tent and cried on victory

I promise you my soul is very jocund

In the remembrance of so fair a dream

How far into the morning is it lords?

Lords Upon the stroke of four*Richm* Why then tis time to arm and give
direction

HIS ORATION TO HIS SOLDIERS

More than I have said loving countrymen,

The leisure and enforcement of the time

Forbids to dwell upon yet remember this

God and our good cause fight upon our side 240

The prayers of holy saints and wronged souls

Like high rear'd bulwarks stand before our faces

Richard except those whom we fight against

Had rather have us win than him they follow

For what is he they follow? truly gentlemen,

A bloody tyrant and a homicide

One raised in blood and one in blood establish'd

One that made means to come by what he hath
And slaughter'd those that were the means to
help him

A base foul stone made precious by the foil 250

Of England's chair where he falsely set

One that hath ever been God's enemy

Then if you fight against God's enemy

God will in justice ward you as his soldiers

If you do sweat to put a tyrant down

You sleep in peace the tyrant being slain

If you do fight against your country's foes

Your country's fat shall pay your pains the
hire

If you do fight in safeguard of your wives

Your wives shall welcome home the conquerors

If you do free your children from the sword 260

Your children's children quit it in your age

Then in the name of God and all these rites his

Advance your standards draw your willing
swords

For me the ransom of my bold attempt

Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold
face

But if I thrive the gain of my attempt

The least of you shall share his part thereof

Sound drums and trumpets boldly and cheer
fully

God and Saint George! Richmond and victory!

[*Exeunt* 2, 0]*Re enter KING RICHARD RATCLIFF Attendants
and Forces**A Rich* What said Northumberland as touching
Richmond?*Rat* That he was never trained up in arms*A Rich* He said the truth and what said
Surrey then?*Rat* He smiled and said: The better for our
purpose*A Rich* He was in the right and so indeed
it is [Clock striketh]

Tell the clock there Give me a calendar

Who saw the sun to-day?

Rat Not I my lord*A Rich* Then he disdains to shine for by the
book

He should have braved the east an hour ago

A black day will it be to somebody 280

*Ratcliff**Rat* My lord?*A Rich* The sun will not be seen to-day

The sky doth frown and lour upon our army

I would these dewy tears were from the ground

Not shine to-day! Why what is that to me

More than to Richmond? for the selfsame heaven

That frowns on me looks sadly upon him

Enter NORFOLK

Nor Arm, arm, my lord, the foe vaunts in the field

A Rich Come, bustle, bustle caparison my horse

Call up Lord Stanley bid him bring his power
I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain, 291

And thus my battle shall be ordered
My forward shall be drawn out all in length,
Consisting equally of horse and foot,

Our archers shall be placed in the midst
John Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Earl of Surrey,
Shall have the leading of this foot and horse

They thus directed, we will follow
In the main battle, whose puissance on either
side

Shall be well winged with our chiefest horse 300
This and Saint George to boot! What thinkst
thou, Norfolk?

Nor A good direction warlike sovereign
This found I on my tent this morning

He sheweth him a paper

K Rich [Reads] Jockey of Norfolk, be not
too bold

For Dickon thy master is bought and sold "
A thing devised by the enemy

Go gentlemen every man unto his charge
Let not our babbling dreams affright our
souls

Conscience is but a word that cowards use,
Devised at first to keep the strong in awe 310
Our strong arms be our conscience swords our
law

March on join bravely let us to t'pell mell,
If not to heaven then hand in hand to hell

HIS ORATION TO HIS ARMY

What shall I say more than I have inferred?
Remember whom you are to cope withal
A sort of vagabonds rascals and runaways
A scum of Bretons and base lackey peasants,
Whom their mercenary country vomits
forth

To desperate ventures and assured destruc-
tion

You sleeping safe they bring to you unrest, 320
You having lands, and blest with beautiful
wives

They would restrain the one disdain the other
And who doth lead them but a paltry fellow,
Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's cost?

A milk-sop one that never in his life
Felt so much cold as on cr shoes in snow?

Let's whip these stragglers over the seas
again

Lash hence these overweening rags of France,
These famish'd beggars weary of their lives
Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit, 330
For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd them-
selves

If we be conquer'd let men conquer us
And not these bastard Bretons whom our
fathers

Have in their own land beaten bobbed, and
thumped

And in record left them the heirs of shame
Shall these enjoy our lands? lie with our wives?
Ravish our daughters? [Drum afar off] Hark!

I hear their drum

Fight! gentlemen of England! fight bold yeomen!
Draw, archers draw your arrows to the head!
Spur your proud horses hard and ride in blood,
Amaze the welkin with your broken staves! 341

Enter a MESSENGER

What says Lord Stanley? will he bring his
power?

Mess My lord he doth deny to come

K Rich Off with his son George's head!

Nor My lord the enemy is past the marsh
After the battle let George Stanley die

A Rich A thousand hearts are great within
my bosom

Advance our standards set upon our foes
Our ancient word of courage fair Saint George
Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons! 350
Upon them! Victory sits on our helmets

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *Another part of the field*

*Alarm excursions Enter NORFOLK and
forces fighting, to him CATESBY*

Cate Rescue, my Lord of Norfolk, rescue,
rescue!

The king enacts more wonders than a man,
Daring an opposite to every danger
His horse is slain and all on foot he fights
Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death
Rescue fair lord or else the day is lost!

Alarms Enter KING RICHARD

A Rich A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a
horse!

Cate Withdraw my lord I'll help you to a
horse

A Rich Slave, I have set my life upon a cast
And I will stand the hazard of the die 10
I think there be six Richmonds in the field
I've have I slain to-day instead of him
A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE V *Another part of the field*

Alarum Enter RICHARD and RICHMOND they fight
RICHARD is slain Retreat and flourish Re-enter
RICHMOND STANLEY bearing the crown with
others other Lords

Richm God and y our arms be praised victorious friends

The day is ours the bloody dog is dead

Stan Courageous Richmond well hast thou
 acquit thee

Lo here this long usurped royalty

From the dead temples of this bloody wretch

Have I pluck'd off to grace thy brows withal

Wear it enjoy it and make much of it

Richm Great God of heaven say Amen to all!

But tell me ■ young George Stanley living?

Stan He is my lord and safe in Leicester
 town

Whither if it please you we may now with
 draw us

Richm What men of name are slain on either
 side?

Stan John Duke of Norfolk Walter Lord
 Ferrers

Sir Robert Brakenbury and Sir William Brandon

Richm Inter their bodies as becomes their
 births

Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled

That in submission will return to us
 And then as we have ta'en the sacrament
 We will unite the white rose and the red
 Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction

20

That long have frown'd upon their enmity!

What traitor hears me and says not amen?

England hath long been mad and scarr'd herself

The brother blindly shed the brother's blood

The father rashly slaughter'd his own son

The son compell'd been butcher to the sire

All this divided York and Lancaster

Divided in their dire division

O now let Richmond and Elizabeth

The true successors of each royal house

30

By God's fair ordinance conjoin together!

And let their heirs God if thy will be so

Enrich the time to come with smooth faced
 peace

With smiling plenty and fair prosperous days!

Abate the edge of traitors' gracious Lord

That would reduce these bloody days again

And make poor England weep in streams of
 blood!

Let them not live to taste land's increase

That would with treason wound this fair land's
 peace!

Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives again

That she may long live here God say amen!

40

[*Exeunt*]

THE COMEDY OF ERRORS

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

SOLINUS, DUKE OF EPHEBUS

ÆGEON a merchant of Syracuse

ANTIPHOLUS OF EPHEBUS | twin brothers, and sons

ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE | of Ægeon and Emilia

DROMIO OF EPHEBUS | twin brothers and attend

DROMIO OF SYRACUSE | ants on the two Antipholuses

BALTHAZAR a merchant

ANGELO a goldsmith

FIRST MERCHANT friend to Antipholus of

Syracuse

SECOND MERCHANT to whom Angelo is a debtor

PINCH a school-master

A SERVANT

A GAOLER

AN OFFICER

EMILIA wife to Ægeon an abbess at Ephesus

ADRIANA wife to Antipholus of Ephesus

LUCIANA her sister

LUCE servant to Adriana

A COURTEZAN

NON-SPEAKING Officers and other Attendants

SCENE Ephesus

ACT I

SCENE I A hall in the Duke's palace

Enter DUKE, ÆGEON, GAOLER, Officers, and other Attendants

Æge Proceed Solinus, to procure my fall
And by the doom of death end woes and all
Duke Merchant of Syracuse plead no more,
I am not partial to infringe our laws
The enmity and discord which of late
Sprung from the rancorous outrage of your duke
To merchants, our well-dealing countrymen
Who wanting guilders to redeem their lives
Have seal'd his rigorous statutes with their
bloods,
Excludes all pity from our threatening looks : 10
For, since the mortal and intestine jars
'Twixt thy seditious countrymen and us
If hath in solemn synods been decreed
Both by the Syracusians and ourselves
To admit no traffic to our adverse towns
Nay, more
If any born at Ephesus be seen
At any Syracusan marts and fairs
Again if any Syracusan born
Come to the bay of Ephesus he dies
His goods confiscate to the Duke's dispose,
Unless a thousand marks be levied
To quit the penalty and to ransom him
Thy substance valued at the highest rate
Cannot amount unto a hundred marks
Therefore by law thou art condemn'd to die
Age Yet thus my comfort when our words
are done
My woes end likewise with the evening sun
Duke Well Syracusan say in brief the cause

Why thou departed'st from thy native home 30
And for what cause thou camest to Ephesus

Age A heavier task could not have been im-
posed

Than I to speak my griefs unspeakable
Yea that the world may witness that my end
Was wrought by nature, not by vile offence,
I'll utter what my sorrow gives me leave
In Syracuse was I born and wed
Unto a woman happy but for me,
And by me had not our hap been bad
With her I lived in joy, our wealth increased 40
By prosperous voyages I often made
To Epidamnium till my factor's death
And the great care of goods at random left
Drew me from kind embracements of my spouse
From whom my absence was not six months old
Before herself almost at fainting under
The pleasing punishment that women bear,
Had made provision for her following me
And soon and safe arriv'd where I was
There had she not been long but she became : 50
A joyful mother of two goodly sons
And which was strange, the one so like the
other

20 As could not be distinguish'd but by names
That every hour and in the self same inn
A meaner woman was deliver'd
Of such a burden male twins both alike
Those for their parents were exceeding poor,
I bought and brought up to attend my sons
My wife not meanly proud of two such boys,
Made daily motions for our home return 60
Unwilling I agreed, alas! too soon
We came aboard
A league from Epidamnium had we sail'd,

Before the always wind-obeying deep
 Gave any tragic instance of our harm
 But longer did we not retain much hope
 For what obscured light the heavens did grant
 Did but convey unto our fearful minds
 A doubtful warrant of immediate death
 Which though my self would gladly have embraced

Yet the incessant weepings of my wife
 Weeping before for what she saw must come
 And piteous plainings of the pretty babes
 That mourn'd for fashion ignorant what to fear
 Forced me to seek delays for them and me
 And this it was for other means was none
 The sailors sought for safety by our boat
 And left the ship then sinking ripe to us
 My wife more careful for the latter born
 Had fasten'd him unto a small spare mast
 Such as seafaring men provide for storms
 To him one of the other twins was bound
 Whilst I had been like heedful of the other
 The children thus disposed my wife and I
 Fixing our eyes on whom our care was fix'd
 Fasten'd ourselves at either end the mast
 And floating straight obedient to the stream
 Were carried towards Corinth as we thought
 At length the sun gazing upon the earth
 Dispersed those vapours that offended us
 And by the benefit of his wished light
 The seas wax'd calm and we discovered
 Two ships from far making main to us
 Of Corinth that of Epidaurus this
 But ere they came—O let me say no more!
 Gather the sequel by that went before

Duke Nay forward old man do not break off

For e may pity though not pardon thee
 Age O had the gods done so I had not now
 Worthily term'd them merciless to us!
 For ere the ships could meet by twice five leagues
 We were encounter'd by a mighty rock
 Which be no violently borne upon
 Our helpful ship was splitted in the midst
 So that in this unjust divorce of us
 Fortune had left to both of us alike
 What to delight in what to sorrow for
 Her part poor soul seeming as burdened
 With lesser weight but not with lesser woe
 Was carried with more speed before the wind
 And in our sight they three were taken up
 By fishermen of Corinth as we thought
 At length another ship had seized on us
 And knowing whom it was their hap to save
 Gave healthful welcome to their shipwreck'd
 And would have rest the fishers of their prey

Had not their bark been very slow of sail
 And therefore homeward did they bend their
 course

Thus have you heard me sever'd from my bliss
 That by misfortunes was my life prolong'd
 To tell sad stories of my own mishaps

Duke And for the sake of them thou sorrowest
 for

Do me the favour to dilate at full
 What hath befallen of them and thee till now
 Age My youngest boy and yet my eldest care
 At eighteen years became inquisitive
 After his brother and importuned me
 That his attendant—so his case was like
 Rest of his brother but retain'd his name—
 Might bear him company in the quest of him
 Whom whilst I labour'd of a love to see

I hazarded the loss of whom I loved
 Five summers have I spent in furthest Crete
 Roaming clean through the bounds of Asia
 And coasting homeward came to Ephesus
 Hopeless to find yet loath to leave unsought
 Or that or any place that harbours men
 But here must end the story of my life
 And happy were I in my timely death
 Could all my travels warrant me they live

Duke hapless Ageon whom the fates have
 mark'd

To bear the extremity of dire mishap!
 Now trust me were it not against our laws
 Against my crown my oath my dignity
 Which princes would they may not disannul
 My soul should sue an advocate for thee
 But though thou art adjudged to the death
 And passed sentence may not be recalled
 But to our honour's great disparagement
 Yet I will favour thee in what I can

Therefore merchant I'll limit thee this day
 To seek thy life by beneficial help
 Try all the friends thou hast in Ephesus
 Beg thou or borrow to make up the sum
 And live if no then thou art doom'd to die
 Gaoler take him to thy custody

Gaol I will my lord

Age Hopeless and helpless doth Ageon wend
 But to procrastinate his lifeless end [Exeunt

SCENE II The Mart

Enter ANTIPOHUS of SYRACUSE DROMIO OF
 SYRACUSE and FIRST MERCHANT

1st Mer Therefore give out you are of Epila-
 nnum

Lest that your goods too soon be confiscate
 This very day a Syracusan merchant
 Is apprehended for arrival here
 And not being able to buy out his life

According to the statute of the town
Dies ere the weary sun set in the west
There is your money that I had to keep

Ant S Go bear it to the Centaur, where we
host,

And stay there, Dromio, till I come to thee 10
Within this hour it will be dinner-time
Till that, I'll view the manners of the town,
Peruse the traders, gaze upon the buildings,
And then return and sleep within mine inn
For with long travel I am stuff and weary
Get thee away

Dro S Many a man would take you at your
word,

And go indeed, having so good a mean [Exit

Ant S A trusty villain sir that very oft
When I am dull with care and melancholy, 20
Lightens my humour with his merry jests
What will you walk with me about the town,
And then go to my inn and dine with me?

1st Mer I am invited, sir, to certain merchants,
Of whom I hope to make much benefit,
I crave your pardon Soon at five o'clock,
Please you I'll meet with you upon the mart
And afterward consort you till bed-time
My present business calls me from you now

Ant S Farewell till then I will go lose myself
And wander up and down to view the city 31

1st Mer Sir, I commend you to your own con-
tent [Exit

Ant S He that commends me to mine own con-
tent

Commends me to the thing I cannot get
I to the world am like a drop of water
That in the ocean seeks another drop
Who falling there to find his fellow forth,
Unseen, inquisitive, confounds himself
So I, to find a mother and a brother
In quest of them unhappy, lose myself 40

Enter DROMIO OF EPHESUS

Here comes the almanac of my true date
What now? how chance thou art returned so
soon?

Dro E Return'd so soon? rather approach'd too
late

The capon burns the pig falls from the spit
The clock hath stricken twelve upon the bell,
My mistress made it one upon my cheek
She is so hot because the meat is cold
The meat is cold because you come not home
You come not home because you have no stom-
ach,

You have no stomach having broke your fast,
But we that know what tis to fast and pray 51
Are penitent for your default to-day

Ant S Stop in your wind, sir tell me this I
pray

Where have you left the money that I gave you?
Dro E O—sixpence that I had on Wednesday
last

To pay the saddler for my mistress' crupper?
The saddler had it sir, I kept it not

Ant S I am not in a sportive humour now
Tell me and dally not where is the money?
We being strangers here how dar'est thou trust
So great a charge from thine own custody? 61

Dro E I pray you, jest, sir, as you sit at dinner
I from my mistress come to you in post,
If I return I shall be post indeed

For she will score your fault upon my pate
Methinks your maw, like mine should be your
clock

And strike you home without a messenger

Ant S Come Dromio, come these jests are
out of season,

Reserve them till a merrier hour than this
Where is the gold I gave in charge to thee? 70

Dro E To me, sir? why, you gave no gold to
me

Ant S Come on, sir knave, have done your
foolishness

And tell me how thou hast disposed thy charge

Dro E My charge was but to fetch you from
the mart

Home to your house the Phoenix sir, to dinner
My mistress and her sister stays for you

Ant S Now as I am a Christian answer me
In what safe place you have bestow'd my money,
Or I shall break that merry sconece of yours
That stands on tricks when I am undisposed 80
Where is the thousand marks thou hadst of me?

Dro E I have some marks of yours upon my
pate,

Some of my mistress' marks upon my shoulders
But not a thousand marks between you both
If I should pay your worship those again,
Perchance you will not bear them patiently

Ant S Thy mistress' marks? what mistress,
slave hast thou?

Dro E Your worship's wife, my mistress at the
Phoenix

She that doth fast till you come home to dinner
And prays that you will hie you home to dinner

Ant S What wilt thou flout me thus unto my
face 91

Being forbid? There, take you that sir knave

Dro E What mean you sir for God's sake
hold your hands!

Nay, an you will not sir I'll talc my heels

[Exit

Ant S Upon my life, by some device or other

When in the why and the wherefore is neither
rhyme nor reason?

Well sir I thank you 50

Ant S Thank me sir! for what?

Dro S Marry sir for this something that you
gave me for nothing

Ant S I'll make you amends next to give you
nothing for something? But say sir is it dinner
time?

Dro S No sir I think the meat wants that I
have

Ant S In good time sir what's that?

Dro S Basting

Ant S Well sir then twill be dry 60

Dro S If it be sir I pray you eat none of it

Ant S Your reason?

Dro S Lest it make you cholerick and purchase
me another dry basting

Ant S Well sir learn to jest in good time
there's a time for all things

Dro S I durst have denied that before you
were so cholerick

Ant S By what rule sir?

Dro S Marry sir by a rule as plain as the plain
bald pate of father Time himself 71

Ant S Let's hear it

Dro S There's no time for a man to recover his
hair that grows bald by nature

Ant S May he not do it by fine and recovery?

Dro S Yes to pay a fine for a periving and re-
cover the lost hair of another man

Ant S Why Time such a ruggard of hair
being as it is so plentiful an excrement? 79

Dro S Because it is a blessing that he bestows
on beasts and what he hath scantied men in hair
he hath given them in wit

Ant S Why but there's many a man hath more
hair than wit

Dro S Not a man of those but he hath the wit
to lose his hair

Ant S Why thou didst conclude hairy men
plain dealers without wit

Dro S The plainer dealer the sooner lost yet
he loseth it in a kind of jollity 90

Ant S For what reason?

Dro S For two and sound ones too

Ant S Nay not sound, I pray you

Dro S Sure ones then

Ant S Nay not sure in a thing falsing

Dro S Certain ones then

Ant S Name them

Dro S The one, to save the money that he
spends in tiring the other that at dinner they
should not drop in his porridge 100

Ant S You would all this time have proved
there's no time for all things

Dro S Marry and did sir namely no time to
recover hair lost by nature

Ant S But your reason was not substantial
why there is no time to recover

Dro S Thus I mend it Time himself is bald
and therefore to the world's end will have bald
followers

Ant S I knew 'twould be a bald conclusion
But soft! who wafts us yonder? 111

Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA

Adr Ay ay Antipholus look strange and
frown

Some other mistress hath thy sweet aspects
I am not Adriana nor thy wife

The time was once when thou unurg'd wouldst
vow

That never words were music to thine ear

That never object pleasing in thine eye,

That never touch well welcome to thy hand

That never meat sweet savour'd in thy taste

Unless I spake or look'd or touch'd or caried
to thee 120

How comes it now my husband O how comes
it

That thou art thus estranged from thyself?

Thyself I call it being strange to me,

That undividable incorporate

Art better than thy dear self's better part

Ah do not tear away thyself from me!

For know my love as easy may'st thou fall

A drop of water in the breaking gulf

And take unmingled thence that drop again

Without addition or diminishing 130

As take from me thyself and not me too

How dearly would it touch thee to the quick

Shouldst thou but hear I were licentious

And that this body consecrate to thee,

By ruffian lust should be contaminate!

Wouldst thou not spit at me and spurn at me

And hurl the name of husband in my face

And tear the stain'd skin off my harlot brow

And from my false hand cut the wedding ring

And break it with a deep-divorcing vow? 140

I know thou canst and therefore see thou do it

I am possess'd with an adulterate blot

My blood is mingled with the crime of lust

For if we two be one and thou play false

I do digest the poison of thy flesh

Being strumpeted by thy contagion

Keep then fair league and truce with thy true
bed

I live unstain'd thou undishonour'd

Ant S Plead you to me fair dame? I know you
not

In Ephesus I am but two hours old 150

As strange unto your town as to your talk,
Who, every word by all my wit being scanned,
Want wit in all one word to understand

Luc Fie, brother! how the world is changed
with you!

When were you wont to use my sister thus?

She sent for you by *Dromio* home to dinner

Ant S By *Dromio*?

Dro S By me?

Adr By thee, and thus thou didst return from
him,

That he did buffet thee and in his blows 160

Denied my house for his, me for his wife

Ant S Did you converse, sir, with this gentle-
woman?

What is the course and drift of your compact?

Dro S I, sir? I never saw her till this time

Ant S Villain, thou liest, for even her very
words

Didst thou deliver to me on the mart

Dro S I never spake with her in all my life

Ant S How can she thus then call us by our
names?

Unless it be by inspiration

Adr How ill agrees it with your gravity 170

To counterfeit thus grossly with your slave,

Abetting him to thwart me in my mood!

Be it my wrong you are from me exempt

But wrong not that wrong with a more contempt

Come I will fasten on this sleeve of thine

Thou art an elm my husband I a vine,

Whose weakness married to thy stronger state

Makes me with thy strength to communicate

If aught possess thee from me, it is dross

Usurping ivy, briar, or idle moss, 180

Who all for want of pruning with intrusion

Infect thy sap and live on thy confusion

Ant S To me she speaks she moves me for her
theme

What was I married to her in my dream?

Or sleep I now and think I hear all this

What error drives our eyes and ears amiss

Until I know this sure uncertainty,

I'll entertain the offer'd fallacy

Luc *Dromio* go bid the servants spread for
dinner

Dro S O for my beads! I cross me for a sinner

This is the fairy land O spite of spites! 191

We talk with goblins, owls and sprites

If we obey them not this will ensue,

They'll suck our breath or pinch us black and
blue

Luc Why pratest thou to thyself and answer'st
not?

Dromio thou drowe, thou snail thou slug thou
sot!

Dro S I am transformed, master am I not?

Ant S I think thou art in mind, and so am I

Dro S Nay, master, both in mind and in my
shape

Ant S Thou hast thine own form

Dro S No I am an ape 200

Luc If thou art changed to aught tis to an ass

Dro S Tis true she rides me and I long for
grass

'Tis so I am an ass else it could never be

But I should know her as well as she knows
me

Adr Come come, no longer will I be a fool,

To put the finger in the eye and weep

Whilst man and master laugh my woes to scorn

Come sir to dinner *Dromio* keep the gate

Husband I'll dine above with you to-day

And shrive you of a thousand idle pranks 210

Sirrah if any ask you for your master,

Say he dines forth and let no creature enter

Come, sister *Dromio* play the porter well

Ant S Am I in earth, in heaven, or in hell?

Sleeping or waking? mad or well-advised?

Known unto these and to my self disguised!

I'll say as they say and persevere so

And in this mist at all adventures go

Dro S Master, shall I be porter at the gate?

Adr Ay, and let none enter lest I break your
gate 220

Luc Come come, *Antipholus*, we dine too late
[*Exeunt*]

ACT III

SCENE I Before the House of *Antipholus* of
Ephesus

Enter *ANTIPHOLUS* OF *EPHESUS* *DROMIO* OF
EPHESUS, *ANGELO* and *BALTHAZAR*

Ant E Good Signior *Angelo* you must excuse
us all,

My wife is shrewish when I keep not hours

Say that I linger'd with you at your shop

To see the making of her carcanet

And that to-morrow you will bring it home

But here's a villain that would face me down

He met me on the mart and that I beat him

And charged him with a thousand marks in gold

And that I did deny my wife and house

Thou drunkard thou what didst thou mean by
this? 10

Dro E Say what you will sir but I know what
I know

That you beat me at the mart I have your hand
to show

If the skin were parchment and the blows you
gave were ink,

Your own handwriting would tell you what I think

Ant E I think thou art an ass

Dro E Merry, so it doth appear
By the wrongs I suffer and the blows I bear

I should kick being kick'd and being at that pass

You would keep from my heels and beware of an ass

Ant E You re sad Signior Balthazar pray
God our cheer

May answer my good will and your good wel come here 20

Bal I hold your dainties cheap sir and your welcome dear

Ant E O Signior Balthazar either at flesh or fish

A table full of welcome makes scarce one dainty dish

Bal Good meat sir is common that every churl affords

Ant E And welcome more common for that's nothin but words

Bal Small cheer and great welcome makes a merry feast

Ant E Ay to a niggardly host and more sparing guest

But though my cares be mean, take them in good part

Better cheer may you have but not with better heart

But soft! my door is lock'd Go bid them let us in 30

Dro E Maud Bridget Maran Cicely Gil lan Ginn!

Dro S [Within] Some malt-horse capon, some comb idiot patch

Either get thee from the door or sit do vn at the hatch

Dost thou conjure for wenches that thou call'st for such store

When one is one too many? Go get thee from the door

Dro E What patch is made our porter? My master stays in the street

Dro S [Within] Let him walk from whence he came lest he catch cold on his feet

Ant F Who talks within there? ho open the door

Dro S [Within] Right sir I'll tell you when an you'll tell me wherefore

Ant F Wherefore? for my dinner I have not dined to-day 40

Dro S [Within] Nor to-day I ere you must not come again when you may

Ant E What art thou that keepest me out from the house I owe?

Dro S [Within] The porter for this time sir and my name is Dromio

Dro E O villain! thou hast stolen both mine office and my name

The one ne'er got me credit the other muckle blame

If thou hadst been Dromio to-day in my place

Thou wouldest have changed thy face for a name or thy name for an ass

Luce [Within] What a coil is there Dromio? who are those at the gate?

Dro E Let my master in Luce

Luce [Within] Faith no he comes too late

And so tell your master

Dro E O Lord I must laugh!
Have at you with a proverb Shall I set in my staff?

Luce [Within] Have at you with another that's When? can you tell?

Dro S [Within] If thy name be call'd Luce—
Luce thou hast answer'd him well

Ant E Do you hear you minion? you'll let us in I hope?

Luce [Within] I thought to have ask'd you

Dro S [Within] And you said no

Dro F So come help well struck! there was blow for blow

Ant E Thou baggage let me in

Luce [Within] Can you tell for whose sake?

Dro E Master knock the door hard

Luce [Within] Let him knock till it ache.

Ant E You'll cry for this minion if I bear the door down

Luce [Within] What needs all that and a pair of stocks in the town? 60

Adr [Within] Who is that at the door that keeps all this noise?

Dro S [Within] By my troth your town is troubled with unruly boys

Ant E Are you there wife? you might have come before

Adr [Within] Your wife sir knave! go get you from the door

Dro F If you went in pain master this knave would go sore

Ang Here is neither cheer sir nor welcome we would fain have either

Bal In debating which was best we shall part with neither

Dro E They stand at the door master bid them welcome hither

Ant F There is something in the wind that we cannot get in

Dro E You would say so, master, if your garments were thin 70
Your cake there is warm within, you stand here in the cold

It would make a man mad as a buck to be so bought and sold

Ant E Go fetch me something I'll break open the gate

Dro S [Within] Break any breaking here and I'll break your knave's pate

Dro E A man may break a word with you, sir, and words are but wind,

Ay, and break it in your face, so he break it not behind

Dro S [Within] It seems thou want'st breaking upon thee hind!

Dro E Here's too much "out upon thee" I pray thee let me in

Dro S [Within] Ay when fowls have no feathers and fish have no fin

Ant E Well I'll break in go borrow me a crow 80

Dro E A crow without feather? Master, mean you so?

For a fish without a fin there's a fowl without a feather

If a crow help us in sirrah, we'll pluck a crow together

Ant E Go get thee gone, fetch me an iron crow

Bal Have patience sir, O, let it not be so! Herein you war against your reputation

And draw within the compass of suspect The unviolated honour of your wife

Once this—your long experience of her wisdom Her sober virtue years and modesty, 90

Plead on her part some cause to you unknown, And doubt nor, sir but she will well excuse

Why at this time the doors are made against you

Be ruled by me depart in patience

And let us to the Tiger all to dinner

And about evening come yourself alone

To know the reason of this strange restraint

If by strong hand you offer to break in Now in the stirring passage of the day, 100

A vulgar comment will be made of it

And that supposed by the common rout

Against your yet ungalled estimation

That may with foul intrusion enter in

And dwell upon your grave when you are dead,

For slander lives upon succession

I or ever housed where it gets possession

Ant I You have prevail'd I will depart in quiet

And in despite of mirth, mean to be merry

I know a wench of excellent discourse,
Pretty and witty, wild and yet, too gentle 110
There will we dine This woman that I mean,
My wife—but, I protest without desert—
Hath oftentimes upbraided me withal
To her will we to dinner [*To Angelo*] Get you home

And fetch the chain, by this I know 'tis made
Bring it I pray you to the Porpentine,
For there's the house that chain will I bestow—
Be it for no hing but to spite my wife—
Upon mine hostess there good sir make haste
Since mine own doors refuse to entertain me, 120
I'll knock elsew'ere to see if they'll disdain me

Ang I'll meet you at that place some hour hence

Ant E Do so This jest shall cost me some expense [*Exeunt*]

SCENE II The same

Enter LUCIANA and ANTIPHOLUS of SYRACUSE

Luc And may it be that you have quite forgot
A husband's office? shall Antipholus

Even in the spring of love thy love springs rot?
Shall love in building grow so ruinous?

If you did wed my sister for her wealth

Then for her wealth's sake use her with more kindness

Or if you like elsewhere, do it by stealth
Muffle your false love with some show of blindness

Let not my sister read it in your eye
Be not thy tongue thy own shame's orator, 130

Look sweet speak fair become disloyalty

Apparel vice like virtue's harbinger

Bear a fair presence though your heart be tainted

Teach sin the carriage of a holy saint,
Be secret false what need she be acquainted?

What simple thief brags of his own attain?

'Tis double wrong to truant with your bed
And let her read in thy looks at board

Shame hath a bastard fame well managed,
Ill deeds are doubled with an evil word 20

Alas poor women! make us but believe

Being compact of credit that you love us
Though others have the arm, show us the sleeve,

We in your motion turn and you may move us

Then gentle brother get you in again,

Comfort my sister cheer her, call her wife

'Tis holy sport to be a little vain

When the sweet breath of flattery conquers strife

Ant S Sweet mistress—what your name is else I know not

Nor by what wonder you do but of mine—

Less in your knowledge and your grace you
show not

Than our earth's wonder more than earth di-
vine

Teach me dear creature how to think and speak
Lay open to my earthly-gross conceit

Smother'd in errors feeble shallow weak

The folded meaning of your words deceit

Against my soul's pure truth why labour you

To make it wander in an unknown field?

Are you a god? would you create me new?

Transform me then and to your power I'll
yield

But if that I am I then well I know

Your weeping sister is no wife of mine

Nor to her bed no homage do I owe

Far more far more to you do I decline

O grain me not sweet mermaid with thy note

To drown me in thy sister's flood of tears

Sin? siren for thy self and I will dote

Spread o'er the silver waves thy golden hairs

And in a bed I'll take them and there lie

And in that glorious supposition think

He gains by death that hath such means to die

Let Love being light be drowned if she sink!

Luc What are you mad that you do reason so?

Ant S Not mad but mated how I do not
know

Luc It is a fault that springeth from your eye

Ant S For gazing on your beams fair sun,
being by

Luc Gaze where you should and that will clear
your sight

Ant S As good to wink sweet love as look on
night

Luc Why call you me love? call my sister so

Ant S Thy sister's sister

Luc That's my sister

Ant S No

It is thy self mine own self's better part

Mine eye's clear eye my dear heart's dearer heart

My food my fortune and my sweet hope's aim

My sole earth's heaven and my heaven's claim

Luc All this my sister is or else should be

Ant S Call thy self sister sweet for I am thee

Thou wilt I love and with thee lead my life

Thou hast no husband yet nor I no wife

Give me thy hand

Luc O soft sir! hold you still

I'll fetch my sister to get her good will [Exit 70

Enter DRO. 110 OF SYRACUSE.

Ant S Why how now Dromio? where runn'st
thou so fast?

Dro S Do you know me sir? am I Dromio?
am I your man? am I my self?

Ant S Thou art Dromio thou art my man
thou art thy self

Dro S I am an ass I am a woman's man and
besides myself

Ant S What woman's man? and how besides
thyself?

Dro S Marry sir besides myself I am due to
a woman one that claims me one that haunts
me one that will have me

Ant S What claim lays she to thee?

Dro S Marry sir such claim as you would
lay to your horse and she would have me as a
beast not that I being a beast she would have
me but that she being a very beastly creature
lays claim to me

Ant S What is she?

Dro S A very reverent body ay such a one
as a man may not speak of without he say Sir
reverence I have but lean luck in the match
and yet is she a wondrous fat marriage

Ant S How dost thou mean a fat marriage?

Dro S Marry sir she's the kitchen wench and
all grease and I know not what use to put her to
but to make a lamp of her and run from her by
her own light I warrant her rags and the tallow
in them will burn a Poland winter if she lives
till doomsday she'll burn a week longer than
the whole world

Ant S What complexion is she of?

Dro S Swart like my shoe but her face noth-
ing like so clean kept for why she sweats a
man may go over shoes in the grime of it

Ant S That's a fault that water will mend

Dro S No sir it is in grain Noah's flood could
not do it

Ant S What's her name?

Dro S Nell sir but her name and three quar-
ters that's an ell and three quarters will not
measure her from hip to hip

Ant S Then she bears some breadth?

Dro S No longer from head to foot than from
hip to hip she's spherical like a globe I could
find out countries in her

Ant S In what part of her body stands Ire-
land?

Dro S Marry sir in her buttocks I found it
out by the bogs

Ant S Where Scotland?

Dro S I found it by the barrenness hard in the
palm of the hand

Ant S Where France?

Dro S In her forehead armed and reverted
making war against her hair

Ant S Where England?

Dro S I looked for the chalky cliffs but I
could find no whiteness in them but I guess it

stood in her chin by the salt rheum that ran between France and it

Ant S Where Spain?

Dro S Faith, I saw it not, but I felt it hot in her breath

Ant S Where America, the Indies?

Dro S Oh, sir, upon her nose, all o'er embellished with rubies, carbuncles sapphires declining their rich aspect to the hot breath of Spain, who sent whole armadoes of caracks to be ballast at her nose

Ant S Where stood Belgia the Netherlands?

Dro S Oh sir I did not look so low To conclude this drudge, or diviner laid claim to me, called me Dromio, swore I was assured to her, told me what privy marks I had about me as the mark of my shoulder, the mole in my neck, the great wart on my left arm, that I amazed ran from her as a witch

And I think, if my breast had not been made of faith and my heart of steel

She had transform'd me to a curtal dog and made me turn the wheel

Ant S Go hie thee presently, post to the road
 An if the wind blow any way from shore
 I will not harbour in this town to-night
 If any bark put forth, come to the mart
 Where I will walk till thou return to me
 If every one knows us and we know none
 'Tis time I think to trudge pack, and be gone

Dro S As from a bear a man would run for life,
 So fly I from her that would be my wife [Exit]

Ant S There's none but witches do inhabit here,

And therefore 'tis high time that I were hence
 She that doth call me husband even my soul
 Doth for a wife abhor But her fair sister,
 Possess'd with such a gentle sovereign grace,
 Of such enchanting presence and discourse,
 Hath almost made me traitor to my self
 But lest my self be guilty to self wrong
 I'll stop mine ears against the mermaid's song

Enter ANGELO with the chain

Ang Master Antipholus—

Ant S Ah that's my name

Ang I know it well sir lo here is the chain
 I thought to have taken you at the Porpentine
 The chain unfinish'd made me stay thus long

Ant S What is your will that I shall do with this?

Ang What please yourself, sir I have made it for you

Ant S Made it for me, sir? I bespoke it not

Ang Not once nor twice, but twenty times
 you have

Go home with it and please your wife withal,
 And soon at supper time I'll visit you

And then receive my money for the chain

Ant S I pray you, sir, receive the money now,
 For fear you ne'er see chain nor money more

Ang You are a merry man, sir fare you well [Exit]

Ant S What I should think of this, I cannot tell

But thus I think, there's no man is so vain
 That would refuse so fair an offer'd chain

I see a man here needs not live by shifts
 When in the streets he meets such golden gifts

I'll to the mart and there for Dromio stay
 If any ship put out, then straight away [Exit]

ACT IV

SCENE I A public place

Enter SECOND MERCHANT, ANGELO, and an OFFICER

2nd Mer You know since Pentecost the sum is due,

And since I have not much importuned you,
 Nor now I had not but that I am bound
 To Persia and want guilders for my voyage
 Therefore make present satisfaction,
 Or I'll attach you by this officer

Ang Even just the sum that I do owe to you
 Is growing to me by Antipholus

And in the instant that I met with you
 He had of me a chain at five o'clock

I shall receive the money for the same
 Pleaseth you walk with me down to his house,
 I will discharge my bond and thank you too

Enter ANTIPHOLUS OF EPHESUS and DROMIO OF EPHESUS from the courtesans

Off That labour may you save see where he comes

Ant E While I go to the goldsmith's house, go thou

And buy a rope send that will I bestow

Among my wife and her confederates

For locking me out of my doors by day

But soft! I see the goldsmith Get thee gone

Buy thou a rope and bring it home to me

Dro E I buy a thousand pound a year I buy a rope [Exit]

Ant E A man is well help up that trusts to you

I remember your presence and the chain
 But neither chain nor goldsmith came to me
 Belike you thought our love would last too long
 If it were chain'd together, and therefore came not

Ang Saving your merry humour here's the note
 How much your chain weighs to the utmost carat
 The fineness of the gold and chargeful fashion,
 Which doth amount to three odd ducats more 30
 Than I stand debted to this gentleman
 I pray you see him presently discharged
 For he is bound to sea and stays but for it
Ant E I am not furnish'd with the present money
 Besides I have some business in the town
 Good signior take the stranger to my house
 And with you take the chain and bid my wife
 Disburse the sum on the receipt thereof
 Perchance I will be there as soon as you
Ang Then you will bring the chain to her yourself
Ant E No bear it with you lest I come not
 time enough
Ang Well sir I will have you the chain about
 you?
Ant E An if I have not sir I hope you have
 Or else you may return without your money
Ang Nay come I pray you sir give me the
 chain
 Both wind and tide stays for this gentleman,
 And I to blame, have held him here too long
Ant E Good Lord! you use this dalliance to
 excuse
 Your breach of promise to the Porpentine
 I should have chid you for not bringing it 50
 But like a shrew you first begin to brawl
and Mer The hour teals on I pray you sit
 d spatch
Ang You hear how he unportunes me the
 chain!
Ant E Why give it to my wife and fetch your
 money
Ang Come come you know I gave it you even
 now
 Let her send the chain or send me by some token
Ant F Fie, now you run this humour out of
 breath
 Come where's the chain? I pray you let me see
 it
and Mer My business cannot brook this dalli-
 ance
 Good sir say whether you'll answer me or no 60
 If not I'll leave him to the officer
Ant F I answer you what should I answer
 you?
Ant The money that you owe me for the
 chain
Ant F I owe you none till I receive the chain
Ang You know I gave it you half an hour since

Ant E You gave me none you wrong me
 much to say so
Ang You wrong me more sir in denying it
 Consider how it stands upon my credit
and Mer Well officer arrest him at my suit
Off I do and charge you in the Duke's name
 to obey me 70
Ang This touches me in reputation
 Either consent to pay this sum for me
 Or I attach you by this officer
Ant E Consent to pay thee that I never had!
 Arrest me foolish fellow if thou darest
Ang Here is thy fee arrest him officer
 I would not spare my brother in this case
 If he should scorn me so apparently
Off I do arrest you sir you hear the suit
Ant E I do obey thee till I give thee bail
 But sirrah you shall buy this sport as dear 80
 As all the metal in your shop will answer
Ang Sir sir I shall have law in Ephesus
 To your notorious shame I doubt it not

Enter DRO HOOF SYRACUSE from the Bay

Dro S Master there is a bark of Epidamnum
 That stays but till her owner comes aboard
 And then sir she bears away Our freight
 age sir
 I have convey'd aboard and I have bought
 The oil the balsamum and aqua vitae
 The ship is in her trim the merry wind 90
 Blows fair from land they stay for now fit at all
 But for their owner master and yourself
Ant E How now a madman! Why thou
 peevish sheep
 What ship of Epidamnum stays for me?
Dro S A ship you sent me to to hire waftage
Ant E Thou drunken slave I sent thee for a
 rope
 And told thee to what purpose and what end
Dro S You sent me for a rope's end as soon
 You sent me to the bay sir for a bark
Ant F I will debate this matter at more lei-
 sure 100
 And teach your ears to list me with more heed
 To Adriana, villain, hie thee strait
 Give her this key and tell her in the desk
 That a cozen'd officer with Turkish tapestry
 There is a purse of ducats let her send it
 Tell her I am arrested in the street
 And that shall bail me hie thee slave be gone!
 On, officer to prison till it come
 [Exit SECOND MERCHANT ANGELO
 OFFICER and ANTIPHOLUS OF
 EPHESUS
Dro S To Adriana that is where we dined
 Where Dow-sabel did claim me for her husband

She is too big I hope, for me to compass
Thither I must, although against my will,
For servants must their masters' minds fulfil
[Exit

SCENE II *The house of Antipholus of
Ephesus*

Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA

Adr Ah Luciana, did he tempt thee so?
Mightst thou perceive austerely in his eye
That he did plead in earnest? yea or no?
Look'd he or red or pale or sad or merrily?
What observation madest thou in this case
Of his heart's meteors tilting in his face?
Luc First he denied you had in him no right
Adr He meant he did me none the more my
spite
Luc Then swore he that he was a stranger here
Adr And true he swore though yet forsworn
he were 10
Luc Then pleaded I for you
Adr And what said he?
Luc That love I begg'd for you he begg'd of me
Adr With what persuasion did he tempt thy
love?
Luc With words that in an honest suit might
move
First he did praise my beauty, then my speech
Adr Didst speak him fair?
Luc Have patience I beseech
Adr I cannot, nor I will not hold me still,
My tongue though not my heart shall have his
will
He is deformed crook'd old and sere
Ill faced worse bodied shapeless every where
Vicious ungentle foolish blunt unkind 21
Sigmatical in maling worse in mind
Luc Who would be jealous then of such a one?
No evil lost is wail'd when it is gone
Adr Ah but I think him better than I say,
And yet would herein others eyes were worse
Far from her nest the lapwing cries away
My heart prays for him though my tongue do
curse

Enter DROMIO OF SYRACUSE

Dro S Here! go the desk, the purse! sweet,
now, make haste
Luc How hast thou lost thy breath?
Dro S By running fast 30
Adr Where is thy master Dromio? is he well?
Dro S No he's in Tartar limbo worse than hell
A devil in an everlasting garment hath him,
One whose hard heart is button'd up with steel,
A fiend a fury pitiless and rough
A wolf, nay worse, a fellow all in buff,

A back-friend, a shoulder clapper, one that coun-
termands
The passages of alleys, creeks and narrow lands,
A hound that runs counter and yet draws dry-
foot well
One that before the judgement carries poor souls
to hell 40
Adr Why, man what is the matter?
Dro S I do not know the matter he is rested
on the case
Adr What, is he arrested? Tell me at whose
suit
Dro S I know not at whose suit he is arrested
well,
But he's in a suit of buff which 'rested him that
can I tell
Will you send him mistress, redemption the
money in his desk?

Adr Go fetch it, sister [Exit LUCIANA] This I
wonder at
That he, unknown to me, should be in debt
Tell me was he arrested on a band?
Dro S Not on a band but on a stronger thing,
A chain a chain! Do you not hear it ring? 51
Adr What the chain?
Dro S No no, the bell 'tis time that I were
gone

It was two ere I left him and now the clock
strikes one
Adr The hours come back! that did I never
hear
Dro S O, yes if any hour meet a sergeant a
turns back for very fear
Adr As if Time were in debt! how fondly dost
thou reason!
Dro S Time is a very bankrupt and owes more
than he's worth to season
Nay he's a thief too have you not heard men
say
That Time comes stealing on by night and day?
If Time be in debt and theft, and a sergeant in
the way 61
Hath he not reason to turn back an hour in a day?

Re enter LUCIANA with a purse

Adr Go Dromio there's the money bear it
straight
And bring thy master home immediately
Come, sister I am press'd down with conceit—
Conceit my comfort and my injury [Exit]

SCENE III *A public place*

Enter ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE

Art S There's not a man I meet but doth salute
me
As if I were their well acquainted friend

And every one doth call me by my name
 Some tender money to me some invite me
 Some other give me thanks for kindnesses
 Some offer me commodities to buy
 Even now a tailor call'd me in his shop
 And show'd me silks that he had bought for me
 And therewithal took measure of my body
 Sure these are but imaginary wiles
 And Lapland sorcerers inhabit here 10

Enter DROMIO OF SYRACUSE

Dro S Master here's the gold you sent me for
 What have you got the picture of old Adam
 new apparelled?

Ant S What gold is this? what Adam dost thou
 mean?

Dro S Not that Adam that kept the Paradise
 but that Adam that keeps the prison he that goes
 in the calf's skin that was killed for the Prodigal
 he that came behind you sir like an evil an' el
 and bid you forsake your liberty 20

Ant S I understand thee not

Dro S No? why tis a plain case he that went
 like a bass viol in a case of feather the man sir
 that when gentlemen are tired gives them a sob
 and rests them he sir that takes pity on de-
 cayed men and gives them suits of durance he
 that sets up his rest to do more exploits with his
 mace than a morris pike

Ant S What thou meanest an officer?

Dro S Ay sir the sergeant of the band he that
 brings any man to answer it that breaks his band
 one that thinks a man always going to bed and
 says God give you good rest

Ant S Well sir there rest in your foolery Is
 there any ship puts forth to-night? may we be
 gone?

Dro S Why sir I brought you word an hour
 since that the bark *Expedite* on put forth to-night
 and then were you hindered by the sergeant to
 tarry for the hoy *Delav* Here are the angels that
 you sent for to deliver you

Ant S The fellow is d'st'ract and so am I
 And here we wander in illusions
 Some blessed power deliver us from hence!

Enter a COURTIZAN

Cater Well met well met, Master Antipholus
 I see sir you have found the goldsmith now
 Is that the chain you promised me to-day?

Ant S Satan, avoid I charge thee tempt me
 not

Dro S Master is this Mistress Satan?

Ant S It is the devil 30

Dro S Nay she is worse she is the devil's
 dam and here she comes in the habit of a light

wench and thereof comes that the wenches say
 God damn me that's as much to say God
 make me a light wench It is written they ap-
 pear to men like angels of light light is an effect
 of fire and fire will burn ergo light wenches
 will burn Come not near her

Cour Your man and you are marvellous merry
 sir

Will you go with me? We'll mend our dinner
 here? 60

Dro S Master if you do expect spoon meat
 or bespeak a long spoon

Ant S Why Dromio?

Dro S Marry he must have a long spoon that
 must eat with the devil

Ant S Avoid then fiend! what tell'st thou me
 of supping?

Thou art as you are all a sorceress
 I conjure thee to leave me and be gone

Cour Give me the ring of mine you had at
 dinner

Or for my diamond the chain you promised 70
 And I'll be gone sir and not trouble you

Dro S Some devils ask but the parings of one's
 nail

A ru h a ha a drop of blood a pin,
 A nut a cherry stone

But she more covetous would have a chain
 Master be wise an if you give it her

The devil will shake her chain and fright us with
 it

Cour I pray you sir my ring or else the chain
 I hope you do not mean to cheat me so

Ant S Avaunt thou witch! Come Dromio let
 us go 80

Dro S Fly pride says the peacock mistress
 that you know

*[Exeunt ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE and
 DROMIO OF SYRACUSE]*

Cour Now out of doubt Antipholus is mad
 Else would he never so demean himself
 A ring he hath of mine worth forty ducats
 And for the same he promised me a chain
 Both one and other he denies me now
 The reason that I gather he is mad
 Besides this present instance of his rage
 Is a mad tale he told to-day at dinner
 Of his own doors being shut against his en-
 trance

Belike his wife acquainted with his fits 91
 On purpose shut the doors against his way
 My way is now to hie home to his house
 And tell his wife that being lunatic,
 He rush'd into my house and took perforce
 My ring away Th's course I fittest choose
 For forty ducats is too much to lose *[Exit]*

SCENE IV *A street*

Enter ANTIPHOLUS OF EPHEBUS and the OFFICER

Ant E Fear me not, man, I will not break away

I'll give thee, ere I leave thee so much money,
To warrant thee, as I am rested for
My wife is in a wayward mood to day,
And will not lightly trust the messenger
That I should be attach'd in Ephesus,
I tell you 'twill sound harshly in her ears

Enter DROMIO OF EPHEBUS with a rope s-end

Here comes my man, I think he brings the money

How now, sir? have you that I sent you for?

Dro E Here's that, I warrant you, will pay them all

Ant E But where's the money?

Dro E Why sir, I gave the money for the rope

Ant E Five hundred ducats villain, for a rope?

Dro E I'll serve you, sir, five hundred at the rate

Ant E To what end did I bid thee hire thee home?

Dro E To a rope s end sir and to that end am I returned

Ant E And to that end sir, I will welcome you [*Beating him*]

Off Good sir, be patient

Dro E Nay, 'tis for me to be patient, I am in adversity

Off Good now hold thy tongue

Dro E Nay, rather persuade him to hold his hands

Ant E Thou whoreson, senseless villain!

Dro E I would I were senseless sir, that I might not feel your blows

Ant E Thou art sensible in nothing but blows, and so is an ass

Dro E I am an ass indeed you may prove it by my long ears I have served him from the hour of my nativity to this instant and have nothing at his hands for my service but blows When I am cold he heats me with beating when I am warm he cools me with beating I am waked with it when I sleep raised with it when I sit driven out of doors with it when I go from home welcomed home with it when I return nay I bear it on my shoulders, as a beggar wont her brat and I think, when he hath lamed me, I shall beg with it from door to door

Ant I Come go along my wife is coming yonder

Enter ADRIANA, LUCIANA the COURTEZAN, and PINCH

Dro E Mistress, "*respice finem*" respect your end or rather the prophecy like the parrot "*beware the rope s end*"

Ant E Wilt thou still talk? [*Beating him*]

Cour How say you now? in not your husband mad?

Adr His incivility confirms no less

Good Doctor Pinch, you are a conjurer, 50
Establish him in his true sense again,

And I will please you what you will demand

Luc Alas, how fiery and how sharp he looks!

Cour Mark how he trembles in his ecstasy!

Pinch Give me your hand and let me feel your pulse

Ant E There is my hand, and let it feel your ear [*Striking him*]

Pinch I charge thee, Satan, housed within this man

To yield possession to my holy prayers

And to thy state of darkness hue thee straight

I conjure thee by all the saints in heaven! 60

Ant E Peace, doting wizard, peace! I am not mad

Adr O, that thou were not poor distressed soul!

Ant E You minion, you, are these your customers?

Did this companion with the saffron face

Revel and feast it at my house to-day,

Whilst upon me the guilty doors were shut

And I denied to enter in my house?

Adr O husband, God doth know you dined at home,

Where would you had remain'd until this time

Free from these slanders and this open shame!

Ant E Dined at home! Thou villain what sayest thou? 71

Dro E Sir sooth to say, you did not dine at home

Ant E Were not my doors lock'd up and I shut out?

Dro E *Perdue* your doors were lock'd and you shut out

Ant E And did not she herself revile me there?

Dro E *Sans fable* she herself reviled you there

Ant F Did not her kitchen maid rail taunt, and scorn me?

Dro E Certes she did the kitchen vestal scorn'd you

Ant F And did not I in rage depart from thence?

Dro F In verity you did, my bones bear news

That since have felt the vigour of his rage

Adr Is 't good to soothe him in these contraries?

Pinch It is no shame the fellow finds his vein

And yielding to him humours all his frenzy

Ant E Thou hast suborn'd the goldsmith to arrest me

Adr Alas I sent you money to redeem you

By Dromio here who came in haste for it

Dro E Money by me! heart and good will you might

But surely master not a rag of money

Ant E Wentst not thou to her for a purse of ducats? 90

Adr He came to me and I deliver'd it

Luc And I am witness with her that she did

Dro E God and the rope-maker bear me witness

That I was sent for nothing but a rope!

Pinch Mistress both man and master is possess'd

I know it by their pale and deadly looks

They must be bound and laid in some dark room

Ant E Say wherefore didst thou lock me forth to-day?

And why dost thou deny the bag of gold?

Adr I did not gentle husband lock thee forth 100

Dro E And gentle master I received no gold

But I confess sir that we were lock'd out

Adr Dissembling villain thou speakest false in both

Ant E Dissembling harlot thou art false in all

And art confederate with a damned pack

To make a loathsome object scorn of me

But with these nails I'll pluck out these false eyes

That would behold in me this shameful sport

Enter three or four and offer to bind him He strikes

Adr O bind him bind him! let him not come near me

Pinch More company The fiend is strong within him 110

Luc Ay me, poor man, how pale and wan he looks!

Ant E What wilt you murder me? Thou gaoler thou

I am thy prisoner wilt thou suffer them

To make a rescue?

Off Masters let him go

He is my prisoner and you shall not have him

Pinch Go bind this man, for he is frantic too

They offer to bind DROMIO OF EPHESES

Adr What wilt thou do, thou peevish officer?

Hast thou delight to see a wretched man

Do outrage and displeasure to himself?

Off He is my prisoner if I let him go 120

The debt he owes will be required of me

Adr I will discharge thee ere I go from thee

Bear me forthwith unto his creditor

And knowing how the debt grows I will pay it

Good master doctor see him safe convey'd

Home to my house O most unhappy day!

Ant E O most unhappy strumpet!

Dro E Master I am here enter'd in bond for you

Ant E Out on thee villain! wherefore dost thou mad me?

Dro E Will you be bound for nothing? be mad good master cry The devil! 131

Luc God help poor souls how idly do they talk!

Adr Go bear him hence Sister go you with me [*Exeunt all but ADRIANA LUCIANA*

OFFICER in COURTLYAN

Say now who is suit he arrested at?

Off One Angelo a goldsmith do you know him?

Adr I know the man What is the sum he owes?

Off Two hundred ducats

Adr Say how grows it due?

Off Due for a chain your husband had of him

Adr He did bespeak a chain for me but had it not

Cour When as your husband all in rage to-day Came to my house and took away my ring— 141

The ring I saw upon his finger now—

Strait after did I meet him with a chain

Adr It may be so but I did never see it

Come, gaoler bring me where the goldsmith is I long to know the truth hereof at large

Enter ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE with his rapier drawn and DROMIO OF SYRACUSE

Luc God, for thy mercy! they are loose again

Adr And come with naked swords

Let's call more help to have them bound again

Off Away! they'll kill us 150

[*Exeunt all but ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE and DROMIO OF SYRACUSE*

Ant S I see these witches are afraid of swords

Dro S She that would be your wife now ran from you

Ant S Come to the Centaur fetch our stuff from thence

I know that we were safe and sound aboard

Dro S Faith, stay here this night they will surely do us no harm you saw they speak us fair give us gold methinks they are such a gentle nation that but for the mountain of mad flesh that claims marriage of me, I could find in my heart to stay here still and turn witch 160

Ant S I will not stay to-night for all the town

Therefore away, to get our stuff aboard

[*Exeunt*]

ACT V

SCENE I *A street before a Priory*

Enter SECOND MERCHANT *and* ANGELO

Ang I am sorry, sir, that I have hinder'd you,
But, I protest he had the chain of me
Though most dishonestly he doth deny it
2nd Mer How is the man esteem'd here in the city?

Ang Of very reverend reputation, sir,
Of credit infinite, highly beloved,
Second to none that lives here in the city
His word might bear my wealth at any time

2nd Mer Speak softly yonder as I think, he walks

9

Enter ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE *and* DROMIO OF SYRACUSE

Ang 'Tis so, and that self chain about his neck
Which he forswore most monstrously to have
Good sir, draw near to me, I'll speak to him
Signior Antipholus, I wonder much
That you would put me to this shame and trouble,
And not without some scandal to yourself,
With circumstance and oaths so to deny
This chain which now you wear so openly
Beside the charge the shame imprisonment,
You have done wrong to this my honest friend,
Who, but for staying on our controversy, 20
Had hoisted sail and put to sea to-day

This chain you had of me, can you deny it?

Ant S I think I had I never did deny it

2nd Mer Yes that you did sir and forswore it too

Ant S Who heard me to deny it or forswear it?

2nd Mer These ears of mine thou know'st, did hear thee

Lie on thee wretch! 'tis pity that thou livest
To wall where any honest men resort

Ant S Thou art a villain to impeach me thus
I'll prove mine honour and mine honesty 30

Against thee presently if thou dar'st stand

2nd Mer I dare, and do defy thee for a villain
They draw

Enter ADRIANA LUCIANA *the* COURTLAZAN, *and* others

Adr I hold hurt him not for God's sake! he is mad

Some get within him take his sword away
Bind Dromio too and bear them to my house

Dro S Run, master, run, for God's sake take a house!

This is some priory In, or we are spoil'd!

[*Exeunt* ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE *and* DROMIO OF SYRACUSE *to the Priory*]

Enter the LADY ABBESS

Abb Be quiet, people Wherefore throng you hither?

Adr To fetch my poor distracted husband hence

Let us come in, that we may bind him fast 40
And bear him home for his recovery

Ang I knew he was not in his perfect wits
2nd Mer I am sorry now that I did draw on him

Abb How long hath this possession held the man?

Adr This week he hath been heavy, sour, sad,
And much different from the man he was,
But till this afternoon his passion
Ne'er brake into extremity of rage

Abb Hath he not lost much wealth by wreck of sea?

Buried some dear friend? Hath not else his eye
Stray'd his affection in unlawful love? 51
A sin prevailing much in youthful men,
Who give their eyes the liberty of gazing
Which of these sorrow's is he subject to?

Adr To none of these except it be the last,
Namely, some love that drew him oft from home

Abb You should for that have reprehended him

Adr Why, so I did

Abb As but not rough enough

Adr As roughly as my modesty would let me

Abb Haply, in private

Adr And in assemblies too 61

Abb It was the copy of our conference

In bed he slept not for my urging it

At board he fed not for my urging it,

Alone, it was the subject of my theme,

In company I often glanced it

Still did I tell him it was vile and bad

Abb And thereof came it that the man was mad

The venom clamours of a jealous woman
Poisons more deadly than a mad dog's tooth 70

It seems his sleeps were hinder'd by thy railing

And thereof comes it that his head is light

Thou say'st his meat was sauced with thy upbraiding

Unquiet meals make ill digestions

Thereof the raging fire of fever bred

And what's a fever but a fit of madness?

Thou say'st his sports were hinder'd by thy
brawls

Sweet recreation barr'd what doth ensue
But moody and dull melancholy
Kinsman to grim and comfortless despair 80
And at her heels a huge infectious troop
Of pale distemperatures and foes to life?
In food in sport and life preserving rest
To be disturb'd would mad or man or beast
The consequence is then thy jealous fits
I have scared thy husband from the use of wits
Luc She never reprehended him but mildly
When he demean'd himself rough rude and
wildly

Why bear you these rebukes and answer not?
Adr She did betray me to my own reproof 90

Good people enter and lay hold on him
Abb No not a creature enters in my house
Adr Then let your servants bring my husband
forth

Abb Neither he took this place for sanctuary
And it shall privilege him from your hands
Till I have brought him to his wits again
Or lose my labour in assailing it
Adr I will attend my husband be his nurse,
Diet his sickness for it is my office
And will have no attorney but myself 100
And therefore let me have him home with me

All Be patient for I will not let him stir
Till I have used the approved means I have
With wholesome syrups drugs and holy prayers
To make of him a formal man again
It is a branch and parcel of mine oath
A charitable duty of my order

Therefore depart and leave him here with me
Adr I will not hence and leave my husband
here

And ill it doth beseem your holiness 110
To separate the husband and the wife

Abb Be quiet and depart thou shalt not have
him [Exit

Luc Complain unto the Duke of this indignity
Adr Come go I will fall prostrate at his feet
And never rise until my tears and prayers
I have won his Grace to come in person hither
And take perforce my husband from the abbess
Ant *Mer* My thus I think the dial points at five
Anon I'm sure the Duke himself in person
Comes this way to the melancholy vale 120
The place of death and sorry execution,
Behind the ditches of the abbey here

A Upon what cause?
Ant *Mer* To see a reverend Syracusan mer-
chant

Who put unluckily into this bay
Against the laws and statutes of this town,

Beheaded publicly for his offence
Ang See where they come we will behold his
death

Luc Kneel to the Duke before he pass the
abbey

Enter DUKE attended ALGON bareheaded
with the Headsmen and other Officers

Duke Yet once again proclaim it publicly 130
If any friend will pay the sum for him

He shall not die so much we tender him
Adr Justice most sacred Duke against the
abbess!

Duke She is a virtuous and a reverend lady
It cannot be that she hath done thee wrong

Adr May it please your grace Antipholus my
husband

Whom I made lord of me and all I had
At your important letters—this ill day
A most outrageous fit of madness took him
That desperately he hurried through the street—
With him his bondman all as mad as he— 141
Doing displeasure to the citizens

By rushing in their houses bearing thence
Pings jewels any thing his rage did like
Once did I get him bound and sent him home
Whilst to take order for the wrongs I went
That here and there his fury had committed
Anon I wot not by what strong escape
He broke from those that had the guard of him

And with his mad attendant and himself 150
Each one with ireful passion with drawn swords
Met us a while and madly bent on us
Chased us away till raising of more aid

We came again to bind them Then they fled
Into this abbey whither we pursued them
And here the abbess shuts the gates on us
And will not suffer us to fetch him out
Nor send him forth that we may bear him hence
Therefore most gracious Duke with thy com-
mand

Let him be brought forth and borne hence for
help

Duke Long since thy husband served me in my
vars 161

And I to thee engaged a prince's word
When thou didst make him master of thy bed
To do him all the grace and good I could
Go some of you knock at the abbey-gate
And bid the lady abbess come to me
I will determine this before I stir

Enter a SERVANT

Serv O mistress mistress shift and save your
self!

My master and his man are both broke loose,

Beaten the maids a row and bound the doctor, 170
Whose beard they have singed off with brands
of fire,

And ever, as it blazed, they threw on him
Great pails of puddled mire to quench the hair
My master preaches patience to him and the
while

His man with scissors nicks him like a fool
And sure, unless you send some present help,
Between them they will kill the conjurer

Adr Peace, fool! thy master and his man are
here

And that is false thou dost report to us

Serv Mistress upon my life, I tell you true,
I have not breathed almost since I did see it 181
He cries for you and vows, if he can take you,
To scorch your face and to disfigure you

Cry within

Hark! hark! I hear him mistress fly be gone!

Duke Come, stand by me, fear nothing Guard
with halberds!

Adr Ay me it is my husband! Witness you,
That he is borne about invisible
Even now we housed him in the abbey here
And now he's there, past thought of human
reason

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS OF EPHESUS and DROMIO
OF EPHESUS*

Ant Justice most gracious Duke O, grant
me justice! 190

Even for the service that long since I did thee,
When I bestrid thee in the wars and took
Deep scars to save thy life even for the blood
That then I lost for thee now grant me justice
Age Unless the fear of death doth make me
dote,

I see my son Antipholus and Dromio

Ant Justice sweet prince against that
woman there!

She whom thou gavest to me to be my wife,
That hath abused and dishonoured me
Even in the strength and height of injury! 200
Beyond imagination is the wrong

That she this day hath shameless thrown on me
Duke Discover how, and thou shalt find me
just

Ant E This day, great Duke, she shut the
doors upon me,

While she with harlots feasted in my house

Duke A grievous fault! Say, woman, didst thou
so?

Adr No my good lord my self he and my
sister

To-day did dine together So befall my soul
As this is false he burdens me withal!

Luc Ne'er may I look on day, nor sleep on
night

But she tells to your Highness simple truth!

Ang O perjured woman! They are both for-
sworn 210

In this the madman justly chargeth them

Ant E My liege, I am advised what I say,
Neither disturbed with the effect of wine
Nor heady rash provoked with raging ire,
Albeit my wrongs might make one wiser mad
This woman lock'd me out this day from dinner
That goldsmith there, were he not pack'd with
her,

Could witness it for he was with me then, 220

Who parted with me to go fetch a chain,

Promising to bring it to the Porpentine

Where Balthazar and I did dine together

Our dinner done, and he not coming thither,

I went to seek him in the street I met him

And in his company that gentleman

There did this perjured goldsmith swear me
down

That I this day of him received the chain

Which God he knows I saw not for the which

He did arrest me with an officer 230

I did obey and sent my peasant home

For certain ducats he with none return'd

Then fairly I bespoke the officer

To go in person with me to my house

By the way we met

My wife her sister, and a rabble more

Of vile confederates Along with them

They brought one Pinch a hungry lean faced
villain

A mere anatomy, a mountebank,

A threadbare juggler and a fortune teller

A needy, hollow-eyed sharp-looking wretch, 240

A living-dead man this pernicious slave

Forsooth took on him as a conjurer,

And, gazing in mine eyes feeling my pulse,

And with no face as twere out-facing me,

Cries out I was possess'd Then all together

They fell upon me bound me bore me thence

And in a dark and dankish vault at home

There left me and my man both bound together,

Till gnawing with my teeth my bonds in sunder

I gain'd my freedom and immediately 250

Ran hither to your Grace whom I beseech

To give me ample satisfaction

For these deep shames and great indignities

Ang My lord in truth thus far I witness with
him

That he dined not at home but was lock'd out

Duke But had he such a chain of thee or no?

Ang He had my lord and when he ran in here,
These people saw the chain about his neck

2nd Mer Besides I will be sworn these ears of mine
 Heard you confess you had the chain of him 60
 After you first forswore it on the mart
 And thereupon I drew my sword on you
 And then you fled into this abbey here
 From whence I think you are come by miracle
 Ant E I never came within these abbey walls
 Nor ever drist thou draw thy sword on me
 I never saw the chain so help me Heaven!
 And this is false you burden me withal
 Duke Why what an intricate impeach is this!
 I think you all have drunk of Circe's cup 270
 If here you housed him here he would have been
 If he were mad he would not plead so coldly
 You say he dined at home the goldsmith here
 Denies that saying Sirrah what say you?
 Dro E Sir he dined with her there at the Por-
 pentine
 Cour He did and from my finger snatch'd that
 ring
 Ant E 'Tis true my liege this ring I had of
 her
 Duke Sawst thou him enter at the abbey here?
 Cour As sure my liege as I do see your Grace
 Duke Why this is strange Go call the abbe-
 ss her 280
 I think you are all mated or stark mad
 {Exit on to the Abbess
 Age Most mighty duke vouchsafe me speak a
 word
 Haply I see a friend will ease my life
 And pay the sum that may deliver me
 D Be speak freely Syracusan what thou wilt
 Age Is not your name sir call'd Antipholus?
 And is not that your bondman Dromio?
 Dro F Within this hour I was his bondman
 sir
 Put he I thank him gnaw'd in two my cords
 Now am I Dromio and his man unbound 290
 Age I am sure you both of you remember me
 Dro F Ourselves we do remember sir by you
 For lately we were bound as you are now
 You are not Pinch's patient are you sir?
 Age Why look you strange on me? you know
 me well
 Ant F I never saw you in my life till now
 Age O grief hath charmed me since you saw
 me last
 And careful hour hath me so deformed hand
 Has written strange defeatures in my face
 But I may yet do that you not know my voice?
 Ant F Neither 301
 Age Dromio not thou?
 Dro F No trust me sir nor I
 Age I am sure thou dost

Dro E Ay sir but I am sure I do not and
 whatsoever a man deuces you are now bound to
 believe him

Age Not know my voice? O time's extremity
 Hast thou so crack'd and splitt'd my poor tongue
 In seven short years that here my only son
 Knows not my feeble key of untuned cares? 310

Though now this grained face of mine be hid
 In sap-consuming winter's drizzled snow
 And all the conduits of my blood froze up
 Yet hath my night of life some memory
 My wasting lamps some fading glimmer left
 My dull deaf ears a little use to hear
 All these old witnesses—I cannot err—
 Tell me thou art my son Antipholus

Ant E I never saw my father in my life 319

Age But seven years since in Syracuse boy
 Thou knowst we parted but perhaps my son
 Thou shamest to acknowledge me in misery

Ant E The Duke and all that know me in the
 city

Can witness with me that it is not so
 I never saw Syracuse in my life

Duke I tell thee Syracusan twenty years
 Have I been patron to Antipholus
 During which time he never saw Syracuse
 I see thy age and dangers make thee dore

Re-enter ABBESS WITH ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE
 and DROMIO OF SYRACUSE

Abb Most mighty Duke behold a man much
 wrong'd {All gather to see them } 330

Adr I see two husbands or mine eyes deceive
 me

Duke One of these men is Genus to the other
 And so of these Which is the natural man
 And which the spirit? who deciphers them?

Dro S I sir am Dromio command him away

Dro F I sir am Dromio pray let me stay

Ant S Alceon art thou not? or e'er his ghost?

Dro S O my old master! who hath bound him
 here?

Abb Whoever bound him I will loose his
 bonds

And gain a husband by his liberty 340

Speak old Alceon, if thou be at the man

That hadst a wife once call'd Emilia

That bore thee at a burden two fair sons

O if thou be the same Alceon speak

And speak unto the same Emilia!

Age If I dream not thou art Emilia

If thou art she tell me where is that son

That floated with thee on the fatal raft?

All By men of Ipidamnium he and I

And the rum Dromio all were taken up 350

But by and by rude fishermen of Corinth

By force took Dromio and my son from them
And me they left with those of Epidamnus
What then became of them I cannot tell,
I to this fortune that you see me in

Duke Why, here begins his morning story
right

These two Antipholuses, these two so like,
And these two Dromios one in semblance—
Besides her urging of her wreck at sea—

These are the parents to these children, 360
Which accidentally are met together
Antipholus, thou camest from Corinth first?

Ant S No, sir, not I, I came from Syracuse

Duke Stay, stand apart, I know not which is
which

Ant E I came from Corinth my most gracious
lord—

Dro E And I with him

Ant L Brought to this town by that most fa-
mous warrior,

Duke Menaphon, your most renowned uncle

Adr Which of you two did dine with me to day?

Ant S I, gentle mistress

Adr And are not you my husband?

Ant E No, I say nay to that 371

Ant S And so do I, yet did she call me so

And this fair gentlewoman, her sister here

Did call me brother [*To LUCIANA*] What I told
you then,

I hope I shall have leisure to make good,

If this be not a dream I see and hear

Ang That is the chain, sir, which you had of
me

Ant S I think it be, sir, I deny it not

Ant E And you, sir, for this chain arrested me

Ang I think I did, sir, I deny it not 380

Adr I sent you money, sir, to be your bail,

By Dromio, but I think he brought it not

Dro E No none by me

Ant S This purse of ducats I received from
you

And Dromio my man did bring them me

I see we still did meet each other a man

And I was taken for him and he for me

And thereupon these errors are arose

Ant E These ducats pawn I for my father here

Duke It shall not need, thy father hath his
life 390

Cour Sir, I must have that diamond from you

Ant E There take it, and much thanks for my
good cheer

Abb Renowned Duke, vouchsafe to take the
pains

To go with us into the abbey here

And hear at large discoursed all our fortunes

And all that are assembled in this place,

That by this sympathized one day's error

Have suffer'd wrong, go keep us company,

And we shall make full satisfaction

Thirty three years have I but gone in travail 400

Of you, my sons, and till this present hour

My heavy burthen never delivered

The Duke my husband and my children both,

And you the calendars of their nativity,

Go to a gossips' feast, and go with me,

After so long grief such festivity!

Duke With all my heart, I'll gossip at this feast

[*Exeunt all but ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE,*

ANTIPHOLUS OF EPHEBUS, DROMIO OF

SYRACUSE, and DROMIO OF EPHEBUS

Dro S Master, shall I fetch your stuff from

shipboard?

Ant E Dromio, what stuff of mine hast thou

embark'd?

Dro S Your goods that lay at host, sir, in the

Centaur 410

Ant S He speaks to me, I am your master,

Dromio

Come, go with us, we'll look to that anon

Embrace thy brother there, rejoice with him

[*Exeunt ANTIPHOLUS OF SYRACUSE and*

ANTIPHOLUS OF EPHEBUS

Dro S There is a fat friend at your master's
house,

That kitchen'd me for you to-day at dinner

She now shall be my sister, not my wife

Dro E Methinks you are my glass, and not my
brother

I see by you I am a sweet-faced youth

Will you walk in to see their gossiping?

Dro S Not I, sir, you are my elder 420

Dro E That's a question, how shall we try it?

Dro S We'll draw cuts for the senior, till then
lead thou first

Dro E Nay, then, thus

We came into the world like brother and brother,

And now let's go hand in hand, not one before

another

[*Exeunt*]

TITUS ANDRONICUS

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

SATURNINUS *eldest son to the late Emperor of Rome and afterwards declar'd Emperor*
 BASILIUS *brother to Saturninus in love with Lavinia*
 TITUS ANDRONICUS *a noble Roman general against the Goths*
 MARCUS ANDRONICUS *tribune of the people and brother to Titus*
 LUCIUS
 QUINTUS
 MARTIUS
 MUTIUS
 YOUNG LUCIUS *a boy son to Lucius*
 PUBLIUS *son to Marcus the tribune*
 ÆMILIUS *a noble Roman*
 DEMETRIUS
 CHIRON *sons to Tamora*

sons to Titus Andronicus

AARON *a Moor beloved by Tamora*

A CAPTAIN

A TRIBUNE

A MESSENGER

A CLOWN

THREE GOTHS

TAMORA *Queen of the Goths*

LAVINIA *daughter to Titus Andronicus*

A NURSE

NON-SPEAKING *Sempronius Cassius and Valentinus*
 KINSMEN
 TITUS ALARBUS *old son to Tamora*
 SENATORS
 TRIBUNES
 SOLDIERS
 ATTENDANTS
 ROMANS
 AND GOTH

SCENE *Rome and the country near it*

ACT I

SCENE I *Rome before the Capitol*

The Tomb of the Andronics appearing the TRIBUNES and Senators aloft Enter below from one side SATURNUS and his followers and from the other side BASILIUS and his followers with drum and colours

SAT. Noble patricians patrons of my right
 Defend the justice of my cause with arms
 And countrymen, my loving followers
 Plead my successive title with your swords
 I am his first born son, that was the last
 That wore the imperial diadem of Rome
 Then let my father's honours live in me
 Nor wrong mine age with this indignity
 But Romans friends followers favourers of
 my right
 If ever Bassianus Cæsar's son,
 Were gracious in the eyes of royal Rome,
 Keep then this passage to the Capitol
 And suffer not dishonour to approach
 The imperial seat to virtue consecrate
 To justice continence and nobility
 But let desert in pure elect on shine
 And, Romans, fight for freedom in your
 choice

Enter MARCUS ANDRONICUS aloft with the storm

MARC. Princes that strive by factions and by
 friends
 Ambitiously for rule and empire

Know that the people of Rome for whom we
 stand

20

A special party have by common voice,
 In election for the Roman empire
 Chosen Andronicus surnamed Pius
 For many good and great deserts to Rome
 A nobler man a braver warrior
 Lives not this day within the city walls
 He by the senate is accited home
 From weary wars against the barbarous Goths
 That with his sword is a terror to our foes
 Hath yoked a nation strong train'd up in arms
 Ten years are spent since first he undertook
 This cause of Rome and chastised with arms
 Our enemies pride five times he hath return'd
 Bleeding to Rome bearing his valiant sons
 In coffins from the field
 And now at last laden with honour and spoils
 Returns the good Andronicus to Rome
 Renowned Titus flourishing in arms
 Let us entreat by honour of his name,
 Whom worthily you would have now succeed
 And in the Capitol and senate a right
 Whom you pretend to honour and adore
 That you withdraw you and abate your strength
 Dismiss your followers and as suitors should
 Plead your deserts in peace and humbleness
 SAT. How far the tribune speaks to calm my
 thoughts

31

41

BUT Marcus Andronicus so I do affy
 In thy uprightness and integrity
 And so I love and honour thee and thine
 Thy noble brother Titus and his sons

50

And her to whom my thoughts are humbled all,
 Gracious Lavinia Rome's rich ornament,
 That I will here dismiss my loving friends,
 And to my fortunes and the people's favour
 Commit my cause in balance to be weigh'd

[Exeunt the followers of Bassianus]

Sat Friends, that have been thus forward in
 my right,

I thank you all and here dismiss you all,
 And to the love and favour of my country
 Commit myself my person, and the cause

[Exeunt the followers of Saturninus]

Rome be as just and gracious unto me 60

As I am confident and kind to thee

Open the gates, and let me in

Bas Tribunes and me, a poor competitor

*[Flourish SATURNINUS and BASSIANUS go up
 into the Capitol]*

Enter a CAPTAIN

Cap Romans, make way the good Andronicus,
 Patron of virtue, Rome's best champion,
 Successful in the battles that he fights
 With honour and with fortune is return'd
 From where he circumscribed with his sword
 And brought to yoke the enemies of Rome

*Drums and trumpets sounded Enter MARTIUS and
 MUTIUS, after them two men bearing a coffin
 covered with black, then LUCIUS and QUINTUS
 After them, TITUS ANDRONICUS, and then TA-
 MORA, with Alarbus DEMETRIUS CHIRON
 AARON and other Goths prisoners, Soldiers and
 People following The bearers set down the coffin
 and TITUS speaks*

Tit Hail, Rome victorious in thy mourning
 weeds! 70

Lo as the bark that hath discharged her freight
 Returns with precious lading to the bay
 From whence at first she weigh'd her anchorage
 Cometh Andronicus bound with laurel boughs
 To re salute his country with his tears
 Tears of true joy for his return to Rome
 Thou great defender of this Capitol
 Stand gracious to the rites that we intend!
 Romans of five and twenty valiant sons
 Half of the number that King Priam had 80
 Behold the poor remains alive and dead!
 These that survive let Rome reward with love
 These that I bring unto their latest home,
 With burial amongst their ancestors
 Here Goths have given me leave to sheathe my
 sword

Titus unkind and careless of thine own
 Why suffer'st thou thy sons unburied yet
 To hover on the dreadful shore of Styx?

Make way to lay them by their brethren

The tomb is opened

There greet in silence, as the dead are wont 90

And sleep in peace slain in your country's wars!

O sacred receptacle of my joys

Sweet cell of virtue and nobility,

How many sons of mine hast thou in store,

That thou wilt never render to me more!

Luc Give us the proudest prisoner of the Goths,

That we may hew his limbs and on a pile

Ad names fratrum sacrifice his flesh

Before this earthy prison of their bones

That so the shadows be not unappeased, 100

Nor we disturb'd with prodigies on earth

Tit I give him you, the noblest that survives,

The eldest son of this distressed queen

Tam Stay Roman brethren! Gracious
 conqueror

Victorious Titus rue the tears I shed,

A mother's tears in passion for her son

And if thy sons were ever dear to thee,

O think my son to be as dear to me!

Sufficeeth not that we are brought to Rome,

To beautify thy triumphs and return 110

Captive to thee and to thy Roman yoke

But must my sons be slaughter'd in the streets

For valiant doings in their country's cause?

O if to fight for king and commonweal

Were piety in thine it is in these

Andronicus stain not thy tomb with blood

Wilt thou draw near the nature of the gods?

Draw near them then in being merciful

Sweet mercy is nobility's true badge

Thrice noble Titus spare my first born son 120

Tit Patient yourself madam and pardon me

These are their brethren whom you Goths

beheld

Alive and dead and for their brethren slain

Religiously they ask a sacrifice

To this your son is mark'd and die he must

To appease their groaning shadows that are gone

Luc Away with him! and make a fire straight

And with our swords upon a pile of wood

Let's hew his limbs till they be clean consumed

[Exeunt LUCIUS QUINTUS MARTIUS and

MUTIUS with Alarbus]

Tam O cruel irreligious piety! 130

Chit Was ever Scythia half so barbarous?

Dem Oppose not Scythia to ambitious Rome

Alarbus goes to rest and we survive

To tremble under Titus threatening looks

Then madam stand resolved but hope withal

The self same gods that arm'd the Queen of

Troy

With opportunity of sharp revenge

Upon the Thracian tyrant in his tent

May say our Tamora the Queen of Goths—
When Goths were Goths and Tamora wa
queen—

To quit the bloody wrongs upon her foes 147

*Re-enter LUCIUS QUINTUS MARTIUS and
MUTUS with their swords bloody*

Luc See lord and father how we have
perform'd

Our Roman rites Alarbus limbs are lopp'd
And entrails feed the sacrificing fire
Whose smoke like incense doth perfume the
sky

Remaineth nought but to inter our brethren
And with loud larums welcome them to Rome
Tit Let it be so and let Andronicus

Make this his latest farewell to their souls
Trumpets sounded and the effin laid in the womb
In peace and honour rest you here my sons 150
Rome's readiest champions repose you here in
rest

Secure from worldly chances and mishaps!
Here lurks no treason here no envy swells
Here grow no damned grudges here are no
storms

No noise but silence and eternal sleep
In peace and honour rest you here my sons!

Enter Lavinia

Lat In peace and honour live Lord Titus long
My noble lord and father live in fame!

Lo at this tomb my tributary tears
I render for my brethren's obsequies 160
And at thy feet I kneel with tears of joy
Shed on the earth for thy return to Rome
O bless me here with thy victorious hand
Who's fortunes Rome's best citizens applaud!
Tit Kind Rome that has thus lovingly
reserved

The cordial of mine age to glad my heart!
Lavinia I'll outlive thy father's days
And fame's eternal date for virtue's praise!

*Enter Titus, MARCUS ANDRONICUS and TRIBUNES
re-enter SATURNINUS and BASILIUS attended*

Marc Long live Lord Titus my beloved
brother
Gracious triumpher in the eyes of Rome! 170
Tit Thanks gentle tribune noble brother
Marcus

Marc And welcome, nephews from successful
wars

You that survive and you that sleep in fame!
Fair lords your fortunes are alike in all
That in your country's service drew your swords
But safer triumph is this funeral pomp

That he has aspired to Solon's happiness
And triumphs over chance in honour's bed
Titus Andronicus the people of Rome
Whose friend in justice thou hast ever been 180
Send thee by me their tribune and their trust
This pallament of white and spotless hue
And name thee in election for the empire
With these our late-deceased emperor's sons
Be *candidatus* then and put it on
And help to set a head on headless Rome

Tit A better head her glorious body fits
Than his that shakes for age and feebleness
What should I don this robe and trouble you?
Be chosen with proclamations to-day 190
To-morrow yield up rule resign my life
And set abroad new business for you all!
Rome I have been thy soldier forty years
And led my country's strength successfully
And buried one and twenty valiant sons
Knighthood in field slain manfully in arms
In right and service of their noble country
Give me a staff of honour for mine age
But not a sceptre to control the world
Upright he held it lords that held it last 200

Marc Titus thou shalt obtain and ask the
empire

Sat Proud art ambitious tribune canst thou
sell?

Tit Patience Prince Saturninus

Sat Romans to me right
Patricians draw your swords and sheathe them
not

Till Saturninus be Rome's emperor
Andronicus would thou wert shipp'd to hell
Rather than rob me of the people's hearts!

Luc Proud Saturnine interrupter of the good
That noble minded Titus means to thee!

Tit Content thee Prince I will restore to
thee 210
The people's hearts and wean them from them-
selves

Bas Andronicus I do not flatter thee
But honour thee and will do till I die
My faction if thou strengthen with thy friends
I will most thankful be and thanks to men
Of noble minds is honourable meed

Tit People of Rome and people's tribunes here
I ask your voices and your suffrages
Will you bestow them friendly on Andronicus?

Tribunes To gratify the good Andronicus 220
And gratulate his safe return to Rome
The people will accept whom he advises
Tit Tribunes I thank you and this suit I
make

That you create your Emperor's eldest son
Lord Saturnine whose virtues will I hope

Reflect on Rome as Titan's rays on earth,
And ripen justice in this commonweal
Then if you will elect by my advice
Crown him and say 'Long live our Emperor!'

Marc With voices and applause of every sort
Patricians and plebeians we create 231

Lord Saturninus Rome's great Emperor
And say "Long live our Emperor Saturnine!"

A long flourish till they come down

Sat Titus Andronicus for thy favours done
To us in our election this day

I give thee thanks in part of thy deserts
And will with deeds requite thy gentleness

And, for an onset Titus, to advance

Thy name and honourable family,

Lavinia will I make my empress, 240

Rome's royal mistress of my heart

And in the sacred Pantheon her espouse

Tell me Andronicus, doth this motion please
thee?

Tit It doth my worthy lord and in this match

I hold me highly honour'd of your Grace

And here in sight of Rome to Saturnine

King and commander of our commonweal

The wide world's Emperor do I consecrate

My sword my chariot and my prisoners 250

Presents well worthy Rome's imperial lord

Receive them then the tribute that I owe,

Mine honour's ensigns humbled at thy feet

Sat Thanks noble Titus father of my life!

How proud I am of thee and of thy gifts

Rome shall record and when I do forget

The least of these unspeakable deserts

Romans forget your fealty to me

Tit [To TAMORA] Now madam, are you

prisoner to an emperor,

To him that, for your honour and your state,

Will use you nobly and your followers 260

Sat A goodly lady trust me of the hue

That I would choose were I to choose anew

Clear up fair queen that cloudy countenance

Though chance of war hath wrought this change
of cheer

Thou comest not to be made a scorn in Rome

Princely shall be thy usage every way

Rest on my word and let not discontent

Daunt all your hopes madam he comforts you

Can make you greater than the Queen of

Goths

Lavinia you are not displeased with this? 270

Lav Nor I my lord with true nobility

Warrants these words in princely courtesy

Sat Thanks sweet Lavinia Romans let us go

Ransomes here we set our prisoners free

Proclaim our honours lords with trumpet

drum

*Flourish SATURNINUS courts TAMORA
in dumb show*

Ba Lord Titus by your leave this maid is
mine [Seizing Lavinia]

Tit How sir! are you earnest then, my
lord?

Ba Ay noble Titus and resolved withal
To do my self this reason and this right 279

Marc 'Sum cuique' is our Roman justice

This prince in justice seizeth but his own

Luc And that he will, and shall if Lucius live

Tit Traitors, avaunt! Where is the Emperor's
guard?

Treason my lord! Lavinia is surprised!

Sat Surprised! by whom?

Ba By him that justly may

Bear his betroth'd from all the world away

[Exeunt BASSIANUS and MARCUS with LAVINIA]

Mut Brothers, help to convey her hence away,

And with my sword I'll keep this door safe

[Exeunt LUCIUS QUINTUS and MARTIUS]

Tit Follow my lord and I'll soon bring her
back

Mut My lord you pass not here

Tit What villain boy? 290

Barst me my way in Rome? [Stabbing MUTIUS]

Mut Help Lucius help! [Dies]

[During the fray SATURNINUS TAMORA DEMETRIUS CHIRON and AARON go out and re-enter,
above]

Re-enter LUCIUS

Luc My lord you are unjust, and more than so,
In wrongful quarrel you have slain your son

Tit Nor thou nor he, are any sons of mine,

My sons would never so dishonour me

Traitor restore Lavinia to the Emperor

Luc Dead if you will but not to be his wife
That is another's lawful promised love [Exit]

Sat No Titus no the Emperor needs her not
Nor her nor thee nor any of thy stock 300

I'll trust by leisure him that rocks me once

These never nor thy traitorous haughty sons

Confederates all thus to dishonour me

Was there none else in Rome to make a stale,

But Saturnine? Full well Andronicus

Agree these deeds with that proud brag of thine,

That saidst I begg'd the empire at thy hands

Tit O monstrous! what reproachful words are
these?

Sat But go thy ways go give the champion
piece 309

To him that flourish'd for her with his sword

A valiant son in law thou'lt all enjoy

One fit to band with this lawless son

To ruffle in the commonweal of Rome

Tit These words are razors to my wounded heart

Sat And therefore lovely Tamora queen of Goths

That like the stately Phoebe monst'rs her nymphs
Do rouse the gallant st daries of Rome
If thou be pleased with this my sudden choice
Behold I choose thee Tamora for my bride
And will create thee Empress of Rome 320
Speak Queen of Goths do thou applaud my choice?

And here I swear by all the Roman gods
Six priest and holy water are so near
And tapers burn so bright and everything
In readiness for Hymenæus stand
I will not re-salute the streets of Rome
Or climb my palace till from forth this place
I lead espoused my bride along with me

Tam And here in sight of heaven to Rome I
s wear

If Saturnine advance the Queen of Goths 330

She will a hand maid be to his desires
A loving nurse a mother to his youth

Sat Ascend fair queen Pantheon Lords
accompany

Your noble emperor and his lovely bride,
Sent by the heavens for Prince Saturnine
Whom was born hath her fortune conquered
There shall we consummate our spousal rites

[*Exeunt all but Titus*]

Tit I am not bid to wait upon this bride
Titus when wert thou wont to walk alone

Dishonour'd thus and challeng'd of wrongs? 340

Re-enter MARCUS LUCIUS QUINTUS and MARTIUS

Marc O Titus see O see what thou hast done!
In a bad quarrel slain a virtuous son

Tit No foolish tribute no no son of mine
Nor thou nor these confederates in the deed
That hath dishonour'd all our family
Unworthy brother and unworthy sons!

Luc But let us give him burial as becomes
Give Mutius burial with our brethren

Tit Traitors away! he rests not in this tomb
Th's monument five hundred years hath stood
Which I have sumptuously re-edified

Here none but soldiers and Rome's servitors
Repose in fame none basely slain in brawls
Bury him where you can he comes not here

Marc My lord th's is impiety in you
My nephew Mutius' deeds do plead for him
He must be buried with his brethren

Quin } And shall of him we will accom-
Mart } pany

Tit And shall What villain was it spake
that word?

Quin He that would vouch it in any place but
here 360

Tit What would you bury him in my
despite?

Marc No noble Titus but entreat of thee
To pardon Mutius and to bury him

Tit Marcus even thou hast struck upon my
crest

And with these boys mine honour thou hast
wounded

My foes I do repute you every one

So trouble me no more but get you gone

Mart He is not with him yet let us withdraw

Quin Not I till Mutius' bone be buried

MARCUS and the sons of Titus kneel

Marc Brother for in that name doth nature
plead— 370

Quin Father and in that name doth nature
speak—

Tit Speak thou no more if all the rest will
speed

Marc Renowned Titus more than half my
soul—

Luc Dear father soul and substance of us
all—

Marc Suffer thy brother Marcus to inter

His noble nephew here in virtue's nest

That died in honour and Lavinia's cause

Thou art a Roman be not barbarous

The Cretes upon advice did bury Ajax

That slew himself and woe Laertes son 380

Did graciously plead for his funerals

Let not young Mutius then that was thy joy

Be barr'd his entrance here

Tit Rise Marcus rise

The dismal st day is this that e'er I saw

To be dishonour'd by my sons in Rome!

Well bury him and bury me the next

[*Mutius is put into the tomb*]

Luc There lie thy bones sweet Mutius with
thy friends

Till we with trophies do adorn thy tomb

All [*kneeling*] No man shed tears for noble
Mutius

He lives in fame that died in virtue's cause 390

Marc My lord to step out of these dreary
dumps

How comes it that the subtle Queen of Goths
Is of a sudden thus advanced in Rome?

Tit I know not Marcus but I know it is
Whether by device or no the heavens can
tell

Is she not then beholding to the man
That brought her for this high good turn so
far?

Yes and will nobly him remunerate

Flourish Re enter, from one side, SATURNINUS attended, TAMORA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON and AARON, from the other, BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, and others

Sir So, Bassianus you have play'd your prize
God give you joy sir of your gallant bride! 400

Bas And you of yours my lord! I say no more,
Nor wish no less and so I take my leave

Sat Traitor if Rome have law or we have
power

Thou and thy faction shall repent this rape

Bis Rape call you it my lord to seize my own,

My true betrothed love and now my wife?

But let the laws of Rome determine all

Meanwhile I am possess'd of that is mine

Sat 'Tis good sir you are very short with us

But if we live, we'll be as sharp with you 410

Bas My lord what I have done, as best I may,

Answer I must and shall do with my life

Only thus much I give your Grace to know

By all the duties that I owe to Rome,

This noble gentleman Lord Titus here,

Is in opinion and in honour wrong'd,

That in the rescue of Lavinia

With his own hand did slay his youngest son,

In zeal to you and highly moved to wrath

To be controll'd in that he frankly gave 420

Receive him then, to favour Saturnine

That hath express'd himself in all his deeds

A father and a friend to thee and Rome

Tit Prince Bassianus leave to plead my deeds

'Tis thou and those that have dishonour'd me

Rome and the righteous heavens be my judge

I now I have loved and honour'd Saturnine!

Tam My worthy lord if ever Tamora

Were gracious in those princely eyes of thine

Then hear me speak indifferently for all, 430

And at my suit, sweet pardon what is past

Sir What madam! be dishonour'd openly

And basely put it up without revenge?

Tam Not so, my lord, the gods of Rome

forfend

I should be author to dishonour you!

But on mine honour dare I undertake

For good Lord Titus' innocence in all

Whose fury not dissembled speaks his griefs

Then at my suit look graciously on him 440

Lose not so noble a friend on vain suppose

Nor with sour looks afflict his gentle heart

[Aside to SATURNINUS] My lord be ruled by me
be won at last

Dissemble all your griefs and discontents

You are but newly planted in your throne

Lest then the people and patricians too,

Upon a just survey take Titus part

And so supplant you for ingratitude
Which Rome reputes to be a heinous sin,
Yield at entreats, and then let me alone

I'll find a day to massacre them all 450

And raze their faction and their family,

The cruel father and his traitorous sons,

To whom I sued for my dear son's life

And make them know what 'tis to let a queen

kneel in the streets and beg for grace in vain

Again speaking openly to SATURNINUS

Come come, sweet emperor come Andronicus,

Take up this good old man and cheer the heart

That dies in tempest of thy angry frown

Sat Rise Titus, rise, my empress hath pre- 459

vail'd

Tit I thank your Majesty and her, my lord

These words, these looks infuse new life in me

Tam Titus I am incorporate in Rome,

A Roman now adopted happily

And must advise the Emperor for his good

This day all quarrels die Andronicus,

And let it be mine honour good my lord,

That I have reconciled your friends and you

For you Prince Bassianus I have pass'd

My word and promise to the Emperor

That you will be more mild and tractable 470

And fear not lords and you Lavinia

By my advice all humbled on your knees,

You shall ask pardon of his Majesty

Luc We do and vow to heaven and to his

Highness

That what we did was mildly as we might

Tendering our sister's honour and our own

Marc That on mine honour here I do protest

Sat Away and talk not trouble us no more

Tam Nay nay sweet emperor we must all 479

be friends

The tribune and his nephew's kneel for grace

I will not be denied sweet heart look back

Sat Marcus for thy sake and thy brother's here,

And at my lovely Tamora's entreats

I do remit these young men's heinous faults

Stand up

Lavinia though you left me like a churl

I found a friend and sure as death I swore

I would not part a bachelor from the priest

Come if the Emperor's court can feast two

brides 490

You are my guest, Lavinia and your friends

This day shall be a love-day Tamora

I'll to-morrow as it please your Majesty

To hunt the panther and the hart with me

With horn and hound we'll give your Grace

hony-moon

Sat Be it so Titus and gramercy too

[Flourish]

ACT II

SCENE I *Rome Before the palace*

Enter AARON

Aar Now climbeth Tamora Olympus' top
Safe out of fortune's shot and sits aloft
Secure of thunder's crack or lightning's flash
Advanced above pale envy's threatening reach
As when the golden sun salutes the morn
And having gilt the ocean with his beams
Gallops the zodiac in his glistening coach
And overlooks the highest peering hills
So Tamora

Upon her wit deth earthly honour wait
And virtue stoops and trembles at her frown
Then Aaron, arm thy heart and fit thy thoughts
To mount aloft with th' imperial mistress
And mount her pitch & horn thou in triumph
long

Ha! a prisoner held fetter'd in amorous chains
And faster bound to Aaron's charming eye
Than is Prometheus tied to Caucasus
Away with slavish weeds and servile thoughts!
I will be bright and shune in pearl and gold
To sit upon this new made empress
To wait said I? to wanton with this queen,
This goddess, this Semiramis, this nymph
This siren that will charm Rome's Saturnus
And see his ship & wreck and his commonweal's
Hollos! what storm is this?

Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON *breathing*

Dem Chiron, this years wanton thy wit
wants edge

And manners to intrude where I am grac'd
And may for aught thou knowst affected be

Ch Demetrius, thou dost overween in all
And art in this to bear me down with braves
Tis not the difference of a year or two
Makes me less gracious or thee more fortunate
I am as able and as fit as thou

To serve and to deserve my mistress' grace
And that my sword upon thee shall approve
And plea I my passions for Lavinia's love

Aar [Aside] Clab chubs these lovers will
not keep the peace

Dem Why, boy, althou' hour mother
unadvised

Give you a dancing rapier by your side
Are you so desperate grown to threat your
friends?

Go to, have your lath glued within your sheath
Till you know better how to handle it

Ch Meanwhile sir, with this title shall I have
Full well shalt thou perceive how much I dare.

Dem Ay, boy, grow ye so brave! [They draw.]

Aar [Comes forward] Why, how now, lords!
So near the Emperor's palace dare you draw
And maintain such a quarrel openly?
Full well I wot the ground of all this grudge
I would not for a million of gold
The cause were known so them it most con-
cerns

Nor would your noble mother for much more
Be so dishonour'd in the court of Rome
For shame, put up

Dem Not I, till I have sheathed
My rapier in his bosom and withal
Thrust these reproachful speeches down his
throat

That he hath breathed in my dishonour here

Ch For that I am prepared and I full resolved
Foul spoken coward, that thunder at with thy
tongue

And with thy weapon nothing dar'est perform!

Aar Away! say!

Now by the gods that warlike Goths adore
This petty brabble will undo us all

Why, lords, and think you not how dangerous
It is to jet upon a prince's right?

What is Lavinia then become so loose,
Or Bassianus so degenerate

That for her love such quarrels may be broach'd
Without contrivance, justice, or revenge?

Young lords, beware! and should the Empress
know

This discord's ground, the music would not
please

Ch I care not, I knew she and all the world
I love Lavinia more than all the world

Dem Youngling, learn thou to make some
meaner choice

Lavinia is thine elder brother's hope

Aar Why are ye mad? or know ye not in
Rome

How furious and impatient they be,
And I cannot brook competitors in love?
I tell you, lords, you do but plot your deaths
By this device

Ch Aaron, a thousand deaths
Would I propose to achieve her whom I love

Aar To achieve her! how?

Dem Why makest thou it so strange?
She is a woman, therefore may be woo'd

She is a woman, therefore may be won
She is Lavinia, therefore must be loved

What man more water glideth by the mill
Than wots the miller of, and easy it is

Of a cut loaf to steal a shive, we know
Though Bassianus be the Emperor's brother

Better than he have worn Vulcan's badge

Aar [Aside] Ay, and as good as Saturninus may

Dem Then why should he despair that knows
to court it 91

With words, fair looks and liberality?
What hast not thou full often struck a doe,
And borne her cleanly by the keeper's nose?

Air Why, then it seems, some certain snatch
or so

Would serve your turns

Chi Ay so the turn were served

Dem Aaron, thou hast hit it

Aar Would you had hit it too!

Then should not we be tired with this ado

Why, hark ye hark ye! and are you such fools

To square for this? would it offend you, then
That both should speed? 101

Chi Faith not me

Dem Nor me so I were one

Aar For shame be friends, and join for that
you jar

'Tis policy and stratagem must do
That you affect, and so must you resolve

That what you cannot as you would achieve

You must performe accomplish as you may

Take this of me Lucrece was not more chaste

Than this Lavinia, Bassianus' love

A speedier course than lingering languishment
Must we pursue and I have found the path 111

My lords a solemn hunting is in hand,

There will the lovely Roman ladies troop

The forest walks are wide and spacious,

And many unfrequented plots there are

Fitted by kind for rape and villainy

Single you thither then this dainty doe,

And strike her home by force, if not by

words

This way, or not at all stand you in hope

Come come our empress with her sacred

wit

To villainy and vengeance consecrate, 121

Will we acquaint with all that we intend,

And she shall file our engines with advice

That will not suffer you to square yourselves,

But to your wits height advance you both

The Emperor's court is like the house of Fame,

The palace full of tongues of eyes and ears

The woods are ruthless dreadful deaf and

dull,

There speak, and strike brave boys and take

your turns

There serve your lusts shadow'd from heaven's

eye 130

And revel in Lavinia's treasury

Chi This counsel had smell of no cowardice

Dem Sit fast and rest till I find the stream

To cool this heat a charm to calm these fits

Per Stygia per nines' el or [Exit

SCENE II A forest near Rome horns and
cry of hounds heard

Enter TITUS ANDRONICUS, with Hunters &c,
MARCUS, LUCIUS QUINTUS, and MARTIUS

Tit The hunt is up, the morn is bright and grey,

The fields are fragrant and the woods are green

Uncouple here and let us make a bay

And wake the Emperor and his lovely bride

And rouse the Prince and ring a hunter's peal,

That all the court may echo with the noise

Sons let it be your charge, as it is ours

To attend the Emperor's person carefully

I have been troubled in my sleep this night

But dawning day new comfort hath inspired 10

A cry of hounds and horns wound in a peal Enter
SATURNINUS, TAMORA, BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, DE-
METRIUS CHIRON, and Attendants

Many good morrows to your Majesty,

Madam, to you as many and as good

I promised your Grace a hunter's peal

Sir And you have rung it lustily, my lord,

Somewhat too early for new-married ladies

Bis Lavinia, how say you?

Lav I say, no,

I have been broad awake two hours and more

Sir Come on then, horse and chariots let us

have,

And to our sport [To TAMORA] Madam now

shall ye see

Our Roman hunting

Marc I have dogs my lord 20

Will rouse the proudest panther in the chase

And climb the highest promontory top

Tit And I have horse will follow where the

game

Makes way and run like swallow so'er the plain

Dem Chiron we hunt not, we with horse

nor hound

But hope to pluck a dainty doe to ground

[Exit

SCENE III A lonely part of the forest

Enter AARON with a bag of gold

Aar He that had wit would think that I had
none

To bury so much gold under a tree

And never after to inherit it

Let him that thinks of me so abjectly

know that this gold must coin a stratagem

Which cunningly effected will beget

A very excellent piece of villainy

And so repose sweet gold for their unrest

[Hides the bag]

That have their alms out of the Empress

Enter TAMORA

Tam My lovely Aaron wherefore lookst
thou sad
When every thing doth make a gleeful boast?
The birds chant melody on every bush
The snake lies rolled in the cheerful sun
The green leaves quiver with the cooling wind
And make a chequer'd shadow on the ground
Under their sweet shade Aaron let us sit
And whilst the babbling echo mocks the hounds
Replying shrilly to the well-tuned horns
As if a double hunt were heard at once
Let us sit down and mark their yelping noise
And after conflict such as was supposed
The wandering prince and Didoe once enjoy'd
When with a happy storm they were surprised
And curtain'd with a counsel-keeping cave
We may each wreathed in the other's arms
Our pastimes done possess a golden slumber
Whiles hounds and horns and sweet melodious
birds

Be unto us is a nurse's song
Of lullaby to bring her babe asleep
Aur Madam though Venus govern your
desires
Saturn is dominator over mine
Which signifies my deadly staring eye
My silence and my cloudy melancholy
My fleece of woolly hair that now uncurls
Even as an adder when she doth unroll
To do some fatal execution?
No madam, these are no venereal signs
Vengeance is in my heart death in my hand
Blood and revenge are hammering in my head
Hark Tamora the empress of my soul
Which never hopes more heaven than rests in
thee

This is the day of doom for Bassianus
His Phulomel must lose her tongue to-day
Thy sons make pillow of her chastity
And wash their hands in Bassianus' blood
Seest thou this letter? take it up I pray thee
And give the king this fatal plott'd scroll
Now question me no more we are espied
Here comes a parcel of our hopeful booty
Which dreads not yet their last destruction

Tam Ah my sweet Moor sweeter to me than
I feel
Aur No more great Empress Bassianus comes
Be true with him and I'll go fetch thy sons
To back thy quarrels whatsoever they be [Exit

Enter BASSIANUS and Lavinia

Bur Who ha's we here? Rome's royal Empress
Unfurnish'd of her well-beseeming troop?

Or is it Dian habited like her
Who hath abandoned her holy groves
To see the general hunting in this forest?
Tam Saucy controller of our private steps!
Had I the power that some say Dian had
Thy temples should be planted presently
With horns as was Actæon's and the hounds
Should drive upon thy new-transformed limbs
Unmanly intruder as thou art!
Lav Under your patience gentle Empress
Tis thought you have a goodly gift in horning
And to be doubted that your Moor and you
Are singled forth to try experiments
Jove shield your husband from his hounds to-day!
Tis pity they should take him for a stag
Bur Believe me Queen your swarth Cammerian
Doth make your honour of his body a hue
Spotted detested and abominable
Why are you sequestered from all your train
Dismounted from your snow-white goodly
steed

And wander'd hither to an obscure plot
Accompanied but with a barbarous Moor
If foul desire had not conducted you?
Lav And being intercepted in your sport
Great reason that my noble lord be rated
For sauciness I pray you let us hence
And let her joy her raven-colour'd lot
This valley fits the purpose passing well
Bur The king my brother shall have note of
this
Lav Ay for these slips have made him noted
long
Good kin to be so mightily abused!
Tam Why have I patience to endure all this?

Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON

Dem Ho v now dear sovereign and our
gracious mother!
Why doth your Highness look so pale and wan?
Tam Have I not reason think you to look
pale?
These two have ticed me hither to this place
A barren detested vale you see it is
The trees though summer yet forlorn and lean
O'ercome with moss and baleful mistletoe
Here never shines the sun here nothing breeds
Unless the nightly owl or fatal raven
And when they show'd me this abhorred pit
They told me here at dead time of the night
A thousand fiends a thousand hissing snakes
Ten thousand swelling toads as many urchins
Would make such fearful and confused cries
As any mortal body hearing it
Should straight fall mad or else die suddenly
No sooner had they told this hellish tale,

But straight they told me they would bind me
here

Unto the body of a dismal yew,
And leave me to this miserable death
And then they call'd me foul adulteress,
Lascivious Goth and all the bitterest terms 110
That ever ear did hear to such effect
And had you not by wondrous fortune come,
This vengeance on me had they executed
Revenge it, as you love your mother's life,
Or be ye not henceforth call'd my children
Dem This is a witness that I am thy son

Stabs BASSIANUS

Chi And this for me struck home to show my
strength [*Also stabs BASSIANUS who dies*]

Lav Ay, come Semiramis nay, barbarous
Tamora,

For no name fits thy nature but thy own'

Tam Give me thy poniard, you shall know,
my boys, 120

Your mother's hand shall right your mother's
wrong

Dem Stay, madam, here is more belongs to her,

First thrash the corn then after burn the straw

This minion stood upon her chastity

Upon her nuptial vow her loyalty,

And with that painted hope braves your mighti-
ness

And shall she carry this unto her grave?

Chi An if she do, I would I were an eunuch
Drag hence her husband to some secret hole
And make his dead trunk pillow to our lust 130

Tam But when ye have the honey in desire,
Let not this wasp outlive us both to sting

Chi I warrant you madam we will make that
sure

Come, mistress now perforce we will enjoy
That nice preserved honesty of yours

Lav O Tamora! thou bear'st a woman's face—

Tam I will not hear her speak away with her'

Lav Sweet lords, entreat her hear me but a
word

Dem Listen fair madam let it be your glory
To see her tears but be your heart to them 140
As unrelenting flint to drops of rain

Lav When did the tiger's young ones teach
the dam?

O do not learn her wrath she taught it thee,
The milk thou suck'st from her did turn to
marble

Even at thy teat thou hadst thy tyranny

Yet every mother breeds not sons alike

[*To CHIRON*] Do thou entreat her show a woman
pity

Chi What wouldst thou have me prove myself
a bastard?

Lav 'Tis true the raven doth not hatch a lark
Yet have I heard—O, could I find it now!— 150
The lion moved with pity did endure
To have his princely paws pared all away
Some say that ravens foster forlorn children,
The whilst their own birds famish in their nests
O, be to me, though thy hard heart say no
Nothing so kind but something pitiful!

Tam I know not what it means away with her'

Lav O, let me teach thee! for my father's sake,
That gave thee life, when well he might have
slain thee

Be not obdurate, open thy deaf ears 160

Tam Hadst thou in person ne'er offended me,
Even for his sake am I pitiless

Remember boys I pour'd forth tears in vain,

To save your brother from the sacrifice

But fierce Andronicus would not relent

Therefore, away with her, and use her as you
will

The worse to her, the better loved of me

Lav O Tamora be call'd a gentle queen

And with thine own hands kill me in this place!

For 'tis not life that I have begg'd so long 170

Poor I was slain when Bassianus died

Tam What begg'st thou, then? fond woman,
let me go

Lav 'Tis present death I beg and one thing
more

That womanhood denies my tongue to tell

O keep me from their worse than killing lust,

And tumble me into some loathsome pit

Where never man's eye may behold my body

Do this and be a charitable murderer

Tam So should I rob my sweet sons of their
fee

No let them satisfy their lust on thee 180

Dem Away! for thou hast stay'd us here too
long

Lav No grace? no womanhood? Ah beastly
creature!

The blot and enemy to our general name!

Confusion fall—

Chi Nay then I'll stop your mouth Bring thou
her husband

This is the hole where Aaron bid us hide him

[*Demetrius throws the body of Bassianus into the
pit then exit DEMETRIUS and CHIRON dragging
off LAVINIA*]

Tam Farewell my sons see that you make
her sure

Ne'er let my heart know merry cheer indeed

Till all the Andronics be made away

Now will I hence to seek my lovely Moor 190

And let my spleenful sons thus trull deflower

[*Exit*]

Re-enter AARON with QUINTUS and MARTIUS

Aar Come on my lords the better foot before
Straight will I bring you to the loathsome pit
Where I espied the panther fast asleep

Quin My sight is very dull whate'er it bodes
Mart And mine I promise you were I not for
shame

Well could I leave our sport to sleep awhile

Falls into the pit

Quin What art thou fall'n? What subtle hole
is this

Whose mouth is cover'd with rude growing
briers

Upon whose leaves are drops of new shed blood
As fresh as morning dew distill'd on flowers?

A very fatal place it seems to me

Speak brother hast thou hurt thee with the fall?

Mart O brother with the dismall object
hurt

That ever eye with sight made heart lament!

Aar *[Aside]* Now will I fetch the king to find
them here

That he thereby may give a likely guess

How these were they that made away his
brother *[Exit]*

Mart Why dost not comfort me and help
me out 209

From this unhallow'd and blood-stained hole?

Quin I am surprised with an uncouth fear
A chilling sweat o'er runs my trembling joints
My heart suspects more than mine eye can see

Mart To prove thou hast a true-divining heart

Aaron and thou look down into this den

And see a fearful sight of blood and death

Quin Aaron is gone and my compassionate
heart

Will not permit mine eyes once to behold

The thing whereat it trembles by surmise

O tell me how it is for ne'er till now 210

Was I a child to fear I know not what

Mart Lord Bassianus lies embrewed here,

All on a heap like to a slaunder'd lamb

In this detested dark blood-drinking pit

Quin If it be dark how dost thou know tis he?

Mart Upon his bloody finger he doth wear

A precious ring that lightens all the hole

Which, like a taper in some monument

Doth shine upon the dead man's earthly cheeks

And shows the rag'd entrails of the pit 210

So pale did shine the moon on Pyramus

When he lay in his bathed in maiden blood

O brother help me with thy faithful hand—

If fear hath made thee faint as me it hath—

Out of this fell devouring receptacle

As hateful as Cocyus' musty mouth

Quin Reach me thy hand that I may help thee
out

Or wanting strength to do thee so much good
I may be pluck'd into the swallowing womb
Of this deep pit poor Bassianus' grave 240

I have no strength to pluck thee to the brink
Mart Nor I no strength to climb without thy
help

Quin Thy hand once more I will not loose
again

Till thou art here aloft or I below

Thou canst not come to me I come to thee
Falls in

Enter SATURNINUS with AARON

Sat Along with me I'll see what hole is here

And what he is that now is leap'd into it

Say who art thou that lately didst descend

Into this gaping hollow of the earth?

Mart The unhappy son of old Andronicus

Brought hither in a most unlucky hour 251

To find thy brother Bassianus dead

Sat My brother dead! I know thou dost but jest

He and his lady both are at the lodge

Upon the north side of this pleasant chase

Tis not an hour since I left him there

Mart We know not where you left him all alive

But our alas! here have we found him dead

*Re-enter TAMORA with Attendants TITUS
ANDRONICUS and LUCIUS*

Tam Where is my lord the king?

Sat Here Tamora though grieved with killing
grief 260

Tam Where is thy brother Bassianus?

Sat Now to the bottom dost thou search my
wound

Poor Bassianus here lies murdered

Tam Then all too late I bring this fatal writ

The comploit of this timeless tragedy

And wonder greatly that man's face can fold

In pleasing smiles such murderous tyranny

She giveth SATURNINUS a letter

Sat *[Reads]* An if we must to meet him
handsomely—

Sweet huntsman Bassianus tis we mean—

Do thou so much as dig the grave for him 270

Thou know'st our meaning. Look for thy reward

Among the nettles at the elder tree

Which overshades the mouth of that same pit

Where 's decreed to bury Bassianus

Do this and purchase us thy lasting friends

O Tamora 's as ever heard the like?

This is the pit and this the elder tree

Look sir if you can find the huntsman out

That should have murder'd Bassianus here

Aar My gracious lord, here is the bag of gold 280
Sat [To titus] Two of thy whelps, fell curs of bloody kind,

Have here bereft my brother of his life
 Sirs, drag them from the pit unto the prison
 There let them bide until we have devised
 Some never heard-of torturing pain for them

Tam What, are they in this pit? O wondrous thing!

How easily murder is discovered!

Tit High Emperor upon my feeble knee
 I beg this boon, with tears not lightly shed,
 That this fell fault of my accursed sons 290
 Accused, if the fault be proved in them—

Sat If it be proved! you see it is apparent
 Who found this letter? Tamora was it you?

Tam Andronicus himself did take it up

Tit I did, my lord yet let me be their bail,
 For, by my father's reverend tomb I vow
 They shall be ready at your Highness will
 To answer their suspicion with their lives

Sat Thou shalt not bail them see thou follow me

Some bring the murder'd body, some the murderers 300

Let them not speak a word the guilt is plain
 For, by my soul, were there worse end than death,

That end upon them should be executed

Tam Andronicus, I will entreat the king
 Fear not thy sons, they shall do well enough

Tit Come, Lucius, come, stay not to talk with them [Exeunt]

SCENE IV Another part of the forest

Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON, with LAVINIA,
 rushed, her hands cut off and her tongue cut out

Dem So, now go tell an if thy tongue can speak,
 Who 'twas that cut thy tongue and ravish'd thee

Chir Write down thy mind bewray thy meaning so

An if thy stumps will let thee play the scribe
Dem See, how with signs and tokens she can scrawl

Chir Go home, call for sweet water wash thy hands

Dem She hath no tongue to call nor hands to wash,

And so let's leave her to her silent walks

Chir An'twere my case I should go hang myself

Dem If thou hadst hands to help thee knit the cord [Exeunt DEMETRIUS and CHIRON]

Enter MARCUS

Mar Who is this? my niece, that flies away so fast! 11

Cousin a word, where is your husband?
 If I do dream would all my wealth would wake me!

If I do wake some planet strike me down,
 That I may slumber in eternal sleep!
 Speak gentle niece what stern ungentle hands
 Have lopp'd and hew'd and made thy body bare
 Of her two branches those sweet ornaments
 Whose circling shadows kings have sought to sleep in

And might not gain so great a happiness 20

As have thy love? Why dost not speak to me?

Alas a crimson river of warm blood
 Like to a bubbling fountain stirr'd with wind,
 Doth rise and fall between thy ros'd lips
 Coming and going with thy honey breath
 But sure some Tereus hath deflower'd thee,
 And lest thou shouldst detect him cut thy tongue

Ah now thou turnst away thy face for shame!
 And notwithstanding all this loss of blood

As from a conduit with three issuing spouts, 30

Yet do thy cheeks look red as Titan's face

Blushing to be encounter'd with a cloud

Shall I speak for thee? shall I say tis so?

O that I knew thy heart and knew the beast,

That I might rail at him to ease my mind!

Sorrow concealed like an oven stopp'd

Doth burn the heart to cinders where it is

Fair Philomela she but lost her tongue

And in a tedious sampler sew'd her mind

But lovely niece, that mean is cut from thee, 41

A craftier Tereus cousin hast thou met,

And he hath cut those pretty fingers off

That could have better sew'd than Philomel

O had the monster seen those lily hands

Tremble like aspen leaves upon a lute

And make the silken strings delight to kiss them,

He would not then have touch'd them for his life!

Or had he heard the heavenly harmony

Which that sweet tongue hath made

He would have dropp'd his knife and fell asleep

As Cerberus at the Thracian poet's feet 51

Come let us go and make thy father blind

For such a sight will blind a father's eye

One hour's storm will drown the fragrant meads

What will whole months of tears thy father's eyes?

Do not draw back for we will mourn with thee

O could our mourning ease thy misery!

ACT III

SCENE I *Rome a street*

Enter Judges Senators and Tribunes with MARTIUS and QUINTUS bound passing on to the place of execution TITUS going before pleading

Tit Hear me grave fathers' noble tribunes stay!

For pity of mine age whose youth is spent
In dangerous wars whilst you securely slept
For all my blood in Rome a great quarrel shed
For all the frosty nights that I have watch'd
And for these bitter tears which now you see
Filling the aged wrinkles in my cheeks
Be pitiful to my condemned sons
Whose souls are not corrupted as tis thought
For two and twenty sons I never wept 10
Because they died in honour a lofty bed

[Lurh down she Judges &c pass by him and Exunt]

For these, these tribunes in the dust I write
My heart a deep languor and my soul a sad tears

Let my tears stanch the earth's dry appetite
My sons' sweet blood will make it shame and blush

O earth, I will befriend thee more with rain
That shall distil from these two ancient urns
Than youthful April shall with all his showers
In summer's drouth I'll drop upon thee still
In winter with warm tears I'll melt the snow : 20
And keep eternal spring time on thy face
So thou refuse to drink my dear sons' blood

Enter LUCIUS with his sword drawn

O reverend tribunes! O gentle aged men!
Unbind my sons reverse the doom of death
And let me say that never wept before
My tears are now prevailing orators

Luc O noble father you lament in vain
The tribunes hear you not no man is by
And you recount your sorrows to a stone

Tit Ah, Lucius for thy brothers let me plead
Grave tribunes once more I entreat of you— 31

Luc My gracious lord no tribune hears you speak

Tit Why tis no matter man if they did hear
They would not mark me or if they did mark
They would not pity me yet plead I must
And bootless woo them

Therefore I tell my sorrows to the stones
Who though they cannot answer my distress
Yet in some sort they are better than the tribunes

For that they will not intercept my tale 40
When I do weep they humbly at my feet

Receive my tears and seem to weep with me
And were they but assur'd in grave weeds
Rome could afford no tribune like to these
A stone is soft as wax tribunes more hard than stones

As one is silent and offendeth not
And tribunes with their tongues doom men to death *[Rises]*

But wherefore standst thou with thy weapon drawn?

Luc To rescue my two brothers from their death

For which attempt the judges have pronounced
My everlasting doom of banishment 51

Tit O happy man! they have befriended thee
Why foolish Lucius dost thou not perceive
That Rome is but a wilderness of tigers?
Tigers must prey and Rome affords no prey
But me and mine how happy art thou then
From these devourers to be banished!
But who comes with our brother Marcus here?

Enter MARCUS and LAVINIA

Marc Titus prepare thy aged eyes to weep
Or if not so thy noble heart to break 60
I bring consuming sorrow to thine age

Tit Will I consume me? let me see it then

Marc This was thy daughter

Tit Why Marcus so she is

Luc Ay me this object kills me!

Tit Faint hearted boy arise and look upon her
Speak Lavinia what accursed hand
Hath made thee handless in thy father's sight?
What fool hath added water to the sea
Or brought a faggot to bright burning Troy?
My grief was at the height before thou camest
And now like Iulus it disdaineth bounds 71

Give me a sword I'll chop off my hands too
For they have fought for Rome, and all in vain
And they have nursed this woe in feeding life
In bootless prayer have they been held up
And they have served me to effectless use
Now all the service I require of them
Is that the one will help to cut the other

'Tis well Lavinia that thou hast no hands
For hands to do Rome service are but vain 80

Luc Speak gentle sister who hath marr'd thee?

Marc O that delightful engine of her thoughts
That blabb'd them with such pleasing eloquence
Is torn from forth that pretty hollow caecae
Where like a sweet melodious bird it sung
Sweet varied notes enchanting every ear!

Luc O say thou for her who hath done this deed?

Marc O thus I found her straying in the park

Seeking to hide herself as doth the deer
That hath received some unrecuring wound 90
Tit It was my deer and he that wounded her
Hath hurt me more than had he kill'd me dead
For now I stand as one upon a rock
Environ'd with a wilderness of sea,
Who marks the waxing tide grow wave by
wave

Expecting ever when some envious surge
Will in his brinish bowels swallow him
This way to death my wretched sons are gone
Here stands my other son a banish'd man
And here my brother weeping at my woes 100
But that which gives my soul the greatest spurn
Is dear Lavinia dearer than my soul
Had I but seen thy picture in this plight
It would have maddened me what shall I do
Now I behold thy lively body so?
Thou hast no hands to wipe away thy tears,
Nor tongue, to tell me who hath martyr'd thee
Thy husband he is dead, and for his death
Thy brothers are condemn'd and dead by this
Look, Marcus! ah son Lucius look on her! 110
When I did name her brothers then fresh tears
Stood on her cheeks as doth the honey-dew
Upon a gather'd lily almost wither'd

Marc Perchance she weeps because they kill'd
her husband

Perchance because she knows them innocent

Tit If they did kill thy husband then be joyful,
Because the law hath taken revenge on them
No, no, they would not do so foul a deed
Witness the sorrow that their sister makes
Gentle Lavinia let me kiss thy lips 120
Or make some sign how I may do thee ease
Shall thy good uncle and thy brother Lucius
And thou and I, sit round about some fountain,
Looking all downwards to behold our cheeks
How they are stain'd as meadows yet not dry
With murky slime left on them by a flood?
And in the fountain shall we gaze so long
Till the fresh taste be taken from that clearness,
And made a brine pit with our bitter tears?
Or shall we cut away our hands, like thine? 130
Or shall we bite our tongues and in dumb shows
Pass the remainder of our hateful days?
What shall we do? let us that have our tongues,
Plot some device of further misery
To make us wonder'd at in time to come

Luc Sweet father, cease your tears for, at
your grief

See how my wretched sister sobs and weeps
Marc Patience dear niece Good Titus dry
thine eyes

Tit Ah Marcus! Marcus! brother well I wot
Thy napkin cannot drink a tear of mine. 140

For thou, poor man hast drown'd it with thine
own

Luc Ah, my Lavinia I will wipe thy cheeks
Tit Mark Marcus mark! I understand her
signs

Had she a tongue to speak now would she say
That to her brother which I said to thee
His napkin with his true tears all bewet
Can do no service on her sorrowful cheeks
O what a sympathy of woes is this
As far from help as Limbo is from bliss! 149

Enter AARON

Aar Titus Andronicus my lord the Emperor
Sends thee this word—that if thou love thy
sons

Let Marcus Lucius, or thyself old Titus,
Or any one of you chop off your hand
And send it to the King he for the same
Will send thee hither both thy sons alive
And that shall be the ransom for their fault
Tit O gracious Emperor! O gentle Aaron!
Did ever ravens sing so like a lark
That gives sweet tidings of the sun's uprise?
With all my heart I'll send the Emperor 160
My hand

Good Aaron wilt thou help to chop it off?

Luc Stay father! for that noble hand of thine
That hath thrown down so many enemies
Shall not be sent my hand will serve the turn
My youth can better spare my blood than you
And therefore mine shall save my brothers' lives

Marc Which of your hands hath not defended
Rome

And rear'd aloft the bloody battle axe,
Writing destruction on the enemy's castle? 170
O none of both but are of high desert
My hand hath been but idle let it serve
To ransom my two nephews from their death,
Then have I kept it to a worthy end

Aar Nay come, agree whose hand shall go
along

For fear they die before their pardon come

Marc My hand shall go

Luc By heaven it shall not go!

Tit Sirs strive no more such wither'd herbs
as these

Are meet for plucking up and therefore mine

Luc Sweet father if I shall be thought thy
son 180

Let me redeem my brothers both from death

Marc And for our father's sake and mother's
care,

Now let me show a brother's love to thee

Tit Agree between you I will spare my hand

Luc Then I'll go fetch an axe

Marc But I will use the axe
[Exeunt LUCIUS and MARCUS]
Tit Come hither Aaron I'll deceive them both
 Lend me thy hand and I will give thee mine
Aar *[Aside]* If that be call'd deceit I will be
 honest
 And never whilst I live deceive men 190
 But I'll deceive you in another sort
 And that you'll say ere half an hour pass
Cut off Titus's hand

Re-enter LUCIUS and MARCUS

Tit Now stay your strife what shall be is
 dispatch'd
 Good Aaron give his Majesty my hand
 Tell him it was a hand that warded him
 From thousand dangers bid him bury it
 More hath it merited that let it have
 As for my sons say I account of them
 As jewels purchased at an easy price 199
 And yet dear too because I bought mine own
Aar I go Andronicus and for thy hand
 Look by and by to have thy sons with thee
[Aside] Their heads I mean O how this
 villainy
 Doth fat me with the very thoughts of it!
 Let fools do good and fair men call for grace
 Aaron will have his soul black like his face *[Exit]*
Tit O here I lift this one hand up to heaven
 And bow this feeble ruin to the earth
 If any power pities wretched tears
 To that I call *[To LAVINIA]* What wilt thou
 kneel with me? 210
 Do then dear heart for heaven shall hear our
 prayers
 Or with our sighs we'll breathe the welkin dim
 And stain the sun with fog as sometime clouds
 When they do hurt him in their melting bosoms
Marc O brother speak with possibilities
 And do not break into these deep extremes
Tit Is not my sorrow deep having no bottom?
 Then be my passions bottomless with them
Marc But yet let reason govern thy lament
Tit If there were reason for these miseries
 Then into limits could I bind my woes 221
 When heaven doth weep doth not the earth
 overflow?
 If the winds rave doth not the sea wax mad,
 Threatening the welkin with his big swollen face?
 And wilt thou have a reason for this coil?
 I am the sea hark how her sighs do blow!
 She is the weeping welkin, I the earth
 Then must my sea be moved with her sighs
 Then must my earth with her continual tears
 Become a deluge overflow'd and drown'd 230
 For why my bowels cannot hide her woes

But like a drunkard must I vomit them
 Then give me leave for losers will have leave
 To ease their stomachs with their bitter tongues

Enter a MESSENGER with two heads and a hand

Mess Worthy Andronicus ill art thou repaid
 For that good hand thou sent'st to the Emperor
 Here are the heads of thy two noble sons
 And here's thy hand in scorn to thee sent back
 Thy griefs their sports thy resolution mock'd
 That woe is me to think upon thy woes 240
 More than remembrance of my father's death *[Exit]*

Marc Now let hot Aetna cool in Sicily
 And be my heart an ever burning hell!
 The miseries are more than may be borne
 To weep with them that weep doth ease some
 deal
 But sorrow flouted at is double death
Luc Ah that this sight should make so deep a
 wound
 And yet detested life not shrink thereat!
 That ever death should let life bear his name 249
 Where life hath no more interest but to breathe!

LAVINIA KISSES TITUS

Marc Alas poor heart that kiss is comfortless
 As frozen water to a starved snake
Tit When will this fearful slumber have an
 end?

Marc Now farewell flattery due Andronicus
 Thou dost not slumber see thy two sons' heads
 Thy warlike hand thy man-led daughter here
 Thy other banish'd son with this dear sight
 Struck pale and bloodless and thy brother I
 Even like a stony image cold and numb
 Ah now no more will I control thy griefs 260
 Rend off thy silver hair thy other hand
 Gnawing with thy teeth and be this dismal sight
 The closing up of our most wretched eyes
 Now is a time to storm why art thou still?

Tit Ha ha ha!

Marc Why dost thou laugh? it fits not with
 this hour

Tit Why I have not another tear to shed
 Besides this sorrow is an enemy
 And would usurp upon my watery eyes
 And make them blind with tributary tears 270
 Then which way shall I find Revenge's cave?
 For these two heads do seem to speak to me
 And threaten me I shall never come to bliss
 Till all these mischiefs be return'd again
 Even in their throats that have committed them
 Come let me see what task I have to do
 You heavy people circle me about
 That I may turn me to each one of you
 And swear unto my soul to right your wrongs

The vow is made Come, brother take a head
 And in this hand the other will I bear 281
 Lavinia, thou shalt be employ'd these arms!
 Bear thou my hand, sweet wench, between thy
 teeth
 As for thee, boy, go get thee from my sight,
 Thou art an exile and thou must not stay
 Hie to the Goths, and raise an army there
 And, if you love me, as I think you do
 Let's kiss and part, for we have much to do

[*Exeunt* TITUS, MARCUS and LAVINIA

Luc Farewell Andronicus my noble father,
 The woefullest man that ever lived in Rome 290
 Farewell proud Rome till Lucius come again,
 He leaves his pledges dearer than his life
 Farewell, Lavinia my noble sister
 O, would thou wert as thou tofore hast been!
 But now nor Lucius nor Lavinia lives
 But in oblivion and hateful griefs
 If Lucius live, he will requite your wrongs,
 And make proud Saturnine and his empress
 Beg at the gates, like Tarquin and his queen
 Now will I to the Goths, and raise a power 300
 To be revenged on Rome and Saturnine [Exit

SCENE II *A room in Titus's house
 a banquet set out*

Enter TITUS, MARCUS, LAVINIA, and YOUNG
 LUCIUS, a Boy

Tit So so, now sit and look you eat no more
 Than will preserve just so much strength in us
 As will revenge these bitter woes of ours
 Marcus, unknot that sorrow woeathen knot
 Thy niece and I, poor creatures, want our hands,
 And cannot passionate our tenfold grief
 With folded arms This poor right hand of mine
 Is left to ty-rannize upon my breast,
 Who, when my heart all mad with misery,
 Beats in this hollow prison of my flesh 10
 Then thus I thump it down
 [To LAVINIA] Thou map of woe that thus dost
 talk in signs!
 When thy poor heart beats with outrageous
 beating
 Thou canst not strike it thus to make it still
 Wound it with sighing girl kill it with groans,
 Or get some little knife between thy teeth
 And just against thy heart make thou a hole
 That all the tears that thy poor eyes let fall
 May run into that sink and soaking in
 Drown the lamenting fool in sea salt tears 20
Marc Fie brother fie! teach her not thus to lay
 Such violent hands upon her tender life
Tit How now! has sorrow made thee dote
 already?
 Why, Marcus, no man should be mad but I

What violent hands can she lay on her life?
 Ah, wherefore dost thou urge the name of hands,
 To bid Æneas tell the tale twice o'er,
 How Troy was burnt and he made miserable?
 O, handle not the theme, to talk of hands,
 Lest we remember still that we have none 30
 Fie, fie how frantically I square my talk,
 As if we should forget we had no hands
 If Marcus did not name the word of hands!
 Come let's fall to and, gentle girl eat this
 Here is no drink! Hark Marcus what she says,
 I can interpret all her martyr'd signs,
 She says she drinks no other drink but tears,
 Brew'd with her sorrow mesh'd upon her cheeks
 Speechless complainer, I will learn thy thought,
 In thy dumb action will I be as perfect 40
 As begging hermits in their holy prayers
 Thou shalt not sigh, nor hold thy stumps to
 heaven
 Nor wink, nor nod, nor kneel, nor make a sign,
 But I of these will wrest an alphabet
 And by still practice learn to know thy meaning
Young Luc Good grandsire, leave these bitter
 deep laments
 Make my aunt merry with some pleasing tale
Marc Alas the tender boy in passion moved,
 Doth weep to see his grandsire's heaviness
Tit Peace tender sapling, thou art made of
 tears 50
 And tears will quickly melt thy life away
MARCUS strikes the dish with a knife
 What dost thou strike at, Marcus, with thy
 knife?
Marc At that that I have kill'd my lord a fly
Tit Out on thee, murderer! thou kill'st my
 heart
 Mine eyes are cloy'd with view of ty-ranny
 A deed of death done on the innocent
 Becomes not Titus' brother get thee gone,
 I see thou art not for my company
Marc Alas my lord I have but kill'd a fly
Tit But how if that fly had a father and
 mother? 60
 How would he hang his slender gilded wings
 And buzz lamenting doings in the air!
 Poor harmless fly
 That with his pretty buzzing melody
 Came here to make us merry and thou hast kill'd
 him
Marc Pardon me sir it was a black ill favour'd
 fly
 Like to the Empress Moo therefore I kill'd him
Tit O O O
 Then pardon me for reprehending thee
 For thou hast done a charitable deed 70
 Give me thy knife I will recut on him

Flattering myself as if it were the Moor
 Come hither purposely to poison me
 There s for thyself and that s for Tamora
 Ah, sirtah!
 Yet I think we are not brought so low
 But that between us we can kill a fly
 That comes in likeness of a coal black Moor
Marc Alas poor man! grief has so wrought on
 him
 He takes false shadows for true substances 80
Tit Come take away Lavinia go with me
 I ll to thy closet and go read with thee
 Sad stories chanced in the times of old
 Come boy and go with me thy sight is young
 And thou shalt read when mine began to dazzle
 [Exeunt]

ACT IV

SCENE I Rome Titus s garden

*Enter young LUCIUS and LAVINIA running after
 him and the boy flies from her with books under
 his arm Then enter TITUS and MARCUS*

Young Luc Help grandsire help! my aunt
 Lavinia

Follows me everywhere I know not why
 Good uncle Marcus see how swift she comes
 Alas sweet aunt I know not what you mean
Marc Stand by me Lucius do not fear thine
 aunt

Tit She loves thee, boy too well to do thee
 harm

Young Luc Ay when my father was in Rome
 she did

Marc What means my niece Lavinia by these
 signs?

Tit Fear her not Lucius somewhat doth she
 mean

See, Lucius see how much she makes of thee 10
 Somewhat would she have thee go with
 her

Ah, boy Cornelia never with more care
 Read to her sons than she hath read to thee

Sweet poetry and Tully s *Orator*

Marc Canst thou not guess wherefore she plies
 thee thus?

Young Luc My lord I know not I nor can I
 guess

Unless some fit or fenny do possess her
 For I have heard my grandsire say full oft
 Extremity of griefs would make men mad
 And I have read that Isecuba of Troy 20
 Ran mad for sorrow that made me to fear
 Althou h, my lord, I know my noble aunt
 Loves me as dear as e er my mother did
 And would not but in fury fit hit my youth

Which made me down to throw my books
 and fly—

Causeless perhaps But pardon me sweet aunt
 And madam if my uncle Marcus go
 I will most willingly attend your ladyship
Marc Lucius I will

*LAVINIA turns over with her stumps the books
 which LUCIUS has let fall*

Tit How now Lavinia! Marcus what means
 this? 30

Some book there is that she desires to see
 Which is it girl of these? Open them boy
 But thou art deeper read and better skill d
 Come and take choice of all my library
 And so beguile thy sorrow till the heavens
 Reveal the damn d contriver of this deed
 Why lifts she up her arms in sequence thus?

Marc I think she means that there was more
 than one

Confederate in the fact ay more there was
 Or else to heaven she heaves them for revenge
Tit Lucius what book is that she tosseth so? 40

Young Luc Grandsire tis Ovid s *Metamor
 phoses*

My mother gave it me

Marc For love of her that s gone,

Perhaps she cull d it from among the rest

Tit Soft! see how busily she turns the leaves!
 [Helping her]

What would she find? Lavinia shall I read?
 Thus is the tragic tale of Philomel

And treats of Tereus treason and his rape
 And rape I fear was root of thine annoy

Marc See brother see note how she quotes
 the leaves 50

Tit Lavinia wert thou thus surprised sweet
 girl

Ravish d and wrong d as Philomela was
 Forced in the ruthless vast and gloomy woods?
 See see!

Ay such a place there is where we did hunt—
 O had we never never hunted there —

Pattern d by that the poet here describes
 By nature made for murderers and for rapes

Marc O why should nature build so foul a den,
 Unless the gods delight in tragedies? 60

Tit Give signs sweet girl for here are none but
 friends

What Roman lord it was durst do the deed
 Or slunk not Saturnine as Tarquin erst

That left the camp to sin in Lucrece bed?
Marc Sit down, sweet niece brother sit
 down by me

Apollo Pallas Jove, or Mercury
 Inspire me that I may this treason find!
 My lord, look here look here, Lavinia

This sandy plot is plain guide if thou canst,
 This after me, when I have writ my name 70
 Without the help of any hand at all
He writes his name with his staff and guides it with feet and mouth

Cursed be that heart that forced us to this shift!
 Write thou, good niece and her display at last
 What God will have discover'd for revenge
 Heaven guide thy pen to print thy sorrows plain,
 That we may know the traitors and the truth!

She takes the staff in her mouth, and guides it with her stumps, and writes

Tit O, do ye read my lord, what she hath writ?
Stuprum Chiron Demetrius

Marc What, what! the lustful sons of Tamora
 Performers of this heinous bloody deed? 80

Tit *Magni Dominator poli,*
Tam lentus audis scelera? tam lentus cides?

Marc O, calm thee, gentle lord, although I know

There is enough written upon this earth
 To stir a mutiny in the mildest thoughts
 And arm the minds of infants to exclaims
 My lord kneel down with me, Lavinia kneel,
 And kneel, sweet boy, the Roman Hector's hope

And swear with me as with the woeful fere 90
 And father of that chaste dishonour'd dame,
 Lord Junius Brutus swear for Lucrece rape,
 That we will prosecute by good advice
 Mortal revenge upon these traitorous Goths
 And see their blood or die with this reproach

Tit 'Tis sure enough an you knew how
 But if you hunt these bear whelps then beware
 The dam will wake and if she wind you once,
 She's with the lion deeply still in league
 And lulls him whilst she playeth on her back
 And when he sleeps will she do what she list 100
 You are a young huntsman Marcus let it alone
 And come I will go get a leaf of brass
 And with a gad of steel will write these words,
 And lay it by the angry northern wind
 Will blow these sands, like Sibyl's leaves abroad
 And where's your lesson, then? Boy, what say you?

Young Luc I say my lord that if I were a man
 Their mother's bed-chamber should not be safe
 For these bad bondmen to the yoke of Rome

Marc Ay that's my boy! thy father hath
 full oft 110

For his ungrateful country done the like
 Young Luc And uncle so will I an if I live

Tit Come, go with me into mine armoury
 Lucius I'll fit thee and withal my boy
 Shalt carry from me to the Empress sons
 Presents that I in end to send them both

Come, come thou'lt do thy message wilt thou not?

Young Luc Ay, with my dagger in their bosoms, grandsire

Tit No boy, not so, I'll teach thee another course

Lavinia, come Marcus look to my house 120
 Lucius and I'll go brave it at the court

Ay marry will we, sir and we'll be waited on
[Exeunt TITUS LAVINIA and YOUNG LUC]

Marc O heavens can you hear a good man groan

And not relent or not compassion him?

Marcus attend him in his ecstasy
 That hath more scars of sorrow in his heart
 Than foemen's marks upon his battered shield
 But yet so just that he will not revenge
 Revenge, ye heavens, for old Andronicus! *[Exit]*

SCENE II *The same a room in the palace*

Enter from one side AARON, DEMETRIUS and CHIRON, from the other side YOUNG LUCIUS and an Attendant with a bundle of weapons and verses writ upon them

Chir Demetrius here's the son of Lucius
 He hath some message to deliver us

Aar Ay some mad message from his mad grandfather

Young Luc My lords with all the humbleness I may,

I greet your honours from Andronicus
[Aside] And pray the Roman gods confound you both!

Dem Gramercy lovely Lucius what's the news?

Young Luc *[Aside]* That you are both decipher'd that's the news

For villains mark'd with rape — May it please you

My grandsire, well advised hath sent by me 10
 The goodliest weapons of his armoury

To gratify your honourable youth,
 The hope of Rome for so he bade me say,

And so I do and with his gifts present
 Your lordships that whenever you have need

You may be armed and appointed well
 And so I leave you both *[And.]* like bloody

villains *[Exeunt YOUNG LUCIUS and Attendant]*

Dem What's here? A scroll and written about?

Let's see

[Reads] *Insuper etiam scelerisque furas*
Ad regem Martijadis nec eris

Chir O tis a verse in Horace I'
 I read it in the grammar long ago

Aar Ay just a verse in Horace right you have it
[Aside] Now what a thing it is to be an ass!
 Here's no sound jest! the old man hath found their guilt
 And sends them weapons wrapp'd about with lines
 That wound beyond their feeling to the quick
 But were our witty empress well afoot
 She would applaud Andronicus' conceit 30
 But let her rest in her unrest awhile —
 And now young lords was't not a happy star
 Led us to Rome strangers and more than so
 Captives to be advanced to this height?
 It did me good before the palace gate
 To brave the tribune in his brother's hearing
Dem But me more good to see so great a lord
 Basely insinuate and send us gifts
Aar I had he not reason Lord Demetrius?
 Did you not use his daughter very friendly? 40
Dem I would we had a thousand Roman dames
 At such a bay by turn to serve our lust
Chi A charitable wish and full of love
Aar Here lacks but your mother for to say
 amen
Chi And that would she for twenty thousand
 more
Dem Come let us go and pray to all the gods
 For our beloved mother in her pains
Aar *[Aside]* Pray to the devils the gods have
 given us over
Trumpets sound within
Dem Why do the Emperor's trumpets flourish
 thus?
Chi Belike, for joy the Emperor hath a son 50
Dem Soft! who comes here?
Enter a nurse with a blackmoor child in her arms
Aar Good morrow lords
 O tell me did you see Aaron th' Moor?
Aar Well, more or less or ne'er a whit at all
 Here Aaron is and what with Aaron now?
Nur O gentle Aaron we are all undone
 Now help or woe betide thee evermore!
Aar Why what a caterwauling dost thou keep?
 What dost thou wrap and fumble in thine arms?
Nur O that which I would fide from heaven's
 eye 59
 Our Empress shame and stately Rome's
 disgrace!
She is deliver'd, lords she is deliver'd
Aar To whom?
Nur I mean, she is brought a bed
Aar Well, God give her good rest What
 hath he sent her?
Nur A devil

Aar Why then she is the devil's dam a
 joyful issue
Nur A joyless dismal black and sorrowful
 issue
 Here is the babe as loathsome as a toad
 Amongst the fairest breeders of our clime
 The Empress sends it thee th' stamp th' seal
 And bids thee christen it with thy dagger's point
Aar Zounds ye whore! is black so base a hue?
 Sweet blowse you are a beauteous blossom sure
Dem Villain, what hast thou done?
Aar That which thou canst not undo
Chi Thou hast undone our mother
Aar Villain, I have done thy mother
Dem And therein hellish dog thou hast undone
 Voe to her chance and damn'd her loathed
 choice!
 Accursed the offspring of so foul a fiend!
Chi It shall not live 80
Aar It shall not die
Nur Aaron it must the mother wills it so
Aar What must it nurse? then let no man but I
 Do execution on my flesh and blood
Dem I'll broach the tadpole on my rapier's
 point
 Nurse give it me my sword shall soon dispatch
 it
Aar Sooner this sword shall plough thy bowels
 up
Takes the child from the nurse and draws
 Stay murderous villains! will you kill your
 brother?
 Now by the burning tapers of the sky
 That shone so brightly when this boy was got
 He dies upon my scimitar's sharp point 91
 That touches this my first born son and heir!
 I tell you younglings not Enceladus
 With all his threatening band of Typhon's brood
 Nor great Alcides nor the god of war
 Shall seize this prey out of his father's hands
 What what ye sanguine shallow hearted boys!
 Ye white limed walls! ye alchouse painted signs!
 Coal black is better than another hue
 In that it seems to bear another hue 100
 For all the water in the ocean
 Can never turn the swan's black legs in white
 Although she lave them hourly in the flood
 Tell the Empress from me I am of age
 To keep mine own excuse it how she can
Dem Wilt thou betray thy noble mistress thus?
Aar My mistress is my mistress this myself
 The visage and the picture of my youth
 This before all the world do I prefer
 Thus maugre all the world will I keep safe 110
 Or some of you shall smoke for it in Rome
Dem By this our mother is for ever shamed.

Chl Rome will despise her for this foul escape

Nur The Emperor, in his rage, will doom her death

Chl I blush to think upon this ignomy

Aar Why, there's the privilege your beauty bears

Fie, treacherous hue, that will betray with blushing

The close enacts and counsels of the heart!

Here's a young lad framed of another leer

Look, how the black slave smiles upon the father

As who should say, "Old lad I am thine own" 121

He is your brother lords sensibly fed

Of that self blood that first gave life to you,

And from that womb where you imprison'd were

He is enfranchised and come to light

Nay he is your brother by the surer side

Although my seal be stamped in his face

Nur Aaron what shall I say unto the Empress?

Dem Advise thee, Aaron what is to be done,

And we will all subscribe to thy advice 130

Save thou the child so we may all be safe

Aar Then sit we down, and let us all consult

My son and I will have the wind of you

Keep there now talk at pleasure of your safety

They sit

Dem How many women saw this child of his?

Aar Why, so, brave lords! when we join in league

I am a lamb but if you brave the Moor

The chafed boar, the mountain lioness,

The ocean swells not so as Aaron storms

But say again how many saw the child? 140

Nur Cornelia the midwife and myself

And no one else but the deliver'd Empress

Aar The Empress the midwife and yourself

Two may keep counsel when the third is away

Go to the Empress tell her this I said

He kills the nurse

Weke weke! so cries a pig prepared to the spit

Dem What mean'st thou Aaron? wherefore didst thou this?

Aar O Lord, sir, 'tis a deed of policy

Shall she live to betray this guilt of ours,

A long tongued babbling gossip? no lords no

And now be it known to you my full intent 151

Not far one Muli lives my country man

His wife but yesternight was brought to bed

His child is like to her fair as you are

Go pack with him and give the mother gold

And tell them both the circumstance of all

And how by this their child shall be advanced

And be receiv'd for the Emperor's heir

And substituted in the place of mine

To calm this tempest whirling in the court 160

And let the Emperor dandle him for his own

Hark ye, lords, ye see I have given her physick,

Pointing to the nurse

And you must needs bestow her funeral,

The fields are near and you are gallant grooms

This done see that you take no longer days,

But send the midwife presently to me

The midwife and the nurse well made away,

Then let the ladies tattle what they please

Chl Aaron I see thou wilt not trust the air

With secrets

Dem For this care of Tamora, 170

Herself and hers are highly bound to thee

[*Exeunt DEMETRIUS and CHIRON bearing off the Nurse & Lady*]

Aar Now to the Goths as swift as swallow flies

There to dispose this treasure in mine arms

And secretly to greet the Empress friends

Come on you thick lipp'd slave I'll bear you hence

For it is you that puts us to our shifts

I'll make you feed on berries and on roots,

And feed on curds and whey, and suck the goat,

And cabin in a cave, and bring you up 179

To be a warrior and command a camp [Exit]

SCENE III The same a public place

Enter TITUS bearing arrows with letters at the ends of them, with him, MARCUS, YOUNG LUCIUS, PUBLIUS Sempronius, Caius, and other Gentle men with bows

Tit Come, Marcus come kinsmen, this is the way

Sir boy now let me see your archery

Look ye draw home enough and 'tis there straight

Terras Astra et liquit

Be you remember'd Marcus she's gone she's fled

Sirs take you to your tools You cousins shall

Go sound the ocean and cast your nets

Happily you may catch her in the sea

Yet there as little justice as at land

No Publius and Sempronius you must do it 180

'Tis you must dig with mattock and I with spade,

And pierce the inmost centre of the earth

Then when you come to Pluto's region

I pray you deliver him this petition

Tell him it is for Justice and for aid

And that it comes from old Andronicus

Shaken with sorrows in ungrateful Rome

Ah home! Well well I made thee miserable

What time I threw the people's suffrages

On him that thou dost so rancore of me

Go get you gone and pray be careful all

And leave you no man of war unsearch'd

This wicked Emperor may have shupp'd her
hence

And kinsmen then we may go pipe for Justice

Marc O Publius ■ not this a heavy case

To see thy noble uncle thus distract?

Pub Therefore, my lord it highly us concerns

By day and night to attend him carefully

And feed his humour kindly as we may

Till time beget some careful remedy 30

Marc Kinsmen his sorrows are past remedy

Join with the Goths and with revengeful war

Take wreak on Rome for this ingratitude

And vengeance on the traitor Saturnine

Tit Publius how now! how now my masters!

What have you met with her?

Pub No my good lord but Pluto sends you
word

If you will have Revenge from hell you shall

Marry for Justice, she is so employ'd

He thinks with Jove in heaven or somewhere
else 40

So that perforce you must needs stay a time

Tit He doth me wrong to feed me with delays

I'll dive into the burning lake below

And pull her out of Acheron by the heels

Marcus we are but shrubs no cedars we

No big boned men framed of the Cyclops size

But metal Marcus steel to the very back

Yet wrung with wrongs more than our backs can
bear

And with there's no justice in earth nor hell

We will solicit heaven and move the gods 50

To send down Justice for to wreak our wrongs

Come to this gear You are a good archer

Marcus [*He gives them the arrows*]

Ad Jovem that's for you here *Ad Apollinem*

Ad Martem that's for my self

Here boy to Pallas here to Mercury

To Saturn, Caius not to Saturnine

You were as good to shoot against the wind

To it boy Marcus loose when I bid

Of my word I have written to effect

There's not a god left unsolicited 60

Marc Kinsmen, shoot all your shafts into the
court

We will afflict the Emperor in his pride

Tit Now masters draw [*They shoot*] O

well ■ d, Lucius

Good boy in Virgo's lap give it Pallas

Marc My lord, I am a mile beyond the
moon

Your letter is with Jupiter by this

Tit Ha, ha

Publius Publius what hast thou done

See, see, thou hast shot off one of Ianus horns

Marc This was the sport my lord when

Publius shot 70

The Ball being gall'd gave Arius such a knock

That down fell both the Rams horns in the court

And who should find them but the Empress

villain?

She laugh'd and told the Moor he should not

choose

But give them to his master for a present

Tit Why there it goes God give his lordship
joy!

Enter a CLOWN with a basket and two pigeons in it

News news from heaven! Marcus the post is
come

Sirrah what tidings? have you any letters?

Shall I have justice? what says Jupiter? 79

Clo O the gibbet maker! he says that he hath
taken them down again for the man must not be
hanged till the next week

Tit Put what says Jupiter I ask thee?

Clo Alas sir I know not Jupiter I never drank
with him in all my life

Tit Why villain art not thou the carrier?

Clo Ay of my pigeons sir nothing else

Tit Why didst thou not come from heaven?

Clo From heaven! alas sir I never came there
God forbid I should be so bold to press to heaven
in my young days Why I am going with my
pigeons to the tribunal plebs to take up a matter
of brawl betwixt my uncle and one of the emper-
rial's men

Marc Why sir that is as fit as can be to serve
for your oration and let him deliver the pigeons
to the Emperor from you

Tit Tell me can you deliver an oration to the
Emperor with a grace?

Clo Nay truly sir I could never say grace in
all my life 101

Tit Sirrah come hither make no more ado

But give your pigeons to the Emperor

By me thou shalt have justice at his hands

I hold hold meanwhile here's money for thy
charges

Give me pen and ink Sirrah can you with a
grace deliver a supplication?

Clo Ay sir

Tit Then here is a supplication for you And
when you come to him at the first approach you
must kneel then kiss his foot then deliver up
your pigeons and then look for your reward I'll
be at hand sir see you do it bravely

Clo I warrant you sir let me alone

Tit Sirrah hast thou a knife? come let me
see it

Here Marcus fold it in the oration

For thou hast made it like an humble suppliant
And when thou hast given it the Emperor,
Knock at my door and tell me what he says

Clo God be with you, sir, I will 120

Tit Come, Marcus, let us go Publius, follow me [Exeunt

SCENE IV *The same before the palace*

Enter SATURNINUS, TAMORA, DEMETRIUS, CHIRON,
Lords, and others, SATURNINUS with the arrows
in his hand that TITUS shot

Sat Why lords, what wrongs are these¹ was
ever seen

An Emperor in Rome thus overborne
Troubled, confronted thus, and, for the extent
Of equal justice, used in such contempt?
My lords, you I now, as know the mighty gods
However these disturbers of our peace
Buz in the people's ears, there nought hath pass'd,
But even with law, against the wilful sons
Of old Andronicus And what an if
His sorrows have so overwhelm'd his wits, 10
Shall we be thus afflicted in his weaks,
His fits, his frenzy, and his bitterness?

And now he writes to heaven for his redress
See here's to Jove, and this to Mercury
This to Apollo, this to the god of war,
Sweet scrolls to fly about the streets of Rome!
What's this but libelling against the senate,
And blazoning our injustice every where?

A goodly humour is it not, my lords?
As who would say, in Rome no justice were 20
But if I live, his feigned ecstasies
Shall be no shelter to these outrages

But he and his shall know that justice lives
In Saturninus' health whom, if she sleep,
He'll so awake as she in fury shall

Cut off the proudst conspirator that lives

Tam My gracious lord my lovely Saturnine,
Lord of my life commander of my thoughts
Calm thee and bear the faults of Titus' age,
The effects of sorrow for his valiant sons, 30
Whose loss hath pierced him deep and scarr'd his heart

And rather comfort his distressed plight
Than prosecute the meanest or the best
For these contempts [Aside] Why thus it shall
become

High-witted Tamora to grieve with all
But Titus I have touch'd thee to the quick
Thy life blood out if Aaron now be wise
Then is all safe the anchor's in the port

Enter CLOWN

How now good fellow¹ wouldst thou speak
with us?

Clo Yea, forsooth, an your mistership be
emperial

Tam Empress I am, but yonder sits the
Emperor

Clo 'Tis he God and Saint Stephen give you
good den I have brought you a letter and a
couple of pigeons here

Saturninus reads the letter

Sat Go take him away and hang him presently
Clo How much money must I have?

Tam Come, sirrah, you must be hanged

Clo Hanged¹ by r lady, then I have brought up
a neck to a fair end [Exit, guarded

Sat Despightful and intolerable wrongs¹ 50

Shall I endure this monstrous villainy?

I know from whence this same device proceeds

May this be borne? As if his traitorous sons,

That died by law for murder of our brother

Have by my means been butcher'd wrongfully¹

No, drag the villain hither by the hair,

Nor age nor honour shall shape privilege

For this proud mock I'll be thy slaughter man,

Sly frantic wretch that helpst to make me great,

In hope thy self should govern Rome and me 60

Enter ÆMILIUS

What news with thee Æmilius?

Æmil Arm, arm, my lord, Rome never had
more cause

The Goths have gather'd head, and with a power

Of high-resolved men, bent to the spoil,

They hither march again under conduct

Of Lucius son to old Andronicus

Who threatens in course of this revenge to do

As much as ever Coriolanus did

Sat Is warlike Lucius general of the Goths?

These tidings nip me and I hang the head 70

As flowers with frost or grass beat down with
storms

As, now begin our sorrows to approach

'Tis he the common people love so much,

Myself hath often overheard them say,

When I have walked like a private man

That Lucius' banishment was wrongfully

And they have wish'd that Lucius were their
emperor

Tam Why should you fear? Is not your city
strong?

Sat Ay, but the citizens favour Lucius

And will revolt from me to succour him 80

Tam Keep thy thoughts imperious like thy
name

Is the sun dimm'd that gnats do fly in it?

The eagle suffers in the birds to sing

And is not careful what they mean thereby

knowing that with the shadow of his wings

He can at pleasure stint their melody
 Even so may'st thou the giddy men of Rome
 Then cheer thy spirit for know thou emperor
 I will enchant the old Andronicus
 With words more sweet and yet more danger-
 ous

90

Than baits to fish, or honey stalks to sheep
 When as the one is wounded with the bait
 The other rotted with delicious feed
Set But he will not entreat his son for us
Tam If Tamora entreat him then he will
 For I can smooth and fill his aged ear
 With golden promises that were his heart
 Almost impregnable his old ears deaf
 Yet should both ear and heart obey my tongue
 [To *Æmilius*] Go thou before be our ambassa-
 dor

100

Say that the Emperor requests a parley
 Of warlike Lucius and appoint the meeting
 Even at his father's house the old Andronicus
Set *Æmilius* do this message honourably
 And if he stand on hostage for his safety
 Bid him demand what pledge will please him best
Æmil Your bidding shall I do effectually

[Exit

Tam Now will I to that old Andronicus
 And temper him with all the art I have
 To pluck proud Lucius from the warlike Goths
 And now sweet emperor be blithe again
 And bury thy fear in my devices
Set Then go successantly and plead to him

[Exeunt

ACT V

SCENE I Plains near Rome

*Enter LUCIUS with an army of goths, with
 drum and colours*

Luc Approved warriors and my faithful friends
 I have received letters from great Rome
 Which signify what hate they bear their Emperor
 And how desirous of our sight they are
 Therefore, great lords be, as your titles witness
 Imperious and impatient of your wrongs
 And wherein Rome hath done you any scath
 Let him make treble satisfaction
ist Goth Brave slip sprung from the great
 Andronicus

Whose name was once our terror now our
 comfort
 Whose high exploits and honourable deeds
 Irrateful Rome requites with foul contempt
 Be bold in us we'll follow where thou lead'st
 Like stinging bees in hottest summer's day
 Led by their master to the flow'ring fields
 And be a cenged on cursed Tamora

20

All the Goths And as he saith so say we all
 with him

Luc I humbly thank him and I thank you all
 But who comes here led by a lusty Goth?

*Enter SECOND GOTH leading AARON with his child
 in his arms*

2nd Goth Renowned Lucius from our troops I
 stray d

20

To gaze upon a ruinous monastery
 And as I earnestly did fix mine eye
 Upon the wasted building suddenly
 I heard a child cry underneath a wall
 I made unto the noise when soon I heard
 The crying babe controll'd with this discourse
 Peace tawny slave half me and half thy dam!
 Did not thy hue bewray whose brat thou art
 Had nature lent thee but thy mother's look
 Villain thou mightst have been an emperor
 But where the bull and cow are both milk white,
 They never do beget a coal black calf
 Peace villain, peace! —even thus he rates the
 babe—

30

For I must bear thee to a trusty Goth
 Who when he knows thou art the Empress' babe
 Will hold thee dearly for thy mother's sake
 With this my weapon drawn, I rush'd upon him
 Surprised him suddenly and brought him hither
 To use as you think needful of the man

Luc O worthy Goth, this is the incarnate devil
 That robb'd Andronicus of his good hand
 This is the pearl that pleased your Empress' eye,
 And here's the base fruit of his burning lust
 Say wail-eyed slave, whither wouldst thou
 convey

41

This growing image of thy fiend-like face?
 Why dost not speak? what deaf? not a word?
 A halter soldiers' hang him on this tree
 And by his side his fruit of bastardy

Arr Touch not the boy he is of royal blood
Luc Too like the sire for ever being good
 First hang the child that he may see it sprawl
 A sight to vex the father's soul withal
 Get me a ladder

50

A ladder brought which AARON made to ascend
Arr Lucius save the child

And bear it from me to the Empress
 If thou do this I'll show thee wondrous things
 That highly may advantage thee to hear
 If thou wilt not befall what may befall
 I'll speak no more but Vengeance rot you all!
Luc Say on an if it please me which thou
 speak st

Thy child shall live and I will see it nourish'd
Arr An if it please thee? why assure thee,
 Lucius

61

'Twill vex thy soul to hear what I shall speak,
For I must talk of murders, rapes and massacres,
Acts of black night, abominable deeds,
Complots of mischief, treason, villainies
Ruthful to hear, yet piteously perform'd
And thus shall all be buried by my death
Unless thou swear to me my child shall live
Luc Tell on thy mind I say thy child shall live

Aar Swear that he shall, and then I will begin

Luc Who should I swear by? thou believest no god 71

That granted how canst thou believe an oath?

Aar What if I do not? as indeed I do not,
Yet, for I know thou art religious
And hast a thing within thee called conscience,
With twenty popish tricks and ceremonies
Which I have seen thee careful to observe,
Therefore I urge thy oath, for that I know
An idiot holds his bauble for a god 79

And keeps the oath which by that god he swears,
To that I'll urge him therefore thou shalt vow
By that same god what god so'er it be,
That thou adorest and hast in reverence,
To save my boy, to nourish and bring him up,
Or else I will discover nought to thee

Luc Even by my god I swear to thee I will

Aar First know thou, I begot him on the
Empress

Luc O most insatiate and luxurious woman!

Aar Tut, Lucius this was but a deed of charity
To that which thou shalt hear of me anon 90

'Twas her two sons that murder'd Bassianus,
They cut thy sister's tongue and ravish'd her
And cut her hands and trimm'd her as thou saw'st

Luc O detestable villain! call'st thou that
trimming?

Aar Why she was wash'd and cut and
trimm'd and 'twas

Trim sport for them that had the doing of it

Luc O barbarous beastly villains like thyself!

Aar Indeed I was their tutor to instruct them
That coddling spirit had they from their mother
As sure a card as ever won on the set 100

That bloody mind I think thou learn'd of me
As true a dog as ever fought at head

Well let my deeds be witness of my worth
I train'd this brethren to that guileful hole

Where the dead corpse of Bassianus lay
I wrote the letter that thy father found

And hid the gold within the letter mention'd
Confederate with the Queen and her two sons

And what not done that thou hast cause to rue
Wherein I had no stroke of mischief in it? 110

I play'd the cheater for thy father's hand
And when I had it, drew my self apart

And almost broke my heart with extreme laughter
I pry'd me through the crevice of a wall
When, for his hand he had his two sons' heads,
Beheld his tears, and laugh'd so heartily,
That both mine eyes were rainy like to his
And when I told the Empress of this sport,
She swooned almost at my pleasing tale
And for my tidings gave me twenty lisses 120
1st Goth What, canst thou say all this, and
never blush?

Aar Ay, like a black dog, as the saying is

Luc Art thou not sorry for these heinous deeds?

Aar Ay, that I had not done a thousand more
Even now I curse the day—and yet I think
Few come within the compass of my curse—
Wherein I did not some notorious ill,
As kill a man or else devise his death
Ravish a maid, or plot the way to do it,
Accuse some innocent and forswear myself, 130

Set deadly enmity between two friends,
Make poor men's cattle break their necks,
Set fires on barns and hay stacks in the night
And bid the owners quench them with their tears
Oft have I digg'd up dead men from their graves
And set them upright at their dear friends' doors,
Even when their sorrows almost were forgot,
And on their skins, as on the bark of trees
Have with my knife carved in Roman letters,
"Let not your sorrow die though I am dead"

Tut I have done a thousand dreadful things 141

As willingly as one would kill a fly,

And nothing grieves me heartily indeed

But that I cannot do ten thousand more

Luc Bring down the devil, for he must not die

So sweet a death as hanging presently

Aar If there be devils would I were a devil

To live and burn in everlasting fire,

So I might have your company in hell,
But to torment you with my bitter tongue! 150

Luc Sirs stop his mouth and let him speak

no more

Enter third Goth

3rd Goth My lord there is a messenger from
Rome

Desires to be admitted to your presence

Luc Let him come near

Enter Titus

Welcome Titus what's the news from Rome?

Aar O Lord Lucius, and you princes of the
Goths

The Roman Emperor greets you all by name,

And for he wishes and you are in arms

He craves a parley at your father's house

Will he go to demand your hostages,

And they shall be immediately deliver'd

1st Goth What says our general?

Luc Amilius let the Emperor give his pledges
Unto my father and my uncle Marcus
And we will come March away

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II *Rome before Titus's house*

Enter TAMORA, DEMETRIUS and CHIRON disguised

Tam Thus in this strange and sad habiliment
I will encounter with Andronicus
And say I am Revenge sent from below
To join with him and right his heinous wrongs
Knock at his study where they say he keeps
To ruminate strange plots of dire revenge
Tell him Revenge is come to join with him,
And work confusion on his enemies

They knock

Enter TITUS above

Tit Who doth molest my contemplation?
Is it your trick to make me open the door
That so my sad decrees may fly away
And all my study be to no effect?
You are deceived for what I mean to do
See here in bloody lines I have set down
And what is written shall be executed

Tam Titus I am come to talk with thee

Tit No not a word how can I grace my talk
Wanting a hand to give it action?

Thou hast the odds of me therefore no more

Tam If thou didst know me thou wouldest
talk with me

Tit I am not mad I know thee well enough

Witness this wretched stump witness these
crimson lines

Witness these trenches made by grief and care

Witness the tiring day and heavy night

Witness all sorrow that I know thee well

For our proud empress mighty Tamora

Is not thy comrade nor my other hand?

Tam Know thou sad man I am not Tamora

She is thy enemy and I thy friend

I am Revenge sent from the infernal kingdom

To ease the gnawing vulture of thy mind

By working weakful vengeance on thy foes

Come down and welcome me to this world's light

Confer with me of murder and of death

There's not a hollow cave or lurking place,
No vast obscurity or musty vale

Where bloody murder or detested rape
Can couch for fear but I will find them out

And in their ears tell them my dreadful name

Revenge which makes the foul offender quake

Tit Art thou Revenge? and art thou sent to

me

To be a torment to mine enemies?

Tam I am therefore come down and welcome
me

Tit Do me some service ere I come to thee

Lo by thy side where Rape and Murder stands

Now give some surance that thou art Revenge,

Stab them or tear them on thy chariot wheels

And then I'll come and be thy waggoner

And whirl along with thee about the globe

Provide thee two proper palfreys black as jet

To hale thy vengeful waggon swift away

And find our murderers in their guilty caves

And when thy car is loaden with their heads

I will dismount and by the waggon wheel

Trot like a servile footman all day long

Even from Hyperion rising in the east

Until his very downfall in the sea

And day by day I'll do this heavy task

So thou destroy Rapine and Murder there

Tam These are my ministers and come with

me

Tit Are these thy ministers? what are they

call'd?

Tam Rapine and Murder therefore called so

Cause they take vengeance of such kind of men

Tit Good Lord how like the Empress' sons

they are!

And you, the Empress! but we worldly men

Have miserable mad mistaking eyes

O sweet Revenge now do I come to thee

And if one arm's embracement will content thee

I will embrace thee in it by and by

[*Exit above*]

Tam Thus closing with him fits his lunacy

Whate'er I forge to feed his brain sick fits

Do you uphold and maintain in your speeches

For now he firmly takes me for Revenge

And being credulous in this mad thought

I'll make him send for Lucius his son

And whilst I at a banquet hold him sure

I'll find some cunning practice out of hand

To scatter and disperse the giddy Goths

Or at the least make them his enemies

See here he comes and I must ply my theme

Enter TITUS below

Tit Long have I been forlorn, and all for

thee

Welcome dread Fury to my woful house

Rapine and Murder you are welcome too

How like the Empress and her sons you are!

Well are you fitted had you but a Moor

Could not all hell afford you such a devil?

For well I wot the Empress never was

But in her company there is a Moor

And would you represent our Queen aright

It were convenient you had such a devil

But welcome as you are What shall we do?

Tam What wouldst thou have us do,
Andronicus?

Dem Show me a murderer, I'll deal with him

Chi Show me a villain that hath done a rape,
And I am sent to be revenged on him

Tam Show me a thousand that have done thee
wrong

And I will be revenged on them all

Tit Look round about the wicked streets of
Rome,

And when thou findst a man that's like thy-
self,

Good Murder, stab him he's a murderer 100

Go thou with him, and when it is thy hap

To find another that is like to thee

Good Rapine, stab him, he's a ravisher

Go thou with them, and in the Emperor's court

There is a Queen attended by a Moor

Well mayst thou know her by thy own
proportion,

For up and down she doth resemble thee

I pray thee, do on them some violent death,

They have been violent to me and mine

Tam Well hast thou lesson'd us this shall
we do 110

But would it please thee, good Andronicus,

To send for Lucius thy thrice valiant son

Who leads towards Rome a band of warlike
Goths

And bid him come and banquet at thy house,

When he is here even at thy solemn feast,

I will bring in the Empress and her sons,

The Emperor himself and all thy foes,

And at thy mercy shall they stoop and kneel,

And on them shalt thou ease thy angry heart

What say's Andronicus to this device? 120

Tit Marcus my brother! tis sad Titus calls

Enter MARCUS

Go, gentle Marcus to thy nephew Lucius,

Thou shalt inquire him out among the Goths

Bid him repair to me and bring with him

Some of the chiefest princes of the Goths

Bid him encamp his soldiers where they are

Tell him the Emperor and the Empress too

Feast at my house and he shall feast with them

Thus do thou for my love and so let him

As he regards his aged father's life 130

Marc This will I do and soon return again

[Exit]

Tam Now will I hence about thy business
And take my ministers along with me

It Nay nay let Rape and Murder stay
with me

Or else I'll call my brother back again,

And cleave to no revenge but I Lucius

Tam *[Aside to her sons]* What say you boys?

will you bide with him

Whiles I go tell my lord the Emperor

How I have govern'd our determined jest?

Yield to his humour smooth and speak him fair

And tarry with him till I turn again 141

Tit *[Aside]* I know them all, though they

suppose me mad

And will o'erreach them in their own devices

A pair of cursed hell hounds and their dam!

Dem Madam, depart at pleasure leave us here

Tam Farewell, Andronicus Revenge now goes

To lay a complot to betray thy foes

Tit I know thou dost, and, sweet Revenge,
farewell *[Exit TAMORA]*

Chi Tell us old man how shall we be

employ'd?

Tit Tut I have work enough for you to do

Publius come hither Caius and Valentine! 151

Enter PUBLIUS and others

Pub What is your will?

Tit Know you these two?

Pub The Empress sons I take them, Chiron
and Demetrius

Tit Fie, Publius fie! thou art too much
deceived,

The one is Murder, Rape is the other's name,

And therefore bind them gentle Publius

Caius and Valentine lay hands on them

Ofte have you heard me wish for such an hour 160

And now I find it therefore bind them sure

And stop their mouths if they begin to cry *[Exit*

Publius &c lay hold on CHIRON and

DEMETRIUS

Chi Villains forbear! we are the Empress sons

Pub And therefore do we what we are

commanded

Stop close their mouths let them not speak a
word

Is he sure bound? look that you bind them fast

*Re-enter TITUS with LAVINIA he bearing a
knife and she a lamb*

Tit Come come, Lavinia look thy foes are
bound

Sirs stop their mouths let them not speak to
me

But let them hear what fearful words I utter

O villains Chiron and Demetrius! 170

Here stands the spring whom you have stain'd
with mud

This goodly summer with your winter mix'd

You kill'd her husband and for this vile fall

Two of her brothers were condemn'd to death,

My hand cut off and made a merry jest

Both her sweet hands her tongue, and that more dear

Than hands or tongue her spotless chastity
Inhuman traitors you constrain d and forced
What would you say if I should let you speak?
Villains for shame you could not beg for grace
Hark wretches! how I mean to martyr you 181
This one hand yet left to cut your throats
Whilst that Lavinia tween her stumps doth hold
The basin that receives your guilty blood
You know your mother means to feast with me
And calls herself Revenge and thinks me mad
Hark villains! I will grind your bones to dust
And with your blood and it I'll make a paste
And of the paste a coffin I will rear
And make two pastries of your shameful heads
And bid that strumpet your unhallow'd dam 191
Like to the earth swallow her own increase
This is the feast that I have bid her to
And thus the banquet she shall surfeit on
For worse than Philomel you used my daughter
And worse than Progne I will be revenged
And now prepare your throats Lavinia come
He cuts their throats

Receive the blood and when that they are dead
Let me go grind their bones to powder small
And with this hateful liquor temper it 200
And in that paste let their vile heads be baked
Come, come be every one officious
To make this banquet which I wish may prove
More stern and bloody then the Centaurs' feast
So now bring them in for I'll play the cook
And see them ready against their mother comes
[Exeunt bearing the dead bodies]

SCENE III *Court of Titus's house a banquet set out*

Enter LUCIUS, MARCUS and GOTHIS with AARON prisoner

LUC Uncle Marcus since it is my father's mind
That I repair to Rome I am content
1st Goth And ours with thine, befall what
fortune will

LUC Good uncle take you in this barbarous
Moor

This ravenous tiger this accursed devil
Let him receive no sustenance fetter him,
Till he be brought unto the Empress face
For testimony of her foul proceedings
And see the ambush of our friends be strong
I fear the Emperor means no good to us 10

ARR Some devil whisper curses in mine ear
And prompt me that my tongue may utter forth
The venomous malice of my swelling heart!

LUC Away inhuman dog! unhallow'd slave!
SRS help our uncle to convey him in.

[Exeunt GOTHIS with AARON Floutish within
The trumpets show the Emperor is at hand]

Enter SATURNINUS and TAMORA with A'MILIUS,
Tribunes Senators and others

SAT What hath the firmament more suns than
one?

LUC What boots it thee to call thyself a sun?

MARC Rome's Emperor and nephew break
the parle

These quarrels must be quietly debated 20

The feast is ready which the careful Titus

Hath ordain'd to an honourable end

For peace for love for league and good to Rome
Please you therefore draw nigh, and take your
places

SAT Marcus we will

Hautboys sound The Company sit down at
table

Enter TITUS dressed like a Cook LAVINIA veiled
YOUNG LUCIUS and others TITUS places the
dishes on the table

TIT Welcome my gracious lord welcome,
dread Queen

Welcome ye warlike Goths welcome, Lucius
And welcome, all although the cheer be poor

'Twill fill your stomachs please you eat of it 29

SAT Why art thou thus attired Andronicus?

TIT Because I would be sure to have all well

To entertain your Highness and your Empress

TAM We are beholding to you good

Andronicus

TIT An if your Highness knew my heart you
were

My lord the Emperor resolve me this

Was it well done of rash Virginius

To slay his daughter with his own right hand

Because she was enforced stain'd and
deflower'd?

SAT It was Andronicus

TIT Your reason, mighty lord?

SAT Because the girl should not survive her
shame 40

And by her presence still renew sorrow

TIT A reason mighty strong and effectual

A pattern, precedent and lively warrant

For me most wretched to perform the like

Die'd e Lavinia and thy shame with thee

[Exit LAVINIA]

And with thy shame thy father's sorrow die!

SAT What hast thou done unnatural and unkind?

TIT Kill'd her for whom my tears have made
me blind

I am as woful as Virginius was

And have a thousand times more cause than he 50

To do this outrage and it now is done

Sat What, was she ravish'd? tell who did the deed

Tit Will't please you eat? will't please your Highness feed?

Tam Why hast thou slain thine only daughter thus?

Tit Not I, 'twas Chiron and Demetrius
They ravish'd her, and cut away her tongue,
And they, 'twas they, that did her all this wrong

Sat Go fetch them hither to us presently

Tit Why, there they are both, baked in that pie,
Whereof their mother daintily hath fed 61

Eating the flesh that she herself hath bred
'Tis true, 'tis true, witness my knife's sharp
point

[*Kills TAMORA*]

Sat Die, frantic wretch, for this accursed deed!

[*Kills TITUS*]

Luc Can the son's eye behold his father bleed?
There's meed for meed death for a deadly deed!

[*Kills SATURNINUS A great tumult*]

LUCIUS, MARCUS, and others go up into the balcony

Marc You sad faced men, people and sons of Rome,

By uproar sever'd like a flight of fowl
Scatter'd by winds and high tempestuous
gusts,

O let me teach you how to knit again
This scatter'd corn into one mutual sheaf,
These broken limbs again into one body,
Lest Rome herself be bane unto herself,
And she whom mighty kingdoms court'sy to,
Like a forlorn and desperate castaway
Do shameful execution on herself

But if my frosty signs and chaps of age
Grave witnesses of true experience
Cannot induce you to attend my words
[*To LUCIUS*] Speak Rome's dear friend, as erst
our ancestor, 80

When with his solemn tongue he did discourse
To love-sick Dido's sad attending ear
The story of that baleful burning night
When subtle Greeks surprised King Priam's
Troy,

Tell us what Simon hath be witch'd our ears
Or who hath brought the fatal engine in
That gives our Troy our Rome the civil wound
My heart is not compact of flint nor steel
Nor can I utter all our bitter grief

But floods of tears will drown my oratory 90
And break my utterance even in the time
When it should move you to attend me most,
Lending your kind commiseration
Here is a captain, let him tell the tale

Your hearts will throb and weep to hear him
speak

Luc Then, noble auditory, be it known to you
That cursed Chiron and Demetrius
Were they that murdered our Emperor's brother,
And they it were that ravished our sister 99
For their fell faults our brothers were beheaded,
Our father's tears despised and basely cozen'd
Of that true heart that fought Rome's quarrel out,
And sent her enemies unto the grave
Lastly, my self unkindly banished

The gates shut on me, and turn'd weeping out
To beg relief among Rome's enemies,
Who drown'd their enmity in my true tears,
And open'd their arms to embrace me as a friend
I am the turned forth be it known to you
That have preserv'd her welfare in my blood,
And from her bosom took the enemy's point, 111
Sheathing the steel in my adventurous body
Alas, you know I am no vaunter, I,
My scars can witness, dumb although they are,
That my report is just and full of truth
But soft! methinks I do digress to much
Citing my worthless praise O pardon me,
For when no friends are by, men praise themselves

Marc Now is my turn to speak Behold this
child

[*Pointing to the child in the arms of an Attendant*]

Of this was Tamora delivered 120
The issue of an irreligious Moor,
Chief architect and plotter of these woes
The villain is alive in Titus' house,
And as he is, to witness this is true
Now judge what cause had Titus to revenge
These wrongs unspeakable, past patience,
Or more than any living man could bear
Now you have heard the truth what say you
Romans?

Have we done aught amiss? Show us wherein
And from the place where you behold us now
The poor remainder of Andronicus 131
Will hard in hand all headlong cast us down
And on the ragged stones beat forth our brains
And make a mutual closure of our lives
Speak Romans speak and if you say we shall
Lo hand in hand Lucius and I will fall

Ant Come, come, thou reverend man of
Rome

And bring our Emperor gently in thine hand
Lucius our Emperor for a while I know
The common voice doth cry it shall be so 140
All! Lucius all hail Rome's royal Emperor!
Mar Go forth now! Titus sorrowful he is
To fall

And thence hale this noble Moor

To be adjudged some direful slaughtering death
As punishment for his most wicked life

[*Exeunt Attendants*]

LUCIUS MARCUS *and the others descend*

All LUCIUS all hail Rome's gracious governor!

Luc Thanks gentle Romans may I govern so
To heal Rome's harms and wipe away her woe!
But gentle people give me aim awhile
For nature puts me to a heavy task 150
Stand all aloof but uncle draw you near
To shed obsequious tears upon this trunk
O take this warm kiss on thy pale cold lips

Kissing Titus

These sorrowful drops upon thy blood stain'd
face

The last true duties of thy noble son!

Mate Tear for tear and loving kiss for kiss

Thy brother Marcus renders on thy lips

O were the sum of these that I should pay

Countless and infinite yet would I pay them!

Late Come hither boy come come and learn
of us 160

To melt in show'ers thy grandsire loved thee
well

Many a time he danced thee on his knee

Sun thee asleep his loving breast thy pillow

Many a matter hath he told to thee

Meet and agreeing with thine infancy

In that respect then, like a loving child

Shed yet some small drops from thy tender spring

Because kind nature doth require it so

Friends should associate friends in grief and woe

Bid him farewell commit him to the grave 170

Do him that kindness and take leave of him

Young Luc O grandsire, grandsire! even with
all my heart

Would I were dead so you did live again!
O Lord I cannot speak to him for weeping
My tears will choke me if I open my mouth

Re-enter Attendants with AARON

Am You sad Andronicus have done with woes
Give sentence on this execrable wretch

That hath been breeder of these dire events

Luc Set him breast-deep in earth and furnish
him 179

There let him stand and rave and cry for food

If any one relieves or pities him

For the offence he dies This is our doom

Some stay to see him fasten'd in the earth

Aar O why should wrath be mute and fury
dumb?

I am no baby I that with base prayers

I should repent the evils I have done

Ten thousand worse than ever yet I did

Would I perform if I might have my will

If one good deed in all my life I did

I do repent it from my very soul 180

Luc Some loving friends convey the Emperor
hence,

And give him burial in his father's grave

My father and Lavinia shall forthwith

Be clo'd in our household's monument

As for that heinous tiger Tamora

No funeral rite nor man in mourning weeds

No mournful bell shall ring her burial

But throw her forth to beasts and birds of prey

Her life was beast-like and devoid of pity

And being so shall have like want of pity 200

See justice done on Aaron, that damn'd Moor

By whom our heavy haps had their beginning

Then afterwards to order well the state

That like events may never it ruinate [*Exeunt*]

THE TAMING OF THE SHREW

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

A LORD		GRUMIO	
CHRISTOPHER SLY, a tinker	Persons in the Induction	CURTIS	servants to Petruchio
TWO HUNTSMEN		PETER	
SERVINGMAN		NATHANIEL	
PAGE		PHILIP	
MESSANGER		JOSEPH	
THREE SERVANTS		NICHOLAS	
PLAYERS		A PEDANT	
HOSTESS		A TAILOR	
BAPTISTA MINOLA a rich gentleman of Padua		A HABERDASHER	
VINCENTIO, an old gentleman of Pisa		KATHARINA the shrew	daughters to Baptista
LUCENTIO son to Vincentio in love with Bianca		BIANCA	
PETRUCHIO a gentleman of Verona a suitor to Katharina		WIDOW	
GREMIO suitors to Bianca		NON SPEAKING Attendants and servants	
HORTENSIO		SCENE Padua and Petruchio's country house	
TRANIO servants to Lucentio			
BIONDELLO			



INDUCTION

SCENE 1 Before an alehouse on a heath

Enter HOSTESS and SLA

Sly I'll pheeze you, in faith
 Host A pair of stocks, you rogue!
 Sly Ye are a baggage the Slys are no rogues,
 look in the chronicles we came in with Richard
 Conqueror Therefore *præcis pallabris*, let the
 world slide sessa!

Host You will not pay for the glasses you have
 burst?

Sly No not a denier Go by, Jeronimy go to
 thy cold bed and warm thee 10

Host I know my remedy I must go fetch the
 third borough [Exit]

Sly Third or fourth, or fifth borough I'll an-
 swer him by law I'll not budge an inch boy
 let him come, and kindly [Falls asleep]

Hosts attended First a LORD from hunting,
 with his train

Lord Huntsman I charge thee tender well my
 hounds

Brach Merriman the poor cur is embossed
 And couple Clowder with the deep-mouth'd
 brach

Sawst thou not boy how Silver made it good
 At the hedge-corner in the coldest fall? 20

I would not lose the dog for twenty pound
 1st Hum Why, Belman is as good as he, my lord,
 He cried upon it at the merest loss
 And twice to-day pick'd out the dullest scent
 Trust me I take him for the better dog
 Lord Thou art a fool if Echo were as
 fleet

I would esteem him worth a dozen such
 But sup them well and look unto them all
 To-morrow I intend to hunt again

1st Hum I will my lord 30

Lord What's here one dead or drunk? See,
 doth he breathe?

2nd Hum He breathes my lord Were he not
 warm'd with ale,

This were a bed but cold to sleep so soundly

Lord O monstrous beast! how like a swine he
 lies!

Grim death how foul and loathsome is thine
 image!

Sirs I will practice on this drunken man

What think you if he were convey'd to bed
 Wrapp'd in sweet clothes rings put upon his
 fingers

A most delicious banquet by his bed
 And brach attendants near him when he wakes
 Would not the beggar then forget himself? 40

1st Hum Believe me lord I think he cannot
 chooce

2nd Hum It would seem strange unto him when
he waked

Lord Even as a flattering dream or worthless
fancy

Then take him up and manage well the jest
Carry him gently to my fairest chamber
And hang it round with all my vanton pictures
Balm his foul head in warm distilled waters
And burn sweet wood to make the lodging sweet
Procure me music ready when he wakes 50
To make a dulcet and a heavenly sound
And if he chance to speak be ready straight
And with a low submissive reverence
Say What is it your honour will command?
Let one attend him with a silver basin
Full of rose water and bestrew'd with flowers
Another bear the ewer the third a diaper
And say Will it please your lordship cool your
hands?

Some one be ready with a costly suit
And ask him what apparel he will wear 60
Another tell him of his hounds and horse,
And that his lady mourns at his disease
Persuade him that he hath been luratic
And when he says he is say that he dreams
For he is nothing but a mighty lord
This do and do it kindly gentle sirs
It will be pastime passing excellent
If it be husbanded with modesty

1st Hum My lord I warrant you we will play
our part
As he shall think by our true diligence 70
He is no less than what we say he is

Lord Take him up gently and to be I with him
And each one to his office when he wakes

Some *Leat out sirs A trumpet soun's*
Sirrah go see what trumpet tis that sounds
[*Exit SERVANTIAN*]
Belike some noble gentleman that means
Travelling some journey to repose him here

Re-ent SERV. GIAN

How now! who is it?

Serv An I please your honour players
That offer service to your lordship
Lord Bid them come near

Enter PLAYERS

Now fellows you are welcome
Players We thank your honour 80
Lord Do you intend to stay with me to-night?
A Player So please your lordship to accept our
dut
Lord With all my heart This fellow I remem-
ber
Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son

'Twas where you woo'd the gentlewoman so
well

I have forgot your name but sure that part
Was aptly fitted and naturally perform'd

A Player I think 'twas Soto that your honour
means

Lord 'Tis very true thou didst it excellent
Well you are come to me in happy time 90

The rather for I have some sport in hand
Wherein your cunning can assist me much

There is a lord will hear you play to-night
But I am doubtful of your modesties

Lest over-seeing of his odd behaviour —
For yet his honour never heard a play—

You break into some merry passion
And so offend him for I tell you sirs

If you should smile he grows impatient

A Player Fear not my lord we can contain
ourselves

Were he the veriest antic in the world

Lord Go sirrah take them to the buttery
And give them friendly welcome every one
Let them want nothing that my house affords

[*Exit one with the PLAYERS*]

Sirrah go you to Barthol mew my page
And see him dress'd in all suits like a lady
That done conduct him to the drunkard's cham-
ber

And call him madam do him obeisance

Tell him from me as he will win my love
He bear himself with honourable action, 110

Such as he hath observed in noble ladies

Unto their lords by them accomplished

Such duty to the drunkard let him do

With soft low tongue and lowly courtesy

And say What is it your honour will command

Wherein your lady and your humble wife

May show her duty and make known her love?

And then with kind embracements tempting
kisses

And with declining head into his bosom

Bid him shed tears as being overjoy'd 120

To see her noble lord restored to health,

Who for this seven years hath esteemed him

No better than a poor and loathsome beggar

And if the boy have not a woman's gift

To rain a shower of commanded tears

An onion will do well for such a shift

Which in a napkin being close convey'd

Shall in despite enforce a watery eye

See this d'spatch'd with all the haste thou canst
Anon I'll give thee more instructions 130

[*Exit a SERV. GIAN*]

I know the boy will well usurp the grace

Voice gait and action of a gentlewoman

I long to hear him call the drunkard husband,

And how my men will stay themselves from laughter

When they do homage to this simple peasant
I'll in to counsel them, haply my presence
May well abate the over-merry spleen
Which otherwise would grow into extremes

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II *A bedchamber in the Lord's house*

Enter aloft SLY, with Attendants, some with apparel, others with basin and ewer and other appurtenances, and LORD

Sly For God's sake, a pot of small ale

1st Serv Will't please your lordship drink a cup of sack?

2nd Serv Will't please your honour taste of these conserves?

3rd Serv What raiment will your honour wear to-day?

Sly I am Christopher Sly, call not me 'honour' nor 'lordship' I ne'er drank sack in my life, and if you give me any conserves give me conserves of beef ne'er ask me what raiment I'll wear, for I have no more doublets than backs, no more stockings than legs, nor no more shoes than feet, nay, sometime more feet than shoes, or such shoes as my toes look through the over-leather

Lord Heaven cease this idle humour in your honour!

O, that a mighty man of such descent,
Of such possessions, and so high esteem,
Should be infused with so foul a spirit!

Sly What, would you make me mad? Am not I Christopher Sly, old Sly's son of Burtonheath, by birth a pedlar, by education a cardmaker, by transmutation a bear-herd and now by present profession a tinker? Ask Marian Hacket, the fat alewife of Wincot if she know me not if she say I am not fourteen pence on the score for sheer ale, score me up for the longest knave in Christendom! What! I am not bestraight here—

3rd Serv O, this it is that makes your lady mourn!

1st Serv O this it is that makes your servants droop!

Lord Hence comes it that your kindred shuns your house

As beaten hence by your strange lunacy
O noble lord! bethink thee of thy birth
Call home thy ancient thoughts from banishment
And banish hence these abject lowly dreams
Look how thy servants do attend on thee
Each in his office ready to thy beck
Wilt thou have music? hark! Apollo plays,
Mus.

And twenty caged nightingales do sing
Or wilt thou sleep? we'll have thee to a couch
Softer and sweeter than the lustful bed
On purpose trimm'd up for Semiramis
Say, thou wilt walk, we will bestrew the ground
Or wilt thou ride? thy horses shall be trapp'd,
Their harness studded all with gold and pearl
Dost thou love hawking? thou shalt have hawks will soar
Above the morning lark or wilt thou hunt?
Thy hounds shall make the well in answer them
And fetch shrill echoes from the hollow earth
1st Serv Say thou wilt course, thy grey hounds
are as swift

As breathed stags, ay, fleetlier than the roe

2nd Serv Dost thou love pictures? we will fetch thee straight

Adonis painted by a running brook

And Cytherea all in sedges hid

Which seem to move and wanton with her breath,

Even as the waving sedges play with wind

Lord We'll show thee lovelier than a maid,

And how she was beguiled and surprised

As lively painted as the deed was done

3rd Serv Or Daphne roaming through a thorny wood

Scratching her legs that one shall swear she bleeds

And at that sight shall sad Apollo weep

So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn

Lord Thou art a lord and nothing but a lord

Thou hast a lady far more beautiful

Than any woman in this waning age

1st Serv And till the tears that she hath shed for thee

I like envious floods o'er-run her lovely face,

She was the fairest creature in the world,

And yet she is inferior to none

Sly Am I a lord? and have I such a lady?

Or do I dream? or have I dream'd till now?

I do not sleep, I see, I hear, I speak

I smell sweet savours and I feel soft things

Upon my life I am a lord indeed

And not a tinker nor Christopher Sly

Well bring our lady hither to our sight,

And once again a pot of the smallest ale

2nd Serv Will't please your mightiness to wash your hands

O how we joy to see your wit re-learn'd!

O that once more you knew but what you are!

These fifteen years you have been in a dream

Or when you waked so waked as if you slept

Sly These fifteen years? by my fay, a goodly nap

But I'll never speak of all that time

1st Serv O yes my lord, but very idle words:
For though you lay here in this goodly chamber,

Yet would you say ye were beaten out of door
And rail upon the hostess of the house
And say you would present her at the lect
Because she brought stone jugs and no seal d
quarts

Sometimes you would call out for Cicely Hackett 90
Sly Ay the woman's maid of the house
3rd Serv Why sir you know no house nor no
such maid

Nor no such men as you have reckon'd up
As Stephen Sly and old John Naps of Greece
And Peter Turph and Henry Pimpernell
And twenty more such names and men as these
Which never were nor no man ever saw
Sly Now Lord be thanked for my good amends!
All Amen 100
Sly I thank thee thou shalt not lose by it

Enter the PAGE as a lady with attendants

Page How fares my noble lord?
Sly Marry I fare well for here is cheer enough
Where is my wife?
Page Here noble lord what is thy will with her?
Sly Are you my wife and will not call me hus-
band?

My men should call me lord I am your good
man

Page My husband and my lord my lord and
husband

I am your wife in all obedience

Sly I know it well What must I call her?

Lord Madam 111

Sly Alce madam or Joan madam?

Lord Madam and nothing else so lords call
ladies

Sly Madam wife they say that I have dream'd
And slept above some fifteen year or more

Page Ay and the time seems thirty unto me
Being all this time abandon'd from your bed

Sly 'Tis much Servants leave me and her alone
Madam undress you and come now to bed

Page Thrice noble lord let me entreat of you
To pardon me yet for a night or two 121
Or if not so until the sun be set

For your physicians have expressly charged
In peril to incur your former malady
That I should yet absent me from your bed
I hope this reason stands for my excuse

Sly Ay it stands so that I may hardly tarry so
long But I would I be loath to fall into my dreams
again I will therefore tarry in despite of the
flesh and the blood 130

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess Your honour's players hearing your
amendment

Are come to play a pleasant comedy
I or so your doctors hold it very meet
Seem too much sadness hath congeal'd your
blood

And melancholy is the nurse of frenzy
Therefore they thought it good you hear a play
And frame your mind to mirth and merriment
Which bars a thousand harms and lengthens life
Sly Marry I will let them play it Is not a
comonity a Christmas gambold or a tumbling
trick? 141

Is e No my good lord it is more pleasing stuff
Sly What household stuff?

Page It is a kind of history

Sly Well we'll see't Come madam wife sit
by my side and let the world slip we shall ne'er
be younger

Flourish

ACT I

SCENE I Padua a public place

Enter LICENTIO and his man TRANIO

Lic Tranio since for the great desire I had
To see fair Padua nursery of arts
I am arriv'd for fruitful Lombardy
The pleasant garden of great Italy
And by my father's love and leave am arm'd
With his good will and thy good company
My trusty servant well approv'd in all
Here let us breathe and haply institute
A course of learning and ingenious studies 10
Pisa renov'd for grave citizens
Gave me my being and my father first
A merchant of great traffic through the world
Vincenzio come of the Bentivogli
Vincenzio's son brought up in Florence
It shall become to serve all hopes conceived
To deck his fortune with his virtuous deeds
And therefore Tranio for the time I study
Virtue and that part of philosophy
Will I apply that treats of happiness 20
By virtue specially to be achiev'd
Tell me thy mind for I have Pisa left
And am to Padua come as he that leaves
A shallow plash to plunge him in the deep
And with satiety seeks to quench his thirst
Tra Misericordia gentle master mine
I am in all affected as yourself
Glad that you thus continue your resolve
To suck the sweets of sweet philosophy
Only good master while we do admire 30
This virtue and this moral discipline
Let's be no stoics nor no stocks I pray
Or so devote to Aristotle's checks
As Ovid be an outcast quite abjured

Balk logic with acquaintance that you have
And practise rhetoric in your common talk,
Music and poesy use to quicken you,
The mathematics and the metaphysics
Fall on them as you find your stomach serves you,
No profit grows where is no pleasure ta'en
In brief, sir, study what you most affect 40

Luc Gramercies Tranio, well dost thou advise
If Biondello, thou wert come ashore,
We could at once put us in readiness,
And take a lodging fit to entertain
Such friends as time in Padua shall beget
But stay a while what company is this?

Tra Master, some show to welcome us to town

Enter BAPTISTA, KATHARINA, BIANCA GREMIO, a pantaloon, and HORTENSIO LUCENTIO and TRANIO stand by

Bap Gentlemen, importune me no farther,
For how I firmly am resolved you know,
That is not to bestow my youngest daughter 50
Before I have a husband for the elder
If either of you both love Katharina
Because I know you well and love you well,
Leave shall you have to court her at your pleas-
ure

Gre [*Aside*] To cart her rather she's too rough
for me

There there, Hortensio will you any wife?

Kath I pray you sir is it your will

To make a stale of me amongst these mates?

Hor Mates maid! how mean you that? no
mates for you

Unless you were of gentler milder mould 60

Kath I faith sir you shall never need to fear

I was it is not half way to her heart

But if it were doubt not her care should be

To comb your noddle with a three-legged stool

And paint your face and use you like a fool

Hor From all such devils good Lord deliver
us!

Gre And me too good Lord!

Tra Hush, master! here's some good pastime
toward

That wench is stark mad or wonderful froward

Luc But in the other's silence do I see 70

Maid's mild behaviour and sobriety

Peace Tranio!

Tra Well said, master, mum! and gaze your
fill

Bap Gentlemen that I may soon make good

What I have said Bianca get you in

And let it not displease thee good Bianca

I or I will love thee ne'er the less my girl

Kath A pretty pearl it is be it

Put finger in the eye as she knew why

Bian Sister, content you in my discontent 80

Sir to your pleasure humbly I subscribe

My books and instruments shall be my company,

On them to look and practise by myself

Luc Hark Tranio! thou may'st hear Minerva
speak

Hor Signior Baptista will you be so strange?

Sorry am I that our good will effects

Bianca's grief

Gre Why will you mew her up,

Signior Baptista for this fiend of hell

And make her bear the penance of her tongue?

Bap Gentlemen, content ye, I am resolved 90

Go in Bianca [*Exit BIANCA*]

And for I know she taketh most delight

In music, instruments and poetry

Schoolmasters will I keep within my house,

Fitted to instruct her youth If you Hortensio,

Or Signior Gremio, you, know any such,

Prefer them hither, for to cunning men

I will be very kind, and liberal

To mine own children in good bringing up

And so farewell Katharina, you may stay 100

For I have more to commune with Bianca [*Exit*]

Kath Why and I trust I may go too, may I not?

What shall I be appointed hours as though be-
like I knew not what to take and what to leave,
ha? [*Exit*]

Gre You may go to the devil's dam your gifts

are so good, here's none will hold you Their love

is not so great Hortensio but we may blow our

nails together, and fast it fairly out our cake's

dough on both sides Farewell yet for the love I

bear my sweet Bianca if I can by any means light

on a fit man to teach her that wherein she de-
lights I will wish him to her father

Hor So will I Signior Gremio but a word I

pray Though the nature of our quarrel yet never

brook'd parley, know now, upon advice it touch-
eth us both that we may yet again have access

to our fair mistress and be happy rivals in

Bianca's love, to labour and effect one thing

specially 11

Gre What's that I pray?

Hor Marry sir to get a husband for her sister

Gre A husband? a devil

Hor I say a husband

Gre I say a devil Thinkest thou Hortensio

though her father be very rich any man is so

very a fool to be married to hell?

Hor Tush Gremio though it pass your pa-
tience and mine to endure her low lachryms why

man there be good fellows in the world and a

man could light on them would take her with all

faults and money enough

Gre I cannot tell but I had as lief take her

dowry with this condition, to be whipped at the high cross every morning

Hor Faith as you say there's small choice in rotten apples. But come since this bar in law makes us friends it shall be so far forth friendly maintained till by helping Baptista's eldest daughter to a husband we set his youngest free for a husband and then have to refresh Sweet Bianca. Happy man be his dole. He that runs fastest gets the run. Now say you Signior Gremio?

Gre I am agreed and would I had given him the best horse in Padua to begin his wooing that would thoroughly woo her wed her and bed her and rid the house of her! Come on 150

[*Exit Gremio and Hortensio*]

Tra I pray sir tell me, is it possible That love should of a sudden take such hold?

Luc O Tranio till I found it to be true I never thought it possible or likely. But see while idly I stood looking on I found the effect of love in idleness. And now in plainness do confess to thee, That art to me as secret and as dear As Anna to the queen of Carthage was. Tranio I burn I pine I perish. Tranio 160 If I achieve not this young modest girl Counsel me Tranio for I know thou canst Assist me Tranio for I know thou wilt.

Tra Master it is no time to chide you now. Affection is not rated from the heart. If love have touch'd you now it remains but so. *Redime te captum quam queas minimo*

Luc Gramercies lad go forward thus contents. The rest will comfort for thy counsel's sound.

Tra Master you look'd so longly on the maid Perhaps you mark'd not what's the pith of all.

Luc O yes I saw sweet beauty in her face. Such as the daughter of Agenor had. That made great Jove to humble him to her hand. When with his knees he kiss'd the Cretan strand.

Tra Saw you no more? mark'd you not how her sister

Began to scold and raise up such a storm That mortal ears might hardly endure the din?

Luc Tranio I saw her coral lips to move And with her breath she did perfume the air. 180 Sacred an I sweet was all I saw in her.

Tra Nay then 'tis time to stir him from his trance.

I pray awake sir if you love the maid. Bend thoughts and wits to achieve her. Thus it stands.

Her elder sister is so curst and shrewd That till the father rid his hands of her Master your love must live a maid at home.

And therefore has he closely mew'd her up Because she will not be annoy'd with suitors.

Luc Ah Tranio what a cruel father's he! But art thou not advis'd he took some care? 191 To get her cunning schoolmasters to instruct her?

Tra Ay marry am I sir and now 'tis plotted. *Luc* I have it Tranio.

Tra Master for my hand Both our inventions meet and jump in one. *Luc* Tell me thine first.

Tra You will be schoolmaster And undertake the teaching of the maid. That's your device.

Luc It is may it be done? *Tra* Not possible for who shall bear your part And be in Padua here Vincentio's son, 200 keep house and ply his book welcome his friends.

Visit his country men and banquet them? *Luc* But content thee for I have it full. We have not yet been seen in any house Nor can we be distinguish'd by our faces. For man or master then it follows thus. Thou shalt be master Tranio in my stead keep house and port and servants as I should. I will some other be some Florentine Some Neapolitan or meaner man of Pisa. 210 'Tis hatch'd and shall be so. Tranio at once Uncase thee take my colour'd hat and cloak. When Biondello comes he waits on thee. But I will charm him first to keep his tongue.

Tra So had you need. In brief sir with it your pleasure is And I am tied to be obedient. For so your father charged me at our parting. Be serviceable to my son quoth he. Although I think 'twas in another sense. 220 I am content to be Lucentio Because so well I love Lucentio.

Luc Tranio be so because Lucentio loves And let me be a slave to achieve that maid Whose sudden sight hath thrall'd my wounded eye.

Here comes the rogue.

Enter BIONDELLO

Sirrah where have you been? *Bion* Where have I been? Nay how now! where are you? Master has my fellow Tranio stolen your clothes? Or you stolen his? or both? pray what's the news? 230

Luc Sirrah come hither 'tis no time to jest And therefore frame your manners to the time. Your fellow Tranio here to save my life Puts my apparel and my countenance on And I for my escape have put on his.

For in a quarrel since I came ashore
I kill'd a man and fear I was descried
Wait you on him I charge you, as becomes
While I make way from hence to save my life
You understand me?

Bion I sir! ne'er a whit 240

Luc And not a jot of Tranio in your mouth
Tranio is changed into Lucentio

Bion The better for him would I were so too!

Tra So could I, faith, boy, to have the next wish
after,

That Lucentio indeed had Baptista's youngest
daughter

But, sirrah, not for my sake, but your master's, I
advise

You use your manners discreetly in all kind of
companies

When I am alone, why, then I am Tranio,

But in all places else your master Lucentio 249

Luc Tranio let's go one thing more rests, that
thyself execute, to make one among these woo-
ers if thou ask me why, sufficeth my reasons
are both good and weighty [Exeunt

The presenters above speak

ist Srv My lord, you nod, you do not mind
the play

Sly Yes, by Saint Anne, do I A good matter,
surely comes there any more of it?

Page My lord, 'tis but begun

Sly 'Tis a very excellent piece of work, madam
lady would 'twere done! 259

I hys sit and mark

SCENE II Padua before Hortensio's house

Enter PETRUCHIO and his man GRUMIO

Pet Verona for a while I take my leave,

To see my friends in Padua, but of all

My best beloved and approved friend,

Hortensio and I trow this is his house

Here sirrah Grumio knock, I say

Gru Knock, sir! whom should I knock? is there
any man has rebused your worship?

Pet Villain, I say knock me here soundly

Gru Knock you here sir! why, sir what am I,
sir that I should knock you here sir? 10

Pet Villain I say, knock me at this gate

And rap me well or I'll knock your knave's pate

Gru My master is grown quarrelsome I should
knock you first

And then I know after who comes by the worst

Pet Will it not be?

Faith sirrah any you'll not knock I'll ring it

I'll try how you can sol fa, and sin it

Hortensio's lady enters

Gru Help masters help! my master is mad

Pet Now, knock when I bid you, sirrah villain!

Enter HORTENSIO

Hor How now! what's the matter? My old
friend Grumio! and my good friend Petruchio!
How do you all at Verona?

Pet Signior Hortensio, come you to part the
fray?

Con tutto il cuore, ben trovato, may I say

Hor Alla nostra casa ben venuto molto honorato
signor mio Petruchio

Rise, Grumio, rise we will compound this
quarrel

Gru Nay, tis no matter sir, what he 'leges in
Lain If this be not a lawful cause for me to leave
his service, look you, sir, he bid me knock him
and rap him soundly, sir well, was it fit for a
servant to use his master so, being perhaps, for
aught I see, two and thirty, a pip out?

Whom would to God I had well knock'd at first,

Then had not Grumio come by the worst

Pet A senseless villain! Good Hortensio,

I bade the rascal knock upon your gate

And could not get him for my heart to do it

Gru Knock at the gate! O heavens! Spake you
not these words plain, 'Sirrah, knock me here,
rap me here, knock me well and knock me
soundly?' And come you now with 'knocking
at the gate'?

Pet Sirrah, be gone, or talk not I advise you

Hor Petruchio, patience I am Grumio's pledge

Why, this's a heavy chance 'twixt him and you,

Your ancient, trusty pleasant servant Grumio

And tell me now sweet friend what happy gale

Blows you to Padua here from old Verona?

Pet Such wind as scatters young men through
the world 50

To seek their fortunes farther than at home

Where small experience grows Put in a few,

Signior Hortensio, thus it stands with me

Antonio, my father, is deceased

And I have thrust my self into this maze,

Haply to wife and thrive as best I may

Crowns in my purse I have and goods a home,

And so am come abroad to see the world

Hor Petruchio shall I then come roundly to
thee

And wish thee to a shrewd ill favoured wife? 60

Thou dost thank me but a little for my counsel

And yet I'll promise thee'st all be rich

And very rich but thou art too much my friend

And I'll not wish thee to be so

Pet Signor Hortensio, twixt such friends as we

Few words suffice and therefore if thou know

One rich enough to be Petruchio's wife

As well it be, let me have word of thee

Be she as foul as Florentius' love
As old as Sibil and as curst and shrewd 70
As Socrates' Xanthippe or a worse
She moves me not or not removes at least
Affection's edge in me were she as rough
As are the swelling Adriatic seas
I come to wive it wealthily in Padua
If wealthily then happily in Padua

Gru Nay look you sir he tells you flatly what
his mind is why give him gold enough and
marry him to a puppet or an a let baby or an
old trot with ne'er a tooth in her head thou h she
have as many diseases as two and fifty horses
why nothing comes amiss so money comes
withal

Hor Petruchio since we are stepp'd thus far in
I will continue that I broach'd in yest
I can Petruchio help thee to a wife
With wealth enough and young and beautiful
Brought up as best becomes a gentlewoman
Her only fault and that is faults enough
Is that she is intolerable curst
And shrewd and froward so beyond all measure
That were my state far worse than it is 91
I would not wed her for a mine of gold

Pet Hortensio peace! thou know'st not gold's
effect

Tell me her father's name and tis enough
For I will board her though she chide as loud
As thunder when the clouds in autumn crack

Hor Her father is Baptista Minola
An affable and courteous gentleman
Her name is Katharina Minola
Renowned in Padua for her scolding tongue 100

Pet I know her father though I know not her
And he knew my deceased father well
I will not sleep Hortensio till I see her
And therefore let me be thus bold with you
To give you over at this first encounter
Unless you will accompany me thither

Gru I pray you sir let him go while the hu-
mour lasts O my word an she knew him as
well as I do she would think scolding would do
little good upon him she may perhaps call him
half a score knaves or so why that's nothing
an he begin once he'll rail in his rope tricks I'll
tell you what sir an she stand him but a little
he will thro' a figure in her face and so disfigure
her with it that she shall have no more eyes to
see withal than a cat You know him not sir

Hor Tarry Petruchio I must go with thee
For in Baptista's keep my treasure is
He hath the jewel of my life in hold
His youngest daughter beautiful Bianca 120
And her withholds from me and other more
Suitors to her and rivals in my love

Supposin' it a thing impossible
For those defects I have before rehearsed,
That ever Katharina will be woo'd
Therefore this order hath Baptista taken,
That none shall have access unto Bianca
Till Katharine the curst has got a husband

Gru Katharine the curst!
A title for a maid of all titles the worst 130
Hor Now shall my friend Petruchio do me
grace

And offer me disguised in sober robes
To old Baptista as a schoolmaster
Well seen in music to instruct Bianca
That so I may by this device at least
Have leave and leisure to make love to her
And unsuspected court her by herself
Cru Here's no knavery See to beguile the old
folks how the young folks lay their heads to-
gether! 140

Enter Gremio and Lucentio disguised

Master master look about you who goes there
hah?

Hor Peace Gremio it is the rival of my love
Petruchio stand by a while

Gru A proper strapping and an amorous!
Gru O very well I have perused the note
Hark you sir I'll have them very fairly bound
All books of love see that at any hand
And see you read no other lectures to her
You understand me over and beside
Signior Baptista's liberality 150
I'll mend it with a largess Take your paper too
And let me have them very well perfumed
For she is sweeter than perfume itself
To whom they go to What will you read to her?

Luc Whatever I read to her I'll plead for you
As for my patron stand you so assured
As firmly as yourself were still in place
Yea and perhaps with more successful words
Than you unless you were a scholar sir
Gru O this learning what a thing it is! 160
Gru O this woodcock what an ass it is!

Pet Peace sirrah!
Hor Gremio mum! God save you Signior
Gremio

Gru And you are well met Signior Hortensio
Trow you whether I am going? To Baptista
Minola

I promised to inquire carefully
About a schoolmaster for the fair Bianca
And by good fortune I have lighted well
On this young man for learning and behaviour
Fit for her turn well read in poetry 170
And other books good ones I warrant ye
Hor 'Tis well and I have met a gentleman

Achieve the elder set the younger free
 For our access whose hap shall be to have her
 Will not so graceless be to be ingrate 270
Hor Sir you say well and well you do conceive

And since you do profess to be a sutor
 You must as we do gratify this gentleman
 To whom we all rest generally beholding
Tra Sir I shall not be slack in soon whereof
 Please ye we may contrive this afternoon
 And quaff carouses to our mistress health
 And do as adversaries do in law
 Strive mightily but eat and drink as friends
Gru *Bion* O excellent motion Fellows let's
 be gone 280
Hor The motion's good indeed and be it so
Petruchio I shall be your *Len Amulo* *[Exeunt]*

ACT II

SCENE I *Padua a room in Baptista's house*

Enter KATHARINA and BIANCA

Bian Good sister wrong me not not wrong
 yourself
 To make a bondmaid and a slave of me
 That I disdain but for these other gawds
 Unbind my hands I'll pull them off myself
 Yea all my raiment to my petticoat
 Or what you will command me will I do
 So well I know my duty to my elders
Kath Of all thy suitors here I charge thee tell
 Whom thou lovest best see thou dissemble not
Bian Believe me sister of all the men alive
 I never yet beheld that special face 11
 Which I could fancy more than any other
Kath Minion thou liest he's not *Hortensio*
Bian If you affect him sister here I swear
 I'll plead for you myself but you shall have him
Kath O then belike you fancy riches more
 You will have *Gremio* to keep you fair
Bian Is it for him you do envy me so?
 Nay then you jest and now I well perceive
 You have but jested with me all this while 20
 I prithee sister hate untie my hands
Kath If that be jest then all the rest was so
Stikes her

Enter BAPTISTA

Bap Why how now dame? whence grows this
 insolence?
Bianca stand aside Poor girl! she weeps
 Go ply thy needle meddle not with her
 For shame thou holding of a devilish spirit
 Why dost thou wrong her that did ne'er wrong
 thee?
 When did she cross thee with a bitter word?

Kath Her silence flouts me and I'll be revenged
[Flies after BIANCA]

Bap What in my sight? *Bianca* get thee in
[Exit BIANCA] 30

Kath What will you not suffer me? Nay now
 I see

She is your treasure she must have a husband
 I must dance barefoot on her wedding day
 And for your love to her lead apes in hell
 Talk not to me I will go sit and weep
 Till I can find occasion of revenge *[Exit]*
Bap Was ever gentleman thus grieved as I?
 But who comes here?

*Enter Gremio Licentio in the habit of a mean
 man Petruchio with Hortensio as a musician
 and Tranio with Biondello carrying a lute and
 book*

Gru Good morrow neighbour Baptista
Bap Good morrow neighbour *Gremio* God
 save you gentlemen! 41
Pet And you good sir? Pray have you not a
 daughter
Callid Katharina fair and virtuous?
Bap I have a daughter sir called Katharina
Gru You are too blunt go to it orderly
Pet You wrong me Signior *Gremio* give me
 leave

I am a gentleman of Verona sir
 That hearing of her beauty and her wit
 Her affability and bashful modesty
 Her wondrous qualities and mild behaviour 50
 Am bold to show my self a forward guest
 Within your house to make mine eye the witness
 Of that report which I so oft have heard
 And for an entrance to my entertainment
 I do present you with a man of mine

Presenting HORTENSIO
 Cunning in music and the mathematics
 To instruct her fully in those sciences
 Whereof I know she is not ignorant
 Accept of him or else you do me wrong
 His name is *Licio* born in Mantua 60

Bap You're welcome sir and he, for your
 good sake

But for my daughter Katharine, thus I know
 She is not for your turn the more my grief

Let I see you do not mean to part with her
 Or else you like not of my company
Bap Mistake me not I speak but as I find
 Whence are you sir? what may I call your name?
Pet Petruchio is my name Antonio's son
 A man well known throughout all Italy

Bap I know him well you are welcome for his
 sake 70

Gru Saving your tale Petruchio I pray

Let us that are poor petitioners speak too
Baccare! you are marvellous forward.

Pr O pardon me, Signior Gremio I would
fain be doing

Gr I doubt it not, sir but you will curse your
nooting

Neighbour this is a gift very grateful I am sure
of it. To express the like kindness myself that
have been more kindly beholding to you than
am freely give unto you this young scholar [*Pr*
Luc LUCENTIO] that hath been long studying
at Rheims as cunning in Greek, Latin, and
other languages as the other in music and mathe-
matics his name is Cambio pray accept his
service

Ep A thousand thanks, Signior Gremio Wel-
come, Cambio [*To TRANIO*] But, gentle sir I re-
member you walk like a stranger may I be so
bold to know the cause of your coming?

Tr Pardon me, sir the business is mine own,
That, being a stranger in this city here, 50
Do make myself a suitor to our daughter
Limo Bianca, fair and virtuous

Not is your firm resolve unknown to me,
In the preference of the elder sister

This liberty is all that I request,
That, upon knowledge of my parentage,
I may have welcome stronger than the rest may woo
and free access and favour as the rest
And, toward the education of your daughters
I here become a simple instrument, 100
and this small packer of Greek and Latin books
If you accept them, then their worth is great

Ep Luccentio is your name? of Florence, I pray

Tr O Pisa, sir son to Vincenzio

Ep A mighty man of Pisa be report

I know him well you are very welcome, sir

Take you the lute, and you the set of books

You shall go see your pupils present

Holla, within!

Enter a Servant.

Sirrah, lead these gentlemen

To my daughters and tell them both, 110
These are their suitors bid them use them well.

[*Exit Servant, with LUCENTIO and FORTENSIO*
and DONDELLO following

We will go walk a little in the orchard,
And then to dinner You are passing welcome,

And so I pray you all to make yourselves

Pr Signior Baptista, my business asketh haste,
And every day I cannot come to woo

You knew my father well, and in him me,

Left solely heir to all his lands and goods

When I have better d rather than decreased

Then tell me, if I get your daughter's love, 120

What dowry shall I have with her to wife.

Ep After my death the one half of my lands,
And in possession twenty thousand crowns

Pr And, for that dowry I'll assure her of

Her widowhood, be that the curse come,

In all my lands and leases whatsoever

Let specialties be therefore drawn between us

That covenant may be kept on either hand.

Ep Ay when the special thing is well ob-
tained,

This is her love for that is all in all 150

Pr Why that is nothing for I tell you, father

I am as temperate as the proud-mountain

And were two raging fires meet together

They do consume the thing that feeds their fury

Though little fire grows great with little wind,

Yet extreme gusts will blow out fire and all

So I to her and so the fields to me;

For I am rough and woo not like a babe.

Ep Well may'st thou woo and happy be thy
speed!

But be thou arm'd for some unhappy words 140

Pr Ay to the proof as mountains are for
winds

Thou shalt not, though thou blow perpetually

Re-enter FORTENSIO with his head broke

Ep How now my friend! what dost thou look
so pale?

Hor For fear I promise you, if I look pale.

Ep What, will my daughter prove a good min-
strel?

Hor I think she'll sooner prove a soldier

Iron may hold with her but never lutes

Ep Why then thou canst not break her to the
lute?

Hor Why no for she hath broke the lute to
me.

I did but tell her she misook her frets 150

And bow'd her hand to teach her fingering

When, with a more impatient devilish spirit,

Frets call you these? quoth she I'll fume
with them

And, with that word, she struck me on the head,

And through the instrument my pate made way

And there I stood amazed for a while,

As on a pillow looking through the lute

While she did call me rascal fiddler

And twangling Jack with twenty such vile
terms

As had she studied to misuse me so 160

Pr Now 'tis the world, it is a lusty wench

I love her ten times more than e'er I did

O how I long to have some chat with her!

Ep Well, go with me and be not so discom-
fited

Proceed in practice with my younger daughter

She is apt to learn and thankful for good turns

Senior Petruchio will you go with us

Or shall I send my daughter Kate to you?

Pet I pray you do. *[Exeunt all but PETRUCHIO]*

I will attend her here

And woo her with some spirit when she comes

Say that she rail why then I'll tell plain

She sings as sweetly as a nightingale

Say that she frown I'll say she looks as clear

As morning roses newly wash'd with dew

Say she be mute and will not speak a word

Then I'll commend her volubility

And say she uttereth piercing eloquence

If she do bid me pack I'll give her thanks

As though she bid me stay by her a week

If she deny to wed I'll crave the day

When I shall ask the barns and when be married

But here she comes and now Petruchio speak

Enter KATHARINE

Good morrow Kate for that is your name I hear

Kath Well have you heard but something hard of hearing

They call me Katharine that do talk of me

I t You lie in faith for you are call'd plain Kate

And bonny Kate and sometimes Kate the curst

But Kate the prettiest Kate in Christendom

Kate of Kate Hall my super-dainty Kate

For dainties are all Kates and therefore Kate

Take this of me Kate of my consolation

Hearing thy mildness praised in every town,

Thy virtues spoke of and thy beauty sounded

Yet not so deeply as to thee belongs

Myself am moved to woo thee for my wife

Kath Moved in good time let him that moved you hither

Remove you hence I knew you at the first

You were a moveable

Pet What's what's a moveable?

Kath A join'd stool

Pet Thou hast hit it come sit on me

Kath Asses are made to bear and so are you

Pet Women are made to bear and so are you

Kath No such jade as you if me you mean

Pet Alas good Kate I will not burden thee

For knowing thee to be but young and light—

Kath Too light for such a swain as you to catch

And yet as heavy as my weight should be

Pet Should be should—buzz!

Kath Well ta'en and like a buzzard

Pet O slow wing'd turtle! shall a buzzard take thee?

Kath Ay for a turtle as he takes a buzzard

Pet Come come you wasp in faith, you are too angry

Kath If I be waspish best beware my sting

Pet My remedy is then to pluck it out

Kath Ay if the fool could find it where it lies

Pet Who knows not where a wasp does wear his sting? In his tail

Kath In his tongue

Pet Whose tongue?

Kath Yours if you talk of tails and so farewell

Pet What with my tongue in your tail? nay come again

Good Kate I am a gentleman

Kath That I'll try. *[She strikes him]*

Pet I swear I'll cuff you if you strike again

Kath So may you lose your arms

If you strike me you are no gentleman

And if no gentleman, why then no arms

Pet A herald Kate? O put me in thy books!

Kath What is your crest? a cockcomb?

Pet A combless cock so Kate will be my hen

Kath No cock of mine you crow too like a crow

Pet Nay come Kate come you must not look so sour

Kath It is my fashion when I see a crab

Pet Why here is no crab and therefore look not sour

Kath There is there is

Pet Then show it me

Kath Had I a glass I would

Pet What you mean my face?

Kath Well am I of such a young one

Pet Now by Saint George I am too young for you

Kath Yet you are wither'd

Pet 'Tis with cares

Kath I care not

Pet Nay hear you Kate in sooth you scape not so

Kath I chafe you if I tarry let me go

Pet No not a whit I find you passing gentle

'Twas told me you were rough and coy and sullen

And not I find report a very liar

For thou art pleasant gamesome passing courteous

But slow in speech yet sweet as spring time flowers

Thou canst not frown, thou canst not look askance Nor bite the lip as angry wenches will

Nor hast thou pleasure to be cross in talk

But thou with mildness entertain'st thy wooers

With gentle conference soft and affable

Why does the world report that Kate doth limp?

O slanderous world! Kate like the hazel twig
Is straight and slender and as brown in hue
As hazel nuts and sweeter than the kernels
O let me see thee walk thou dost not halt

Kath Go, fool, and whom thou keep'st command

Pet Did ever Dian so become a grove 260
As Kate this chamber with her princely gait?
O, be thou Dian, and let her be Kate
And then let Kate be chaste and Dian sportful!

Kath Where did you study all this goodly speech?

Pet It is extempore, from my mother-wit

Kath A witty mother! witless else her son

Pet Am I not wise?

Kath Yes keep you warm

Pet Marry, so I mean sweet Katharine in thy bed

And therefore, setting all this chat aside 270
Thus in plain terms your father hath consented
That you shall be my wife, your dowry greed on,

And, will you, nill you, I will marry you
Now, Kate I am a husband for your turn,
For, by this light, whereby I see thy beauty,
Thy beauty, that doth make me like thee well,
Thou must be married to no man but me
For I am he am born to tame you Kate,
And bring you from a wild Kate to a Kate
Conformable as other household Kates 280
Here comes your father never make denial,
I must and will have Katharine to my wife

Re enter BAPTISTA GREMIO, and TRANIO

Bap Now, Signior Petruchio how speed you
with my daughter?

Pet How but well, sir? how but well?

It were impossible I should speed amiss

Bap Why, how now daughter Katharine! in
your dumps?

Kath Call you me daughter? now, I promise
you

You have show'd a tender fatherly regard
To wish me wed to one half lunatic
A mad cap ruffian and a swearing Jack 290

That thinks with oaths to face the matter out

Pet Father, tis thus yourself and all the world

That talk'd of her, have talk'd amiss of her

If she be curst, it is for policy,

For she is not froward but modest as the dove,

She is not hot but temperate as the morn,

For patience she will prove a second Grissel,

And Roman Lucrece for her chastity

And to conclude we have greed so well together 300

Kath I'll see thee hang'd on Sunday first

Gre Hark Petruchio, she says she'll see thee
hang'd first

Tra Is this your speeding? nay, then good
night our part!

Pet Be patient, gentlemen I choose her for
myself

If she and I be pleased what's that to you?

'Tis bargain'd twixt us twain being alone,

That she shall still be curst in company

I tell you, tis incredible to believe

How much she loves me O the kindest Kate!

She hung about my neck and kiss on kiss 310

She vied so fast, protesting oath on oath,

That in a twink she won me to her love

O you are novices! tis a world to see

How tame, when men and women are alone,

A meacock wretch can make the curstest shrew

Give me thy hand, Kate I will unto Venice,

To buy apparel gainst the wedding-day

Provide the feast father and bid the guests,

I will be sure my Katharine shall be fine

Bip I know not what to say but give me your
hands 320

God send you joy Petruchio! tis a match

Gre *Tra* Amen say we we will be witnesses

Pet Father and wife and gentlemen adieu

I will to Venice, Sunday comes apace

We will have rings and things and fine array,

And kiss me Kate, we will be married o Sunday

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO and KATHARINE severally*]

Gre Was ever match clapp'd up so suddenly?

Bap Faith gentlemen, now I play a merchant's
part

And venture madly on a desperate mart

Tra 'Twas a commodity lay fretting by
you

'Twill bring you gain or perish on the seas 331

Bap The gain I seek is quiet in the match

Gre No doubt but he hath got a quiet catch

But now Baptista to your younger daughter

Now is the day we long have looked for

I am your neighbour, and was suitor first

Tra And I am one that love Bianca more

Than words can witness or your thoughts can
guess

Gre Youngling thou canst not love so dear as I

Tra Greybeard thy love doth freeze

Gre But thine doth fry 340

Skipper, stand back 'tis age that nourisheth

Tra But youth in ladies eyes that flourisheth

Bap Content you gentlemen I will compound
this strife

'Tis deeds must win the prize and he of both

That can assure my daughter greatest dowry

Shall have my Bianca's love

Say Signior Gremio what can you assure her?

Gre First as you know my house within the city

Is richly furnished with plate and gold
Basins and ewers to lave her dainty hands 350
My hangings all of Tyrian tapestry
In ivory coffers I have stuff'd my crowns
In cy press chests my arras counterpoints
Costly apparel tents and canopies
Fine linen, Turkey cushions boss'd with pearl
Valance of Venice gold in needlework
Pewter and brass and all things that belong
To house or housekeeping then at my farm
I have a hundred mulch kine to the pairl
Sixscore fat oxen standing in my stalls 360
And all things answerable to this portion
Myself am struck in years I must confess
And if I die to-morrow thus mine hers
If whilst I live she will be only mine

Tra That only came well in Sir list to me
I am my father's heir and only son
If I may have your daughter to my wife
I'll leave her houses three or four as good
Within rich Pisa walls as any one
Old Signior Gremio has in Padua 370
Besides two thousand ducats by the year
Of fruitful land all which shall be her jointure
What have I pinch'd you Signior Gremio?
Gr Two thousand ducats by the year of land!
My land amounts not to so much in all
That she shall have besides an argosy
That now is lying in Marseilles road
What have I choked you with an argosy?

Tra Gremio is known my father hath no less
Than three great argosies besides two galliasses
And twelve tight galleys these I will assure her
And twice as much what'er thou offer'st next

Gre Nay I have offer'd all I have no more
And she can have no more than all I have
If you like me she shall have me and mine
Tra Why then the maid is mine from all the world

By your firm promise Gremio is out tied
Bap I must confess your offer is the best
And let your father make her the assurance
She is your own else you must pardon me 390
If you should die before him where's her dower?
Tra That's but a cavil he as old I young
Gr And may not young men die as well as old?

Bp Well gentlemen
I am thus resolv'd on Sunday next you know
My daughter Katharine is to be married
Now on the Sunday following shall Bianca
Be bride to you if you make this assurance
If not to Signior Gremio
And so I take my leave and thank you both

Gre Adieu good neighbour [Exit BAPTISTA
Now I fear thee not 400
Sirrah young gamester your father were a fool
To give thee all and in his waning age
Set foot under thy table cut a toy!
An old Italian fox is not so kind my boy [Exit
Tra A vengeance on your crafty wither'd hide!
Yet I have faced it with a card of ten
'Tis in my head to do my master good
I see no reason but supposed Lucenzio
Must get a father call'd supposed Vincentio
And that's a wonder fathers commonly 410
Do get their children but in this case of wooing
A child shall get a sire if I fail not of my cunning [Exit

ACT III

SCENE I Padua Baptista's house

Enter LUCENTIO, HORTENSIO and BIANCA

Luc I'll killer forbear you grow too forward
sic
Have you so soon forgot the entertainment
Her sister Katharine welcomed you withal?
Hor But wrangling pedant this is
The patroness of heavenly harmony
Then give me leave to have a prerogative
And when in music we have spent an hour
Your lecture shall have leisure for as much
Luc Preposterous ass that never read so far
To know the cause why music was ordain'd 10
Was it not to refresh the mind of man
After his studies or his usual pain?
Then give me leave to read philosophy
And while I pause serve in your harmony
Hor Sirrah I will not bear these braves of
thine

Bian Why gentlemen you do me double wrong
To strive for that which resteth in my choice
I am no breeching scholar in the schools
I'll not be tied to hours nor pointed times
But learn my lessons as I please myself 20
And to cut off all strife here sit we down
Take you your instrument play you the whiles
His lecture will be done ere you have tuned
Hor You'll leave his lecture when I am in
tune?

Luc That will be never tune your instrument
Bian Where left we last?

Luc Here madam
Hic ilat Simo's hic et Sica tellus
Hic steterat Primum regis celus sems
Bian Construe them 30
Luc Hic ilat as I told you before, Simo's I am
Lucenzio hic est son unto Vincentio of Pisa,

Sigela tellus, disguised thus to get your love, *Hic steterat*, and that Lucentio that comes a wooing, *Præmi* is my man Tranio, *regia*, bearing my port, *celsa senis*, that we might beguile the old pantaloon

Hor Madam, my instrument's in tune

Bian Let's hear 'O fie! the treble jars

Luc Spit in the hold, man, and tune again 40

Bian Now let me see if I can construe it

Hic ubi Simois, I know you not *hic est Sigela tellus*, I trust you not, *Hic steterat Præmi* take heed he hear us not, *regia* presume not *celsa senis* despair not

Hor Madam, 'tis now in tune

Luc All but the base

Hor The base is right, 'tis the base knave that jars

[*Aside*] How fiery and forward our pendant is! Now, for my life, the knave doth court my love

Pedascule, I'll watch you better yet 50

Bian In time I may believe yet I mistrust

Luc Mistrust it not, for, sure, *Ælacides*

Was Ajax, call'd so from his grandfather

Bian I must believe my master, else, I promise you

I should be arguing still upon that doubt

But let it rest Now, *Licio*, to you

Good masters, take it not unkindly, pray,

That I have been thus pleasant with you both

Hor You may go walk, and give me leave a while

My lessons make no music in three parts 60

Luc Are you so formal sir? well, I must wait,

[*Aside*] And watch withal, for, but I be deceived,

Our fine musician groweth amorous

Hor Madam, before you touch the instrument,

To learn the order of my fingering

I must begin with rudiments of art,

To teach you gamut in a briefer sort,

More pleasant pithy, and effectual

Than hath been taught by any of my trade

And there it is in writing fairly drawn 70

Bian Why, I am past my gamut long ago

Hor Yet read the gamut of Hortensio

Bian [Reads] "Gamut I am, the ground of all accord,

'A re' to plead Hortensio's passion,

'B mi, Bianca take him for thy lord

'C fa ut, that loves with all affection

'D sol re one clef, two notes have I

'E la mi, show pity, or I die"

Call you this gamut? tut, I like it not

Old fashions please me best I am not so nice, 80

To change true rules for old inventions

Enter a SERVANT

Serv Mistress, your father prays you leave your books

And help to dress your sister's chamber up

You know to-morrow is the wedding day

Bian Farewell, sweet masters both, I must be gone [Exit Bianca and Servant

Luc Faith, mistress, then I have no cause to stay [Exit

Hor But I have cause to pry into this pedant

Methinks he looks as though he were in love

Yet if thy thoughts Bianca be so humble

To cast thy wandering eyes on every stale, 90

Seize thee that list if once I find thee ranging,

Hortensio will be quit with thee by changing [Exit

SCENE II Padua before Baptista's house

Enter BAPTISTA, GREMIO, TRANIO, KATHARINA, BIANCA, LUCENTIO and others, attendants

Bap [To TRANIO] Signior Lucentio, this is the pointed day

That Katharine and Petruchio should be married,

And yet we hear not of our son in law

What will be said? what mockery will it be,

To want the bridegroom when the priest attends

To speak the ceremonial rites of marriage!

What says Lucentio to this shame of ours?

Kath No shame but mine I must, forsooth, be forced

To give my hand opposed against my heart

Unto a mad brain rudesby full of spleen 10

Who woo'd in haste and means to wed at leisure

I told you I, he was a frantic fool,

Hiding his bitter jests in blunt behaviour

And to be noted for a merry man

He'll woo a thousand, 'point the day of marriage,

Make feasts, invite friends, and proclaim the

banns,

Yet never means to wed where he hath woo'd

Now must the world point at poor Katharine,

And say Lo, there is mad Petruchio's wife,

If it would please him come and marry her! 20

Tra Patience good Katharine and Baptista too

Upon my life Petruchio means but well,

Whatever fortune stays him from his word

Though he be blunt I know him passing wise,

Though he be merry yet withal he's honest

Kath Would Katharine had never seen him

though!

[Exit weeping, followed by BIANCA and others

Bip Go, girl, I cannot blame thee now to

weep

For such an injury would vex a very saint

Much more a shrew of thy impatient humour

Enter BIONDELLO

Bion Master master! news old news and such
news as you never heard of? 31

Bap Is it new and old too? how may that be?

Bion Why ■ it not news to hear of Petruchio's
coming?

Bap Is he come?

Bion Why no sir

Bap What then?

Bion He is coming

Bap When will he be here?

Bion When he stands where I am and sees you
there 41

Tra But say what to thine old news?

Bion Why Petruchio is coming in a new hat
and an old jerkin a pair of old breeches thrice
turned a pair of boots that have been candle-
cases one buckled another laced an old rusty
sword taken out of the town armoury with a
broken hilt and chapeless with two broken
points his horse tipped with an old moth-eaten saddle
and stirrups of no kindred besides possessed
with the glanders and like to mose in the chine
troubled with the lampass infected with the
fashions full of windgalls sped with spavins
rayed with the yellows past cure of the five
stark spotted with the staggers begnawn with the
bots swayed in the back and shoulder shorten
near legged before and with a half-checked bit
and a head stall of sheep's leather which being
restrained to keep him from stumbling hath been
often burst and now repaired with knots one
girth six times pieced and a woman's crupper of
velure which hath two letters for her name fairly
set down in studs and here and there pieced
with packthread

Bap Who comes with him?

Bion O sir his lackey for all the world ca-
parisoned like the horse with a linen stock on
one leg and a kersey boote hose on the other
garmented with a red and blue list an old hat and
the humour of forty fancies pricked in it for a
feather a monster a very monster in apparel
and not like a Christian footboy or a gentle-
man's lackey

Tra 'Tis some odd humour pricks him to this
fashion

Yet oftentimes he goes but mean apparelled

Bap I am glad he's come howsoever he comes

Bion Why sir he comes not

Bap D'st thou not say he comes?

Bion Who? that Petruchio came?

Bap Ay that Petruchio came 80

Bion No sir I say his horse comes with him
on his back

Bap Why that's all one

Bion Nay by Saint Jany

I hold you a penny

A horse and a man

Is more than one

And yet not many

Enter PETRUCHIO and GRUMIO

Pet Come, where be these gallants? who's at
home?

Bap You are welcome sir

Pet And yet I come not well 90

Bap And yet you halt not

Tra Not so well apparelled

As I wish you were

Pet Were it better I should rush in thus

But where is Kate? where is my lovely bride?

How does my father? Gentles methinks you

frown

And wherefore gaze this goodly company

As if they saw some wondrous monument

Some comet or unusual prodigy?

Bap Why sir you know this is your wedding
day

First were we sad fearing you would not come

Now sadder that you come so unprovided 101

Fie doff this haberdashery to your estate

An eye sore to our solemn festival!

Tra And tell us what occasion of import

Hath all so long detain'd you from your wife

And sent you hither so unlike yourself?

Pet Tedious it were to tell and harsh to hear

Sufficeth I am come to keep my word

Though in some part enforced to digress

Which at more leisure I will excuse 110

As you shall well be satisfied withal

But where is Kate? I stay too long from her

The morning wears this time we were at church

Tra See not your bride in these unseemly
robes

Go to my chamber put on clothes of mine

Pet Not I believe me thus I'll visit her

Bap But thus I trust you will not marry her

Pet Good sooth even thus therefore ha done
with words

To me she's married not unto my clothes

Could I repair what she will wear in me 120

As I can change these poor accoutrements

'Twere well for Kate and better for my self

But what a fool am I to chat with you

When I should bid good Morrow to my bride

And seal the title with a lovely kiss!

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO and GRUMIO*]

Tra He hath some meaning in his mad attire

We will persuade him be it possible

To put on better ere he go to church

Bap I'll after him, and see the event of this

[*Exeunt BAPTISTA, GREMIO, and attendants*]

Tra But to her love concerneth us to add
Her father's liking which to bring to pass, 131

As I before imparted to your worship,
I am to get a man—whatsoever he be
It skills not much, we'll fit him to our turn—
And he shall be Vincentio of Pisa

And make assurance here in Padua
Of greater sums than I have promised
So shall you quietly enjoy your hope,
And marry sweet Bianca with consent

Luc Were it not that my fellow schoolmaster
Doth watch Bianca's steps so narrowly, 141

'Twere good, methinks, to steal our marriage
Which once perform'd let all the world say no,
I'll keep mine own, despite of all the world

Tra That by degrees we mean to lool into,
And watch our vantage in this business

We'll over reach the greybeard Gremio,
The narrow prying father, Minola,
The quaint musician amorous Licio,
All for my master's sake Lucentio 150

Re enter GREMIO

Signior Gremio came you from the church?

Gre As willingly as ever I came from school

Tra And in the bride and bridegroom coming
home?

Gre A bridegroom say you? 'tis a groom indeed,
A grumbling groom, and that the girl shall find

Tra Curster than she? why, 'tis impossible

Gre Why, he's a devil, a devil a very fiend

Tra Why, she's a devil, a devil, the devil's dam

Gre Tut, she's a lamb a dove a fool to him!
I'll tell you, Sir Lucentio when the priest 160

Should ask, if Katharine should be his wife

"Ay, by gogs wounds," quoth he, and swore so
loud,

That, all amazed the priest let fall the book,

And, as he stoop'd again to take it up

This mad brain'd bridegroom took him such a
cuff

That down fell priest and book and book and
priest

"Now take them up" quoth he, "if any list"

Tra What said the wench when he rose again?

Gre Trembled and shook, for why, he stamp'd
and swore,

As if the vicar meant to cozen him 170

But after many ceremonies done,

He calls for wine "A health" quoth he, as if

He had been aboard carousing to his mates

After a storm, quaff'd off the muscadell

And threw the sops all in the sexton's face,

Having no other reason

But that his beard grew thin and hungerly
And seem'd to ask him sops as he was drinking
This done he took the bride about the neck
And kiss'd her lips with such a clamorous smack
That at the parting all the church did echo 181
And I seeing this came thence for very shame,
And after me I know the rout is coming
Such a mad marriage never was before
Hark, hark! I hear the minstrels play [*Music*]

*Re enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA BIANCA,
BAPTISTA, HORTENSIO, GRUMIO and train*

Pet Gentlemen and friends, I thank you for
your pains

I know you think to dine with me to-day
And have prepared great store of wedding cheer,
But so it is my haste doth call me hence
And therefore here I mean to take my leave 190

Bip Is it possible you will away to-night?

Pet I must away to-day, before night come
Make it no wonder, if you knew my business,
You would entreat me rather go than stay
And honest company, I thank you all,

That have beheld me give away myself
To this most patient sweet, and virtuous wife
Dine with my father drink a health to me,
For I must hence and farewell to you all

Tra Let us entreat you stay till after dinner
Pet It may not be

Gre Let me entreat you 201

Pet It cannot be

Kath Let me entreat you

Pet I am content

Kath Are you content to stay?

Pet I am content you shall entreat me stay,

But yet not stay, entreat me how you can

Kath Now, if you love me, stay

Pet Grumio my horse

Gru Ay sir they be ready the oats have eaten
the horses

Kath Nay, then

Do what thou canst, I will not go to-day, 210

No nor to-morrow not till I please myself

The door is open sir there lies your way,

You may be jogging whiles your boots are green

For me I'll not be gone till I please myself

'Tis like you'll prove a jolly surly groom

That take it on you at the first so roundly

Pet O Kate, content thee, prithee, be not
angry

Kath I will be angry what hast thou to do?

Father, be quiet he shall stay my leisure 219

Gre Ay marry, sir, now it begins to work

Kath Gentlemen forward to the bridal dinner

I see a woman may be made a fool,

If she had not a spirit to resist

Per They shall go forward hate at thy com-
mand

Obey the bride you that attend on her
Go to the feast revel and domineer
Carouse full measure to her maidenhead
Be mad and merry or go hang yourselves
But for my bonny Kate she must with me
Nay look not big nor stamp nor stare nor fret
I will be master of what is mine own 32

She is my goods my chattels she is my house
My household stuff my field my barn
My horse my ox my ass my anything
And here she stands touch her who'er durst
I'll bring mine action on the proudest he
That stops my way in Padua *Grumio*
Draw forth thy weapon we are beset with
thieves

Rescue thy mistress if thou be a man
Fear not sweet vench they shall not touch thee
Kate 340

I'll bucklee thee against a million

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO KATHARINA and GRUMIO*]

Bap Nay let them go a couple of quiet ones
Gre Went they not quickly I should die with
laughing

Tri Of all mad matches never was the like
Luc Mistress what's your opinion of your
sister?

Bian That being mad herself she's madly
mated

Gre I warrant him Petruchio is hated

Bap Neighbours and friends though bride and
bridegroom wants

For to supply the places at the table 249
You know there wants no junkets at the
feast

Lucentio you shall supply the bridegroom's
place

And let Bianca take her sister's room

Tri Shall sweet Bianca practise how to bride
it?

Bap She shall *Lucentio* Come gentlemen
let's go [Exeunt]

ACT IV

SCENE I *Petruchio's country house*

Enter GRUMIO

Grumio Fie he on all used yokes on all mad mas-
ters and all foul ways! Was ever man so beaten?
Was ever man so cayed? Was ever man so weary?
I am sent before to make a fire and they are
coming after to warm them. Now were not I a
little hot and soon hot my very lips might freeze
to my teeth my tongue in the roof of my mouth,
my heart in my belly ere I should come by a fire

to thaw me but I with blowing the fire shall
warm myself for considering the weather a
colder man than I will take cold. Holla, ho!
Curtis

Enter CURTIS

Curt Who is that calls so coldly?

Grumio A piece of ice if thou doubt it thou mayst
slide from my shoulder to my heel with no great
ere a run but my head and my neck. A fire good
Curtis

Curt Is my master and his wife coming? *Grumio*

[*Tri* O ay *Curtis* ay and therefore fire fire
cast on no water 21

Curt Is she so hot a shrew as she's reported?

Grumio She was good *Curtis* before this frost
but thou knowest winter tames man, woman
and beast for it hath tamed my old master and
my new mistress and my self fellow *Curtis*

Curt Away you three inch fool! I am no beast

Grumio Am I but three inches? why thy horn is a
foor and so long am I at the least. But wilt thou
make a fire or shall I complain on thee to our
mistress whose hand she being now in hand
thou shalt soon feel to thy cold comfort for
being slow in thy hot office?

Curt I prithee good *Grumio* tell me how goes
the world?

Grumio A cold world *Curtis* in every office but
thine and therefore fire do thy duty and have
thy duty for my master and mistress are almost
frozen to death 40

Curt There's a fire ready and therefore good
Grumio the news

Grumio Why Jack boy ho! boy! and as much
news as will thou

Curt Come you are so full of cony-catching!

Grumio Wh, therefore fire for I have caught
extreme cold. Where's the cook? is supper ready?
the house trimmed rushes strewed cobwebs
swept the serving men in their new fustian their
white stockings and every officer his wedding
garment on? Be the jacks fair within the jills fair
without the carpets laid and every thing in
order?

Curt All ready and therefore I pray thee
news

Grumio First know my horse is tired my master
and mistress fallen out

Curt How?

Grumio Out of their saddles into the dirt and
thereby hangs a tale 60

Curt Let's hat good *Grumio*

Grumio Lend thine ear

Curt Here

Gru There [*Strikes him*]

Curt This is to feel a tale, not to hear a tale

Gru And therefore 'tis called a sensible tale and this cuff was but to knock at your ear, and beseech listening. Now I begin *Imprimis*, we came down a foul hill, my master riding behind my mistress—

70

Curt Both of one horse?

Gru What's that to thee?

Curt Why, a horse

Gru Tell thou the tale but hadst thou not crossed me, thou shouldst have heard how her horse fell and she under her horse, thou shouldst have heard in how merry a place, how she was bemoiled, how he left her with the horse upon her, how he beat me because her horse stumbled, how she waded through the dirt to pluck him off me how he swore how she prayed that never prayed before, how I cried how the horses ran away, how her bridle was burst how I lost my crupper, with many things of worthy memory, which now shall die in oblivion and thou return unexperienced to thy grave

Curt By this reckoning he is more shrew than she

Gru Ay and that thou and the proudest of you all shall find when he comes home. But what talk I of this? Call forth Nathaniel, Joseph Nicholas, Philip, Walter Sugarsop and the rest let their heads be sleekly combed, their blue coats brushed and their garters of an indifferent knit let them curtsy with their left legs and not presume to touch a hair of my master's horsetail till they kiss their hands. Are they all ready?

Curt They are

Gru Call them forth

Curt Do you hear, ho? you must meet my master to countenance my mistress

101

Gru Why she hath a face of her own

Curt Who knows not that?

Gru Thou, it seems that calls for company to countenance her

Curt I call them forth to credit her

Gru Why, she comes to borrow nothing of them

Enter four or five SERVING-MEN

Nath Welcome home, Grumio!

Phil How now, Grumio!

110

Jos What Grumio!

Nich Fellow Grumio!

Nath How now, old lad?

Gru Welcome you—how now, you,—what, you—fellow, you,—and thus much for greeting. Now, my spruce companions, all ready, and all things near?

Nath All things is ready. How near is our master?

119

Gru Even at hand alighted by this, and therefore be not—Cock's passion, silence! I hear my master

Enter PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA

Pet Where be these knaves? What no man at door

To hold my stirrup nor to take my horse!

Where is Nathaniel, Gregory, Philip?

All Serv Here here sir, here, sir

Pet Here, sir! here sir! here, sir! here, sir!

You logger-headed and unpolish'd grooms!

What no attendance? no regard? no duty?

Where is the foolish knave I sent before?

130

Gru Here, sir, as foolish as I was before

Pet You peasant swain! you whoreson malt-horse drudge!

Did I not bid thee meet me in the park,

And bring along these rascal knaves with thee?

Gru Nathaniel's coat, sir, was not fully made,

And Gabriel's pumps were all unpink'd i' the heel,

There was no link to colour Peter's hat

And Walter's dagger was not come from sheathing

There were none fine but Adam, Ralph, and

Gregory,

The rest were ragged, old and beggarly

140

Yet, as they are, here are they come to meet

you

Pet Go rascals go and fetch my supper in

[*Exeunt SERVANTS*]

[*Singing*] "Where is the life that late I led!"

Where are those—Sit down Kate and welcome—

Soud soud soud soud!

Re enter SERVANTS with supper

Why when, I say? Nay good sweet Kate, be merry

Off with my boots you rogues! you villains, when?

[*Sings*] "It was the friar of orders grey

As he forth walked on his way!"

Out, you rogue! you pluck my foot away

150

Take that, and mend the plucking off the other

Strikes him

Be merry Kate. Some water here, what ho!

Where's my spaniel Troilus? Sirrah get you hence

And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither

One Kate, that you must kiss and be acquainted with

Where are my slippers? Shall I have some water?

Enter one with water

Come hate and wash and welcome heartily
You whoreson villain! will you let it fall?

Strikes it in

Kath Patience I pray you 'twas a fault un-
willing

Pet A whoreson beetle-headed flap-eared
knave! 160

Come hate, sit down I know you have a
stomach

Will you give thanks sweet hate or else shall I?

What is this? murton?

1st Serv Ay

Pet Who brought it?

Peter I

P 'Tis burnt and so is all the meat

What dogs are these! Where is the rascal cook?

How durst you villains bring it from the dresser

And serve it thus to me that love it not?

There take it to you trenchers cups and all

Throws the meat &c about the stage

You heedless poltroons and unmanner'd slaves!

What do you grumble? I'll be with you straight

Kath I pray you husband be not so disquiet

The meat was well if you were so contented 171

Pet I tell thee hate 'twas burnt and dried
away

And I expressly am forbid to touch it

For it engenders choler planteth anger

And better were that both of us did fast

Since of ourselves ourselves are choleric,

Than feed it with such over-roasted flesh

Be patient to-morrow 't shall be mended

And for this night we'll fast for company 180

Come I will bring thee to thy bridal chamber

[Exeunt]

Re-enter SERVANTS severally

Nath Peter didst ever see the like?

Peter He kills her in her own humour

Re-enter CURTS

Gru Where is he?

Curt In her chamber making a sermon of conti-
nency to her

And rails and swears and rates that she poor
soul

Knows not which way to stand to look to
speak

And sits as one new-risen from a dream 189

Away away! for he is coming hither *[Exeunt]*

Re-enter PETRUCHIO

Pet Thus have I politically begun my reign

And 'tis my hope to end successfully

My falcon now is sharp and passing empty
And till she stoop she must not be full-gorged
For then she never looks upon her lure
Another way I have to man my haggard
To make her come and know her keeper's call
That is to watch her as we watch these kites
That bate and beat and will not be obedient
She eat no meat to-day nor none shall eat 200
Last night she slept not nor to-night she shall
not

As with the meat some undeserved fault

I'll find about the making of the deed

And here I'll fling the pillow there the bolster

This way the coverlet another way the sheets

Ay and amid this hurly I'll attend

That all is done in reverend care of her

And in conclusion she shall watch all night

And if she chance to nod I'll rail and bawl

And with the clamour keep her still awake 10

This is a way to kill a wife with kindness

And thus I'll curb her mad and headstrong hum-
our

He that knows better how to tame a shrew

Now let him speak his charity so show *[Exit]*

SCENE II *Padua before Baptista's house*

Enter TRATIO and HORTENSIO

Tra Is it possible friend Licio that Mistress
Bianca

Doth fancy any other but Lucentio?

I tell you sir she bears me fast in hand

Hor Sir to satisfy you in what I have said

Stand by and mark the manner of his teaching

Enter BIANCA and LUCENTIO

Luc Now mistress profit you in what you
read?

Bian What master read you? first resolve me
that

Luc I read that I profess *The Art to Love*

Bian And may you prove, sir master of your
art?

Luc While you sweet dear prove mistress of
my heart? 10

Hor Quick proceeders marry! Now tell me I
pray

You that durst swear that your mistress Bianca

Loved none in the world so well as Lucentio

Tra O despicable love! unconstant womankind!

I tell thee Licio this is wonderful

Hor Mistake no more I am not Licio

Nor a musician as I seem to be

But one that scorn to live in this disguise

For such a one as leaves a gentleman,

And makes a god of such a cullion 20

Know sir that I am call'd Hortensio

Tra Signior Hortensio, I have often heard
Of your entire affection to Bianca,
And since mine eyes are witness of her lightness,
I will with you if you be so contented,
Forswear Bianca and her love for ever

Hor See, how they kiss and court! Signior
Lucentio,

Here is my hand, and here I firmly vow
Never to woo her more, but do forswear her,
As one unworthy all the former favours 30

Tra And here I take the like unfeigned oath,
Never to marry with her though she would en-
treat

He on her! see, how beastly she doth court him!

Hor Would all the world but he had quite for-
sworn!

For me, that I may surely keep mine oath,
I will be married to a wealthy widow
Ere three days pass, which hath as long loved me
As I have loved this proud disdainful haggard
And so farewell, Signior Lucentio 40
Kindness in women, nor their beautiful looks
Shall win my love and so I take my leave,
In resolution as I swore before [Exit

Tra Mistress Bianca, bless you with such grace
As longeth to a lover's blessed case!
Nay, I have taken you napping gentle love,
And have forsworn you with Hortensio

Bian Tranio you jest but have you both for-
sworn me?

Tra Mistress, we have

Luc Then we are rid of Lucio

Tra I' faith, he'll have a lusty widow now,
That shall be woo'd and wedded in a day 51

Bian God give him joy!

Tra Ay, and he'll tame her

Bian He says so Tranio

Tra Faith, he is gone unto the taming school

Bian The taming school! what is there such a
place?

Tra Ay, mistress, and Petruchio is the master,
That teacheth tricks eleven and twenty long,
To tame a shrew and charm her chattering
tongue

Enter BIONDELLO

Bian O master, master, I have watch'd so long
That I am dog weary but at last I spied 60
An angel coming down the hill,
Will serve the turn

Tra What is he Biondello?

Bian Master, a mercatante, or a pedant
I know not what, but formal in apparel
In gait and countenance surely like a father

Luc And what of him, Tranio?

Tra If he be credulous and trust my tale,
I'll make him glad to seem Vincentio,
And give assurance to Baptista Minola
As if he were the right Vincentio 70
Take in your love and then let me alone
[Exit LUCENTIO and BIANCA

Enter a PEDANT

Ped God save you sir!

Tra And you, sir! you are welcome
Travel you far on, or are you at the farthest?

Ped Sir at the farthest for a week or two
But then up farther and as far as Rome,
And so to Tripoli if God lend me life

Tra What countryman I pray?

Ped Of Mantua

Tra Of Mantua sir? marry, God forbid!
And come to Padua, careless of your life?

Ped My life sir! how I pray? for that goes
hard 80

Tra 'Tis death for any one in Mantua
To come to Padua Know you not the cause?
Your ships are stay'd at Venice and the Duke,
For private quarrel twist your Duke and him,
Hath publish'd and proclaim'd it openly

'Tis marvel but that you are but newly come,
You might have heard it else proclaim'd about

Ped Alas! sir, it is worse for me than so
For I have bills for money by exchange
From Florence and must here deliver them 90

Tra Well, sir, to do you courtesy
This will I do and thus I will advise you
First tell me, have you ever been at Pisa?

Ped Ay, sir in Pisa have I often been
Pisa renowned for grave citizens

Tra Among them know you one Vincentio?

Ped I know him not but I have heard of him,
A merchant of incomparable wealth

Tra He is my father, sir, and sooth to say,
In countenance somewhat doth resemble you 100

Bian [Aside] As much as an apple doth an
oyster and all one

Tra To save your life in this extremity,
This favour will I do you for his sake
And think it not the worst of all your fortunes
That you are like to Sir Vincentio
His name and credit shall you undertake
And in my house you shall be friendly lodged
Look that you take upon you as you should,
You understand me sir so shall you stay
Till you have done your business in the city 110
If this be courtesy sir accept of it

Ped O sir I do, and will repute you ever
The patron of my life and liberty

Tra Then go with me to make the matter good
Thus, by the way, I let you understand

My father is here look d for every day
 To pass assurance of a dowry in marriage
 Twixt me and one Baptista & daughter here
 In all these circumstances I'll instruct you
 Go with me to clothe you as becomes you 120
[Exeunt]

SCENE III. A room in Petruchio's house

Enter KATHARINA and GRUMIO

Gru No no forsooth I dare not for my life
Kath The more my wrong the more his spite
 appears
 What did he marry me to famish me?
 Beggars that come unto my father's door
 Upon entreaty have a present alms
 If not elsewhere they meet with charists
 But I who never knew how to entreat
 Nor never needed that I should entreat
 Am starved for meat giddy for lack of sleep 9
 With oaths kept waking and with brawling fed
 And that which spites me more than all these

wants
 He does it under name of perfect love
 As who should say if I should sleep or eat
 Twere deadly sickness or else present death
 I prithe thee go and get me some repast
 I care not what so it be wholesome food
Gru What say you to a near a foot?
Kath 'Tis passing good I prithe thee let me have it
Gru I fear it is too choicer a meat

How say you to a fat tripe finely bro'd? 20
Kath I like it well good Grumio fetch it me
Gru I cannot tell I fear 'tis cholerick
 What say you to a piece of beef and mustard?
Kath A dish that I do love to feed upon
Gru Ay but the mustard is too hot a little
Kath Why then the beef and let the mustard

rest
Gru Nay then I will not you shall have the
 mustard
 Or else you get no beef of Grumio
Kath Then both or one or anything thou wilt
Gru Why then the mustard without the beef
Kath Go get thee gone thou false deluding
 slave *[Bats him]*
 That feedst me with the very name of meat
 Sorrow on thee and all the pack of you
 That triumph thus upon my misery
 Go get thee gone I say

Enter PETRUCHIO and HORTENSIO with meat

Pet How fares my Kate? What sweetening all
 amont?
Hor Mistress what cheer?
Kath Faith as cold as can be

Let Pluck up thy spirits look cheerfully upon
 me
 Here love thou see'st how diligent I am
 To dress thy meat myself and bring it thee 40
 I am sure sweet Kate this kindness merits
 thanks

What not a word? Nay then thou lovest it not
 And all my pains is sorted to no proof
 Here take away this dish

Kath I pray you let it stand
Pet The poorest service is repaid with thanks
 And so shall mine before you touch the meat
Kath I thank you sir
Hor Signior Petruchio fie! you are to blame
 Come Mistress Kate, I'll bear you company
Let *[Aside]* Eat it up all Hortensio if thou
 lovest me 50

Much good do it unto this gentle heart!
 Hate, eat apace and now my honey love
 Will we return unto thy father's house
 And revel it as bravely as the best
 With silken coats and caps and golden rings
 With ruffs and cuffs and fardingales and things
 With scarfs and fans and double change of
 bravery
 With amber bracelets beads and all this knav-
 ery
 What hast thou d'ned? The tailor stays thy lei-
 sure
 To deck thy body with his ruffling treasure 60

Enter TAILOR

Come tailor let us see these ornaments
 Lay forth the gown

Enter HABERDASHER

What news with you sir?
Hab Here is the cap your worship did bespeak
Pet Why this was moulded on a porringer
 A velvet dish fie! 'tis lewd and filthy
 Why 'tis a cockle or a walnut shell
 A knack a toy a trick a baby's cap
 Away with it! come let me have a bigger
Kath I'll have no bigger this doth fit the time
 And gentlewomen wear such caps as these 70
Pet When you are gentle you shall have one
 too
 And not till then
Hor *[Aside]* That will not be in haste
Kath Why sir I trust I may have leave to
 speak

And speak I will I am no child no babe
 Your betters have endured me say my mind
 And if you cannot best you stop your ears
 My tongue will tell the anger of my heart
 Or else my heart concealing it will break

And rather than it shall, I will be free
 Even to the uttermost, as I please in words 80
Pet Why, thou say'st true, it is a paltry cap,
 A custard-coffin, a bauble, a silken pie
 I love thee well in that thou likest it not
Kath Love me or love me not, I like the cap
 And it I will have, or I will have none

[Exit HERRDASHER]

Pet Thy gown? why, ay, come tailor let us
 see it
 O mercy, God! what masquing stuff is here?
 What's this? a sleeve? 'tis like a demi-cannon
 What, up and down, carved like an apple-tart?
 Here's snip and nip and cut and slash and slash
 Like to a censer in a barber's shop 91
 Why, what, is't devil's name tailor, call'st thou
 this?

Hor [Aside] I see she's like to have neither cap
 nor gown

Tai You bid me make it orderly and well
 According to the fashion and the time
Pet Marry, and did but if you be remember'd
 I did not bid you mar it to the time
 Go hop me over every kennel home,
 For you shall hop without my custom sir
 I'll none of it hence! make your best of it 100
Kath I never saw a better fashion'd gown,
 More quaint, more pleasing, nor more commend-
 able

Belike you mean to make a puppet of me
Pet Why, true, he means to make a puppet of
 thee

Tai She says your worship means to make a
 puppet of her

Pet O monstrous arrogance! Thou liest thou
 thread thou tumbler,

Thou yard, three-quarters half yard quarter,
 nail!

Thou flea, thou nit thou winter cricket thou!
 Brav'd in mine own house with a skain of thread?
 Away, thou rag, thou quantity, thou remnant,
 Or I shall so be mete thee with thy yard
 As thou shalt think on prating whilst thou livest!
 I tell thee I that thou hast marr'd her gown

Tai Your worship is deceived, the gown is
 made

Just as my master had direction

Grumio gave order how it should be done

Gru I gave him no order, I gave him the stuff

Tai But how did you desire it should be made?

Gru Marry sir, with needle and thread 121

Tai But did you not request to have it cut?

Gru Thou hast faced many things

Tai I have

Gru Face not me thou hast brav'd many men
 brave not me, I will neither be faced nor brav'd

I say unto thee, I bid thy master cut out the
 gown but I did not bid him cut it to pieces 170
 thou liest

Tai Why here is the note of the fashion to
 testify 151

Pet Read it

Gru The note lies in's throat if he say I said so

Tai [Reads] 'Imprimis a loose bodied gown

Gru Master, if ever I said loose bodied gown,
 sew me in the skirts of it and beat me to death
 with a bottom of brown thread I said a gown

Pet Proceed

Tai [Reads] "With a small compass'd cape"

Gru I confess the cape 141

Tai [Reads] "With a trunk sleeve"

Gru I confess two sleeves

Tai [Reads] "The sleeves curiously cut"

Pet Ay, there's the villainy

Gru Error! 't the bill, sir error! 't the bill I
 commanded the sleeves should be cut out and
 sew'd up again and that I'll prove upon thee,
 though thy little finger be armed in a thimble

Tai This is true that I say an I had thee in
 place where thou shouldst know it 151

Gru I am for thee straight take thou the bill,
 give me thy mete-yard and spare not me

Hor God a mercy, Grumio! then he shall have
 no odds

Pet Well sir, in brief the gown is not for me

Gru You are! the right, sir 'tis for my mis-
 tress

Pet Go, take it up unto thy master's use

Gru Villain, not for thy life take up my mis-
 tress' gown for thy master's use! 161

Pet Why sir what's your conceit in that?

Gru O, sir, the conceit is deeper than you think
 for

Take up my mistress' gown to his master's use!
 O fie, fie, fie!

Pet [Aside] Hortensio, say thou wilt see the
 tailor paid

Go take it hence be gone, and say no more

Hor Tailor, I'll pay thee for thy gown to-
 morrow

Take no unkindness of his hasty words

Away! I say, commend me to thy master 170
 [Exit TAILOR]

Pet Well come, my Kate, we will unto your
 father's

Even in these honest mean habiliments

Our purses shall be proud our garments poor

For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich

And as the sun breaks through the darkest clouds

So honour peereth in the meanest habit

What is the jay more precious than the lark

Because his feathers are more beautiful?

Or is the adder better than the eel
 Because his painted skin conceals the eye? 180
 O no good hate neither art thou the worse
 For this poor furniture and mean array
 If thou account it a shame say it on me
 And therefore frolic we will hence forthwith
 To feast and sport us at thy father's house
 Go call my men and let us straight to him
 And bring our horses unto Long lane end
 There will we mount and thither walk on foot
 Let us see I think tis now some seven o'clock
 And well we may come there by dinner time 190
Kath. I dare assure you sir tis almost two
 And twill be supper time ere you come there
Pet. It shall be seven ere I go to horse
 Look what I speak or do or think to do
 You are still crossing it Sirs let alone
 I will not go to-day and ere I do
 It shall be what o'clock I say it is
Har. *[Aside]* Why so this gallant will com-
 mand the sun *[Exit]*

SCENE IV Padua before Baptista's house

Enter TRANIO and the PEDANT dressed like VINCENTIO

Tra. Sir this is the house please it you that I call?

Ped. Ay what else? and but I be deceiv'd
 Signior Baptista may remember me
 Near twenty years ago in Genoa
 Where we were lodgers at the Pegasus
Tra. Tis well and hold your own in any case
 With such austerity as longeth to a father
Ped. I warrant you

Enter BIONDELLO

But sir here comes your boy
 Twere good he were school'd
Tra. Fear you not him Sirrah Biondello
 Now do your duty thoroughly I advise you 22
Bion. Twere the right Vincentio
Tra. Tut fear not me
Tra. But hast thou done thy errand to Baptista?
Bion. I told him that your father was at Venice
 And that you look'd for him this day in Padua
Tra. Thou art a tall fellow hold thee that to drink
 Here comes Baptista set your countenance sir

Enter BAPTISTA and LUCENTIO

Signior Baptista you are happily met
[To the PEDANT] Sir this is the gentleman I told
 you of 20
 I pray you stand good father to me now
 Give me Bianca for my patrimony
Ped. Soft son!

Sir by your leave having come to Padua
 To gather in some debts my son Lucentio
 Made me acquainted with a weighty cause
 Of love between your daughter and himself
 And for the good report I hear of you
 And for the love he beareth to your daughter
 And she to him to stay him not too long 30
 I am content in a good father's care
 To have him match'd and if you please to like
 No worse than I upon some agreement
 We shall you find ready and willing
 With one consent to have her so bestow'd
 For curious I cannot be with you
Signior Baptista of whom I hear so well
Bap. Sir pardon me in what I have to say
 Your plainness and your shortness please me well
 But true it is your son Lucentio here 40
 Doth love my daughter and she loveth him
 Or both dissemble deeply their affections
 And therefore if you say no more than this
 That like a father you will deal with him
 And pass my daughter a sufficient dower
 The match is made and all is done
 Your son shall have my daughter with consent
Tra. I thank you sir Where then do you know
 best

We be affix'd and such assurance as en
 As shall with either part's agreement stand? 50
Bap. Not in my house Lucentio for you
 know

Pitchers have ears and I have many servants
 Besides old Gremio is hearkening still
 And happily we might be interrupted
Tra. Then at my lodging an it like you
 There doth my father lie and there this night
 We'll pass the business privately and well
 Send for your daughter by your servant here
 My boy shall fetch the scrivener presently
 The worst is this that at so slender warning 60
 You are like to have a thin and slender purtance
Bap. It likes me well Biondello hire you home
 And bid Bianca make her ready straight
 And if you will tell what hath happened
 Lucentio's father is arriv'd in Padua
 And how she shall be to be Lucentio's wife

Bion. I pray the gods she may with all my heart!
Tra. Daily not with the gods but get thee gone
[Exit BIONDELLO]

Signior Baptista shall I lead the way?
 Welcome! one mess is like to be your cheer 70
 Come sir we will better it in Pisa
Bap. I follow you

[Exit TRANIO PEDANT and BAPTISTA]

Re-enter BIONDELLO

Bion. Cambio!

Luc What sayest thou, *Biondello*?
Bion You saw my master win! and laugh upon you?
Luc *Biondello* what of that?
Bion Faith, nothing, but has left me here behind, to expound the meaning or moral of his signs and tokens 80
Luc I pray thee moralize them
Bion Then thus *Baptista* is safe talking with the deceiving father of a deceitful son
Luc And what of him?
Bion His daughter is to be brought by you to the supper
Luc And then?
Bion The old priest of Saint Luke's church is at your command at all hours
Luc And what of all this? 90
Bion I cannot tell, expect they are busied about a counterfeit assurance take you assurance of her, "*cum privilegio ad imprimendum solum*" to the church, take the priest clerk, and some sufficient honest witnesses
 If this be not that you look for, I have no more to say,

But bid *Bianca* farewell for ever and a day

Luc Hearest thou *Biondello*?

Bion I cannot tarry I knew a wench married in an afternoon as she went to the garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit and so may you sir and so adieu, sir My master hath appointed me to go to Saint Luke's to bid the priest be ready to come against you come with your appendix

[*Exit*]

Luc I may, and will if she be so contented She will be pleased then wherefore should I doubt?

Hap what hap may I'll roundly go about her It shall go hard if *Cambio* go without her : [*Exit*]

SCENE V A public road

Enter *PETRUCHIO* *KATHARINA*, *HORTENSIO* and *Servants*

Pet Come on, i' God's name, once more toward our father's

Good Lord! how bright and goodly shines the moon!

Kath The moon! the sun it is not moonlight now

Pet I say it is the moon that shines so bright

Kath I know it is the sun that shines so bright

Pet Now by my mother's son and that's myself,

It shall be moon, or star or what I list Or ere I journey to your father's house Go on and fetch our horses back again

Evermore cross'd and cross'd, nothing but cross'd!

Hor Say as he says, or we shall never go 11

Kath Forward, I pray since we have come so far,

And be it moon or sun, or what you please An if you please to call it a rush candle,

Henceforth I vow it shall be so for me

Pet I say it is the moon

Kath I know it is the moon

Pet Nay, then you lie it is the blessed sun

Kath Then, God be bless'd, it is the blessed sun

But sun it is not when you say it is not

And the moon changes even as your mind 20

What you will have it named even that it is,

And so it shall be so for *Katharine*

Hor *Petruchio*, go thy ways the field is won

Pet Well forward forward! thus the bowl should run

And not unluckily against the bias

But, soft! company is coming here

Enter *VINCENTIO*

[*To* *VINCENTIO*] Good morrow gentle mistress where away?

Tell me sweet *Kate* and tell me truly too,

Hast thou beheld a fresher gentlewoman?

Such war of white and red within her cheeks! 30

What stars do spangle heaven with such beauty,

As those two eyes become that heavenly face?

Fair lovely maid once more good day to thee

Sweet *Kate*, embrace her for her beauty's sake

Hor A' will make the man mad, to make a woman of him

Kath Young budding virgin fair and fresh and sweet

Whither away or where is thy abode?

Happy the parents of so fair a child,

Happier the man whom favourable stars 40

Allot thee for his lovely bed fellow!

Pet Why, how now, *Kate*? I hope thou art not mad

This is a man old wrinkled faded, wither'd, And not a maiden as thou sayst he is

Kath Pardon old father my mistaking eyes,

That have been so bedazzled with the sun

That everything I look on seemeth green

Now I perceive thou art a reverend father,

Pardon I pray thee for my mad mistaking

Pet Do good old grandsire and withal make known

Which way thou travellest if along with us

We shall be joyful of thy company

Vin Fair sir, and you my merry mistress,

That with your strange encounter much amazed
me

My name is call'd Vincentio my dwelling
Pisa

And bound I am to Padua there to visit
A son of mine which long I have not seen
P^r What is his name?

Iⁿ Lucentio gentle sir

P^r Happily met the happier for thy son
And now by law as well as re-crend age 60

I may entitle thee my living father

The sister to my wife this gentlewoman

Thy son by this hath married Wonder not

Nor be not grieved she is of good esteem

Her dowry wealthy and of worthy birth

Beside so qualified as may be seem

The spouse of any noble gentleman

Let me embrace with old Vincentio

And wander we to see thy honest son

Who will of thy arrival be full joyous 70

V^m But is this true? or is it else your pleas-
ure

L^{al} e pleasant travellers to break a jest

Upon the company you overtake?

H^{or} I do assure thee father so it is

L^{et} Come go along and see the truth hereof

For our first merriment hath made thee jealous

[*Exeunt all but HORTENSIO*]

H^{or} Well Petruchio this has put me in
heart

Has e to my widow? and if she be froward

Then hast thou taught Hortensio to be untoward
[*Exit*]

ACT V

SCENE I *Padua b for Lucentio's house*

GREMIO *dissollet* Enter *Bel nti* BIONDELLO

LUCENTIO and BIANCA

B^{ion} Softly and swiftly sir for the priest is
ready

L^{uc} I fly Biondello but they may chance to
need thee at home therefore leave me

B^{ion} Nay faith I'll see the church o' your
back and then come back to my master as soon
as I can

[*Exeunt* LUCENTIO BIANCA and BIONDELLO]

G^{re} I marvel Cambio comes not all this while

Enter PETRUCHIO KATHARINA VINCENTIO

GREMIO *with Attendants*

P^r Sir here's the door this is Lucentio's
house

My father's bears more toward the market
place

Thither must I and here I leave you sir 11

Iⁿ You shall not choose but drink before you
go

I think I shall command your welcome here

And by all likelihood some cheer is toward

Knocks

G^{re} They're busy within you were best knock
louder

PENDANT looks out of the window.

P^r What's he that knocks as he would beat
down the gate?

Iⁿ Is Signior Lucentio within sir?

P^r He's within, sir but not to be spoken
withal 21

Iⁿ What if a man bring him a hundred pound
or two to make merry withal?

I^t I keep your hundred pounds to yourself he
shall need none so long as I live

P^r Nay I told you your son was well beloved
in Padua Do you hear sir? To leave frivolous
circumstances I pray you tell Signior Lucentio

that his father is come from Pisa and is here at
the door to speak with him 30

L^{et} Thou heest his father is come from Padua
and here looking out at the window

Iⁿ Art thou his father?

P^{ed} Ay sir so his mother says if I may be
heve her

P^r [To VINCENTIO] Why how now gentle-
man why thus is flat knavery to take upon you
another man's name

P^d Lay hands on the villain I believe a means
to cozen somebody in this city under my coun-
tenance 41

Re-enter BIONDELLO

B^{ion} I have seen them in the church together
God send 'em good shipping But who is here?

mine old master Vincentio? now we are undone
and brought to nothing

Ist [Sings BIONDELLO] Come hither crack
hemp

Bⁿ I hope I may choose sir

Vst Come hither you rogue What have you
forgot me? 50

B^{ion} For ot you? no sir I could not forget
you for I never saw you before in all my life

Ist What you notorious villain didst thou
never see thy master's father Vincentio?

B^{ion} What my old worshipful old master? y^e
marry sir see where he looks out of the win-
dow

V^m Is it so indeed? [B^{ats} BIONDELLO]

B^{ion} Help help help! here's a madman will
murder me [Ex^t 61

P^{ed} Help son! help Signior Baptista!

[*Ex^t from above*]

Pet Prithce, Kate let's stand aside and see the end of this controversy
[They retire]

Re enter PEDANT below, TRANIO, BAPTISTA, and Servants

Tra Sir, what are you that offer to beat my servant?

Vin What am I, sir? nay, what are you, sir? O immortal gods! O fine villain! A silken doublet! a velvet hose! a scarlet cloak! and a copatain hat! O, I am undone! I am undone! while I play the good husband at home, my son and my servant spend all at the university

Tra How now! what's the matter?

Bap What, is the man lunatic?

Tra Sir, you seem a sober ancient gentleman by your habit, but your words show you a madman. Why, sir, what 'cerns it you if I wear pearl and gold? I thank my good father I am able to maintain it 79

Vin Thy father! O villain! he is a sail maker in Bergamo

Bap You mistake sir, you mistake sir. Pray, what do you think is his name?

Vin His name! as if I knew not his name! I have brought him up ever since he was three years old, and his name is Tranio

Ped Away away, mad ass! his name is Lucentio, and he is mine only son and heir to the lands of me, Signior Vincentio 89

Vin Lucentio! O, he hath murdered his master! Lay hold on him, I charge you, in the Duke's name. O my son my son! Tell me, thou villain, where is my son Lucentio?

Tra Call forth an officer

Enter one with an Officer

Carry this mad knave to the gaol. Father Baptista, I charge you see that he be forthcoming

Vin Carry me to the gaol!

Gre Stay officer he shall not go to prison

Bap Talk not, Signior Gremio. I say he shall go to prison 100

Gre Take heed Signior Baptista lest you be cony caught in this business. I dare swear this is the right Vincentio

Ped Swear if thou darest

Gre Nay I dare not swear it

Tra Then thou wert best say that I am not Lucentio

Gre Yes, I know thee to be Signior Lucentio

Bip Away with the dotard! to the gaol with him! 110

Vin Thus strangers may be haled and abused. O monstrous villain!

Re-enter BIONDELLO with LUCENTIO and BIANCA

Bion O! we are spoiled and—yonder he is deny him forswear him or else we are all undone
Luc *[Kneeling]* Pardon, sweet father
Vin Lives my sweet son?

[Exit BIONDELLO TRANIO and PEDANT, as fast as my be]

Bian Pardon, dear father

Bap How hast thou offended?
 Where is Lucentio?

Luc Here s Lucentio
 Right son to the right Vincentio,
 That have by marriage made thy daughter mine,
 While counterfeit supposes blear'd thine eyne

Gre Here's packing, with a witness, to deceive us all!

Vin Where is that damned villain Tranio,
 That faced and braved me in this matter so?

Bap Why tell me is not this my Cambio?

Bion Cambio is changed into Lucentio

Luc Love wrought these miracles. Bianca's love

Made me exchange my state with Tranio
 While he did bear my countenance in the town,
 And happily I have arrived at the last 130
 Unto the wished haven of my bliss

What Tranio did, myself enforced him to,
 Then pardon him, sweet father for my sake

Vin I'll slit the villain's nose that would have sent me to the gaol

Bap But do you hear, sir? have you married my daughter without asking my good will?

Vin Fear not, Baptista we will content you, go to but I will in to be revenged for this villainy *[Exit 140]*

Bap And I to sound the depth of this knavery *[Exit]*

Luc Lool not pale Bianca, thy father will not frown *[Exit LUCENTIO and BIANCA]*

Gre My cake is dough, but I'll in among the rest

Out of hope of all but my share of the feast *[Exit]*

Kath Husband let's follow to see the end of this ado

Pet First kiss me Kate and we will

Kath What in the midst of the street?

Pet What are thou ashamed of me? 150

Kath No, sir, God forbid but ashamed to kiss

Pet Why then let's home again. Come sirrah, let's away

Kath Nay I will give thee a kiss now pray thee love stay

Pet Is not this well? Come, my sweet Kate

Better once than never for never too late

[Exeunt]

SCENE II Padua Lucenzio's house

Enter BAPTISTA VINCENTIO GREGGIO the PEDANT
LUCENTIO BIANCA PETRUCHIO KATHARINA
HORTENSIO and WIDOW TRANIO BIONDELLO
and ORLANDO the SERVINGMEN with TRANIO
bringing in a Lunquet

Luc At last though long our parting notes
agree

And come it is when raging war is done
To smile at scapes and perils overblown
My fair Bianca bid my father welcome
While I with elf same kindness welcome thine
Brother Petruchio sister Katharina,
And thou Hortensio with thy loving widow
Feast with the best and welcome to my house
My banquet is to close our stomachs up
After our great good cheer Pray you sit
down

For now we sit to chat as well as eat 11

Pet Nothing but sit and sit and eat and eat!

Bap Padua affords this kindness son Petruchio

Pet Padua affords nothing but what is kind

Hor For both our sakes I would that word
were true

Pet Now for my life Hortensio fears his
widow

Hid Then never trust me if I be afraid

Pet You are very sensible and yet you miss my
sense

I mean, Hortensio is afraid of you

Hid He that is giddy thinks the world turns
round 20

Pet Roundly replied

Kath Mistress how mean you that?

Hid Thus I conceive by him

Pet Conceive by me! How likes Hortensio
that?

Hor My widow says thus she conceives her
tale

Pet Very well mended kiss him for that good
widow

Kath He that is giddy thinks the world turns
round

I pray you tell me what you meant by that

Hid Your husband being troubled with a
shrew

Measures my husband's sorrow by his woe

And now you know my meaning 30

Kath A very mean meaning

Hid Right I mean you

Kath And I am mean indeed respecting you

Pet To her hate

Hor To her widow!

Pet A hundred marks my hate does put her
down

Hor That is my office

Ist Spoke like an officer ha to thee lad!

Drinks to Hortensio

Bap How likes Greggio these quick witted
folks?

Gre Believe me sir they butt together well

Bum Head and butt! an hasty witted body

Would say your head and butt were head and
horn

For As mistress bride hath that awaken'd
you?

Bum Ay but not frighted me therefore I'll
sleep again

Pet Nay that you shall not since you have be-
gun

Have at you for a bitter jest or two!

Bum Am I your bird? I mean to shift my
bush

And then pursue me as you draw your bow

You are welcome all!

[Exeunt BIANCA KATHARINA and WIDOW]

Pet She hath prevented me Here Signior
Tranio

This bird you aim'd at though you hit her not
Therefore a health to all that shot and miss'd!

Tr O sir Lucenzio slipp'd me like his grey
hound

Which runs himself and catches for his master

Ist A good swift simile but something currish

Tr Tis well sir that you hunted for yourself

Tis thought your deer does hold you at a bay

Bip O ho Petruchio! Tranio hits you now

Lur I thank thee for that bird good Tranio

Hor Confess confess hath he not hit you here?

Pet A has a little gall'd me I confess 60

And as the jest did glance away from me

Tis ten to one it maim'd you two outright

Bip Now in good sadness son Petruchio

I think thou hast the veriest throw of all

Pet Well I say no and therefore for assurance

Let's each one send unto his wife

And he whose wife is most obedient

To come at first when he doth send for her

Shall win the wager which we will propose

Hor Content What is the wager?

Luc Twenty crowns 70

Pet Twenty crowns!

I'll venture so much of my hawk or hound

But twenty times so much upon my wife

Luc A hundred then

Hor Content

Pet A match! tis done

Hor Who shall begin?

Luc That will I

Go, Biondello, bid your mistress come to me
Bion I go [Exit]
Bap Son I'll be your half, Bianca comes
Luc I'll have no halves, I'll bear it all myself

Re-enter BIONDELLO

How now! what news?
Bion Sir, my mistress sends you word 80
 That she is busy and she cannot come
Pet How! she is busy and she cannot come!
 Is that an answer?
Gre Ay, and a kind one too
 Pray God, sir, your wife send you not a worse
Pet I hope, better
Hor Sirrah Biondello go and entreat my wife
 To come to me forthwith [Exit BIONDELLO]
Pet O, ho! entreat her!
 Nay, then she must needs come
Hor I am afraid, sir,
 Do what you can, yours will not be entreated

Re-enter BIONDELLO

Now, where's my wife? 90
Bion She says you have some goodly jest in
 hand
 She will not come, she bids you come to her
Pet Worse and worse, she will not come!
 O vile,
 Intolerable, not to be endured!
 Sirrah Grumio go to your mistress
 Say, I command her come to me [Exit GRUMIO]
Hor I know her answer
Pet What?
Hor She will not
Pet The fouler fortune mine, and there an end
Bap Now by my holidame here comes
 Katharina!

Re-enter KATHARINA

Kath What is your will, sir, that you send for
 me? 100
Pet Where is your sister and Hortensio's wife?
Kath They sit conferring by the parlour fire
Pet Go fetch them hither if they deny to come
 Swinge me them soundly forth unto their hus-
 bands
 Away, I say, and bring them hither straight
 [Exit KATHARINA]
Luc Here is a wonder if you talk of a wonder
Hor And so it is I wonder what it bodes
Pet Marry, peace it bodes, and love, and quiet
 life
 And awful rule, and right supremacy
 And to be short, what not that's sweet and
 happy? 110
Bap Now, fair befall thee good Petrucchio!

The wager thou hast won, and I will add
 Unto thy losses twenty thousand crowns,
 Another dowry to another daughter
 For she is changed, as she had never been
Pet Nay, I will win my wager better yet
 And show more sign of her obedience,
 Her new built virtue and obedience
 See where she comes and brings your froward
 wives
 As prisoners to her womanly persuasion 120

Re-enter KATHARINA with BIANCA and WIDOW

Katharine, that cap of yours becomes you not
 Off with that bauble throw it under foot
Wid Lord, let me never have a cause to sigh,
 Till I be brought to such a silly pass!
Bian Fie! what a foolish duty call you this?
Luc I would your duty were as foolish too
 The wisdom of your duty fair Bianca,
 Hath cost me an hundred crowns since supper-
 time
Bum The more fool you for laying on my duty
Pet Katharine, I charge thee, tell these head-
 strong women 130
 What duty they do owe their lords and husbands
Wid Come, come, you're mocking we will
 have no telling
Pet Come on I say, and first begin with her
Wid She shall not
Pet I say she shall and first begin with her
Kath Fie, fie! unknot that threatening unkind
 brow,
 And dart not scornful glances from those eyes,
 To wound thy lord, thy king thy governor
 It blots thy beauty as frosts do bite the meads,
 Confounds thy fame as whirlwinds shake fair
 buds, 140
 And in no sense is meet or amiable
 A woman moved is like a fountain troubled,
 Muddy, ill seeming, thick bereft of beauty,
 And while it is so, none so dry or thirsty
 Will deign to sip or touch one drop of it
 Thy husband is thy lord thy life thy keeper,
 Thy head thy sovereign, one that cares for thee,
 And for thy maintenance commits his body
 To painful labour both by sea and land
 To watch the night in storms the day in cold, 150
 Whilst thou liest warm at home secure and safe,
 And craves no other tribute at thy hands
 But love fair looks and true obedience,
 Too little payment for so great a debt
 Such duty as the subject owes the prince
 Even such a woman oweth to her husband
 And when she is froward peevish sullen sour,
 And not obedient to his honest will
 What is she but a foul contending rebel

And graceless traitor to her loving lord? 160
 I am ashamed that women are so simple
 To offer war where they should kneel for peace,
 Or seek for rule supremacy and sway
 When they are bound to serve love and obey
 Why are our bodies soft and weak and smooth
 Unapt to toil and trouble in the world
 But that our soft conditions and our hearts
 Should well agree with our external parts?
 Come come you froward and unable worms! 170
 My mind hath been as big as one of yours
 My heart as great my reason hardly more
 To bandy word for word and frown for frown
 But now I see our lances are but straws
 Our strength as weak our weakness past com-
 pare
 That seeming to be most which we indeed least
 are
 Then vail your stomachs for it is no boot
 And place your hands below your husband's foot

In token of which duty if he please
 My hand is ready may it do him ease
Ist Why there's a wench! Come on and kiss
 me Kate 180
Luc Well go thy ways old lad for thou shalt
 have
Ist 'Tis a good hearing when children are to-
 ward
Luc But a harsh hearing when women are fro-
 ward
Pet Come Kate well to bed
 We three are married but you two are spo'd
 [To *LUCENTIO*] 'Twas I won the wager thou had
 you hit the white
 And being a winner God give you good night!
 (*Exeunt PETRUCIO and KATHARINA*)
Hos Now go thy ways thou hast tamed a curst
 shrew
Luc 'Tis a wonder by your leave she will be
 tamed so {*Exeunt*}

THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DUKE OF MILAN *Father to Silvia*
VALENTINE *the two Gentlemen*
PROTEUS
ANTONIO *Father to Proteus*
THURIO *a foolish rival to Valentine*
EGLAMOUR, *Agent for Silvia in her escape*
HOST *where Julia lodges*
THREE OUTLAWS *with Valentine*
SPEED *a clownish servant to Valentine*

LAUNCE *the like to Proteus*
PANTHINO *Servant to Antonio*
JULIA *beloved of Proteus*
SILVIA *beloved of Valentine*
LUCETTA *waiting-woman to Julia*
NON SPEAKING *Servants and musicians*
SCENE *Verona Milan and the frontiers of Mantua*



ACT I

SCENE I *Verona an open place*

Enter VALENTINE and PROTEUS

Val Cease to persuade my loving Proteus
Home-keeping youth have ever homely wits
Were't not affection chains thy tender days
To the sweet glances of thy honour'd love,
I rather would entreat thy company
To see the wonders of the world abroad
Than living dully sluggardized at home,
Wear out thy youth with shapeless idleness
But since thou lovest love still and thrive therein
Even as I would when I to love begin 10

Pro Wilt thou be gone? Sweet Valentine adieu!
Thine on thy Proteus when thou haply seest
Some rare note worthy object in thy travel
Wish me partialer in thy happiness
When thou dost meet good hap, and in thy dan-
ger,

If ever danger do environ thee,
Commend thy grievance to my holy prayers,
For I will be thy beadsman Valentine

Val And on a love-book pray for my success?

Pro Upon some book I love I'll pray for thee

Val That's on some shallow story of deep
love 21

How young Leander cross'd the Hellespont

Pro That's a deep story of a deeper love,
For he was more than over shoes in love

Val 'Tis true for you are over boots in love
And yet you never swam the Hellespont

Pro Over the boots? nay, give me not the
boots

Val No, I will not, for it boots thee not

Pro

What?

Val To be in love, where scorn is bought with
groans,
Coy looks with heart sore sighs one fading
moment's mirth 30

With twenty watchful weary, tedious nights
If haply won perhaps a hapless gain
If lost why then a grievous labour won,
However, but a folly bought with wit,
Or else a wit by folly vanquished

Pro So by your circumstance, you call me fool

Val So, by your circumstance, I fear you'll
prove

Pro 'Tis love you cavil at I am not Love

Val Love is your master for he masters you
And he that is so yoked by a fool 40

Methinks should not be chronicled for wise

Pro Yet writers say, as in the sweetest bud
The eating canker dwells, so eating love
Inhabits in the finest wits of all

Val And writers say as the most forward bud

Is eaten by the canker ere it blow,

Even so by love the young and tender wit

Is turn'd to folly blasting in the bud,

Losing his verdure even in the prime

And all the fair effects of future hopes 50

But wherefore waste I time to counsel thee

That art a votary to fond desire?

Once more adieu! my father at the road

Expects my coming there to see me shipped

Pro And thither will I bring thee Valentine

Val Sweet Proteus no, now let us take our
leave

To Milan let me hear from thee by letters

Of thy success in love and what news else

Bedideth here in absence of thy friend

And I'll wisely will visit thee with mine 60

Pro All happiness bechance to thee in Milan
I al As much to you — home and — farewell

[*Exit*

Pro He after honour hunts I after love
 He leaves his friends to dignify them more
 I leave myself my friends and all for love
 Thou Julia thou hast metamorphosed me
 Made me neglect my studies lose my time
 War with good counsel set the world at nought
 Made wit with musing weak heart sick with
 thought

Enter SPEED

Speed Sir Proteus save you? Saw you my
 master?

Pro But now he parted hence to embark for
 Milan

Speed Twenty to one then he is shipped already
 And I have play'd the sheep in losing him

Pro Indeed a sheep doth very often stray
 As if the shepherd be a while away

Speed You conclude that my master is a shep-
 herd then and I a sheep?

Pro I do

Speed Why then my horns are his horns
 whethe I wake or sleep

Pro A silly answer and fitting well a sheep

Speed This proves me still a sheep

Pro True and thy master a shepherd

Speed Nay that I can deny by a circumstance

Pro It shall go hard but I'll prove it by another

Speed The shepherd seeks the sheep and not
 the sheep the shepherd but I seek my master
 and my master seeks not me therefore I am no
 sheep

Pro The sheep for fodder follow the shepherd
 the shepherd for food follows not the sheep thou
 for wages followest thy master thy master for
 wages follows not thee therefore thou art a
 sheep

Speed Such another proof will make me cry
 baa

Pro But dost thou hear? gavest thou my letter
 to Julia?

Speed Ay sir I a lost mutton gave your letter
 to her a laced mutton and she a laced mutton
 gave me a lost mutton nothing for my labour

Pro Here a too small a pasture for such store of
 muttons

Speed If the ground be overcharged you were
 best stick her

Pro Nay in that you are astray twere best
 pound you

Speed Nay sir less than a pound shall serve me
 for carrying your letter

Pro You mistake I mean the pound—a pinfold

Speed From a pound to a pin? fold it over and
 over

'Tis threefold too little for carrying a letter to
 your lover

Pro But what said she?

Speed [First nodding] Ay

Pro Nod—Ay—why that's noddy

Speed You mistook sir I say she did nod and
 you ask me if she did nod and I say Ay

Pro And that set together is noddy

Speed Now you have taken the pains to set it
 together take it for your pains

Pro No no you shall have it for bearing the
 letter

Speed Well I perceive I must be fain to bear
 with you

Pro Why sir how do you bear with me?

Speed Marry sir the letter very orderly
 having nothing but the word noddy for my
 pains

Pro Beshrew me but you have a quick wit

Speed And yet it cannot overtake your slow
 purse

Pro Come come open the matter in brief what
 said she?

Speed Open your purse that the money and the
 matter may be both at once delivered

Pro Well sir here is for your pains What said
 she?

Speed Truth sir I think you'll hardly win her

Pro Why couldst thou perceive so much from
 her?

Speed Sir I could perceive nothing at all from
 her no not so much as a ducat for delivering
 your letter and being so hard to me that brought
 your mind I fear she'll prove as hard to you in
 telling your mind Give her no token but stones
 for she's as hard as steel

Pro What said she? nothing?

Speed No not so much as: Take this for thy
 pains To testify your bounty I thank you you
 have returned me in requital whereof hence-
 forth carry your letters yourself and so sir I'll
 commend you to my master

Pro Go go be gone to save your ship from
 wreck

Which cannot perish having thee aboard
 Being destined to a drier death on shore

[*Exit SPEED*

I must go send some better messenger

I fear my Julia would not deign my lines
 Receiving them from such a worthless post [*Exit*

SCENE II The same garden of Julia's house

Enter JULIA and LUCETTA

Jul But say Lucetta now we are alone

Wouldst thou then counsel me to fall in love?

Luc Ay madam, so you stumble not unheeded-
fully

Jul Of all the fair resort of gentlemen

That every day with parle encounter me,

In thy opinion which is worthiest love?

Luc Please you repeat their names, I'll show
my mind

According to my shallow simple skill

Jul What think'st thou of the fair Sir Eglamour?

Luc As of a knight well-spoken, neat and fine,
But were I you, he never should be mine

Jul What think'st thou of the rich Mercutio?

Luc Well of his wealth, but of himself so so

Jul What think'st thou of the gentle Proteus?

Luc Lord, Lord! to see what folly reigns in us!

Jul How now! what means this passion at his
name?

Luc Pardon dear madam, 'tis a passing shame
That I, unworthy body as I am

Should censure thus on lovely gentlemen

Jul Why not on Proteus as of all the rest?

Luc Then thus of many good I think him best

Jul Your reason?

Luc I have no other but a woman's reason,
I think him so because I think him so

Jul And wouldst thou have me cast my love on
him?

Luc Ay, if you thought your love not cast
away

Jul Why he, of all the rest, hath never moved
me

Luc Yet he of all the rest I think, best loves ye

Jul His little speaking shows his love but
small

Luc Fire that's closest kept burns most of all

Jul They do not love that do not show their
love

Luc O they love least that let men know their
love

Jul I would I knew his mind

Luc Peruse this paper, madam

Jul To Julia? Say from whom?

Luc That the contents will show

Jul Say, say who gave it thee?

Luc Sir Valentine's page and sent I think,
from Proteus
He would have given it you, but I, being in the
way,

Did in your name receive it, pardon the fault, I
pray

Jul Now by my modesty, a goodly broker!

Dare you presume to harbour wanton lines?

To whisper and conspire against my youth?

Now trust me, 'tis an office of great worth

And you an officer fit for the place

There take the paper, see it be return'd,

Or else return no more into my sight

Luc To plead for love deserves more fee than
hate

Jul Will ye be gone?

Luc That you may ruminate
[Exit

Jul And yet I would I had overlooked the
letter

It were a shame to call her back again

And pray her to a fault for which I chide her

What a fool is she that knows I am a maid

And would not force the letter to my view!

Since maids in modesty, say "no" to that

Which they would have the profferer construe
ay

Fie, fie! how wayward is this foolish love

That like a testy babe will scratch the nurse

And presently all humbled kiss the rod!

How churlishly I chide Lucetta hence

When willingly I would have had her here!

How angrily I taught my brow to frown

When inward joy enforced my heart to smile!

My penance is to call Lucetta back

And ask remission for my folly past

What ho! Lucetta!

Re enter LUCETTA

Luc What would your ladyship?

Jul Is't near dinner time?

Luc I would it were

That you might fill your stomach on your meat
And not upon your maid

Jul What is't that you took up so gingerly?

Luc Nothing

Jul Why didst thou stoop then?

Luc To take a paper up that I let fall

Jul And is that paper nothing?

Luc Nothing concerning me

Jul Then let it lie for those that it concerns

Luc Madam, it will not lie where it concerns,
Unless it have a false interpreter

Jul Some love of yours hath writ to you in
rhyme

Luc That I might sing it, madam, 'tis a tune

Give me a note, your ladyship can set

Jul As little by such toys as may be possible

Best sing it to the tune of 'Light Love'

Luc It is too heavy for so light a tune

Jul Heavy! believe it hath some burden then?

Luc Ay, and melodious were it would you sing
it

Jul And why not you?

Luc I cannot reach so high

Jul Let's see your song, How now, minion!

Luc Keep tune there still so you will sing it
out
And yet methinks I do not like this tune 90
Jul You do not?

Luc No madam it is too sharp

Jul You in mien are too saucy

Luc Nay now you are too flat

And mar the concord with too harsh a descant

There wanteth but a mean to fill your song

Jul The mean is drown'd with your unruly bass

Luc Indeed I hit the base for Proteus

Jul This babble shall not henceforth trouble me

Here is a coil with protestation! [*Trans the letter*]

Go get you gone and let the papers lie 100

You would be lingering them to anger me

Luc She makes it strange but she would be
best pleased

To be so angry'd with another letter [*Exit*]

Jul Nay would I were so angry'd with the
same

O hateful hands to tear such loving words!

Injurious wasp to feed on such sweet honey

And kill the bees that yield it with your stings!

I will kiss each several paper for amends

Look here is writ kind Julia Unkind Julia!

A in reveng of thy ingratitude 110

I throw thy name again to the bruising stones

Trampling contemptuously on thy disdain

And here is writ love-wounded Proteus

Poor wounded name! my bosom as a bed

Shall lodge thee till thy wound be thoroughly
heal'd

And thus I seal it with a sovereign kiss

But twice or thrice was Proteus written down

Be calm good wind blow n't a word away

Till I have found each letter in the letter

Except mine own name that some whirlwind
bear

Unto a ragged fearful hanging rock 121

And throw it thence into the raging sea!

Lo here in one line is his name twice writ

Poor forlorn Proteus pass on! Proteus

To the sweet Julia that I'll tear away

And yet I will not sigh so prettily

He confuses it to his complaining names

Thus will I toll them one upon another

Now his embraces contend do what you will

Re-enter LUCETTA

Luc Madam 130

Dismiss me ready and your father stays

Jul Well let us go

Luc What shall these papers lie like telltale
here?

Jul If you respect them best to take them up

Luc Nay I was taken up for laying them down

Yet here they shall not lie for catching cold

Jul I see you have a month's mind to them

Luc Ay madam you may say what a ghts you
see

I see things too although you judge I wink

Jul Come, come will't please you go? 140

[*Exit*]

SCENE III *The same Antonio's house*

Enter ANTONIO and PANTHINO

Ant Tell me Panthino what sad talk was that

Wherewith my brother held you in the cloister?

Pan 'Twas of his nephew Proteus your son

Ant Why what of him?

Pan He wond'ring that your lordship

Would suffer him to spend his youth at home

While other men of slender reputation,

Put forth their sons to seek preferment out

Some to the wars to try their fortune there

Some to discover islands far away

Some to the studious universities 10

For any or for all these exercises

He said that Proteus your son was meet

And did request me to importune you

To let him spend his time no more at home

Which would be great impeachment to his age

In having known no travel in his youth

Ant Nor needst thou much importune me to
that

Whereto this month I have been hammering

I have consider'd well his loss of time

And how he cannot be a perfect man 20

Nor being tried and tutor'd in the world

Experience is by industry achieved

And perfect'd by the swift course of time

Then tell me whether were I best to send him?

Pan I think your lordship is not ignorant

How his companion, youthful Valentine

Attends the Emperor in his royal court

Ant I know it well

Pan 'Twere good I think your lordship send
him thither

Thereshall he practice tilts and tournaments 30

Hear sweet discourse converse with noblemen,

And be in eye of every exercise

Worthy his youth and noble of birth

Ant I like thy counsel well hast thou advis'd

And that thou mayst perceive how well I like it

The execution of it shall make known

Even with this speed I expect it

I will dispatch him to the Emperor's court

Pan To-morrow may it please you Do?

Alphonso

With other gentlemen of good esteem 40

Are journeying to salute the Emperor

And to commend their service to his will

Ant Good company, with them shall Proteus
go
And in good time! now will we break with
him

Enter PROTEUS

Pro Sweet love! sweet lines! sweet life!
Here in her hand the agent of her heart,
Here is her oath for love her honour's pawn
O, that our fathers would applaud our loves,
To seal our happiness with their consents!
O heavenly Julia!

Ant How now! what letter are you reading
there?

Pro May it please your lordship, 'tis a word
or two

Of commendations sent from Valentine,
Deliver'd by a friend that came from him

Ant Lend me the letter, let me see what news

Pro There is no news, my lord, but that he
writes

How happily he lives, how well beloved
And daily graced by the Emperor,
Wishing me with him, partner of his fortune

Ant And how stand you affected to his wish?

Pro As one relying on your lordship's will

And not depending on his friendly wish

Ant My will is something sorted with his
wish

Muse not that I thus suddenly proceed
For what I will, I will, and there an end
I am resolved that thou shalt spend some time
With Valentinus in the Emperor's court
What maintenance he from his friends receives,
Like exhibition thou shalt have from me
To-morrow be in readiness to go

Excuse it not for I am peremptory

Pro My lord I cannot be so soon provided

Please you deliberate a day or two

Ant Look what thou want'st shall be sent
after thee

No more of stay! to-morrow thou must go
Come on, Panthino you shall be employ'd
To hasten on his expedition

[Exit ANTONIO and PANTHINO]

Pro Thus have I shunn'd the fire for fear of
burning

And drench'd me in the sea where I am drown'd
I fear'd to show my father Julia's letter,

Lest he should take exceptions to my love,

And with the vantage of mine own excuse

Hath he excepted most against my love

O, how this spring of love resembleth

The uncertain glory of an April day

Which now shows all the beauty of the sun,

And by and by a cloud takes all away!

Re enter PANTHINO

Pan Sir Proteus, your father calls for you
He is in haste, therefore I pray you, go 89
Pro Why this it is my heart accords thereto,
And yet a thousand times it answers "no"
[Exit]

ACT II

SCENE I Milan the Duke's palace

Enter VALENTINE and SPEED

Speed Sir, your glove

Val Not mine my gloves are on

Speed Why, then, this may be yours, for this
is but one

Val Ha! let me see ay give it me it's
mine

Sweet ornament that decks a thing divine!

Ah Silvia Silvia!

Speed Madam Silvia! Madam Silvia!

Val How now, sirrah?

Speed She is not within hearing sir

Val Why sir who bade you call her?

Speed Your worship sir, or else I mistook 10

Val Well you'll still be too forward

Speed And yet I was last chidden for being too
slow

Val Go to, sir tell me do you know Madam
Silvia?

Speed She that your worship loves?

Val Why, how know you that I am in love?

Speed Marry, by these special marks first,
you have learned, like Sir Proteus, to breathe
your arms, like a malcontent, to relish a love-
song like a robin redbreast, to walk alone, like
one that had the pestilence to sigh, like a school
boy that had lost his A B C, to weep like a
young wench that had buried her grandam, to
fast, like one that takes diet, to watch like one
that fears robbing, to speak pining, like a beg-
gar at Hallowmas You were wont when you
laughed to crow like a cock when you walked
to walk like one of the lions, when you fasted
it was presently after dinner when you looked
sadly it was for want of money and now you
are metamorphosed with a mistress that, when
I look on you I can hardly think you my master

Val Are all these things perceived in me?

Speed They are all perceived without ye

Val Without me? they cannot

Speed Without you? nay that's certain for,
without you were so simple, none else would
but you are so without these follies that these
follies are within you and shine through you like
the water in an urn that not an eye that sees

you but is a physician to comment on your malady

I al But tell me dost thou know my lady Silvia?

Sp d She that you gaze on so as she sits at supper?

I al Hast thou observed that? even she I mean

Sp d Why sir I know her not 30

I al Dost thou know her by my gazing on her and yet knowest her not?

Sp d Is she not hard favoured sir?

I al Not so fair boy as well favoured

Speed Sir I know that well enough

I al What dost thou know?

Speed That she is not so fair as of you well favoured

I al I mean that her beauty is exquisite but her favour infinite 60

Sp d That is because the one is painted and the other out of all count

I al How painted? and how out of count?

Speed Marry sir so painted to make her fair that no man counts of her beauty

I al How esteemest thou me? I account of her beauty

Sp d You never saw her since she was deformed

I al How long hath she been deformed? 70

Speed Ever since you loved her

I al I have loved her ever since I saw her and still I see her beautiful

Speed If you love her you cannot see her

I al Why?

Speed Because Love is blind O that you had mine eyes or your own eyes had the lights they were wont to be when you chid at Sir Proteus for going ungartered

I al What should I see then? 80

Speed Your own present folly and her passing deformity for he being in love could not see to garter his hose & you being in love cannot see to put on your hose

I al Belike boy then you are in love for last morning you could not see to wipe my shoes

Sp d True sir I was in love with my bod I thank you you swinged me for my love which makes me the bolder to chide you for yours

I al In conclusion I stand affected to her 90

Sp d I would you were set so your affection would cease

I al Last night she enjoined me to write some lines to one she loves

Sp d And have you?

I al I have

Speed Are they not lamely writ?

I al No boy but as well as I can do them Peace! here she comes 99

Speed *[Aside]* O excellent motion! O exceeding puppet! Now will he interpret to her

Exit Silvia

I al Madam and mistress a thousand good morrows

Speed *[Aside]* O give ye good even! here is a million of manners

Sil Sir Valentine and servant to you two thousand

Speed *[Aside]* He should give her interest, and she gives it him

I al As you enjoin'd me I have writ your letter Unto the secret nameless friend of yours 111

Which I was much unwilling to proceed in

But for my duty to your ladyship

Sil I thank you gentle servant his very clerkly done

I al Now tell me, madam it came hardly off For being ignorant to whom it goes

I writ at random very doubtfully

Sil Perchance you think too much of so much pains?

I al No madam so it stead you I will write Please you command a thousand times as much

And yet— 121

Sil A pretty period! Well I guess the sequel

And yet I will not name it and yet I care not

And yet take this again and yet I thank you

Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more

Sp d *[Aside]* And yet you will and yet another yet

I al What means your ladyship? do you not like it?

Sil Yes yes the lines are very quaintly writ But since unwillingly take them again 130

Nay take them

I al Madam they are for you

Sil Ay ay you writ them sir at my request

But I will none of them they are for you

I would have had them writ more movingly

I al Please you I'll write your ladyship another

Sil And when it is writ for my sake read it over And if it please you so if not why so

I al If it please me madam what then?

Sil Why if it please you take it for your labour

And so good morrow servant *[Exit]* 140

Sp d O jest unseen inscrutable invisible As a nose on a man's face or a weathercock on a steeple!

My master sees to her and she hath taught her sutor

He being her pupil, to become her tutor
O excellent device! was there ever heard a better,
That my master, being scribe, to himself should
write the letter?

Val How now, sir? what are you reasoning
with yourself?

Speed Nay, I was rhyming 'tis you that have
the reason 150

Val To do what?

Speed To be a spokesman from Madam Silvia

Val To whom?

Speed To yourself why, she wooes you by a
figure

Val What figure?

Speed By a letter, I should say

Val Why, she hath not writ to me?

Speed What need she, when she hath made you
write to yourself? Why, do you not perceive the
jest? 160

Val No believe me

Speed No believing you, indeed sir But did you
perceive her earnest?

Val She gave me none, except an angry word

Speed Why, she hath given you a letter

Val That's the letter I writ to her friend

Speed And that letter hath she delivered and
there an end

Val I would it were no worse

Speed I'll warrant you 'tis as well 170
For often have you writ to her and she, in
modesty,

Or else for want of idle time, could not again
reply

Or fearing else some messenger that might her
mind discover

Herself hath taught her love himself to write
unto her lover

All this I speak in print, for in print I found it

Why muse you, sir? 'tis dinner time

Val I have dined

Speed Ay, but hearken, sir though the cha-
melion Love can feed on the air I am one that

am nourished by my victuals and would fain have
meat O, be not like your mistress, be moved,

be moved {Exeunt

SCENE II *Verona Julia's house*

Enter PROTEUS and JULIA

Pro Have patience gentle Julia

Jul I must where is no remedy

Pro When possibly I can I will return

Jul If you turn not you will return the sooner

Keep this remembrance for thy Julia's sake

Giving a ring

Pro Why then we'll make exchange here,
take you this

Jul And seal the bargain with a holy kiss

Pro Here is my hand for my true constancy,

And when that hour o'erslips me in the day

Wherein I sigh not, Julia for thy sake, 10

The next ensuing hour some foul mischance

Torment me for my love's forgetfulness!

My father stays my coming answer not,

The tide is now nay, not thy tide of tears,

That tide will stay me longer than I should

Julia, farewell! [Exit JULIA

What, gone without a word?

Ay so true love should do it cannot speak,

For truth hath better deeds than words to

grace it

Enter PANTHINO

Pan Sir Proteus, you are stay'd for

Pro Go I come I come 20

Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb

[Exeunt

SCENE III *The same a street*

Enter LAUNCE leading a dog

Launce Nay twill be this hour ere I have done
weeping all the kind of the Launces have this
very fault I have received my proportion, like
the prodigious son, and am going with Sir Proteus
to the Imperial's court I think Crab my dog be
the sourest-natured dog that lives my mother
weeping, my father wailing my sister crying our
maid howling our cat wringing her hands and all
our house in a great perplexity, yet did not this
cruel hearted cur shed one tear he is a stone a
very pebble stone, and has no more pity in him
than a dog ■ Jew would have wept to have seen
our parting, why my grandam having no eyes
look you wept herself blind at my parting Nay,
I'll show you the manner of it This shoe is my
father no this left shoe is my father no no this
left shoe is my mother nay, that cannot be so
neither yes it is so it is so, it hath the worse
sole This shoe, with the hole in it is my mother
and this my father a vengeance on't there 'tis
now sir this staff is my sister, for, look you
she is as white as a lily and as small as a wand
this hat is Nan, our maid I am the dog no the
dog is himself, and I am the dog—Oh! the dog is
me and I am myself, ay so so Now come I
to my father Father your blessing now should
not the shoe speak a word for weeping now
should I kiss my father well he weeps on Now
come I to my mother O that she could speak
now like a wood woman! Well I kiss her why
there 'tis here's my mother's breath up and
down Now come I to my sister mark the moan
she makes Now the dog all this while sheds not

you but a physician to comment on your malady

Ial But tell me dost thou know my lady Silvia?

Speed She that you gaze on so as she sits at supper?

Ial Hast thou observed that? even she I mean

Speed Why sir I know her not 50

Ial Dost thou know her by my gazing on her and yet knowest her not?

Speed Is she not hard favoured sir?

Ial Not so fair boy as well favoured

Speed Sir I know that well enough

Ial What dost thou know?

Speed That she is not so fair as of you well favoured

Ial I mean that her beauty is exquisite but her favour infinite 60

Speed That is because the one is painted and the other out of all count

Ial How painted? and how out of count?

Speed Marry sir so painted to make her fair that no man counts of her beauty

Ial How esteemest thou me? I account of her beauty

Speed You never saw her since she was deformed

Ial How long hath she been deformed? 70

Speed Ever since you loved her

Ial I have loved her ever since I saw her and still I see her beautiful

Speed If you love her you cannot see her

Ial Why?

Speed Because Love is blind O that you had mine eyes or your own eyes had the lights they were wont to have when you chid at Sir Proteus for going ungartered!

Ial What should I see then? 80

Speed Your own present folly and her passing deformity for he being in love could not see to garter his hose and you being in love cannot see to put on your hose

Ial Belie me boy then you are in love for last morning you could not see to wipe my shoes

Speed True sir I am in love with my bed I thank you you swined me for my love which makes me the bolder to chide you for yours

Ial In conclusion I stand affected to her 90

Speed I would you were set so your affection would cease

Ial Last night she enjoined me to write some lines to one she loves

Speed And have you?

Ial I have

Speed Are they not lamely writ?

Ial No boy but as well as I can do them. Peace! here she comes 99

Speed [Aside] O excellent motion! O exceeding puppet! Now will he interpret to her

Enter SILVIA

Ial Madam and mistress a thousand good morrows

Speed [Aside] O give ye good even! here is a million of manners

Sil Sir Valentine and servant to you two thousand

Speed [Aside] He should give her interest and she gives it him

Ial As you enjoined me I have writ your letter Unto the secret nameless friend of yours 111

Which I was much unwilling to proceed in

But for my duty to your ladyship

Sil I thank you gentle servant tis very clerkly done

Ial Now trust me madam it came hardly off For being ignorant to whom it goes

I writ at random very doubtfully

Sil Perchance you think too much of so much pains?

Ial No madam so it stead you I will write, Please you command a thousand times as much And yet— 121

Sil A pretty period! Well I guess the sequel And yet I will not name it and yet I care not

And yet take thus again and yet I thank you, Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more

Speed [Aside] And yet you will and yet another yet

Ial What means your ladyship? do you not like it?

Sil Yes yes the lines are very quaintly writ But since unwillingly take them again

Nay take them 130

Ial Madam they are for you

Sil Ay ay you writ them sir at my request But I will none of them they are for you

I would have had them writ more movingly

Ial Please you I'll write your ladyship another

Sil And when it is writ for my sake read it over And if it please you so if not why so

Ial If it please me madam what then?

Sil Why if it please you take it for your labour

And so good morrow servant [Exit 140

Speed O jest unseen inscrutable invisible As a nose on a man's face or a weathercock on a steeple!

My master goes to her and she hath taught her sutor

He being her pupil, to become her tutor
O excellent device! was there ever heard a better,
That my master, being scribe, to himself should
write the letter?

Val How now, sir? what are you reasoning
with yourself?

Speed Nay, I was rhyming 'tis you that have
the reason 150

Val To do what?

Speed To be a spokesman from Madam Silvia

Val To whom?

Speed To yourself why, she wooes you by a
figure

Val What figure?

Speed By a letter, I should say

Val Why, she hath not writ to me?

Speed What need she, when she hath made you
write to yourself? Why, do you not perceive the
jest? 160

Val No, believe me

Speed No believing you, indeed, sir But did you
perceive her earnest?

Val She gave me none, except an angry word

Speed Why, she hath given you a letter

Val That's the letter I writ to her friend

Speed And that letter hath she delivered, and
there an end

Val I would it were no worse

Speed I'll warrant you, 'tis as well 170
I or often have you writ to her, and she, in
modesty

Or else for want of idle time, could not again
reply,

Or fearing else some messenger that might her
mind discover,

Herself hath taught her love himself to write
unto her lover

All this I speak in print, for in print I found it

Why muse you sir? 'tis dinner time

Val I have dined

Speed Ay, but hearken sir, though the cha-
meleon Love can feed on the air, I am one that

am nourished by my victuals and would fain have
meat O, be not like your mistress, be moved

be moved [Exeunt]

SCENE II Verona Julia's house

Enter PROTEUS and JULIA

Pro Have patience, gentle Julia

Jul I must where is no remedy

Pro When possibly I can, I will return

Jul If you turn not, you will return the sooner

Keep this remembrance for thy Julia's sake

Giving a ring

Pro Why then we'll make exchange, here,
take you this

Jul And seal the bargain with a holy kiss

Pro Here is my hand for my true constancy,

And when that hour o'erslips me in the day
Wherein I sigh not, Julia for thy sake, 10

The next ensuing hour some foul mischance

Torment me for my love's forgetfulness!

My father stays my coming answer not

The tide is now nay, not thy tide of tears,

That tide will stay me longer than I should

Julia, farewell! [Exit JULIA]

What, gone without a word?

Ay, so true love should do it cannot speak,

For truth hath better deeds than words to

grace it

Enter PANTHINO

Pan Sir Proteus you are stay'd for

Pro Go I come I come 20

Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb
[Exeunt]

SCENE III The same street

Enter LAUNCE, leading a dog

Launce Nay, 'twill be this hour ere I have done
weeping all the kind of the Launces have this
very fault I have received my proportion like
the prodigious son, and am going with Sir Proteus
to the Imperial's court I think Crab my dog be
the sourest natured dog that lives my mother
weeping my father wailing my sister crying our
maid howling our cat wringing her hands and all
our house in a great perplexity yet did not this
cruel hearted cur shed one tear he is a stone, a
very pebble stone, and has no more pity in him
than a dog a Jew would have wept to have seen
our parting, why my grandam having no eyes,
look you wept herself blind at my parting Nay,
I'll show you the manner of it This shoe is my
father no, this left shoe is my father no no, this
left shoe is my mother nay, that cannot be so
neither yes, it is so it is so it hath the worse
sole This shoe with the hole in it is my mother,
and this my father a vengeance on't there 'tis
now, sir this staff is my sister, for look you
she is as white as a lily and as small as a wand
this hat is Nan our maid I am the dog no the
dog is himself and I am the dog—Oh! the dog is
me and I am myself, ay so so Now come I
to my father Father your blessing now should
not the shoe speak a word for weeping now
should I kiss my father well, he weeps on Now
come I to my mother O, that she could speak
now like a wood woman! Well I kiss her why
there 'tis here's my mother's breath up and
down Now come I to my sister, mark the moan
she makes Now the dog all this while sheds not

a tear nor speaks a word but see how I lay the dust with my tears

Enter PANTHERO

Pan Launce away away aboard! thy master is shipped and thou art to post after with oars. What's the matter? why weepest thou man? Away! thou'lt lose the tide if you tarry any longer.

Launce It is no matter if the tide were lost for it is the unkindest test that ever any man tied.

Pan What's the unkindest tie?

Launce Why he that is tied here. Crab my dog.

Pan Tut man I mean thou'lt lose the flood and in losing the flood lose thy voyage and in losing thy voyage lose thy master and in losing thy master lose thy service and in losing thy service—Why dost thou stop my mouth?

Launce For fear thou shouldst lose thy tongue.

Pan Where should I lose my tongue?

Launce In thy tale.

Pan In thy tail!

Launce Lose the tide and the voyage and the master and the service and the tied! Why man if the river were dry I am able to fill it with my tears if the wind were down I could drive the boat with my sighs.

Pan Come come away man I was sent to call thee.

Launce Sir call me what thou dares.

Pan Wilt thou go?

Launce Well I will go. *[Exit]*

SCENE IV. Within the Duke's palace

Enter SILVIA VALENTINE THURIO and SPEED

Sil Servant!

Val Mistress?

Speed Master Sir Thurio frowns on you.

Val Ay boy it's for love.

Speed Not of you.

Val Of my mistress then.

Speed Twere good you knocked him. *[Exit]*

Sil Servant you are sad.

Val Indeed madam I seem so.

Thu Seem you that you are not? 10

Val Haply I do.

Thu So do counterfeiters.

Val So do you.

Thu What seem I that I am not?

Val We see.

Thu What instance of the contrary?

Val Your folly.

Thu And how quote you my folly?

Val I quote it in your jerkin.

Thu My jerkin is a doublet. 20

Val Well then I'll double your folly.

Thu How?

Sil What angry Sir Thurio! do you change colour?

Val Give him leave madam he is a kind of chameleon.

Thu That hath more mind to feed on your blood than live in your air.

Val You have said sir.

Thu Av sir and done too for this time. 30

Val I know it well sir you always end ere you begin.

Sil A fine volley of words gentlemen, and quickly shot off.

Val 'Tis indeed madam we thank the giver.

Sil Who is that servant?

Val Yourself sweet lady for you gave the fire. Sir Thurio borrows his wit from your ladyship & looks and spends what he borrows kindly in your company. 40

Thu Sir if you spend word for word with me, I shall make your wit bankrupt.

Val I know it well sir you have an exchequer of words and I think no other treasure to give your followers for it appears by their bare liveries that they live by your bare words.

Sil No more gentlemen no more here comes my father.

Enter DUKE

Duke Now daughter Silvia you are hard beset. Sir Valentine your father's in good health. 50
What say you to a letter from your friends? Of much good news?

Val My lord I will be thankful to any happy messenger from thence.

Duke Know ye Don Antonio your countryman?

Val Ay my good lord I know the gentleman.

To be of worth an I worthy estimation.

And not without desert so well reputed.

Duke Hath he not a son?

Val Ay my good lord a son that well deserves the honour and regard of such a father. 60

Duke You know him well?

Val I know him as myself for from our infancy we have conversed and spent our hours together. And though myself have been an idle truant omitting the sweet benefit of time.

To clothe mine age with angel-like perfection.

Yet hath Sir Proteus for that's his name.

Made use and fair advantage of his days.

His years but young but his experience old.

His head unmelior'd but his judgement ripe. 70

And in a word for far behind his worth.

Comes all the praises that I now bestow.

He is complete in feature and in mind
 With all good grace to grace a gentleman
Duke Beshrew me, sir, but if he make this good,
 He is as worthy for an empress' love
 As meet to be an emperor's counsellor
 Well, sir, this gentleman is come to me,
 With commendation from great potentates,
 And here he means to spend his time awhile 80
 I think 'tis no unwelcome news to you
Val Should I have wish'd a thing it had been he
Duke Welcome him then according to his
 worth

Silvia I speak to you and you Sir Thurio,
 For Valentine I need not cite him to it
 I will send him hither to you presently [Exit
Val This is the gentleman I told your ladyship
 Had come along with me, but that his mistress
 Did hold his eyes lock'd in her crystal looks
Sil Belike that now she hath enfranchised
 them 90

Upon some other pawn for fealty
Val Nay, sure, I think she holds them prisoners
 still
Sil Nay, then he should be blind, and, being
 blind,

How could he see his way to seek out you?
Val Why, lady, Love hath twenty pair of eyes
Thu They say that Love hath not an eye at all
Val To see such lovers, Thurio as yourself
 Upon a homely object Love can wink
Sil Have done, have done, here comes the
 gentleman [Exit THURIO

Enter PROTEUS

Val Welcome, dear Proteus! Mistress I
 beseech you, 100
 Confirm his welcome with some special favour
Sil His worth is warrant for his welcome hither,
 If thus be he you oft have wish'd to hear from
Val Mistress, it is sweet lady, entertain him
 To be my fellow servant to your ladyship
Sil Too low a mistress for so high a servant
Pro Not so sweet lady but too mean a servant
 To have a look of such a worthy mistress
Val Leave off discourse of disability
 Sweet lady, entertain him for your servant 110
Pro My duty will I boast of, nothing else
Sil And duty never yet did want his meed
 Servant, you are welcome to a worthless mistress
Pro I'll die on him that says so but yourself
Sil That you are welcome?
Pro That you are worthless

Re enter THURIO

Thu Madam, my lord your father would speak
 with you

Sil I wait upon his pleasure Come, Sir Thurio,
 Go with me Once more new servant welcome
 I'll leave you to confer of home affairs, 119
 When you have done, we look to hear from you
Pro We'll both attend upon your ladyship

[Exit SILVIA and THURIO

Val Now tell me, how do all from whence
 you came?
Pro Your friends are well and have them much
 commended
Val And how do yours?

Pro I left them all in health
Val How does your lady? and how thrives
 your love?

Pro My tales of love were wont to weary you,
 I know you joy not in a love discourse

Val Ay, Proteus but that life is alter'd now
 I have done penance for contemning Love
 Whose high imperious thoughts have punish'd
 me 120

With bitter fasts with penitential groans
 With nightly tears and daily heart sore sighs,
 For in revenge of my contempt of love
 Love hath chased sleep from my enthralled eyes
 And made them watchers of mine own heart's
 sorrow

O gentle Proteus Love's a mighty lord
 And hath so humbled me as I confess
 There is no woe to his correction

Nor to his service no such joy on earth
 Now no discourse, except it be of love 140
 Now can I break my fast dine sup and sleep,
 Upon the very naked name of love

Pro Enough I read your fortune in your eye
 Was this the idol that you worship so?

Val Even she, and is she not a heavenly saint?
Pro No, but she is an earthly paragon
Val Call her divine

Pro I will not flatter her
Val O flatter me, for love delights in praises

Pro When I was sick, you gave me bitter pills
 And I must minister the like to you 150

Val Then speak the truth by her if not divine,
 Yet let her be a principality,
 Sovereign to all the creatures on the earth
Pro Except my mistress

Val Sweet except not an,
 Except thou wilt except against my love

Pro Have I not reason to prefer mine own?

Val And I will help thee to prefer her too
 She shall be dignified with this high honour—
 To bear my lady's train lest the base earth
 Should from her vesture chance to steal a kiss 160
 And of so great a favour growing proud
 Disdain to root the summer swelling flower
 And make rough winter everlasting

Pro Why Valentine what braggardism is this?

I al Pardon me Proteus all I can is nothing
To her whose worth makes other worthies
nothing

She is alone

Pro Then let her alone

I al Not for the world why man she is mine
own

And I as rich in having such a jewel
As twenty seas if all their sand were pearl 10
The water nectar and the rocks pure gold
Forgive me that I do not dream on thee
Because thou see'st me dote upon my love
My foolish rival that her father likes
Only for his possessions are so huge
Is gone with her along and I must after
For love thou know'st I'm full of jealousy
Pro But she loves you?

I al Ay and we are brethren'd nay more our
marriage hour

With all the cunning manner of our flight 180
Determined of how I must climb her window
The ladder made of cords and all the means
Plotted and greed on for my happiness
Good Proteus go with me to my chamber
In these affairs to aid me with thy counsel

Pro Go on before I shall inquire you forth
I must unto the road to disembark
Some necessities that I needs must use
And then I'll presently attend you

I al Will you make haste? 190
Pro I will [Exit VALENTINE]

Even as one heat another heat expels
Or as one nail by strength drives out another
So the remembrance of my former love
Is by a newer object quite forgotten
[Is it mine or Valentine's praise?]
Her true perfection or my false transgression
That makes me reasonless to reason thus?
She is fair and so is Julia that I love—
That I did love for now my love is thaw'd 200
Which like a waxen image giveth a fire
Bears no impression of the thing it was
Methinks my zeal to Valentine is cold
And that I love him not as I was wont
O but I love his lady too too much
And that's the reason I love him so little
How shall I dote on her with more a twice
That thus without advice begin to love her?

Tis but her picture I have yet beheld
And that hath dazzled my reason's light 210
But when I look on her perfections
There is no reason but I shall be blind
If I can check my erring love I will
If not to compass her I'll use my skill

[Exit

SCENE V *The same a street*

Enter SPEED and LAUNCE severally

Speed Launce¹ by mine honesty welcome to Milan!

Launce Forswear not thyself sweet youth for
I am not welcome I reckon this always that a
man is never undone till he be hanged nor never
welcome to a place till some certain shot be paid
and the hostess say 'Welcome!'

Speed Come on you madcap I'll to the alehouse
with you presently where for on shot of five
pence thou shalt have five thousand welcomes
But sirrah how did thy master part with Madam
Julia?

Launce Marry after they closed in earnest
they parted very fairly in jest

Speed But shall she marry him?

Launce No

Speed How then? shall he marry her?

Launce No neither

Speed What are they broken?

Launce No they are both as whole as a fish 20

Speed Why then how stands the matter with
them?

Launce Marry thus when it stands well with
him it stands well with her

Speed What an ass art thou! I understand thee not

Launce What a block art thou that thou canst
not! My staff understands me

Speed What thou say'st?

Launce Ay and what I do too look thee I'll
but lean and my staff understands me 21

Speed It stands under thee indeed

Launce Why stand under and under stand is
all one

Speed But tell me true will't be a match?

Launce Ask my dog if he say ay it will if he
say no it will if he shake his tail and say
noth'g it will

Speed The conclusion is then that it will

Launce Thou shalt never get such a secret from
me but by a parable 41

Speed 'Tis well that I get it so But Launce
how sayest thou that my master is become a
notable lover?

Launce I never knew him otherwise

Speed Than how?

Launce A notable lubber as thou reportest him
to be

Speed Why thou whoreson ass thou mistak'st
me 50

Launce Why fool I meant not thee I meant
thy master

Speed I tell thee my master is become a hot
lover

Launce Why, I tell thee I care not though he burn himself in love If thou wilt, go with me to the alehouse if not, thou art an Hebrew, a Jew, and not worth the name of a Christian

Speed Why? 59

Launce Because thou hast not so much charity in thee as to go to the ale with a Christian Wilt thou go?

Speed At thy service [Exeunt]

SCENE VI *The same the Duke's palace*

Enter PROTEUS

Pro To leave my Julia shall I be forsworn,
To love fair Silvia, shall I be forsworn,
To wrong my friend I shall be much forsworn,
And even that power which gave me first my oath

Provokes me to this threefold perjury,
Love bade me swear and Love bids me forswear
O sweet suggesting Love if thou hast sinn'd,
Teach me, thy tempted subject to excuse it!

At first I did adore a twinkling star,
But now I worship a celestial sun 10

Unheedful vows may heedfully be broken
And he wants wit that wants resolv'd will
To learn his wit to exchange the bad for better
Fie fie unreverend tongue! to call her bad
Whose sovereignty so oft thou hast prefer'd
With twenty thousand soul confirming oaths
I cannot leave to love and yet I do

But there I leave to love where I should love
Julia I lose and Valentine I lose

If I keep them I needs must lose myself 20
If I lose them, thus find I by their loss

For Valentine myself, for Julia Silvia
I to myself am dearer than a friend,
For love is still most precious in itself
And Silvia—witness Heaven, that made her fair!—

Shows Julia but a swarthy Ethiop
I will forget that Julia is alive,
Remembering that my love to her is dead,
And Valentine I'll hold an enemy

Aiming at Silvia as a sweeter friend 30
I cannot now prove constant to myself,

Without some treachery used to Valentine
This night he meaneth with a corded ladder
To climb celestial Silvia's chamber-window,
Myself in counsel his competitor

Now presently I'll give her father notice
Of their disguising and pretended flight

Who all enraged will banish Valentine
For Thurio he intends, shall wed his daughter,

But Valentine being gone I'll quickly cross 40
By some sly trick blunt Thurio's dull proceeding

Love lend me wings to make my purpose swift,
As thou hast lent me wit to plot this drift! [Exit]

SCENE VII *Verona Julia's house*

Enter JULIA and LUCETTA

Jul Counsel, Lucetta gentle girl, assist me,
And even in kind love I do conjure thee,
Who art the table wherein all my thoughts
Are visibly character'd and engraved
To lesson me and tell me some good mean
How, with my honour I may undertake
A journey to my loving Proteus

Luc Alas, the way is wearisome and long!

Jul A true devoted pilgrim is not weary
To measure kingdoms with his feeble steps 10
Much less shall she that hath Love's wings to fly,
And when the flight is made to one so dear,
Of such divine perfection as Sir Proteus

Luc Better forbear till Proteus make return

Jul O, knowst thou not his looks are my soul's food?

Pity the dearth that I have pined in
By longing for that food so long a time
Durst thou but know the only touch of love,
Thou wouldst as soon go kindle fire with snow
As seek to quench the fire of love with words 20

Luc I do not seek to quench your love's hot fire,
But qualify the fire's extreme rage,
Lest it should burn above the bounds of reason

Jul The more thou damnest it up, the more it burns

The current that with gentle murmur glides
Thou knowst, being stopp'd impatiently doth rage,

But when his fair course is not hindered
He makes sweet music with the enamell'd stones,
Giving a gentle kiss to every sedge
He overtaketh in his pilgrimage 30

And so by many winding nooks he strays
With willing sport to the wild ocean
Then let me go and hinder not my course
I'll be as patient as a gentle stream
And make a pasture of each weary step
Till the last step have brought me to my love,
And there I'll rest as after much turmoil
A blessed soul doth in Elysium

Luc But in what habit wilt thou go along?

Jul Not like a woman for I would prevent 40
The loose encounters of lascivious men
Gentle Lucetta fit me with such weeds
As may become some well reputed page

Luc Why, then your ladyship must cut your hair

Jul No girl I'll knit it up in silken strings
With twenty odd-conceited true love knots
To be fantastic may become a youth

Of greater time than I shall show to be

Luc What fashion, madam shall I make your breeches? 49

Jul That fits as well as 'Tell me good my lord What compass will you wear your farthingale?

Why even what fashion thou best likest *Lucetta*

Luc You must needs have them with a codpiece madam

Jul Out out *Lucetta*! that will be ill favour'd

Luc A round hose madam now's not worth a pin,

Unless you have a codpiece to stick pins on

Jul *Lucetta* as thou lovest me, let me have

What thou thinkest meet and in most mannerly

But tell me wench how will the world repute me

For undertaking so unsta'd a journey? 60

I fear me it will make me scandalized

Luc If you think so then stay at home and go not

Jul Nay that I will not

Luc Then never dream on infamy but go

If *Proteus* like your journey when you come

No matter who a displeased when you are gone

I fear me he will scarce be pleased withal

Jul That is the least *Lucetta* of my fear

A thousand oaths an ocean of his tears

And instances of infinite of love 70

Warrant me welcome to my *Proteus*

Luc All these are servants to deceitful men

Jul Base men that use them to so base effect!

But truer stars did go *Proteus* birth

His words are bonds his oaths are oracles

His love sincere his thoughts immaculate

His tears pure messengers sent from his heart

His heart as far from fraud as heaven from earth

Luc Pray heaven he prove so when you come to him!

Jul Now as thou lovest me do him not that wrong 80

To bear a hard opinion of his truth

Only deserve my love by loving him

And presently go with me to my chamber

To take a note of what I stand in need of

To furnish me upon my long journey

All that is mine I leave at thy dispose

My goods my lands my reputation

Only in lieu thereof dispatch me hence

Come answer not but to it presently!

I am impatient of my tarrance [Exeunt 90

ACT III

SCENE I Milan the Duke's palace

Enter DUKE, THURIO and PROTEUS

Duke Sir *Thurio* give us leave I pray awhile

We have some secrets to confer about

[Exit THURIO

Now tell me *Proteus* what's your will with me?

Pro My gracious lord that which I would discover

The law of friendship bids me to conceal

But when I call to mind your gracious favours

Done to me undeserving as I am

My duty pricks me on to utter that

Which else no worldly good should draw from me 9

Know worthy prince Sir *Valentine* my friend

This night intends to steal away your daughter

Myself am once made privy to the plot

I know you have determined to bestow her

On *Thurio* whom your gentle daughter hates

And should she thus be stol'n away from you

It would be much vexation to your age,

Thus for my duty's sake I rather chose

To cross my friend in his intended drift

Than by concealing it heap on your head

A pack of sorrows which would press you down

Being unprevailed to your timeless grave 21

Duke *Proteus* I thank thee for thine honest

care

Which to requite command me while I live

This love of theirs myself have often seen

Haply when they have judg'd me fast asleep

And oftentimes have purposed to forbid

Sir *Valentine* her company and my court

But fearing lest my jealous aim might err

And so unworthily disgrace the man

A rashness that I ever yet have shunn'd 30

I gave him gentle looks thereby to find

That which thyself hast now disclosed to me

And that thou mayst perceive my fear of this

knowing that tender youth is soon suggested

I nightly lodge her in an upper tower

The key whereof my self have ever kept

And thence she cannot be convey'd away

Pro know noble lord they have devised a

mean

How her chamber window will ascend

And with a corded ladder fetch her down 40

For which the youthful lover now is gone

And this way comes he with it presently

Where if it please you you may intercept him

But good my Lord do it so cunningly

That my discovery be not aimed at

For love of you not hate unto my friend

Hath made me publisher of this pretence

Duke Upon mine honour he shall never know

That I had any light from thee of this

Pro Adieu my lord Sir *Valentine* is coming 50

[Exit

*Enter VALENTINE**Duke* Sir Valentine, whither away so fast?*Val* Please it your Grace, there is a messenger That strays to bear my letters to my friends And I am going to deliver them*Duke* Be they of much import?*Val* The tenour of them doth but signify My health and happy being at your court*Duke* Nay, then, no matter, stay with me awhile,I am to break with thee of some affairs That touch me near wherein thou must be secret 'Tis not unknown to thee that I have sought
61 To match my friend Sir Thurio to my daughter*Val* I know it well, my Lord, and sure the match

Were rich and honourable, besides the gentleman

Is full of virtue bounty worth, and qualities Beseeming such a wife as your fair daughter Cannot your Grace win her to fancy him?

Duke No, trust me, she is peevish sullen, frowardProud, disobedient, stubborn, lacking duty, Neither regarding that she is my child
70 Nor fearing me as if I were her father, And may I say to thee this pride of hers Upon advice hath drawn my love from her And where I thought the remnant of mine age Should have been cherish'd by her child like duty, I now am full resolved to take a wife

And turn her out to who will take her in Then let her beauty be her wedding dower For me and my possessions she esteems not

Val What would your Grace have me to do in this?
80*Duke* There is a lady in Verona here Whom I affect but she is nice and coy And nought esteems my aged eloquence Now therefore would I have thee to my tutor— For long ago I have forgot to court Besides the fashion of the time is changed— How and which way I may bestow myself To be regarded in her sun bright eye*Val* Win her with gifts if she respect not wordsDumb jewels often in their silent kind
90 More than quick words do move a woman's mind*Duke* But she did scorn a present that I sent her*Val* A woman sometimes scorns what best contents her

Send her another never give her o'er For scorn at first makes after love the more If she do frown 'tis not in hate of you But rather to beget more love in you

If she do chide 'tis not to have you gone, For why, the fools are mad if left alone Take no repulse whatever she doth say,
100 For "get you gone" she doth not mean "away!" Flatter and praise commend extol their graces, Though never so black, say they have angels faces

That man that hath a tongue, I say, is no man, If with his tongue he cannot win a woman

Duke But she I mean is promised by her friends Unto a youthful gentleman of worth, And kept severely from resort of menThat no man hath access by day to her
Val Why then, I would resort to her by night*Duke* Ay but the doors be lock'd and keys kept safe,
111

That no man hath recourse to her by night

Val What lets but one may enter at her window?*Duke* Her chamber is aloft far from the ground And built so shelving that one cannot climb it Without apparent hazard of his life*Val* Why then a ladder quaintly made of cordsTo cast up, with a pair of anchoring hooks, Would serve to scale another Hero's tower,
120 So bold Leander would adventure it*Duke* Now, as thou art a gentleman of blood Advise me where I may have such a ladder*Val* When would you use it? pray sir tell me that*Duke* This very night, for Love is like a child, That longs for every thing that he can come by
Val By seven o'clock I'll get you such a ladder*Duke* But hark thee I will go to her alone How shall I best convey the ladder thither?*Val* It will be light, my lord that you may bear itUnder a cloak that is of any length
130*Duke* A cloak as long as thine will serve the turn?*Val* Ay, my good lord*Duke* Then let me see thy cloak I'll get me one of such another length*Val* Why any cloak will serve the turn my lord*Duke* How shall I fashion me to wear a cloak?
I pray thee let me feel thy cloak upon me

What letter is this same? What's here? "To Silvia"

And here an engine fit for my proceeding I'll be so bold to break the seal for once [Reads] My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia nightly And slaves they are to me that send them flying
141

O could their master come and go as lightly

Himself would lodge where senseless they
are lying.
My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest them
While I their king that hither them importune
Do curse the grace that with such grace hath
blessed them
Because my self do want my servants' fortune
I curse my self for they are sent by me
That they should harbour where their lord would
be
What's here?

150

Silvia this night I will enfranchise thee
Tis so and here's the ladder for the purpose
Why Phaethon—for thou art Merops' son—
Wilt thou aspire to guide the heavenly car
And with thy daring folly burn the world?
Wilt thou reach stars because they shine on thee?
Go base intruder! overweening slave!
Bestow thy fawning smiles on equal mates
Art thou my patience more than thy desert
Is privilege for thy departure hence
Thank me for this more than for all the favours
Which all too much I have bestowed on thee
But if thou linger in my territories
Longer than swiftest expedition
Will give thee time to leave our royal court
By heaven! my wrath shall far exceed the love
I ever bore my daughter or thyself
Be gone! I will not hear thy vain excuse
But as thou lovest thy life make speed from
hence

[Exit

Val And why not death rather than living
torment?
To die is to be banished from my self
And Silvia is my self banished from her
Is self from self a deadly banishment?
What light is light if Silvia be not seen?
What joy is joy if Silvia be not by?
Unless it be to think that she is by
And feed upon the shadow of perfection
Except I be by Silvia in the night
There is no music in the nightingale
Unless I look on Silvia in the day
There is no day for me to look upon
She is my essence and I leave to be
If I be not by her fair influence
Foster'd illumined cherish'd kept alive
I fly not death to fly his deadly doom
Tarry I here I but attend on death
But fly I hence I fly away from life

180

Enter PROTEUS and LAUNCE

Pro Run boy run run and seek him out

Launce Soho soho!

Pro What seest thou?

Launce Him we go to find there's not a hair
on's head but 'tis a Valentine

Pro Valentine?

Val No

Pro Who then? his spirit?

Val Neither

Pro What then?

Val Nothing

Launce Can nothing speak? Master shall I
strike?

Pro Who wouldst thou strike?

200

Launce Nothing

Pro Villain forbear

Launce Why me? I'll strike nothing I pray
you—

Pro Sirrah I say forbear Friend Valentine a
word

Val My ears are stopp'd and cannot hear good
news

So much of bad already hath possess'd them

Pro Then in dumb silence will I bury mine,

For they are harsh untunable and bad

Val Is Silvia dead?

Pro No Valentine

210

Val No Valentine indeed for sacred Silvia

Hath she forsworn me?

Pro No Valentine

Val No Valentine if Silvia have forsworn me.

What is your news?

Launce Sir there is a proclamation that you are
banished

Pro That thou art banished—O that's the
news!—

170

From hence from Silvia and from me thy friend

Val O I have fed upon this woe already

And now excess of it will make me surfeit

220

Doth Silvia know that I am banished?

Pro Ay ay and she hath offer'd to the doom—

Which unreversed stands in effectual force—

A sea of melting pearl which some call tears

Those at her father's churlish feet she tender'd

With them upon her knees her humble self

Wringing her hands whose whiteness so became
them

As if but now they waxed pale for woe

But neither bended knees pure hands held up

Sad as his deep groans nor silver shedding tears

Could penetrate her uncompassionate sire

230

But Valentine if he be taken must die

Besides her intercession chafed him so

When she for thy repeal was suppliant

That to close prison he commanded her

With many bitter threats of bidding there

Val No more unless the next word that thou
speak

190

Have some malignant power upon my life

If so I pray thee breathe it in mine ear,
As ending anthem of my endless dolour 240
Pro Cease to lament for that thou canst not help,

And study help for that which thou lament'st
Time is the nurse and breeder of all good
Here if thou stay, thou canst not see thy love,
Besides thy staying will abridge thy life
Hope is a lover's staff, walk hence with that
And manage it against despairing thoughts
Thy letters may be here though thou art hence,
Which being writ to me shall be deliver'd
Even in the milk-white bosom of thy love 250
The time now serves not to expostulate
Come I'll convey thee through the city-gate,
And ere I part with thee confer at large
Of all that may concern thy love affairs
As thou lovest Silvia though not for thyself,
Regard thy danger, and along with me!

Val I pray thee Launce, an if thou seest my boy,
Bid him make haste and meet me at the North-gate

Pro Go, sirrah, find him out Come, Valentine
Val O my dear Silvia! Hapless Valentine! 260
[*Exeunt VALENTINE and PROTEUS*]

Launce I am but a fool, look you, and yet I have the wit to think my master is a kind of a knave but that's all one if he be but one knave He lives not now that knows me to be in love yet I am in love but a team of horse shall not pluck that from me nor who tis I love and yet tis a woman but what woman I will not tell myself and yet tis a milkmaid yet 'tis not a maid, for she hath had gossips yet 'tis a maid for she is her master's maid and serves for wages She hath more qualities than a water-spaniel which is much in a bare Christian [*Pulling out a paper*] Here is the cate log of her condition '*Imprimis* She can fetch and carry' Why a horse can do no more nay, a horse cannot fetch but only carry therefore is she better than a jade '*Item* She can milk', look you, a sweet virtue in a maid with clean hands

Enter SPEED

Speed How now Signior Launce! what news with your mastership? 280

Launce With my master's ship? why, it is at sea

Speed Well, your old vice still mistake the word What news then in your paper?

Launce The blackest news that ever thou heardest

Speed Why, man how black?

Launce Why as black as ink

Speed Let me read them

Launce Fie on thee jolt head! thou canst not read 290

Speed Thou liest, I can

Launce I will try thee Tell me this who begot thee?

Speed Marry the son of my grandfather

Launce O illiterate loiterer! it was the son of thy grandmother this proves that thou canst not read

Speed Come fool, come try me in thy paper

Launce There, and Saint Nicholas be thy speed! 300

Speed [*Reads*] "*Imprimis* She can milk "

Launce Ay, that she can

Speed *Item* She brews good ale "

Launce And thereof comes the proverb

"Blessing of your heart you brew good ale "

Speed *Item* She can sew "

Launce That's as much as to say, "Can she so?"

Speed "*Item* She can knit " 310

Launce What need a man care for a stock with a wench, when she can knit him a stock?

Speed *Item* She can wash and scour

Launce A special virtue for then she need not be washed and scoured

Speed "*Item* She can spin "

Launce Then may I set the world on wheels, when she can spin for her living 319

Speed *Item* she hath many nameless virtues

Launce That's as much as to say, bastard virtues that, indeed, know not their fathers and therefore have no names

Speed Here follow her vices

Launce Close at the heels of her virtues

Speed *Item* She is not to be kissed fasting in respect of her breath "

Launce Well, that fault may be mended with a breakfast Read on

Speed *Item* She hath a sweet mouth 330

Launce That makes amends for her sour breath

Speed *Item* She doth talk in her sleep "

Launce It is no matter for that so she sleep not in her talk

Speed *Item* She is slow in words "

Launce O villain that set this down among her vices! To be slow in words is a woman's only virtue I pray thee, out with it and place it for her chief virtue 340

Speed "*Item* she is proud "

Launce Out with that too it was Eve's legacy, and cannot be taken from her

Speed "*Item* She hath no teeth

Launce I care not for that neither, because I love crusts

Speed *Item* She is curst

Launce Well the best she hath no teeth to bite 350

Speed Item She will often praise her liquor

Launce If her liquor be good she shall if she will not I will for good things should be praised

Speed Item She is too liberal

Launce Of her tongue she cannot for that's writ down she is slow of her purse she shall not for that I'll keep shut now of another thing she may and that cannot I help Well proceed

Speed Item She hath more hair than wit and more faults than hairs and more wealth than faults

Launce Stop there I'll have her she was mine and not mine, twice or thrice in that last article Rehearse that once more

Speed Item She hath more hair than wit —

Launce More hair than wit? It may be I'll prove it The cover of the salt hides the salt and therefore it is more than the salt the hair that covers the wit is more than the wit for the greater hides the less What's next?

Speed And more faults than hairs —

Launce That's monstrous O that that were out!

Speed And more wealth than faults

Launce Why that word makes the faults gracious Well I'll have her and if it be a match as nothing is impossible—

Speed What then? 380

Launce Why then will I tell thee—that thy master stays for thee at the North-gate

Speed For me?

Launce For thee? ay who art thou? he hath stayed for a better man than thee

Speed And must I go to him?

Launce Thou must run to him for thou hast stayed so long that going will scarce serve the turn

Speed Why didst not tell me sooner? pox of your love letters! [Exit 391

Launce Now will he be swinged for reading my letter an unmannerly slave that will thrust himself into secrets! I'll after to rejoice in the boy's correction [Exit

SCENE II *The same the Duke's palace*

Enter DUKE and THURIO

Duke Sir Thurio fear not but that she will love you

Now Valentine is banish'd from her sight

Thu Since his exile she hath despised me most

Forsworn my company and rail'd at me

That I am desperate of obtaining her

Duke This weak impress of love is as a figure Trenched in ice which with an hour's heat

Dissolves to water and doth lose his form
A little time will melt her frozen thoughts
And worthless Valentine shall be forgot 40

Enter PROTEUS

How now Sir Proteus? Is your countryman According to our proclamation gone?

Pro Gone my good lord

Duke My daughter takes his going grievously

Pro A little time my lord will kill that grief

Duke So I believe but Thurio thinks not so
Proteus the good conceit I hold of thee—
For thou hast shown some sign of good desert—
Makes me the better to confer with thee

Pro Longer than I prove loyal to your grace

Let me not live to look upon your Grace 41

Duke Thou know'st how willingly I would effect

The match between Sir Thurio and my daughter

Pro I do my lord

Duke And also I think thou art not ignorant

How she opposes her against my will

Pro She did my lord when Valentine was here

Duke Ay and perversely she perseveres so

What might we do to make the girl forget

The love of Valentine and love Sir Thurio? 42

Pro The best way is to slander Valentine

With falsehood cowardice, and poor descent

Three things that women highly hold in hate

Duke Ay but she'll think that it is spoke in

hate

Pro Ay if his enemy deliver it

Therefore it must with circumstance be spoken

By one whom she esteemeth as his friend

Duke Then you must undertake to slander him

Pro And that my lord I shall be loath to do

'Tis an ill office for a gentleman 43

Especially against his very friend

Duke Where your good word cannot advantage him

Your slander never can endamage him

Therefore the office is indifferent

Being entreated to it by your friend

Pro You have prevail'd my lord if I can do it

By aught that I can speak in his dispraise

She shall not long continue love to him

But say thus weed her love from Valentine

It follows not that she will love Sir Thurio 44

Thu Therefore as you unwind her love from him

Lest it should ravel and be good to none

You must provide to bottom it on me

Which must be done by praising me as much

As you in worth dispraise Sir Valentine

Duke And Proteus we dare trust you in this kind

Because we l now on Valentine's report,
 You are already Love's firm votary
 And cannot soon revolt and change your mind
 Upon this warrant shall you have access 60
 Where you with Silvia may confer at large,
 For she is lumpish, heavy, melancholy,
 And, for your friend's sake, will be glad of
 you,
 Where you may temper her by your persuasion
 To hate young Valentine and love my friend
Pro As much as I can do, I will effect
 But you, Sir Thurio, are not sharp enough,
 You must lay lime to tangle her desires
 By wailful sonnets, whose composed rhymes
 Should be full fraught with serviceable vows 70

Duke Ay,
 Much is the force of heaven-bred poesy
Pro Say that upon the altar of her beauty
 You sacrifice your tears, your sighs, your heart
 Write till your ink be dry, and with your tears
 Moist it again, and frame some feeling line
 That may discover such integrity
 For Orpheus' lute was strung with poets' sinews
 Whose golden touch could soften steel and stones,
 Make tigers tame and huge Leviathans 80

Forsake unsounded deeps to dance on sands
 After your dire-lamenting elegies
 Visit by night your lady's chamber-window
 With some sweet concert, to their instruments
 Tune a deploring dump the night's dead silence
 Will well become such sweet complaining
 grievance

This or else nothing will inherit her
Duke This discipline shows thou hast been in
 love

Thur And thy advice this night I'll put in
 practice
 Therefore, sweet Proteus, my direction-giver,
 Let us into the city presently 91
 To sort some gentlemen well skilled in music
 I have a sonnet that will serve the turn
 To give the onset to thy good advice

Duke About it, gentlemen!
Pro We'll wait upon your Grace till after
 supper,

And afterward determine our proceedings
Duke Even now about it! I will pardon you
 [Exeunt]

ACT IV

SCENE I *The frontiers of Mantua, a forest**Enter certain OUTLAWS*

1st Out Fellows, stand fast! I see a passer
2nd Out If there be ten shrink not but down
 with 'em

Enter VALENTINE and SPEED

3rd Out Stand, sir, and throw us that you have
 about ye

If not we'll make you sit and rifle you
Speed Sir, we are undone, these are the villains
 That all the travellers do fear so much

Val My friends—*1st Out* That's not so, sir, we are your enemies*2nd Out* Peace! we'll hear him*3rd Out* Ay, by my beard, will we for he's a
 proper man 10*Val* Then know that I have little wealth to
 lose,

A man I am cross'd with adversity,
 My riches are these poor habiliments,
 Of which if you should here disfigure me,
 You take the sum and substance that I have

2nd Out Whither travel you?*Val* To Verona*1st Out* Whence came you?*Val* From Milan*3rd Out* Have you long sojourned there?*Val* Some sixteen months and longer might
 have stay'd 21

If crooked fortune had not thwarted me

1st Out What were you banish'd thence?*Val* I was*2nd Out* For what offence?*Val* For that which now torments me to re-
 hearse

I kill'd a man whose death I much repent,
 But yet I slew him manfully in fight
 Without false vantage or base treachery

1st Out Why neither repent it if it were done so
 But were you banish'd for so small a fault? 31

Val I was and held me glad of such a doom*2nd Out* Have you the tongues?*Val* My youthful travel therein made me
 happy

Or else I often had been miserable

3rd Out By the bare scalp of Robin Hood's fat
 friar

This fellow were a king for our wild faction!

1st Out We'll have him, Sirs, a word

Speed Master, be one of them, it's an honour-
 able kind of thievery 40

Val Peace, villain!*2nd Out* Tell us this, have you any thing to
 take to?*Val* Nothing but my fortune*3rd Out* Know, then, that some of us are
 gentlemen

Such as the fury of ungovern'd youth
 Thrust from the company of awful men
 Myself was from Verona banish'd

For practising to steal away a lady
 An heir and near allied unto the Duke
2nd Out And I from Mantua for a gentleman 50

Who in my mood I stabb'd unto the heart
1st Out And I for such like petty crimes a these

But the purpose—for we cite our faults
 That they may hold excused our lawless lives
 And partly seeing you are beatified
 With goodly shape and by your own report
 A linguist and a man of such perfection
 As we do in our quality much want—
and Out Indeed because you are a banish'd man

Therefore above the rest we parley to you 60
 Are you content to be our general?
 To make a virtue of necessity
 And live as we do in this wilderness?

3rd Out What sayst thou? wilt thou be of our consort?

Say ay and be the captain of us all
 We'll do thee homage and be ruled by thee
 Love thee as our commander and our king
1st Out But if thou scorn our courtesy thou diest

2nd Out Thou shalt not live to brag what we have offer'd

I al I take your offer and will live with you,
 Provided that you do no outrages 71
 On silly women or poor passengers

3rd Out No we detest such vile base practices

Come go with us we'll bring thee to our crews
 And show thee all the treasure we have got
 Which with ourselves all rest at thy dispose
 [Exeunt]

SCENE II *Milan. Outside the Duke's palace and Silvia's chamber*

Enter PROTEUS

Pro Already have I been false to Valentine
 And now I must be as unjust to Thurio
 Under the colour of commending him
 I have access my own love to prefer
 But Silvia is too fair too true too holy
 To be corrupted with my worthless gift
 When I protest true loyalty to her
 She tells me with my falsehood to my friend
 When to her beauty I commend my vows
 She bids me think how I have been forsworn 10
 In breaking faith with Julia whom I loved
 And notwithstanding all her sudden quips
 The least whereof would quell a lover's hope
 Yet pamel like the more she spurns my love
 The more it grows and fawneth on her still

But here comes Thurio now must we to her window

And give some evening music to her ear

Enter THURIO and Musicians

Thu How now Sir Proteus are you crept before us?

Pro Ay gentle Thurio for you know that love

Will creep in service where it cannot go 0

Thu Ay but I hope sir that you love not here

Pro Sir but I do or else I would be hence

Thu Who? Silvia?

Pro Ay Silvia for your sake

Thu I thank you for your own Now gentle men

Let's tone and to it lustily awhile

Enter at a distance HOSS and JULIA in boy's clothes

Host Now my young guest methinks you're allycholly I pray you why is it?

Jul Marry mine host because I cannot be merry 29

Host Come we'll have you merry I'll bring you where you shall hear music and see the gentlemen that you asked for

Jul But shall I hear him speak?

Host Ay that you shall

Jul That will be music.

Music plays

Host Hark hark!

Jul Is he among these?

Host Ay but peace! let's hear 'em

SONG

Who is Silvia? what is she

That all our swains commend her? 40

Holy fair and wise is she

The heaven such grace did lend her
 That she might admired be

Is she kind as she is fair?

For beauty lov'd with kindness

Love doth to her eyes repair

To help him off his blindness

And being help'd inhabit there

Then to Silvia let us sing

That Silvia is excelling

She excels each mortal

Upon the dull earth

To her let us garland 50

Host How now! are you before? ou

you likes

not

Jul You

Host W

Jul He plays false, father
Host How? out of tune on the strings? 60
Jul Not so, but yet so false that he grieves my
 very heart strings
Host You have a quick ear
Jul Ay, I would I were deaf, it makes me
 have a slow heart
Host I perceive you delight not in music
Jul Not a whit, when it jars so
Host Hark, what fine change is in the music!
Jul Ay, that change is the spite
Host You would have them always play but
 one thing? 71
Jul I would always have one play but one
 thing

But host doth this Sir Proteus that we talk on
 Often resort unto this gentlewoman?

Host I tell you what Launce, his man told me
 he loved her out of all nick.

Jul Where is Launce?

Host Gone to seek his dog which to-morrow
 by his master's command, he must carry for a
 present to his lady 80

Jul Peace! stand aside the company parts
Pro Sir Thurio, fear not you I will so plead
 That you shall say my cunning drift excels

Thur Where meet we?

Pro At Saint Gregory's well
Thur Farewell

[*Exeunt THURIO and MUSICIANS*]

Enter SILVIA above

Pro Madam good even to your ladyship
Sil I thank you for your music, gentlemen
 Who is that that spake?

Pro One, lady if you knew his pure heart's
 truth

You would quickly learn to know him by his
 voice

Sil Sir Proteus as I take it 90

Pro Sir Proteus gentle lady, and your servant

Sil What's your will?

Pro That I may compass yours

Sil You have your wish my will is even thus

That presently you hue you home to bed

Thou subtle, perjured, false disloyal man!

Thinkst thou I am so shallow, so conceitless,

To be seduced by thy flattery

That hast deceived so many with thy vows?

Return return, and make thy love amends 100

For me by this pale queen of night I swear

I am so far from granting thy request

That I despise thee for thy wrongful suit,

And by and by intend to chide myself

Even for this time I spend in talking to thee

Pro I grant, sweet love that I did love a lady,

But she is dead

Jul [*Aside*] Twere false, if I should speak it,

For I am sure she is not buried

Sil Say that she be yet Valentine thy friend

Survives to whom thy self art witness 110

I am betrothed and art thou not ashamed

To wrong him with thy importunacy?

Pro I likewise hear that Valentine is dead

Sil And so suppose am I for in his grave

Assure thyself my love is buried

Pro Sweet lady let me rake it from the earth

Sil Go to thy lady's grave and call hers thence,

Or at the least in hers sepulchre thine

Jul [*Aside*] He heard not that

Pro Madam if your heart be so obdurate

Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love 121

The picture that is hanging in your chamber

To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep

For since the substance of your perfect self

Is else devoted I am but a shadow

And to your shadow will I make true love

Jul [*Aside*] If twere a substance you would,

sure deceive it

And make it but a shadow as I am

Sil I am very loath to be your idol sir

But since your falsehood shall become you well

To worship shadows and adore false shapes 131

Send to me in the morning and I'll send it

And so good rest

Pro As wretches have o'ernight

That wait for execution in the morn

[*Exeunt PROTEUS and SILVIA severally*]

Jul Host will you go?

Host By my halidom I was fast asleep

Jul Pray you where lies Sir Proteus?

Host Marry at my house Trust me I think

is almost day

Jul Not so, but it hath been the longest night

That ever I watch'd and the most heaviest 141

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III *The same*

Enter EGLAMOUR

Egl This is the hour that Madam Silvia

Entreated me to call and know her mind

There's some great matter she'll employ me in

Madam madam!

Enter SILVIA above

Sil Who calls

Egl Your servant and your friend,

One that attends your ladyship's command

Sil Sir Eglamour, a thousand times good mor-

row

Egl As many worthy lady to yourself

According to your ladyship's impose,

I am thus early come to know what service
 It is your pleasure to command me in 10
Sil O Eglamour thou art a gentleman—
 Think not I flatter for I swear I do not—
 Valiant wise remorseful well accomplish'd
 Thou art not ignorant what dear good will
 I bear unto the banish'd Valentine
 Nor how my father would enforce me marry
 Vain Thurio whom my very soul abhors
 Thyself hast loved and I have heard thee say
 No grief did ever come so near thy heart
 As when thy lady and thy true love died 20
 Upon whose grave thou vow'dst pure chastity
Sir Eglamour I would to Valentine
 To Mantua where I hear he makes abode
 And for the ways are dangerous to pass
 I do desire thy worthy company
 Upon whose faith and honour I repose
 Urge not my father's anger Eglamour
 But think upon my grief a lady's grief
 And on the justice of my flying hence
 To keep me from a most unholy match 30
 Which heaven and fortune still rewards with
 plagues
 I do desire thee even from a heart
 As full of sorrows as the sea of sands
 To bear me company and go with me
 If not to hide what I have said to thee
 That I may venture to depart alone
Egl Madam I pity much your grievances
 Which since I know they virtuously are placed
 I give consent to go along with you
 Reckling as little what becometh me 40
 As much I wish all good beforneth you
 When will you go?

Sil This evening coming
Egl Where shall I meet you?
Sil At Friar Patrick's cell
 Where I intend holy confession
Egl I will not fail your ladyship Good morrow
 your gentle lady
Sil Good morrow kind Sir Eglamour

[Exeunt severally]

SCENE IV *The same*

Enter LAUNCE with his Dog

Launce When a man's servant shall play the
 cur with him look you it goes hard one that I
 brought up of a puppy one that I saved from
 drowning when three or four of his blind brother
 and sisters went to it I have taught him even
 as one would say precisely thus I would teach a
 dog I was sent to deliver him as a present to
 Mistress Silvia from my master and I came no
 sooner into the dining-chamber but he steps me
 to her trencher and steals her capon's leg O

tis a foul thing when a cur cannot keep himself
 in all companies I would have one should
 say one that takes upon him to be a dog indeed,
 to be as were a dog at all things If I had
 not had more wit than he to take a fault upon
 me that he did I think verily he had been hang'd
 for sure as I live he had suffered for you
 shall judge He thrusts me himself into the com-
 pany of three or four gentlemanlike dogs under
 the Duke's table he had not been there—bless
 the mark!—a pissing while but all the chamber
 smelt him Out with the dog! says one What
 cur is that? says another Whip him out says
 the third Hang him up says the Duke I
 having been acquainted with the smell before,
 knew it was Crab and goes me to the fellow that
 whips the dogs Friend quoth I you mean to
 whip the dog? Ay marry do I quoth he
 You do him the more wrong quoth I 'twas I
 did the thing you wot of He makes me no
 more ado but whips me out of the chamber
 How many masters would do this for his service?
 Nay I'll be sworn I have sat in the stocks for
 puddings he hath stolen otherwise he had been
 executed I have stood on the pillory for geese
 he hath killed otherwise he had suffered for
 Thou thinkest not of this now Nay I remember
 the trick you served me when I took my leave of
 Madam Silvia did not I bid thee still mark me
 and do as I do? when didst thou see me heave up
 my leg and make water against a gentleman's
 farthingale? didst thou ever see me do such a
 trick?

Enter PROTEUS and JULIA

Pro Sebastian is thy name? I like thee well
 and will employ thee in some service presently
Jul In what you please I'll do what I can
Pro I hope thou wilt *[To LAUNCE]* How now
 you whoreson peasant?

Where have you been these two days loitering?
Launce Marry sir I carried Mistress Silvia
 the dog you bade me 50

Pro And what says she to my little jewel?
Launce Marry she says your dog was a cur
 and tells you curish thanks is good enough for
 such a present

Pro But she received my dog?
Launce No indeed did she not here have I
 brought him back again

Pro What didst thou offer her this from me?
Launce Ay sir the other squirrel was stolen
 from me by the hangman boys in the market
 place and then I offered her mine own who is a
 dog as big as ten of yours and therefore the gift
 the greater

Pro Go get thee hence and find my dog again
Or ne'er return again into my sight
Away, I say! stay'st thou to vex me here?

[*Exit LAUNCE*]

A slave, that still an end turns me to shame!
Sebastian, I have entertained thee,
Partly that I have need of such a youth
That can with some discretion do my business, 70
For 'tis no trusting to yond foolish lout
But chiefly for thy face and thy behaviour,
Which, if my augury deceive me not,
Witness good bringing up fortune and truth
Therefore know thou, for this I entertain thee
Go presently and take this ring with thee,
Deliver it to Madam Silvia
She loved me well deliver d it to me
Jul It seems you loved not her, to leave her
token

She is dead belike?

Pro Not so, I think she lives 80

Jul Alas!

Pro Why dost thou cry "alas"?

Jul I cannot choose

But pity her

Pro Wherefore shouldst thou pity her?

Jul Because methinks that she loved you as
well

As you do love your lady Silvia
She dreams on him that has forgot her love
You dote on her that cares not for your love

'Tis pity love should be so contrary

And thinning on it makes me cry 'alas!'

Pro Well give her that ring and therewithal 90

This letter That's her chamber Tell my lady

I claim the promise for her heavenly picture

Your message done hie home unto my chamber,

Where thou shalt find me, sad and solitary [Exit

Jul How many women would do such a mes-

sage?

Alas poor Proteus! thou hast entertain'd

A fox to be the shepherd of thy lambs

Alas poor fool! why do I pity him

That with his very heart despiseth me?

Because he loves her, he despiseth me 100

Because I love him I must pity him

This ring I gave him when he parted from me

To bind him to remember my good will

And now am I unhappy messenger

To plead for that which I would not obtain

To carry that which I would have refused

To praise his faith which I would have dispraised

I am my master's true confirmed love

But cannot be true servant to my master

Unless I prove false traitor to myself 110

Yet will I woo for him but yet so coldly

As, heaven it knows, I would not have him speed

Enter SILVIA, attended

Gentlewoman, good day! I pray you, be my mean

To bring me where to speak with Madam Silvia

Sil What would you with her, if that I be she?

Jul If you be she, I do entreat your patience

To hear me speak the message I am sent on

Sil From whom?

Jul From my master, Sir Proteus madam

Sil O he sends you for a picture 120

Jul Ay, madam

Sil Ursula, bring my picture there

Go give your master this tell him from me

One Julia that his changing thoughts forget,

Would better fit his chamber than this shadow

Jul Madam please you peruse this letter —

Pardon me, madam, I have unadvised

Deliver'd you a paper that I should not

This is the letter to your ladyship

Sil I pray thee let me look on that again 130

Jul It may not be, good madam pardon me

Sil There hold!

I will not lool upon your master's lines

I know they are stuff'd with protestations

And full of new-found oaths, which he will break

As easily as I do tear his paper

Jul Madam he sends your ladyship this ring

Sil The more shame for him that he sends it
me,

For I have heard him say a thousand times

His Julia gave it him at his departure 140

Though his false finger have profaned the ring,

Mine shall not do his Julia so much wrong

Jul She thanks you

Sil What say'st thou?

Jul I thank you madam that you tender her

Poor gentlewoman! my master wrongs her much

Sil Dost thou know her?

Jul Almost as well as I do know myself

To think upon her woes I do protest

That I have wept a hundred several times 150

Sil Belike she thinks that Proteus hath for-

sok her

Jul I think she doth and that's her cause of

sorrow

Sil Is she not passing fair?

Jul She hath been fairer madam than she is

When she did think my master loved her well,

She in my judgment was as fair as you

But since she did neglect her looking glass

And threw her sun expelling mask away,

The air hath star'd the roses in her cheeks

And pinch'd the lily tincture of her face, 160

That now she is become as black as I

Sil How tall was she?

Jul About my stature, for at Pentecost,

When all our pageants of delight were play'd
 Our youth got me to play the woman's part
 And I was trimm'd in Madam Julia's gown
 Which served me as fit by all men's judgements
 As if the garment had been made for me
 Therefore I know she is about my height
 And at that time I made her weep a good 170
 For I did play a lamentable part
 Madam 'twas Ariadne passioning
 For Theseus perjury and unjust flight
 Which I so lively acted with my tears
 That my poor mistress moved therewithal
 Wept bitterly and would I might be dead
 If I in thought felt not her very sorrow!
Sil She is beholding to thee gentle youth
 Alas poor lady desolate and left!
 I weep myself to think upon thy words 180
 Ere youth there is my purse I give thee this
 For thy sweet mistress sake because thou lovest
 her

Farewell [Exit SILVIA with attendants]
Jul And she shall thank you for it if e'er you
 know her

A virtuous gentlewoman mild and beautiful!
 I hope my master's suit will be but cold
 Since she respects my mistress love so much
 Alas how love can trifle with itself!
 Here is her picture let me see I think
 If I had such a tire this face of mine 190
 Were full as lovely as is this of hers
 And yet the painter flatter'd her a little,
 Unless I flatter with myself too much
 Her hair is auburn mine is perfect yellow
 If that be all the difference in his love
 I'll get me such a colour'd periwig
 Her eyes are grey as glass and so are mine
 Ay but her forehead's low and mine's as high
 What should it be that he respects in her
 But I can make respect in myself 200
 If this fond Love were not a blinded god?
 Come shadow come and take this shadow up
 For tis thy rival O thou senseless form
 Thou shalt be worshipp'd kiss'd loved and
 adored!

And were there sense in his idolatry
 My substance should be statue in thy stead
 I'll use thee kindly for thy mistress sake
 That used me so or else by Jove I vow
 I should have scratch'd out your unseeing eyes
 To make my master out of love with thee! [Exit

And now it is about the very hour
 That Silvia at Friar Patrick's cell should meet
 me
 She will not fail for lovers break not hours
 Unless it be to come before their time
 So much they spur their expedition
 See where she comes

Enter SILVIA

Lady a happy evening!
Sil Amen amen! Go on good Eglamour
 Out at the postern by the abbey wall
 I fear I am attended by some spies 10
Egl Fear not the forest is not three leagues
 off
 If we recover that we are sure enough [Exit

SCENE II The same the Duke's palace

Enter THURIO PROTEUS and JULIA

Thu Sir Proteus what says Silvia to my suit?
Pro O sir I find her milder than she was
 And yet she takes exceptions at your person
Thu What that my leg is too long?
Pro No that it is too little
Thu I'll wear a boot to make it somewhat
 rounder
Jul [Aside] But love will not be spurred to
 what it loathes
Thu What says she to my face?
Pro She says it is a fair one
Thu Nay then, the wanton lies my face is
 black 10
Pro But pearls are fair and the old saying is
 Black men are pearls in beautiful ladies eyes
Jul [Aside] 'Tis true such pearls as put out
 ladies eyes
 For I had rather wink than look on them
Thu How likes she my discourse?
Pro Ill when you talk of war
Thu But well when I discourse of love and
 peace?
Jul [Aside] But better indeed when you hold
 your peace
Thu What says she to my valour?
Pro O sir she makes no doubt of that 20
Jul [Aside] She needs not when she knows it
 cowardice
Thu What says she to my birth?
Pro That you are well derived
Jul [Aside] True from a gentleman to a fool
Thu Considers she my possessions?
Pro O ay and pities them
Thu Wherefore?
Jul [Aside] That such an ass should owe them
Pro That they are out by lease
Jul Here comes the Duke 30

ACT V

SCENE I Milan an abbey

Enter EGLAMOUR

Egl The sun begins to gild the western sky

Enter DUKE

Duke How now, Sir Proteus! how now, Thurio!
Which of you saw Sir Eglamour of late?

Thu Not I

Pro Nor I

Duke Saw you my daughter?

Pro Neither

Duke Why then,
She s fled unto that peasant Valentine,
And Eglamour is in her company
Tis true for Friar Laurence met them both,
As he in penance wander d through the forest
Him he knew well and guess d that it was she
But being mask d he was not sure of it 40
Besides she did intend confession
At Patrick s cell this even and there she was
not,

These likelihoods confirm her flight from hence
Therefore I pray you stand not to discourse
But mount you presently and meet with me
Upon the rising of the mountain foot
That leads toward Mantua whither they are fled
Dispatch sweet gentlemen and follow me [*Exit*

Thu Why this it is to be a peevish girl
That flies her fortune when it follows her 50
I'll after more to be revenged on Eglamour
Than for the love of reckless Silvia [*Exit*

Pro And I will follow more for Silvia's love
Than hate of Eglamour that goes with her [*Exit*

Jul And I will follow more to cross that love
Than hate for Silvia that is gone for love [*Exit*

SCENE III *The frontiers of Mantua
the forest*

Enter OUTLAWS with SILVIA

1st Out Come come

Be patient we must bring you to our captain
Sil A thousand more mischances than this one
Have learn d me how to brook this patiently

2nd Out Come bring her away

1st Out Where is the gentleman that was with
her?

3rd Out Being nimble-footed he hath outrun
us

But Moyses and Valerius follow him
Go thou with her to the west end of the wood
There is our captain we'll follow him that s
fled 10

The thicker is beset he cannot scape

1st Out Come, I must bring you to our cap-
tain s cave

Fear not he bears an honourable mind,

And will not use a woman lawlessly

Sil O Valentine this I endure for thee!

[*Exeunt*

SCENE IV *Another part of the forest*

Enter VALENTINE

Val How use doth breed a habit in a man!
This shadowy desert unfrequented woods,
I better brool than flourishing peopled towns
Here can I sit alone unseen of any
And to the nightingale s complaining notes
Tune my distresses and record my woes
O thou that dost inhabit in my breast
Leave not the mansion so long tenantless,
Lest growing ruinous the building fall
And leave no memory of what it was! 10
Repair me with thy presence Silvia
Thou gentle nymph cherish thy forlorn swain!
What halloing and what stir is this to day?
These are my mates, that make their wills their
law,
Have some unhappy passenger in chase
They love me well, yet I have much to do
To keep them from uncivil outrages
Withdraw thee, Valentine who s this comes
here?

Enter PROTEUS SILVIA, AND JULIA

Pro Madam this service I have done for you,
Though you respect not aught your servant doth
To hazard life and rescue you from him 21
That would have forced your honour and your
love

Vouchsafe me for my meed, but one fair look,
A smaller boon than this I cannot beg
And less than this I am sure you cannot give

Val [*Aside*] How like a dream is this I see and
hear!

Love lend me patience to forbear awhile

Sil O miserable, unhappy that I am!

Pro Unhappy were you, madam ere I came,
But by my coming I have made you happy 30

Sil By thy approach thou makest me most un-
happy

Jul [*Aside*] And me when he approacheth to
your presence

Sil Had I been seized by a hungry lion
I would have been a breakfast to the beast
Rather than have false Proteus rescue me
O Heaven be judge how I lov e Valentine,
Whose life s as tender to me as my soul!
And full as much for more there cannot be,
I do detest false perjured Proteus

Therefore be gone solicit me no more 40

Pro What dangerous action stood it next to
death

Would I not undergo for one calm look!

O tis the curse in love and still approved

When women cannot love where they re

Sil When Proteus cannot love v here he s be
loved

Read over Julia s heart thy first best love
For whose dear sake thou didst then rend thy
faith

Into a thousand oaths and all those oaths
Descended into perjury to love me 49
Thou hast no faith left now unless thou dar two
And that s far worse than none better have none
Than plural faith which is too much by one
Thou counterfeit to thy true friend

Pro In love
Who respects friend?

Sil All men but Proteus

Pro Nay if the gentle spirit of moving words
Can no way change you to a mulder form
I ll woo you like a soldier at arms end
And love you gainst the nature of love—force

Sil O heaven!

Pro I ll force thee yeld to my desire

I al Ruffian let go that rude uncivil touch

Thou friend of an ill fashion

Pro Valentine! 61

I al Thou common friend that s without faith
or love

For such is a friend now treacherous man!

Thou hast beguiled my hopes nought but mine
eye

Could have persuaded me now I dare not say
I have one friend alive thou wouldst disprove
me

Who should be trusted when one s own right
hand

Is perjured to the bosom? Proteus

I am sorry I must never trust thee more

But count the world a stranger for thy sake 70

The private wound is deepest O time most ac
curst

Mongst all foes that a friend should be the worst!

Pro My shame and guilt confounds me

Forgive me Valentine if hearty sorrow

Be a sufficient ransom for offence

I tender there I do as truly suffer

As e er I did commit

I al Then I am paid

And once again I do receive thee honest

Who by repentance is not satisfied

Is nor of heaven nor earth for these are pleased

By penitence the Eternal s wrath s appeased 71

And that my love may appear plain and free

All that was mine in Silvia I give thee

I al O me unhappy! [Swoons]

I ro Look to the boy

I al Why boy! why wag! how now! what s
the matter? Look up speak

Jul O good sir my master charged me to de
liver a ring to Madam Silvia which out of my
neglect was never done 90

Pro Where is that ring boy?

Jul Here tis this is it

Pro How! let me see

Why this is the ring I gave to Julia

Jul O crv you mercy sir I have mistook

This is the ring you sent to Silvia

Pro But how camest thou by this ring? At my
d part

I gave this unto Julia

Jul And Julia herself did give it me

And Julia herself hath brought it hither

I ro How! Julia! 100

Jul Behold her that gave aim to all thy oaths

And entertain d em deeply in her heart

How oft hast thou with perjury cleft the root!

O Proteus let this hal it make thee blush!

Be thou ashamed that I have took upon me

Such an immodest raiment if shame live

In a disguise of love

It is the lesser blot modesty finds

Women to change their shapes than men their
minds

Pro Than men their minds! tis true O heaven!
were man 110

But constant he were perfect That one error
fills him with faults makes him run through all
the sins

Inconstancy falls off ere it begins

What is in Silvia s face but I may spy

More fresh in Julia s with a constant eye?

I al Come come a hand from either

Let me be blest to make this happy close

Twere pity two such friends should be long foes

Pro Bear witness Heaven I have my wish for
ever

Jul And I mine 120

Enter OUTLAWS with DUKE and THURIO

Outlaws A prize a prize a prize!

I al Forbear forbear I say! it is my lord the
Duke

Your Grace is welcome to a man disgraced
Banished Valentine

Duke Sir Valentine!

Thu Yonder is Silvia and Silvia s mine

I al Thurio give back or else embrace thy
death

Come not within the measure of my wrath

Do not name Silvia thine if once again

Verona shall not hold thee Here she stands

Take but possession of her with a touch 130

I dare thee but to breathe upon my love

Thu Sir Valentine I care not for her I

I hold him but a fool that will endanger
His body for a girl that loves him not
I claim her not and therefore she is thine

Duke The more degenerate and base art thou,
To make such means for her as thou hast done

And leave her on such slight conditions
Now, by the honour of my ancestry,
I do applaud thy spirit, Valentine, 140
And think thee worthy of an empress' love
Know then, I here forget all former griefs,
Cancel all grudge repeal thee home again,
Plead a new state in thy unrival'd merit,
To which I thus subscribe Sir Valentine,
Thou art a gentleman and well derived
Take thou thy Silvia, for thou hast deserved her

Val I thank your Grace the gift hath made me
happy

I now beseech you, for your daughter's sake,
To grant one boon that I shall ask of you 150

Duke I grant it for thine own whatever it be

Val These banish'd men that I have kept withal
Are men endued with worthy qualities
Forgive them what they have committed here

And let them be recalled from their exile
They are reformed, civil, full of good
And fit for great employment worthy lord
Duke Thou hast prevail'd I pardon them and
thee

Dispose of them as thou know'st their deserts
Come let us go we will include all jars 160

With triumphs mirth and rare solemnity

Val And as we walk along, I dare be bold
With our discourse to make your Grace to smile
What think you of this page my lord?

Duke I think the boy hath grace in him, he
blushes

Val I warrant you my lord more grace than
boy

Duke What mean you by that saying?

Val Please you I'll tell you as we pass along
That you will wonder what hath fortun'd
Come Proteus 'tis your penance but to hear 170
The story of your loves discovered
That done, our day of marriage shall be yours,
One feast, one house one mutual happiness

[*Exeunt*]

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

FERDINAND KING OF NAVARRE

BIRON

LONGAVILLE | lords attending on the King

PRINCE

BOY | attend on the Princess of France

M. CADE

DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO a fantastical Spaniard

SIR NATHANIEL a curate

HO OFERNES a schoolmaster

DULL a constable

COSTAR a clown

MOOTH a page to Armado

A FORESTER

A LORD OF FRANCE

THE PRINCESS OF FRANCE

ROSALINE

MA LA | ladies attending on the Princess

NATHARINE

JAQUENETTA a country wench

NONSENKING Ladies Attendants Bachelors

SCENE Navarre

ACT I

SCENE I The king of Navarre's park

FERDINAND KING OF NAVARRE BIRON

LONGAVILLE and DUMAIN

King Let fame that all hunt after in their lives
Live register'd upon our brazen tombs
And then grace us in the disgrace of death
When spire of cormorant devouring Time
The endeavour of this present breath may buy
That honour which shall bate his scythe's keen
edge

And make us heirs of all eternity
Therefore brave conquerors—for so you are
That war against your own affections
And the huge army of the world's desires—
Our late edict shall strongly stand in force
Navarre shall be the wonder of the world
Our court shall be a little Academe
Still and contemplative in living art
You three Biron Dumain and Longaville
Have sworn for three years' term to live with me
My fellow scholars and to keep those statutes
That are recorded in this schedule here
Your oaths are pass'd and now subscribe your
names

That his own hand may strike his honour down
That violates the smallest branch herein
If you are arm'd to do as sworn to do
Subscribe to your deep oaths and keep it too

Long I am resolved 'tis but a three years' fast
The mind shall banquet though the body pine
Fat paunches have lean pates and dainty bits
Make rich the ribs but bankrupt quite the wits

Dum My loving lord Dumain is mortified
The grosser manner of these world's delights
He throws upon the gross world's baser slaves

To love to wealth to pomp I pine and die
With all these living in philosophy

Biron I can but say their protestation over
So much dear liege I have already sworn
That is to live and study here three years
But there are other strict observances
As not to see a woman in that term
Which I hope well is not enrolled there

And but one meal on every day beside

The which I hope is not enrolled there
And then to sleep but three hours in the night
And not be seen to wink of all the day—

When I was wont to think no harm all night
And make a dark night too of half the day—
Which I hope well is not enrolled there
O these are barren tasks too hard to keep
Not to see ladies study fast nor sleep!

King Your oath is pass'd to pass away from
these

Biron Let me say no my liege an if you
please

I only swore to study with your Grace
And stay here in your court for three years' space

Long You swore to that Biron and to the rest

Biron By yea and nay sir then I swore in jest
What is the end of study? let me know

King Why that to know which else we should
not know

Biron Things hid and barr'd you mean from
common sense?

King Ay that is study's godlike recompense

Biron Come on then I will swear to study so
To know the thing I am forbid to know

As thus—to study where I well may dine

When I to feast expressly am forbid

Or study where to meet some mistress fine

When mistresses from common sense are hid,
Or, having sworn too hard a keeping oath,
Study to break it and not break my troth
If study's gain be thus and this be so
Study knows that which yet it doth not know
Swear me to this and I will ne'er say no

King These be the stops that hinder study
quite 70
And train our intellects to vain delight

Biron Why, all delights are vain but that most
vain,

Which, with pain purchased doth inherit pain
As painfully to pore upon a book

To seek the light of truth while truth the
while

Doth falsely blind the eyesight of his look
Light seeking light doth light of light beguile

So ere you find where light in darkness lies
Your light grows dark by losing of your eyes
Study me how to please the eye indeed 80

By fixing it upon a fairer eye
Who dazzling so that eye shall be his heed
And give him light that it was blinded by

Study is like the heaven's glorious sun
That will not be deep search'd with saucy looks

Small have continual plodders ever won
Save base authority from others' books

These earthly godfathers of heaven's lights
That give a name to every fixed star

Have no more profit of their shining nights 90
Than those that walk and wot not what they
are

Too much to know is to know nought but fame,
And every godfather can give a name

King How well he's read, to reason against
reading!

Dum Proceeded well to stop all good proceed-
ing!

Long He weeds the corn and still lets grow the
weeding

Biron The spring is near when green geese are
a breeding

Dum How follows that?

Biron Fit in his place and time

Dum In reason nothing

Biron Something then in rhyme

King Biron is like an envious snatching frost
That bites the first-born infants of the
spring 101

Biron Well say I am, why should proud sum-
mer boast

Before the birds have any cause to
sing?

Why should I joy in any abortive birth?

At Christmas I no more desire a rose

Than wish a snow in May's new-fangled mirth

But like of each thing that in season grows
So you, to study now it is too late,
Climb o'er the house to unlock the little gate

King Well sit you out go home Biron
adieu 110

Biron No, my good lord I have sworn to stay
with you

And though I have for barbarism spoke more
Than for that angel knowledge you can say

Yet confident I'll keep what I have sworn
And bide the penance of each three years' day

Give me the paper let me read the same
And to the strict statutes I'll write my name

King How well this yielding rescues thee from
shame!

Biron [reads] 'Item That no woman shall come
within a mile of my court Hath this been pro-
claimed?' 121

Long Four days ago

Biron Let's see the penalty [Reads] 'On pain
of losing her tongue Who devised this penalty?'

Long Marry, that did I

Biron Sweet lord and why?

Long To fright them hence with that dread
penalty

Biron A dangerous law against gentility!

[Reads] 'Item If any man be seen to talk with a
woman within the term of three years he shall
endure such public shame as the rest of the court
can possibly devise'

This article my liege, yourself must break,

For well you know here comes in embassy

The French king's daughter with yourself to
speak—

A maid of grace and complete majesty—

About surrender up of Aquitaine

To her decrepit, sick and bedrid father

Therefore this article is made in vain 140

Or vainly comes the admired princess hither

King What say you lords? why, this was
quite forgot

Biron So study evermore is overshot

While it doth study to have what it would

It doth forget to do the thing it should

And when it hath the thing it hunteth most

Tis won as towns with fire so won so lost

King We must of force dispense with this
decree

She must lie here on mere necessity

Biron Necessity will make us all forsworn

Three thousand times within this three years
space 151

For every man with his affects is born,

Not by might mastered but by special grace

If I break faith this word shall speak for

I am forsworn on mere necessity

do to the laws at large I write my name

Subscribes

And he that breake's them in the least degree

Stands in attender of eternal shame

Suggestions are to other as to me

But I believe although I seem so loath 160

I am the last that will last keep his oath

But is there no quick recreation granted?

Am. Ay that there is. Our court you know
is haunted

With a refined traveller of Spain

A man in all the world's new fashion planted

That hath a mint of phrases in his brain

One whom the music of his own vain tongue

Doth ravish like enchanting harmony

A man of compliments whom right and
wrong

Have chose as umpire of their murmur 170

This child of fancy that Asinado hight

For interim to our studies shall relate

In high born words the worth of many a knight

From raven Spain lost in the world's debate

How you delight my lords I know not I

But I protest I love to hear him lie

And I will use him for my minstrelsy

Biron. Armado is a more illustrious wight

A man of fire new world's fashion's own knight

Long. Costard the swain and he shall be our
sport 180

And so to study three years is but short

Enter DULL with a letter. DULL. COSTARD

Dull. Which is the Duke's own person?

Biron. This fellow what wouldst?

Dull. I myself reprehend his own person for I
am his grace's sharborough but I would see his
own person in flesh and blood

Biron. This is he

Dull. Senior Arme—Arme—commends you
There's a rainy abroad this letter will tell you
more 190

Cost. Sir the contents thereof are as touching
me

King. A letter from the magnificent Armado

Biron. How low soever the matter I hope in
God for high words

Long. A high hope for a low heaven God
grant us patience

Biron. To hear? or forbear? *Long.*

Long. To hear meekly sir and to laugh mod-
estly or to forbear both 200

Biron. Well sir be it as the style shall give us
cause to climb in the merriest

Cost. The matter is to me sir as concerning
Jaquenetta The manner of it is I was taken
with the manner

Biron. In what manner?

Cost. In manner and form following sir all
those three I was seen with her in the manor
house sitting with her upon the form and taken
following her into the park which put together
is in manner and form following Now sir for
the manner—it is the manner of a man to speak
to a woman for the form—in some form

Biron. For the following sir?

Cost. As it shall follow in my correction and
God defend the right!

King. Will you hear this letter with attention?

Biron. As we would hear an oracle

Cost. Such is the simplicity of man to hearken
after the flesh 210

King. [reads] Great deputy the welkin's
vicegerent and sole dominator of Navarre my
soul's earth's god and body's fostering patron

Cost. Not a word of Costard yet

King. [reads] So it is—

Cost. It may be so but if he say as is so he is
untelling true but so

King. Peace

C. Be to me and every man that dares not
fight! 230

King. No words!

Cost. Of other men's secrets I beseech you

King. [reads] So it is besieged with sable
coloured melancholy I did commend the black
oppressing humour to the most wholesome physic
of thy health giving air and as I am a gentle
man betook myself to wall The time when
about the sixth hour when beasts most graze
birds best peck and men sit down to that nourish-
ment which is called supper so much for the
time when Now for the ground which which I
mean I walked upon it is called thy park
Then for the place where where I mean I did
encounter that obscene and most preposterous
event that draweth from my snow white pen
the black coloured ink which here thou viewest
beholdest survest or seest but to the place
where it standeth north north-east and by east
from the west corner of thy curious horted
garden there did I see that low spirited swain
that base munnow of thy mirth — 251

Cost. Me?

King. [reads] that unlettered small knowing
soul —

Cost. Me?

King. [reads] that shallow vassal —

Cost. Still me?

King. [reads] which as I remember hight
Costard —

Cost. O me!

King. [reads] sorted and converted contrary 260

to thy established proclaimed edict and continent canon which with—O with—but with this I passion to say wherewith”—

Cost With a wench

King [reads] "with a child of our grandmother Eve, a female, or, for thy more sweet understanding a woman Him I as my ever-esteemed duty pricks me on, have sent to thee to receive the meed of punishment by thy sweet grace's officer, Anthony Dull, a man of good repute carriage bearing, and estimation"

Dull Me, an t shall please you, I am Anthony Dull

King [reads] "For Jaquenetta—so is the weaker vessel called which I apprehended with the aforesaid swain—I keep her as a vessel of thy law's fury, and shall at the least of thy sweet notice, bring her to trial Thine, in all compliments of devoted and heart burning heat of duty."

Don Adriano de Armado

Biron This is not so well as I looked for, but the best that ever I heard

King Ay, the best for the worst But, sirrah, what say you to this?

Cost Sir, I confess the wench

King Did you hear the proclamation?

Cost I do confess much of the hearing it, but little of the marking of it

King It was proclaimed a year's imprisonment to be taken with a wench 290

Cost I was taken with none, sir I was taken with a damsel

King Well it was proclaimed "damsel"

Cost This was no damsel neither sir she was a virgin

King It is so varied too for it was proclaimed "virgin"

Cost If it were, I deny her virginity I was taken with a maid

King This maid will not serve your turn sir

Cost This maid will serve my turn sir 301

King Sir I will pronounce your sentence you shall fast a week with bran and water

Cost I had rather pray a month with mutton and porridge

King And Don Armado shall be your keeper My Lord Biron see him deliver do or And go we lords to put in practice that

Which each to other hath so strongly sworn

[*Exeunt* KING LONGVILLE and DUMAINE]

Biron I'll lay my head to any good man's shat 310
These oaths and laws will prove an idle scorn
Sirrah, come on

Cost I suffer for the truth, sir for true it is
I was taken with Jaquenetta and Jaquenetta is a true girl and therefore welcome the sour cup of

prosperity! Affliction may one day smile again, and till then, sit thee down sorrow! [*Exeunt*]

SCENE II The same

Enter ARMADO and MOTH

Arm Boy, what sign is it when a man of great spirit grows melancholy?

Moth A great sign sir that he will look sad

Arm Why, sadness is one and the self-same thing dear imp

Moth No, no, O Lord, sir, no

Arm How canst thou part sadness and melancholy, my tender juvenal?

Moth By a familiar demonstration of the working my tough senior 10

Arm Why tough senior? why tough senior?

Moth Why tender juvenal? why tender juvenal?

Arm I spoke it tender juvenal as a congruent epitheton appertaining to thy young days which we may nominate tender

Moth And I tough sensor as an appertinent title to your old time, which we may name tough

Arm Pretty and apt

Moth How mean you sir? I pretty, and my saying apt? or I apt, and my saying pretty?

Arm Thou pretty, because little

Moth Little pretty because little Wherefore apt?

Arm And therefore apt, because quick

Moth Speak you thus in my praise, master?

Arm In thy condign praise

Moth I will praise an eel with the same praise

Arm What, that an eel is ingenious?

Moth That an eel is quick 30

Arm I do say thou art quick in answers thou heatest my blood

Moth I am answered sir

Arm I love not to be crossed

Moth [*Aside*] He speaks the mere contrary crosses love not him

Arm I have promised to study three years with the duke

Moth You may do it in an hour sir

Arm Impossible 40

Moth How many is one thrice told?

Arm I am ill at reckoning it fitteth the spirit of a tapster

Moth You are a gentleman and a gamester sir

Arm I confess both they are both the varnish of a complete man

Moth Then I am sure you know how much the gross sum of deuce ace amounts to

Arm It doth amount to one more than two

Moth Which the base vulgar do call three

Arm True

Moth Why, sir, is this such a piece of study?
Now here in three studied ere ye'll thrice wink
and how easy it is to put years to the word
three, and study three years in two words the
dancing horse will tell you

Arm A most fine figure!

Moth To prove you a cipher 59

Arm I will hercupon confess I am in love, and
as it is base for a soldier to love, so am I in love
with a base wench. If drawing my sword against
the humour of affection would deliver me from
the reprobate thought of it, I would take Desire
prisoner, and ransom him to any French courtier
for a new-devised courtesy. I think scorn to sigh
methinks I should outswear Cupid. Comfort me
boy, what great men have been in love?

Moth Hercules' master 69

Arm Most sweet Hercules! More authority
dear boy, name more, and sweet my child let
them be men of good repute and carriage.

Moth Samson, master, he was a man of good
carriage, great carriage, for he carried the town
gates on his back like a porter, and he was in
love.

Arm O well knit Samson! strong jointed
Samson! I do excel thee in my rapier as much as
thou didst me in carrying gates. I am in love too.
Who was Samson's love, my dear *Moth*?

Moth A woman, master 71

Arm Of what complexion?

Moth Of all the four, or the three, or the two,
or one of the four.

Arm Tell me precisely, of what complexion.

Moth Of the sea water green, sir.

Arm Is that one of the four complexions?

Moth As I have read, sir, and the best of them
too 89

Arm Green indeed is the colour of lovers, but
to have a love of that colour, methinks Samson
had small reason for it. He surely affected her
for her wit.

Moth It was so, sir, for she had a green wit.

Arm My love is most immaculate white and
red.

Moth Most maculate thoughts, master, are
masked under such colours.

Arm Define, define, well-educated infant.

Moth My father's wit and my mother's tongue
as is't me! 101

Arm Sweet invocation of a child, most pretty
and pathetic!

Moth If she be made of white and red.

Her faults will never be known.

For blushing cheeks by faults are bred.

And fears by pale white shown.

Then if she fear, or be to blame,

By this you shall not know.

For still her cheeks possess the same.

Which native she doth owe 111

A dangerous rhyme, master, against the reason
of white and red.

Arm Is there not a ballad boy of the king
and the Beggar?

Moth The world was very guilty of such a
ballad some three ages since, but I think now
tis not to be found, or if it were, it would
neither serve for the writing nor the tune 119

Arm I will have that subject newly writ, or
that I may example my discretion by some
most happy precedent. Boy, I do love that country
girl that I took in the park with the rational hind.
Costard, she deserves well.

Moth [Aside] To be whipped, and yet a better
love than my master.

Arm Sing, boy, my spirit grows heavy in love.

Moth And that's great marvel, loving a light
wench.

Arm I say, sing 130

Moth Forbear till this company be past.

Enter DULL, COSTARD, and JAQUENETTA.

Dull Sir, the Duke's pleasure is that you keep
Costard safe, and you must suffer him to take
no delight nor no penance, but a must fast three
days a week. For this damsel, I must keep her
at the park, she is allowed for the day woman.
Fare you well.

Arm I do betray myself with blushing. Maid!

Jaqu Man?

Arm I will visit thee at the lodge 140

Jaqu That's hereby.

Arm I know where it is situate.

Jaqu Lord, how wise you are!

Arm I will tell thee wonders.

Jaqu With that face?

Arm I love thee.

Jaqu So I heard you say.

Arm And so farewell.

Jaqu Fair weather after you!

Dull Come, Jaquenetta, away! 150

[Exit DULL and JAQUENETTA.]

Arm Villain, thou shalt fast for thy offences
ere thou be pardoned.

Cost Well, sir, I hope, when I do it, I shall
do it on a full stomach.

Arm Thou shalt be heavily punished.

Cost I am more bound to you than your fel-
lows for they are but lightly rewarded.

Arm Take away this villain, shut him up.

Moth Come, you transgressing slave, away!

Cost Let me not be pent up, sir, I will fast
being loose 161

Moth No sir, that were fast and loose, thou shalt to prison

Cost Well if ever I do see the merry days of desolation that I have seen some shall see

Moth What shall some see?

Cost Nay, nothing Master Moth, but what they look upon It is not for prisoners to be too silent in their words, and therefore I will say nothing I thank God I have as little patience as another man and therefore I can be quiet 171

[*Exeunt MOTH and COSTARD*]

Arm I do affect the very ground which is base where her shoe which is baser guided by her foot which is basest, doth tread I shall be forsworn which is a great argument of falsehood, if I love And how can that be true love which is falsely attempted? Love is a familiar, Love is a devil there is no evil angel but Love Yet was Samson so tempted, and he had an excellent strength, yet was Solomon so seduced and he had a very good wit Cupid's butt-shaft is too hard for Hercules' club and therefore too much odds for a Spaniard's rapier The first and second cause will not serve my turn the passado he respects not, the duello he regards not his disgrace is to be called boy, but his glory is to subdue men Adieu valour! rust rapier! be still drum! for your manager is in love yea he loveth Assist me some extemporal god of rhyme for I am sure I shall turn sonnet Devise wit, write, pen, for I am for whole volumes in folio [Exit

ACT II

SCENE I *The same*

Enter the PRINCESS OF FRANCE, ROSALINE, MARIA, KATHARINE, BOYET, LORDS and other Attendants

Boyet Now, madam summon up your dearest spirits

Consider who the King your father sends,
To whom he sends and what his embassy
Yourself held precious in the world's esteem,
To parley with the sole inheritor
Of all perfections that a man may owe
Matchless Navarre, the plea of no less weight
Than Aquitaine a dowry for a queen
Be now as prodigal of all dear grace
As Nature was in making graces dear 10
When she did starve the general world beside
And prodigally gave them all to you

Prim Good Lord Boyet, my beauty, though but mean

Needs not the painted flourish of your praise
Beauty is bought by judgement of the eye
Not uttered by base sale of chapmen's tongues

I am less proud to hear you tell my worth
Than you much willing to be counted wise
In spending your wit in the praise of mine
But now to task the tasker good Boyet 20
You are not ignorant all telling fame
Doth noise abroad, Navarre hath made a vow,
Till painful study shall outwear three years,
No woman may approach his silent court
Therefore to seemeth it a needful course,
Before we enter his forbidden gates
To know his pleasure and in that behalf,
Bold of your worthiness we single you
As our best moving fair solicitor
Tell him the daughter of the King of France 30
On serious business craving quick dispatch
Importunes personal conference with his Grace
Haste, signify so much, while we attend
Like humble-visaged suitors, his high will
Boyet Proud of employment willingly I go
Prim All pride is willing pride and yours is so [Exit BOYET

Who are the votaries, my loving lords
That are yow-fellows with this virtuous Duke?
1st Lord Lord Longaville is one

Prim Know you the man?

Mar I know him, madam at a marriage-feast 40

Between Lord Perigort and the beauteous heir
Of Jaques Falconbridge solemnized
In Normandy, saw I this Longaville
A man of sovereign parts he is esteem'd,
Well fitted in arts glorious in arms
Nothing becomes him ill that he would well
The only soil of his fair virtue's gloss
If virtue's gloss will stain with any soil
Is a sharp wit match'd with too blunt a will
Whose edge hath power to cut whose will still
wills 50

It should none spare that come within his power

Prim Some merry mocking lord belike is it so?

Mar They say so most that most his humours know

Prim Such short lived wits do wither as they grow

Who are the rest?

Kath The young Dumain a well accomplished youth

Of all that virtue love for virtue loved
Most power to do most harm least knowing ill
For he hath wit to make an ill shape good
And shape to win grace though he had no wit 60
I saw him at the Duke Alençon's once,
And much too little of that good I saw
Is my report to his great worthiness
Ros Another of these students at that time
Was there with him if I have heard a

Biron they call him but a merrier man
 Within the limit of becoming mirth
 I never spent an hour's talk withal
 His eye begets occasion for his wit
 For every object that the eye doth catch 70
 The other turns to a mirth moving jest
 Which his fair tongue conceits an expositor
 Delivers in such apt and gracious words
 That aged ears play truant at his tales
 And younger hearings are quite ravished
 So sweet and voluble is his discourse
 Prin God bless my ladies! are they all in love
 That every one her own hath garnished
 With such bedecking ornaments of praise?
 Sir Lord Here comes Boyet

An enter BOYET

Prin Now what admittance lord? 80
 Boyet Navarre had notice of your fair approach
 And he and his competitors in oath
 Were all addres'd to meet you gentle lady
 Before I came Marry thus much I have learnt
 He rather means to lodge you in the field
 Like one that come here to besiege his court
 Than seek a dispensation for his oath
 To let you enter his unpeopled house
 Here comes Navarre

Enter KING LONGVILLIE DUMAIV BIRON and Attendants

Amg Fair princess welcome to the court of Navarre 90

Prin Fair I give you back again and welcome
 I have not yet the roof of this court is
 too high to be yours and welcome to the wide
 fields too base to be mine

Amg You shall be welcome madam to my court

Prin I will be welcome then conduct me thither

Amg Hear me dear lady I have sworn an oath

Prin Our Lady help my lord! he'll be forsworn

Amg Not for the world fair madam by my will

Prin Why will shall break it will and nothing else 100

Amg Your ladyship is ignorant what it is

Prin Were my lord so his ignorance were wise

Where now his knowledge must prove ignorance

I hear your Grace hath sworn out house keeping

'Tis deadly sin to keep that oath my lord

And sin to break it

But pardon me I am too sudden bold

To teach a teacher ill beseemeth me

Vouchsafe to read the purpose of my coming

And suddenly resolve me in my suit 110
 King Madam I will if suddenly I may
 Prin You will the sooner that I were away
 For you'll prove perjured if you make me stay
 Biron Did not I dance with you in Brabant
 once?

Ros Did not I dance with you in Brabant once?

Biron I know you did

Ros How needless was it then to ask the question?

Biron You must not be so quick

Ros 'Tis long of you that spur me with such questions

Biron Your wit is too hot it speeds too fast
 'twill tire 120

Ros Not till it leave the rider in the mire

Biron What time o' day?

Ros The hour that fools should ask

Biron Now fair befall your mask!

Ros Fair fall the face it covers!

Biron And send you many lovers!

Ros Amen so you be none

Biron Nay then will I be gone

King Madam your father here doth intimate

The payment of a hundred thousand crowns 130

Being but the one half of an entire sum

Disbursed by my father in his wars

But say that he or we as neither have

Received that sum yet there remains unpaid

A hundred thousand more in surety of the which

One part of Aquitaine is bound to us

Although not valued to the money's worth

If then the King your father will restore

But that one half which is unsatisfied

We will give up our right in Aquitaine 140

And hold fair friendship with his Majesty

But that it seems he little purposeth

For here he doth demand to have repaid

A hundred thousand crowns and not demands

On payment of a hundred thousand crowns

To have a title live in Aquitaine

Which we much rather had depart withal

And have the money by our father lent

Than Aquitaine so gelded as it is

Dear Princess were not his requests so far 150

From reason's yielding your fair self should make

A yielding against some reason in my breast

And go well satisfied to France again

Prin You do the King my father too much wrong

And wrong the reputation of your name

In so unseemingly to confess receipt

Of that which hath so faithfully been paid

Amg I do protest I never heard of it

And if you prove it, I'll repay it back
Or yield up Aquitaine

Prin We arrest your word 160

Boyet You can produce acquittances
For such a sum from special officers
Of Charles his father

King Satisfy me so

Boyet So please your Grace the packet is not
come

Where that and other specialties are bound
To-morrow you shall have a sight of them

King It shall suffice me at which interview

All liberal reason I will yield unto

Meantime receive such welcome at my hand

As honour without breach of honour may 170

Make tender of to thy true worthiness

You may not come, fair Princess in my gates

But here without you shall be so received

As you shall deem yourself lodged in my heart

Though so denied fair harbour in my house

Your own good thoughts excuse me and farewell

To-morrow shall we visit you again

Prin Sweet health and fair desires consort your
Grace!

King Thy own wish wish I thee in every place!
[Exit]

Biron Lady I will commend you to mine own
heart 180

Ros Pray you, do my commendations, I would
be glad to see it

Biron I would you heard it groan

Ros Is the fool sick?

Biron Sick at the heart

Ros Alack let it bleed

Biron Would that do it good?

Ros My physic says ay

Biron Will you prick it with your eye? 190

Ros No point with my knife

Biron Now, God save thy life!

Ros And yours from long living!

Biron I cannot stay thanksgiving [Re-entring]

Dum Sir I pray you a word what lady is that
same?

Boyet The heir of Alençon Katharine her
name

Dum A gallant lady Monsieur, fare you well
[Exit]

Long I beseech you a word what is she in the
white?

Boyet A woman sometimes when you saw her in
the light

Long Perchance light in the light I desire her
name

Boyet She hath but one for herself to desire
that were a shame 200

Long Pray you sir whose daughter?

Boyet Her mother's, I have heard

Long God's blessing on your beard!

Boyet Good sir be not offended

She is an heir of Falconbridge

Long Nay, my choler is ended

She is a most sweet lady

Boyet Not unlike sir that may be

[Exit LONGAVILLE]

Biron What is her name in the cap?

Boyet Rosaline by good hap 210

Biron Is she wedded or no?

Boyet To her will, sir or so

Biron You are welcome sir adieu

Boyet Farewell to me sir and welcome to you

[Exit BIRON]

Mar That last is Biron the merry mad cap
lord

Nor a word with him but a jest

Boyet And every jest but a word

Prin It was well done of you to take him at his
word

Boyet I was as willing to grapple as he was to
board

Mar Two hot sheeps marry

Boyet And wherefore not ships?

No sheep sweet lamb unless we feed on your
lips 220

Mar You sheep, and I pasture shall that finish
the jest?

Boyet So you grant pasture for me

Offering to kiss her

Mar Not so gentle beast

My lips are no common though several they be

Boyet Belonging to whom?

Mar

To my fortunes and me

Prin Good wits will be jangling but, gentles,
agree

This civil war of wits were much better used

On Navarre and his book men for here tis
abused

Boyet If my observation, which very seldom
lies

By the heart is still rhetoric disclosed with eyes,

Deceive me not now Navarre is infected 230

Prin With what?

Boyet With that which we lovers entitle af-
fected

Prin Your reason?

Boyet Why, all his behaviours did make their
retire

To the court of his eye, peeping thorough desire

His heart like an agate with your print im-
press'd

Proud with his form in his eye pride express'd

His tongue all impatient to speak and not
Did stumble with haste in his eyesight to

All senses to that sense did make their repair 240
To feel only looking on fairest of fair
Methought all his senses were lock'd in his eye
As jewels in crystal for some prince to buy
Who tendering their own worth from where
they were glass'd

Did point you to buy them along as you pass'd
His face's own margent did quene such amazes
That all eyes saw his eyes enchanted with gazes
I'll give you Aquitaine and all that is his
An you give him for my sake but one loving kiss
Prin Come to our pavilion Boyet is disposed
Boyet But to speak that in words which his eye
hath disclosed 251

I only has made a mouth of his eye
By adding a tongue which I know will not lie
Ros Thou art an old love monger and speakest
skilfully

Ala He is Cupid's grandfather and learns news
of him

Ros Then was Venus like her mother for her
father is but grim

Boyet Do you hear my mad wenches?

Ma No

Boyet What then do you see?

Ros Ay our way to be gone

Boyet You are too hard for me
[Exit]

ACT III

SCENE I The same

Enter ARMADO and MOTHS

Arm Warble child make passionate my sense
of hearing

Moth Concolinel [Singing]

Arm Sweet air! Go tenderness of years take
this key give enlargement to the swain bring
him festinately hither I must employ him to a
letter to my love

Moth Master will you win your love with a
French brawl? 9

Arm How meanest thou? brawling in French?

Moth No my complete master but to jig off a
tune at the tongue's end canary to it with your
feet humour it with turning up your eyelids sigh
a note and sing a note sometime through the
throat as if you swallowed love with singing
love sometime through the nose as if you
snuffed up love by smelling love with your hat
penthouse like over the shop of your eyes with
your arms crossed on your thin belly doublet like
a rabbit on a spit or your hands in your pocket
like a man after the old paintmen and keep not
too long in one tune but a snip and away These
are complements these are humours these be

tray nice wenches that would be betrayed with
out these and make them men of note—do you
note me?—that most are affected to these

Arm How hast thou purchased this experience?

Moth By my penny of observation

Arm But O—but O—

Moth The hobby horse is forgot 30

Arm Callst thou my love hobby horse?

Moth No master the hobby horse is but a colt
and your love perhaps a hackney But have you
forgot your love?

Arm Almost I had

Moth Negligent student! learn her by heart

Arm By heart and in heart boy

Moth And out of heart master all those three
I will prove

Arm What wilt thou prove? 40

Moth A man if I live and this by in and
without upon the instant by heart you love her
because your heart cannot come by her in heart
you love her because your heart is in love with
her and out of heart you love her being out of
heart that you cannot enjoy her

Arm I am all these three

Moth And three times as much more and yet
nothing at all

Arm Fetch hither the swain he must carry me
a letter

Moth A message well sympathized a horse to
be ambassador for an ass

Arm Ha ha what sayest thou?

Moth Marry sir you must send the ass upon
the horse for he is very slow-gaited But I go

Arm The way is but short away!

Moth As swift as lead sir?

Arm The meaning pretty ingenious?

Is not lead a metal heavy dull and slow? 50

Moth Mine honest master or rather mas-
ter no

Arm I say lead is slow

Moth You are too swift sir to say so
is that lead slow which is fired from a gun?

Arm Sweet smoke of rhetoric!

He repotes me a cannon and the bullet that a he
I shoot thee at the swain

Moth Thump then and I flee [Exit]
Arm A most acute juvenal volable and free of
grace!

By thy favour sweet welkin I must sigh in thy
face

Most rude melancholy valour gives thee place

My herald is return'd 70

Re-ent ARMADO with COSTARD

Moth A wonder master! here's a costard bro-
ken in a shin

Arm Some enigma, some riddle come thy
l'envoy, begin

Cost No egma no riddle, no l'envoy, no salve
in the mail, sir O, sir, plantain a plain plantain!
no l'envoy, no l'envoy, no salve sir but a plan
tain!

Arm By virtue thou enforcest laughter, thy
silly thought my spleen the heaving of my
lungs provokes me to ridiculous smiling O pardon
me, my stars! Doth the inconsiderate take
salve for l'envoy and the word l'envoy for a
salve? 80

Moth Do the wise think them other? is not
l'envoy a salve?

Arm No page it is an epilogue or discourse,
to make plain

Some obscure precedence that hath tofore been
sain

I will example it

The fox, the ape and the humble-bee,

Were still at odds being but three

There s the moral Now the l'envoy

Moth I will add the l'envoy Say the moral
again

Arm The fox, the ape the humble bee, 90
Were still at odds being but three

Moth Until the goose came out of door,
And stay d the odds by adding four

Now will I begin your moral and do you follow
with my l'envoy

The fox the ape and the humble-bee,

Were still at odds being but three

Arm Until the goose came out of door,

Staying the odds by adding four

Moth A good l'envoy ending in the goose
would you desire more? 101

Cost The boy hath sold him a bargain, a goose,
that s flat

Sir your pennyworth is good, an your goose be
fat

To sell a bargain well is as cunning as fast and
loose

Let me see a fat l'envoy ay that s a fat
goose

Arm Come hither come hither How did this
argument begin?

Moth By saying that a costard was broken in a
shin

Then call d you for the l'envoy

Cost True, and I for a plantain thus came your
argument in

Then the boy s fat l'envoy the goose that you
bought 110

And he ended the market

Arm But tell me, how was there a costard broken
in a shin?

Moth I will tell you sensibly

Cost Thou hast no feeling of it *Moth* I will
speak that l'envoy

I Costard, running out that was safely within,
Fell over the threshold and broke my shin

Arm We will talk no more of this matter

Cost Till there be more matter in the shin

Arm Surrah Costard I will enfranchise thee

Cost O marry me to one Frances I smell some
l'envoy some goose in this

Arm By my sweet soul I mean setting thee at
liberty, enfreedoming thy person thou wert im-
mured, restrained captivated bound

Cost True true and now you will be my pur-
gation and let me loose

Arm I give thee thy liberty set thee from dur-
ance and in lieu thereof impose on thee nothing
but this bear this significant [giving a letter] to
the country maid Jaquenetta there is remunera-
tion for the best ward of mine honour is reward-
ing my dependents *Moth* follow [Exit]

Moth Like the sequel I Signior Costard adieu
Cost My sweet ounce of man's flesh! my incony
Jew! [Exit *MOTH*]

Now will I look to his remuneration—
remuneration! O that s the Latin word for three farthings
three farthings—remuneration "What s the
price of this inkle?" 'One penny' 'No I'll give
you a remuneration why, it carries it Remunera-
tion' why, it is a fairer name than French crown
I will never buy and sell out of this word

Enter BIRON

Biron O, my good knave Costard! exceedingly
well met

Cost Pray you sir how much carnation ribbon
may a man buy for a remuneration?

Biron What is a remuneration?

Cost Marry sir halfpenny farthing 149

Biron Why then three farthing worth of silk

Cost I thank your worship God be w' you!

Biron Stay slave I must employ thee

As thou wilt win my favour good my knave,

Do one thing for me that I shall entreat

Cost When would you have it done sir?

Biron This afternoon

Cost Well I will do it sir fare you well

Biron Thou knowest not what it is

Cost I shall know sir when I have done it

Biron Why villain thou must know first 160

Cost I will come to your worship to-morrow
morning

Biron It must be done this afternoon Hark.
slave it is but this

The Princess comes to hunt here in the park,
And in her train there is a gentle lady

When tongues speak sweetly then they name
her name

And Rosaline they call her ask for her
And to her white hand see thou do commend 169

This seal'd up counsel There's thy guerdon go
Give him a shilling

Cost Gardon O sweet garden! better than remuneration
A leven pence farthing better most
sweet garden I will do at sir in print Gardon
Remuneration!

Bon And I forsooth, in love I that have been
love's whip

A very beadle to a humorous sight
A critic nay a night watch constable
A domineering pedant o'er the boy
Than whom no mortal so magnificent! 180

This wimpled whining purblind wayward boy

This senor junior giant dwarf Dan Cupid

Regent of love rhymer lord of folded arms

The anointed sovereign of sighs and groans

Liege of all loiterers and malcontents

Dread prince of plachets king of codpieces

Sole emperor and great general

Of trotting pariters O my little heart!

And I to be a corporal of his field 190

And wear his colours like a tumbler's hoop!

What I I love I sue I seek a wife!

A woman that is like a German clock

Still a repairing ever out of frame

And never going aright being a watch

But being watch'd that it may still go right!

Nay to be perjur'd which is worst of all

And among three to love the worst of all

A wighty wanton with a velvet bow

With two pitch balls stuck in her face for eyes

As and by heaven one that will do the deed 200

Though Argus were her eunuch and her guard

And I to sigh for her! to watch for her!

To pray for her Go to it is a plague

That Cupid will impose for my neglect

Of his a'm'phry dreadful little might

Well I will love write sigh pray sue and
groan

Some men must love my lady and some

Joan

[Exit

Prin Whoe'er was a show'd a mounting
mind

Well lords to-day we shall have our dispatch

On Saturday we will return to France

Then forester my friend where is the bush

That we must stand and play the murderer in?

For Hereby upon the edge of yonder coppice

A stand where you make the fairest shoot

Prin I thank my beauty I am fair that shoot

And thereupon thou speakst the fairest shoot

For Pardon me madam for I meant not so

Prin What what? first praise me and again say
no?

O short lived pride! Not fair? alack for woe!

For Yes madam fair

Prin Nav never paint me now

Where fair is not praise cannot mend the brow

Here good my glass take this for telling true

Fair payment for foul words is more than due

For Nothing but fair is that which you inherit

Prin See my beauty will be saved by
merit! 21

O heresy in fair fit for these days!

A giving hand though foul shall have fair praise

But come the bow now mercy goes to kill

And shooting well is then accounted ill

Thus will I save my credit in the shoot

Not wounding pity would not let me do it

If wounding then it was to show my skill

That more for praise than purpose meant to kill 20

And out of question so it is sometimes

Glory grows guilty of detested crimes

When for fame's sake for praise an outward
part

We bend to that the working of the heart

As I for praise alone now seek to spill

The poor deer's blood that my heart means no
ill

Boyet Do not curse wives hold that self so'er
enrag'd

Only for praise sake when they strive to be

Lords o'er their lords?

Prin Only for praise and praise we may afford

To any lady that subdues a lord 40

Boyet Here comes a member of the common
wealth

Enter COSTARD

Cost God dig you-den all! Pray you which is
the head lady?

Prin Thou shalt know her fellow by the rest

that have no heads

Cost Which is the greatest lady the highest?

Prin The thickest and the tallest

Cost The thickest and the tallest? it is so truth
is truth

ACT IV

SCENE I The same

Enter the PRINCESS and her train a FORESTER

BOYET ROSALINE MARIS and KATHARINE

Prin Was that the king that spurr'd his horse
so hard

Against the steep upris'ng of the hill?

Boyet I know not but I think it was not he

An your waist, mistress, were as slender as my
waist

One o' these maids' girdles for your waist should
be fit 50

Are not you the chief woman? you are the thick-
est here

Prim What's your will, sir? what's your will?

Cost I have a letter from Monsieur Biron to one
Lady Rosaline

Prim O, thy letter, thy letter! he's a good friend
of mine

Stand aside, good bearer Boyet, you can carve
Break up this capon

Boyet I am bound to serve
This letter is mistook it importeth none here,
It is writ to Jaquenetta

Prim We will read it I swear
Break the neck of the wax, and every one give
ear 59

Boyet [reads] "By heaven that thou art fair, is
most infallible true that thou art beauteous,
truth itself that thou art lovely More fairer than
fair, beautiful than beauteous, truer than truth
itself have commiseration on thy heroical vassal!
The magnanimous and most illustrious king Cop-
hetua set eye upon the pernicious and indubiate
beggar Zenelophon, and he it was that might
rightly say, *Veni vidi, vici*, which to annothan-
ize in the vulgar,—O base and obscure vulgar!—
videlicet, He came saw and overcame he came,
one, saw, two overcame three Who came? the
king why did he come? to see why did he see?
to overcome to whom came he? to the beggar
what saw he? the beggar who overcame he? the
beggar The conclusion is victory on whose
side? the king's The captive is enriched on
whose side? the beggar's The catastrophe is a
nuptial on whose side? the king's no on both
in one, or one in both I am the king for so
stands the comparison thou the beggar, for so
witnesseth thy lowliness Shall I command thy
love? I may shall I enforce thy love? I could
shall I entreat thy love? I will What shalt thou
exchange for rags? robes for titles? titles, for
thyself? me Thus expecting thy reply I pro-
fane my lips on thy foot my eyes on thy picture,
and my heart on thy every part Thine in the
dearest design of industry,

Don Adriano de Armado

Thus dost thou hear the Nemean lion roar 90
Gainst thee, thou lamb that standest as his
prey

Submissive fall his princely feet before

And he from forage will incline to play

But if thou strive poor soul what art thou then?

Food for his rage, repasture for his den

Prim What plume of feathers is he that indited
this letter?

What vane? what weathercock? did you ever
hear better?

Boyet I am much deceived but I remember the
style

Prim Else your memory is bad, going o'er it
erewhile

Boyet This Armado is a Spaniard that keeps
here in court, 100

A phantasime, a Monarcho and one that makes
sport

To the prince and his book-mates

Prim Thou fellow, a word
Who gave thee this letter?

Cost I told you my lord

Prim To whom shouldst thou give it?

Cost From my lord to my lady

Prim From which lord to which lady?

Cost From my lord Biron, a good master of
mine

To a lady of France that he call'd Rosaline

Prim Thou hast mistaken his letter Come,
lords, away

[To ROSALINE] Here, sweet, put up this 'twill be
thine another day

[*Exeunt PRINCESS and train*]

Boyet Who is the suitor? who is the suitor?

Ros Shall I teach you to know? 110

Boyet Ay, my continent of beauty

Ros Why, she that bears the bow

Finely put off!

Boyet My lady goes to kill horns, but, if thou
marry,

Hang me by the neck if horns that year miscarry
Finely put on!

Ros Well, then, I am the shooter

Boyet And who is your deer?

Ros If we choose by the horns, yourself come
not near

Finely put on indeed!

Mar You still wangle with her Boyet, and she
strikes at the brow

Boyet But she herself is hit lower have I hit her
now? 120

Ros Shall I come upon thee with an old saying
that was a man when King Pepin of France was a
little boy as touching the hit it?

Boyet So I may answer thee with one as old
that was a woman when Queen Guinever of
Britain was a little wench as touching the hit it

Ros Thou canst not hit it, hit it hit it

Thou canst not hit it my good

Boyet An I cannot cannot cannot

An I cannot another can

[*Exeunt ROSALINE*]

Cost By my troth most pleasant how both did
fi it!

Mar A mark marvellous well shot for they
both did hit it

Boyet A mark! O mark but that mark! A
mark says my lady

I let the mark have a prick in it to mete ar if it
may be

Mar Wide o the bow hand! I faith your hand
is out

Cost Indeed a must shoot nearer or he'll ne'er
hit the clout

Boyet An if my hand be out then belike your
hand is in

Cost Then will she get the upshoot by cleaving
the pin

Mar Come come you talk greasily your lips
grow foul

Cost She's too hard for you at pricks sir chal-
lenge her to bowl 140

Boyet I fear too much rubbing Good night my
good o'vi (Exit BOYET and MARIA)

Cost By my soul a swain! a most simple clown!
Lord Lord how the ladies and I have put him
down!

O my troth most sweet jests! most in 'ony vul-
gar wit!

When it comes so smoothly off so obscenely as
it were so fit

Armado O th' one side—O a most dainty man!
To see him walk before a lady and to bear her
fan!

To see him kiss his hand! and how most sweetly
a will swear!

And his page o' t' other side that handful of wit!
Ah heavens! it is a most pathological wit! 150

Sola, sola! [Shout within Exit COSTARD running]

SCENE II *The same*

Enter HOLOFERNES SIR NATHANIEL and DULL

Nath Very reverend sport truly and done in
the testimony of a good conscience

Hol The deer was as you know *sanguis* in
blood ripe as the pome vater who now hangeth
like a jewel in the ear of *cælo* the sky the wel-
kun, the heaven and anon falleth like a crab on
the face of *terra* the soil the land, the earth

Nath Truly Master Holofernes the epithets
are sweetly varied like a scholar at the least
but sir I assure ye it was a buck of the first
head 10

Hol Sir Nathaniel *haud credo*

Dull 'Twas not a haud credo 'twas a pricket

Hol Most barbarous intimation yet a kind of
insinuation as it were *in via* in way of expla-
nation *facere* as it were replication or rather

ostentare to show as it were his inclination after
his undressed unpolished uneducated unpruned,
untrained or rather unlettered or ratherest un-
confirmed fashion to insert again my *haud credo*
for a deer 20

Dull I said the deer was not a haud credo
'twas a pricket

Hol Twice sod simplicity *bis coctus!*

O thou monster Ignorance how deformed dost
thou look!

Nath Sir he hath never fed of the dainties that
are bred in a book

he hath not eat paper as it were he hath not
drunk ink his intellect is not replenished he is
only an animal only sensible in the duller parts
And such barren plants are set before us that we
thankful should be

Which we of taste and feeling are for those parts
that do fructify in us more than he 30

For as it would ill become me to be vain indis-
creet or a fool

So were there a patch set on learning to see him
in a school

But *omne bene* say I being of an old father's
mind

Many can brook the weather that love not the
wind

Dull You two are book men can you tell me
by your wit

What was a month old at Cain's birth that's not
five weeks old as yet?

Hol Dictynna Goodman Dull Dictynna good
man Dull

Dull What is Dictynna?

Nath A title to Phœbe to Luna to the moon

Hol The moon was a month old when Adam
was no more 40

And raught not to fill a weeks when he came to
five score

The allusion holds in the exchange

Dull 'Tis true indeed the collusion holds in
the exchange

Hol God comfort thy capacity! I say the allu-
sion holds in the exchange

Dull And I say the collusion holds in the ex-
change for the moon is never but a month old
and I say beside that 'twas a pricket that the
Princess killed

Hol Sir Nathaniel will you hear an extemporal
epitaph on the death of the deer? And to humour
the ignorant call I the deer the Princess killed a
pricket

Nath Perge good Master Holofernes perge so
it shall please you to abrogate scurrility

Hol I will something affect the letter for it
argues *facit* ty

The preylful Princess pierced and prick'd a pretty
pleasing pricket,

Some say a sore, but not a sore, till now made
sore with shooting

The dogs did yell put L to sore then sorel jumps
from thicker, 60

Or pricket sore, or else sorel, the people fall
a hooting

If sore be sore, then L to sore makes fifty sores
one sorel

Of one sore I an hundred make by adding but
one more L

Nath A rare talent!

Dull [Aside] If a talent be a claw look how he
claws him with a talent

Hol This is a gift that I have simple simple a
foolish extravagant spirit, full of forms figures,
shapes, objects ideas, apprehensions motions,
revolutions these are begot in the ventricle of
memory nourished in the womb of *pia mater* and
delivered upon the mellowing of occasion But
the gift is good in those in whom it is acute and I
am thankful for it

Nath Sir I praise the Lord for you and so may
my parishioners for their sons are well tutored
by you and their daughters profit very greatly
under you you are a good member of the com-
monwealth 79

Hol *Mehercle*, if their sons be ingenuous they
shall want no instruction if their daughters be
capable, I will put it to them but *vir sapit qui
pauca loquitur*, a soul feminine saluteth us

Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD

Jaq God give you good morrow master Parson

Hol Master Parson *quasi* pers on An if one
should be pierced which is the one?

Cost Marry master schoolmaster, he that is
likeliest to a hogshead

Hol Piercing a hogshead! a good lustre of con-
ceit in a turf of earth fire enough for a flint pearl
enough for a swine tis pretty it is well 90

Jaq Good master Parson, be so good as read me
this letter it was given me by Costard and sent
me from Don Armado I beseech you read it

Hol *Fauste, precor gelida quando pecus omne sub
umbra Ruminat*—and so forth Ah good old
Mantuan! I may speak of thee as the traveller
doth of Venice,

Venetia Venetia

Chl non ti vede non ti pretua 100

Old Mantuan old Mantuan! who understandeth
thee not, loves thee not *Ut re sol la mi fa*
Under pardon sir, what are the contents? or
rather as Horace says in his *What, my soul,
verses?*

Nath Ay sir, and very learned

Hol Let me hear a staff a stanze, a verse, *lege,
domine*

Nath [reads]

"If love make me forsworn how shall I swear to
love?"

Ah never faith could hold if not to beauty
vow d! 110

Though to my self forsworn to thee I'll faithful
prove

Those thoughts to me were oaks to thee like
oysters bow d

Study his bias leaves and makes his book thine
eyes,

Where all those pleasures live that art would
comprehend

If knowledge be the mark, to I now thee shall
suffice

Well learned is that tongue that well can thee
commend

All ignorant that soul that sees thee without
wonder,

Which is to me some praise that I thy parts
admire

Thy eye Jove's lightning bears, thy voice his
dreadful thunder,

Which not to anger bent is music and sweet
fire 120

Celestial as thou art O pardon love this wrong
That sings heaven's praise with such an earthly
tongue

Hol You find not the apostrophas and so miss
the accent let me supervise the canzonet Here
are only numbers ratified but for the elegancy
facility, and golden cadence of poesy *caret* Ovid-
ius Naso was the man and why indeed, Naso
but for smelling out the odoriferous flowers of
fancy, the jerks of invention? *Imitari* is nothing
so doth the hound his master the ape his keeper,
the tired horse his rider But, damosella virgin
was thus directed to you?

Jaq Ay, sir, from one Monsieur Biron one of
the strange queen's lords

Hol I will overglance the superscript "To the
snow white hand of the most beauteous Lady
Rosaline" I will look again on the intellect of the
letter, for the nomination of the party writing to
the person written unto 'Your lady ship's in all
desired employment *Biron* Sir Nathaniel this
Biron is one of the votaries with the king and
here he hath framed a letter to a sequent of the
stranger queen's which accidentally, or by the
way of progression hath miscarried Trip and
go my sweet deliver this paper into the royal
hand of the King it may concern much
not thy compliment I forgive thy duty

Jaſ Good Coſtard go with me Sir God ſave your life! 150

Coſt Have with thee my girl

[*Exeunt* COSTARD and JAQUEſETTA

Nath Sir you have done this in the fear of God very religiously and as a certain father ſaith—

Hol Sir tell not me of the father I do fear colourable colours But to return to the verſes did they pleaſe you Sir Nathaniel?

Nath Marvellous well for the pen

Hol I do dine to-day at the father's of a certain pupil of mine where if before repaſt it ſhall pleaſe you to gratify the table with a grace I will on my privilege I have with the parents of the foreſaid child or pupil undertake your benediction where I will prove thoſe verſes to be very unlearned neither mourning of poetry wit nor invention I beſeech your ſociety

Nath And thank you too for ſociety ſaith the text is the happineſs of life

Hol And certes th' text moſt infallibly concludes it [*To DULL*] Sir I do invite you too you ſhall not ſay me nay *paſſa verba* Away! the gentles are in their game and we will to our recreation [*Exeunt*

SCENE III *The ſame*

Enter BIRON with a piper

BIRON The king he is hunting the deer I am courſing myſelf they have pitched a roil I am toiling in a pitch—pitch that deſiles deſile! a foul word Well ſet thee down, ſorrow! for ſo they ſay the fool aid and ſo ſay I and I the fool well proved wit! By the Lord this love is as mad as Ajax it kills ſheep it kills me I a ſheep well proved again on my ſide! I will not loſe it if I do hang me ſ faith I will not O but her eye—by this light but for her eye I would not love her y^m for her two eyes Well I do nothing in the world but I in and lie in my throat By heaven I do love and it hath taught me to rhyme and to be melancholy and here is part of my rhyme and here my melancholy Well ſhe hath one in my ſonnets already the clown bore it the fool ſent it and the lady hath it ſweet clown ſweeter fool ſweeteſt lady! By the world I would not care a pin if the other three were in Here comes one with a paper God give him grace to groan [*Stands aſide* 21

Enter the KING with a piper

King Ay me!

Il on [*And*] Shot by heaven! Proceed ſweet Cupid thou haſt thumped him with thy bold bolt under the left pap In faith ſecrets!

King [*reads*]

So ſweet a kiſs the golden ſun gives not
To thoſe freſh morning drops upon the roſe
As thy eye beams when their freſh rays have ſmote

The night of dew that on my cheeks down flows
Nor ſhines the ſilver moon one half ſo bright
Through the transparent boſom of the deep
As doth thy face through tears of mine give light

Thou ſhineſt in every tear that I do weep
No drop but as a coach doth carry thee
So rideſt thou triumphing in my woe

Do but behold the tears that ſwell in me
And they thy glory through my grief will ſhow
But do not love thyſelf then thou wilt keep
My tears for glaſſes and ſtill make me weep
O queen of queens! how far doſt thou excel
No thought can think nor tongue of mortal tell
How ſhall ſhe know my griefs? I'll drop the

paper

Sweet leaves ſhade forth Who is he comes here?

Steps aſide

What Longaville! an ſtranger! liſten ear

BIRON Now in thy likeneſs one more fool appear!

Enter LONGAVILLE with a paper

Long Ay me I am forſworn!

BIRON Why he comes in like a perjure, wearing papers

King In love I hope ſweet fellowſhip in ſhame!

BIRON One drunkard loves another of the name 50

Long Am I the firſt that have been perjured ſo?

BIRON I could put thee in comfort Not by two that I know

Thou makeſt the triumvir the corner-cap of ſociety

The ſhape of Love's Tyburn that hangs up ſimplicity

Long I fear theſe tubborn lines lack power to move

O ſweet Maria empreſs of my love!

Theſe numbers will I tear and write in proſe

BIRON O rhymes are guards on wanton Cupid's hoſe

Diſfigure not his ſlop

Long This ſame ſhall go [*Reads*]

Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye
Gainſt whom the world cannot hold argument
Persuade my heart to this falſe perjury?

Vows for thee broke deſerve not puniſhment

A woman I forſwore but I will prove

Thou being a giddy ſ I forſwore not thee

My vow was earthly thou a heavenly love

Thy grace being gained cures all diſgrace in me

Vows are but breath and breath a vapour is
Then thou, fair sun, which on my earth dost
shine,

Exhalest this vapour vow, in thee it is 70

If broken then, it is no fault of mine

If by me broke what fool is not so wise

To lose an oath to win a paradise?

Biron This is the liver-vein which makes
flesh a deity,

A green goose a goddess pure, pure idolatry
God amend us, God amend! we are much out o
the way

Long By whom shall I send this?—Company!
stay [Steps aside]

Biron All hid all hid, an old infant play

Like a demigod here sit I in the sky
And wretched fools' secrets heedfully o'er eye 80
More sacks to the mill! O heavens I have my
wish!

Enter DUMAINE, with a paper

Dumaine transform'd! four woodcocks in a dish!

Dum O most divine Kate!

Biron O most profane cockcomb!

Dum By heaven, the wonder in a mortal eye!

Biron By earth, she is not, corporal there you
lie

Dum Her amber hair for foul hath amber
quoted

Biron An amber colour'd raven was well noted

Dum As upright as the cedar

Biron Stoop I say

Her shoulder is with child

Dum As fair as day 90

Biron Ay as some days, but then no sun
must shune

Dum O that I had my wish!

Long And I had mine!

King And I mine too, good Lord!

Biron Amen, so I had mine is not that a good
word?

Dum I would forget her, but a fever she

Reigns in my blood and will remember'd be

Biron A fever in your blood! why, then incision

Would let her out in saucers sweet misprision!

Dum Once more I'll read the ode that I have
writ

Biron Once more I'll mark how love can vary
wit 100

Dum [reads]

"On a day—alack the day!—

Love whose month is ever May,

Spied a blossom passing fair

Playing in the wanton air

Through the velvet leaves the wind

All unseen can passage find

That the lover sick to death,

Wish himself the heaven's breath

Air, quoth he thy cheeks may blow,

Air would I might triumph so! 110

But alack, my hand is sworn

Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn

Vow alack for youth unmeet

Youth so apt to pluck a sweet!

Do not call it sin in me,

That I am forsworn for thee

Thou for whom Jove would swear

Juno but an Ethiop were,

And deny himself for Jove,

Turning mortal for thy love" 120

This will I send and something else more plain

That shall express my true love's fasting pain

O would the King Biron and Longaville,

Were lovers too! ill to example ill

Would from my forehead wipe a perjured note,

For none offend where all alike do dote

Long [advancing] Dumaine thy love is far from
charity

That in love's grief desirest society

You may look pale but I should blush, I know,

To be overheard and taken napping so 130

King [advancing] Come sir, you blush, as his
your case is such

You chide at him offending twice as much

You do not love Maria, Longaville

Did never sonnet for her sake compile

Nor never lay his wreathed arms athwart

His loving bosom to keep down his heart

I have been closely shrouded in this bush

And mark'd you both and for you both did blush

I heard your guilty rhymes, observed your fashion

Saw sighs reek from you, noted well your passion

"Ay me! says one O Jove! the other
cries, 141

One her hairs were gold crystal the other's eyes

[To LONGAVILLE] You would for paradise break
faith and troth

[To DUMAINE] And Jove for your love would in
fringe an oath

What will Biron say when that he shall hear

Faith so infringed which such zeal did swear?

How will he scorn! how will he spend his wit!

How will he triumph leap, and laugh at it!

For all the wealth that ever I did see

I would not have him know so much by me 150

Biron Now step I forth to whip his poeisy

Advancing

Ah good my liege I pray thee pardon me!

Good heart, what grace hast thou thus to

These worms for loving that art most in love

Your eyes do make no coaches, in,

There is no certain princess that appears
 You'll not be perjured 'tis a hateful thing
 Tush none but minstrels like of sonnetting!
 But are you not ashamed? nay are you not
 All three of you to be thus much o'er-shot? 160
 You found his mote the King your mote did see
 But I a beam do find in each of three
 O what a scene of foolery have I seen
 Of sighs of groans of sorrow and of teen!
 O me with what strict patience have I sat
 To see a king transformed to a gnat!
 To see great Hercules whipping a gig
 And profound Solomon to tune a psalm
 And Nestor play at push-pin with the boys
 And critic Timon laugh at idle toys! 170
 Where lies thy grief? O tell me good Dumain?
 And gentle Longaville where lies thy pain?
 And where my liege's all about the breast
 A caudle ho!

King Too bitter is thy jest
 Are we betray'd thus to thy over-view?

Biron Not you to me but I betray'd by you
 I that am honest I that hold it sin
 To break the vow I am engaged in
 I am betray'd by keeping company
 With men like men of inconstancy 180
 When shall you see me write a thing in rhyme?
 Or groan for love? or spend a minute's time
 In prun'g me? When shall you hear that I
 Will praise a hand a foot a face an eye
 A gait a state a brow a breast a waist
 A leg a limb?

King Soft! whither away so fast?
 A true man or a thief that gallops so?

Biron I post from love good lover let me go

Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD

Jaq God bless the King!

King What present hast thou there?

Cost Some certain treason

King What makes treason here? 190

Cost Nay it makes nothing sir

King If it mar nothing neither
 The treason and you go in peace away together
Jaq I beseech your Grace let this letter be
 read

Our parson misdoubts it: 'twas treason he said

King Biron read it over

Giving him the paper

Where hadst thou it?

Jaq Of Costard

King Where hadst thou it?

Cost Of Dun Adramadio Dun Adramadio

Biron Tears the letter

King How now! what is in you? why dost
 thou tear it? 200

Biron A toy my liege a toy your Grace
 needs not fear it

Long It did move him to passion and therefore
 let's hear it

Dum It is Biron's writing and here is his name
 [*Gathering up the pieces*]

Biron [*To COSTARD*] Ah you whoreson loozer
 head! you were born to do me shame

Guilty my lord guilty! I confess I confess

King What?

Biron That you three fools lack'd me fool to
 make up the mess

He he and you and you my liege and I
 Are pick-purses in love and we deserve to die

O dismiss this audience and I shall tell you more

Dum Now the number is even 211

Biron True true we are four

Will these turtles be gone?

King Hence sirs away!

Cost Walk aside the true folk and let the
 traitors stay

[*Exeunt COSTARD and JAQUENETTA*]
Biron Sweet lords sweet lovers O let us em-
 brace!

As true we are as flesh and blood can be
 The sea will ebb and flow heaven show his face

Young blood doth not obey an old decree

We cannot cross the cause why we were born

Therefore of all hands must we be forsworn

King What did these rent lines show some
 love of thine? 220

Biron Did they quoth you? Who sees the
 heavenly Rosaline

That like a rude and savage man of Ind

At the first opening of the gorgeous east

Bows not his vassal head and stricken blind

Kisses the base ground with obedient breast?

What peremptory eagle-sighted eye

Dares look upon the heaven of her brow

That is not blinded by her majesty?

King What zeal what fury hath inspired thee
 now?

My love her mistress is a gracious moon 230

She an attending star scarce seen a light

Biron My eyes are then no eyes nor I Biron

O but for my love day would turn to night!

Of all complexions the cull'd sovereignty

Do meet as at a fair in her fair cheek

Where several worthies mail one dignity

Where nothing wants that want itself doth seek

Lend me the flourish of all gentle tongues—

Fie painted rhetoric! O she needs it not

To things of sale a seller's praise belongs 240

She passes praise then praise too short doth
 blot

A wither'd hermit five score winters worn

Might shake off fifty looking in her eye
 Beauty doth varnish age, as if new-born
 And gives the crutch the cradle & infancy
 O tis the sun that maketh all things shine
King By heav en, thy love is black as ebony
Biron Is ebony like her? O wood divine!
 A wife of such wood were felicity
 O, who can give an oath? where is a book? 250
 That I may swear beauty doth beauty lack,
 If that she learn not of her eye to look
 No face is fair that is not full so black
King O paradox! Black is the badge of hell,
 The hue of dungeons, and the suit of night
 And beauty's crest becomes the heavens well
Biron Devils soonest tempt, resembling spirits
 of light
 O, if in black my lady's brows be deck'd
 It mourns that painting and usurping hair
 Should ravish doters with a false aspect 260
 And therefore is she born to make black fair
 Her favour turns the fashion of the days
 For native blood is counted painting now,
 And therefore red that would avoid dispraise,
 Paints itself black to imitate her brow
Dum To look like her are chimney sweepers
 black
Long And since her time are colliers counted
 bright
King And Ethiopes of their sweet complexion
 crack
Dum Dark needs no candles now, for dark is
 light
Biron Your mistresses dare never come in rain,
 For fear their colours should be wash'd away
King 'Twere good, yours did for sir, to tell
 you plain,
 I'll find a fairer face not wash'd to-day
Biron I'll prove her fair, or talk till doomsday
 here
King No devil will fright thee then so much as
 she
Dum I never I new man hold vile stuff so dear
Long Look, here's thy love my foot and her
 face see
Biron O if the streets were paved with thine
 eyes
 Her feet were much too dainty for such tread!
Dum O vile! then as she goes what upward
 lies 280
 The street should see as she walk'd overhead
King But what of this? are we not all in love?
Biron Nothing so sure, and thereby all for
 sworn
King Then leave this chat and, good Biron
 now prove
 Our loving lawful, and our faith not torn

Dum Ay, marry there, some flattery for this
 evil
Long O some authority how to proceed
 Some tricks some quillets how to cheat the devil
Dum Some salve for perjury
Biron Tis more than need
 Have at you then affection's men at arms 290
 Consider what you first did swear unto,
 To fast to study, and to see no woman
 Flat treason against the kingly state of youth
 Say can you fast? your stomachs are too young,
 And abstinence engenders maladies
 And where that you have vow'd to study, lords,
 In that each of you have forsworn his book
 Can you still dream and pore and thereon look?
 For when would you, my lord or you or you
 Have found the ground of study's excellence 300
 Without the beauty of a woman's face?
 [From women's eye this doctrine I derive
 They are the ground the books the academes
 From whence doth spring the true Promethean
 fire]
 Why universal plodding poisons up
 The numble spirits in the arteries
 As motion and long-during action tires
 The sinewy vigour of the traveller
 Now for not looking on a woman's face,
 You have in that forsworn the use of eyes 310
 And study too the causer of your vow,
 For where is any author in the world
 Teaches such beauty as a woman's eye?
 Learning is but an adjunct to ourself
 And where we are our learning likewise
 Then when ourselves we see in ladies' eyes
 Do we not likewise see our learning there?
 O we have made a vow to study, lords
 And in that vow we have forsworn our book's
 For when would you my liege or you or you,
 In leaden contemplation have found out 321
 Such fiery numbers as the prompting eyes
 Of beauty's tutors have enrich'd you with?
 Other slow arts entirely keep the brain,
 And therefore finding barren practises,
 Scarce show a harvest of their heavy toil
 But love first learned in a lady's eyes
 Lives not alone immured in the brain
 But with the motion of all elements
 Courses as swift as thought in every power 330
 And gives to every power a double power,
 Above their functions and their offices
 It adds a precious seeing to the eye
 A lover's eyes will gaze an eagle blind
 A lover's ear will hear the lowest sound
 When the suspicious head of theft is stopp'd
 Love's feeling is more soft and sensible
 Than are the tender horns of cockled snails,

Love's tongue proves daimy Bacchus gross in taste
If so our copper buys no better treasure

[Exit]

For valour is not Love a Hercules 340
Still climbing trees in the Hesperides?
Subtle as Sphinx as sweet and musical
As bright Apollo's lure strung with his hair
And when Love speaks the voice of all the gods

Make heaven drowsy with the harmony
Never durst poet touch a pen to write
Until his ink were temper'd with Love's sighs
O then his lines would ravish savage ears
And plant in tyrants mild humility
From women's eyes this doctrine I derive 350
They sparkle still the right Promethean fire
They are the books the arts the academies
That show contain and nourish all the world
Else none at all in aught proves excellent
Then fools you were these women to forswear
Or keepin' what is sworn you will prove fools
For wisdom's sake a word that all men love
Or for love's sake a word that loves all men,
Or for men's sake the authors of these women
Or women's sake by whom women are men 360
Let us once lose our oaths to find ourselves
Or else we lose ourselves to keep our oaths
It is religion to be thus forsworn
For charity itself fulfils the law
And who can sever love from charity?

King Saint Cupid then! and soldiers to the field!

Biron Advance your standards and upon them lords

Pell mell do with them but be first advised
In conflict that you get the sun of them 369

Long Now to plain dealing lay these gloves by
Shall we resolve to woo these girls of France?

King An I win them too therefore let us de-
scend

Some entertainment for them in their tents

Biron First from the park let us conduct them
thither

Then home and every man attach the hand
Of his fair mistress in the afternoon
We will with some strange pastime solace them
Such as the shortness of the time can shape
For revels dances masks and merry hours
Forerun fair Love strewing her way with
flowers 380

King Away away! no time shall be omitted
That will betime and may by us be fitted

Biron Allons! allons! Sow'd cockle reap'd no
corn

And justice always whirls in equal measure
Light wenches may prove plagues to men for
sworn

ACT V

SCENE I The same

Enter HOLOFERNES SIR NATHANIEL, and

DULL

Hol Satis quo t sufficit

Nath I praise God for you sir your reasons
at dinner have been sharp and sententious
pleasant without scurrility witty without affect-
tion audacious without impudency learned
without opinion, and strange without heresy I
did converse this quondam day with a companion
of the king's who is intitled nominated or
called Don Adriano de Armado

Hol Novis hominem triquam te his humour is
lofty his discourse peremptory his tongue
filed his eye ambitious his gait majestical and
his general behaviour vain ridiculous and
thrasomical He is too picked too spruce too
affected too odd as it were too peregrinate I
may call it

Nath A most singular and choice epithet

Draws out his table book

Hol He draweth out the thread of his ver-
bosity finer than the staple of his argument I
abhor such fanatical phantasies such insociable
and point-devise companions such rackers of
orthography as to speak dout fine when he
should say doubt det when he should pronounce
debt—d e b t not d e t he clepeth a calf *cauf*
half *hauf* neighbour *neowar* *nelour* nei h abbre-
viated ne This is abominable—which he would
call abominable it insinuateth me of insanie
anne intelligis domine? to make frantic lunatic

Nath Laus Deo bene intelligo 39

Hol Bon bon fort bon! Priscian a little
scratched will serve

Nath I sdesne quis tenuit?

Hol Vultis et gaudeo

Enter ARMADO MOTH and COSTARD

Arm [To MOTH] Ch errah!

Hol Quere churrah not sirrah?

Arm Men of peace well encountered

Hol Most military sir salutation

Moth [Aside to COSTARD] They have been at a
great feast of languages and stolen the scraps

Cost O they have lived long on the almsbasket
of words I marvel thy master hath not eaten
thee for a word for thou art not so long by the
head as *honorificatitudinibus* thou art easier
swallowed than a flap-dragon

Moth Peace! the peal begins

Arm [To HOLOFERNES] Monsieur, are you not lettered?

Moth Yes yes he teaches boys the hornbook What is *a, b*, spelt backward with the horn on his head?

Hol *Ba pueritia*, with a horn added

Moth *Ba* most silly sheep with a horn You hear his learning

Hol *Quis, quis*, thou consonant?

Moth The third of the five vowels if you repeat them, or the fifth, if I

Hol I will repeat them—*a, e, i, —*

Moth The sheep the other two concludes it,—
o, u 60

Arm Now, by the salt wave of the Mediterranean a sweet touch a quick venue of wit's snap, quick, and home! it rejoiceth my intellect true wit!

Moth Offered by a child to an old man, which is wit-odd

Hol What is the figure? what is the figure?

Moth Horns

Hol Thou disputest like an infant go whip thy gig 70

Moth Lend me your horn to make one and I will whip about your infamy *circum circè*—a gig of a cuckold's horn

Cost An I had but one penny in the world thou shouldst have it to buy gingerbread hold, there is the very remuneration I had of thy master thou halfpenny purse of wit thou pigeon egg of discretion O, an the heavens were so pleased that thou wert but my bastard what a joyful father wouldst thou make me! Go to thou hast it *ad dunghill*, at the fingers ends as they say

Hol O I smell false Latin *dunghill* for *unguem*

Arm Arts man preambulate, we will be singuled from the barbarous Do you not educate youth at the charge house on the top of the mountain?

Hol Or *mons*, the hill

Arm At your sweet pleasure, for the mountain

Hol I do sans question 91

Arm Sir it is the King's most sweet pleasure and affection to congratulate the Princess at her pavilion in the posteriors of this day which the rude multitude call the afternoon

Hol The posterior of the day most generous sir is liable congruent and measurable for the afternoon the word is well culled chose sweet and apt I do assure you sir I do assure 99

Arm Sir, the King is a noble gentleman and my familiar I do assure ye very good friend for what is inward between us let it pass I do beseech thee remember thy courtesy I beseech

thee, apparel thy head and among other important and most serious designs and of great import indeed, too, but let that pass for I must tell thee, it will please his Grace by the world, sometime to lean upon my poor shoulder, and with his royal finger thus dally with my excrement with my mustachio, but sweet heart let that pass By the world I recount no fable some certain special honours it pleaseth his greatness to impart to Armado a soldier, a man of travel, that hath seen the world, but let that pass The very all of all is—but sweet heart, I do implore secrecy—that the King would have me present the Princess sweet chuck with some delightful ostentation or show or pageant, or antique or firework Now understanding that the curate and your sweet self are good at such eruptions and sudden breaking out of mirth, as it were I have acquainted you withal, to the end to crave your assistance

Hol Sir you shall present before her the Nine Worthies Sir as concerning some entertainment of time, some show in the posterior of this day to be rendered by our assistants at the King's command and this most gallant illustrate and learned gentleman before the Princess, I say none so fit as to present the Nine Worthies 1,0

Nath Where will you find men worthy enough to present them?

Hol Joshua, yourself myself and this gallant gentleman Judas Maccabæus this swain because of his great limb or joint shall pass Pompey the Great the page Hercules—

Arm Pardon sir error he is not quantity enough for that Worthy's thumb he is not so big as the end of his club 1,9

Hol Shall I have audience? he shall present Hercules in minority his enter and exit shall be strangling a snake, and I will have an apology for that purpose

Moth An excellent device! so if any of the audience hiss you may cry "Well done Hercules! now thou crushest the snake!" That is the way to make an offence gracious though few have the grace to do it

Arm For the rest of the Worthies —

Hol I will play three myself 150

Moth Thrice worthy gentleman!

Arm Shall I tell you a thing?

Hol We attend

Arm We will have if this fadge not, an antique I beseech you follow

Hol You Goodman Dull! thou hast spoken no word all this while

Dull Nor understood none neither sir

Hol Allons! we will employ thee.

Dull I'll make one in a dance or so or I will
 play 160
 On the tabor to the Worthies and let them dance
 the hav
Hol Most dull honest Dull! To our sport
 away! [Exeunt]

SCENE II *The same*

*Enter the PRINCESS KATHARINE ROSALINE and
 MARIA*

Prin Sweet hearts we shall be rich ere we de-
 part
 If fairings come thus plentifully in
 A lady w all d about with diamonds'
 Look you what I have from the loving king
Ros Madam came nothing else along with
 that?
Prin Nothing but thus' yes as much love in
 rhyme
 As shall be cramm'd up in a sheet of paper
 Writ o' both sides the leaf margent and all
 That he was fain to seal on Cupid's name
Ros That was the way to make his godhead
 wax 10
 For he hath been five thousand years a boy
Kath Ay and a shrewd unhappy gallows too
Ros You'll ne'er be friends with him a kill d
 your sister
Kath He made her melancholy sad and heavy
 And so she died had she been light like you
 Of such a merry numble stirring spirit
 She might ha' been a grandam ere she died
 And so may you for a light heart lives long
Ros What's your dark meaning mouse of this
 light word?
Kath A light condition in a beauty dark 20
Ros We need more light to find your meaning
 out
Kath You'll mar the light by taking it in snuff
 Therefore I'll darkly end the argument
Ros Look what you do you do it still: the
 dark
Kath So do not you for you are a light wench
Ros Indeed I weigh not you and therefore light
Kath You weigh me not? O that's you care not
 for me
Ros Great reason for past cure is still past
 care
Prin Well bandied both a set of wit well
 play d
 But Rosaline you have a favour too 30
 Who sent it? and what is it?
Ros I would you knew
 An if my face were but as fair as yours
 My favour were as great be witness this
 Nay I have verses too I thank Biron

The numbers true and were the numbering too
 I were the fairest goddess on the ground
 I am compared to twenty thousand fairs
 O he hath drawn my picture in his letter!
Prin Any thing like?
Ros Much in the letters nothing in the praise
Prin Beauteous as ink a good conclusion 40
Kath Fair as a text B in a copy book
Ros Ware pencils ho! let me not die your
 debtor
 My red dominical my golden letter
 O that your face were not so full of O's!
Kath A pox of that jest! and I beshrew all
 shrows
Prin But Katherine what was sent to you from
 fair Dumain?
Kath Madam this glove
Prin Did he not send you twain?
Kath Yes madam and moreover 50
 Some thousand verses of a faithful lover
 A huge translation of hypocrisy
 Vilely compiled profound simplicity
Mar This and these pearls to me sent Lon-
 gaville
 The letter is too long by half a mile
Prin I think no less Dost thou not wish in
 heart
 The chain were longer and the letter short?
Mar Ay or I would these hands might never
 part
Prin We are wise girls to mock our lovers so
Ros They are worse fools to purchase mocking
 so
 That same Biron I'll torture ere I go 60
 O that I knew he were but in by the week!
 How I would make him fawn and beg and seek
 And wait the season and observe the times
 And spend his prodigal wits in bootless rhymes
 And shape his service wholly to my hests
 And make him proud to make me proud that
 jests!
 So pertrant like would I o'erstay his state
 That he should be my fool and I his fate
Prin None are so surely caught when they are
 catch d
 As wit turn'd fool folly in wisdom hatch'd 70
 Hath wisdom's warrant and the help of school
 And wit's own grace to grace a learned fool
Ros The blood of youth burns not with such
 excess
 As gravity's revolt to wantonness
Mar Folly in fools bears not so strong a note
 As foolery in the wise when wit doth dote
 Since all the power thereof it doth apply
 To prove by wit worth in simplicity
Prin Here comes Boyet and mirth is in his face

Enter BOYET

Boyet O I am stabb'd with laughter! Where's her Grace? 80

Prim Thy news, Boyet?

Boyet Prepare madam prepare!

Arm wenchers, arm! encounters mounted are
Against your peace Love doth approach disguised

Armed in arguments, you'll be surprised
Must your wits stand in your own defence,
Or hide your heads like cowards, and fly hence

Prim Saint Denis to Saint Cupid! What are they
That charge their breath against us? say scout, say

Boyet Under the cool shade of a sycamore
I thought to close mine eyes some half an hour,
When, lo! to interrupt my purposed rest 91

Toward that shade I might behold address
The King and his companions warily
I stole into a neighbour thicket by,

And overheard what you shall overhear

That, by and by, disguised they will be here

Their herald is a pretty knavish page,

That well by heart hath conn'd his embassage

Action and accent did they teach him there

"Thus must thou speak, and "thus thy body bear"

And ever and anon they made a doubt 101

Presence majestical would put him out,

"For," quoth the King "an angel shalt thou see,

Yet fear not thou but speak audaciously"

The boy replied, "An angel is not evil

I should have fear'd her had she been a devil"

With that, all laugh'd and clapp'd him on the shoulder,

Making the bold wag by their praises bolder

One rubb'd his elbows thus and fleer'd and swore

A better speech was never spoke before, 110

Another, with his finger and his thumb

Cried "Viva! we will do it come what will come",

The third he caper'd, and cried "All goes well",

The fourth turn'd on the toe, and down he fell

With that they all did tumble on the ground

With such a zealous laughter so profound,

That in this spleen ridiculous appears

To check their folly passion's solemn tears

Prim But what, but what, come they to visit us?

Boyet They do, they do, and are apparell'd 120

thus

Like Muscovites or Russians as I guess

Their purpose is to parle, to court and dance

And every one his love feat will advance

Unto his several mistress which they'll know

By favours several which the, did bestow

Prim And will they so? the gallants shall be task'd

For, ladies we will every one be mask'd,

And not a man of them shall have the grace,

Despite of suit to see a lady's face

Hold Rosaline this favour thou shalt wear 130

And then the King will court thee for his dear,

Hold take thou this, my sweet and give me thine

So shall Biron take me for Rosaline

And change you favours too so shall your loves

Woo contrary deceived by these removes

Ros Come on, then wear the favours most in sight

Kath But in this changing what is your intent?

Prim The effect of my intent is to cross theirs

They do it but in mocking merriment

And mock for mock is only my intent 140

Their several counsels they unbosom shall

To loves mistook, and so be mock'd withal

Upon the next occasion that we meet

With visages display'd to talk and greet

Ros But shall we dance, if they desire us to?

Prim No, to the death we will not move a foot

Nor to their penn'd speech render we no grace,

But while tis spoke each turn away her face

Boyet Why that contempt will kill the speaker's heart

And quite divorce his memory from his part 150

Prim Therefore I do it and I make no doubt

The rest will ne'er come in, if he be out

There's no such sport as sport by sport o'er-thrown

To make theirs ours and ours none but our own

So shall we stay mocking intended game

And they, well mock'd depart away with shame

Trumpets sound within

Boyet The trumpet sounds be mask'd, the

maskers come [*The LADIES mask*]

*Enter Blackamoors with music, MOTH the KING
BIRON LONGAVILLE, and DUMAINE in Russian
habits and masked*

Moth All hail, the richest beauties on the earth!—

Boyet Beauties no richer than rich taffeta

Moth A holy parcel of the fairest dames 160

[*The LADIES turn their backs to him*]

That ever turn'd their—backs—to mortal views!

Biron [*Aside to MOTH*] Their eyes villain, their

eyes

Moth That ever turn'd their eyes to mortal

views!—

Out—

Boyet True out indeed

Moth Out of your favours heavenly spirits
vouchsafe

Not to behold—

Iron [*Aside to moth*] Once to behold rogue

Moth Once to behold with your sun beamed
eyes

—with your sun beamed eyes— 169

Boyet They will not answer to that epithet

You were best call it daughter beamed eyes

Moth They do not mark me and that brings
me out

Iron Is this your perfectness? be gone you
rogue! [*Exit moth*]

Ros What would these strangers? know their
minds *Boyet*

If they do speak our language tis our will

That some plain man recount their purposes

Know what they would

Boyet What would you with the Princess?

Iron Nothing but peace and gentle visitation

Ros What would they say they? 180

Boyet Nothing but peace and gentle visitation

Ros Why that they have and bid them so be
gone

Boyet She says you have it and you may be
gone

King Say to her we have measured many miles
To tread a measure with her on this grass

Boyet They say that they have measured many
a mile

To tread a measure with you on this grass

Ros It is not so Ask them how many inches

Is in one mile if they have measured many

The measure then of one is easily told 190

Boyet If to come hither you have measured
miles

And many miles the Princess bids you tell

How many inches doth fill up one mile

Iron Tell her we measure them by weary
steps

Boyet She hears herself

Ros How many weary steps

Of many weary miles you have overcome

Are numbered in the travel of one mile?

Iron We number nothing that we spend for
you

Our duty is so rich so infinite

That we may do it still without accompt 200

Vouchsafe to show the sunshine of your face

That we like savages may worship it

Ros My face is but a moon, and clouded too

King Blessed are clouds to do as such clouds
do!

Vouchsafe, bright moon, and these thy stars to
shine

Those clouds removed upon our watery cyne

Ros O vain petitioner! beg a greater matter
Thou now requestst but moonshine in the water

King Then, in our measure do but vouchsafe
one change

Thou bidst me beg this begging is not strange

Ros Play music, then! Nay you must do it
soon [*Music plays*] 211

Not yet! no dance! Thus change I like the moon.

King Will you not dance? How come you thus
estranged?

Ros You took the moon at full but now she is
changed

King Yet still she is the moon and I the man
The music plays vouchsafe some motion to it

Ros Our ears vouchsafe it

King But your legs should do it

Ros Since you are strangers and come here by
chance,

We'll not be nice take hands We will not
dance

King Why take we hands then?

Ros Only to part friends 220

Curtis sweet hearts and so the measure ends

King More measure of this measure be not
nice

Ros We can afford no more at such a price

King Prize you yourselves what buys your
company?

Ros Your absence only

King That can never be

Ros Then cannot we be bought and so adieu

Twice to your visor and half once to you

King If you deny to dance let's hold more chat

Ros In private then

King I am best pleased with that

They converse apart

Iron White handed mistress one sweet word
with three 230

Prin Honey and milk and sugar there is three

Iron Nay then two treys and if you grow so
nice

Metheglin wort and malmsey well run dice!

There's half a-dozen sweets

Prin Seventh sweet adieu

Since you can cog I'll play no more with you

Iron One word in secret

Prin Let it not be sweet

Iron Thou grievest my gall

Prin Gall! bitter

Iron Therefore meet

They converse apart

Dum Will you vouchsafe with me to chance a
word?

Mar Name it

Dum Fair lady—

Mar Say you so? Fair lord—

Take that for your fair lady

Dum Please it you, 240

As much in private, and I'll bid adieu

They converse apart

Kath What, was your vizard made without a tongue?

Long I know the reason lady, why you ask

Kath O for your reason! quickly, sir, I long

Long You have a double tongue within your mask

And would afford my speechless vizard half

Kath "Veal," quoth the Dutchman Is not "veal" a calf?

Long A calf, fair lady!

Kath No, a fair lord calf

Long Let's part the word

Kath No, I'll not be your half

Take all, and wean it, it may prove an ox 250

Long Look, how you butt yourself in these sharp mocks!

Will you give horns chaste lady? do not so

Kath Then die a calf, before your horns do grow

Long One word in private with you ere I die

Kath Bleat softly then, the butcher hears you cry

They converse apart

Boyet The tongues of mocking wenches are as keen

As is the razor's edge invisible,

Cutting a smaller hair than may be seen

Above the sense of sense so sensible

Seemeth their conference, their conceits have wings 260

Fleeter than arrows, bullets wind thought, swifter things

Ros Not one word more my maids break off, break off

Biron By heaven all dry-beaten with pure scoff!

King Farewell mad wenches, you have simple wits

Prim Twenty adieus my frozen Muscovits

[*Exeunt KING LORDS and Blackmoors*]

Are these the breed of wits so wonder'd at?

Boyet Tapers they are, with your sweet breaths puff'd out

Ros Well liking wits they have, gross, gross fat fat

Prim O poverty in wit, kingly poor flout!

Will they not, think you hang themselves tonight? 270

Or ever but in vizards, show their faces?

This pert Biron was out of countenance quite

Ros O, they were all in lamentable cases!

The King was weeping ripe for a good word

Prim Biron did swear himself out of all suit

Mar Dumain was at my service, and his sword

"No point," quoth I, my servant straight was

mute

Kath Lord Longaville said I came o'er his heart

And throw you what he call'd me?

Prim Qualm, perhaps

Kath Yes, in good faith

Prim Go sickness as thou art! 280

Ros Well, better wits have worn plain statute-caps

But will you hear? the King is my love sworn

Prim And quick Biron hath plighted faith to me

Kath And Longaville was for my service born

Mar Dumain is mine as sure as bark on tree

Boyet Madam and pretty mistresses give ear

Immediately they will again be here

In their own shapes for it can never be

They will digest this harsh indignity

Prim Will they return?

Boyet They will they will, God knows, 290

And leap for joy, though they are lame with blows

Therefore change favours, and when they repair

Blow like sweet roses in this summer air

Prim How blow? how blow? speak to be understood

Boyet Fair ladies mask'd are roses in their bud,

Dismask'd their damask sweet commixture shown

Are angels vailing clouds, or roses blown

Prim Avaunt perplexity! What shall we do,

If they return in their own shapes to woo?

Ros Good madam if by me you'll be advised

Let's mock them still as well known as disguised

Let us complain to them what fools were here

Disguised like Muscovites, in shapeless gear

And wonder what they were and to what end

Their shallow shows and prologue vilely penn'd

And their rough carriage so ridiculous,

Should be presented at our tent to us

Boyet Ladies withdraw the gallants are at hand

Prim Whip to our tents as roes run o'er land

[*Exeunt PRINCESS ROSALINE, KATHARINE and MARIA*]

Re-enter the KING BIRON LONGAVILLE, and DUMAIN in their proper habits

King Fair sir God save you! Where's the

Princess?

Boyet Gone to her tent Please it your Majesty

Command me any service to her thither?

King That she vouchsafe me audience for one word

Boyet I will and so will she I know my lord
[Exit]

Biron This fellow pecks up wit as pigeons
pease

And utters it again when God doth please
He is wit s pedler and retails his wares
At wakes and wassails meetings markets fairs
And we that sell by gross the Lord doth know
Have not the grace to grace it with such show
This gallant pins the wenches on his sleeve 321
Had he been Adam he had tempted Eve
A can carve too and lisp why this is he
That kiss d his hand away in courtesy
This is the ape of form monsieur the nice
That when he plays at tables chides the dice
In honourable terms nay he can sing
A mean most meanly and in ushering
Mend him who can the ladies call him sweet
The stairs as he treads on them kiss his feet
This is the flower that smiles on every one 331
To show his teeth as white as whale s bone
And consciences that will not die in debt
Pay him the due of honey tongued Boyet
Am A blister on his sweet tongue with my
heart

That put Armado s page out of his part

Biron See where it comes! Behaviour what
wert thou

Till this madman show d thee? and what art thou
now?

*Re enter the PRINCESS ushered by BOYET ROSA
LINE MARIA and KATHARINE*

King All hail sweet madam and fair time of
day! 339

Prin Fair in all hail is foul as I conceive

King Construe my speeches better if you may

Prin Then wish me better I will give you leave

King We came to visit you and purpose now
To lead you to our court vouchsafe it then

Prin This field shall hold me and so hold your
vow

Nor God nor I delights in perjured men

King Rebuke me not for that which you pro-
voke

The virtue of your eye must break my oath

Prin You nickname virtue vict you should
have spoke

For virtue s office never breaks men s troth

Now by maiden honour yet as pure 351
As the unsullied lily I protest

A world of torments though I should endure

I would not yield to be your house s guest
So much I hate a breaking cause to be

Of heavenly oaths vow d with integrity

King O you have liv ed in desolation here

Unseen unvisited much to our shame

Prin Not so my lord it is not so I swear

We have had pastimes here and pleasant
game

A mess of Russians left us but of late 361

King How madam! Russians!

Prin Ay in truth my lord

Trim gallants full of courtship and of stare

Ros Madam speak true It is not so my lord

My lady to the manner of the days

In courtesy give undeserving praise

We four indeed confronted were with four

In Russian habit here they stay d an hour

And talk d apace and in that hour my lord

They did not bless us with one happy word 370

I dare not call them fools but this I think

When they are thirsty fools would fain have
drink

Biron This jest is dry to me Fair gentle sweet
Your wit makes wise things foolish when we
greet

With eyes best seeing heaven s fiery eye

By light we lose light your capacity

Is of that nature that to your huge store

Wise things seem foolish and rich things but
poor

Ros This proves you wise and rich for in my
eye—

Biron I am a fool and full of poverty 380

Ros But that you take what doth to you belong

It were a fault to snatch words from my tongue

Biron O I am yours and all that I possess!

Ros All the fool mine?

Biron I cannot give you less

Ros Which of the vizards was it that you wore?

Biron Where? when? what vizard? why de-

mand you this?

Ros There then that vizard that superfluous
case

That hid the worse and show d the better face

King We are descried they ll mock us now
downright

Dum Let us confess and turn it to a jest

Prin Amazed my lord? why looks your High-
ness sad? 391

Ros Help hold his brows! he ll swoon! Why
look you pale?

Sea sick I think coming from Muscovy

Biron Thus pour the stars down plagues for
perjury

Can any face of brass hold longer out?

Here stand I lady dart thy skill at me

Bruse me with scorn confound me with a
flout

Thrust thy sharp wit quite through my ignorance

Cut me to pieces with thy keen conceit,
And I will wish thee never more to dance, 400

Nor never more in Russian habit wait
O, never will I trust to speeches penn'd,

Nor to the motion of a schoolboy's tongue
Nor never come in vizard to my friend

Nor woo in rhyme, like a blind harper's song!
Taffeta phrases silken terms precise,

Three-piled hyperboles, spruce affectation,
Figures pedantical, these summer flies

Have blown me full of maggot ostentation
I do forswear them and I here protest, 410

By this white glove—how white the hand
God knows!—

Henceforth my wooing mind shall be express'd
In russet yeas and honest kersey noes

And to begin, wench—so God help me la!—
My love to thee is sound sans crack or flaw

Ros Sans sans, I pray you

Biron Yet I have a trick
Of the old rage bear with me, I am sick

I'll leave it by degrees Soft let us see
Write, "Lord have mercy on us" on those three

They are infected, in their hearts it lies, 420
They have the plague and caught it of your eyes,

These lords are visited you are not free,
For the Lord's tokens on you do I see

Prim No, they are free that gave these tokens to
us

Biron Our states are forfeit seek not to undo
us

Ros It is not so for how can this be true,
That you stand forfeit, being those that sue?

Biron Peace! for I will not have to do with you
Ros Nor shall not if I do as I intend

Biron Speak for yourselves my wit is at an
end 430

King Teach us, sweet madam for our rude
transgression

Some fair excuse

Prim The fairest is confession
Were not you here but even now disguised?

King Madam, I was

Prim And were you well advised?
King I was, fair madam

Prim When you then were here,
What did you whisper in your lady's ear?

King That more than all the world I did re-
spect her

Prim When she shall challenge this you will
reject her

King Upon mine honour no

Prim Peace peace! forbear
Your oath once broke, you force not to forswear

King Despise me, when I break this oath of
mine 441

Prim I will and therefore keep it Rosaline,
What did the Russian whisper in your ear?

Ros Madam, he swore that he did hold me dear
As precious eyesight, and did value me

Above this world, adding thereto moreover
That he would wed me or else die my lover

Prim God give thee joy of him! the noble lord
Most honourably doth uphold his word

King What mean you madam? by my life, my
troth 450

I never swore this lady such an oath

Ros By heaven you did, and to confirm it plain,
You gave me this but take it sir again

King My faith and this the Princess I did give
I knew her by this jewel on her sleeve

Prim Pardon me, sir, this jewel did she wear,
And Lord Biron I thank him is my dear

What will you have me, or your pearl again?
Biron Neither of either, I remit both twain

I see the trick on't here was a consent 460
Knowing aforehand of our merriment,

To dash it like a Christmas comedy
Some carry tale some please man some slight

zany,
Some mumble news some trencher-knight, some

Dick
That smiles his cheek in years and knows the

trick
To make my lady laugh when she's disposed

Told our intents before, which once disclosed,
The ladies did change favours and then we

Following the signs, woo'd but the sign of she
Now to our perjury to add more terror, 470

We are again forsworn in will and error
Much upon this it is and might not you

To BOYET

Foretell our sport to make us thus untrue?
Do not you know my lady's foot by the squire,

And laugh upon the apple of her eye?
And stand between her back, sir and the fire,

Holding a trencher jesting merrily?
You put our page out go you are allow'd,

Die when you will a smock shall be your shroud
You leer upon me do you? there's an eye 480

Wounds like a leaden sword
Boyet Full merrily

Hath this brave manage this career been run
Biron Lo he is tilting straight! Peace! I have

done

Enter COSTARD

Welcome pure wit! thou partest a fair fray

Cost O Lord sir they would know
Whether the three Worthies shall come in or no—

Biron What are there but three?

Cost No sir but it is vana fine

For every one pursents three

Biron And three times thrice is nine

Cost Not so sir under correction sir I hope it is not so

You cannot beg us sir I can assure you sir we know what we know 490

I hope sir three times thrice sir—

Biron Is not nine

Cost Under correction sir we know whereuntil it doth amount

Biron By Jove I always took three threes for nine

Cost O Lord sir it were pity you should get your living by reckoning sir

Biron How much is it? 499

Cost O Lord sir the parties themselves the actors sir will show whereuntil it doth amount for mine own part I am as they say but to perfect one man in one poor man Pompon the Great sir

Biron Art thou one of the Worthies?

Cost It pleased them to think me worthy of Pompon the Great for mine own part I know not the degree of the Worthy but I am to stand for him

Biron Go bid them prepare 510

Cost We will turn it finely off sir we will take some care (Exit)

Amg *Biron* they will shame us let them not approach

Biron We are shame proof my lord and tis some policy

To have one show worse than the King's and his company

Amg I say they shall not come

Prim Nay my good lord let me o errule you now

That sport best pleases that doth least know how Where zeal strives to content and the contents

Dies in the zeal of that which it presents

Their form confounded makes most form in mirth 520

When great things labouring perish in their birth

Biron A right description of our sport my lord

Enter ARMADO

Arm Anointed I implore so much expense of thy royal sweet breath as will utter a brace of words

Converses apart with the KING and delivers him a paper

Prim Doth this man serve God?

Biron Why ask you?

Prim He speaks not like a man of God's taking
Arm That is all one my fair sweet honey monarch for I protest the schoolmaster is exceeding fantastical too too vain too too vain but we will put it as they say to *fortuna dela guerra* I wish you the peace of mind most royal complement? (Exit)

Amg Here is like to be a good presence of Worthies He presents Hector of Troy the swain Pompey the Great the parish curate, Alexander Armado's page, Hercules the pedant Judas Maccabæus 540

And if these four Worthies in their first show

These four will change habits and present the other five

Biron There is five in the first show

Amg You are deceived tis not so

Biron The pedant the braggart the head, a priest the fool and the boy

Abate throw at novum and the whole world again

Cannot pick out five such take each one in his vein

Amg The ship is under sail and here she comes again

Enter COSTARD for Pompey

Cost I Pompey am —

Boyet You lie you are not he 550

Cost I Pompey am —

Boyet With libbard's head on knee

Biron Well said old mocker I must needs be friends with thee

Cost I Pompey am Pompey surnamed the Big —

Dum The Great

Cost It is Great sir —

Pompey surnamed the Great That oft in field with targe and shield did make my foe to sweat

And travelling along this coast I here am come by chance

And lay my arms before the legs of this sweet lass of France

If your ladyship would say Thanks Pompey I had done

Prim Great thanks great Pompey 560

Cost Tis not so much worth but I hope I was perfect I made a little fault in Great

Biron My hat to a halfpenny Pompey proves the best Worthy

Enter SIR NATHANIEL for Alexander

Nath When in the world I lived, I was the world's commander

By east, west, north, and south I spread my
conquering might
My scutcheon plain declares that I am Alisan-
der"—

Boyet Your nose says, no, you are not, for it
stands too right

Biron Your nose smells "no" in this, most
tender-smelling knight

Prim The conqueror in dismay d Proceed good
Alexander 570

Nath "When in the world I lived, I was the
world's commander —

Boyet Most true, 'tis right, you were so, Ali-
sander

Biron Pompey the Great—

Cost Your servant, and Costard

Biron Take away the conqueror, take away
Alisander

Cost [To SIR NATHANIEL] O, sir, you have over-
thrown Alisander the conqueror! You will be
scraped out of the painted cloth for this your
lion that holds his poll axe sitting on a close-
stool, will be given to Ajax he will be the ninth
Worthy A conqueror, and afraid to speak! run
away for shame Alisander [SIR NATHANIEL re-
tires] There, an't shall please you, a foolish mild
man, an honest man, look you, and soon dashed
He is a marvellous good neighbour, faith, and a
very good bowler but, for Alisander—alas, you
see how 'tis—a little o'erparted But there are
Worthies a coming will speak their mind in some
other sort 590

Prim Stand aside good Pompey

*Enter HOLOFERNES, for Judas, and MOTH,
for Hercules*

Hol "Great Hercules is presented by this imp,
Whose club kill d Cerberus, that three-
headed canus,

And when he was a babe, a child a shrimp,

Thus did he strangle serpents in his manus

Quoniam he seemeth in minority,

Ergo I come with this apology "

Keep some state in thy exit, and vanish

[MOTH retires]

"Judas I am"—

Dum A Judas! 600

Hol Not Iscariot, sir

'Judas I am yclipped Maccabæus "

Dum Judas Maccabæus clipt is plain Judas

Biron A kissing traitor How art thou proved
Judas?

Hol "Judas I am"—

Dum The more shame for you, Judas

Hol What mean you sir?

Boyet To make Judas hang himself

Hol Begin, sir, you are my elder

Biron Well followed Judas was hanged on an
elder 610

Hol I will not be put out of countenance

Biron Because thou hast no face

Hol What is this?

Boyet A cittern head

Dum The head of a bodkin

Biron A Death's face in a ring

Long The face of an old Roman coin scarce
seen

Boyet The pommel of Caesar's falchion

Dum The carved bone face on a flask

Biron Saint George's half cheek in a brooch

Dum Ay and in a brooch of lead 621

Biron Ay, and worn in the cap of a tooth-
drawer

And now forward, for we have put thee in coun-
tenance

Hol You have put me out of countenance

Biron False, we have given thee faces

Hol But you have out faced them all

Biron An thou wert a lion we would do so

Boyet Therefore as he is an ass let him go
And so adieu sweet Jude! nay, why dost thou
stay?

Dum For the latter end of his name 630

Biron For the ass to the Jude give it him
Judas away!

Hol This is not generous not gentle, not
humble

Boyet A light for Monsieur Judas! it grows
dark he may stumble [HOLOFERNES retires]

Prim Alas poor Maccabæus, how hath he been
baited!

Enter ARMADO for Hector

Biron Hide thy head, Achilles here comes
Hector in arms

Dum Though my mocks come home by me I
will now be merry

King Hector was but a Trojan in respect of
this 640

Boyet But is this Hector?

King I think Hector was not so clean timbered

Long His leg is too big for Hector's

Dum More calf, certain

Boyet No he is best indued in the small

Biron Thus cannot be Hector

Dum He's a god or a painter for he makes
faces

Arm "The omnipotent Mars of lances the
almighty 650

Gave Hector a gift —

Dum A gilt nutmeg

Biron A lemon

Long Stuck with cloves

Dum No cloven

Arm Peace —

The armipotent Mars of lances the almighty

Gave Hector a gift the heir of Ilium

A man so breathed that certain he would fi ht
yea

From morn till night out of his pavilion 660

I am that flower —

Dum That mint

Long That columbine

Arm Sweet Lord Longaville rein thy tongue

Long I must rather give it the rein for it runs
against Hector

Dum Ay and Hector s a greyhound

Arm The sweet war man is dead and rotten
sweet chucks beat not the bones of the buried
when he breathed he was a man But I will
forward with my device [To the PRINCESS] Sweet
royalty bestow on me the sense of hearing 670

Prin Speak brave Hector we are much de-
lighted

Arm I do adore thy sweet grace s slipper

Boyet [Aside to DUMAIN] Loves her by the foot

Dum [Aside to boyet] He may not by the yard

Arm Thus Hector far surmounted Hanni-
bal —

Cost The party is gone fellow Hector she is
gone she is two months on her way

Arm What meanest thou? 680

Cost Faith unless you play the honest Trojan
the poor wench is cast away she s quick the
child brags in her belly already tis yours

Arm Dost thou infamouze me among poten-
tates? thou shalt die

Cost Then shall Hector be whipped for Jaquen-
etta that is quick by him and hanged for Pompey
that is dead by him

Dum Most rare Pompey!

Boyet Renowned Pompey! 690

Biron Greater than great great great great
Pompey! Pompey the Huge!

Dum Hector trembles

Biron Pompey is moved More Ates more
Ates! stir them on! stir them on!

Dum Hector will challenge him

Biron Ay if a ha is no more man s blood in s
belly than will sup a flea

Arm By the north pole I do challenge thee

Cost I will not fight with a pole like a northern
man I ll slash I ll do it by the sword I bepray
you let me borrow my arms again

Dum Room for the incensed Worthies!

Cost I ll do it in my shirt

Dum Most resolute Pompey!

Moth Master let me take you a button hole

lower Do you not see Pompey is uncasing for
the combat? What mean you? You will lose your
reputation

Arm Gentlemen and soldiers pardon me I
will not combat in my shirt 711

Dum You may not deny it Pompey hath made
the challenge

Arm Sweet bloods I both may and will

Biron What reason have you for t?

Arm The naked truth of it is I have no shirt
I go woodward for penance

Boyet True and it was enjoined him in Rome
for want of linen since when I ll be sworn, he
wore none but a dishclout of Jaquenetta s and
that a wears next his heart for a favour

Enter MERCADÉ

Mer God save you madam!

Prin Welcome Mercade

But that thou interrupt st our merriment

Mer I am sorry madam for the news I bring
Is heavy in my tongue The King your father—

Prin Dead for my life!

Mer Even so my tale is told

Biron Worthies away! the scene begins to
cloud 731

Arm For mine own part I breathe free breath
I have seen the day of wrong through the little
hole of discretion and I will right myself like a
soldier [Exeunt Worthies]

King How fares your Majesty?

Prin Boyet prepare I will away to-night

King Madam not so I do beseech you stay

Prin Prepare I say I thank you gracious
lords

For all your fair endeavours and entreat 740

Out of a new sad soul that you vouchsafe

In your rich wisdom to excuse or hide

The liberal opposition of our spirits

If over boldly we have borne ourselves

In the converse of breath your gentleness

Was guilty of it Farewell worthy lord!

A heavy heart bears not a humble roneue

Excuse me so coming too short of thanks

For my great suit so easily obtain d

King The extreme parts of time extremely
forms 750

All causes to the purpose of his speed

And often at his very loose decides

That which long process could not arbitrate

And though the mourning brow of progeny

Forbid the smiling courtesy of love

The holy suit which fain it would convince

Yet s not love s argument was first on foot

Let not the cloud of sorrow justle it

From what it purposed since to wail friends lost

Is not by much so wholesome-profitable 760
As to rejoice at friends but newly found
Prim I understand you not my griefs are
double

Biron Honest plain words best pierce the ear
of grief,
And by these badges understand the King
For your fair sakes have we neglected time
Play d foul play with our oaths your beauty,
ladies,

Hath much deform'd us, fashioning our humours
Even to the opposed end of our intents

And what in us hath seem'd ridiculous— 770
As love is full of unbefitting strains,

All wanton as a child, skipping and vain
Form'd by the eye and therefore like the eye

Full of strange shapes, of habits and of forms,
Varying in subjects as the eye doth roll

To every varied object in his glance
Which partly coated presence of loose love

Put on by us, if, in your heavenly eyes,
Have misbecom'd our oaths and gravities,

Those heavenly eyes that look into these faults
Suggested us to make Therefore ladies 780

Our love being yours, the error that love makes
Is likewise yours we to ourselves prove false,

By being once false for ever to be true
To those that make us both—fair ladies, you

And even that falsehood, in itself a sin
Thus purifies itself and turns to grace

Prim We have received your letters full of love,
Your favours, the ambassadors of love,

And in our maiden council rated them
At courtship pleasant jest, and courtesy, 790

As bombast and as lining to the time
But more devout than this in our respects

Have we not been, and therefore met your loves
In their own fashion like a merriment

Dum Our letters madam, show d much more
than jest

Long So did our looks
Ros We did not quote them so

King Now at the latest minute of the hour,
Grant us your loves

Prim A time, methinks too short
To make a world without-end bargain in

No no my lord your Grace is perjured much
Full of dear guiltiness, and therefore this 801

If for my love as there is no such cause
You will do aught this shall you do for me

Your oath I will not trust but go with speed
To some forlorn and naked hermitage

Remote from all the pleasures of the world
There stay until the twelv celestial signs

Have brought about the annual reckoning
If this austere insociable life

Change not your offer made in heat of blood,
If frosts and fasts, hard lodging and thin weeds
Nip not the gaudy blossoms of your love,
But that it bear this trial and last love,
Then at the expiration of the year
Come challenge me, challenge me by these de-
serts,

And by this virgin palm now kissing thine,
I will be thine and till that instant shut
My woeful self up in a mourning house
Raining the tears of lamentation
For the remembrance of my father's death 820
If this thou do deny let our hands part
Neither intul'd in the other's heart

King If this or more than this I would deny,
To flatter up these powers of mine with rest,
The sudden hand of death close up mine eye!

Hence ever then my heart in thy breast
Biron And what to me, my love? and what to
me?

Ros You must be purged too your sins are
rack'd

You are attain'd with faults and perjury
Therefore if you my favour mean to get 830

A twelvemonth shall you spend and never rest,
But seek the weary beds of people sick

Dum But what to me, my love? but what to me?
A wife?

Kath A beard fair health and honesty,
With three fold love I wish you all these three

Dum O, shall I say 'I thank you gentle
wife'?

Kath Not so my lord, a twelvemonth and a
day

I'll mark no words that smooth faced wooers
say

Come when the King doth to my lady come
Then if I have much love, I'll give you some 840

Dum I'll serve thee true and faithfully till
then

Kath Yet swear not lest ye be forsworn again
Long What says Maria?

Mar At the twelvemonth's end
I'll change my black gown for a faithful friend

Long I'll stay with patience but the time is
long

Mar The liker you few taller are so young
Biron Studies my lady's mistress look on me

Behold the window of my heart mine eye
What humble suit attends thy answer there

Impose some service on me for thy love 850
Ros Oft have I heard of you my Lord Biron,

Before I saw you and the world's large tongue
Proclaims you for a man replete with mocks,

Full of comparisons and wounding flouts
Which you on all estates will execute

That lie within the mercy of your wit
To weed this wormwood from your fruitful
brain

And therewithal to win me if you please
Without the which I am not to be won
You shall thus twelvemonth term from day to day
Visit the speechless sick and still converse 861
With groaning wretches and your task shall be
With all the fierce endeavour of your wit
To enforce the pained impotent to smile
Biron To move aild laughter in the throat of
death?

It cannot be it is impossible
Mirth cannot move a soul in a cove
For Why that's the way to choke a glibbing
spirit

Whose influence is begot of that loose grace
Which shallow laughers hearers give to fools
A jest's prosperity lies in the ear 861
Of him that hears it never in the tongue
Of him that makes it then if sickly ears
Deaf'd with the clamour of their own dear
groans

Will hear your idle scorns continue then
And I will have you and that fault which
But if they will not throw away that spirit
And I shall find you empty of that fault
Right joyful of your reformation

Biron A twelvemonth's well befall what will
befall 880

I'll jest a twelvemonth in an hospital
I run (To the king) O sweet my lord and so
I take my leave

King No madam we will bring you on your
way
Biron Our wooing doth not end like an old
play

Jack hath not Jill these ladies courtress
Might well have made our sport a comedy
King Come sit it wants a twelvemonth and a
day

And then it will end
Biron That's too long for a play

Re-enter ARMADEO

Arm Sweet majesty vouchsafe me—

I run Was not that Hector

Dim The worthy knight of Troy 890

Arm I will kiss thy royal finger and take
leave I am a votary I have vowed to Jaque-
netta to hold the plow for her sweet love three
years But now esteemed greatness will you
hear the dialogue that the twelve learned men have

compiled in praise of the owl and the cuckoo? It
should have followed in the end of our show
King Call them forth quickly we will do so
Arm Holla! approach 900

Re-enter HOLOFERNES NATHANIEL MOTH COS-
TARD and others

This side is Hiems Winter this Ver the Spring
the one maintained by the owl the other by the
cuckoo Ver begin

Song

Spring

When daisies pied and violets blue
And lady-smocks all silver white
And cuckoo-buds of yellow hue
Do paint the meadows with delight
The cuckoo then on every tree
Mocks married men for thus sings he
Cuckoo 910

Cuckoo cuckoo O word of fear
Unpleasing to a married ear!
When shepherds pipe on oaten straws
And merry larks are ploughmen's clocks
When turtles tread and rooks and daws
And maidens bleach their summer smocks
The cuckoo then on every tree
Mocks married men for thus sings he
Cuckoo

Cuckoo cuckoo O word of fear 910
Unpleasing to a married ear!

Winter
When icicles hang by the wall
And Dick the shepherd blows his nail
And Tom bears logs into the hall
And milk comes frozen home in pail
When blood is nipp'd and ways be foul
Then nightly sings the staring owl
Tu-whit

Tu who a merry note
While greasy Joan doth keel the pot 920
When all about the wind doth blow
And coughing drowns the parson's saw
And Marian's nose looks red and raw
When roasted crabs hiss in the bowl
Then nightly sings the staring owl

Tu-whit
Tu-who a merry note
While greasy Joan doth keel the pot 930
Arm The words of Mercury are harsh after
the songs of Apollo You that way we this way
Exit

ROMEO AND JULIET

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

ESCALUS PRINCE OF VERONA
 PARIS *a young nobleman kinsman to the Prince*
 MONTAGUE | *heads of two houses at variance with*
 CAPULET | *each other*
 COUSIN TO CAPULET *an old man*
 ROMEO *son to Montague*
 MERCUTIO *kinsman to the Prince, and friend to*
 Romeo
 BENVOLIO *nephew to Montague and friend to Romeo*
 TYBALT *nephew to Lady Capulet*
 FRIAR LAURENCE | *Franciscans*
 FRIAR JOHN |
 BALTHASAR *servant to Romeo*
 SAMPSON | *servants to Capulet*
 GREGORY |
 PETER *servant to Juliet's nurse*
 ABRAHAM *servant to Montague*

AN APOTHECARY
 THREE MUSICIANS
 PAGE *to Paris*
 THREE WATCHMEN
 A CITIZEN *of Verona*
 THREE SERVANTS *to Capulet*

LADY MONTAGUE *wife to Montague*
 LADY CAPULET *wife to Capulet*
 JULIET *daughter to Capulet*
 NURSE *to Juliet*
 CHORUS

NON-SPEAKING *Citizens of Verona Maskers Musicians*
 Page to Mercutio Guards Watchmen, and
 Attendants

SCENE *Verona and Mantua*



PROLOGUE

Two households, both alike in dignity,
 In fair Verona, where we lay our scene,
 From ancient grudge break to new mutiny,
 Where civil blood makes civil hands unclean
 From forth the fatal loins of these two foes
 A pair of star-cross'd lovers take their life,
 Whose misadventured piteous overthrows
 Do with their death bury their parents' strife
 The fearful passage of their death-mark'd love,
 And the continuance of their parents' rage, — 10
 Which but their children's end nought could
 remove
 Is now the two hours' traffic of our stage,
 The which if you with patient ears attend,
 What here shall miss, our toil shall strive to
 mend

ACT I

SCENE I *Verona a public place*

Enter SAMPSON and GREGORY of the house of
Capulet, armed with swords and bucklers

Sam Gregory, o my word, we'll not carry
 coals
 Gre No for then we should be colliers
 Sam I mean an we be in choler, we'll draw
 Gre Ay, while you live draw your neck out o
 the collar
 Sam I strike quickly being moved
 Gre But thou art not quickly moved to strike

Sam A dog of the house of Montague moves
 me 10

Gre To move is to stir, and to be valiant is to
 stand therefore, if thou art moved, thou runn'st
 away

Sam A dog of that house shall move me to
 stand I will take the wall of any man or maid of
 Montague's

Gre That shows thee a weak slave for the
 weakest goes to the wall

Sam True and therefore women, being the
 weaker vessels, are ever thrust to the wall there-
 fore I will push Montague's men from the wall
 and thrust his maids to the wall

Gre The quarrel is between our masters and us
 their men

Sam 'Tis all one I will show myself a tyrant
 when I have fought with the men I will be cruel
 with the maids and cut off their heads

Gre The heads of the maids? 29

Sam Ay the heads of the maids or their
 maidenheads, take it in what sense thou wilt

Gre They must take it in sense that feel it

Sam Me they shall feel while I am able to
 stand and 'tis known I am a pretty piece of flesh

Gre 'Tis well thou art not fish if thou hadst,
 thou hadst been poor John Draw thy tool, here
 comes two of the house of the Montagues

Sam My naked weapon is out quarrel, I will
 back thee

Gre How! turn thy back and run?

Sam Fear me not

Gre No marry I fear thee!
Sam Let us take the law of our sides let them begin

Gre I will frown as I pass by and let them take it as they list

Sam Nay as they dare I will bite my thumb at them which is a disgrace to them if they bear it

Enter ABRAMAM and BALTHASAR

Abr Do you bite your thumb at us sir? 52

Sam I do bite my thumb sir

Abr Do you bite your thumb at us sir?

Sam [Aside to GREGORY] Is the law of our side if I say ay?

Gre No

Sam No sir I do not bite my thumb at you sir but I bite my thumb sir

Gre Do you quarrel sir?

Abr Quarrel sir? no sir 60

Sam If you do sir I am for you I serve as good a man as you

Abr No better

Sam Well sir

Gre Say better here comes one of my master's kinsmen

Sam Yes better sir

Abr You lie

Sam Draw if you be men Gregory remember thy swashing blow. [They fight] 70

Enter DR. VOLIO

Ben Part fools!

Put up your swords you know not what you do
Beats down their swords

Enter TYBALT

Tyb What art thou drawn among these heartless hinds?

Turn thee Benolio look upon thy death

Ben I do but keep the peace put up thy sword Or manage it to part these men with me

Tyb What drawn and talk of peace I hate the word

As I hate hell all Montagues and thee
Have at thee coward [They fight]

Enter several of both houses who join the fray then enter CITIZENS with clubs

1st Cit Clubs bills and partisans strike beat them down! 80

Down with the Capulets down with the Montagues!

Enter CAPULET in his gown and LADY CAPULET

Cap What noise is this? Give me my long sword ho!

La Cap A crutch a crutch! why call you for a sword?

Cap My sword I say! Old Montague is come And flourishes his blade in spite of me

Enter MONTAGUE and LADY MONTAGUE

Mom Thou villain Capulet Hold me not let me go

La Mom Thou shalt not stir a foot to seek a foe

Enter PRINCE ESCALUS with Attendants

Prin Rebellious subjects enemies to peace Profaners of this neighbour stained steel—

Will they not hear? What ho! you men you beasts 90

That quench the fire of your pernicious

With purple fountains issuing from your veins

On pain of torture from those bloody hands

Throw your mistemper'd weapons to the ground

And hear the sentence of your moed prince

Three civil brawls bred of an airy word

By thee old Capulet and Montague

Have thrice disturb'd the quiet of our streets

And made Verona's ancient citizens

Cast by their grave beseeching ornaments 100

To wield old partisans in hands

Canker'd with peace to part your canker'd hate

If ever you disturb our streets again

Your lives shall pay the forfeit of the peace

For this time all the rest depart away

You Capulet shall go along with me

And Montague come you this afternoon

To know our further pleasure in this case

To old Free town our common judgement place

Once more on pain of death all men depart 110

[Exeunt all but MONTAGUE LADY MONTAGUE and BENOLIO]

Mom Who set this ancient quarrel new a broach?

Speak nephew were you by when it began?

Ben Here were the servants of your adversary

And yours close fighting ere I did approach

I drew to part them in the instant came

The fiery Tybalt with his sword prepared

Which as he breathed defiance to my ears

He swung about his head and cut the winds

Who nothing hurt withal hiss'd him in scorn 119

While we were interchanging thrusts and blows

Came more and more and fought on part and

part

Till the prince came who parted either part

La Mom O where is Romeo? saw you him

to-day?

Right glad I am he was not at this fray

Ben Madam an hour before the worshipp'd sun

Peerd forth the golden window of the east

A troubled mind drove me to walk abroad

Where, underneath the grove of sycamore
 That westward rooteth from the city's side,
 So early walking did I see your son 130
 Towards him I made, but he was ware of me
 And stole into the covert of the wood
 I measuring his affections by my own,
 That most are busied when they re most alone,
 Pursued my humour not pursuing his,
 And gladly shunn'd who gladly fled from me
Mon Many a morning hath he there been seen,
 With tears augmenting the fresh morning's dew,
 Adding to clouds more clouds with his deep sighs,
 But all so soon as the all-cheering sun 140
 Should in the furthest east begin to draw
 The shady curtains from Aurora's bed
 Away from light steals home my heavy son,
 And private in his chamber pens himself,
 Shuts up his windows, locks fair daylight out,
 And makes himself an artificial night
 Black and portentous must this humour prove
 Unless good counsel may the cause remove
Ben My noble uncle, do you know the cause?
Mon I neither know it nor can learn of him 150
Ben Have you importuned him by any means?
Mon Both by myself and many other friends
 But he his own affections' counsellor,
 Is to himself—I will not say how true—
 Is to himself so secret and so close
 So far from sounding and discovery,
 As is the bud bit with an envious worm,
 Ere he can spread his sweet leaves to the air,
 Or dedicate his beauty to the sun
 Could we but learn from whence his sorrows 160
 grow
 We would as willingly give cure as know

Enter ROMEO

Ben See, where he comes so please you, step
 aside,
 I'll know his grievance or be much denied
Mon I would thou wert so happy by thy stay,
 To hear true shrift Come madam let's away
 [*Exeunt MONTAGUE AND LADY*]
Ben Good morrow cousin
Rom Is the day so young?
Rom But new struck nine
Rom Ay me! sad hours seem long
 Was that my father that went hence so fast?
Ben It was What sadness lengthens Romeo's
 hours?
Rom Not having that, which having makes 170
 them short
Ben In love?
Rom Out—
Ben Out of love?
Rom Out of her favour where I am in love

Ben Alas, that love, so gentle in his view,
 Should be so tyrannous and rough in proof!
Rom Alas, that love, whose view is muffled
 still,
 Should, without eyes, see pathways to his will!
 Where shall we dine? O me! What fray was
 here?
 Yet tell me not, for I have heard it all 180
 Here's much to do with hate but more with love
 Why then, O brawling love! O loving hate!
 O any thing of nothing first create!
 O heavy lightness! serious vanity!
 Mis-shapen chaos of well-seeming forms!
 Feather of lead bright smoke, cold fire sick
 health!
 Still waking sleep that is not what it is!
 This love feel I that feel no love in this
 Dost thou not laugh?
Ben No coz, I rather weep 189
Rom Good heart at what?
Ben At thy good heart's oppression
Rom Why, such is love's transgression
 Grievings of mine own lie heavy in my breast
 Which thou wilt propagate, to have it prest
 With more of thine this love that thou hast
 shown
 Doth add more grief to too much of mine own
 Love is a smoke raised with the fume of sighs,
 Being purged, a fire sparkling in lovers' eyes,
 Being vex'd a sea nourish'd with lovers' tears
 What is it else? a madness most discreet,
 A choking gall and a preserving sweet 200
 Farewell my coz
Ben Soft! I will go along
 As if you leave me so you do me wrong
Rom Tut I have lost myself I am not here,
 This is not Romeo he's some other where
Ben Tell me in sadness who is that you love
Rom What shall I groan and tell thee?
Ben Groan! why, no,
 But sadly tell me who
Rom Bid me sick man in sadness mail e his will
 Ah word ill urged to one that is so ill!
 In sadness cousin I do love a woman 210
Ben I am d so near when I supposed you lov'd
Rom A right good mark man! And she's fair
 I love
Ben A right fair mark fair coz is soonest hit
Rom Well in that hit you miss she'll not be hit
 With Cupid's arrow she hath Dian's wit
 And in strong proof of chastity well arm'd
 From love's weak childish bow she lives
 unarm'd
 She will not stay the siege of loving terms,
 Nor bide the encounter of assailing eyes
 Nor ope her lap to saint seducing gold

O she is rich in beauty only poor

That when she dies with beauty dies her store

Ben Then she hath sworn that she will still live chaste?

Rom She hath and in that sparing makes huge waste

For beauty starv'd with her severity

Cuts beauty off from all posterity

She is too fair too wise wisely too fair

To merit bliss by making me despair

She hath forsworn to love and in that vow

Do I live dead that live to tell it now 230

Ben Be ruled by me forget to think of her

Rom O teach me how I should forget to think

Ben By giving liberty unto thine eyes

Examine other beauties

Pom Tis the way

To call hers exquisite in question more

These happy masks that kiss fair ladies brows

Being black put us in mind they hide the fair

He that is stricken blind cannot forget

The precious treasure of his eyesight lost

Show me a mistress that is passing fair 240

What doth her beauty serve but as a note

Where I may read who pass'd that passing fair?

Farewell thou canst not teach me to forget

Ben I'll pay that doctrine or else die in debt

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II A street

Enter CAPULET PARIS and SERVANT

Cap But Montague is bound as well as I

In penalty alike and tis not hard I think

For men so old as we to keep the peace

Par Of honourable reckoning are you both

And pity tis you lived at odds so long

But now my lord what say you to my suit?

Cap But saying o'er what I have said before

My child is yet a stranger in the world

She hath not seen the change of fourteen years

Let two more summers wither in their pride 20

Ere we may think her ripe to be a bride

Par Younger than she are happy mothers made

Cap And too soon marr'd are those so early made

The earth hath swallow'd all my hopes but she

She is the hopeful lady of my earth

But woo her gentle Paris get her heart

My will to her consent is but a part

An she agree within her scope of choice

Lies my consent and fair according voice

This night I hold an old accustomed feast 20

Whereto I have invited many a guest

Such as I love and you among the store

One more most welcome makes my number

more

At my poor house look to behold this night

Earth treading stars that make dark heaven light

Such comfort as do lusty young men feel

When well apparell'd April on the heel

Of limping winter treads even such delight

Among fresh female buds shall you this night

Inherit at my house hear all all see 30

And like her most whose merit most shall be

Which on more view of many mine being one

May stand in number though in reckoning none

Come go with me [*To servant giving a paper*]

Go sirrah trudge about

Through fair Verona find those persons out

Whose names are written there and to them say

My house and welcome on their pleasure stay

[*Exeunt CAPULET and PARIS*]

Serv Find them out whose names are written

here! It is written that the shoemaker should

meddle with his yard and the tailor with his last

the fisher with his pencil and the painter with his

nets but I am sent to find those persons whose

names are here writ and can never find what

names the writing person hath here writ I must

to the learned —In good time

Enter BENVOLIO and ROMEO

Ben Tut man one fire burns out another's burning

One pain is lessen'd by another's anguish

Turn giddy and be holp by backward turning

One desperate grief cures with another's languish

Take thou some new infection to thy eye 30

And the rank poison of the old will die

Rom Your plaintain leaf is excellent for that

Ben For what I pray thee?

Rom

For your broken shin

Rom Why Romeo art thou mad?

Rom Not mad but bound more than a madman

is

Shut up in prison, kept without my food

Whipp'd and tormented and—God-den good

fellow

Serv God gi' god den I pray sir can you read?

Rom Ay mine own fortune in my misery 60

Serv Perhaps you have learned it without book

but I pray can you read anything you see?

Rom Ay if I know the letters and the language

Serv Ye say honestly rest you merry!

Rom Stay fellow I can read [*Reads*]

Signior Martino and his wife and daughters

County Anselme and his beauteous sisters the

lady widow of Vitruvio Signior Placentio and

his lovely nieces Mercutio and his brother

Valentine mine uncle Capulet his wife and

daughters my fair niece Rosaline Livia Signior

Valentio and his cousin Tybalt, Lucio and the lively Helena "

A fair assembly whither should they come?

Serv Up

Rom Whither?

Serv To supper, to our house

Rom Whose house?

Serv My master's

Rom Indeed, I should have ask'd you that before

Serv Now I'll tell you without asking my master in the great rich Capulet, and if you be not of the house of Montagues I pray come and crush a cup of wine Rest you merry! *[Exit]*

Ben At this same ancient feast of Capulet's Supps the fair Rosaline whom thou so lovest, With all the admired beauties of Verona

Go thither, and, with unattained eye

Compare her face with some that I shall show,

And I will make thee think thy swan a crow

Rom When the devout religion of mine eye Maintains such falsehood then turn tears to

fires

And these, who often drownd could never die

Transparent heretics be burnt for liars!

One fairer than my love! the all seeing sun

Ne'er saw her match since first the world begun

Ben Tut, you saw her fair none else being by, Herself poised with herself in either eye

But in that crystal scales let there be weigh'd

Your lady's love against some other maid

That I will show you shining at this feast

And she shall scant show well that now shows best

Rom I'll go along no such sight to be shown

But to rejoice in splendour of mine own *[Exeunt]*

SCENE III *A room in Capulet's house*

Enter LADY CAPULET and NURSE

La Cap Nurse, where's my daughter? call her forth to me

Nurse Now by my maidenhead at twelve year old,

I bade her come What lamb! what lady bird!

God forbid! Where's this girl? What Juliet!

Enter JULIET

Jul How now! who calls?

Nurse Your mother

Jul Madam I am here

What is your will?

La Cap This is the matter —Nurse give leave awhile

We must talk in secret —nurse come back again,

I have remember'd me, thou's hear our counsel Thou know'st my daughter's of a pretty age

Nurse Faith, I can tell her age unto an hour

La Cap She's not fourteen

Nurse I'll lay fourteen of my teeth—

And yet to my teen be it spoken, I have but four—

She is not fourteen How long is it now

To Lammas tide?

La Cap A fortnight and odd days

Nurse Even or odd, of all days in the year,

Come Lammas-eve at night shall she be fourteen

Susan and she—God rest all Christian souls!—

Were of an age well Susan is with God,

She was too good for me but as I said,

On Lammas eve at night shall she be fourteen,

That shall she, marry I remember it well

'Tis since the earthquake now eleven years

And she was wean'd—I never shall forget it—

Of all the days of the year, upon that day

For I had then laid wormwood to my dug

Sitting in the sun under the dove house wall,

My lord and you were then at Mantua—

Nay I do bear a brain—but as I said,

When it did taste the wormwood on the nipple

Of my dug and felt it bitter pretty fool

To see it tetchy and fall out with the dug!

"Shake quoth the dove house 'twas no need, I trow

To bid me trudge

And since that time it is eleven years

For then he could stand alone nay by the rood

She could have run and waddled all about

For even the day before she broke her brow

And then my husband—God be with his soul!

A was a merry man—took up the child

Yea quoth he, 'dost thou fall upon thy face?

Thou wilt fall backward when thou hast more wit,

Wilt thou not, Julie? and by my holidame,

The pretty wretch left crying and said "Ay"

To see now how a jest shall come about!

I warrant, an I should live a thousand years

I never should forget it "Wilt thou not Julie?"

quoth he

And pretty fool it stinted and said "Ay"

La Cap Enough of this I pray thee hold thy peace

Nurse Yes madam yet I cannot choose but

laugh

To think it should leave crying and say "Ay"

And yet I warrant it had upon its brow

A bump as big as a young cockerel's stone

A parlous knock and it cried bitterly

"Yea quoth my husband fallst upon thy

Thou wilt fall backward when thou comest to age
 Wilt thou not Jule? it storied and said Ay
 Jul And stint thou too I pray thee nurse say I
 Nurse Peace I have done God mark thee to his grace!

Thou wast the prettiest babe that e'er I nursed
 An I might live to see thee married once 61
 I have my wish

La Cap Marry that marry is the very theme
 I came to talk of Tell me daughter Juliet
 How stands your disposition to be married?

Jul It is an honour that I dream not of
 Nurse An honour! were not I thine only nurse
 I would say thou hadst suck'd wisdom from thy teat

La Cap Well think of marriage now younger than you,

Here in Verona ladies of esteem 70
 Are made already mothers by my count
 I was your mother much upon these years
 That you are now a maid Thus then in brief
 The valiant Paris seeks you for his love
 Nurse A man young lady! lady such a man
 As all the world—why he is a man of war

La Cap Verona's summer hath not such a flower

Nurse Nay he is a flower in faith a very flower

La Cap What say you? can you love the gentleman?

This night you shall behold him at our feast 80
 Read o'er the volume of young Paris' face
 And find delight writ there with beauty's pen
 Examine every married lineament
 And see how one another lends content
 And what obscured in this fair volume lies
 Find written in the margent of his eyes
 This precious book of love this unbound lover
 To beautify him only lacks a cover
 The fish lives in the sea and his much pride
 For fair without the fair within to hide 90
 That book in many's eyes doth share the glory
 That in gold clasps locks in the golden story
 So shall you share all that he doth possess
 By having him, making yourself no less

Nurse No less! nay bigger women grow by men

La Cap Speak briefly can you like of Paris?

Jul I'll look to like, if looking I kind move
 But no more deep will I endart mine eye
 Than your consent gives strength to make it fly

Enter a servant

Serv Madam the guests are come supper

served up you called my young lady asked for the nurse cursed in the pantry and everything in extremity I must hence to wait I beseech you follow straight

La Cap We follow thee [Exit servant]
 Juliet the County stays

Nurse Go girl seek happy nights to happy days [Exit]

SCENE IV A street

Enter ROMEO MERCUTIO BENVOLIO with five or six Maskers Torch bearers and others

Rom What shall this speech be spoke for our excuse?

Or shall we on without apology?

Ben The date is out of such proximity
 We'll have not Cupid hoodwink'd with a scarf
 Bearing a Tartar's painted bow of lath
 Scaring the ladies like a crow-keeper
 Nor no without-book prologue faintly spoke
 After the prompter for our entrance
 But let them measure us by what they will
 We'll measure them a measure and be gone 10

Rom Give me a torch I am not for this ambling

Being but heavy I will bear the light

Mer Nay gentle Romeo we must have you dance

Rom Not I believe me you have dancing shoes
 With numble soles I have a soul of lead
 So stokes me to the ground I cannot move

Mer You are a lover borrow Cupid's wings
 And soar with them above a common bound

Rom I am too sore enpierced with his shaft
 To soar with his light feathers and so bound 20
 I cannot bound a pitch above dull woe
 Under love's heavy burden do I sink

Mer And to sink in it should you burden love
 Too great oppression for a tender thing

Rom Is love a tender thing? it is too rough
 Too rude too boisterous and it pricks like thorn

Mer If love be rough with you be rough with love

Prick love for pricking and you bear love down
 Give me a case to put my visage in!
 A visor for a visor! what care I 30

What curious eye doth quote deformities?

Here are the beetle brows shall blush for me

Ben Come knock and enter and no sooner in
 But every man betake him to his legs

Rom A torch for me! let wantons light of heart

Tickle the senseless rushes with their heels
 For I am proverb'd with a grandsire phrase
 I'll be a candle holder and look on

The game was ne'er so fair, and I am done

Mer Tut, dun's the mouse, the constable's own word 40

If thou art Dun we'll draw thee from the mire
Of this sir-reverence love, wherein thou stick'st
Up to the ears. Come, we burn daylight, ho!

Rom Nay, that's not so

Mer I mean, sir, in delay

We waste our lights in vain, like lamps by day
Take our good meaning for our judgment sits
Five times in that ere once in our five wits

Rom And we mean well in going to this mask,
But 'tis no wit to go

Mer Why, may one ask?

Rom I dream'd a dream to-night

Mer And so did I 50

Rom Well, what was yours?

Mer That dreamers often lie

Rom In bed asleep, while they do dream
things true

Mer O, then, I see Queen Mab hath been with
you

She is the fairies' midwife, and she comes

In shape no bigger than an agate stone

On the fore-finger of an alderman,

Drawn with a team of little atomies

Athwart men's noses as they lie asleep,

Her waggon spokes made of long spinners' legs,

The cover of the wings of grasshoppers, 60

The traces of the smallest spider's web

The collars of the moonshine's watery beams

Her whip of cricket's bone the lash of film,

Her waggoner a small grey-coated gnat

Not half so big as a round little worm

Prick'd from the lazy finger of a maid,

Her chariot an empty hazel nut

Made by the joiner squirrel or old grub

Time out of mind the fairies' coachmakers

And in this state she gallops night by night 70

Through lovers' brains, and then they dream of
love,

O'er courtiers' knees, that dream on courtiers
straight,

O'er lawyers' fingers, who straight dream on
fees,

O'er ladies' lips, who straight on kisses dream,

Which oft the angry Mab with blisters plagues

Because their breaths with sweetmeats tainted
are

Sometime she gallops o'er a courtier's nose,

And then dreams he of smelling out a suit

And sometime comes she with a tithe-pig's tail 80

Tickling a parson's nose as he lies asleep,

Then dreams he of another benefice

Sometime she driveth o'er a soldier's neck

And then dreams he of cutting foreign throats

Of breaches, ambuscadoes, Spanish blades,
Of healths five fathom deep and then anon
Drums in his ear at which he starts and wakes,
And being thus frightened swears a prayer or two
And sleeps again. This is that very Mab
That plats the manes of horses in the night
And bakes the elf-locks in foul sluttish hairs 90
Which once untangled much misfortune bodes
This is the hag when maids lie on their backs,
That presses them and learns them first to bear,
Making them women of good carriage
This is she—

Rom Peace, peace Mercutio peace!

Thou talk'st of nothing

Mer True, I talk of dreams,

Which are the children of an idle brain,

Begot of nothing but vain fantasy,

Which is as thin of substance as the air

And more inconstant than the wind, who
woes

Even now the frozen bosom of the north 101

And, being anger'd, puffs away from thence

Turning his face to the dew-dropping south

Ben This wind you talk of blows us from
ourselves,

Supper is done and we shall come too late

Rom I fear, too early for my mind misgives

Some consequence yet hanging in the stars

Shall bitterly begin his fearful date

With this night's revels and expire the term 110

Of a despised life closed in my breast

By some vile forfeit of untimely death

But He, that hath the steerage of my course,

Direct my sail! On, lusty gentlemen

Ben Strike drum [Exeunt

SCENE V A hall in Capulet's house

Musicians waiting Enter SERVINGMEN, with
napkins

1st Serv Where's Potpan that he helps not to
take away? He shift a trencher? he scrape a
trencher!

2nd Serv When good manners shall lie all in
one or twain men's hands and they unwashed too,
'tis a foul thing

1st Serv Away with the joint stools remove
the court-cupboard look to the plate Good thou
save me a piece of marchpane and as thou lovest
me, let the porter let in Susan Grindstone and
Nell Antony and Potpan! 11

2nd Serv Ay, boy ready

1st Serv You are looked for and called for,
asked for and sought for in the greater chamber

2nd Serv We cannot be here and there to
cheerly boys be brisk awhile, and the long
liver take all

Enter CAPULET with JULIET and others of his house meet the Guests and Maskers

Cap Welcome gentlemen! ladies that have their toes

Unplagued with corns will have a bout with you

Ah ha, my mistresses! which of you all 20

Will now deny to dance? she that makes dainty

Shc I'll swear hath corns am I come near ye now?

Welcome gentlemen! I have seen the day

That I have worn a visor and could tell

A whispering tale in a fair lady's ear

Such as would please tis gone tis gone tis gone

You are welcome, gentlemen! Come musicians play

A hall a hall! give room! and foot it girls

Musik plays and they dance

More light you knaves and turn the tables up

And quench the fire the room is grown too hot

Ah sirrah thus unlook'd for sport comes well 31

Nay sit nay sit good cousin Capulet

For you and I are past our dancing days

How long is it now since last yourself and I

Were in a mask?

Cousin Cap By r lady thirty years

Cap What man! tis not so much tis not so much

'Tis since the nuptial of Lucentio

Come pentecost as quickly as it will

Some five and twenty years and then we mask'd

Cousin Cap 'Tis more tis more his son is elder sir 40

His son is thirty

Cap Will you tell me that?

His son was but a ward two years ago

Rom {To a SERVINGMAN} What lady is that which doth enrich the hand

Of yonder knight?

Serv I know not sir

Rom O she doth teach the torches to burn bright!

It seems she hangs upon the cheek of night

Like a rich jewel in an Ethiop's ear

Beauty too rich for use for earth too dear!

So shows a snowy dove trooping with crows : 50

As yonder lady o'er her fellows shows

The measure done I'll watch her place of stand,

And to suching hers make blessed my rude hand

Did my heart love it ll now? forswear it sight!

For I ne'er saw true beauty till this night

Tyb This by his voice should be a Montague

Fetch me my rapier boy What dares the slave

Come hither cover'd with an antique face,

To fleet and scorn at our solemnity?

Now by the stock and honour of my kin 60

To strike him dead I hold it not a sin

Cap Why how now kinsman! wherefore storm you so?

Tyb Uncle this is a Montague our foe

A villain that is hither come in spite

To scorn at our solemnity this night

Cap Young Romeo is it?

Tyb 'Tis he that villain Romeo

Cap Content thee, gentle coz let him alone

He bears him like a portly gentleman

And to say truth Verona brags of him

To be a virtuous and well govern'd youth : 70

I would not for the wealth of all the town

Here in my house do him disparagement

Therefore be patient take no note of him

It is my will the which if thou respect

Show a fair presence and put off these frowns

An ill beseeeming semblance for a feast

Tyb It fits when such a villain is a guest

I'll not endure him

Cap He shall be endured

What Goodman boy! I say he shall go to

Am I the master here or you? go to 80

You'll not endure him! God shall mend my soul!

You'll make a mutiny among my guests!

You will set cock a hoop! you'll be the man!

Tyb Why uncle tis a shame

Cap Go to go to

You are a saucy boy is it so indeed?

This trick may chance to scathe you I know

what

You must contrary me! marry tis true

Well said my hearts! you are a prince! go

Be quiet or—More light more light! For shame!

I'll make you quiet What cheerly my hearts!

Tyb Patience perforce with wilful choler

meeting

Make my flesh tremble in their different

greeting

I will withdraw but this intrusion shall

Now seeming sweet convert to bitter gall [Exit

Rom {To JULIET} If I profane with my unworsted hand

This holy shrine the gentle fine is this

My lips two blushing pilgrims ready stand

To smooth that rough touch with a tender kiss

Jul Good pilgrim you do wrong your hand too much

Which mannerly devotion shows in this 100

For saints have hands that pilgrims hands do touch

And palm to palm is holy palmers kiss

Rom Have not saints lips and holy palmers too?

Jul Ay pilgrim lips that they must use in prayer

Rom O, then, dear saint, let lips do what hands do,
They pray, grant thou, lest faith turn to despair

Jul Saints do not move, though grant for prayers sake

Rom Then move not, while my prayer's effect I take

Thus from my lips, by yours, my sin is purged

Jul Then have my lips the sin that they have took

Rom Sin from my lips? O trespass sweetly urged!

Give me my sin again

Jul You kiss by the book

Nurse Madam, your mother craves a word with you

Rom What is her mother?

Nurse Marry, bachelor,

Her mother is the lady of the house

And a good lady, and a wise and virtuous

I nursed her daughter, that you talk'd withal,

I tell you, he that can lay hold of her

Shall have the chunks

Rom Is she a Capulet?

O dear account! my life is my foe's debt

Ben Away, be gone, the sport is at the best

Rom Ay, so I fear the more is my unrest

Cap Nay, gentlemen, prepare not to be gone,

For a trifling foolish banquet towards

Is it even so? why then, I thank you all,

I thank you, honest gentlemen good night

More torches here! Come on then let's to bed

Ah sirrah, by my fay, it waxes late

I'll to my rest

[*Exeunt all but JULIET and NURSE*]

Jul Come hither, nurse What is yond gentleman?

Nurse The son and heir of old Tiberio

Jul What's he that now is going out of door?

Nurse Marry, that I think bevaung Petruchio

Jul What's he that follows there that would not dance?

Nurse I know not

Jul Go ask his name if he be married

My grave is like to be my wedding bed

Nurse His name is Romeo and a Montague,

The only son of your great enemy

Jul My only love sprung from my only hate!

Too early seen unknown and known too late! 141

Prodigious birth of love it is to me

That I must love a loathed enemy

Nurse What's this what's this?

Jul A rhyme I learn'd even now

Of one I danced withal

One calls him, "Juliet"

Nurse Anon, anon!

Come, let's away, the strangers all are gone [*Exeunt*]

ACT II

PROLOGUE

Enter CHORUS

Chor Now old desire doth in his death bed lie,

And young affection gapes to be his heir,

That fair for which love groan'd for and would die,

With tender Juliet match'd, is now not fair

Now Romeo is beloved and loves again

Alike bewitched by the charm of looks,

But to his foe supposed he must complain,

And she steal love's sweet bait from fearful hooks

Being held a foe he may not have access

To breathe such vows as lovers use to swear,

And she as much in love, he means much less 11

To meet her new beloved anywhere

But passion lends them power, time means, to meet,

Tempering extremities with extreme sweet

[*Exit*]

SCENE I *A lane by the wall of Capulet's orchard*

Enter ROMEO

Rom Can I go forward when my heart is here?

Turn back, dull earth, and find thy centre out

He climbs the wall and leaps down within it

Enter BENVOLIO and MERCUTIO

Ben Romeo! my cousin Romeo!

Mer He is wise,

And, on my life, hath stol'n him home to bed

Ben He ran this way, and leap'd this orchard wall

Call good Mercutio

Mer Nay, I'll conjure too

Romeo! humours! madman! passion! lover!

Appear thou in the likeness of a sigh

Speak but one rhyme and I am satisfied,

Cry but "Ay me!" pronounce but "love" and "dove" 10

Speak to my gossip Venus one fair word

One nick name for her purblind son and heir,

Young Adam Cupid he that shot so trim

When King Cophetua loved the beggar maid!

He heareth not he stirreth not he moveth not

The ape is dead and I must conjure him

I conjure thee by Rosaline's bright eyes

By her high forehead and her scarlet lip

By her fine foot straight leg and quivering

thigh

And the demesnes that there adjacent lie 20
That in thy likeness thou appear to us!
Ben An if he hear thee thou wilt an er him
Mis This cannot anger him twould anger him
To raise a spirit in his mistress circle
Of some strange nature lettino it there stand
Till she had laid it and conjured it down
That were some spite my invocation
Is fair and honest and in his mistress name
I conjure only but to raise up him

Ben Come he hath hid himself among these
trees

To be consorted with the humorous nit lit 30
Blind is his love and best befits the dark

Mis If love be blind love cannot hit the mark
Now will he sit under a medlar tree

And wish his mistress were that I in l of fruit
As maids call medlars when they lau h alone

O Romeo that she were O that he were
An open et cetera thou a poperin pear

Romeo good night I ll to my truckle bed
This field bed is too cold for me to sleep 40

Come shall we go?
Ben Go then for tis in vain

To seek him here that means not to be found
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II Capulet's orchard

Enter ROMEO

Rom He jests at scars that never felt a wound
JULIET appears above at a window

But soft! what light through yonder window
breaks?

It is the east and Juliet is the sun
Arise fair sun and kill the envious moon

Who is already sick and pale with grief
That thou her maid art far more fair than she

Be not her maid since she is envious
Her vestal livery is but a ckk and green

And none but fools do wear it cast it off
It is my lady O it is my love! 10

O that she knew she were!
She speaks yet she says nothing what of that?

Her ey is discourses I will answer it
I am too bold tis not to me she speaks

T o of the fairest stars in all the heaven
Having some business do entreat her eyes

To twinkle in their spheres till they return
What if her ey is were there they in her head?

The brightness of her cheek would shame those
stars

As daylight doth a lamp her eyes in heaven 20
Would through the airy region stream so bright

That birds would sing and think it were not
in hit

See how she leans her cheek upon her hand!

O that I were a glove upon that hand
That I might touch that cheek!

Jul Ay me!
Rom She speaks

O speak again bright angel! for thou art
As glorious to this night being o er my head

As is a winged messenger of heaven
Unto the white-upturned wondering eyes

Of mortals that fall back to gaze on him 30
When he bestrides the lazy pacing clouds

And sails upon the bosom of the air
Jul O Romeo Romeo! wherefore art thou

Romeo?
Deny thy father and refuse thy name

Or if thou wilt not be but sworn my love,
And I ll no longer be a Capulet

Rom [Aside] Shall I hear more or shall I speak
at this?

Jul Tis but thy name that is my enemy
Thou art thyself though not a Montague

What s Montague? it is not hand nor foot 40
Nor arm nor face nor any other part

Belonging to a man O be some other name!
What s in a name? that which we call a rose

By any other name would smell as sweet
So Romeo would were he not Romeo call d

Retain that dear perfection which he owes
Without that title Romeo doff thy name,

And for that name which is no part of thee
Take all myself

Rom I take thee at thy word
Call me but love and I ll be new baptized 50

Henceforth I never will be Romeo
Jul What man art thou that thus bescreen d

in right
So stumblest on my counsel?

Rom By a name
I know not how to tell thee who I am

My name dear saint is hateful to myself
Because it is an enemy to thee

Had I it written I would tear the word
Jul My ears have not yet drunk a hundred

words
Of that tongue s utterance yet I know the sound

Art thou not Romeo and a Montague? 60

Rom Neither fair saint if either thee dislike
Jul How earnest thou hither tell me and

wherefore?
The orchard walls are high and hard to climb

And the place death considering who thou art
If any of my kinsmen find thee here

Rom With love s light wings did I o er perch
these walls

For stony limits cannot hold love out
And what love can do that dares love attempt
Therefore thy kinsmen are no let to me

Jul If they do see thee, they will murder thee
Rom Alack, there lies more peril in thine eye
 Than twenty of their swords look thou but sweet,
 And I am proof against their enmity
Jul I would not for the world they saw thee here
Rom I have night's cloak to hide me from their sight,
 And but thou love me let them find me here
 My life were better ended by their hate,
 Than death prorogued, wanting of thy love
Jul By whose direction found'st thou out this place?
Rom By love, who first did prompt me to inquire,
 He lent me counsel and I lent him eyes
 I am no pilot, yet wert thou as far
 As that vast shore wash'd with the farthest sea,
 I would adventure for such merchandise
Jul Thou know'st the mask of night is on my face
 Else would a maiden blush bepaint my cheek
 For that which thou hast heard me speak to-night
 Fain would I dwell on form, fain, fain deny
 What I have spoke but farewell compliment! 89
 Dost thou love me? I know thou wilt say Ay
 And I will take thy word yet if thou swear'st,
 Thou mayst prove false at lovers' perjuries
 They say Jove laughs O gentle Romeo,
 If thou dost love, pronounce it faithfully
 Or if thou think'st I am too quickly won
 I'll frown and be perverse and say thee nay,
 So thou wilt woo, but else, not for the world
 In truth fair Montague I am too fond
 And therefore thou mayst think my 'haviour light
 But trust me gentleman I'll prove more true 100
 Than those that have more cunning to be strange
 I should have been more strange I must confess
 But that thou overheard'st ere I was ware
 My true love's passion therefore pardon me,
 And not impute this yielding to light love,
 Which the dark night hath so discovered
Rom Lady by yonder blessed moon I swear
 That tips with silver all these fruit tree tops—
Jul O, swear not by the moon the inconstant moon
 That monthly changes in her circled orb 110
 Lest that thy love prove likewise variable
Rom What shall I swear by?
Jul Do not swear at all
 Or if thou wilt, swear by thy gracious self
 Which is the god of my idolatry,
 And I'll believe thee

Rom If my heart's dear love—
Jul Well, do not swear although I joy in thee,
 I have no joy of this contract to-night
 It is too rash too unadvised too sudden,
 Too like the lightning which doth cease to be
 Ere one can say "It lightens" Sweet, good night!
 This bud of love by summer's ripening breath,
 May prove a beauteous flower when next we meet 122
 Good night good night! as sweet repose and rest
 Come to thy heart as that within my breast!
Rom O wilt thou leave me so unsatisfied?
Jul What satisfaction canst thou have to-night?
Rom The exchange of thy love's faithful vow for mine
Jul I gave thee mine before thou didst request it
 And yet I would it were to give again
Rom Wouldst thou withdraw it? for what purpose, love? 130
Jul But to be frank and give it thee again
 And yet I wish but for the thing I have
 My bounty is as boundless as the sea
 My love as deep, the more I give to thee,
 The more I have for both are infinite
Nurse calls within
 I hear some noise within, dear love, adieu!
 Anon good nurse! Sweet Montague be true
 Stay but a little, I will come again [Exit above
Rom O blessed blessed night! I am afraid
 Being in night all this is but a dream 140
 Too flattering sweet to be substantial
Re-enter JULIET above
Jul Three words, dear Romeo and good night
 indeed
 If that thy bent of love be honourable
 Thy purpose marriage send me word to-morrow,
 By one that I'll procure to come to thee,
 Where and what time thou wilt perform the rite
 And all my fortunes at thy foot I'll lay
 And follow thee my lord throughout the world
Nurse [Within] Madam!
Jul I come anon —But if thou mean'st not well 150
 I do beseech thee—
Nurse [Within] Madam!
Jul By and by I come —
 To cease thy suit and leave me to my grief
 To-morrow will I send
Rom So thrive my soul—
Jul A thousand times good night! [Exit above
Rom A thousand times the worse to want thy light

Love gets toward love as schoolboys from their books
But love from love toward school with heavy looks

[*Returning*]

Re-enter JULIET above

Jul Hist' Romeo hist' O for a falconer's voice

To lure this tassel-gentle back again! 160

Bondage is hoarse and may not speak aloud
Else would I tear the cave where Echo lies
And I make her airy tongue more hoarse than mine
With repetition of my Romeo's name

Rom It is my soul that calls upon my name
How silver sweet sound lovers' tongues by night
Like softest music to attending ears!

Jul Romeo!

Rom My dear?

Jul At what o'clock to-morrow
Shall I send to thee?

Rom At the hour of nine 169

Jul I will not fail tis twenty years till then
I have forgot why I did call thee back

Rom Let me stand here till thou remember it

Jul I shall forget to have thee still stand there
Remembering how I love thy company

Rom And I'll still stay to have thee still forget
Forgetting any other home but this

Jul 'Tis almost morning I would have thee gone

And yet no further than a wanton's bird
Who lets it hop a little from her hand
Like a poor prisoner in his twisted gyres 180
And with a silk thread plucks it back again
So loving jealous of his liberty

Rom I would I were thy bird

Jul Sweet so I could I
Yet I should kill thee with much cherishing
Good night good night! parting is such sweet
sorrow

That I shall say good night till it be morrow

[*Exit alone*]

Rom Sleep dwell upon thine eyes peace in thy
breast!

Would I were sleep and peace so sweet to rest!
Hence will I to my ghostly father's cell 189
His help to crave and my dear hap to tell [*Exit*]

SCENE III *Friar Laurence's cell*

Enter FRIAR LAURENCE, with a basket

Fri L The grey-eyed morn smiles on the
frowning night
Chequering the eastern clouds with streaks of
light

And flecked darkness like a drunkard reels
From forth day's path and Titan's fiery wheels

Now ere the sun advance his burning eye,
The day to cheer and night's dank dew to dry
I must up-fill this osier cage of ours
With baleful weeds and precious-juiced flowers
The earth that's nature's mother is her tomb
What is her burying grave that is her womb 190
And from her womb children of divers kind
We sucking on her natural bosom find
Many for many virtues excellent
None but for some and yet all different
O muck! is the powerful grace that lies
In herbs plants stones and their true qualities
For nought so vile that on the earth doth live
But to the earth some special good doth give,
Nor aught so good but strain'd from that fair use
Revolts from true birth stumbling on abuse 200
Virtue itself turns vice being misapplied
And vice sometimes by action dignified
Within the infant rind of this small flower
Poison hath residence and medicine power
For this being smelt with that part cheers each
part
Being tasted slays all senses with the heart
Two such opposed kings encamp them still
In man as well as herbs grace and rude will
And where the worser is predominant
Full soon the canker death eats up that plant 210

Enter ROMEO

Rom Good morrow father

Fri L *Benedicite!*

What early tongue so sweet saluteth me?
Young son it argues a distemper'd head
So soon to bid good morrow to thy bed
Care keeps his watch in every old man's eye
And where care lodges sleep will never lie
But where unbrued youth with unstuff'd brain
Doth couch his limbs there golden sleep doth
reign

Therefore thy earliness doth me assure
Thou art up-roused by some distemperance 220
Or if not so then here I hit it right
Our Romeo hath not been in bed to-night

Rom That last is true the sweeter rest was
mine

Fri L God pardon sin! wast thou with Rosa-
line?

Rom With Rosaline my ghostly father? no
I have forgot that name and that name's woe

Fri L That's my good son but where hast
thou been then?

Rom I'll tell thee ere thou ask it me again
I have been feasting with mine enemy
Where on a sudden one hath wounded me 230
That's by me wounded both our remedies
Within thy help and holy physic lies

I bear no hatred, blessed man, for, lo

My intercession likewise steads my foe

Fri L Be plain, good son, and homely in thy drift,

Riddling confession finds but riddling shrift

Rom Then plainly know my heart's dear love is set

On the fair daughter of rich Capulet

As mine on hers, so hers is set on mine, 59

And all combined, save what thou must combine

By holy marriage: when and where and how

We met, we woo'd and made exchange of vow,

I'll tell thee as we pass, but this I pray,

That thou consent to marry us to-day

Fri L Holy Saint Francis, what a change is here!

Is Rosaline, whom thou didst love so dear

So soon forsaken? young men's love then lies

Not truly in their hearts, but in their eyes

Jesu Maria, what a deal of brine

Hath wash'd thy sallow cheeks for Rosaline! 70

How much salt water thrown away in waste

To season love, that of it doth not taste!

The sun not yet thy sighs from heaven clears,

Thy old groans ring yet in my ancient ears,

Lo, here upon thy cheek the stain doth sit

Of an old tear that is not wash'd off yet

If e'er thou wast thyself and these woes thine,

Thou and these woes were all for Rosaline

And art thou changed? pronounce this sentence then 79

Women may fall when there's no strength in men

Rom Thou chid'st me oft for loving Rosaline

Fri L For doting, not for loving, pupil mine

Rom And bad'st me bury love

Fri L Not in a grave,

To lay one in, another out to have

Rom I pray thee, chide not: she whom I love now

Doth grace for grace and love for love allow,

The other did not so

Fri L O, she knew well

Thy love did read by rote and could not spell

But come, young waverer, come go with me 90

In one respect I'll thy assistant be

For this alliance may so happy prove

To turn your households' rancour to pure love

Rom O, let us hence: I stand on sudden haste

Fri L Wisely and slow: they stumble that run fast [Exeunt

SCENE IV A street

Enter BENVOLIO and MERCUTIO

Mer Where the devil should this Romeo be?
Came he not home to-night?

Ben Not to his father's, I spoke with his man

Mer Ah, that same pale hard-hearted wench, that Rosaline,

Torments him so, that he will surely run mad

Ben Tybalt the kinsman of old Capulet,

Hath sent a letter to his father's house

Mer A challenge, on my life

Ben Romeo will answer it

Mer Any man that can write may answer a letter 10

Ben Nay, he will answer the letter's master, how he dares, being dared

Mer Alas, poor Romeo! he is already dead, stabbed with a white wench's black eye, shot thorough the ear with a love-song, the very pin of his heart cleft with the blind bow-boy's butt-shaft: and is he a man to encounter Tybalt?

Ben Why, what is Tybalt?

Mer More than prince of cats, I can tell you: O, he is the courageous captain of compliments. He fights as you sing prick-song, keeps time, distance, and proportion: resums his minims, rests, one, two, and the third in your bosom: the very butcher of a silk button, a duellist, a duellist, a gentleman of the very first house, of the first and second cause: ah, the immortal *pussado!* the *punto reverso!* the *has!*

Ben The what?

Mer The pox of such antic, lisping, affecting fantasticoes—these new tuners of accents! By Jesu, a very good blade! a very tall man! a very good whore! Why is not this a lamentable thing—grandsire, that we should be thus afflicted with these strange flies, these fashion-mongers, these *perdona mi s*, who stand so much on the new form, that they cannot sit at ease on the old bench? O, their bones! their bones!

Enter ROMEO

Ben Here comes Romeo: here comes Romeo

Mer Without his roe, like a dried herring. O, flesh, flesh, how art thou fishified! Now is he for the numbers that Petrarch flow'd in: Laura to his lady was but a kitchen wench; marry, she had a better love to be rhyme her: Dido a dowdy, Cleopatra a gipsy, Helen and Hero hildings and harlots. Thusbe a grey eye or so, but not to the purpose. Signior Romeo, *bon jour!* there's a French salutation to your French slop. You gave us the counterfeit fairly last night.

Rom Good morrow to you both. What counterfeit did I give you?

Mer The slip, sir, the slip: can you not conceive?

Rom Pardon good Mercutio my business was great and in such a case as mine a man may strain courtesy

Mer That s as much = to say such a case as yours constrains a man to bow in the hams

Rom Meaning to court sy

Mer Thou hast most kindly hit it

Rom A most courteous exposition 60

Mer Nay I am the very pink of courtesy

Rom Pink for flower

Mer Right

Rom Why then = my pump well flowered

Mer Well said follow me this jest now till thou hast worn out thy pump that when the single sole of it is worn the jest may remain after the wearing sole singular

Rom O single soled jest solely singular for the singleness! 70

Mer Come between us good Benvolio my wits faint

Rom Switch and spurs switch and spurs or I'll cry a match

Mer Nay if thy wits run the wild goose chase I have done for thou hast more of the wild goose in one of thy wits than I am sure I have in my whole five was I with you there for the goose? 80

Rom Thou wast never with me for any thing when thou wast not there for the goose

Mer I will bite thee by the ear for that jest

Rom Nay good goose bite not

Mer Thy wit is a very bitter sweetening it is a most sharp sauce

Rom And is it not well served in to a sweet goose? 90

Mer O here s a wit of cheveril that stretches from an inch narrow to an ell broad!

Rom I stretch it out for that word broad which added to the goose proves thee far and wide a broad goose 91

Mer Why is not this better now than groaning for love? now art thou soctable now art thou Romeo now art thou what thou art by art as well as by nature for this drivelling love is like a great natural that runs lolling up and down to hide his bauble in a hole

Ben Stop there stop there

Mer Thou desirest me to stop in my tale against the hair 100

Ben Thou wouldst else have made thy tale large

Mer O thou art deceived I would have made it short for I was come to the whole depth of my tale and meant indeed to occupy the argument no longer

Rom Here s goodly gear!

Enter NURSE and PETER

Mer A sail a sail!

Ben Two two a shirt and a smock

Nurse Peter! 110

Peter Anon!

Nurse My fan Peter

Mer Good Peter to hide her face for her fan s the fairer face

Nurse God ye good morrow gentlemen

Mer God ye good den fair gentlewoman

Nurse Is it good den?

Mer Tis no less I tell you for the bawdy hand of the dial is now upon the prick of noon

Nurse Out upon you! what a man are you! 120

Rom One gentlewoman that God hath made for himself to mar

Nurse By my troth it is well said for himself to mar : quoth a? Gentlemen can any of you tell me where I may find the young Romeo?

Rom I can tell you but young Romeo will be older when you have found him than he was when you sought him I am the youngest of that name for fault of a worse

Nurse You say well 130

Mer Yes = the worst well? very well took I faith wisely

Nurse If you be he sir I desire some confidence with you

Ben She will indite him to some supper

Mer A bawd a bawd a bawd! So ho!

Rom What hast thou found?

Mer No hare sir unless a hare sir in a lenten pie that is something stale and hoar ere it be spent [Sings] 140

An old hare hoar

And an old hare hoar

Is very good meat in lent

But a hare that is hoar

Is too much for a score

When it hoars ere it be spent

Romeo will you come to your father s? we'll to dinner thither

Rom I will follow you

Mer Farewell ancient lady farewell [sings.] 151

lady lady lady

[*Exeunt MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO*]

Nurse Marry farewell I pray you sir what saucy merchant was this that was so full of his ropery?

Rom A gentleman, nurse that loves to hear himself talk and will speak more in a minute than he will stand to in a month

Nurse An a speak any thing against me I'll take him down, an a were lusrier than he is and twenty such Jacks and if I cannot I'll find those

that shall Scurvy knave! I am none of his flirts—
gills I am none of his skains mates And thou
must stand by too, and suffer every knave to use
me at his pleasure?

Peter I saw no man use you at his pleasure if I
had my weapon should quickly have been out, I
warrant you I dare draw as soon as another man
if I see occasion in a good quarrel, and the law on
my side 169

Nurse Now, afore God I am so vexed, that
every part about me quivers Scurvy knave!
Pray you, sir, a word and as I told you, my
young lady bade me inquire you out, what she
bade me say, I will keep to myself but first
let me tell ye if ye should lead her into a fool's
paradise as they say, it were a very gross kind
of behaviour, as they say for the gentlewoman
is young, and, therefore, if you should deal
double with her, truly it were an ill thing to be
offered to any gentlewoman and very weak
dealing 181

Rom Nurse, commend me to thy lady and mis-
tress I protest unto thee—

Nurse Good heart and I' faith, I will tell her
as much Lord, she will be a joyful woman

Rom What wilt thou tell her, nurse? thou dost
not mark me

Nurse I will tell her, sir, that you do protest,
which, as I take it is a gentlemanlike offer

Rom Bid her devise 191

Some means to come to shrift this afternoon,
And there she shall at Friar Laurence' cell
Be shrived and married Here is for thy pains

Nurse No, truly, sir, not a penny

Rom Go to, I say you shall

Nurse This afternoon, sir? well she shall be
there

Rom And stay, good nurse behind the abbey
wall

Within this hour my man shall be with thee 200

And bring thee cords made like a tackled stair,
Which to the high top-gallant of my joy

Must be my convoy in the secret night

Farewell, be trusty and I'll quit thy pains

Farewell, commend me to thy mistress

Nurse Now God in heaven bless thee! Hark

you sir

Rom What say'st thou my dear nurse?

Nurse Is your man secret? Did you ne'er hear

say

"Two may keep counsel putting one away?"

Rom I warrant thee my man's as true as

steel 210

Nurse Well sir my mistress is the sweetest

lady—Lord Lord! when was a little prating

thing—O there is a nobleman in town one

Paris, that would fain lay knife aboard, but she
good soul had as lief see a toad, a very toad, as
see him I anger her sometimes and tell her that
Paris is the properer man, but I'll warrant you,
when I say so she looks as pale as any clout in
the versal world Doth not rosemary and Romeo
begin both with a letter? 220

Rom Ay, nurse what of that? both with an R

Nurse Ah, moel er! that's the dog's name, R is
for the—No, I know it begins with some other
letter—and she hath the prettiest sententious of
it of you and rosemary that it would do you
good to hear it

Rom Commend me to thy lady

Nurse Ay, a thousand times [*Exit ROMEO*] 230

Peter

Pet Anon!

Nurse Peter, take my fan and go before and
apace [*Exeunt*]

SCENE V Capulet's orchard

Enter JULIET

Jul The clock struck nine when I did send the
nurse

In half an hour she promised to return

Perchance she cannot meet him that's not so
O she is lame! love's heralds should be thoughts,
Which ten times faster glide than the sun's beams,
Driving back shadows over louring hills

Therefore do nimble pinion'd doves draw love,
And therefore hath the wind swift Cupid wings
Now is the sun upon the highmost hill
Of this day's journey and from nine till twelve

Is three long hours yet she is not come 11

Had she affections and warm youthful blood,

She would be as swift in motion as a ball

My words would bandy her to my sweet love,

And his to me

But old folks many feign as they were dead,

Unwieldy slow, heavy, and pale as lead

O God, she comes!

Enter NURSE and PETER

O honey nurse what news?

Hast thou met with him? Send thy man away

Nurse Peter stay at the gate [*Exit PETER*]

Jul Now good sweet nurse—O Lord why

look'st thou sad? 21

Though news be sad yet tell them merrily,

If good thou shamest the music of sweet news

By playing it to me with so sour a face

Nurse I am a weary give me leave awhile

Fie, how my bones ache! what a jaunt have

had!

Jul I would thou hadst my bones and I thy

news

Nay come I pray thee speak good good nurse speak

Nurse Jesu what hasten can you not stay awhile?

Do you not see that I am out of breath? 30

Jul How art thou out of breath when thou hast breath

To say to me that thou art out of breath?

The excuse that thou dost make in this delay

Is longer than the tale thou dost excuse

Is thy news good or bad? answer to that

Say either and I'll stay the circumstance

Let me be satisfied is't good or bad?

Nurse Well you have made a simple choice you know not how to choose a man Romeo no nor he though his face be better than any man's yet his leg excels all men's and for a hand and a foot and a body though they be not to be talked on, yet they are past compare he is not the flower of courtesy but I'll warrant him as gentle as a lamb Go thy ways wench serve God What have you dined at home?

Jul No no but all this did I know before

What says he of our marriage? what of that?

Nurse Lord how my head aches! what a head have I!

It beats as it would fall in twenty pieces 30

My back o't other side—O my back my back!

Bestrew your heart for sending me about

To catch my death with jaunting up and down!

Jul I faith I am sorry that thou art not well

Sweet sweet sweet nurse tell me what says my love?

Nurse Your love says like an honest gentle man and a courteous and a kind and a hand some and I warrant a virtuous—Where is your mother?

Jul Where is my mother why she is within 40

Where should she be? How oddly thou repliest!

Your love says like an honest gentleman

Where is your mother?

Nurse O God s lady dear!

Are you so hot? marry come up I trow

Is this the poultrice for my aching bones?

Henceforward do your messages yourself

Jul Here's such a coil! come what says Romeo?

Nurse Have you got leave to go to shrift to-day?

Jul I have

Nurse Then hie you hence to Friar Laurence cell 50

There stays a husband to make you a wife

Now comes the wanton blood up in your cheeks

They'll be in scarlet straight as any new

Hie you to church I must another way To fetch a ladder by the which your love Must climb a bird's nest soon when it's dark I am the drudge and toil in your delight But you shall bear the burden soon at night Go I'll to dinner hie you to the cell

Jul Hie to high fortune! Honest nurse

farewell [Exeunt 50

SCENE VI Friar Laurence's cell

Enter Friar LAURENCE and ROMEO

Fri L So smile the heavens upon this holy act

That after hours with sorrow chide us not!

Rom Amen amen! but come what sorrow can

It cannot countervail the exchange of joy

That one short minute give me in her sigh

Do thou but close our hands with holy words

Then love-devouring death do what he dare

It is enough I may call her mine

Fri L These violent delights have violent ends

And in their triumph die like fire and powder 10

Which as they kiss consume the sweetest honey

Is loathesome in his own deliciousness

And in the taste confounds the appetite

Therefore love moderately long love doth so

Too swift arrives as tardy as too slow

Enter JULIET

Here comes the lady O so light a foot

Will ne'er wear out the everlasting flint

A lover may bestride the gossamer

That idles in the wanton summer air

And yet not fall so light is vanity 20

Jul Good even to my ghostly confessor

Fri L Romeo shall thank thee daughter for us both

Jul As much to him else is his thanks too much

Rom Ah Juliet if the measure of thy joy

Be heap'd like mine and that thy skill be more

To blazon it then sweeten with thy breath

This neighbour air and let rich music a tongue

Unfold the imagined happiness that both

Receive in either by this dear encounter

Jul Conceit more rich in matter than in words

Brags of his substance not of ornament 30

They are but beggars that can count their worth

But my true love is grown to such excess

I cannot sum up sum of half my wealth

Fri L Come come with me and we will make short work

For by your leave you shall not stay alone

Till holy church incorporate two in one

[Exeunt

ACT III

SCENE I *A public place**Enter MERCUTIO BENVOLIO Page, and Servants*

Ben I pray thee, good Mercutio, let's retire
The day is hot the Capulets abroad,
And, if we meet, we shall not scape a brawl
For now, these hot days, is the mad blood

stirring

Mer Thou art like one of those fellows that
when he enters the confines of a tavern claps me
his sword upon the table and says, 'God send
me no need of thee' and by the operation of the
second cup draws it on the drawer when indeed
there is no need 10

Ben Am I like such a fellow?

Mer Come, come, thou art as hot a Jack in thy
mood as any in Italy and as soon moved to be
moody, and as soon moody to be moved

Ben And what to?

Mer Nay an there were two such, we should
have none shortly for one would kill the other
Thou'lt why thou wilt quarrel with a man that
hath a hair more or a hair less, in his beard than
thou hast thou wilt quarrel with a man for
cracking nuts having no other reason but be-
cause thou hast hazel eyes what eye but such
an eye would spy out such a quarrel? Thy head
is as full of quarrels as an egg is full of meat and
yet thy head hath been beaten as addle as an egg
for quarrelling thou hast quarrelled with a man
for coughing in the street because he hath
wakened thy dog that hath lain asleep in the sun
didst thou not fall out with a tailor for wearing
his new doublet before Easter? with another for
tying his new shoes with old riband? and yet
thou wilt tutor me from quarrelling?

Ben An I were so apt to quarrel as thou art any
man should buy the fee simple of my life for an
hour and a quarter

Mer The fee simple—O simple!

Ben By my head here come the Capulets

Mer By my heel I care not 39

Enter TYBALT and others

Tyb Follow me close, for I will speak to them
Gentlemen good den a word with one of you

Mer And but one word with one of us? couple
it with something make it a word and a blow

Tyb You shall find me apt enough to that sir
an you will give me occasion

Mer Could you not take some occasion with-
out giving?

Tyb Mercutio thou consort'st with Romeo—

Mer Consort! what dost thou make us min-
strels? an thou make minstrels of us look to hear

nothing but discords here's my fiddlestick,
here's that shall make you dance 'Zounds,
consort!

Ben We talk here in the public haunt of men
Either withdraw unto some private place
And reason coldly of your grievances
Or else depart, here all eyes gaze on us

Mer Men's eyes were made to look, and let
them gaze

I will not budge for no man's pleasure I

Enter ROMEO

Tyb Well peace be with you, sir here comes
my man

Mer But I'll be hang'd, sir, if he wear your
livery 60

Marry, go before to field he'll be your follower,
Your worship in that sense may call him "man"

Tyb Romeo the hate I bear thee can afford
No better term than this thou art a villain

Rom Tybalt the reason that I have to love
thee

Doth much excuse the appertaining rage

To such a greeting villain am I none

Therefore farewell I see thou know'st me not

Tyb Boy, this shall not excuse the injuries
That thou hast done me therefore turn and draw

Rom I do protest I never injured thee 71

But love thee better than thou canst devise,

Till thou shalt know the reason of my love

And so good Capulet—which name I tender

As dearly as my own—be satisfied

Mer O calm, dishonourable, vile submission!

Alla stoccato carries it away [Draws]

Tyb halt you rat-catcher will you walk?

Tyb What wouldst thou have with me? 79

Mer Good king of cats, nothing but one of your
nine lives, that I mean to make bold withal, and
as you shall use me hereafter, dry-beat the rest of
the eight Will you pluck your sword out of his
pilcher by the ears? make haste lest mine be
about your ears ere it be out

Tyb I am for you [Drawing]

Rom Gentle Mercutio put thy rapier up

Mer Come, sir your *passado* [They fight]

Rom Draw Benvolio beat down their weapons
Gentlemen for shame forbear this outrage! 90

Tyb halt Mercutio the prince expressly hath
Forbidden bandying in Verona streets

Hold Tybalt! good Mercutio!

[TYBALT under ROMEO'S arm stabs MERCUTIO,
and flies with his followers]

Mer I am hurt

A plague o' both your houses! I am sped

Is he gone and hath nothing?

Ben What art

Mer Ay ay a scratch a scratch marry tis enough

Where is my page? Go villain fetch a surgeon
[*Exit PAGE*]

Rom Courage man the hurt cannot be much

Mer No tis not so deep as well nor so wide as a church-door but tis enough twill serve ask for me to morrow and you shall find me a grave man I am peppered I warrant for this world A plague both your houses! Zounds a dog a rat a mouse a cat to scratch a man to death! a braggart a rogue a villain that fights by the book of arithmetic Why the devil came you between us? I was hurt under your arm

Rom I thought all for the best 109

Mer Help me into some house *Benvolio*
Or I shall faint A plague o both your houses!
They have made worms meat of me I have it
And soundly too your houses!

[*Exit MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO*]

Rom This gentleman the Prince's near ally
My very friend hath got his mortal hurt
In my behalf my reputation stain'd
With Tybalt's slander—Tybalt that an hour
Hath been my kinsman! O sweet Juliet
Thy beauty hath made me effeminate
And in my temper soften'd valour's steel! 120

R—*enter BENVOLIO*

Ben O Romeo Romeo brave Mercutio's dead!
That gallant spirit hath aspired the clouds
Which too untimely here did scorn the earth

Rom This day's black fate on more days doth depend

Thus but begins the woe others must end

Ben Here comes the furious Tybalt back again

Rom Alas in triumph and Mercutio slain!

Away to heaven respective lenity

And fire-eyed fury be my conduct now!

Re-enter TYBALT

Now Tybalt take the villain back again 130
That late thou gavest me for Mercutio's soul
Is but a little way above our heads

Scorning for thine to keep him company

Either thou or I or both must go with him

Tyb Thou wretched boy that didst consort
him here,

Shalt with him hence

Rom Ths shall determine that

They fight TYBALT falls

Ben Romeo away be gone

The citizens are up and Tybalt slain

Stand not amazed the Prince will doom thee
death,

If thou art taken hence be gone away 140

Rom O I am fortune's fool!

Ben Why dost thou stay?
[*Exit ROMEO*]

Enter CITIZENS &c

1st Cit Which way ran he that kill'd Mercutio?
Tybalt that murderer which way ran he?

Ben There lies that Tybalt

1st Cit Up sir go with me
I charge thee in the Prince's name, obey

*Enter PRINCE attended MONTAGUE CAPULET
their wives and others*

Prin Where are the vile beginners of this fray?

Ben O noble Prince I can discover all
The unlucky manage of this fatal brawl
There lies the man slain by young Romeo
That slew thy kinsman brave Mercutio 150

La Cap Tybalt my cousin! O my brother's
child

O Prince! O cousin! husband! O the blood is
spilt

Of my dear kinsman! Prince as thou art true,

For blood of ours shed blood of Montague

O cousin cousin

Prin Benvolio who began this bloody fray?

Ben Tybalt here slain whom Romeo's hand
did slay

Romeo that spoke him fair bade him bethink
How nice the quarrel was and urged withal
Your high displeasure all this uttered 160
With gentle breath calm look knees humbly
bow'd

Could not take truce with the unruly spleen

Of Tybalt deaf to peace but that he turns

With piercing steel at bold Mercutio's breast

Who all as hot turns deadly point to point

And with a martial scorn with one hand beats

Cold death aside and with the other sends

It back to Tybalt whose dexterity

Retorts—Romeo he cried aloud

Hold friends! friends part! and swifter than
his tongue 170

His agile arm beats down their fatal points

And swifter them rushes underneath whose arm

An envious thrust from Tybalt hit the life

Of stout Mercutio and then Tybalt fled

But by and by comes back to Romeo

Who had but newly entertain'd revenge,

And to it they go like lightning for ere I

Could draw to part them was stout Tybalt slain,

And as he fell did Romeo turn and fly

Thus is the truth or let Benvolio die 180

La Cap He is a kinsman to the Montague

Affection makes him false he speaks not true

Some twenty of them fought in this black strife

And all those twenty could but kill one life
 I beg for justice, which thou, Prince, must give,
 Romeo slew Tybalt, Romeo must not live
Prm Romeo slew him, he slew Mercutio,
 Who now the price of his dear blood doth owe?
Mon Not Romeo, Prince, he was Mercutio's
 friend, 189

His fault concludes but what the law should end,
 The life of Tybalt

Prm And for that offence
 Immediately we do exile him hence
 I have an interest in your hate's proceeding,
 My blood for your rude brawls doth lie a-bleed-

ing,
 But I'll amerce you with so strong a fine
 That you shall all repent the loss of mine
 I will be deaf to pleading and excuses
 Nor tears nor prayers shall purchase out abuses
 Therefore use none, let Romeo hence in haste,
 Else, when he's found, that hour is his last 200
 Bear hence this body and attend our will
 Mercy but murders, pardoning those that kill

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II *Capulet's orchard*

Enter JULIET

Jul Gallop apace, you fiery-footed steeds
 Towards Phoebus' lodging: such a waggoner
 As Phaethon would whip you to the west
 And bring in cloudy night immediately.
 Spread thy close curtain, love-performing night,
 That runaways' eyes may wink, and Romeo
 Leap to these arms, untalk'd of and unseen
 Lovers can see to do their amorous rites
 By their own beauties; or, if love be blind,
 It best agrees with night. Come, civil night,
 Thou sober-suited matron, all in black
 And learn me how to lose a winning match,
 Play'd for a pair of stainless maidenhoods:
 Hood my unmann'd blood, bating in my cheeks,
 With thy black mantle till strange love grown
 bold

Think true love acted simple modesty
 Come, night, come Romeo, come, thou day in
 night,
 For thou wilt lie upon the wings of night
 Whiter than new snow on a raven's back.
 Come, gentle night, come, loving black-brow'd
 night, 20

Give me my Romeo; and when he shall die,
 Take him and cut him out in little stars
 And he will make the face of heaven so fine
 That all the world will be in love with night
 And pay no worship to the garish sun.
 O, I have bought the mansion of a love,
 But not possess'd it; and though I am sold,

Not yet enjoy'd, so tedious is this day
 As is the night before some festival
 To an impatient child that hath new robes
 And may not wear them. O, here comes my
 nurse
 And she brings news, and every tongue that
 speaks
 But Romeo's name speaks heavenly eloquence

Enter NURSE with cords

Now, nurse, what news? What hast thou there?
 the cords

That Romeo bid thee fetch?

Nurse Ay, ay, the cords

Throws them down

Jul Ay me! what news? why dost thou wring
 thy hands?

Nurse Ah, well, a-day! he's dead, he's dead!
 We are undone, lady, we are undone!

Alack the day! he's gone, he's kill'd, he's dead!

Jul Can heaven be so envious?

Nurse Romeo can 40

Though heaven cannot. O Romeo, Romeo!
 Who ever would have thought it? Romeo!

Jul What devil art thou, that dost torment me
 thus?

This torture should be roar'd in dismal hell.
 Hath Romeo slain himself? say thou but ay,
 And that bare vowel I shall poison more
 Than the death-darting eye of cockatrice.
 I am not I, if there be such an ay.
 Or those eyes shut that make thee answer ay.
 If he be slain, say ay, or if not no 50
 Brief sounds determine of my weal or woe.

Nurse I saw the wound, I saw it with mine
 eyes—

God save the mark!—here on his manly breast
 A piteous corse, a bloody piteous corse
 Pale, pale as ashes, all bedaub'd in blood,
 All in gore-blood, I swoonded at the sight.

Jul O break, my heart! poor bankrupt, break
 at once!

To prison, eyes, ne'er look on liberty!
 Vile earth to earth resign, end motion here,
 And thou and Romeo press one heavy bier! 60

Nurse O Tybalt, Tybalt, the best friend I
 had!

O courteous Tybalt! honest gentleman!
 That ever I should live to see thee dead!

Jul What storm is this that blows so contrary?
 Is Romeo slaughter'd and is Tybalt dead?
 My dear loved cousin and my dearer lord?
 Then, dreadful trumpet, sound the general doom!
 For who is living if those two are gone?

Nurse Tybalt is gone, and Romeo banish'd
 Romeo that kill'd him, he is banish'd

Jul O God! did Romeo's hand shed Tybalt's blood?

Nurse It did, it did, alas the day, it did!

Jul O serpent heart, hid with a flowering face!

Did ever dragon keep so fair a cave?

Beautiful tyrant! fiend angelical!

Dove feather'd raven! wolfish ravening lamb!

Despised substance of divinest show!

Just opposite to what thou justly seem'st

A damned saint, an honourable villain

O nature, what hadst thou to do in hell? 80

When thou didst bower the spirit of a fiend

In mortal paradise of such sweet flesh?

Was ever book containing such vile matter

So fairly bound? O that deceit should dwell

In such a gorgeous palace!

Nurse There's no trust

No faith, no honesty in men, all perjured

All forsworn, all naught, all dissemblers

Ah, where's my man? give me some aqua vitae

These griefs, these woes, these sorrows make me old

Shame come to Romeo!

Jul Blister'd be thy tongue! 90

For such a wish! he was not born to shame

Upon his brow shame is ashamed to sit

For 'tis a throne where honour may be crown'd

Sole monarch of the universal earth

O what a beast was I to chide at him!

Nurse Will you speak well of him that kill'd your cousin?

Jul Shall I speak ill of him that is my husband?

Ah, poor my lord, what tongue shall smooth thy name

When I, thy three hours' wife, have mangled it?

But wherefore villain didst thou kill my

cousin? 100

That villain cousin would have kill'd my husband

Back, foolish tears, back to your native spring

Your tributary drops belong to woe

Whence you, mistaking, offer up to joy

My husband! yes, that Tybalt would have slain

And Tybalt's dead, that would have slain my husband

All this is comfort, wherefore weep I then?

Some word there was, worse than Tybalt's death

That murder'd me, I would forget it fain

But O, it presses to my memory! 110

Like damned guilty deeds to sinners' minds

'Tybalt is dead, and Romeo—banished

That banished, that one word banished

Hath slain ten thousand Tybalts, Tybalt's death

Was woe enough, if it had ended there

Or, if our woe delights in fellowship

And needly will be rank'd with other griefs

Why follow'd not when she said Tybalt's dead?

Thy father or thy mother, nay, or both! 119

Which modern lamentation might have moved?

But with a rearward following Tybalt's death,

Romeo's banished, to speak that word

Is father, mother, Tybalt, Romeo, Juliet

All slain, all dead, Romeo is banished!

There is no end, no limit, measure, bound

In that word's death, no words can that woe sound

Where is my father and my mother, nurse?

Nurse Weeping and wailing over Tybalt's corse

Will you go to them? I will bring you thither

Jul Wash they his wounds with tears, mine shall be spent! 120

When theirs are dry, for Romeo's banishment

Take up those cords, poor ropes, you are beguiled

Both you and I, for Romeo is evil'd

He made you for a highway to my bed

But I, a maid, die maiden-widowed

Come, cords, come, nurse, I'll to my wedding bed

And death, not Romeo, take my maidenhead!

Nurse Hie to your chamber, I'll find Romeo

To comfort you, I wot well where he is

Hark ye, your Romeo will be here at night! 140

I'll to him, he is hid at Laurence's cell

Jul O, find him! give this ring to my true knight

And bid him come to take his last farewell

[Exit]

SCENE III. Friar Laurence's cell

Enter FRIAR LAURENCE

Friar L. Romeo, come forth, come forth, thou fearful man

Affliction is enamour'd of thy parts

And thou art wedded to calamity

Enter ROMEO

Rom. Father, what news? what is the Prince's doom?

What sorrow craves acquaintance at my hand That I yet know not?

Friar L. Too familiar

Is my dear son with such sour company

I bring thee tidings of the Prince's doom

Rom. What less than dooms-day is the Prince's doom?

Friar L. A gentler judgement vanish'd from his lips! 10

Not body's death, but body's banishment

Rom Ha, banishment! be merciful, say
"death",

For exile hath more terror in his look
Much more than death do not say "banishment"

Fri L Hence from Verona art thou banished
Be patient, for the world is broad and wide

Rom There is no world without Verona walls,
But purgatory, torture, hell itself

Hence banished is banish'd from the world,
And world's exile is death then "banished"

Is death mis term'd calling death "banishment,"
Thou cutt'st my head off with a golden axe,

And smilest upon the stroke that murders me
Fri L O deadly sin! O rude unthankfulness!

Thy fault our law calls death, but the kind prince,
Taking thy part, hath rush'd aside the law

And turn'd that black word "death" to "banish-
ment"

This is dear mercy, and thou seest it not
Rom 'Tis torture and not mercy heaven is

here
Where Juliet lives, and every cat and dog

And little mouse, every unworthy thing,
Live here in heaven and may look on her,

But Romeo may not more validity,
More honourable state, more courtship lives

In carrion flies than Romeo they may seize
On the white wonder of dear Juliet's hand

And steal immortal blessing from her lips,
Who even in pure and vestal modesty,

Still blush as thinking their own kisses sin
But Romeo may not, he is banished

Flies may do this but I from this must fly
They are free men but I am banished

And say st thou yet that exile is not death?
Hadst thou no poison mix'd no sharp-ground

knife
No sudden mean of death though ne'er so mean,
But "banished to kill me?"—"banished"

O friar the damned use that word in hell
Howlings attend it how hast thou the heart,

Being a divine a ghostly confessor,
A sin absolver, and my friend profess'd

To mangle me with that word "banished"
Fri L Thou fond mad man hear me but speak

a word
Rom O thou wilt speak again of banishment

Fri L I'll give thee armour to keep off that
word

Adversity's sweet milk philosophy
To comfort thee though thou art banished

Rom Yet banished? I hang up philosophy!
Unless philosophy can make a Juliet

Displant a town reverse a prince's doom
Helps not it prevails not talk no more

Fri L O, then I see that madmen have no ears

Rom How should they, when that wise men
have no eyes?

Fri L Let me dispute with thee of thy estate
Rom Thou canst not speak of that thou dost

not feel
Wert thou as young as I, Juliet thy love,

An hour but married Ty balt murdered,
Doting like me and like me banished

Then mightst thou speak, then mightst thou tear
thy hair

And fall upon the ground, as I do now,
Taking the measure of an unmade grave

Knocking within
Fri L Arise, one knocks, good Romeo hide

thyself
Rom Not I, unless the breath of heart sick

groans
Mist-like infold me from the search of eyes

Knocking
Fri L Hark how they knock! Who's there?

Romeo arise,
Thou wilt be tal en Stay awhile! Stand up,

Knocking
Run to my study By and by! God's will,

What simplicity is this! I come I come!
Knocking

Who knocks so hard? whence come you? what's
your will?

Nurse [Within] Let me come in and you shall
know my errand

I come from Lady Juliet
Fri L Welcome then

Enter NURSE

Nurse O holy friar O tell me, holy friar
Where is my lady's lord where's Romeo?

Fri L There on the ground with his own tears
made drunk

Nurse O he is even in my mistress' case,
Just in her case! O woeful sympathy!

Piteous predicament! Even so lies she
Blubbering and weeping weeping and blubbering

Stand up stand up stand an you be a man
For Juliet's sake for her sake rise and stand,

Why should you fall into so deep an O?
Rom Nurse!

Nurse Ah sir! ah sir! Well death's the end of
all

Rom Spakest thou of Juliet? how is it with her?
Doth she not think me an old murderer

Now I have stain'd the childhood of our joy
With blood remov'd but little from her own?

Where is she? and how doth she? and what say
My conceal'd lady to our cancell'd love?

Nurse O she says nothing sir, but weeps
weeps

And now falls on her bed and then starts up 100
 And Tybalt calls and then on Romeo cries
 And then down falls again

Rom As if that name
 Shot from the deadly level of a gun
 Did murder her as that name's cursed hand
 Murder'd her kinsman O tell me friar tell me
 In what vile part of this anatomy
 Doth my name lodge? tell me that I may sack
 The hateful mansion [*Draws his sword*]
Fri L Hold thy desperate hand

Art thou a man? thy form cries out thou art
 Thy tears are womanish thy wild acts denote
 The unreasonable fury of a beast 111
 Unseemly woman in a seeming man
 Or ill beseeching beast in seeming both!
 Thou hast amazed me by my holy order
 I thought thy disposition better temper'd
 Hast thou slain Tybalt? wilt thou slay thyself?
 And slay thy lady too that lives in thee
 By doing damned hate upon thyself?
 Why rail'st thou on thy birth the heaven and
 earth?

Since birth and heaven and earth all three do
 meet 120
 In thee at once which thou at once wouldst lose
 Fie fie thou shamest thy shape thy love thy
 wit

Which like a usurer abound'st in all
 And usest none in that true use indeed
 Which should bedeck thy shape thy love thy
 wit

Thy noble shape is but a form of wax
 Digressing from the valour of a man
 Thy dear love sworn but hollow perjury
 Killing that love which thou hast vow'd to
 cherish

Thy wit that ornament to shape and love 130
 Misshapen in the conduct of them both
 Like powder in a skillless soldier's flask
 Is set a fire by thine own ignorance
 And thou dismember'd with thine own defence
 What rouse thee man thy Juliet is alive
 For whose dear sake thou wast but lately dead
 There art thou happy Tybalt would kill thee
 But thou slew'st Tybalt there art thou happy
 too

The law that threaten'd death becomes thy friend
 And turns it to exile there art thou happy 140
 A pack of blessings lights upon thy back
 Happiness courts thee in her best array
 But like a misbehaved and sullen wench
 Thou put'st upon thy fortune and thy love
 Take heed take heed for such die miserable
 Go get thee thy love as was decreed
 Ascend her chamber hence and comfort her

But look thou stay not till the watch be set
 For then thou canst not pass to Mantua
 Where thou shalt live till we can find a time 150
 To blaze your marriage reconcile your friends
 Beg pardon of the Prince and call thee back
 With twenty hundred thousand times more joy
 Than thou went'st forth in lamentation
 Go before nurse commend me to thy lady
 And bid her hasten all the house to bed
 Which heavy sorrow makes them apt unto
 Romeo is coming

Nurse O Lord I could have stay'd here all the
 night
 To hear good counsel O what learning is! 160
 My lord I'll tell my lady you will come
Rom Do so and bid my sweet prepare to chide
Nurse Here sir a ring she bid me give you sir
 Hie you make haste for it grows very late [*Exit*]

Rom How well my comfort is reviv'd by this!
Fri L Go hence good night and here stands
 all your state
 Either be gone before the watch be set
 Or by the break of day disguised from hence
 Sojourn in Mantua I'll find out your man
 And he shall signify from time to time 170
 Every good hap to you that chances here
 Give me thy hand 'tis late farewell good
 night
Rom But that a joy past joy calls out on me
 It were a grief so brief to part with thee
 Farewell [*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV A room in Capulet's house

Enter CAPULET LADY CAPULET and PARIS

Cap Things have fall'n out sir so unluckily
 That we have had no time to move our daughter
 Look you she loved her kinsman Tybalt dearly
 And so did I Well we were born to die
 'Tis very late she'll not come down to-night
 I promise you but for your company
 I would have been a bed an hour ago
Par These times of woe afford no time to woo
 Madam good night commend me to your
 daughter

La Cap I will and know her mind early to-
 morrow 180
 To-night she is mew'd up to her heaviness
Cap Sir Paris I will make a desperate tender
 Of my child's love I think she will be ruled
 In all respects by me nay more, I doubt it not
 Wife go you to her ere you go to bed
 Acquaint her here of my son Paris' love
 And bid her mark you me on Wednesday next—
 But soft! what day is this?

Par Monday my lord

Cap Monday! ha, ha! Well, Wednesday is too soon,
 O Thursday let it be o' Thursday tell her, 20
 She shall be married to this noble earl
 Will you be ready? do you like this haste?
 We'll keep no great ado—a friend or two,
 For, hark you, Tybalt being slain so late,
 It may be thought we held him carelessly,
 Being our kinsman, if we revel much
 Therefore we'll have some half a dozen friends
 And there an end But what say you to Thursday?
 Par My lord I would that Thursday were to-morrow
 Cap Well, get you gone o' Thursday be it, then 30
 Go you to Juliet ere you go to bed
 Prepare her, wife against this wedding-day
 Farewell, my lord Light to my chamber ho!
 Afore me! it is so very late,
 That we may call it early by and by
 Good night [Exeunt

SCENE V Capulet's orchard

Enter ROMEO and JULIET above, at the window

Jul Wilt thou be gone? it is not yet near day
 It was the nightingale and not the lark
 That pierced the fearful hollow of thine ear,
 Nightly she sings on yon pomegranate tree
 Believe me, love, it was the nightingale
 Rom It was the lark, the herald of the morn
 No nightingale look, love, what envious streaks
 Do lace the severing clouds in yonder east
 Night's candles are burnt out and jocund day
 Stands tip-toe on the misty mountain tops 10
 I must be gone and live or stay and die
 Jul Yon light is not day-light I know it, I
 It is some meteor that the sun exhales
 To be to thee this night a torch-bearer,
 And light thee on thy way to Mantua
 Therefore stay yet thou needst not to be gone
 Rom Let me be ta'en let me be put to death,
 I am content so thou wilt have it so
 I'll say yon grey is not the morning's eye
 'Tis but the pale reflex of Cynthia's brow 20
 Nor that is not the lark whose notes do beat
 The vaulty heaven so high above our heads
 I have more care to stay than will to go
 Come death, and welcome! Juliet wills it so
 How is't, my soul? let's talk it is not day
 Jul It is it is hie hence be gone, away!
 It is the lark that sings so out of tune
 Straining harsh discords and unpleasing sharps
 Some say the lark makes sweet division 30
 This doth not so for she divideth us
 Some say the lark and loathed road change cries
 O now I would they had changed voices too!

Since arm from arm that voice doth us affray,
 Hunting thee hence with hunt's up to the day
 O, now be gone more light and light it grows
 Rom More light and light, more dark and dark
 our woes!

Enter NURSE to the chamber

Nurse Madam!
 Jul Nurse?
 Nurse Your lady mother is coming to your chamber
 The day is broke, be wary look about [Exit 40
 Jul Then window let day in and let life out
 Rom Farewell farewell! one kiss and I'll descend [He goeth down
 Jul Art thou gone? O love, lord ay, husband friend!
 I must hear from thee every day in the hour,
 For in a minute there are many days
 O by this count I shall be much in years
 Ere I again behold my Romeo!
 Rom Farewell!
 I will omit no opportunity
 That may convey my greetings love to thee 50
 Jul O think'st thou we shall ever meet again?
 Rom I doubt it not, and all these woes shall serve
 For sweet discourses in our time to come
 Jul O God I have an ill-divining soul!
 Methinks I see thee now thou art below,
 As one dead in the bottom of a tomb
 Either my eyesight fails or thou look'st pale
 Rom And trust me love in my eye so do you
 Dry sorrow drinks our blood Adieu adieu! [Exit
 Jul O Fortune Fortune! all men call thee
 fickle 60
 If thou art fickle what dost thou with him
 That is renown'd for faith? Be fickle Fortune
 For then I hope thou wilt not keep him long
 But send him back
 La Cap [Within] Ho daughter! are you up?
 Jul Who is that calls? is it my lady mother?
 Is she not down so late or up so early?
 What unaccustom'd cause procures her hither?

Enter LADY CAPULET

La Cap Why how now Juliet!
 Jul Madam I am not well
 La Cap Evermore weeping for your cousin's death? 70
 What wilt thou wash him from his grave with tears?
 An if thou couldst thou couldst not make him live

Therefore have done some grief shows much of love

But much of grief shows still some want of wit

Jul Yet let me weep for such a feeling loss

La Cap So shall you feel the loss but not the friend

Which you weep for

Jul Feeling so the loss

I cannot choose but ever weep the friend

La Cap Well girl thou weepst not so much for his death,

As that the villain lives which slaughter'd him

Jul What villain madam?

La Cap That same villain Romeo

Jul [Aside] Villain and he be many miles asunder —

God pardon him! I do with all my heart

And yet no man like he doth grieve my heart

La Cap That is because the traitor murderer lives

Jul Ay madam from the reach of these my hands

Would none but I might venge my cousin's death!

La Cap We will have vengeance for it fear thou not

Then weep no more I'll send to one in Mantua

Where that same banish'd runaway doth live,

Shall give him such an unaccustom'd dram

That he shall soon keep Tybalt company

And then I hope, thou wilt be satisfied

Jul Indeed I never shall be satisfied

With Romeo till I behold him—dead—

Is my poor heart so for a kinsman vex'd

Madam if you could find out but a man

To bear a poison I would temper it

That Romeo should upon receipt thereof

Soon sleep in quiet O how my heart abhors

To hear him named and cannot come to him

To wreak the love I bore my cousin

Upon his body that hath slaughter'd him!

La Cap Find thou the means and I'll find such a man

But now I'll tell thee joyful tidings girl

Jul And joy comes well in such a needy time

What are they I beseech your ladyship?

La Cap Well well thou hast a careful father

ch. 11

One who to put thee from thy heaviness

I hath sorted out a sudden day of joy

That thou expect'st not nor I look'd not for

Jul Madam in happy time what day is that?

La Cap Marry my child early next Thursday

morn

The gallant young and noble gentleman,

The County Paris at Saint Peter's Church

Shall happily make thee there a joyful bride

Jul Now by Saint Peter's Church and Peter too

He shall not make me there a joyful bride

I wonder at this haste that I must wed

Ere he that should be husband comes to woo

I pray you tell my lord and father madam

I will not marry yet and when I do I swear

It shall be Romeo whom you know I hate

Rather than Paris These are news indeed!

La Cap Here comes your father tell him so yourself

And see how he will take it at your hands

Enter CAPULET and NURSE

Cap When the sun sets the air doth drizzle dew

But for the sunset of my brother's son

It rains downright

How now? a conduit girl? what still in tears?

Evermore showing? In one little body

Thou counterfeist'st a bark a sea a wind

For still thy eyes which I may call the sea

Do ebb and flow with tears the bark thy body is

Sailing in this salt flood the winds thy sighs

Who raging with thy tears and they with them,

Without a sudden calm will overset

Thy tempest-tossed body How now wife?

Have you deliver'd to her our decree?

La Cap Ay sir but she will none she gives

you thanks

I would the fool were married to her grave!

Cap Soft! take me with you take me with you,

wife

How! will she none? doth she not give us thanks?

Is she not proud? doth she not count her blessed

Unworthy as she is that we have wrought

So worthy a gentleman to be her bridegroom?

Jul Not proud you have but thankful that you have

Proud can I never be of what I have

But thankful even for hate that is meant love

Cap How now how now chopp-logic! What is this?

Proud and I thank you and I thank you

not

And yet not proud mistress minion you

Thank me no thankings not proud me no prouds

But fettle your fine joints 'gainst Thursday next

To go with Paris to Saint Peter's Church,

Or I will drag thee on a hurdle thither

Out you green sickness carrion! out you bag

gage!

You tallow face!

La Cap He fe! what are you mad?

Jul Good father I beseech you on my knees

Hear me with patience but to speak a word

Cap Hang thee, young baggage! disobedient wretch!

I tell thee what get thee to church o' Thursday,
Or never after look me in the face
Speak not, reply not do not answer me,
My fingers itch Wife, we scarce thought us
blest

That God had lent us but this only child,
But now I see this one is one too much,
And that we have a curse in having her
Out on her, hilding!

Nurse God in heaven bless her!
You are to blame, my lord, to rate her so 170

Cap And why, my lady Wisdom? hold your tongue,

Good prudence smatter with your gossips, go
Nurse I speak no treason

Cap O, God ye god-den

Nurse May not ore speak?

Cap Peace you mumbling fool!

Utter your gravity as er a gossip's bowl,
For here we need it not

La Cap You are too hot

Cap God's bread! it makes me mad

Day, night, hour, tide time work play,
Alone, in company, still my care hath been 179

To have her match'd and having now provided
A gentleman of noble parentage

Of fair demesnes youthful and nobly train'd,
Stuff'd as they say with honourable parts

Proportion'd as one's thought would wish a man,
And then to have a wretched puling fool,

A whining mammet in her fortune's tender
To answer 'I'll not wed, I cannot love,

I am too young I pray you, pardon me'

But any you will not wed I'll pardon you

Graze where you will, you shall not house with
me 190

Look to't think on't I do not use to jest

Thursday is near lay hand on heart advise

Any you be mine, I'll give you to my friend

Any you be not, hang beg, starve die in the
streets

For, by my soul I'll ne'er acknowledge thee,

Nor what is mine shall never do thee good

Trust to't bethink you, I'll not be forsworn
[Exit

Jul Is there no pity sitting in the clouds
That sees into the bottom of my grief?
O sweet my mother cast me not away! 200

Delay this marriage for a month a week

Or if you do not make the bridal bed

That dim monument where Tybalt lies

La Cap Talk not to me for I'll not speak a
word

Do as thou wilt, for I have done with thee [Exit

Jul O God!—O nurse, how shall this be prevented?

My husband is on earth my faith in heaven,
How shall that faith return again to earth
Unless that husband send it me from heaven
By leaving earth? comfort me, counsel me 210
Alack alack, that heaven should practise strata-
gems

Upon so soft a subject as myself!

What say'st thou? hast thou not a word of joy?
Some comfort nurse

Nurse Faith here it is

Romeo is banish'd, and all the world to nothing
That he dares ne'er come back to challenge you,
Or if he do it needs must be by stealth

Then since the case so stands as now it doth,
I think it best you married with the County
O he's a lovely gentleman! 220

Romeo's a dishclout to him an eagle madam
Hath not so green so quick, so fair an eye

As Paris hath Beshrew my very heart

I think you are happy in this second match

For it excels your first or if it did not,

Your first is dead or twere as good he were

As living here and you no use of him

Jul Speakest thou from thy heart?

Nurse And from my soul too,

Or else beshrew them both

Jul Amen!

Nurse What?

Jul Well thou hast comforted me marvellous
much 230

Go in, and tell my lady I am gone,

Having displeased my father to Laurence cell

To make confession and to be absolved

Nurse Marry, I will, and this is wisely done
[Exit

Jul Ancient damnation! O most wicked fiend!

Is it more sin to wish me thus forsworn

Or to dispraise my lord with that same tongue

Which she hath praised him with above compare

So many thousand times? Go counsellor 239

Thou and my bosom henceforth shall be twin

I'll to the friar to know his remedy

If all else fail my self have power to die [Exit

ACT IV

SCENE I First Laurence's cell

Enter FIRST LAURENCE and PARIS

Fri L On Thursday sir? the time is very
short

Par My father Capulet will have it so

And I am nothing slow to slack his haste.

Fri L You say you do not know the lady's
mind

Uneven in the course I like it not

Par Immoderately she weeps for Tybalt's death

And therefore have I little talk'd of love

For Venus smiles not in a house of tears

Now sir her father counts it dangerous

That she doth give her sorrow so much sway 10

And in his wisdom hastes our marriage

To stop the inundation of her tears

Which too much minded by herself alone

May be put from her by society

Now do you know the reason of this haste

Fri L [*Aside*] I would I knew not why it should be slow'd

Look sir here comes the lady toward my cell

Enter JULIET

Par Happily met my lady and my wife!

Jul That may be sir when I may be a wife

Par That may be must be love on Thursday next 20

Jul What must be shall be

Fri L That's a certain text

Par Come you to make confession to this father?

Jul To answer that I should confess to you

Par Do not deny to him that you love me

Jul I will confess to you that I love him

Par So will ye I am sure that you love me

Jul If I do so it will be of more price

Being spoke behind your back than to your face

Par Poor soul thy face is much abused with tears

Jul The tears have got small victory by that

For it was bad enough before their spite 31

Par Thou wrong'st it more than tears with that report

Jul That is no slander sir which is a truth

And what I spake I spake it to my face

Par Thy face is mine and thou hast slander'd it

Jul It may be so for it is not mine own

Are you at leisure holy father now

Or shall I come to you at evening mass?

Fri L My leisure serves me pensive daughter now

My lord we must entreat the time alone 40

Par God shield I should disturb devotion!

Jul 'Tis on Thursday early will I rouse ye

Till then, adieu and keep this holy kiss [*Exit*

Jul O shut the door! and when thou hast done so

Come weep with me past hope past cure past help

Fri L Ah, Juliet I already know thy grief

It strains me past the compass of my wits

I hear thou must and nothing may prorogue it

On Thursday next be married to this County

Jul Tell me not friar that thou hear'st of this

Unless thou tell me how I may prevent it 51

If in thy wisdom thou canst give no help

Do thou but call my resolution wise

And with this knife I'll help it presently

God join'd my heart and Romeo's, thou our hands

And ere this hand by thee to Romeo seal'd

Shall be the label to another deed

Or my true heart with treacherous revolt

Turn to another, this shall slay them both

Therefore out of thy long experienced time 60

Give me some present counsel or behold

Twixt my extremes and me this bloody knife

Shall play the umpire arbitrating that

Which the commission of thy years and art

Could to no issue of true honour bring

Be not so long to speak I long to die

If what thou speak'st speak not of remedy

Fri L Hold daughter I do spy a kind of hope

Which craves as desperate an execution

As that is desperate which we would prevent 70

If rather than to marry County Paris

Thou hast the strength of will to slay thyself

Then is it likely thou wilt undertake

A thing like death to chide away this shame

That copes with death himself to scape from it

And if thou dar'st I'll give thee remedy

Jul O bid me leap rather than marry Paris

From off the battlements of yonder tower

Or walk in thievish ways or bid me lurk

Where serpents are chain me with roaring bears

Or shut me nightly in a charnel house 81

Or cover'd quite with dead men's rattling

bones

With reeky shanks and yellow chapless skulls

Or bid me go into a new-made grave

And hide me with a dead man in his shroud

Things that to hear them told have made me

tremble

And I will do it without fear or doubt

To live an unstain'd wife to my sweet love

Fri L Hold then go home be merry give

consent

To marry Paris Wednesday is to-morrow 90

To-morrow night look that thou lie alone

Let not thy nurse lie with thee in thy chamber

Take thou this vial being then in bed

And this distilled liquor drink thou off

When presently through all thy veins shall run

A cold and drowsy humour for no pulse

Shall keep his native progress but surcease

No warmth no breath shall testify thou livest

The roses in thy lips and cheeks shall fade 100

To pale ashes thy eyes windows fall

Like death, when he shuts up the day of life,
 Each part, deprived of supple government,
 Shall stiff and stark and cold, appear like death
 And in this borrow'd likeness of shrunk death
 Thou shalt continue two and forty hours,
 And then awake as from a pleasant sleep
 Now, when the bridegroom in the morning comes
 To rouse thee from thy bed, there art thou dead
 Then as the manner of our country is,
 In thy best robes uncover'd on the bier 110
 Thou shalt be borne to that same ancient vault
 Where all the kindred of the Capulets lie
 In the mean time, against thou shalt awake,
 Shall Romeo by my letters know our drift,
 And hither shall he come and he and I
 Will watch thy waking, and that very night
 Shall Romeo bear thee hence to Mantua
 And this shall free thee from this present shame,
 If no inconstant toy, nor womanish fear,
 Abate thy valour in the acting it 120
Jul Give me, give me! O, tell not me of fear!
Fri L Hold, get you gone be strong and
 prosperous
 In this resolve I'll send a friar with speed
 To Mantua with my letters to thy lord
Jul Love give me strength! and strength shall
 help afford
 Farewell, dear father! [Exeunt

SCENE II *Hall in Capulet's house*

Enter CAPULET, LADY CAPULET, NURSE, and
 TWO SERVINGMEN

Cap So many guests invite as here are writ
 [Exit 1ST SERVANT

Sirrah go hire me twenty cunning cooks
2nd Serv You shall have none ill, sir, for I'll try
 if they can lick their fingers

Cap How canst thou try them so?

2nd Serv Marry, sir, 'tis an ill cook that cannot
 lick his own fingers therefore he that cannot
 lick his fingers goes not with me

Cap Go, be gone [Exit 2ND SERVANT
 We shall be much unfurnish'd for this time 10

What, is my daughter gone to Friar Laurence?

Nurse Ay, forsooth

Cap Well he may chance to do some good on
 her

A peevish self-will'd harlotry it is

Nurse See where she comes from shrift with
 merry look

Enter JULIET

Cap How now, my headstrong! where have
 you been gadding?

Jul Where I have learn'd me to repent the sin
 Of disobedient opposition

To you and your behests and am enjoin'd
 By holy Laurence to fall prostrate here,
 And beg your pardon pardon I beseech you!
 Henceforward I am ever ruled by you

Cap Send for the County go tell him of this
 I'll have this knot knit up to-morrow morning

Jul I met the youthful lord at Laurence's cell,
 And gave him what becometh love I might,
 Not stepping over the bounds of modesty

Cap Why, I am glad on't this is well stand
 up

This is as't should be Let me see the County,
 Ay, marry, go, I say and fetch him hither 30

Now, afore God! this reverend holy friar,
 All our whole city is much bound to him

Jul Nurse will go with me into my closet,
 To help me sort such needful ornaments
 As you think fit to furnish me to-morrow

La Cap No not till Thursday, there is time
 enough

Cap Go nurse go with her we'll to church
 to-morrow [Exeunt JULIET and NURSE

La Cap We shall be short in our provision
 'Tis now near night

Cap Tush I will stir about
 And all things shall be well, I warrant thee, wife
 Go thou to Juliet, help to deck up her, 40

I'll not to bed to night, let me alone,
 I'll play the housewife for this once What ho!
 They are all forth Well, I will walk myself
 To County Paris to prepare him up
 Against to-morrow my heart is wondrous light,
 Since this same wayward girl is so reclaim'd [Exeunt

SCENE III *Juliet's chamber*

Enter JULIET and NURSE

Jul Ay, those attires are best but, gentle
 nurse

I pray thee leave me to myself to-night,
 For I have need of many orisons
 To move the heavens to smile upon my state,
 Which well thou know'st, is cross and full of
 sin

Enter LADY CAPULET

La Cap What are you busy ho? need you
 my help?

Jul No madam we have cull'd such neces-
 saries

As are behov'ful for our state to-morrow
 So please you let me now be left alone
 And let the nurse this night sit up with you
 For I am sure, you have your hands full all 10
 In this so sudden business

La Cap Good night

Move them no more by crossing their high will
[Exit CAPULET LADY CAPULET PARIS and FRISK]

1st Mus Faith we may put up our pipes and be gone

Nurse Honest good fellows ah put up put up
 For well you know this is a painful case *[Exit]*

1st Mus Ay by my troth the case may be attended 101

Enter PETER

Pet Musicians O musicians Heart's ease
 Heart's ease O an you will have me live play
 Heart's ease

1st Mus Why Heart's ease?
Pet O musicians because my heart itself plays
 My heart is full of woe O play me some
 merry dump to comfort me

1st Mus Not a dump we tis no time to play now 110

Pet You will not then?

1st Mus No

Pet I will then give it you soundly

1st Mus What will you give us?

Pet No money on my faith but the gleek I
 will give you the minstrel

1st Mus Then will I give you the serving
 creature

Pet Then will I lay the serving-creature's
 dagger on your pate I will carry no crotchets
 I'll re you I'll fa you do you note me? 121

1st Mus An you re us and fa us you note us

and Mus Pray you put up your dagger and
 put out your wit

Pet Then have at you with my wit I will dry
 beat you with an iron wit and put up my iron
 dagger Answer me like men

When gniping grief the heart doth wound
 And doleful dumps the mind oppress

Then music with her silver sound — 130
 why silver sound? why music with her sil-
 ver sound? What say you Simon Carling?

1st Mus Marry sir because silver hath a sweet
 sound

Pet Pretty! What say you Hugh Rebeck?

2nd Mus I say silver sound because musi-
 cians sound for silver

Pet Pretty too! What say you James Sound
 post? 139

3d Mus Faith, I know not what to say

Pet O I cry you mercy you are the singer
 I will say for you it is music with her silver
 sound because musicians have no gold for
 sound ng

Then music with her silver sound
 With speedy help doth lend redress *[Exit]*

1st Mus What a pestilent knave is this same!
2nd Mus Hang him Jack! Come we'll in here
 tarry for the mourners and stay dinner *[Exit]*

ACT V

SCENE I Mantua a street

Enter ROMEO

Rom If I may trust the flattering truth of sleep
 My dreams presage some joyful news at hand
 My bosom's lord sits lightly in his throne
 And all this day an unaccustom'd spirit
 Lifts me above the ground with cheerful thoughts
 I dreamt my lady came and found me dead—
 Strange dream that gives a dead man leave to
 think!—

And breathed such life with kisses in my lips
 That I revived and was an emperor
 Ah me! how sweet is love itself possess'd 10
 When but love's shadows are so rich in joy!

Enter BALTHASAR booted

News from Verona!—How now Balthasar!
 Dost thou not bring me letters from the friar?
 How doth my lady? Is my father well?
 How fares my Juliet? that I ask again
 For nothing can be ill if she be well

Bal Then she is well and nothing can be ill
 Her body sleeps in Capel's monument
 And her immortal part with angels lives
 I saw her laid low in her kindred's vault 20
 And presently took post to tell it you
 O pardon me for bringing these ill news
 Since you did leave it for my office sir

Rom Is it even so? then I defy you stars!
 Thou know'st my lodging get me ink and paper
 And hire two horses I will hence to-night
Bal I do beseech you sir have patience
 Your looks are pale and wild and do import
 Some misadventure

Rom Tush thou art deceived
 Leave me and do the thing I bid thee do 30
 Hast thou no letters to me from the friar?

Bal No my good lord

Rom No matter get thee gone
 And hire those horses I'll be with thee straight

[Exit BALTHASAR]

Well Juliet I will be with thee to-night
 Let's see for means O mischief thou art swift
 To enter in the thoughts of desperate men!
 I do remember an apothecary—
 And hereabouts he dwells—whilst late I noted
 In tatter'd weeds with overwhelding brows
 Cull'd out of simples mesagre were his looks 40
 Sharp misery had worn him to the bones

And in his needy shop a tortoise hung,
 An alligator stuff'd, and other skins
 Of ill shaped fishes, and about his shelves
 A beggarly account of empty boxes,
 Green earthen pots, bladders and musty seeds,
 Remnants of packthread and old cakes of roses,
 Were thinly scatter'd, to make up a show
 Noting this penury, to myself I said
 "An if a man did need a poison now,
 Whose sale is present death in Mantua,
 Here lives a cattiff wretch would sell it him"
 O, this same thought did but forerun my need,
 And this same needy man must sell it me
 As I remember, this should be the house
 Being holiday, the beggar's shop is shut
 What, ho! apothecary!

Enter APOTHECARY

Ap Who calls so loud?

Rom Come hither, man I see that thou art
 poor

Hold, there is forty ducats let me have
 A dram of poison, such soon speeding gear
 As will disperse itself through all the veins
 That the life weary taker may fall dead
 And that the trunk may be discharged of breath
 As violently as hasty powder fired
 Doth hurry from the fatal cannon's womb
Ap Such mortal drugs I have but Mantua's law
 Is death to any he that utters them

Rom Art thou so bare and full of wretchedness,
 And fear'st to die? famine is in thy cheeks,
 Need and oppression starveth in thine eyes
 Contempt and beggary hangs upon thy back,
 The world is not thy friend nor the world's law,
 The world affords no law to make thee rich,
 Then be not poor but break it and take this

Ap My poverty, but not my will consents

Rom I pay thy poverty, and not thy will

Ap Put this in any liquid thing you will
 And drink it off and if you had the strength
 Of twenty men it would dispatch you straight

Rom There is thy gold worse poison to men's
 souls

Doing more murders in this loathsome world
 Than these poor compounds that thou mayest not
 sell

I sell thee poison thou hast sold me none
 Farewell buy food and get thy self in flesh

Come cordial and not poison go with me
 To Juliet's grave for there must I use thee

[Exit]

SCENE II *Friar Laurence's cell*

Enter FRIAR JOHN

Fri J Holy Franciscan friar brother ho!

Enter FRIAR LAURENCE

Fri L This same should be the voice of Friar
 John

Welcome from Mantua what says Romeo?
 Or if his mind be writ, give me his letter

Fri J Going to find a bare foot brother out,
 One of our order, to associate me,

50 Here in this city visiting the sick
 And finding him, the searchers of the town,
 Suspecting that we both were in a house
 Where the infectious pestilence did reign,
 Seal'd up the doors and would not let us forth
 So that my speed to Mantua there was stay'd

Fri L Who bare my letter then to Romeo?

Fri J I could not send it—here it is again—

Nor get a messenger to bring it thee,
 So fearful were they of infection

Fri L Unhappy fortune! by my brother-
 hood

The letter was not nice but full of charge
 Of dear import, and the neglecting it
 May do much danger *Friar John* go hence,
 20 Get me an iron crow and bring it straight
 Unto my cell

Fri J Brother, I'll go and bring it thee *[Exit]*

Fri L Now must I to the monument alone,
 Within this three hours will fair Juliet wake
 She will beshrew me much that Romeo
 Hath had no notice of these accidents,
 But I will write again to Mantua
 And keep her at my cell till Romeo come
 Poor living corse, closed in a dead man's tomb!

[Exit]

SCENE III *A churchyard, in it a tomb
 belonging to the Capulets*

*Enter PARIS and his PAGE bearing flowers
 and a torch*

Par Give me thy torch boy hence and stand
 aloof

Yet put it out, for I would not be seen
 Under yond yew trees lay thee all along
 Holding thine ear close to the hollow ground
 So shall no foot upon the churchyard tread
 Being loose, unfirm with digging up of graves,
 But thou shalt hear it whistle then to me,
 As signal that thou hear'st something approach
 Give me those flowers Do as I bid thee go

Page [Aside] I am almost afraid to stand alone
 Here in the churchyard yet I will adventure

[He goes]

Par Sweet flower with flowers thy bridal bed
 I strew—

O woe! thy canopy is dust and stones—
 Which with sweet water nightly I will

Or wanting that with tears distill'd by
moans

The obsequies that I for thee will I eep
Nightly shall be to strew thy grave and weep
The PAGE whistles

The boy gives warning something doth approach
What cursed foot wanders this way to-night
To cross my obsequies and true love's rite? 20
What with a torch! muffle me night awhile
[Retires]

*Enter ROMEO and BALTHASAR with a torch
mattock &c*

Rom Give me that mattock and the wrenching
iron

Hold take this letter early in the morning
See thou deliver it to my lord and father
Give me the light upon this life I charge thee
Whate'er thou hearst or seest stand all aloof
And do not interrupt me in my course
Why I descend into this bed of death
Is partly to behold my lady's face 29
But chiefly to take thence from her dead finger
A precious ring a ring that I must use
In dear employment therefore hence be gone
But if thou jealous dost return to pry
In what I further shall intend to do
By heaven I will tear thee joint by joint
And strew this hungry churchyard with thy
limbs

The time and my intents are savage and wild
More fierce and more inexorable far
Than empty tigers or the roaring sea 39
Bal I will be gone sir and not trouble you

Rom So shalt thou show me friendship
Tale thou that

Live and be prosperous and farewell good
fellow

Bal *[Aside]* For all this same I'll hide me
hereabout

His looks I fear and his intents I doubt

[Retires]
Rom Thou detestable maw thou womb of
death

Gorged with the dearest morsel of the earth
Thus I enforce thy rotten jaws to open,
And in despite I'll cram thee with more food!
Opens the tomb

Par This is that banish'd haughty Montague 49
That murder'd my love's cousin with a such
grief

It is supposed the fair creature died
And here is come to do some villainous shame
To the dead bodies I will apprehend him
Comes forward

Stop thy unhallow'd toil vile Montague!

Can vengeance be pursued further than death?

Condemned villain I do apprehend thee
Obey and go with me for thou must die

Rom I must indeed and therefore came I hither
Good gentle youth tempt not a desperate man
Fly hence and leave me think upon these gone
Let them affright thee I beseech thee youth
Put not another sin upon my head
By urging me to fury O be gone!
By heaven I love thee better than myself
For I come hither arm'd against myself
Stay not be gone live and hereafter say
A madman's mercy bade thee run away

Par I do defy thy conjurations
And apprehend thee for a felon here

Rom Wilt thou provoke me? then have at thee
boy! *[They fight]* 70

Page O Lord they fight! I will go call the
watch *[Exit]*

Lar O I am slain! *[Falls]* If thou be merciful
Open the tomb lay me with Juliet *[Dies]*

Rom In faith I will Let me peruse this face
Mercutio's kinsman noble County Paris!
What said my man when my betossed soul
Did not attend him as we rode? I think
He told me Paris should have married Juliet
Said he not so? or did I dream it so? 80
Or am I mad hearing him talk of Juliet
To think it was so? O give me thy hand
One writ with me in sour misfortune's book!
I'll bury thee in a triumphant grave

A grave? O no! a lantern slaughter'd youth
For here lies Juliet and her beauty makes

This vault a feasting presence full of light
Death lie thou there by a dead man interr'd

Laying Paris in the tomb
How oft when men are at the point of death
Have they been merry! which their liegers call
A lightness before death O how may I 90
Call this a lightness? O my love! my wife!
Death that hath suck'd the honey of thy breath
Hath had no power yet upon thy beauty
Thou art not conquer'd beauty's ensign yet
Is crimson in thy lips and in thy cheeks
And death's pale flag is not advanced there
Tybalt liest thou there in thy bloody sheet?
O what more favour can I do to thee
Than with that hand that cut thy throat in twain
To sunder his that was thine enemy? 100
Forgive me cousin! Ah dear Juliet
Why art thou yet so fair? shall I believe
That unsubstantial death is amorous
And that the lean abhorred monster keeps
Thee here in dark to be his paramour?
For fear of that I still will stay with thee
And never from this palace of dim night

Depart again here here will I remain
 With worms that are thy chamber maids, O,
 here
 Will I set up my everlasting rest, 110
 And shake the yoke of inauspicious stars
 From this world-wearied flesh Eyes look your
 last!
 Arms take your last embrace! and lips O you
 The doors of breath seal with a righteous kiss
 A dateless bargain to engrossing death!
 Come, bitter conduct, come, unsavoury guide!
 Thou desperate pilot now at once run on
 The dashing rocks thy sea-sick weary bark!
 Here's to my love! *[Drinks]* O true apothecary!
 Thy drugs are quick Thus with a kiss I die 120
[Dies]

*Enter, at the other end of the churchyard, FRIAR
 LAURENCE with a lantern crow and spide*

Fri L Saint Francis be my speed! how oft
 to-night
 Have my old feet stumbled at graves! Who's
 there?
 Bal Here's one, a friend and one that knows
 you well
 Fri L Bliss be upon you! Tell me good my
 friend
 What torch is yond, that vainly lends his light
 To grubs and eyeless skulls? as I discern,
 It burneth in the Capels' monument
 Bal It doth so, holy sir, and there's my master,
 One that you love

Fri L Who is it?
 Bal Romeo
 Fri L How long hath he been there?
 Bal Full half an hour 130
 Fri L Go with me to the vault
 Bal I dare not sir
 My master knows not but I am gone hence
 And fearfully did menace me with death,
 If I did stay to look on his intents
 Fri L Stay, then I'll go alone Fear comes
 upon me
 O much I fear some ill-unlucky thing
 Bal As I did sleep under this yew-tree here
 I dreamt my master and another fought
 And that my master slew him
 Fri L Romeo!
 Alas, alas, what blood in this which stains
 The stony entrance of this sepulchre? 141
 What mean these masterless and gory swords
 To lie discoloured by this place of peace?
 Fri L Enter the tomb
 Romeo O pale! Who else? what Paris too?
 And steep'd in blood? Ah, what an unkind hour

Is guilty of this lamentable chance!
 The lady stirs
 JULIET wakes
 Jul O comfortable friar! where is my lord?
 I do remember well where I should be
 And there I am Where is my Romeo? 150
 Noise within
 Fri L I hear some noise Lady, come from that
 nest
 Of death contagion and unnatural sleep
 A greater power than we can contradict
 Hath thwarted our intents Come come away
 Thy husband in thy bosom there lies dead,
 And Paris too Come I'll dispose of thee
 Among a sisterhood of holy nuns
 Stay not to question for the watch is coming
 Come go good Juliet *[Voice again]* I dare no
 longer stay 159
 Jul Go get thee hence for I will not away
[Exit FRIAR LAURENCE]

What's here? a cup, closed in my true love's
 hand?
 Poison I see hath been his timeless end
 O churl! drunk all and left no friendly drop
 To help me after? I will kiss thy lips
 Haply some poison yet doth hang on them
 To make me die with a restorative *[Kisses him]*
 Thy lips are warm
 1st Watch *[Within]* Lead boy which way?
 Jul Yea noise? then I'll be brief O happy
 dagger! *[Snatching Romeo's dagger]*
 This is thy sheath *[Stabs herself]*, there rust and
 let me die 170
[Falls on Romeo's body and dies]

Enter FIRST WATCH, with the PAGE of PARIS
 Page This is the place there where the torch
 doth burn
 1st Watch The ground is bloody search about
 the churchyard
 Go some of you whoever you find attach
 Pitiful sight! here lies the County slain
 And Juliet bleeding warm and newly dead
 Who here hath lain these two days buried
 Go tell the Prince run to the Capulets
 Raise up the Montagues some others search
 We see the ground whereon these woes do
 lie
 But the true ground of all these piteous woes 180
 We cannot without circumstance descry

Re-enter some of the WATCH with BALTHASAR
 1st Watch Here's Romeo's man we found
 him in the churchyard
 1st Watch Hold him in safety till the Prince
 come hither

*Re-enter others of the WATCH with FRIAR
LAURENCE*

3rd Watch Here is a friar that trembles sighs
and weeps

We took this mattock and this spade from him
As he was coming from this churchyard side

1st Watch A great suspicion stay the friar too

Enter PRINCE and Attendants

Prince What misadventure is so early up
That calls our person from our morning's rest?

Enter CAPULET, LADY CAPULET and others

Cap What should it be that they so shriek
abroad? 190

L. Cap The people in the street cry Romeo
Some Juliet and some Paris and all run
With open outcry toward our monument

Prince What fear is this which startles in our
ears?

1st Watch So ereign here lies the County
Paris slain

And Romeo dead and Juliet dead before
Warm and new kill'd

Prince Search seek and know how this foul
murder comes

First Watch Here is a friar and slaughter'd
Romeo a man

With instruments upon them fit to open 200
These dead men's tombs

Cap O heavens! O wife look how our daughter
bleeds

This dagger hath musta'en—for lo his house
Is empty on the back of Montague—
And it must sheathed in my daughter's bosom!

La. Cap O me! this sight of death is as a bell
That warns my old age to a sepulchre

Enter MONTAGUE and others

Prince Come Montague for thou art early up
To see thy son and heir more early down 209

Mon Was my liege my wife is dead to-night
Grief of my son's exile hath stopp'd her breath
What further woes conspires against mine age?

Prince Look and thou shalt see

Mon O thou untaught what manners is in this
To press before thy father to a grave?

Prince Seal up the mouth of outrage for a while
Till we can clear these ambiguities
And know their spring their head their true
descent

And then will I be general of your woes 219
And lead you even to death meantime forbear
And let mischance be slave to patience
Bring forth the parties of suspicion

Fri. L I am the greatest able to do least
Yet most suspected as the time and place
Doth make against me of this dreadful murder
And here I stand both to impeach and purge
Myself condemned and myself excused

Prince Then say at once what thou dost know
in this

Fri. L I will be brief for my short date of
breath

Is not so long as is a tedious tale 230
Romeo there dead was husband to that Juliet
And she there dead that Romeo's faithful wife
I married them and their stol'n marriage day
Was Tybalt's dooms-day whose untimely death
Banish'd the new-made bridegroom from this
city

For whom and not for Tybalt Juliet pined
You to remove that siege of grief from her
Betroth'd and would have married her perforce
To County Paris then comes she to me 239
And with wild looks bid me devise some mean
To rid her from this second marriage
Or in my cell there would she kill herself
Then gave I her so tutor'd by my art
A sleeping potion which so took effect
As I intended for it wrought on her
The form of death meantime I writ to Romeo
That he should hither come as this dire night
To help to take her from her borrow'd grave
Being the time the potion's force should cease
But he which bore my letter Friar John 250

Was stay'd by accident and vesternight
Return'd my letter back Then all alone
At the prefixed hour of her waking
Came I to take her from her kindred's vault
Meaning to keep her closely at my cell
Till I conveniently could send to Romeo
But when I came some minute ere the time
Of her awaking here untimely lay
The noble Paris and true Romeo dead
She wakes and I entreated her come forth 260
And bear this work of heaven with patience
But then a noise did scare me from the tomb
And she too desperate would not go with me
But as it seems did violence on herself
All this I know and to the marriage
Her nurse is privy and if aught in this
Miscarried by my fault let my old life
Be sacrificed some hour before his time
Unto the rigor of severest law

Prince We still have known thee for a holy
man 270
Where's Romeo's man? what can he say in this?
Bur I brought my master news of Juliet's death
And then in post he came from Mantua
To this same place to this same monument

This letter he early bid me give his father,
And threaten'd me with death, going in the vault,
If I departed not and left him there

Prince Give me the letter, I will look on it
Where is the County's page, that raised the
watch?

Sirrah, what made your master in this place? 280

Page He came with flowers to strew his lady's
grave,

And bid me stand aloof, and so I did
Anon comes one with light to ope the tomb,
And by and by my master drew on him,
And then I ran away to call the watch

Prince This letter doth make good the friar's
words,

Their course of love, the tidings of her death
And here he writes that he did buy a poison
Of a poor pothecary, and therewithal
Came to this vault to die, and lie with Juliet 290
Where be these enemies? Capulet! Montague!
See what a scourge is laid upon your hate,

That heaven finds means to kill your joys with
love

And I for winking at your discords too
Have lost a brace of kinsmen all are punish'd

Cap O brother Montague give me thy hand
This is my daughter's jointure, for no more
Can I demand

Mon But I can give thee more
For I will raise her statue in pure gold,
That while Verona by that name is known, 300
There shall no figure at such rate be set
As that of true and faithful Juliet

Cap As rich shall Romeo be by his lady's lie,
Poor sacrifices of our enmity!

Prince A glooming peace this morning with it
brings,

The sun for sorrow, will not show his head
Go hence to have more talk of these sad things,
Some shall be pardon'd and some punished
For never was a story of more woe
Than this of Juliet and her Romeo [Exeunt] 310

20 The Tragedy of KING RICHARD II

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING RICHARD THE SECOND
JOHN OF GAUNT DUKE OF LANCASTER *uncles to*
EDMUND LANGLEY DUKE OF YORK *the King*
HENRY surnamed BOLINGBROKE DUKE OF Hereford
son to John of Gaunt afterwards KING
HENRY IV
DUKE OF AUMERLE son to the Duke of York
THOMAS MOWBRAY DUKE OF NORFOLK
DUFF OF SURREY
EARL OF SALISBURY
LORD BERKELEY
BUSHY
BROTHER *servants to King Richard*
GREEN
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND
HERY PERCY surnamed HOTSPUR his son
LORD ROSS
LORD WILLOUGHBY
LORD FITZPATRICK
BISHOP OF CARLISLE
ABBOT OF WESTMINSTER

LORD MARSHALL
SIR STEPHEN SCROOP
SIR PIERCE OF EXTON
CAPTAIN to a band of Welshmen
THREE HERALDS
ANOTHER LORD
GARDENER
GROOM OF THE STABLE
KEEPER
TWO SERVANTS to York
SERVANT to Exton

QUEEN to King Richard
DUCHESSES OF YORK
DUCHESS OF GLOUCESTER
LADY attending on the Queen

NOT-SPEAKING Lords Ladies Officers Soldiers
Gardeners Guards and other Attendants

SCENE. England and Wales

ACT I

SCENE I London King Richard's palace

Enter KING RICHARD JOHN OF GAUNT with
other Nobles and Attendants

A Rich Old John of Gaunt time-honour'd
Lancaster

Hast thou according to thy oath and band
Brought hither Henry Hereford thy bold son
Here to make good the boisterous late appeal
Which then our leisure would not let us hear
Against the Duke of Norfolk Thomas Mowbray?

Canst thou, my liege,

A Rich Tell me moreover hast thou sounded
him

If he appeal the Duke on ancient malice
Or worthily as a good subject should
On some known ground of treachery in him?

Canst thou As near as I could sift him on that argu-
ment

On some apparent danger seen in him

A Rich And at your Highness no inordinate malice

A Rich Then call them to our presence face to
face

And frowning brow to brow ourselves will hear
The accuser and the accused freely speak

High stomach'd are they both and full of ire
In rage deaf as the sea hasty as fire

Enter BOLINGBROKE and MOWBRAY

Boling Many years of happy days befall
My gracious sovereign my most loving liege!
Mow Each day still better other's happiness
Until the heavens envying earth's good hap
Add an immortal title to your crown!

A Rich We thank you both yet one but flatters
us

As well appeareth by the cause you come
Namely to appeal each other of high treason
Cousin of Hereford what dost thou object
Against the Duke of Norfolk Thomas Mowbray?

Boling First heaven be the record to my
speech!

In the devotion of a subject's love
Tendering the precious safety of my prince
And free from other misbegotten hate
Come I appellant to this princely presence
Now Thomas Mowbray do I turn to thee
An I mark my greeting well for what I speak
My body shall make good upon this earth
Or my divine soul answer it in heaven
Thou art a traitor and a miscreant

Too good to be so and too bad to live,
 Since the more fair and crystal is the sky,
 The uglier seem the clouds that in it fly
 Once more, the more to aggravate the note,
 With a foul traitor's name stuff I thy throat,
 And wish, so please my sovereign ere I move,
 What my tongue speaks my right drawn sword
 may prove

Mow. Let not my cold words here accuse my
 zeal

'Tis not the trial of a woman's war
 The bitter clamour of two eager tongues
 Can arbitrate this cause betwixt us twain,
 The blood is hot that must be cool'd for this
 Yet can I not of such tame patience boast
 As to be hush'd and nought at all to say
 First, the fair reverence of your Highness curbs
 me

From giving reins and spurs to my free speech
 Which else would post until it had return'd
 These terms of treason doubled down his throat
 Setting aside his high blood's royalty,
 And let him be no kinsman to my liege
 I do defy him and I spit at him

Call him a slanderous coward and a villain
 Whom to maintain I would allow him odds,
 And meet him, were I tied to run afoot
 Even to the frozen ridges of the Alps,
 Or any other ground inhabitable
 Where ever Englishman durst set his foot
 Meantime let this defend my loyalty,
 By all my hopes most falsely doth he lie

Boling. Pale trembling coward there I throw
 my gage

Disclaiming here the kindred of the King,
 And lay aside my high blood's royalty,
 Which fear, not reverence, makes thee to ex-
 cept

If guilty dread have left thee so much strength
 As to take up mine honour in pawn then stoop
 By that and all the rites of knighthood else
 Will I make good against thee, arm to arm
 What I have spoke or thou canst worse devise

Mow. I take it up and by that sword I swear
 Which gently laid my knighthood on my shoul-
 der

I'll answer thee in any fair degree
 Or chivalrous design of knightly trial
 And when I mount alive may I not light
 If I be traitor or unjustly fight!

K. Rich. What doth our cousin lay to Mow-
 bray's charge?

It must be great that can inherit us
 So much as of a thought of ill in him

Boling. Look, what I speak my life shall prove
 it true,

40 That Mowbray hath received eight thousand
 nobles

In name of lendings for your Highness soldiers,
 The which he hath detain'd for lewd employ-
 ments

Like a false traitor and injurious villain 91

Besides I say and will in battle prove,
 Or here or elsewhere to the furthest verge
 That ever was survey'd by English eye
 That all the treasons for these eighteen years
 Complotted and contrived in this land
 Fetch from false Mowbray their first head and
 spring

Further I say and further will maintain
 Upon his bad life to make all this good
 That he did plot the Duke of Gloucester's death,
 Suggest his soon believing adversaries, 101
 And consequently like a traitor coward
 Sluic'd out his innocent soul through streams of
 blood

Which blood like sacrificing Abel's cries,
 Even from the tongueless caverns of the earth,
 To me for justice and rough chastisement,
 And by the glorious worth of my descent
 This arm shall do it or this life be spent

K. Rich. How high a pitch his resolution soars!
 Thomas of Norfolk! what say'st thou to this? 110

Mow. O, let my sovereign turn away his face
 And bid his ears a little while be deaf
 Till I have told this slander of his blood
 How good and good men hate so foul a liar

K. Rich. Mowbray impartial are our eyes and
 ears

Were he my brother, nay my kingdom's heir,
 As he is but my father's brother's son
 Now by my sceptre's awe I make a vow,
 Such neighbour nearness to our sacred blood
 Should nothing privilege him nor partialize 120
 The unstooping firmness of my upright soul
 He is our subject Mowbray so art thou
 Free speech and fearless I to thee allow

Mow. Then Bolingbroke as low as to thy
 heart
 Through the false passage of thy throat thou
 liest

Three parts of that receipt I had for Calais
 Disburs'd I duly to his Highness soldiers
 The other part reserv'd I by consent
 For that my sovereign liege was in my debt
 Upon remainder of a dear account 130
 Since last I went to France to fetch his queen
 Now swallow down that lie For Gloucester's
 death

I slew him not but to my own disgrace
 Neglected my sworn duty in that case.
 For you, my noble Lord of Lancaster

The honourable father to my foe
 Once did I lay an ambush for your life,
 A trespass that doth vex my grieved soul
 But ere I last receiv'd the sacrament
 I did confess it and exactly begg'd
 Your Grace's pardon and I hope I had it
 This is my fault as for the rest appeal'd
 It issues from the rancour of a villain
 A recreant and most degenerate traitor
 Which in myself I boldly will defend
 And interchangeably hurl down my gage
 Upon this overweening traitor's foot
 To prove myself a loyal gentleman
 Even in the best blood chamber'd in his bosom
 In haste whereof most heartily I pray
 Your Highness to assign our trial day
 A Rich Wrath kindled gentlemen be ruled by me

140

150

160

Then dear my liege mine honour let me try
 In that I live and for that will I die
 A Rich Cousin throw up your gage do you
 begin
 Boling O God defend my soul from such deep
 sin
 Shall I seem crest fall'n in my father's sight?
 Or with pale beggar fear impeach my honour?
 Before this out-dared dastard? Ere my tongue
 Shall wound my honour with such feeble word
 Or sound so base a parle my teeth shall tear
 The slavish motive of recanting fear
 And spit it bleeding in his high disgrace
 Where shame doth harbour even in Mowbray's
 face [Exit GAUNT
 A Rich We were not born to sue but to com-
 mand
 Which since we cannot do to make you friends
 Be ready as your lives shall answer it
 At Coventry upon Saint Lambert's day
 There shall your swords and lances arbitrate
 The swelling difference of your settled hate
 Since we can not atone you we shall see
 Justice design the victor's chivalry
 Lord marshal command our officers at arms
 Be ready to direct these home alarms [Exit

SCENE II The Duke of Lancaster's palace

Enter JOHN OF GAUNT with the DUCHESS

OF GLOUCESTER

Gaunt Alas the part I had in Woodstock's blood
 Doth more solicit me than your exclams
 To stir against the butchers of his life!
 But since correction lieth in those hands
 Which made the fault that we cannot correct
 Put we our quarrel to the will of heaven
 Who when they see the hours ripe on earth
 Will rain hot vengeance on offenders' heads
 Duch Finds brotherhood in thee no sharper
 spur
 Hath love in thy old blood no living fire?
 Edward's seven sons whereof thyself art one
 Were as seven vials of his sacred blood
 Or seven fair branches springing from one root
 Some of those seven are dried by nature's course
 Some of those branches by the Destinies cut
 But Thomas my dear lord my life my Glou-
 cester
 One vial full of Edward's sacred blood
 One flourishing branch of his most royal root
 Is crack'd and all the precious liquor spilt
 Is hack'd down and his summer leaves all faded,
 By Envy's hand and Murder's bloody axe
 Ah Gaunt his blood was thine that bed that
 tomb
 That metal that self mould that fashion'd thee

180

190

200

210

220

230

240

250

260

270

280

290

300

310

320

330

340

350

360

370

380

390

400

410

420

430

440

450

460

470

480

490

500

510

520

530

540

550

560

570

580

590

600

610

620

630

640

650

660

670

680

690

700

710

720

730

740

750

760

770

780

790

800

810

820

830

840

850

860

870

880

890

900

910

920

930

940

950

960

970

980

990

1000

Made him a man, and though thou livest and
breastest,

Yet art thou slain in him thou dost consent
In some large measure to thy father's death
In that thou seest thy wretched brother die,
Who was the model of thy father's life
Call it not patience, Gaunt it is despair
In suffering thus thy brother to be slaughter'd 30
Thou showest the naked pathway to thy life,
Teaching stern murder how to butcher thee
That which in mean men we entitle patience
Is pale cowardice in noble breasts
What shall I say? to safeguard thine own life,
The best way is to venge my Gloucester's death
Gaunt God's is the quarrel, for God's substitute,

His deputy anointed in His sight
Hath caused his death the which if wrongfully
Let heaven revenge, for I may never lift 40
An angry arm against His minister
Duch Where then, alas, may I complain myself?

Gaunt To God, the widow's champion and defence

Duch Why, then, I will Farewell old Gaunt
Thou goest to Coventry, there to behold
Our cousin Hereford and fell Mowbray fight
O sit my husband's wrongs on Hereford's spear,
That it may enter butcher Mowbray's breast!
Or if misfortune miss the first career
B¹ Mowbray's sins so heavy in his bosom 50
That they may break his foaming courser's back,
And throw the rider headlong in the lists,
A catiff recreant to my cousin Hereford!
Farewell old Gaunt thy sometimes brother's
wife

With her companion grief must end her life
Gaunt Sister, farewell I must to Coventry
As much good stay with thee as go with me!

Duch Yet one word more grief boundeth
where it falls

Not with the empty hollowness but weight
I take my leave before I have begun 60
For sorrow ends not when it seemeth done
Commend me to thy brother Edmund York
Lo this is all—nay, yet depart not so
Though this be all do not so quickly go
I shall remember more Bid him—ah what?—
With all good speed at Plashy visit me
Alack, and what shall good old York there see
But empty lodgings and unfurnish'd walls
Unpeopled offices untrodden stones?
And what hear there for welcome but my
groans? 70

Therefore commend me let him not come there
To seek out sorrow that dwells every where

Desolate, desolate will I hence and die
The last leave of thee takes my weeping eye

[Exeunt]

SCENE III *The lists at Coventry*

*Enter the LORD MARSHAL and the DUKE OF
AUMERLE*

Mar My Lord Aumerle is Harry Hereford
arm'd?

Aum Yea at all points and longs to enter in
Mar The Duke of Norfolk sprightly and
bold

Stays but the summons of the appellant's trumpet

Aum Why then the champions are prepared
and stay

For nothing but his Majesty's approach

*The trumpets sound and the KING enters with his
nobles GAUNT BUSHY BAGOT GREEN and
others When they are set enter MOWBRAY in
arms, defendant with a HERALD*

K Rich Marshal demand of yonder champion

The cause of his arrival here in arms

Ask him his name and orderly proceed

To swear him in the justice of his cause 10

Mar In God's name and the King's say who
thou art

And why thou comest thus knightly clad in arms,
Against what man thou comest, and what thy
quarrel

Speal truly on thy knighthood and thy oath

As so defend thee heaven and thy valour!

Mow My name is Thomas Mowbray, Duke of
Norfolk,

Who hither come engaged by my oath—

Which God defend a knight should violate!—

Both to defend my loyalty and truth

To God my King and my succeeding issue 20

Against the Duke of Hereford that appeals me,

And by the grace of God and this mine arm,

To prove him in defending of myself

A traitor to my God my King and me

And as I truly fight defend me heaven!

*The trumpets sound Enter BOLINGBROKE,
appellant in armour with a HERALD*

K Rich Marshal ask yonder knight in arms

Both who he is and why he cometh hither

Thus plated in habiliments of war

And formally according to our law

Depose him in the justice of his cause 30

Mar What is thy name? and wherefore comest
thou hither

Before King Richard in his royal lists?

Against whom comest thou? and what's thy
quarrel?

Speak like a true knight so defend thee heaven'

Boling Harry of Hereford Lancaster and Derby

Am I who ready here do stand in arms
To prove by God's grace and my body's valour
In lists on Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolk
That he is a traitor foul and dangerous
To God of heaven King Richard and to me 40
And as I truly fight defend me heaven'

Mar On pain of death no person be so bold
Or daring hardy as to touch the lists
Except the Marshal and such officers
Appointed to direct these fair designs

Boling Lord Marshal let me kiss my
sovereign's hand

And bow my knee before his Majesty
For Mowbray and my self are like two men
That vow a long and weary pilgrimage
Then let us take a ceremonious leave 50

And loving farewell of our several friends

Mar The appellant in all duty greets your
Highness

And craves to kiss your hand and take his leave

A Rich We will descend and fold him in our
arms

Cousin of Hereford as thy cause is right
So be thy fortune in this royal fight!
Farewell my blood which if to-day thou shed
Lament we may but not revenge thee dead

Boling O let no noble eye profane a tear
For me if I be gored with Mowbray's spear 60
As confident as is the falcon's flight
Again a bird do I with Mowbray fight

My loving lord I take my leave of you
Of you my noble cousin Lord Aumerle
Not sick although I have to do with death
But lusty young and cheerily drawing breath
Lo as at English feasts so I regret
The daintiest last to make the end most sweet

O thou the earthly author of my blood
Whose youthful spirit in me regenerate, 70
Doth with a twofold vigour lift me up
To reach at victory above my head
Add proof unto my armour with thy prayers
And with thy blessings steel my lance's point
That it may enter Mowbray's waxen coat
And hush shew the name of John of Gaunt

I've in the lusty haughtiness of his son
Gaunt God in thy good cause make thee prosperous

Be swift like lightning in the execution
And let thy blows doubly redoubled,
Fall like amazing thunder on the casque
Of thy adverse pernicious enemy
Rouse up thy youthful blood, be valiant and
live

Boling Mine innocence and Saint George to
thrive!

Mow However God or fortune call my lot
There lives or dies true to King Richard's
throne

A loyal just and upright gentleman
Never did captive with a freer heart
Cast off his chains of bondage and embrace
His golden uncontroll'd enfranchisement 90
More than my dancing soul doth celebrate
This feast of battle with mine adversary
Most mighty liege and my companion peers
Take from my mouth the wish of happy years
As gentle and as jocund as to jest

Go I to fight truth hath a quiet breast
A Rich Farewell my lord securely I spy
Virtue with valour couched in thine eye
Order the trial Marshal and begin

Mar Harry of Hereford, Lancaster and
Derby 100

Receive thy lance and God defend thee right!

Boling Strong as a tower in hope I cry amen

Mar Go bear this lance to Thomas Duke of
Norfolk

ist Her Harry of Hereford Lancaster and
Derby

Stands here for God his sovereign and himself
On pain to be found false and recreant
To prove the Duke of Norfolk Thomas Mowbray
bray

A traitor to his God his King and him
And dares him to set forward to the fight
and *Her* Here standeth Thomas Mowbray
Duke of Norfolk 110

On pain to be found false and recreant
Both to defend himself and to approve
Henry of Hereford Lancaster and Derby
To God his sovereign and to him disloyal
Courageously and with a free desire
Attending but the signal to begin

Mar Sound trumpets and set forward com-
batants

A charge sounded

Stay the King hath thrown his warder down
A Rich Let them lay by their helmets and their
spears

And both return back to their chairs again 120
With Iraw with us and let the trumpets sound
While we return these Dukes what we decree

A long flourish

Draw near

80 And list what with our council we have done
For that our kingdom's earth should not be
soiled

With that dear blood which it hath fostered
And for our eyes do hate the dregspect

Of civil wounds plough'd up with neighbours'
 sword,
 And for we think the eagle-winged pride
 Of sky aspiring and ambitious thoughts, 130
 With rival hating envy set on you
 To wake our peace which in our country's
 cradle
 Draws the sweet infant breath of gentle sleep,
 Which so roused up with boisterous untuned
 drums,
 With harsh resounding trumpets' dreadful bray,
 And grating shock of wrathful iron arms,
 Might from our quiet confines fright fair peace
 And make us wade even in our kindred's blood,
 Therefore we banish you our territories
 You, cousin Hereford upon pain of life, 140
 Till twice five summers have enrich'd our fields
 Shall not regret our fair dominions
 But tread the stranger paths of banishment
Boling Your will be done this must my com-
 fort be,
 That sun that warms you here shall shine on
 me,
 And those his golden beams to you here lent
 Shall point on me and gild my banishment
A Rich Norfolk, for thee remains a heavier
 doom,
 Which I with some unwillingness pronounce
 The sly slow hours shall not determinate 150
 The dateless limit of thy dear exile
 The hopeless word of "never to return"
 Breathe I against thee, upon pain of life
Mow A heavy sentence, my most sovereign
 liege,
 And all unlook'd for from your Highness' mouth
 A dearer merit not so deep a maim
 As to be cast forth in the common air
 Have I deserved at your Highness' hands
 The language I have learn'd these forty years,
 My native English, now I must forego 160
 And now my tongue's use is to me no more
 Than an unstringed viol or a harp,
 Or like a cunning instrument cased up
 Or, being open put into his hands
 That knows no touch to tune the harmony
 Within my mouth you have engag'd my tongue
 Doubly portcullis'd with my teeth and lips,
 And dull unfeeling barren ignorance
 Is made my gaoler to attend on me
 I am too old to fawn upon a nurse, 170
 Too far in years to be a pupil now
 What is this sentence then but speechless death
 Which robs my tongue from breathing native
 breath?
A Rich It boots thee not to be compassionate
 After our sentence plainning comes too late

Mow Then thus I turn me from my country's
 light
 To dwell in solemn shades of endless night
K Rich Return again, and take an oath with
 thee
 Lay on our royal sword your banish'd hands,
 Swear by the duty that you owe to God— 180
 Our part therein we banish with yourselves—
 To keep the oath that we administer
 You never shall, so help you truth and God!
 Embrace each other's love in banishment,
 Nor never look upon each other's face
 Nor never write regret nor reconcile
 This louting tempest of your home-bred hate,
 Nor never by advised purpose meet
 To plot, contrive or complot any ill
 'Gainst us our state our subjects or our land 190
Boling I swear
Mow And I to keep all this
Boling Norfolk, so far as to mine enemy—
 By this time, had the King permitted us
 One of our souls had wander'd in the air,
 Banish'd this frail sepulchre of our flesh
 As now our flesh is banish'd from this land
 Confess thy treasons ere thou fly the realm,
 Since thou hast far to go bear not along
 The clogging burthen of a guilty soul 200
Mow No Bolingbroke if ever I were traitor,
 My name be blotted from the book of life
 And I from heaven banish'd as from hence!
 But what thou art, God thou and I do know,
 And all too soon I fear the King shall rue
 Farewell my liege Now no way can I stray,
 Save back to England all the world's my way [Exit
A Rich Uncle even in the glasses of thine eyes
 I see thy griev'd heart thy sad aspect
 Hath from the number of his banish'd years 210
 Pluck'd four away [To BOLINGBROKE] Six frozen
 winters spent
 Return with welcome home from banishment
Boling How long a time lies in one little word!
 Four lagging winters and four wanton springs
 End in a word such is the breath of kings
Gaunt I thank my liege, that in regard of me
 He shortens four years of my son's exile
 But little advantage shall I reap thereby
 For ere the six years that he hath to spend
 Can change their moons and bring their times
 about 220
 My oil-dried lamp and time bewatted light
 Shall be extinct with age and endless night
 My inch of taper will be burnt and done
 And blindfold death not let me see my son
A Rich Why uncle, thou hast many years to
 live

Gaunt But not a minute King that thou canst
give
Shorten my days thou canst with sullen sorrow
And pluck nights from me but not lend a mor-
row
Thou canst help time to furrow me with age
But stop no wrinkle in his pilgrimage 230
Thy word is current with him for my death
But dead thy kingdom cannot buy my breath
A Rich Thy son is banish'd upon good advice
Whereto thy tongue a party verdict gave
Why at our justice seemst thou then to lour?
Gaunt Things sweet to taste prove in digestion
sour
You urged me as a judge but I had rather
You would have bid me argue like a father
O had it been a stranger not my child
To smooth his fault I should have been more
mild
A partial slander sought I to avoid 241
And in the sentence my own life destroy'd
Alas I look'd when some of you should say
I was too strict to make mine own away
But you gave leave to my unwilling tongue
Against my will to do myself this wrong
A Rich Cousin farewell and uncle bid him
so
Six years we banish him and he shall go
[*Flourish. Exeunt KING RICHARD and train*]
Aunt Cousin farewell what presence must not
know
From where you do remain let paper show 250
Mur My lord no leave take I for I will ride
As far as land will let me by your side
Gaunt O to what purpose dost thou hoard thy
words
That thou returnst no greeting to thy friends?
Boling I have too few to take my leave of you
When the tongue's office should be prodigal
To breathe the abundant dolour of the heart
Gaunt Thy grief is but thy absence for a time
Boling Joy absent grief is present for that time
Gaunt What is six winters? they are quickly
gone 260
Boling To men in joy but grief makes one hour
ten
Gaunt Call it a traitor that thou takest for pleas-
ure
Boling My heart will sigh when I miscall it so
Which finds it an enforced pilgrimage
Chorus The sullen passage of thy weary steps
Esteem as foil wherein thou art to set
The precious jewel of thy home return
Boling Nay rather every tedious stride I make
Will but remember me what a deal of world
I wander from the jewels that I love 270

Must I not serve a long apprenticeship
To foreign passages and in the end
Having my freedom boast of nothing else
But that I was a journeyman to grief?
Gaunt All places that the eye of heaven visits
Are to a wise man ports and happy havens
Teach thy necessity to reason thus
There is no virtue like necessity
Think not the King did banish thee
But thou the King Woe doth the heavier sit 280
Where it perceives it is but faintly borne
Go say I sent thee forth to purchase honour
And not the King exiled thee or suppose
Devouring pestilence hangs in our air
And thou art flying to a fresher clime
Look what thy soul holds dear imagine it
To lie that way thou goest not whence thou
comest
Suppose the singing birds musicians
The grass whereon thou treadst the presence
screw'd
The flowers fair ladies and thy steps no more
Than a delightful measure or a dance 31
For gnarling sorrow hath less power to bite
The man that mocks at it and sets it light
Boling O who can hold a fire in his hand
By thinking on the frosty Caucasus?
Or cloy the hungry edge of appetite
By bare imagination of a feast?
Or wallow naked in December snow
By thinking on fantastic summer's heat?
O no! the apprehension of the good 300
Gives but the greater feeling to the worse
Fell sorrow's tooth doth never rankle more
Than when he bites but lanceth not the sore
Gaunt Come come my son I'll bring thee on
thy way
Had I thy youth and cause I would not stay
Boling Then England's ground farewell
sweet soil adieu
My mother and my nurse that bears me yet!
Where'er I wander boast of this I can,
Though banish'd yet a trueborn Englishman
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV The court

*Enter the KING with BAGOT and GREEN at one
door and the DUKE OF AUMERLE at another*
A Rich We did observe Cousin Aumerle
How far brought you high Hereford on his
way?
Aunt I brought high Hereford if you call him
so
But to the next highway and there I left him
A Rich And say what store of parting tears
were shed?

Aum Faith, none for me, except the northeast
wind,

Which then blew bitterly against our faces
Awaked the sleeping rheum, and so by chance
Did grace our hollow parting with a tear

A Rich What said our cousin when you parted
with him? 10

Aum 'Farewell'

And, for my heart disdained that my tongue
Should so profane the word that taught me craft
To counterfeint oppression of such grief
That words seem'd buried in my sorrow's
grave

Marry would the word "farewell" have length
en'd hours

And added years to his short banishment
He should have had a volume of farewells,
But since it would not, he had none of me

A Rich He is our cousin, cousin, but 'tis
doubt, 20

When time shall call him from banishment,
Whether our kinsman come to see his friends
Ourselves and Bushy, Bagor here and Green
Observed his courtship to the common people,
How he did seem to dive into their hearts
With humble and familiar courtesy,
What reverence he did throw away on slaves,
 wooing poor craftsmen with the craft of smiles

And patient underbearing of his fortune,
As twere to banish their affects with him 30

Off goes his bonnet to an oyster-wench
A brace of draymen bid God speed him well
And had the tribute of his supple knee,
With "Thanks, my countrymen, my loving
friends"

As were our England in reversion his,
And he our subjects' next degree in hope

Green Well, he is gone, and with him go these
thoughts

Now for the rebels which stand out in Ireland,
Expedient manage must be made my liege
For further leisure y'eld them further means 40

For their advantage and your Highness' loss

A Rich We will ourselves in person to this war
And for our coffers with too great a court

And liberal largess are grown somewhat light

We are enforced to farm our royal realm

The revenue whereof shall furnish us

For our affairs in hand if that come short

Our substitutes at home shall have blank char-
ters,

Whereto when they shall know what men are
rich

They shall subscribe them for large sums of gold

And send them after to supply our wants 50

For we will make for Ireland presently

Enter BUSHY

Bushy, what news?

Bushy Old John of Gaunt is grievous sick my
lord

Suddenly taken and hath sent post haste

To entreat your Majesty to visit him

A Rich Where lies he?

Bushy At Ely House

K Rich Now put it God in the physician's
mind

To help him to his grave immediately! 50

The lining of his coffers shall make coats

To deck our soldiers for these Irish wars

Come, gentlemen! let's all go visit him

Pray God we may make haste and come too late!

All Amen [Exeunt]

ACT II

SCENE I Ely House

Enter JOHN OF GAUNT sick with the DUKE OF
YORK &c

Gaunt Will the King come that I may breathe
my last

In wholesome counsel to his unstaied youth?

York Vex not yourself nor strive not with your
breath

For all in vain comes counsel to his ear

Gaunt O but they say the tongues of dying
men

Enforce attention like deep harmony

Where words are scarce, they are seldom spent
in vain

For they breathe truth that breathe their words
in pain

He that no more must say is listened more

Than they whom youth and ease have taught
to glose 10

More are men's ends mark'd than their lives be-
fore

The setting sun and music at the close,

As the last taste of sweets is sweetest last

Write in remembrance more than things long
past

Though Richard my life's counsel would not
hear

My death's sad tale may yet undeaf his ear

York No, it is stopp'd with other flattering
sounds

As praises of whose taste the wise are fond

Lascivious metres to whose venom sound

The open ear of youth doth always listen 20

Report of fashions in proud Italy

Whose manners still our tardy apish nation

Limps after in base imitation

Where doth the world thrust forth a vanity—
So it be new there is no respect how vile—
That is not quickly buzz'd into his ears?
Then all too late comes counsel to be heard
Where will doth mutiny with wit's regard
Direct not him whose way himself will choose
His breath thou lack'st and that breath wilt thou
lose 30

Gaunt Methinks I am a prophet new inspired
And thus expiring do foretell of him
His rash fierce blaze of riot cannot last
For violent fires soon burn out themselves
Small show'ers last long but sudden storms are
short

He tires betimes that spurs too fast betimes
With ■■■ or feeding food doth choke the feeder
Light vanity insatiate cormorant
Consuming means soon preys upon itself
This royal throne of kings this scepter of isle 40
This earth of majesty this seat of Mars
This other Eden demi-paradise
This fortress built by Nature for herself
Against infection and the hand of war
This happy breed of men this little world
This precious stone set in the silver sea
Which serves it in the office of a wall
Or as a moat defensive to a house
Against the envy of less happier lands
This blessed plot this earth this realm this Eng-
land 50

This nurse this teeming womb of royal kings
Fear'd by their breed and famous by their birth
Renowned for their deeds as far from home
For Christian service and true chivalry
As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry
Of the world's ransom blessed Mary's Son
This land of such dear souls this dear dear land
Dear for her reputation through the world
Is now leased out I die pronouncing it
Like to a tenement or pelting farm 60
Ireland bound in with the triumphant sea
Whose rocky shore beats back the envious siege
Of watery Neptune is now bound in with shame,
With inky blots and rotten parchment bonds
That England that was wont to conquer others
Hath made a shameful conquest of itself
Ah would the scandal vanish with my life
How happy then were my ensuing death!

*Enter KING RICHARD and QUEEN ANNE, RUSHY
GREEN, BAGOT, ROSS, and WILLOLFE.*

York The King is come deal mildly with his
youth 69
For young hot colts being rag'd do rave the
more

Queen How fares our noble uncle Lancaster?

A. Rich What comfort man? how is't with
aged Gaunt?

Gaunt O how that name befits my composi-
tion!

Old Gaunt indeed and gaunt in being old
Within me grief hath kept a tedious fast
And who abstains from meat that is not gaunt?
For sleeping England long time have I watch'd
Watching breeds leanness leanness is all gaunt
The pleasure that some fathers feed upon
Is my strict fast I mean my children's looks 80
And therein fasting hast thou made me gaunt
Gaunt am I for the grave gaunt as a grave
Whose hollow womb inherits nought but bones

A. Rich Can sick men play so nicely with their
names?

Gaunt No musing makes sport to mock itself
Since thou dost seek to kill my name in me,
I mock my name great King to flatter thee

A. Rich Should dying men flatter with those
that live?

Gaunt No no men living flatter those that die
A. Rich Thou now a-dying say'st thou flatter
est me 90

Gaunt O no! thou diest though I the sicker be
A. Rich I am in health I breathe and see thee
ill

Gaunt Now He that made me knows I see thee
ill

Ill in myself to see, and in thee seeing ill
Thy death bed is no lesser than thy land
Wherein thou liest in reputation sick
And thou too careless patient as thou art
Commit'st thy anointed body to the cure
Of those physicians that first wounded thee
A thousand flatterers sit within thy crown 100
Whose compass is no bigger than thy head
And yet incaged in so small a verge
The waste is no whit lesser than thy land
O had thy grandsire with a prophet's eye
Seen how his son's son should destroy his sons
From forth thy reach he would have laid thy
shame

Deposing thee before thou wert possess'd
Which art possess'd now to depose thyself
Why cousin wert thou regent of the world
It were a shame to let this land by lease 110
But for thy world enjoying but this land
Is it not more than shame to shame it so?
Landlord of England art thou now not king
Thy state of law is bondslave to the law
And thou—

K. Rich A lunatic lean withered fool
Presuming on an ague's privilege
Darest with thy frozen admonition
Make pale our cheek chasing the royal blood

With fury from his native residence
Now by my seat's right royal majesty 120
Wert thou not brother to great Edward's son
This tongue that runs so roundly in thy head
Should run thy head from thy unreverent shoulders

Gaunt O, spare me not, my brother Edward's son,

For that I was his father Edward's son,
That blood already, like the pelican
Hast thou tapp'd out and drunkenly caroused
My brother Gloucester, plain well meaning soul,
Whom fair befall in heaven 'mongst happy souls!
May be a precedent and witness good 130
That thou respect'st not spilling Edward's blood
Join with the present sickness that I have,
And thy unkindness be like crooked age
To crop at once a too long wither'd flower
Live in thy shame but die not shame with thee!
These words hereafter thy tormentors be!
Convey me to my bed, then to my grave
Love they to live that love and honour have,

[Exit, borne off by his Attendants]

K. Rich. And let them die that age and sullen have,

For both hast thou, and both become the grave
York I do beseech your majesty, impute his words 141

To wayward sickness and age in him
He loves you, on my life, and holds you dear
As Harry Duke of Hereford, were he here
K. Rich. Right you say true as Hereford's love, so his,

As theirs so mine and all be as it is

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND

North My liege, old Gaunt commends him to your Majesty

K. Rich. What says he?

North Nay, nothing, all is said

His tongue is now a stringless instrument
Words, life and all, old Lancaster hath spent 150
York Be York the next that must be bankrupt so!

Though death be poor it ends a mortal woe

K. Rich. The ripest fruit first falls and so doth he,

His time is spent our pilgrimage must be
So much for that Now for our Irish wars
We must supplant those rough rug-headed kerns
Which live like venom where no venom else
But only they have privilege to live
And for these great affairs do ask some charge
Towards our assistance we do seize to us 160
The plate coin revenues and movables
Whereof our uncle Gaunt did stand possess'd

York How long shall I be patient? ah how long
Shall tender duty make me suffer wrong?
Not Gloucester's death, nor Hereford's banishment,

Not Gaunt's rebukes, nor England's private wrongs

Nor the prevention of poor Bolingbroke
About his marriage nor my own disgrace,
Have ever made me sour my patient cheek,
Or bend one wrinkle on my sovereign's face 170
I am the last of noble Edward's sons,
Of whom thy father, Prince of Wales, was first
In war was never lion rag'd more fierce
In peace was never gentle lamb more mild
Than was that young and princely gentleman
His face thou hast for even so look'd he
Accomplish'd with the number of thy hours,
But when he frown'd it was against the French
And not against his friends, his noble hand
Did win what he did spend and spent not that 180
Which his triumphant father's hand had won,
His hands were guilty of no kindred blood
But bloody with the enemies of his kin
O Richard! York is too far gone with grief,
Or else he never would compare between

K. Rich. Why, uncle, what's the matter?
York O my liege,

Pardon me if you please, if not I, pleas'd
Nor to be pardon'd, am content withal
Seek you to seize and gripe into your hands 189
The royalties and rights of banish'd Hereford?
Is not Gaunt dead and doth not Hereford live?
Was not Gaunt just, and is not Harry true?
Did not the one deserve to have an heir?
Is not his heir a well-deserving son?
Take Hereford's rights away, and take from Time

His charters and his customary rights
Let not to-morrow then ensue to-day,
Be not thyself for how art thou a king
But by fair sequence and succession?
Now afore God—God forbid I say true!— 200
If you do wrongfully seize Hereford's rights
Call in the letters patents that he hath
By his attorney's-general to sue
His livery, and deny his offer'd homage,
You pluck a thousand dangers on your head
You lose a thousand well-disposed hearts
And prick my tender patience to those thoughts
Which honour and allegiance cannot think

K. Rich. Think what you will we seize into our hands

His plate his goods his money and his lands
York I'll not be by the while my liege fare well 211

What will ensue hereof there's none can tell

But by bad courses may be understood
That their events can never fall out good. [Exit
A Rich Go Bushy to the Earl of Wiltshire
straight

Bid him repair to us to Ely House
To see this business To-morrow next
We will for Ireland and tis time I row
And we create in absence of ourself
Our uncle York lord governor of England 220
For he is just and always loved us well
Come on our queen to-morrow must we part
Be merry for our time of stay is short

[Flourish. Exit KING QUEEN AUMERLE
BUSHY GREEN and BAGOT

North Well lords the Duke of Lancaster is
dead

Ross And living too for now his son is duke

Willo Barely in title not in revenues

North Richly in both if justice had her
right

Ross My heart is great but it must break with
silence

Ere t be disburden d with a liberal tongue

North Nay speak thy mind and let him ne er
speak more 230

That speaks thy words again to do thee harm?

Willo Tends that thou wouldst speak to the
Duke of Hereford?

If it be so out with it boldly man

Quick is mine ear to hear of good towards him

Ross No good at all that I can do for him

Unless you call it good to pity him

Bereft and gelded of his patrimony

North Now afore God tis shame such wrongs
are borne

In him, a royal prince and many moe
Of noble blood in this declining land 240

The King is not himself but basely led

By flatterers and what they will inform,

Merely in hate gainst any of us all

That will the King severely prosecute

Gainst us our li es our children, and our heirs

Ross The commons hath he pill d with grievous
taxes

And quite lost their hearts the nobles hath he
fined

For ancient quarrels and quite lost their hearts

Willo And daily new exactions are devised

As blanks benevolences and I wot not what 250

But what o God s name doth become of this?

North Wars have not wasted it for warr d he
hath not

But basely yielded upon compromise

That wh ch his noble ancestors achieved with
blows

More hath he spent in peace than they in wars

Ross The Earl of Wiltshire hath the realm in
farm

Willo The King s grown bankrupt like a bro-
ken man

North Reproach and dissolution hangeth over
him

Ross He hath not money for these Irish wars
His burthenous taxations notwithstanding 260

But by the robbing of the banish d Duke

North His noble kinsman most degenerate
king?

But lords we hear this fearful tempest sing

Yet seek no shelter to avoid the storm

We see the wind sit sore upon our sails

And yet we strike not but securely perish

Ross We see the very wreck that we must
suffer

And unavoids is the danger now

For suffering so the causes of our wreck

North Not so even through the hollow eyes of
death 270

I spy life peering but I dare not say

How near the tidings of our comfort is

Willo Nay let us share thy thoughts as thou
dost ours

Ross B confident to speak Northumberland

We three are but thyself and speaking so

Thy words are but as thoughts therefore be
bold

North Then thus I have from Port le Blanc, a
bay

In Brittany received intelligence

That Harry Duke of Hereford Rainold Lord
Cobham 280

That late broke from the Duke of Exeter

His brother Archbishop late of Canterbury

Sir Thomas Erpingham Sir John Ramston

Sir John Norbery Sir Robert Waterton and

Francis Quoint

All these well furnish d by the Duke of Bretagne

With eight tall ships three thousand men of war

Are making hither with all due expedience

And shortly mean to touch our northern shore

Perhaps they had ere this but that they stay 290

The first departing of the King for Ireland

If then we shall shake off our slavish yoke

Imp out our drooping country s broken wing

Redeem from broking pawn the blemish d crown,

Wipe off the dust that hides our sceptre s gilt

And make high majesty look like itself

Away with me in post to Ravenspurgh

But if you faint as fearing to do so

Stay and be secret and my self will go

Ross To horse to horse! urge doubts to them
that fear

Willow Hold out my horse, and I will first be there

[*Exeunt* 300]

SCENE II *Windsor Castle*

Enter QUEEN, BUSHY, and BAGOT

Q Madam, your majesty is too much sad parted with the King, heaviness is position ng I did, to please my-

no cause
rich a guest as grief
o sweet a guest
t again methinks
in fortune's womb,
d my inward soul
it some thing it grieves,
om my lord the king
of a grief hath twenty

itself but is not so
with blinding tears,
to many objects,
rightly gazed upon
ion eyed awry
it sweet Majesty,
r lord's departure,
re than himself to wail,
is nought but shadow
Of what it is not
More than your lord's departure weep not
more's not seen

Or if it be 'tis with false sorrow's eye,
Which for things true weeps things imaginary

Queen It may be so but yet my inward soul
Persuades me it is otherwise how'er it be,
I cannot but be sad so heavy sad
As though on thinking on no thought I think
Makes me with heavy nothing faint and shrink
Bushy 'Tis nothing but conceit my gracious lady

Queen 'Tis nothing less conceit is still derived
From some forefather grief mine is not so
For nothing hath begot my something grief
Or something hath the nothing that I grieve
'Tis in reversion that I do possess
Put what it is that is not yet known what
I cannot name, tis nameless woe I wot

Enter GREEN

Green God save your Majesty and well met gentlemen

I hope the king is not yet shipped for Ireland

Queen Why hopest thou so? 'tis better hope he is,

For his designs crave haste, his haste good hope.
Then wherefore dost thou hope he is not shipped?

Green That he, our hope, might have retired his power,

And driven into despair an enemy's hope,
Who strongly hath set footing in this land
The banish'd Bolingbroke repeals himself
And with uplifted arms is safe arrived

Queen Now God in heaven forbid!

Green Ah, madam, 'tis too true and that is worse,

The Lord Northumberland, his son young Henry Percy,

The Lords of Ross Beaumont and Willoughby,
With all their powerful friends are fled to him

Bushy Why have you not proclaimed Northumberland

And all the rest revolted faction traitors?

Green We have whereupon the Earl of Worcester

Hath broke his staff resign'd his stewardship
And all the household servants fled with him
To Bolingbroke

Queen So Green thou art the midwife to my woe,

And Bolingbroke my sorrow's dismal heir
Now hath my soul brought forth her prodigy,
And I a gasping new-deliver'd mother
Have woe to woe, sorrow to sorrow join'd

Bushy Despair not madam

Queen Who shall hinder me?

I will despair and be at enmity
With cozening hope he is a flatterer,
A parasite, a keeper back of death
Who gently would dissolve the bands of life,
Which false hope lingers in extremity

Enter YORK

Green Here comes the Duke of York

Queen With signs of war about his aged neck
O full of careful business are his looks!

Uncle, for God's sake speak comfortable words
York Should I do so I should belie my thoughts

Comfort's in heaven and we are on the earth,
Where nothing lives but crosses cares and grief

Your husband he is gone to save far off

Whilst others come to make him lose at home
Here am I left to underprop his land

Who weak with age, cannot support myself
Now comes the sick hour that his surfeit made
Now shall he try his friends that flatter'd him

Enter a servant

Serv My lord your son was gone before I

York He was? Why so? go all which way it will!
The nobles they are fled the commons they are cold

And will I fear revolt on Hereford's side
Sirrah get thee to Plashy to my sister Gloucester 90

Bid her send me presently a thousand pound
Hold take my ring
Serv My lord, I had forgot to tell your lordship

To-day as I came by, I called there
But I shall grieve you to report the rest

York What is this knave?
Serv An hour before I came the Duchess died
York God for his mercy! what a tide of woes
Comes rushing on this woeeful land at once!
I know not what to do I would to God 100

So my untruth had not provoked him to it,
The King had cut off my head with my brother's
What are there no posts dispatched for Ireland?
How shall we do for money for these wars?
Come sister—cousin I would say—pray pardon me

Go fellow get thee home provide some carts
And bring away the armour that is there

[*Exit Servant*
Gentlemen, will you go muster men?

If I know how or which way to order these affairs
Thus thrust disorderly into my hands 110

Never believe me Both are my kinsmen
The one is my sovereign whom both my oath
And duty bids defend the other again
Is my kinsman whom the King hath wrong'd
Whom conscience and my kindred bids to fight
Well somewhat we must do Come, cousin I'll
Dispose of you

Gentlemen go muster up your men
And meet me presently at Berkeley
I should to Plashy too 120
But time will not permit all is uneven
And every thing is left at six and seven

[*Exit YORK and QUEEN*
Bushy The wind sits fair for news to go to Ireland

But none returns For us to levy power
Proportionable to the enemy
Is all impossible

Green Besides our nearness to the King in love
Is near the hate of those love not the King

Bisgot And that's the wavering commons for their love

Lies in their purses and whoso empties them 130
By so much fills their hearts with deadly hate

Bushy Wherein the King stands generally condemned

Bisgot If judgement lie in them then so do we,
Because we ever have been near the King
Green Well I will for refuge straight to Bristol castle

The Earl of Wiltshire is already there
Bushy Thither will I with you for little office
The hateful commons will perform for us
Except like curs to tear us all to pieces

Will you go along with us? 140

Bisgot No I will to Ireland to his Majesty
Farewell if heart's presences be not vain,
We three here part that never shall meet again
Bushy That's as York thrives to bear back Bolingbroke

Green Alas poor duke! the task he undertakes
Is numbering sands and drinking oceans dry
Where one on his side fights thousands will fly
Farewell at once for once for all and ever

Bushy Well we may meet again
Bisgot I fear me never [*Exit*]

SCENE III *Woods in Gloucestershire*

Enter BOLINGBROKE and NORTHUMBERLAND with Forces

Boling How far is it my lord, to Berkeley now?

North Believe me noble lord
I am a stranger here in Gloucestershire
These high wild hills and rough uneven ways
Draws out our miles and makes them weary
ome

And yet your fair discourse hath been as sugar
Making the hard way sweet and delectable
But I bethink me what a weary way
From Ravenspurgh to Corsvold will be found
In Ross and Willoughby wanting your company

Which I protest hath very much beguiled 11
The tediousness and process of my travel
But theirs is sweetened with the hope to have
The present benefit which I possess
And hope to joy is little less in joy
Than hope enjoy'd by thus the weary lords
Shall make their way seem short as mine hath
done

My sight of what I have your noble company
Boling Of much less value is my company
Than your good words But who comes here?

Enter HENRY PERCY

North It is my son young Harry Percy 21
Sent from my brother Worcester whencesoever
Harry how fares your uncle?

Percy I had thought my lord to have learn'd
his health of you

North Why is he not with the Queen?

Percy No, my good Lord, he hath forsook the court

Broken his staff of office and dispersed

The household of the King

North What was his reason?

He was not so resolved when last we spake together

Percy Because your lordship was proclaimed traitor

But he, my lord, is gone to Ravenspurgh

To offer service to the Duke of Hereford

And sent me over by Berkeley, to discover

What power the Duke of York had levied there

Then with directions to repair to Ravenspurgh

North Have you forgot the Duke of Hereford boy?

Percy No my good lord for that is not forgot

Which neer I did remember to my knowledge

I never in my life did look on him

North Then learn to know him now, this is the Duke

Percy My gracious lord, I tender you my service

Such as it is being tender, raw and young,

Which elder days shall ripen and confirm

To more approved service and desert

Boling I thank thee gentle Percy, and be sure

I count my self in nothing else so happy

As in a soul remembering my good friends

And as my fortune ripens with thy love

It shall be still thy true love's recompense

My heart this covenant makes my hand thus seals it

North How far is it to Berkeley? and what stir

keeps good old York there with his men of war?

Percy There stands the castle, by yon tuft of

trees,

Manned with three hundred men as I have heard

And in it are the Lords of York, Berkeley and

Seymour,

None else of name and noble estimate

Enter ROSS and WILLoughby

North Here come the Lords of Ross and

Willoughby

Bloody with spurring fiery red with haste

Boling Welcome my lords I wot your love

pursues

A banished traitor all my treasury

Is yet but unfelt thanks, which more enrich d

Shall be your love and labour's recompense

Ross Your presence makes us rich most noble

lord

Will And far surmounts our labour to attain it

Boling Evermore thanks the exchequer of the

poor

Which till my infant fortune comes to years
Stands for my bounty But who comes here?

Enter BERKELEY

North It is my Lord of Berkeley as I guess

Berk My Lord of Hereford, my message is to you

Boling My lord my answer is—to Lancaster,
And I am come to seek that name in England,
And I must find that title in your tongue,

Before I make reply to aught you say

Berk Mistake me not my lord 'tis not my meaning

To raze one title of your honour out

To you, my lord I come what lord you will,

From the most gracious regent of this land

The Duke of York, to know what pricks you on

To take advantage of the absent time

And fright our native peace with self born arms

Enter YORK attended

Boling I shall not need transport my words by you,

Here comes his Grace in person

My noble uncle! [*kneels*]

York Show me thy humble heart and not thy knee

Whose duty is deceivable and false

Boling My gracious uncle—

York Tut tut!

Grace me no grace nor uncle me no uncle

I am no traitor's uncle, and that word grace

In an ungracious mouth is but profane

Why have those banish d and forbidden legs

Dared once to touch a dust of England's ground?

But then more why? Why have they dared to

march

So many miles upon her peaceful bosom

Frighting her pale faced villages with war

And ostentation of despised arms?

Comest thou because the anointed King is hence?

Why, foolish boy the King is left behind

And in my loyal bosom lies his power

Were I but now the lord of such hot youth

As when brave Gaunt thy father and my self

Rescued the Black Prince that young Mars of

men

From forth the ranks of many thousand French

O then how quickly should this arm of mine

Now prisoner to the paltry chastise thee

And minister correction to thy fault!

Boling My gracious uncle let me know my

fault

On what condition stands it and where?

York Even in condition of the worst degree

In gross rebellion and detested treason

Thou art a banish'd man and here art come 110
Before the expiration of thy time
In braving arms against thy sovereign
Boling As I was banish'd I was banish'd Here
ford

But as I come I come for Lancaster
And noble uncle I beseech your Grace
Look on my wrongs with an indifferent eye
You are my father for methinks in you
I see old Gaunt alive O then my father
Will you permit that I shall stand condemn'd
As wandering vagabond my rights and royalties
Pluck'd from my arms perforce and given away
To upstart thrifts? Wherefore was I born?
If that my cousin king be king of England
It is not granted I am Duke of Lancaster
You have a son Aumerle my noble cousin
Had you first died and he been thus trod down
He should have found his uncle Gaunt a father
To rouse his wrongs and chase them to the bay
I am denied to sue my livery here
And yet my letters patents give me leave 130
My father's goods are all distraint'd and sold
And these and all are all amiss employ'd
What would you have me do? I am a subject
And I challenge law attorneys are denied me
And therefore personally I lay my claim
To my inheritance of free descent

North The noble Duke hath been too much
abused

Ross It stands your Grace upon to do him
right

Will Base men by his endowments are made
great

York My lords of England let me tell you this
I have had feeling of my cousin's wrongs 141

And labour'd all I could to do him right
But in this kind to come in braving arms
Be his own carver and cut out his way
To find out right with wrong it may not be
And you that do abet him in this kind
Cherish rebellion! I are rebels all

North The noble Duke hath sworn his coming
in

But for his own and for the right of that
We all have sworn to give him aid 150
And let him never see joy that breaks that oath!

York Well well I see the issue of these arms
I cannot mend it I must needs confess
Because my power is weak and all ill left
But if I could by Him that gave me life
I would attach you all and make you stoop
Unto the so-called mercy of the king
But since I cannot be it known to you
I do remain as neuter So fare you well
Unless you please to enter into the castle 160

And there repose you for this night
Boling An offer uncle that we will accept
But we must win your Grace to go with us
To Bristol castle which they say is held
By Bushy Bagot and their complices
The caterpillars of the commonwealth
Which I have sworn to weed and pluck away
York It may be I will go with you but yet I'll
pause

For I am loath to break our country's laws
Nor friends nor foes to me welcome you are 170
Things past redress are now with me past care
[Exeunt]

SCENE IV A camp in Wales

Enter SALISBURY and a WELSH CAPTAIN

Cap My Lord of Salisbury we have stay'd ten
days

And hardly kept our countrymen together
And yet we hear no tidings from the king
Therefore we will disperse ourselves farewell
Sir Stay yet another day thou trusty Welsh
man

The king reposes all his confidence in thee

Cap 'Tis thought the king is dead we will not
stay

The bay trees in our country are all wither'd
And meteors fright the fixed stars of heaven
The pale-faced moon looks bloody on the earth 10
And lean look'd prophets whisper fearful change
Rich men look sad and ruffians dance and leap
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy
The other to enjoy by rage and war
These signs forerun the death or fall of kings
Farewell our countrymen are gone and fled
As well assured Richard their king is dead *[Exit]*

Sir Ah Richard with the eyes of heavy mind
I see thy glory like a shooting star
Fall to the base earth from the firmament 20
Thy sun sets weeping in the lowly west
Witnessing storms to come woe and unrest
Thy friends are fled to wait upon thy foes
And crossly to thy good all fortune goes *[Exit]*

ACT III

SCENE I Bristol Before the castle

*Enter BOLINGBROKE, YORK, NORTHUMBERLAND,
ROSS, PERCY, WILLOUGHBY with BUSHY and
GREEN prisoners*

Boling Bring forth these men
Bushy and Green I will not vex your souls—
Since presently your souls must part your
bodies—
With too much urging your pernicious lives

For 'twere no charity, yet, to wash your blood
From off my hands, here in the view of men
I will unfold some causes of your deaths
You have mislead a prince a royal king,
A happy gentleman in blood and lineaments,
By you unhappied and disfigured clean 10
You have in manner with your sinful hours
Made a divorce betwixt his queen and him,
Broke the possession of a royal bed
And stain'd the beauty of a fair queen's cheeks
With tears drawn from her eyes by your foul
wrongs

Myself, a prince by fortune of my birth,
Near to the King in blood and near in love
Till you did make him misinterpret me,
Have stoop'd my neck under your injuries,
And sigh'd my English breath in foreign clouds,
Eating the bitter bread of banishment, 21
Whilst you have fed upon my signories
Dispark'd my parks and fell'd my forest woods,
From my own windows torn my household
coat

Razed out my imprese leaving me no sign,
Sav'd men's opinions and my living blood,
To show the world I am a gentleman
This and much more, much more than twice all
this,
Condemns you to the death See them deliver'd
over

To execution and the hand of death 30
Bushy More welcome is the stroke of death to
me

Than Bolingbroke to England Lords, farewell
Green My comfort is that heaven will take our
souls

And plague injustice with the pains of hell
Boling My Lord Northumberland see them
dispatch'd

*[Exeunt NORTHUMBERLAND and others
with the prisoners]*

Uncle you say the Queen is at your house
For God's sake fairly let her be entreated
Tell her I send to her my kind commands,
Take special care my greetings be deliver'd
York A gentleman of mine I have dispatch'd 41
With letters of your love to her at large
Boling Thanks, gentle uncle Come, lords
away

To fight with Glendower and his complices
Awhile to work and after holiday *[Exeunt]*

SCENE II The coast of Wales castle in view
Drums flourish and colours Enter KING RICHARD,
the BISHOP OF CARLISLE, AUMERL and Soldiers

A Rich Barkloughly castle call they this at
hand?

Aum Yea, my lord How brooks your Grace
the air,

After your late tossing on the breaking seas?
K Rich Needs must I like it well I weep for
joy

To stand upon my kingdom once again
Dear earth I do salute thee with my hand
Though rebels wound thee with their horses'
hoofs

As a long parted mother with her child
Plays fondly with her tears and smiles in meeting
So weeping smiling greet I thee my earth 10
And do thee favours with my royal hands
Feed not thy sovereign's foe my gentle earth
Nor with thy sweets comfort his ravenous sense,
But let thy spiders that suck up thy venom
And heavy gaited toads lie in their way,
Doing annoyance to the treacherous feet
Which with usurping steps do trample thee
Yield stinging nettles to mine enemies
And when they from thy bosom pluck a flower,
Guard it I pray thee with a lurking adder 20
Whose double tongue may with a mortal touch
Throw death upon thy sovereign's enemies
Mock not my senseless conjuration lords
This earth shall have a feeling and these stones
Prove armed soldiers ere her native king
Shall falter under foul rebellion's arms
Car Fear not my lord that Power that made
you king

Hath power to keep you king in spite of all
The means that heaven yields must be embraced
And not neglected else if heaven would 30
And we will not, heaven's offer we refuse
The proffer'd means of succour and redress

Aum He means my lord that we are too
remiss

Whilst Bolingbroke, through our security
Grows strong and great in substance and in
power

A Rich Discomfortable cousin! know'st thou
not

That when the searching eye of heaven is hid
Behind the globe that lights the lower world
Then thieves and robbers range abroad unseen 40
In murders and in outrage boldly here
But when from under this terrestrial ball
He fires the proud tops of the eastern pines
And darts his light through every guilty hole,
Then murders treasons and detested sins
The cloak of night being pluck'd from off their
backs

Stand bare and naked trembling at themselves
So when this thief this traitor Bolingbroke,
Who all this while hath revel'd in the night
Whilst we were wandering with the an'ipodes,

Shall see us rising in our throne the east 50
 His treasons will sit blushing in his face
 Not able to endure the sight of day
 But self affrighted tremble at his sin
 Not all the water in the rough rude sea
 Can wash the balm off from an anointed king
 The breath of worldly men cannot depose
 The deputy elected by the Lord
 For every man that Bolingbroke hath press'd
 To lift shrewd steel against our golden crown
 God for his Richard hath in heavenly pay 60
 A glorious angel then if angels fight
 Weak men must fall for heaven still guards the
 right

Enter SALISBURY

Welcome my lord how far off lies your power?
Sal Nor near nor farther off my gracious lord
 Than this weak arm discomfort guides my
 tongue
 And bids me speak of nothing but despair
 One day too late I fear me noble lord
 Hath clouded all thy happy days on earth
 O call back yesterday bid time return,
 And thou shalt have twelve thousand fighting
 men? 70
 To-day to-day unhappy day too late
 O erthrows thy joys friends fortune and thy
 state
 For all the Welshmen hearing thou wert dead
 Are gone to Bolingbroke dispersed and fled
Aum Comfort my liege why looks your
 grace so pale?
A Rich But now the blood of twenty thousand
 men
 Did triumph in my face and they are fled
 And till so much blood thither come again
 Have I not reason to look pale and dead?
 All souls that will be safe fly from my side 80
 For time hath set a blot upon my pride
Aum Comfort my liege remember who you
 are
A Rich I had forgot myself am I not king?
 Awake thou coward majesty! thou sleepest
 Is not the king's name twenty thousand names?
 Arm arm my name! a puny subject strikes
 At thy great glory Look not to the ground
 Ye favourites of a king are we not high?
 High be our thoughts I know my uncle York
 Hath power enough to serve our turn But who
 comes here? 90

Enter SCROOP

Scroop More health and happiness betide my
 liege
 Than can my care tuned tongue deliver him!

A Rich Mine ear is open and my heart pre-
 pared
 The worst is worldly loss thou canst unfold
 Say is my kingdom lost? why 'twas my care
 And what loss is it to be rid of care?
 Strives Bolingbroke to be as great as we?
 Greater he shall not be if he serve God
 We'll serve Him too and be his fellow so
 Revolt our subjects? that we cannot mend 100
 They break their faith to God as well as us
 Cry woe destruction ruin and decay
 The worst is death and death will have his day
Scroop Glad am I that your Highness is so
 arm'd
 To bear the tidings of calamity
 Like an unseasonable stormy day
 Which makes the silver rivers drown their shores
 As if the world were all dissolved to tears
 So high above his limits swells the rage
 Of Bolingbroke covering your fearful land 110
 With hard bright steel and hearts harder than
 steel
 Where beards have arm'd their thin and hairless
 scalps
 Against thy Majesty boys with women's voices
 Strive to speak big and clap their female joints
 In stiff unwieldy arms against thy crown
 Thy very beadsmen learn to bend their bows
 Of double fatal yew against thy state
 Yea distaff women manage rusty bills
 Against thy seat both young and old rebel
 And all goes worse than I have power to tell 120
A Rich Too well too well thou tell'st a tale
 so ill
 Where is the I acle of Wiltshire? where is Bagor?
 What is become of Bushy? where is Green?
 That they have let the dangerous enemy
 Measure our confines with such peaceful steps?
 If we prevail their heads shall pay for it
 I warrant they have made peace with Boling-
 broke
Scroop Peace have they made with him indeed
 my lord
A Rich O villains vipers damn'd without
 redemption!
 Dogs easily won to fawn on any man! 130
 Snakes in my heart blood warm'd that sting my
 heart!
 Three Judases each one thrice worse than
 Judas!
 Would they make peace? terrible hell make war
 Upon their spotted souls for this offence!
Scroop Sweet love I see changing his prop-
 erty
 Turns to the sourest and most deadly hate
 Again uncure their souls their peace is made

With heads, and not with hands those whom
you curse

Have felt the worst of death's destroying wound
And lie full low, graved in the hollow ground

Aum Is Bushy, Green, and the Earl of Wilt-
shire dead? 141

Scoop Ay, all of them at Bristol lost their
heads

Aum Where is the Duke my father with his
power?

K Rich No matter where of comfort no man
speak

Let's talk of graves, of worms and epitaphs

Make dust our paper and with rainy eyes

Write sorrow on the bosom of the earth

Let's choose executors and talk of wills

And yet no so, for what can we bequeath

Save our deposed bodies to the ground? 150

Our lands our lives, and all are Bolingbroke's,

And nothing can we call our own but death

And that small model of the barren earth

Which serves as paste and cover to our bones

For God's sake, let us sit upon the ground

And tell sad stories of the death of kings

How some have been deposed some slain in
war,

Some haunted by the ghosts they have deposed,

Some poison'd by their wives, some sleeping
kill'd

All murder'd for within the hollow crown 160

That rounds the mortal temples of a king

Keeps Death his court and there the antic sits,

Scoffing his state and grinning at his pomp

Allowing him a breath, a little scene

To monarchize be fear'd and kill with looks

Infusing him with self and vain conceit

As if this flesh which walls about our life

Were brass impregnable and humour'd thus

Comes at the last and with a little pin 169

Bores through his castle wall and farewell king!

Cover your heads and moel nor flesh and blood

With solemn reverence throw away respect

Tradition form and ceremonious duty

For you have but mistook me all this while

I live with bread like you, feel want

Taste grief need friends subjected thus

How can you say to me I am a king?

Car My lord wise men ne'er sit and wail their
woes,

But presently prevent the ways to wail 179

To fear the foe since fear oppresseth strength

Gives in your weakness strength unto your foe

And so your follies fight against yourself

Fear and be slain no worse can come to fight

And fight and die is death destroying death

Where fearing dying pays death's vile breath

Aum My father hath a power, inquire of him,
And learn to make a body of a limb

K Rich Thou chidest me well proud Boling-
broke I come

To change blows with thee for our day of doom

This age fit of fear is over blown 190

An easy task it is to win our own

Say, Scoop where lies our uncle with his power?

Speak sweetly, man although thy looks be sour

Scoop Men judge by the complexion of the
sky

The state and inclination of the day

So may you by my dull and heavy eye,

My tongue hath but a heavier tale to say

I play the torturer by small and small

To lengthen out the worst that must be spoken

Your uncle York is join'd with Bolingbroke, 200

And all your northern castles yielded up

And all your southern gentlemen in arms

Upon his party

K Rich Thou hast said enough

Beshrew thee, cousin which didst lead me forth

To AUMFRLE

Of that sweet way I was in to despair!

What say you now? what comfort have we now?

By heaven I'll hate him everlastingly

That bids me be of comfort any more

Go to Flint castle there I'll pine away

A king woe's slave shall kingly woe obey 210

That power I have discharge and let them go

To ear the land that hath some hope to grow

For I have none let no man speak again

To alter this for counsel is but vain

Aum My liege, one word

K Rich He does me double wrong

That wounds me with the flatteries of his tongue

Discharge my followers let them hence away

From Richard's night to Bolingbroke's fair day

[Exeunt]

SCENE III Wales Before Flint castle

*Enter, with drum and colours BOLINGBROKE
YORK NORTHUMBERLAND Attendants and Forces*

Boling So that by this intelligence we learn

The Welshmen are dispersed and Salisbury

Is gone to meet the king who lately landed

With some few private friends upon this coast

North The news is very fair and good, my

lord

Richard not far from hence hath hid his head

York It would beseem the Lord Northumber

land

To say King Richard alack the heavy day

When such a sacred king should hide his head

North Your Grace mistakes only to be brief,

Left I his title or.

York The time hath been,
Would you have been so brief with him he would
Have been so brief with you to shorten you
For taking so the head your whole head's length
Boling Mistake not uncle further than you
should

York Take not good cousin further than you
should

Let you mistake the heavens are o'er our heads
Boling I know it uncle and oppose not myself
Against their will But who comes here? 19

Enter PERCY

Welcome Harry what will not this castle yield?

Percy The castle royally is mann'd my lord
Against thy entrance

Boling Royally!

Why it contains no king?

Percy Yes my good lord

It doth contain a king King Richard lies

Within the limits of yon lime and stone

And with him are the Lord Aumerle Lord Salis-

bury

Sir Stephen Scroop besides a clergyman

Of holy reverence who I cannot learn

North O belike it is the Bishop of Carlisle

Boling Noble lords

Go to the rude ribs of that ancient castle 31

Through brazen trumpet send the breath of parley

Into his ruin'd ears and thus deliver

Henry Bolingbroke

On both his knees doth kiss King Richard's hand

And sends allegiance and true faith of heart

To his most royal person, hither come

Even at his feet to lay my arms and power

Provided that my banishment repeal'd 40

And lands restored again be freely granted

If not I'll use the advantage of my power

And lay the summer's dust with showers of blood

Rain'd from the wounds of slaughter'd English

men

The which, how far off from the mind of Boling-
broke

It is such crimson tempest should bedrench

The fresh green lap of fair King Richard's land,

My stooping duty tenderly shall show

Go's gaily as much, while here we march

Upon the grassy carpet of this plain 50

Let's march without the noise of threatening
drum

That from this castle's tatter'd battlements

Out fair appointments may be well perused

Methinks King Richard and my self should meet

With no less terror than the elements

Of fire and water when their thundering shock

At meeting tears the cloudy cheeks of heaven

Be he the fire I'll be the yielding water
The rage be his whilst on the earth I rain
My waters on the earth and not on him 60
March on, and mark King Richard how he looks

Parle without and answer within Then a flourish

Enter on the walls KING RICHARD the BISHOP OF

CARLISLE AUMERLE SCROOP and SALISBURY

See see King Richard doth himself appear

As doth the blushing discontented sun

From out the fiery portal of the east

When he perceives the envious clouds are bent

To dim his glory and to stain the track

Of his bright passage to the accident

York Yet looks he like a king behold his eye

As bright as is the eagle's lightens forth

Controlling majesty alack alack for woe 70

That any harm should stain so fair a show!

K. Rich. We are amazed and thus long have we
stood

To watch the fearful bending of thy knee

To NORTHUMBERLAND

Because we thought ourself thy lawful king

And if we be how dare thy joints forget

To pay their awful duty to our presence?

If we be not show us the hand of God

That hath dismiss'd us from our stewardship

For well we know no hand of blood and bone

Can gripe the sacred handle of our sceptre 80

Unless he do profane steal or usurp

And thou hast thou think that all as you have done,

Have torn their souls by turning them from us

And we are barren and bereft of friends

Yet know my master God omnipotent

Is mustering in his clouds on our behalf

Armies of pestilence and they shall strike

Your children yet unborn and unborn

That lift your vassal hands against my head

And threaten the glory of my precious crown 90

Tell Bolingbroke—for yond methinks he
stands—

That every stride he makes upon my land

Is dangerous treason he is come to open

The purple testament of bleeding war

But ere the crown he looks for lie in peace

Ten thousand bloody crowns of mothers' sons

Shall ill become the flower of England's face

Change the complexion of her maid pite peace

To scarlet indignation and bedew

Her pastures grass with faithful English blood

North The King of heaven forbid our lord

the King

Should so with civil and uncivil arms

Be rush'd upon! Thy thrice noble cousin

Harry Bolingbroke doth humbly kiss thy hand

And by the honourable tomb he swears 101

That stands upon your royal grandsire's bones,
And by the royalties of both your bloods
Currents that spring from one most gracious
head,

And by the buried hand of warlike Gaunt,
And by the worth and honour of himself, 110
Comprising all that may be sworn or said
His coming hither hath no further scope
Than for his lineal royalties and to beg
Enfranchisement immediate on his knees
Which on thy royal party granted once,
His glittering arms he will commend to rust,
His barbed steeds to stables and his heart
To faithful service of your Majesty
This swears he, as he is a prince, is just,

And as I am a gentleman I credit him 120
K Rich Northumberland, say thus the King
returns

His noble cousin is right welcome hither
And all the number of his fair demands
Shall be accomplish'd without contradiction
With all the gracious utterance thou hast
Speak to his gentle hearing kind commends
We do debase ourselves, cousin, do we not,

To Aumerle

To look so poorly and to speak so fair?
Shall we call back Northumberland and send
Defiance to the traitor and so die? 130
Aum No, good my lord, let's fight with gentle
words

Till time lend friends and friends their helpful
swords

A Rich O God O God! that'er this tongue
of mine,

That laid the sentence of dread banishment
On yon proud man should take it off again
With words of sooth! O that I were as great
As is my grief, or lesser than my name!
Or that I could forget what I have been
Or not remember what I must be now!
Swell st thou proud heart? I'll give thee scope
to beat 140

Since foes have scope to beat both thee and me
Aum Northumberland comes back from Bolingbroke

A Rich What must the King do now? must he
submit?

The King shall do it must he be deposed?
The King shall be contented must he lose
The name of king? O God's name, let it go
I'll give my jewels for a set of beads
My gorgeous palace for a hermitage
My gay apparel for an almsman's gown
My figured goblets for a dish of wood 150
My sceptre for a palmer's walking staff
My subjects for a pair of carved saints

And my large kingdom for a little grave,
A little little grave an obscure grave,
Or I'll be buried in the King's highway,
Some way of common trade where subjects feet
May hourly trample on their sovereign's head,
For on my heart they tread now whilst I live
And buried once why not upon my head?
Aumerle, thou weep'st my tender hearted cousin!
We'll make foul weather with despised tears, 161
Our sighs and they shall lodge the summer corn
And make a dearth in this revolting land
Or shall we play the wantons with our woes,
And make some pretty match with shedding
tears?

As thus to drop them still upon one place
Till they have fretted us a pair of graves
Within the earth and therein laid—there lies
Two kinsmen digg'd their graves with weeping
eyes

Would not this ill do well? Well well I see 170
I talk but idly and you laugh at me
Most mighty prince my Lord Northumberland,
What says King Bolingbroke? will his majesty
Give Richard leave to live till Richard die?
You make a leg and Bolingbroke says ay

North My lord in the base court he doth
attend

To speak with you may it please you to come
down

A Rich Down down I come like glist'ning
Phaethon

Wanting the manage of unruly jades
In the base court? Base court where kings grow
base, 180

To come at traitors' calls and do them grace
In the base court? Come down? Down court!
down king!

For night-owls shriek where mounting larks
should sing [*Exeunt from above*]

Boling What says his majesty?
North Sorrow and grief of heart

Makes him speak fondly like a frantic man
Yet he is come

Enter KING RICHARD and his attendants below

Boling Stand all apart
And show fair duty to his majesty

He kneels down

My gracious lord—

A Rich Fair cousin you debase your princely
knee 190

To make the base earth proud with kissing it
We rather had my heart might feel your love
Than my displeased eyes see your courtiness
Up cousin, up your heart is up I know
Thus high at least although your knee be low

Boling My gracious lord I come but for mine own

A. Rich Your own is yours and I am yours and all

Boling So far be mine my most redoubted lord

As my true service shall deserve your love

A. Rich Well you deserve they well deserve to have

200

That know the strong st and surest way to get

Uncle give me your hands nay dry your eyes

Tears show their love but want their remedies

Cousin I am too young to be your father

Though you are old enough to be my heir

What you will have I'll give and willing too

For do we must what force will have us do

Set on towards London, cousin is it so?

Boling Yea my good lord

K. Rich Then I must not say no

[*Flourish Exit*]

SCENE IV *Langley the Duke of York's garden*

Enter the QUEEN and TWO LADIES

Queen What sport shall we devise here in this garden

To drive away the heavy thought of care?

Lady Madam we'll play at bowls

Queen Twill make me think the world is full of rubs

And that my fortune runs against the bias

Lady Madam we'll dance

Queen My legs can keep no measure in delight

When my poor heart no measure keeps in grief

Therefore, no dancing girl some other sport

Lady Madam we'll tell tales

10

Queen Of sorrow or of joy?

Lady Of either madam

Queen Of neither girl

For if of joy being altogether wanting

It doth remember me the more of sorrow

Or if of grief being altogether had

It adds more sorrow to my want of joy

For what I have I need not to repeat

And what I want it boots not to complain

Lady Madam I'll sing

Queen 'Tis well that thou has cause

But thou shouldst please me better wouldst thou weep

20

Lady I could weep madam would it do you good

Queen And I could sing would weeping do me good

And never borrow any tear of thee

Enter a GARDENER and two SERVANTS

But stay here come the gardeners

Let a step into the shadow of these trees

My wretchedness unto a row of pins

They'll talk of state for every one doth so

Against a change woe is forerun with woe

[*QUEEN and LADIES retire*]

Gard Go bind thou up yon dangling apricocks

Which like unruly children make their sire

30

Stoop with oppression of their prodigal woe

Give some supportance to the bending twigs

Go thou and like an executioner

Cut off the heads of too fast growing sprays

That look too lofty in our commonwealth

All must be even in our government

You thus employ'd I will go root away

The noisome weeds which without profit suck

The soil's fertility from wholesome flowers

Serv Why should we in the compass of a pale

Keep law and form and due proportion

40

Showing as in a model our firm estate,

When our sea walled garden, the whole land

Is full of weeds her fairest flowers choked up

Her fruit trees all unpruned her hedges ruin'd

Her knots disorder'd and her wholesome herbs

Swarming with caterpillars?

Gard Hold thy peace

He that hath suffer'd this disorder'd spring

Hath now himself met with the fall of leaf

The weeds which his broad spreading leaves did shelter

50

That seem'd in eating him to hold him up

Are pluck'd up root and all by *Boling*, broke

I mean the Earl of Wiltshire Bushy Green

Serv What are they dead?

Gard They are and *Boling*, broke

Hath seized the wasteful king O what pity is it

That he had not so trimm'd and dress'd his land

As we this garden! We at time of year

Do wound the bark the skin of our fruit trees

Lest being over proud in sap and blood

60

With too much riches it confound itself

Had he done so to great and grow'ing men

They might have liv'd to bear and he to taste

Their fruits of duty superfluous branches

We lop away that bearing boughs may live

Had he done so himself had borne the crown,

Which waste of idle hours hath quite thrown

down

Serv What think you then the king shall be

depos'd?

Gard Depress'd he is already and depos'd

'Tis doubt he will be letters came last night

70

To a dear friend of the good Duke of York

That tell black tidings

Queen O, I am press'd to death through want of speaking! [*Coming forward*]
Thou old Adam's likeness, set to dress this garden,
How dares thy harsh rude tongue sound this unpleasing news?
What Eve, what serpent hath suggested thee To make a second fall of cursed man?
Why dost thou say King Richard is deposed?
Darest thou thou little better thing than earth, Divine his downfall? Say, where, when, and how,
Camest thou by this ill tidings? speak, thou wretch 80

Gard Pardon me, madam little joy have I To breathe this news, yet what I say is true
King Richard, he is in the mighty hold Of Bolingbroke their fortunes both are weigh'd
In your lord's scale is nothing but himself, And some few vanities that make him light,
But in the balance of great Bolingbroke, Besides himself, are all the English peers,
And with that odds he weighs King Richard down

Post you to London and you will find it so 90
I speak no more than every one doth I now

Queen Nimble mischance, that art so light of foot,
Doth not thy embassy belong to me,
And am I last that knows it? O, thou think'st To serve me last that I may longest keep
Thy sorrow in my breast Come ladies, go,
To meet at London London's lying woe
What, was I born to this, that my sad look Should grace the triumph of great Bolingbroke?
Gardener, for telling me these news of woe 100
Pray God the plants thou graft'st may never grow

[*Exeunt QUEEN and LADIES*]

Gard Poor queen! so that thy state might be no worse,
I would my skill were subject to thy curse
Here did she fall a tear here in this place
I'll set a bank of rue sour herb of grace
Rue, even for ruth here shortly shall be seen
In the remembrance of a weeping queen [*Exeunt*]

ACT IV

SCENE I Westminster Hall

Enter, as to the Parliament, BOLINGBROKE, AU MERLE, NORTHUMBERLAND, PERCY FITZWATER, SURREY, the BISHOP OF CARLISLE, the ABBOT OF WESTMINSTER and another LORD, Herald, Officers and BAGOT

Boling Call forth Bagot
Now Bagot freely speak thy mind,

What thou dost know of noble Gloucester's death
Who wrought it with the King and who perform'd
The bloody office of his timeless end
Bagot Then set before my face the Lord Aumerle
Boling Cousin, stand forth and look upon that man
Bagot My Lord Aumerle, I know your daring tongue

Scorns to unsay what once it hath deliver'd
In that dead time when Gloucester's death was plotted, 10

I heard you say "Is not my arm of length That reacheth from the restful English court As far as Calais to mine uncle's head?"
Amongst much other talk that very time, I heard you say that you had rather refuse The offer of an hundred thousand crowns Than Bolingbroke's return to England
Adding withal how blest this land would be In this your cousin's death

Aum Princes and noble lords,
What answer shall I make to this base man? 20
Shall I so much dishonour my fair stars On equal terms to give him chastisement?
Either I must or have mine honour soil'd With the attainder of his slanderous lips
There is my gage the manual seal of death That marks thee out for hell I say, thou liest,
And will maintain what thou hast said in false
In thy heart blood though being all too base To stain the temper of my knightly sword
Boling Bagot, forbear, thou shalt not take it up 30

Aum Excepting one, I would he were the best
In all this presence that hath moved me so
Fitz If that thy valour stand on sympathy,
There is my gage Aumerle, in gage to thine
By that fair sun which shows me where thou stand'st,

I heard thee say and vauntingly thou spak'st it
That thou wert cause of noble Gloucester's death
If thou deny'st it twenty times thou liest
And I will turn thy falsehood to thy heart
Where it was forged with my rapier's point 40

Aum Thou dar'st not coward live to see that day

Fitz Now by my soul I would it were this hour

Aum Fitzwater thou art damn'd to hell for this

Percy Aumerle thou liest his honour is true
In this appeal as thou art all unjust
And that thou art so there I'll row my gage

To prove it on thee to the extremest point
Of mortal breathing seize it if thou darest
Aum An if I do not may my hands rot off
And never brandish more revengeful steel 50
Over the glittering helmet of my foe!

Another Lord I task the earth to the like for
sworn Aumerle

And spur thee on with full as many lies
As may be holloed in thy treacherous ear
From sun to sun there is my honour's pawn
Engage it to the trial if thou darest

Aum Who sets me else? by heaven I'll throw
at all

I have a thousand spirits in one breast
To answer twenty thousand such as you
Surrey My Lord Fitzwater I do remember
well 60

The very time Aumerle and you did talk
Fir 'Tis very true you were in presence then
And you can witness with me this is true
Surrey As false by heaven as heaven itself is
true

Fir Surrey thou liest
Surrey Dishonourable boy!

That lie shall lie so heavy on my sword
That it shall render vengeance and revenge
Till thou the lie giver and that lie do he
In earth as quiet as thy father's skull
In proof whereof there is my honour's pawn 70
Engage it to the trial if thou darest

Fir How fondly dost thou spur a forward
horse!

If I dare eat or drink or breathe or live
I dare meet Surrey in a wilderness
And spit upon him whilst I say he lies
And lies and lies there is my bond of faith
To tie thee to my strong correction
As I intend to thrive in this new world
Aumerle is guilty of my true appeal
Besides I heard the banish'd Norfolk say 80
That thou Aumerle didst send two of thy men
To execute the noble duke at Calais

Aum Some honest Christian trust me with a

gan That Norfolk lies here do I throw down this
If he may be repeal'd to try his honour

Boling These differences shall all rest under
gare

Till Norfolk be repeal'd repeal'd he shall be
And though mine enemy restored again
To all his lands and signories when he's re-
turn'd

Against Aumerle we will enforce his trial 90

Car That honourable day shall never be seen
Many a time hath banish'd Norfolk fought
For Jesu Christ in glorious Christian field,

Streaming the ensign of the Christian cross
Against black pagans Turks and Saracens
And toil'd with works of war retired himself
To Italy and there at Venice gave
His body to that pleasant country's earth
And his pure soul unto his captain Christ
Under whose colours he had fought so long 100
Boling Why bishop is Norfolk dead?
Car As surely as I live my lord
Boling Sweet peace conduct his sweet soul to
the bosom

Of good old Abraham! Lords appellants
Your differences shall all rest under gear
Till we assign you to your days of trial

Enter York attended

York Great Duke of Lancaster I come to thee
From plume pluck'd Richard who with willing
soul

Adopts thee heir and his high sceptre yields
To the possession of thy royal hand 110
Ascend his throne descending now from him
And long live Henry fourth of that name!

Boling In God's name I'll ascend the regal
throne

Car Marry God forbid!
Worst in this royal presence may I speak
Yet best beseeching me to speak the truth
Would God that any in this noble presence
Were enough noble to be upright jud 120
Of noble Richard! then true noblesse would
Learn him forbearance from so foul a wrong

What subject can give sentence on his kin?
And who sits here that is not Richard's subject?
Thieves are not judged but they are by to hear
Although apparent guilt be seen in them
And shall the figure of God's majesty
His captain steward deputy-elect
Anointed crowned planted many years
Be judged by subject and inferior breath
And he himself not present? O forfend it God
That in a Christian climate souls refined 130
Should show so heinous black obscene a deed

I speak to subjects and a subject speaks
Stirr'd up by God thus boldly for his king
My Lord of Hereford here whom you call king
Is a foul traitor to proud Hereford's king
And if you crown him let me prophesy
The blood of English shall manure the ground
And future ages groan for this foul act
Peace shall go sleep with Turks and infidels
And in this seat of peace tumultuous wars 140
Shall kin with kin and kind with kind confound
Disorder horror fear and mutiny
Shall here inhabit and this land be call'd
The field of Golgotha and dead men's skulls

O, if you raise this house against this house,
It will the woefullest division prove
That ever fell upon this cursed earth
Prevent it, resist it, let it not be so,
Lest child-child's children, cry against you
"woe!"

North Well have you argued, sir, and, for your
pains, 150

Of capital treason we arrest you here
My Lord of Westminster, be it your charge
To keep him safely till his day of trial
May it please you, lords, to grant the commons
suit

Boling Fetch hither Richard, that in common
view

He may surrender, so we shall proceed
Without suspicion

York I will be his conduct [Exit

Boling Lords, you that here are under our
arrest,

Procure your sureties for your days of answer
Little are we beholding to your love 160
And little look'd for at your helping hands

*Re-enter YORK, with RICHARD, and Officers
bearing the regalia*

K Rich Alack, why am I sent for to a king,
Before I have shook off the regal thoughts
Wherewith I reign'd? I hardly yet have learn'd
To insinuate, flatter, bow, and bend my limbs
Give sorrow leave awhile to tutor me
To this submission. Yet I well remember
The favours of these men, were they not mine?
Did they not sometime cry "all hail" to me?
So Judas did to Christ, but he, in twelve 170
Found truth in all but one, I, in twelve thousand,
none

God save the King! Will no man say amen?
Am I both priest and clerk? Well then, amen
God save the King! although I be not he
And yet, amen, if heaven do think him me
To do what service am I sent for hither?

York To do that office of thine own good
will

Which tired majesty did make thee offer
The resignation of thy state and crown
To Henry Bolingbroke 180

K Rich Give me the crown. Here cousin
seize the crown,

Here cousin,
On this side my hand, and on that side yours
Now is this golden crown like a deep well
That owes two buckets, filling one another
The emptier ever dancing in the air
The other down, unseen, and full of water
That bucket down and full of tears am I

Drinking my griefs, whilst you mount up on
hugh

Boling I thought you had been willing to resign
K Rich My crown I am, but still my griefs are
mine 191

You may my glories and my state depose
But not my griefs, still am I king of those
Boling Part of your cares you give me with
your crown

K Rich Your cares set up do not pluck my
cares down

My care is loss of care, by old care done
Your care is gain of care, by new care won
The cares I give I have, though given away
They tend the crown, yet still with me they stay

Boling Are you contented to resign the
crown? 200

K Rich Ay, no, no ay, for I must nothing be,
Therefore no, no, for I resign to thee
Now mark me, how I will undo myself
I give this heavy weight from off my head
And this unwieldy sceptre from my hand
The pride of kingly sway from out my heart
With mine own tears I wash away my balm,
With mine own hands I give away my crown,
With mine own tongue deny my sacred state,
With mine own breath release all duty, rites 211
All pomp and majesty. I do forswear,
My manors, rents, revenues I forego
My acts, decrees, and statutes I deny
God pardon all oaths that are broke to me!
God keep all vows unbroke that swear to thee!
Make me, that nothing have with nothing
grieved

And thou with all pleased, that hast all achieved!
Long mayst thou live in Richard's seat to sit
And soon lie Richard in an earthy pit!
God save King Harry, unking'd Richard says
And send him many years of sunshine days! 221
What more remains?

North No more, but that you read
These accusations and these grievous crimes
Committed by your person and your followers
Against the state and profit of this land
That by confessing them, the souls of men
May deem that you are worthily deposed

K Rich Must I do so? and must I travel
My weaved up follies? Gentle Northumberland
If thy offences were upon record
Would it not shame thee in so fair a troop
To read a lecture of them? If thou wouldst
There shouldst thou find some heinous article
Containing the deposing of a king
And cracking the strong warrant of an oath
Mark'd with a bloody hand in the book of
heaven 230

Nay, all of you that stand and look upon
 Whilst that my wretchedness doth bair my self
 Thou h some of you with Pilate wash your
 hands
 Showing an outward pity y et you Pilates 40
 Have here deliver d me to my sour cross
 And water cannot wash away your sin
North My lord dispatch read o er these
 articles
A Rich Mine eyes are full of tears I cannot
 see
 And y et salt water blinds them not so much
 But they can see a sort of traitors here
 Nay if I turn mine ey upon my self
 I find my self a traitor with the rest
 For I have given here my soul s consent
 To undeck the pompous body of a king 250
 Made glory base and sovereignty a slave
 Proud majesty a subject state a peasant
North My lord—
A Rich No lord of thine thou haught insulting
 man
 Nor no man a lord I have no name no title
 No not that name was given me at the font
 But tis usurp d alack the heavy day
 That I have worn so many winters out
 And know not now what name to call myself
 O that I were a mockery king of snow 260
 Standing before the sun of Bolingbroke
 To melt myself away in water-drops
 Good king great king and yet not greatly good
 An if my word be sterling yet in England
 Let it command a mirror futher aight
 That it may show me what a face I have
 Since it is bankrupt of his majesty
Boling Go some of you and fetch a looking
 glass [Exit an attendant
North Read o er this paper while the glass doth
 come
A Rich Fiend thou torment st me ere I come
 to hell! 270
Boling Urge it no more my Lord Northumber
 land
North The commons will not then be satisfied
A Rich They shall be satisfied I ll read
 enoug h
 When I do see the very book indeed
 Where all my sins are writ and that s my self
Re-enter Attendant with a glass
 Give me the glass and therein will I read
 No deeper w wrinkles yet? hath sorrow struck
 So many blow s upon this face of mine
 And made no deeper wounds? O flattering glass
 Like to my followers in prosperity 280
 Thou dost beguile me! Was thus face the face

That every day under his household roof
 Did keep ten thousand men? was this the face
 That like the sun did make beholders wink?
 Was thus the face that faced so many follies
 And was at last out faced by Bolingbroke?
 A brittle glory shineth in this face
 As brittle as the glory is the face
Dashes the glass against the ground
 For there it is crack d in a hundred shivers
 Mark silent king the moral of this sport, 290
 How soon my sorrow hath destroy d my face
Boling The shadow of your sorrow hath de
 stroy d
 The shadow of your face
K Rich Say that again
 The shadow of my sorrow! ha! let s see
 Tis very true, my grief lies all within
 And these external manners of laments
 Are merely shadows to the unseen grief
 That swells with silence in the tortured soul
 There lies the substance and I thank thee
 king
 For thy great bounty that not only givest 300
 Me cause to wail but teachest me the way
 How to lament the cause I ll beg one boon
 And then be gone and trouble you no more
 Shall I obtain it?
Boling Name it fair cousin
A Rich Fair cousin? I am greater than a
 king
 For when I was a king my flatterers
 Were then but subjects being now a subject
 I have a king here to my flatterer
 Being so great I have no need to beg 310
Boling Yet ask
A Rich And shall I have?
Boling You shall
A Rich Then give me leave to go
Boling Whither?
A Rich Whither you will so I were from
 your sights
Boling Gm some of you convey him to the
 Tower
A Rich O good! convey? conveyers are you
 all
 That rise thus nimbly by a true king s fall
 [Exit KING RICHARD some Lords
 and a Guard
Boling On Wednesday next we solemnly set
 down
 Our coronat on lords prepare yourselves 320
 [Exit all except the BISHOP OF CARLISLE the
 ABBOT OF WESTMINSTER and AL IERLE
Albot A woeful pageant have we here beheld
Car The woes to come the children yet un-
 born

Shall feel this day as sharp to them as thorn
Abbot You holy clergymen, is there no plot
 To rid the realm of this pernicious blot?

Abbot My lord,
 Before I freely speak my mind herein,
 You shall not only take the sacrament
 To bury mine intents, but also to effect
 Whatever I shall happen to devise 330
 I see your brows are full of discontent,
 Your hearts of sorrow and your eyes of tears
 Come home with me to supper, and I will lay
 A plot shall show us all a merry day [*Exeunt*]

ACT V

SCENE I *London a street leading to the Tower*

Enter QUEEN and LADIES

Queen This way the King will come, this is
 the way
 To Julius Cæsar's ill erected tower,
 To whose flint bosom my condemned lord
 Is doom'd a prisoner by proud Bolingbroke
 Here let us rest, if this rebellious caith
 Have any resting for her true king's queen

Enter RICHARD and Guard

But soft, but see or rather do not see,
 My fair rose wither yet look up behold,
 That you in pity may dissolve to dew 9
 And wash him fresh again with true-love tears
 Ah thou, the model where old Troy did stand
 Thou map of honour, thou King Richard's tomb
 And not King Richard thou most beauteous inn
 Why should hard favour'd grief be lodged in
 thee,
 When triumph is become in alehouse guest?

K. Rich Join not with grief, fair woman do
 not so,

To make my end too sudden learn good soul,
 To think our former state a happy dream
 From which awaked, the truth of what we are
 Show us but this I am sworn brother, sweet 10
 To grim Necessity, and he and I
 Will keep a league till death I lie thee to France
 And cloister thee in some religious house
 Our holy lives must win a new world's crown
 Which our profane hours here have stricken
 down

Queen What, is my Richard both in shape and
 mind
 Transformed and weaken'd hath Bolingbroke
 deposed

Thine intellect? hath he been in thy heart?
 The lion dying thrusteth forth his paw
 And wounds the earth if nothing else with rage
 To be empower'd and wilt thou pupil like 11

Take thy correction mildly, I kiss the rod,
 And fawn on rage with base humility
 Which art a lion and a king of beasts?

K. Rich A king of beasts, indeed, if aught but
 beasts

I had been still a happy king of men
 Good sometime queen, prepare thee hence for
 France

Think I am dead and that even here thou takest,
 As from my death bed thy last living leave
 In winter tedious nights sit by the fire 40

With good old folks and let them tell thee tales
 Of woeful ages long ago betid
 And ere thou bid good night, to quit their

griefs,
 Tell thou the lamentable tale of me
 And send the hearers weeping to their beds
 For why the senseless brands will sympathize
 The heavy accent of thy moving tongue
 And in compassion weep the fire out
 And some will mourn in ashes some coal black,
 For the deposing of a rightful king 50

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND and others

North My lord, the mind of Bolingbroke is
 changed,

You must to Pomfret not unto the Tower
 And, madam there is order taken for you
 With all swift speed you must away to France

K. Rich Northumberland thou ladder where-
 withal

The mounting Bolingbroke ascends my throne,
 The time shall not be many hours of age
 More than it is ere foul sin gathering head
 Shall break into corruption thou shalt think
 Though he divide the realm and give thee half
 It is too little helping him to all 61
 And he shall think that thou, which know'st the

way
 To plant unrightful kings wilt know again
 Being never so little urged another way
 To pluck him headlong from the usurped throne
 The love of wicked men converts to fear
 That fear to hate and hate turns one or both
 To worthy danger and deserved death

North My guilt be on my head and there an
 end

Take leave and part for you must part forth
 with 70

K. Rich Doubly divorced! Bad men you vio-
 late

A twofold marriage twixt my crown and me,
 And then betwixt me and my married wife
 Let me unloose the oath twixt thee and me
 And yet not so for with a kiss 'twas made
 Part us Northumberland I towards the north,

Where shivering cold and sickness pines the
 clime
 My wfe to France from whence set forth in
 pomp
 She came adorned hither like sweet May
 Sent back like Hallowmas or short *it* of day 80
Queen And must we be divided? must we part?
A Rich A hand from hand my love and
 heart from heart
Queen Banish us both and send the King with
 me
North That were some love but little policy
Queen Then whither he goes thither let me go
A Rich So two together weeping make one
 woe
 Weep thou for me in France I for thee here
 Better far off than near be ne er the near
 Go count thy way with sighs I mine with
 groans
Queen So lon_gest way shall have the longest
 moans 90
A Rich Twice for one step I ll groan the way
 being short
 And piece the way out with a heavy heart
 Come come in wooing sorrow let s be brief
 Since wedding it there is such length in grief
 One kiss shall stop our mouths and dumbly part
 Thus give I mine and thus take I thy heart
Queen Give me mine own again t were no
 good part
 To take on me to keep and kill thy heart
 So now I have mine own again be gone
 That I may strive to kill it with a groan 100
A Rich We make woe wanton with this fond
 delay
 Once more adieu the rest let sorrow say
 [Exeunt]

SCENE II *The Duke of York's palace*

Enter YORK and his DUCHESS

Duch My lord you told me you would tell the
 rest

When weeping made you break the story off
 Of our two cousins coming into London

York Where did I leave?

Duch At that sad stop my lord
 Where rude misgovern'd hands from windows
 tops

Threw dust and rubbish on King Richard's head

York Then as I m d, the Duke great Boling
 broke

Mounted upon a hot and fiery steed

Which his aspiring rider seem'd to know

With slow but stately pace kept on his course 10

Whilst all tongues cried God save thee Boling
 broke

You would have thought the very windows spake
 So many greedy looks of young and old
 Through casements darted their desiring eyes
 Upon his visage and that all the walls
 With painted imagery had said at once
 Jesu preserve thee! Welcome Bolingbroke!
 Whilst he from the one side to the other turning
 Barcheaded lower than his proud steed's neck
 Bespake them thus I thank you countrymen
 And thus still doing thus he pass'd along 21
Duch Alack poor Richard! where rode he the
 whilst?

York As in a theatre the eyes of men,
 After a well graced actor leaves the stage
 Are idly bent on him that enters next
 Thinking his prattle to be tedious
 Even so or with much more contempt men's
 eyes

Did scowl on gentle Richard no man cried God
 save him!

No joyful tongue gave him his welcome home
 But dust was thrown upon his sacred head 30
 Which with such gentle sorrow he shook off
 His face still combating with tears and smiles
 The badges of his grief and patience
 That had not God for some strong purpose steel'd
 The hearts of men they must perforce have
 melted

And barbarism itself have pitied him
 But heaven hath a hand in these events
 To whose high will we bound our calm con
 tents

To Bolingbroke are we sworn subjects now
 Whose state and honour I for aye allow 40

Duch Here comes my son Aumerle

York Aumerle that was
 But that is lost for being Richard's friend
 And madam you must call him Rutland now
 I am in parliament pledge for his truth
 And lasting fealty to the new made king

Enter AUWERLE

Duch Welcome my son who are the violets
 now

That strew the green lap of the new come spring?

Aum Madam, I know not nor I greatly care
 not

God knows I had as lief be none as one

York Well bear you well in this new spring of
 time 50

Lest you be cropp'd before you come to prime
 What news from Oxford? hold those jousts and
 triumphs?

Aum For aught I know my lord they do

York You will be there, I know

Aum If God prevent not I purpose so

York What seal is that that hangs without thy bosom?

Yea, look'st thou pale? let me see the writing

Aum My lord, 'tis nothing

York No matter, then who see it

I will be satisfied let me see the writing

Aum I do beseech your Grace to pardon me

It is a matter of small consequence 61

Which for some reasons I would not have seen

York Which for some reasons, sir I mean to see

I fear, I fear—

Duch What should you fear?

'Tis nothing but some bond that he is enter'd into

For gay apparel 'gainst the triumph day

York Bound to himself! what doth he with a bond

That he is bound to? Wife thou art a fool

Boy let me see the writing

Aum I do beseech you pardon me I may not show it 70

York I will be satisfied let me see it I say

He plucks it out of his bosom and reads it

Treason! foul treason! Villain! traitor! slave!

Duch What is the matter my lord?

York Ho! who is within there?

Enter a SERVANT

Saddle my horse

God for his mercy, what treachery is here!

Duch Why what is it my lord?

York Give me my boots I say saddle my horse *[Exit SERVANT]*

Now by mine honour by my life by my troth

I will appeach the villain

Duch What is the matter?

York Peace foolish woman 80

Duch I will not peace What is the matter,

Aumerle?

Aum Good mother be content it is no more Than my poor life must answer

Duch This life answer!

York Bring me my boots I will unto the king

Re-enter SERVANT with boots

Duch Strike him Aumerle Poor boy thou art amazed

Hence, villain! never more come in my sight

York Give me my boots I say

Duch Why, York what wilt thou do?

Wilt thou not hide the trespass of thine own

Have we more sons or are we like to have? 90

Is not my teeming date drunk up with time?

And wilt thou pluck my fair son from mine age,

And rob me of a happy mother's name?

Is he not like thee? is he not thine own?

York Thou fond mad woman

Wilt thou conceal this dark conspiracy?

A dozen of them here have eaten the sacrament,

And interchangeably set down their hands,

To kill the King at Oxford

Duch He shall be none 99

We'll keep him here then what is that to him?

York Away fond woman! were he twenty times my son

I would appeach him

Duch Hadst thou groan'd for him

As I have done, thou wouldst be more pitiful

But now I know thy mind thou dost suspect

That I have been disloyal to thy bed

And that he is a bastard not thy son

Sweet York sweet husband be not of that mind

He is as like thee as a man may be,

Not like to me or any of my kin

And yet I love him

York Make way unruly woman! 110 *[Exit]*

Duch After Aumerle! mount thee upon his horse,

Spur post and get before him to the king,

And beg thy pardon ere he do accuse thee

I'll not be long behind though I be old

I doubt not but to ride as fast as York

And never will I rise up from the ground

Till Bolingbroke have pardon'd thee Away be gone! *[Exeunt]*

SCENE III A royal palace

Enter BOLINGBROKE PERCY and other Lords

Boling Can no man tell me of my unthrifty son?

'Tis full three months since I did see him last

If any plague hang over us 'tis he

I would to God my lords he might be found

Inquire at London amongst the taverns there,

For there, they say he daily doth frequent,

With unrestrained loose companions

Even such they say as stand in narrow lanes

And beat our watch, and rob our passengers

Which he young wan on and effeminate boy 10

Takes on the point of honour to support

So dissolute a crew

Percy My lord some two days since I saw the prince

And told him of those triumphs held at Oxford

Boling And what said the gallant?

Percy His answer was he would undo the

And from the common creature pluck a plume,

And wear it as a favour and with this

He would uphold the business challenger

Boling As dissolute as desperate yet through
both 20

I see some sparks of better hope which elder
years

May happily bring forth But who comes here?

Enter Aumerle

Aum Where is the King?

Boling What means our cousin that he stares
and looks

So wildly?

Aum God save your Grace! I do beseech your
Majesty

To have some conference with your Grace alone

Boling Withdraw yourselves and leave us
here alone [*Exeunt PERCY and Lords*]

What is the matter with our cousin now?

Aum For ever may my knees grow to the
earth 30

My tongue cleave to my roof within my mouth
Unless a pardon ere I rise or speak

Boling Intended or committed was this fault?

If on the first how heinous ere it be

To win thy after love I pardon thee

Aum Then give me leave that I may turn the
key

That no man enter till my tale be done

Boling Have thy desire

*AUMERLE locks the door YORK knocks at the door
and crieth*

York [*Within*] My liege be here look to thy
self

Thou hast a traitor in thy presence there 40

Boling Villain, I will make thee safe

Drawing

Aum Stay thy revengeful hand thou hast no
cause to fear

York [*Within*] Open the door secure, fool
hardy King

Shall I for love speak treason to thy face?

Open the door or I will break it open

Enter YORK

Boling What is the matter uncle? speak

Recover breath tell us how near is danger

That we may arm us to encounter it

York Peruse this writing here and thou shalt
know

The treason that my haste forbids me show 50

Aum Remember as thou readst thy promise
passed

I do repent me read not my name there

My heart is not confederate with my hand

York It was villain ere thy hand did set it
down

I tore it from the traitor's bosom, King

Fear and not love begets his penitence

Forget to pity him lest thy pity prove

A serpent that will sting thee to the heart

Boling O heinous strong and bold conspiracy!

O loyal father of a treacherous son! 60

Thou sheer immaculate and silver fountain,
From whence this stream through muddy pas-

sages

Hath held his current and defiled himself

Thy overflow of good converts to bad

And thy abundant goodness shall excuse

This deadly blot in thy digressing son

York So shall my virtue be his vice's bawd

And he shall spend mine honour with his shame

As thriftless sons their scrapings fathers' gold

Mine honour lives when his dishonour dies 70

Or my shamed life in his dishonour lies

Thou kill'st me in this life giving him breath

The traitor lives the true man's put to death

Duch [*Within*] What ho my liege! for God's
sake let me in

Boling What shrill-voiced suppliant makes this
eager cry?

Duch A woman, and thy aunt great King's
wife I

Speak with me pity me open the door

A beggar begs that never begged before

Boling Our scene is altered from a serious thing

And now changed to "The Beggar and the King"

My dangerous cousin let your mother in 81

I know she is come to pray for your foul sin

York If thou do pardon, whosoever pray

More sins for this forgiveness prosper may

This fester'd joint cut off the rest rest sound

This let alone will all the rest confound

Enter DUCHESS

Duch O King believe not this hard-hearted
man!

Love loving not itself none other can

York Thou frantic woman what dost thou
make here?

Shall thy old dogs once more a traitor rear? 90

Duch Sweet York be patient Hear me gentle

liege [*kneels*]

Boling Rise up good aunt

Duch Not yet I thee beseech

For ever will I walk upon my knees

And never see day that the happy sees

Till thou give joy until thou bid me joy

By pardoning Rutland my transgression boy

Aum Unto my mother's prayers I bend my
knee

York Against them both my true joints bended
be

I'll mayst thou thrive if thou grant any grace!

Duch Pleads he in earnest? look upon his face,
His eyes do drop no tears, his prayers are in jest
His words come from his mouth, ours from our breast

He prays but faintly and would be denied,
We pray with heart and soul and all beside
His weary joints would gladly rise, I know,
Our knees shall kneel till to the ground they grow

His prayers are full of false hypocrisy,
Ours of true zeal and deep integrity
Our prayers do out-pray his, then let them have
That mercy which true prayer ought to have

Boling Good aunt stand up
Duch Nay, do not say, "Stand up
Say "Pardon" first and afterwards "Stand up"
As if I were thy nurse, thy tongue to teach
"Pardon" should be the first word of thy speech
I never long'd to hear a word till now,
Say "pardon" King, let pity teach thee how
The word is short, but not so short as sweet
No word like "pardon" for kings' mouths so meet

York Speak it in French, King, say *Pardonne moi*

Duch Dost thou teach pardon pardon to destroy? 120

Ah, my sour husband, my hard hearted lord
That set at the word itself against the word!
Speak "pardon" as 'tis current in our land,
The chopping French we do not understand
Thine eye begins to speak, set thy tongue there,
Or in thy piteous heart plant thou thine ear,
That hearing how our plaints and prayers do pierce,

Pity may move thee "pardon" to rehearse

Boling Good aunt stand up

Duch I do not sue to stand
Pardon is all the suit I have in hand 130

Boling I pardon him as God shall pardon me

Duch O happy vantage of a kneeling knee!

Yet am I sick for fear speak it again,

Twice saying "pardon" doth not pardon twain

But makes one pardon strong
Boling With all my heart

I pardon him

Duch A god on earth thou art

Boling But for our trusty brother in law and the abbot

With all the rest of that consorted crew
Destruction straight shall dog them at the heels
Good uncle help to order several powers 140

To Oxford or where'er these traitors are

They shall not live within this world I swear,

But I will have them, if I once know where

Uncle farewell and, cousin too adieu
Your mother well hath pray'd, and prove you true

Duch Come my old son I pray God make thee new
[Exit]

SCENE IV The same

Enter EXTON and SERVANT

Exton Didst thou not mark the King what words he spake

"Have I no friend will rid me of this living fear?"
Was it not so?

Serv These were his very words

Exton 'Have I no friend?' quoth he he spake it twice

And urged it twice together, did he not?

Serv He did

Exton And speaking it, he wisely look'd on me,

As who should say 'I would thou wert the man
That would divorce this terror from my heart'
Meaning the King at Pomfret Come let's go
I am the King's friend and will rid his foe
[Exit]

SCENE V Pomfret castle

Enter KING RICHARD

K Rich I have been studying how I may compare

This prison where I live unto the world
And for because the world is populous
And here is not a creature but my self
I cannot do it, yet I'll hammer it out
My brain I'll prove the female to my soul,
My soul the father and these two beget
A generation of still breeding thoughts
And these same thoughts people this little world
In humours like the people of this world 10
For no thought is contented The better sort
As thoughts of things divine are intermix'd
With scruples and do set the word itself
Against the word

As thus 'Come little ones' and then again
"It is as hard to come as for a camel

To thread the postern of a small needle see
Thoughts tending to ambition they do plot
Unlikely wonders how these vain weak nails
May tear a passage through the flinty ribs 20
Of this hard world my ragged prison walls
And for they cannot die in their own pride
Thoughts tending to content flatter themselves
That they are not the first of fortune's slaves
Nor shall not be the last like silly beggars
Who sit in the docks together their shame,
That many have and others may sit there,
And in this thought they find a kind of

Bearing their own misfortunes on the back
 Of such as have before endured the like 30
 Thus play I in one person many people
 And none contented sometimes am I king
 Then treasons make me wish my self a beggar
 And so I am then crushing penury
 Persuades me I was better when a king
 Then am I king d again and by and by
 Think that I am unking d by Bolingbroke
 And straight am nothing but whate'er I be,
 Nor I nor any man that but man is
 With nothing shall be pleased till he be eased 40
 With being nothing Music do I hear? [*Mus.*
Ha ha keep time how sour sweet music is
When time is broke and no proportion kept
So is it in the music of men's lives
 And here have I the daintiness of ear
 To check time broke in a disorder d strong
 But for the concord of my state and time
 Had not an ear to hear my true time broke
 I wasted time and now doth time waste me
 For now hath time made me his numbering
 clock 50

My thoughts are minutes and with sighs they
 jar
 Their watches on unto mine eyes the outward
 watch

Whereto my finger like a dial's point
 Is pointing still in cleansing them from tears
 Now sir the sound that tells what hour it is
 Are clamorous groans which strike upon my
 heart

Which is the bell so sighs and tears and groans
 Show minutes times and hours but my time
 Runs posting on in Bolingbroke's proud joy
 While I stand fooling here his Jack is the clock
 This music mads me let it sound no more 61
 For though it have help madmen to their wits
 In me it seems it will make wise men mad
 Yet blessing on his heart that gives it me
 For 'tis a sign of love and love to Richard
 Is a strange brooch in this all hating world

Enter a GROOM OF THE STABLE

Groom Hail royal prince!

A Rich Thanks noble peer
 The cheapest of us is ten groats too dear
 What art thou? and how comest thou hither
 Where no man never comes but that sad dog 70
 That brings me food to make misfortune live?

Groom I was a poor groom of thy stable king
 When thou wert king who travelling towards
 York

With much ado at length have gotten leave
 To look upon my sometimes royal master's face
 How it yearn'd my heart when I beheld

In London streets that coronation-day
 When Bolingbroke rode on roan Barbary
 That horse that thou so often hast bestrid
 That horse that I so carefully have dress'd! 80
A Rich Rode he on Barbary? Tell me, gentle
 friend

How went he under him?

Groom So proudly as if he disdain'd the ground
A Rich So proud that Bolingbroke was on his
 back?

That jade hath eat bread from my royal hand
 This hand hath made him proud with clapping
 him

Would he not stumble? would he not fall down,
 Since pride must have a fall and break the neck
 Of that proud man that did usurp his back?
 Forgiveness horse! why do I rail on thee 90
 Since thou created to be awed by man
 Wast born to bear? I was not made a horse
 And yet I bear a burthen like an ass
 Spurr'd gall'd and tired by jauncing Boling
 broke

Enter KEEPER with a dish

Keep Fellow give place here is no longer
 stay

A Rich If thou love me 'tis time thou wert
 away

Groom What my tongue dares not that my
 heart shall say [*Exit*]

Keep My lord I please you to fall to?

A Rich Taste of it first as thou art wont to
 do 99

Keep My lord I dare not Sir Pierce of Ex
 ton who lately came from the king commands
 the contrary

A Rich The devil take Henry of Lancaster
 and thee!

Patience is stale and I am weary of it

Beats the keeper

Keep Help help help!

Enter EXTON and servants armed

A Rich How now! what means death in this
 rude assault?

Villain thy own hand yields thy death's instru
 ment

Snatching an axe from a servant and killing him
 Go thou and fill another room in hell!

He kills another Then EXTON strikes him down
 That hand shall burn in never-quenching fire
 That staggers thus my person Exton thy fierce
 hand 110

Hath with the king's blood stain'd the king's
 own land

Mount mount my soul! thy seat is up on high

Whilst my gross flesh sinks downward, here to die
[Dies]

Exton As full of valour as of royal blood
Both have I spill'd, O would the deed were good!

For now the devil that told me I did well
Says that this deed is chronicled in hell
This dead king to the living king I'll bear
Take hence the rest, and give them burial here
[Exeunt]

SCENE VI *Windsor castle*

Flourish Enter BOLINGBROKE, YORK, with other
Lords, and Attendants

Boling Kind uncle York, the latest news we hear
Is that the rebels have consumed with fire
Out town of Cicester in Gloucestershire
But whether they be ta'en or slain we hear not

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND

Welcome my lord, what is the news?
North First, to thy sacred state wish I all
happiness
The next news is, I have to London sent
The heads of Oxford Salisbury Blunt, and Kent
The manner of their taking may appear
At large discoursed in this paper here 10
Boling We thank thee gentle Percy, for thy
pains
And to thy worth will add right worthy gains

Enter FITZWATER

Fitz My lord, I have from Oxford sent to
London
The heads of Brocas and Sir Bennet Seely
Two of the dangerous consorted traitors
That sought at Oxford thy dire overthrow
Boling Thy pains Fitzwater, shall not be
forgot
Right noble is thy merit, well I wot

Enter PERCY, and the BISHOP OF CARLISLE

Percy The grand conspirator Abbot of Westminster,
With clog of conscience and sour melancholy 20
Hath yielded up his body to the grave
But here is Carlisle living to abide
Thy kingly doom and sentence of his pride
Boling Carlisle this is your doom
Choose out some secret place some reverend
room
More than thou hast and with it joy thy life
So as thou livest in peace die free from strife
For though mine enemy thou hast ever been,
High sparks of honour in thee have I seen

Enter EXTON with persons bearing a coffin

Exton Great King within this coffin I present 30
Thy buried fear herein all breathless lies
The mightiest of thy greatest enemies,
Richard of Bordeaux by me hither brought
Boling Exton I thank thee not for thou hast
wrought
A deed of slander with thy fatal hand
Upon my head and all this famous land
Exton From your own mouth my lord did I
this deed
Boling They lov' not poison that do poison
need
Nor do I thee though I did wish him dead
I hate the murderer love him murdered 40
The guilt of conscience take thou for thy labour
But neither my good word nor princely favour
With Cain go wander through shades of night
And never show thy head by day nor light
Lords I protest my soul is full of woe
That blood should sprinkle me to make me grow
Come mourn with me for that I do lament
And put on sullen black incontinent
I'll make a voyage to the Holy Land
To wash this blood off from my guilty hand 50
March sadly after grace my mournings here
In weeping after this untimely bier [Exeunt]

20 A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

THESEUS *Duke of Athens*
 EGESUS *father to Hermia*
 LYSANDER } *in love wth Hermia*
 DEMETRIUS }
 PHILOSTRATE *master of the revels to Theseus*
 QUINCE, *a carpenter*
 SONG JOINER
 BOTTOM *a clown*
 FLUTE, *a bellows mender*
 SNOUT *inker*
 STARVELING *a tailor*
 HIPPOLYTA *Queen of the Amazons betrothed to Theseus*
 HERMIA, *daughter to Egeus in love wth Lysander*

HELENA *in love with Demetrius*

OBERON *King of the fairies*
 TITANIA *Queen of the fairies*
 PUCK *Robin Goodfellow*
 PEASEBLOSSOM
 COWEB
 MOTH
 MUSTARDSEED } *fairies*
 TWO FAIRIES

NON-SPEAKING *Attendants on Theseus and Hippolyta*
 FAIRIES *attending their King and Queen*

SCENE *Athens and a wood near it*

ACT I

SCENE I *Athens the palace of Theseus*

Enter THESEUS HIPPOLYTA PHILOSTRATE, and Attendants

The Now fair Hippolyta our nuptial hour
 Draws on apace: four happy days bring in
 Another moon; but O methinks how slow
 This old moon wanes! she lingers my desires
 Like to a step-dame or a dowager
 Long withering out a young man's revenue
Hip Four days will quickly steep themselves
 in night

Four nights will quickly dream away the time
 And then the moon, like to a silver bow
 New bent in heaven, shall behold the night
 Of our solemnities

The Go Philostrate,
 Stir up the Athenian youth to merriments;
 Awake the pert and nimble spirit of mirth;
 Turn melancholy forth to funerals;
 The pale companion is not for our pomp

[Exit PHILOSTRATE]

Hippolyta, I woo'd thee with my sword
 And won thy love; doing thee injuries
 But I will wed thee in another key
 With pomp, with triumph, and with revelling

Enter EGESUS HERMIA LYSANDER and DEMETRIUS

Eg. Happy be Theseus our renowned Duke!

The Thanks good Egeus: what's the news
 with thee?

Ege. Full of vexation come I, with complaint
 Against my child: my daughter Hermia
 Stand forth, Demetrius. My noble lord
 This man hath my consent to marry her;
 Stand forth, Lysander, and my gracious Duke
 This man hath bewitch'd the bosom of my child:
 Thou thou Lysander, thou hast given her
 rhymes

And interchang'd love tokens with my child:
 Thou hast by moonlight at her window sung
 With feigning voice verses of feigning love
 And stolen the impression of her fantasy
 With bracelets of thy hair, rings, gawds, conceits,
 knacks, trifles, nosegays, sweetmeats, messen-
 gers

Of strong prevailment in unhardened youth
 With cunning hast thou filch'd my daughter's
 heart

Turn'd her obedience, which is due to me,
 To stubborn harshness: and my gracious Duke,
 Be it so she will not here before your Grace
 Consent to marry with Demetrius
 I beg the ancient privilege of Athens
 As she is mine, I may dispose of her
 Which shall be either to this gentleman
 Or to her death, according to our law
 Immediately provided in that case

The What say you, Hermia? be advised, fair
 maid

To you your father should be as a god,
One that composed your beauties yea, and one
To whom you are but as a form in wax
By him imprinted and within his power 50
To leave the figure or disfigure it
Demetrius is a worthy gentleman

Her So is Lysander

The In himself he is,

But in this kind wanting your father's voice,

The other must be held the worthier

Her I would my father look'd but with my eyes

The Rather your eyes must with his judgement look

Her I do entreat your Grace to pardon me

I know not by what power I am made bold

Nor how it may concern my modesty 60

In such a presence here to plead my thoughts,

But I beseech your Grace that I may know

The worst that may befall me in this case,

If I refuse to wed Demetrius

The Either to die the death or to abjure

For ever the society of men

Therefore, fair Hermia, question your desires,

Know of your youth examine well your blood

Whether, if you yield not to your father's choice,

You can endure the livery of a nun 70

For aye to be in shady cloister mew'd

To live a barren sister all your life

Chanting faint hymns to the cold fruitless moon

Thrice-blessed they that master so their blood

To undergo such maiden pilgrimage

But earthlier happy in the rose distill'd

Than that which withering on the virgin thorn

Grows, lives, and dies in single blessedness

Her So will I grow, so live so die, my lord,

Ere I will yield my virgin patent up 80

Unto his lordship whose unwish'd yoke

My soul consents not to give sovereignty

The Take time to pause and, by the next new moon—

The sealing-day betwixt my love and me,

For everlasting bond of fellowship—

Upon that day either prepare to die

Or disobedience to your father's will

Or else to wed Demetrius as he would,

Or on Diana's altar to protest

For aye austerity and single life 90

Dem Relent sweet Hermia and Lysander yield

This crazed title to my certain right

Lys You have her father's love Demetrius

Let me have Hermia's do you marry him

Ege Scornful Lysander! true he hath my love

And what is mine my love shall render him

And she is mine and all my right of her

I do estate unto Demetrius

Lys I am my lord as well deriv'd as he
As well possess'd, my love is more than his, 100
My fortunes every way as fairly rank'd,

If not with advantage as Demetrius,

And, which is more than all these boasts can be,

I am belov'd of beauteous Hermia

Why should not I then prosecute my right?

Demetrius I'll avouch it to his head

Made love to Nedar's daughter, Helena,

And won her soul and she sweet lady dotes,

Devoutly dotes dotes in idolatry,

Upon this spotted and inconstant man 110

The I must confess that I have heard so much

And with Demetrius thought to have spoke thereof,

But being over-full of self affairs

My mind did lose it But Demetrius come

And come Egeus you shall go with me

I have some private schooling for you both

For you fair Hermia look you arm yourself

To fit your fancies to your father's will

Or else the law of Athens yields you up—

Which by no means we may extenuate—

To death or to a vow of single life

Come my Hippolyta what cheer my love?

Demetrius and Egeus go along

I must employ you in some business

Against our nuptial and confer with you

Of something nearly that concerns ourselves

Ege With duty and desire we follow you

[*Exeunt all but LYSANDER and HERMIA*]

Lys How now my love! why is your cheek so pale?

How chance the roses there do fade so fast?

Her Belike for want of rain which I could well 120

Between them from the tempest of my eyes

Lys Ay me! for aught that I could ever read

Could ever hear by tale or history

The course of true love never did run smooth

But either it was different in blood—

Her O cross! too high to be enhrall'd to low

Lys Or else misgraffed in respect of years—

Her O spite! too old to be engaged to young

Lys Or else it stood upon the choice of friends—

Her O hell! to choose love by another's eyes

Lys Or if there were a sympathy in choice

War death or sickness did lay siege to it

Malin' it momentary as a sound

Swift as a shadow short as any dream

Brief as the lightning in the coldest night

That in a spleen would both heaven and earth

And ere a man has power to say Behold!

The jaws of darkness did devour it up

So quick I live! things even to confession

Her If then true lovers have been ever so

It stands as an edict in destiny
Then let us teach our trial patience
Because it is a customary cross

As due to love as thoughts and dreams and sighs
Wishes and tears poor Fancy's followers

Lys A good persuasion therefore hear me
Hermia

I have a widow aunt a dowager
Of great revenue and she hath no child
From Athens is her house remote seven leagues
And she respects me as her only son

There gentle *Hermia* may I marry thee
And to that place the sharp Athenian law
Cannot pursue us If thou lovest me then,
Seal forth thy father's house to-morrow night
And in the wood a league without the town
Where I did meet thee once with *Helena*
To do observance to a morn of May
There will I stay for thee

Her My good *Lysander*!
I swear to thee by Cupid's strongest bow
By his best arrow with the golden head
By the simplicity of *Venus*' doves
By that which knitteth souls and prospers loves
And by that fire which burn'd the Carthage
queen

When the false *Troyan* under sail was seen
By all the vows that ever men have broke
In number more than ever women spoke
In that same place thou hast appointed me
To-morrow truly will I meet with thee

Lys Keep promise love Look here comes
Helena

Enter HELENA

Her God speed fair *Helena*! whither away?
Hel Call you me fair? that fair again unsay
Demetrius loves your fair O happy fair!
Your eyes are lode stars and your tongue's

sweet air
More tunable than lark to shepherd's ear
When wheat is green, when hawthorn buds ap-
pear

Sickness is catching O were favour so
Yours would I catch, fair *Hermia*, ere I go
My ear should catch your voice my eye your
eye

My tongue should catch your tongue's sweet me-
lody

Were the world mine *Demetrius* being bated
The rest I'll give to be to you translated
O teach me how you look and with what art
You sway the motion of *Demetrius* heart

Her I frown upon him, yet he loves me still
Hel O that your frowns would teach my
smiles such skill!

Her I give him curses yet he gives me love
Hel O that my prayers could such affection
move!

Her The more I hate the more he follows me
Hel The more I love the more he hateth me

Her His folly *Helena* is no fault of mine

Hel None but your beauty would that fault
were mine!

Her Take comfort he no more shall see my
face

Lysander and myself will fly this place

Before the time I did *Lysander* see

Seem'd Athens as a paradise to me

O then, what graces in my love do dwell

That he hath turn'd a heaven unto a hell!

Lys *Helena* to you our minds we will unfold

To-morrow night when *Phoebe* doth behold

Her silver visage in the watery glass

Decking with liquid pearl the bladed grass

A time that lovers' flights doth still conceal

Through Athens' gates have we devised to steal

Her And in the wood where often you and I

Upon faint primrose beds were wont to lie

Emptying our bosoms of their counsel sweet

There my *Lysander* and myself shall meet

And thence from Athens turn away our eyes

To seek new friends and stranger companies

Farewell sweet playfellow pray thou for us

And good luck grant thee thy *Demetrius*!

Keep word *Lysander* we must starve our sight

From lovers' food till morrow deep midnight

Lys I will my *Hermia* *(Exit Hermia)*

Helena adieu

As you on him *Demetrius* dote on you! *(Exit)*

Hel How happy some other some can be!

Through Athens I am thought as fair as she

But what of that? *Demetrius* thinks not so

He will not know what all but he do know

And as he errs doting on *Hermia*'s eyes

So I admiring of his qualities

Things base and vile holding no quantity

Love can transpose to form and dignity

Love looks not with the eyes but with the mind

And therefore 'twing'd Cupid painted blind

Nor hath Love's mind of any judgement taste

Wings and no eyes figure unheedy haste

And therefore is Love said to be a child

Because in choice he is so oft beguiled

As wags his boys in game themselves for

swear

So the boy Love is perjur'd every where

For ere *Demetrius* look'd on *Hermia*'s eye

He hail'd down oaths that he was only mine

And when thus hail some heat from *Hermia* felt

So he dissolved and showers of oaths d d melt

I will go tell him of fair *Hermia*'s flight

Then to the wood will he to-morrow night
 Pursue her, and for this intelligence
 If I have thanks, it is a dear expense
 But herein mean I to enrich my pain 250
 To have his sight thither and back again [Exit

SCENE II Athens Quince's house

Enter QUINCE, SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE, SNOOT, and
 STARVELING

Quin Is all our company here?

Bot You were best to call them generally
 man by man, according to the scrip

Quin Here is the scroll of every man's name,
 which is thought fit, through all Athens to play
 in our interlude before the Duke and the Duchess,
 on his wedding day at night

Bot First, good Peter Quince say what the
 play treats on, then read the names of the actors,
 and so grow to a point

Quin Marry our play is *The most lamentable
 comedy, and most cruel death of Pyramus and
 Thisby*

Bot A very good piece of work I assure you
 and a merry Now, good Peter Quince call
 forth your actors by the scroll Masters spread
 yourselves

Quin Answer as I call you Nick Bottom the
 weaver

Bot Ready Name what part I am for and pro-
 ceed 21

Quin You, Nick Bottom are set down for
 Pyramus

Bot What is Pyramus? a lover or a tyrant?

Quin A lover, that kills himself most gallant
 for love

Bot That will ask some tears in the true per-
 forming of it if I do it, let the audience look to
 their eyes I will move storms I will condole in
 some measure To the rest yet my chief humour
 is for a tyrant I could play Ircles rarely, or a
 part to tear a cat in to make all split

'The raging rocks

And shivering shocks

Shall break the locks

Of prison gates

And Phibbus ear

Shall shine from far

And make and mar

The foolish Iates 40

This was lofty! Now name the rest of the
 players This is Ircles vein a tyrant's vein a
 lover is more condoling

Quin Francis I love the bellows mender

Flute Here Peter Quince

Quin Flute you must take Thisby on you

Flute What is Thisby? a wandering knight?

Quin It is the lady that Pyramus must love
 Flute Nay, faith let not me play a woman I
 have a beard coming 50

Quin That's all one you shall play it in a
 mask, and you may speak as small as you will

Bot An I may hide my face let me play
 Thisby too I'll speak in a monstrous little voice,
 "Thisne Thisne "Ah Pyramus my lover
 dear! thy Thisby dear and lady dear!"

Quin No no you must play Pyramus and,
 Flute you Thisby

Bot Well proceed

Quin Robin Starveling, the tailor 60

Star Here Peter Quince

Quin Robin Starveling, you must play Thisby's
 mother Tom Snout the tinker

Snout Here Peter Quince

Quin You Pyramus father myself Thisby's
 father Snug the joiner you the lion's part
 and I hope here is a play fitted

Snug Have you the lion's part written? pray
 you if it be, give it me, for I am slow of study

Quin You may do it extempore for it is noth-
 ing but roaring 71

Bot Let me play the lion too I will roar that
 I will do any man's heart good to hear me
 I will roar that I will make the Duke say, "Let
 him roar again let him roar again"

Quin An you should do it too terribly you
 would fright the Duchess and the ladies that
 they would shriek, and that were enough to hang
 us all

All That would hang us, every mother's son

Bot I grant you friends if that you should
 fright the ladies out of their wits they would
 have no more discretion but to hang us but I
 will aggravate my voice so that I will roar you
 as gently as any sucking dove I will roar you
 an twere any nightingale

Quin You can play no part but Pyramus, for
 Pyramus is a sweet faced man a proper man as
 one shall see in a summer's day a most lovely
 gentleman like man therefore you must needs
 play Pyramus 91

Bot Well I will undertake it What beard were
 I best to play it?

Quin Why what you will

Bot I will discharge it in either your straw-
 colour'd beard your orange tawny beard your
 purple in-grain beard or your French-crown
 colour'd beard your perfect yellow

Quin Some of your French crowns have no hair
 at all and then you will play barefaced but
 masters here are your parts and I am to en-
 treat you request you and desire you to con-
 firm them by to-morrow night and meet me in the

palace wood a mile without the town by moon
light there will we rehearse for if we meet in
the city we shall be doⁿed with company and
our devices known In the meantime I will draw
a bill of properties such as our play wants I
pray you fail me not 109

Bot We will meet and there we may rehearse
most obscenely and courageously Take pains
be perfect adieu

Quin At the Duke's oak we meet
Bot Enough hold or cut bow strings

[*Exeunt*]

ACT II

SCENE I A wood near Athens

Enter from opposite sides a FAIRY and PUCK

Puck How now spirit! whither wander you?

Fai Over hill over dale

Thorough bush thorough brier

Over park over pale

Thorough flood thorough fire

I do wander every where

Swifter than the moon's sphere

And I serve the fairy Queen

To dew her orbs upon the green

The cow slips tall her pensioners be 10

In their gold coats spots you see

Those be rubies fairy favours

In those freckles live their savours

I must go seek some dewdrops here

And hang a pearl in every cowslip's ear
Farewell thou lob of spirits I'll be gone

Our Queen and all her elves come here
anon

Puck The King doth keep his revels here to-
night

Take heed the Queen come not within his sight 20
For Oberon is passing fell and wrath,
Because that she as her attendant hath

A lovely boy stolen from an Indian king

She never had so sweet a chanceling

And jealous Oberon would have the child

Knave of his train, to trace the forests wild

But she perforce withholds the loved boy

Crowns him with flow'ers and makes him all her
pry

And now they never meet in grove or green,

By fountain clear or spangled starlight sheen

But they do square that all their elves for fear 30

Creep into acorn-cups and hide them there

Fai Either I mistake your shape and making
quite

Or else you are that shrewd and knavish sprite

Call'd Robin Goodfellow are not you he

That frisks the maids of the May-merry

Slam malk, and sometimes labour in the quern

And bootless make the breathless housewife
churn

And sometime make the drink to bear no barm
Mislead night wanderers laughing at their
harm?

Those that Hobgoblin call you and sweet Puck
You do their work and they shall have good
luck

Are not you he?

Iuck Thou speak'st aright

I am that merry wanderer of the night

I jest to Oberon and make him smile

When I a fat and bean-fed horse beguile

Neighing in likeness of a filly foal

And sometime lurk I in a gossip's bowl

In very likeness of a roasted crab

And when she drinks against her lips I bob 50

And on her wither'd dewlap pour the ale
The wisest aunt telling the saddest tale

Sometime for three-foot stool mistaketh me

Then slip I from her bum down topples she,

And tailor cries and falls into a cough

And then the whole quire hold their hips and

laugh

And waxen in their mirth and neeze and swear

A merrier hour was never wasted there

But room fairy! here comes Oberon

Fai And here my mistress Would that he were
gone!

*Enter from one side OBERON with his train
from the other TITANIA with hers*

Obe Ill met by moonlight proud Titania 60

Tit What jealous Oberon! Fairies skip
hence

I have forsworn his bed and company

Obe Tarry rash v.anton am not I thy lord?

Tit Then I must be thy lady but I know

When thou hast stolen away from fairy land

And in the shape of Corin sat all day

Playing on pipes of corn and versing love

To amorous Phillida Why art thou here

Come from the farthest steppe of India?

But that forsooth the bouncin^g Amazon 70

Your buskin'd mistress and your warrior love

To Theseus must be wedded and you come

To give their bed joy and prosperity

Obe How canst thou thus for shame Titania,

Glance at my credit with Hippolyta,

Knowing I know thy love to Theseus?

Didst thou not lead him through the glimmering

night

From Perigenia whom he ravished?

And make him with fair Agle break his faith

With Ariadne and Antiope?

Tit These are the forgeries of jealousy 80

And never, since the middle summer's spring,
Met we on hill, in dale, forest or mead,
By paved fountain or by rushy brook
Or in the beached margin of the sea,
To dance our ringlets to the whistling wind,
But with thy brawls thou hast disturb'd our sport

Therefore the winds piping to us in vain,
As in revenge, have suck'd up from the sea
Contagious fogs which falling in the land 90
Have every pelting river made so proud
That they have overborne their continents
The ox hath therefore stretch'd his yoke in vain
The ploughman lost his sweat, and the green corn
Hath rotted ere his youth attain'd a beard
The fold stands empty in the drowned field
And crows are fatted with the murrion flock,
The nine men's morris is fill'd up with mud
And the quaint mazes in the wanton green
For lack of tread are undistinguishable 100
The human mortals want their winter here,
No night is now with hymn or carol blest
Therefore the moon, the governess of floods,
Pale in her anger, washes all the air,
That rheumatic diseases do abound
And thorough this distemperature we see
The seasons alter: hoary-headed frosts
Fall in the fresh lap of the crimson rose,
And on old Hiems thin and icy crown 110
An odorous chaplet of sweet summer buds
Is as in mockery set: the spring the summer,
The chiding autumn, angry winter, change
Their wonted liveries, and the mazed world,
By their increase, now knows not which is
which

And this same progeny of evils comes
From our debate, from our dissension
We are their parents and original

Ole Do you amend it then, if it lies in you
Why should Titania cross her Oberon?

I do but beg a little changeling boy 120
To be my henchman

Tita Set your heart at rest
The fairy land buys not the child of me
His mother was a votaress of my order
And in the spiced Indian air by night
Full often hath she gossip'd by my side
And sat with me on Neptune's yellow sands
Marking the embarked traders on the flood
When we have laugh'd to see the sails conceal'd
And grow big-bellied with the wanton wind
Which she with pretty and with swimming gait
Following—her womb then rich with my young
squire—

Would imitate and sail upon the land
To fetch me trifles and return again,

As from a voyage rich with merchandise
But she being mortal of that boy did die,
And for her sake do I rear up her boy,
And for her sake I will not part with him

Obe How long within this wood intend you stay?

Tita Perchance till after Theseus' wedding day

If you will patiently dance in our round 140

And see our moonlight revels go with us,
If not, shun me, and I will spare your haunts

Obe Give me that boy, and I will go with thee

Tita Not for thy fairy kingdom I'll rise away!
We shall chide down night, if I longer stay

[Exit TITANIA with her train]

Obe Well go thy way: thou shalt not from
this grove

Till I torment thee for this injury
My gentle Puck, come hither: Thou remember'st

Since once I sat upon a promontory,
And heard a mermaid on a dolphin's back 150
Uttering such dulcet and harmonious breath
That the rude sea grew civil at her song
And certain stars shot madly from their spheres,
To hear the sea-maid's music

Puck I remember

Obe That very time I saw, but thou couldst not,
Flying between the cold moon and the earth
Cupid all arm'd: a certain aim he took
At a fair vestal throned by the west
And loosed his love's shaft smartly from his bow,
As it should pierce a hundred thousand hearts 160
But I might see young Cupid's fiery shaft
Quench'd in the chaste beams of the watery
moon

And the imperial votaress passed on
In maiden meditation, fancy free
Yet mark'd I where the bolt of Cupid fell
It fell upon a little western flower
Before milk-white, now purple with love's 170
wound

And maidens call it love in idleness
Fetch me that flower, the herb I shew'd thee
once

The juice of it on sleeping eye-lids laid 170
Will make or man or woman madly dote
Upon the next live creature that it sees
Fetch me this herb: and be thou here again
Ere the leviathan can swim a league

Puck I'll put a girdle round about the earth
In forty minutes [Exit]

Ole Having once this juice
I'll watch Titania when she is asleep
And drop the liquor of it in her eyes
The next thing then she wakes, looks upon

Be it on lion bear or wolf or bull
On meddling monkey or on busy ape
She shall pursue it with the soul of love
And ere I take this charm from off her sight
As I can take it with another herb
I'll make her render up her page to me
But who comes here? I am invisible
And I will overhear their conference

Enter DEMETRIUS HELENA following him

Dem I love thee not therefore pursue me not
Where is Lysander and fair Hermia?
The one I'll slay the other slayeth me
Thou toldst me they were stolen unto this wood
And here am I and wood within this wood
Because I cannot meet my Hermia
Hence get thee gone and follow me no more

Hel You draw me you hard hearted adamant
But yet you draw not iron for my heart
Is true as steel leave you your power to draw
And I shall have no power to follow you

Dem Do I entice you? do I speak you fair?
Or rather do I not in plainest truth
Tell you I do not nor I cannot love you?

Hel And even for that do I love you the more
I am your spaniel and Demetrius
The more you beat me I will fawn on you
Use me but as your spaniel spurn me strike me
Neglect me lose me only give me leave
Unworthy as I am to follow you

What worse place can I beg in your love—
And yet a place of high respect with me—
Than to be used as you use your dog?

Dem Tempt not too much the hatred of my
spirit
For I am sick when I do look on thee

Hel And I am sick when I look not on you
Dem You do impeach your modesty too much
To leave the city and commit yourself
Into the hands of one that loves you not
To trust the opportunity of night
And the ill counsel of a desert place
With the rich worth of your virginity

Hel Your virtue is my privilege for that
It is not night when I do see your face
Therefore I think I am not in the moon
Nor doth this wood lack worlds of company
For you in my respect are all the world
Then how can it be said I am alone
When all the world is here to look on me?

Dem I'll run from thee and hide me in the
brakes
And leave thee to the mercy of wild beasts
Hel The wildest hath not such a heart as you
Run when you will the story shall be changed
Apollo flies and Daphne holds the chase

180 The dove pursues the griffin the mild hind
Makes speed to catch the tiger bootless speed
When cowardice pursues and valour flies
Dem I will not stay thy questions let me go
Or if thou follow me do not believe
But I shall do thee mischief in the wood
Hel Ay in the temple in the town the field
You do me mischief Fie Demetrius!
Your wrongs do set a scandal on my sex
We cannot fight for love as men may do
We should be woo'd and were not made to woo

[*Exit DEMETRIUS*]

I'll follow thee and make a heaven of hell
To die upon the hand I love so well
Obt Fare thee well nymph are he do leave
this grove
Thou shalt fly him and he shall seek thy love

Re-enter PUCK

Hast thou the flower there? Welcome wanderer
Puck Ay there it is

Obt I pray thee give it me
I know a bank where the wild thyme blows
Where oxlips and the nodding violet grows
Quite over-canopied with luscious woodbine
With sweet musk roses and with eglantine
There sleeps Titania sometime of the night
Lull'd in these flowers with dances and delight
And there the snake throws her enamell'd skin,
Weed wide enough to wrap a fairy in
And with the juice of this I'll streak her eyes
And make her full of hateful fantasies
Take thou some of it and seek through this
grove

A sweet Athenian lady is in love
With a disdainful youth anoint his eyes
But do it when the next thing he espies
May be the lady thou shalt know the man
By the Athenian garments he hath on
Effect it with some care that he may prove
More fond on her than she upon her love
And look thou meet me ere the first cock crow
Puck Fear not my lord your servant shall do

so [Exit]

SCENE II Another part of the wood

Enter TITANIA with her train

Tit Come now a roundel and a fairy song
Then for the third part of a minute hence
Some to kill cankers in the musk rose buds
Some war with reere mice for their leathern
wings
To make my small elves coats and some keep
back
The clamorous owl that nightly hoots and won
ders

At our quaint spirits Sing me now asleep,
Then to your offices and let me rest

The FAIRIES sing

1st Fair You spotted snakes with double tongue,
Thorny hedgehogs, be not seen, 10

Newts and blind worms, do no wrong

Come not near our fairy queen

Chorus Philomel, with melody

Sing in our sweet lullaby,

Lulla, lulla, lullaby, lulla, lulla lullaby

Never harm,

Nor spell nor charm,

Come our lovely lady nigh

So, good night with lullaby

1st Fair Weaving spiders come not here 20
Hence, you long legged spinners,
hence!

Beetles black, approach not near,

Worm nor snail do no offence

Chorus Philomel, with melody, &c

2nd Fair Hence away! now all is well

One aloof stand sentinel

[*Exit FAIRIES* TITANIA sleeps

Enter OBERON, and squeezes the flower on
TITANIA'S eyelids

Obe What thou seest when thou dost wake,
Do it for thy true love take
Love and languish for his sake
Be it ounce or cat or bear, 30
Pard or boar with bristled hair,
In thy eye that shall appear
When thou wakest it is thy dear
Wake when some vile thing is near [*Exit*

Enter LYSANDER and HERMIA

Lys Fair love, you faint with wandering in the
wood,

And to speak troth I have forgot our way

We'll rest us Hermia if you think it good

And tarry for the comfort of the day

Her Be it so I, sander find you out a bed 40
Or I upon this bank will rest my head

Lys One turf shall serve as pillow for us both

One heart one bed two bosoms and one troth

Her Nay, good I, sander for my sake my
dear

Lie further off yet do not lie so near

Lys O, take the sense sweet of my innocence!

Love takes the meaning in love's conference

I mean that my heart with yours is knit

So that but one heart we can make of it

Two bosoms interchained with a oath

So then two bosoms and a single troth

Then by your side no bed room me deny,

For lying so, Hermia I do not lie

Her Lysander riddles very prettily

Now much beshrew my manners and my pride,

If Hermia meant to say Lysander lied

But gentle friend for love and courtesy

Lie further off in human modesty,

Such separation as may well be said

Becomes a virtuous bachelor and a maid,

So far be distant and good night sweet friend

Thy love ne'er alter till thy sweet life end! 61

Lys Amen amen to that fair prayer say I,

And then end life when I end loyalty!

Here is my bed sleep give thee all his rest!

Her With half that wish the wisher's eyes be
press'd! [*They sleep*

Enter PUCK

Puck Through the forest have I gone,

But Athenian found I none

On whose eyes I might approve

This flower's force in stirring love

Night and silence — Who is here? 70

Weeds of Athens he doth wear

This is he my master said

Despised the Athenian maid

And here the maiden sleeping sound,

On the dank and dirty ground

Pretty soul! she durst not lie

Near this lack love this kill-courtesy

Churl upon thy eyes I throw

All the power this charm doth owe 80

When thou wakest, let love forbid

Sleep his seat on thy eyelid

So awake when I am gone

For I must now to Oberon [*Exit*

Enter DEMETRIUS and HELENA running

Hel Stay though thou kill me sweet Demetrius

Dem I charge thee hence and do not haunt me
thus

Hel O wilt thou darkling leave me do not so

Dem Stay on thy peril I alone will go 111

Hel O I am out of breath in this fond chase!

The more my prayer the lesser is my grace

Happy is Hermia wheresoe'er she lies 50

For she hath blessed and attractive eyes

How came her eyes so bright? Not with tears

If so my eyes are oftener wash'd than hers

No no I am as white as a bear

For he has slain me with his fiery eyes

Therefore do not revile them Demetrius

Do as a monster fly my presence thus
 What wicked and dissembling glass of mine
 Made me compare with Hermia's spherish eye?
 But who is here? Lysander! on the ground! 100
 Dead? or asleep? I see no blood, no wound
 Lysander if you live, good sir, awake
Lys [Awaking] And run through fire I will
 for thy sweet sake

Transparent Helena! Nature shows a art
 That through thy bosom makes me see thy heart
 Where is Demetrius? O how fit a word
 Is that vile name to perish on my sword!

Hel Do not say so, Lysander, say not so
 What though he love your Hermia? Lord, what
 thought?

Yet Hermia still loves you, then be content 110

Lys Content with Hermia? No, I do repent
 The tedious minutes I with her have spent
 Not Hermia but Helena I love
 Who will not change a raven for a dove?
 The will of man is by his reason sway'd
 And reason says you are the worthier maid
 Things growing are not ripe until their season
 So I, being young, till now ripe not to reason
 And touching now the point of human skill
 Reason becomes the marshal to my will 120

And leads me to your eyes, where I am look
 Love's stories written in love's richest book

Hel Wherefore was I to this keen mockery
 born?

When at your hands did I deserve this scorn?
 Is it not enough, is it not enough, young man
 That I did never, no, nor never can
 Deserve a sweet look from Demetrius' eye?
 But you must flout my insufficiency?
 Good troth, you do me wrong, good sooth, you
 do

In such disdainful manner me to woo 130
 But fare you well, perforce I must confess
 I thought you lord of more true gentleness
 O that a lady of one man refused
 Should of another therefore be abused! [Exit]

Lys She sees not Hermia, Hermia, sleep thou
 there

And never mayst thou come, Lysander, near!
 For as a surfeit of the sweetest things
 The deepest loathing to the stomach brings
 Or as the heresies that men do leave
 Are hated most of those they did deceive, 140
 So thou, my surfeit and my heresy
 Of all be hated, but the most of me!

And all my powers address your love and might
 To honour Helen and to be her knight! [Exit]

Hel [Awaking] Help me, Lysander, help me!
 do thy best

To pluck this crawling serpent from my breast!

Ay me, for pity! what a dream was here!
 Lysander, look how I do quake with fear
 Methought a serpent eat my heart away
 And you sat smiling at his cruel prey 150
 Lysander! what removed? Lysander! lord!
 What out of hearing? gone? no sound, no word?
 Alack, where are you? speak, an if you hear
 Speak of all loves! I swoon almost with fear
 No? then I well perceive you are not nigh
 Either death or you I'll find immediately [Exit]

ACT III

SCENE I The wood. TITANIA lying asleep

Enter QUINCE, SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE, SNOUT
 and STARVELING

Bot Are we all met?

Quin Pat, pat, and here's a marvellous convenient place for our rehearsal. This green plot shall be our stage, this hawthorn brake our tiring house, and we will do it in action as we will do it before the Duke.

Bot Peter Quince—

Quin What sayest thou, bully Bottom?

Bot There are things in this comedy of Pyramus and Thisby that will never please. First, Pyramus must draw a sword to kill himself, which the ladies cannot abide. How answer you that?

Snout By a lakyn, a parlous fear.

Star I believe we must leave the killing out when all is done.

Bot Not a whit. I have a device to make all well. Write me a prologue, and let the prologue seem to say we will do no harm with our swords, and that Pyramus is not killed indeed; and for the more better assurance, tell them that I Pyramus am not Pyramus, but Bottom the weaver; this will put them out of fear.

Quin Well, we will have such a prologue, and it shall be written in eight and six.

Bot No, make it two more, let it be written in eight and eight.

Snout Will not the ladies be afeard of the lion?

Star I fear it, I promise you. 29

Bot Masters, you ought to consider with yourselves to bring in—God shield us!—a lion among ladies is a most dreadful thing, for there is not a more fearful wild fowl than your lion living, and we ought to look to it.

Snout Therefore another prologue must tell he is not a lion.

Bot Nay, you must name his name, and half his face must be seen through the lion's neck, and he himself must speak through, saying thus, or to the same defect, Ladies, or Fair ladies!

would wish you," or "I would request you" or "I would entreat you, not to fear, not to tremble my life for yours. If you think I come hither as a lion, it were a pity of my life: no, I am no such thing, I am a man as other men are, and there indeed let him name his name and tell them plainly he is Snug the joiner."

Quin Well it shall be so. But there is two hard things, that is, to bring the moonlight into a chamber, for, you know, Pyramus and Thisby meet by moonlight.

Snout Doth the moon shine that night we play our play?

Bot A calendar a calendar! look in the almanac, find out moonshine, find out moonshine.

Quin Yes, it doth shine that night.

Bot Why, then may you leave a casement of the great chamber window, where we play, open, and the moon may shine in at the casement.

Quin Ay, or else one must come in with a bush of thorns or a lanthorn and say he comes to disfigure or to present, the person of Moonshine. Then there is another thing we must have: a wall in the great chamber, for Pyramus and Thisby says the story, did talk through the chink of a wall.

Snout You can never bring in a wall. What say you Bottom?

Bot Some man or other must present Wall and let him have some plaster or some loam or some rough-cast about him to signify wall and let him hold his fingers thus and through that cranny shall Pyramus and Thisby whisper.

Quin If that may be then all is well. Come, sit down every mother's son and rehearse your parts. Pyramus you begin when you have spoken your speech enter into that brake and so every one according to his cue.

Enter PUCK, I, and II

Puck What hempen home-spuns have we swag-gering here,

So near the cradle of the fairy queen? 80

What a play toward! I'll be an auditor.

An actor too perhaps if I see cause.

Quin Speak Pyramus. Thisby stand forth.

Bot 'Thisby the flowers of odious savours

sweet —

Quin Odours odours.

Bot —' odours savours sweet.

So ha! h! thy breath my dearer Thisby

dearer.

But hark a voice! stay thou here here and I'll

And by and by I will to thee appear. [Exit]

Fl. A stranger Pyramus than e'er played here. [Exit] 80

Flu Must I speak now?

Quin Ay marry must you for you must understand he goes but to see a noise that he heard, and is to come again.

Flu "Most radiant Pyramus, most lily white of hue,

Of colour like the red rose on triumphant brier

Most briskly juvenal and eldest most lovely Jew

As true as truest horse that yet would never tire

I'll meet thee Pyramus at Ninny's tomb." 99

Quin Ninus tomb man why, you must not speak that yet, that you answer to Pyramus. You speak all your part at once cues and all. Pyramus enter your cue is past, it is "never tire."

Flu O —' As true as truest horse, that yet would never tire.

Re-enter PUCK and BOTTOM with an ass's head

Bot If I were fair, Thisby I were only thine."

Quin O monstrous! O strange! we are haunted. Pray, masters! fly, masters! Help!

[Exit QUINCE, SING FLUTE, SING and STABLING

Puck I'll follow you. I'll lead you about a round

Through bog through bush through brake, through brier. 110

Sometime a horse I'll be sometime a hound

A hog a headless bear sometime a fire, And neigh and bark and grunt and roar and burn

Like horse hound hog bear fire, at every turn. [Exit]

Bot Why do they run away? this is a knavery of them to make me afraid.

Re-enter SNOOT

Snout O Bottom thou art changed! what do I see on thee?

Bot What do you see? you see an ass head of your own, do you? [Exit SNOOT] 120

Re-enter QUINCE

Quin Bless thee Bottom! bless thee! thou art transformed. [Exit]

B I see their knavery, this is to make an ass of me to fright me if they could. But I will not stir from this place do what they can. I will walk up and down here, and I will sing the play shall hear I am not afraid. [Sings]

There's a clench in that off'three

With orange saunders to

The thimble with a nose of wax 130

The water with a leg. —

Tit [Awaking] What angel wakes me from
my flowery bed?

Bot [Sings]

The finch the sparrow and the lark

The plain song cuckoo gray

Whose note full many a man doth mark

And dares not answer nay —

for indeed who would set his wit to so foolish a
bird? who would give a bird the lie though he
cry cuckoo never so?

Tit I pray thee gentle mortal sing again

Mine ear is much enamour'd of thy note 141

So is mine eye enthralled to thy shape

And thy fair virtue's force perforce doth move
me

On the first view to say to swear I love thee

Bot Methinks mistress you should have little
reason for that and yet to say the truth reason
and love keep little company together now a
days the more the pity that some honest neigh-
bours will not make them friends Nay I can
gleek upon occasion 150

Tit Thou art as wise as thou art beautiful

Bot Not so neither but if I had wit enough to
get out of this wood I have enough to serve mine
own turn

Tit Out of this wood do not desire to go
Thou shalt remain here whether thou wilt or no
I am a spirit of no common rate

The summer still doth tend upon my state

And I do love thee therefore go with me

I'll give thee fairies to attend on thee 160

And they shall fetch thee jewels from the deep

And sing while thou on pressed flowers dost
sleep

And I will purge thy mortal grossness so

That thou shalt like an airy spirit go

Peaseblossom! Cobweb! Moth! and Mustard
seed

*Enter PEASEBLOSSOM COBWEB MOTH and
MUSTARDSEED*

Pas Ready

Cob And I

Moth And I

Mus And I

All Where shall we go?

Tit Be kind and courteous to this gentleman

Hop in his walks and gambol in his eyes

Feed him with apricocks and dewberries

With purple grapes green figs and mulberries

The honey-bags steal from the humble bees 171

And for night tapers crop their waxen thighs

And light them at the fiery glow-worm's eyes

To lead my love to bed and to arise

And pluck the wings from painted butterflies

To fan the moonbeams from his sleeping eyes

Nod to him elves and do him courtesies

Pas Hail mortal!

Cob Hail!

Moth Hail!

Mus Hail!

Bot I cry your worships mercy heartily I be-
seech your worship's name 180

Cob Cobweb

Bot I shall desire you of more acquaintance
good Master Cobweb if I cut my fin or I shall
make bold with you Your name, honest gentle
man?

Pas Peaseblossom

Bot I pray you commend me to Mistress
Squash your mother and to Master Peas-
cod your father Good Master Peaseblossom I shall
desire you of more acquaintance too Your name
I beseech you sir?

Mus Mustardseed

Bot Good Master Mustardseed I know your
patience well that same cowardly giant like ox-
beef hath devoured many a gentleman of your
house I promise you your kindred hath made
my eyes water ere now I desire your more ac-
quaintance good Master Mustardseed 201

Tit Come wait upon him lead him to my
bover

The moon methinks looks with a watery
eye

And when she weeps weeps every little flower

Lamenting some enforced chastity

Tie up my love's tongue, bring him silently
[Exeunt]

SCENE II Another part of the wood

Enter OBERON

Obe I wonder if Titania be awaked
Then what it was that next came in her eye,
Which she must dote on in extremity

Enter PUCK

Here comes my messenger

How now mad spirit?
What night rule now about this haunted grove?

Puck My mistress with a monster is in love
Near to her close and consecrated bower
While she was in her dull and sleeping hour
A crew of patches rude mechanicals
That work for bread upon Athenian stalls 10
Were met together to rehearse a play
Intended for great Theseus nuptial-day
The shallowest thick skin of that barren sort
Who Pyramus presented in their sport
Forsook his scene and entered in a brake
When I did him at this advantage take

An ass's noll I fixed on his head
 Anon his Thisbe must be answered
 And forth my mimic comes When they him spy
 As wild geese that the creeping Fowler eye, 20
 Or russet pated choughs many in sort
 Rising and cawing at the gun's report
 Sever themselves and madly sweep the sky,
 So at his sight, away his fellows fly,
 And at our stamp, here o'er and o'er one falls
 He murder cries and help from Athens calls
 Their sense thus weak, lost with their fears thus
 strong
 Made senseless things begin to do them wrong
 For briars and thorns at their apparel snatch
 Some sleeves, some hats, from yelders all things
 catch 30

I led them on in this distracted fear,
 And left sweet Pyramus translated there
 When in that moment, so it came to pass
 Titania waked and straightway loved an ass
Obe This falls out better than I could devise
 But hast thou yet latched the Athenian's eyes
 With the love juice, as I did bid thee do?
Puck I took him sleeping—that is finish'd too—
 And the Athenian woman by his side
 That when he waked, of force she must be
 eyed 40

Enter HERMIA and DEMETRIUS

Ole Stand close this is the same Athenian
Puck This is the woman but not this the man
Dem O why rebuke you him that loves you so?
 Lay breath so bitter on your bitter foe
Her Now I but chide, but I should use thee
 worse,

For thou I fear hast given me cause to curse
 If thou hast slain Ly sander in his sleep
 Being o'er shoes in blood plunge in the deep
 And kill me too
 The sun was not so true unto the day 50
 As he to me would he have stolen away
 I from sleeping Hermia? I'll believe as soon
 This whole earth may be bored and that the
 moon

May through the centre creep and so displease
 Her brother's noontide with the Antipodes
 It cannot be but thou hast murder'd him
 So should a murderer look so dead so grim
Dem So should the murder'd look and so
 should I

Pierced through the heart with your stern cruelty
 Yet you the murderer look as bright as clear 60
 As yonder Venus in her glimmering sphere
Her What's this to my Lysander where is he
 Ah, good Demetrius wilt thou give him me?
Dem I had rather give his carcass to my hounds

Her Out dog! out, cur! thou drivest me past
 the bounds

Of maiden's patience Hast thou slain him then?
 Henceforth be never number'd among men!
 O once tell true tell true even for my sake!
 Durst thou have look'd upon him being awake,
 And hast thou kill'd him sleeping? O brave
 touch! 70

Could not a worm an adder do so much?
 An adder did it, for with doubler tongue
 Than thine thou serpent never adder stung
Dem You spend your passion on a misprised
 mood

I am not guilty of Ly sander's blood
 Nor is he dead for aught that I can tell
Her I pray thee, tell me than that he is well
Dem An if I could what should I get therefore?

Her A privilege never to see me more
 And from thy hated presence part I so 80
 See me no more whether he be dead or no [*Exit*
Dem There is no following her in this fierce
 vein

Here therefore for a while I will remain
 So sorrow's heaviness doth heavier grow
 For debt that bankrupt sleep doth sorrow owe,
 Which now in some slight measure it will pay,
 If for his tender here I make some stay

Lies down and sleeps

Ole What hast thou done? thou hast mistaken
 quite

And lud the love juice on some true love's sight
 Of thy misprision must perforce ensue 90
 Some true love turn'd and no false turn'd true

Puck Then fate o'er rules that, one man hold
 ing troth

A million fall confounding oaths on oath

Ole About the wood go swifter than the wind
 And Helena of Athens look thou find

All fancy sick she is and pale of cheer
 With sighs of love that costs the fresh blood
 dear

By some illusion see thou bring her here
 I'll charm his eyes against she do appear

Puck I go I go look how I go 100
 Swifter than arrow from the Tartar's bow [*Exit*
Ole Flower of this purple dye

I hit with Cupid's archery
 Sink in apple of his eye

When his love he doth espie,
 Let her shine as gloriously

As the Venerable of the sky
 When thou wak'st if she be by,
 Look of her for remedy

HERMIA

Puck Caper and caper and

Helena is here at hand
And the youth mustook by me
Pleading for a lover's fee
Shall we their fond pageant see?
Lord, what fools these mortals be!

Obe Stand aside the noise they make
Will cause Demetrius to awake

Puck Then will two at once woo one
That must needs be sport alone
And those things do best please me 120
That befall postposterously

Enter LYSANDER and HELENA

Lys Why should you think that I should woo in scorn?

Scorn and derision never come in tears
Look when I vow I weep and vows so born
In their nativity all truth appears

How can these things in me seem scorn to you
Bearing the badge of faith to prove them true?

Hel You do advance your cunning more and more

When truth kills truth O devilish holy fray!
These vows are Hermia's will you give her
o'er?

Weigh oath with oath and you will nothing weigh 132

Your vows to her and me put in two scales
Will even weigh and both as light as tales

Lys I had no judgement when to her I swore
Hel Not none in my mind now you give her
o'er

Lys Demetrius loves her and he loves not you
Dem (*Awaking*) O Helen goddess nymph
perfect divine!

To what my love shall I compare thine eyne?
Crystal is muddy O how ripe in show
Thy lips those kissing cherries tempting grow!
That pure congealed white high Taurus snow
Fann'd with the eastern wind turns to a crow
When thou hold'st up thy hand O let me kiss
This princess of pure white this seal of bliss!

Hel O spite! O hell! I see you all are bent

To set against me for your sportment
If you were civil and knew courtesy
You would not do me thus much injury
Can you not hate me as I know you do
But you must jangle in souls to mock me too? 150
If you were men, as men you are in show
You would not use a gentle lady so

To vow and swear and superpraise my parts
When I am sure you hate me with your hearts
You both are rivals and love me Hermia
And now both rivals to mock Helena
A trim exploit a manly enterprise
To conjure tears up in a poor maid's eyes

With your derision! none of noble sort
Would so offend a virgin and extort 160
A poor soul's patience all to make you sport

Lys You are unkind Demetrius be not so
For you love Hermia thus you know I know
And here with all good will with all my heart
In Hermia's love I yield you up my part
And yours of Helena to me bequeath
Whom I do love and will do till my death

Hel Never did mockers waste more idle breath

Dem Lysander keep thy Hermia I will none
If e'er I loved her all that love is gone 170
My heart to her but as guest-wise sojourn'd
And now to Helen is it home return'd
There to remain

Lys Helen it is not so

Dem Disparage not the faith thou dost not know

Lest to thy peril thou abyt it dear
Look where thy love comes yonder is thy dear

Re-enter HERMIA

Her Dark night that from the eye his function takes

The ear more quick of apprehension makes
Wherein it doth unpair the seeing sense
It pays the hearing double recompense 180
Thou art not by mine eye Lysander found
Mine ear I thank it brought me to thy sound
But why unkindly didst thou leave me so?

Lys Why should he stay whom love doth press to go?

Her What love could press Lysander from my side?

Lys Lysander's love that would not let him bide

Fair Helena who more engulds the right
Than all yon fiery oes and eyes of light
Why seek'st thou me? could not this make thee know

The hate I bear thee made me leave thee so? 190

Her You speak not as you think it cannot be

Hel Lo she is one of this confederacy!

Now I perceive they have combin'd all three
To fashion this false sport in spite of me
Injurious Hermia! most ungrateful maid!
Have you conspir'd have you with these con-
vinced

To bait me with this foul derision?
Is all the counsel that we two have shared
The sisters' vows the hours that we have spent
When we have chid the hasty-footed time 200
For parting us—O is it all forgot?

All school-days' friendship childhood innocence?

We Hermia, like two artificial gods
Have with our needles created both one flower

Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion,
Both warbling of one song both in one eye,
As if our hands, our sides, voices and minds,
Had been incorporate So we grew together,
Like to a double cherry, seeming parted,
But yet an union in partition,
Two lovely berries moulded on one stem,
So, with two seeming bodies, but one heart,
Two of the first, like coats in heraldry,
Due but to one and crowned with one crest
And will you rend our ancient love asunder,
To join with men in scorning your poor friend?
It is not friendly, 'tis not maidenly
Our sex, as well as I, may chide you for it,
Though I alone do feel the injury

Her I am amazed at your passionate words
I scorn you not it seems that you scorn me 221

Hel Have you not set Lysander, as in scorn,
To follow me and praise my eyes and face?
And made your other love Demetrius,
Who even but now did spurn me with his foot,
To call me goddess, nymph divine and rare,
Precious, celestial? Wherefore speaks he this
To her he hates? and wherefore doth Lysander
Deny your love, so rich within his soul,

And tender me, forsooth affection, 230
But by your setting on, by your consent?
What though I be not so in grace as you
So hung upon with love, so fortunate,
But miserable most to love unloved?
Thus you should pity rather than despise

Her I understand not what you mean by this
Hel Ay do persevere, counterfeit sad looks
Make mouths upon me when I turn my back
Wink each at other hold the sweet jest up
This sport, well carried shall be chronicled 240

If you have any pity grace or manners
You would not make me such an argument
But fare ye well 'tis partly my own fault
Which death or absence soon shall remedy

Lys Stay gentle Helena hear my excuse
My love, my life my soul fair Helena!
Hel O excellent!

Her Sweet do not scorn her so
Dem If she cannot entreat I can compel
Lys Thou canst compel no more than she can
treat

Thy threats have no more strength than her weak
prayers 250

Hel I love thee by my life I do
I swear by that which I will lose for thee
To prove him false that says I love thee not

Dem I say I love thee more than he can do
Lys If thou say so with all power to thee
Dem Quick come!

Lys I will attend you all the while

Lys Away, you Ethiop!
Dem No no he'll but
Seem to brea' loose, take on as you would
follow

But yet come not you are a tame man go!
Lys Hang off, thou cat, thou burr! vile thing,
let loose, 260

Or I will shake thee from me like a serpent!
Her Why are you grown so rude? what change
is this?

Sweet love—
Lys Thy love! out tawny Tartar, out!
Out loathed medicine! hated potion hence!

Her Do you not jest?
Hel Yes sooth, and so do you
Lys Demetrius I will keep my word with thee

Dem I would I had your bond for I perceive
A weak bond holds you I'll not trust your word
Lys What should I hurt her, strile her, kill
her dead?

Although I hate her I'll not harm her so 270
Her What can you do me greater harm than
hate?

Hate me! wherefore? O me! what news my
love!

Am not I Hermia? are not you Lysander?
I am as fair now as I was ere while
Since night you loved me, yet since night you
left me

Why, then you left me—O, the gods forbid!—
In earnest shall I say?

Lys Ay by my life
And never did desire to see thee more
Therefore be out of hope of question of doubt,
Be certain nothing truer 'tis no jest 280

That I do hate thee and love Helena
Her O me! you juggler! you canker blossom!
You thief of love! what have you come by night
And stolen my love's heart from him?

Hel Fine! faith!
Have you no modesty no maiden shame
No touch of bashfulness? What will you tear
Impertinent answers from my gentle tongue?

I'll see if you can entreat you puppet you!
Her Puppet? why so? as that way goes the
game

Now I perceive that she hath made compare
Between our features she hath urged her beauty,
And with her personage her tall personage
Her height, forsooth she hath prevailed with
him

And a coward grows out of his nature
When he sees a lion and a coward goes
Home with him and a little cat will
Pounce on his heart and he will prey on his
heart

And a coward grows out of his nature
When he sees a lion and a coward goes
Home with him and a little cat will
Pounce on his heart and he will prey on his
heart

And a coward grows out of his nature
When he sees a lion and a coward goes
Home with him and a little cat will
Pounce on his heart and he will prey on his
heart

And a coward grows out of his nature
When he sees a lion and a coward goes
Home with him and a little cat will
Pounce on his heart and he will prey on his
heart

Hel I pray you though you mock me gentle men

Let her not hurt me I was never curst 300
I have no gift at all in shrewishness
I am a right maid for my cowardice
Let her not strike me You perhaps may think
Because she is something lower than myself
That I can match her

Her Lower 'hark again

Hel Good Hermia do not be so bitter with me
I evermore did love you Hermia
Did ever keep your counsels never wrong'd you
Save that in love unto Demetrius
I told him of your stealth unto this wood 310
He follow'd you for love I follow'd him
But he hath chid me hence and threaten'd me
To strike me spurn me nay to kill me too
And now so you will let me quiet go
To Athens will I bear my folly back
And follow you no further let me go
You see how simple and how fond I am

Her Why get you gone who is it that hinders you?

Hel A foolish heart that I leave here behind

Her What with Lysander?

Hel With Demetrius 320

Lys Be not afraid she shall not harm thee
Helena

Dem No sir she shall not though you take her part

Hel O when she is angry she is keen and shrewd!

She was a vixen when she went to school
And though she be but little she is fierce

Her Little again' nothing but low and little!

Why will you suffer her to flout me thus?

Let me come to her

Lys Get you gone you dwarf

You minimalist of hinderin' knot-grass made
You bead you acorn

Dem You are too officious 330

In her behalf that scorns your services

Let her alone speak not of Helena

Take not her part for if thou dost intend

Never so little show of love to her

Thou shalt aby it

Lys Now she holds me not

Now follow if thou darest to try whose right

Of thine or mine is most in Helena

Dem Follow nay I'll go with thee cheek

by jule [Exeunt LYSANDER and DEMETRIUS]

Her You mistress all this coil is loom'd of you
Nay go not back

Hel I will not trust you I 340

Not longer stay in your curst company

Your hands than mine are quicker for a fray
My legs are longer though to run away [Exit]

Her I am amazed and know not what to say [Exit]

Obe This is thy negligence still thou mistakest

Or else committest thy knaveries wilfully

Puck Believe me king of shadows I mistook

Did not you tell me I should know the man

By the Athenian garments he had on?

And so far blameless proves my enterprise 350

That I have nominated an Athenian's eyes

And so far am I glad it so did sort

As this their jangling I esteem a sport

Obe Thou see'st these lovers seek a place to fight

Hie therefore Robin overcast the night

The starry welkin cover thou anon

With drooping fog as black as Acheron

And lead these testy rivals so astray

As one come not within another's way

Like to Lysander sometime frame thy tongue

Then stir Demetrius up with bitter wrong 360

And sometime rail thou like Demetrius

And from each other look thou lead them thus

Till o'er their brows death-counterfeiting sleep

With leaden legs and batt' wings doth creep

Then crush this herb into Lysander's eye

Whose liquor hath this virtuous property

To take from thence all error with his might

And make his eyeballs roll with wonted sight

When they next wake all this derision 370

Shall seem a dream and fruitless vision

And back to Athens shall the lovers wend

With league whose date till death shall never

end

Whiles I in this affair do thee employ

I'll to my queen and beg her Indian boy

And then I will her charmed eye release

From monster's view and all things shall be

peace

Puck My fairy lord this must be done with

haste

For mine's swift dragons cut the clouds full fast

And yonder shines Aurora's harbinger 380

At whose approach ghosts wanderin' here and

there

Troop home to churchyards damned spirits all

That in crossways and floods have burial

Already to their wormy beds are gone

For fear lest day should look their shames upon

They wilfully themselves exile from light

And must for aye consort with black brow'd

night

Obe But we are spirits of another sort

I with the morning's love have oft made sport

And, like a forester, the groves may tread 390
 Even till the eastern gate all fiery red,
 Opening on Neptune with fair blessed beams,
 Turns into yellow gold his salt green streams
 But, notwithstanding, haste make no delay
 We may effect this business yet ere day [Exit

Puck Up and down up and down,
 I will lead them up and down
 I am fear'd in field and town
 Goblin lead them up and down

Here comes one 400

Re-enter LYSANDER

Lys Where art thou, proud Demetrius? speak
 thou now

Puck Here villain, drawn and ready Where
 art thou?

Lys I will be with thee straight

Puck Follow me then,
 To plainer ground

[Exit LYSANDER, as following the voice

Re-enter DEMETRIUS

Dem Lysander! speak again
 Thou run away thou coward art thou fled?
 Speak! In some bush? Where dost thou hide thy
 head?

Puck Thou coward, art thou bragging to the
 stars

Telling the bushes that thou look'st for wars
 And wilt not come? Come, recreant come thou
 child

I'll whip thee with a rod he is defiled 410
 That draws a sword on thee

Dem Yea art thou there?

Puck Follow my voice we'll try no manhood
 here [Exit

Re-enter LYSANDER

Lys He goes before me and still dares me on
 When I come where he calls then he is gone
 The villain is much lighter heel'd than I
 I follow'd fast but faster he did fly
 That fallen am I in dark uneven way
 And here will rest me [Lies down] Come thou
 gentle day!

I or if but once thou show me this grey light
 I'll find Demetrius and revenge this spite [Sleeps

He enters PUCK and DEMETRIUS

Puck Ho ho ho! Coward why comest thou
 now? 421

Dem Abide me if thou dares for well I wot
 Thou run'st before me shifting every place
 And dar'st not stand no look me in the face
 Where art thou now?

Puck Come hither I am here
Dem Nay, then, thou mock'st me Thou shalt
 buy this dear
 If ever I thy face by day light see
 Now, go thy way Faintness constraineth me
 To measure out my length on this cold bed
 By day I approach look to be visited 430
Lies down and sleeps

Re-enter HELENA

Hel O weary night O long and tedious night
 Abate thy hours! Shine comforts from the east
 That I may back to Athens by day light
 From these that my poor company detest
 And sleep that sometimes shuts up sorrow's eye
 Steal me awhile from mine own company
Lies down and sleeps

Puck Yet but three? Come one more
 Two of both kinds makes up four
 Here she comes curst and sad
 Cupid is a knavish lad 440
 Thus to make poor females mad

Re-enter HERMIA

Her Never so weary never so in woe,
 Bedabbled with the dew and torn with briers,
 I can no further crawl no further go
 My legs can keep no pace with my desires
 Here will I rest me till the break of day
 Heavens shield Lysander if they mean a fray!

Lies down and sleeps

Puck On the ground
 Sleep sound
 I'll apply 450
 To your eye

Gentle lover remedy
 Squeezing the juice on Lysander's eye
 When thou wakest

Thou takest

I rue delight

In the sight

Of thy former lady's eye

And the country proverb known

That every man should take his own

In your waking, shall be shown 460

Jack shall have Jill

No true shall foil

The man shall have his mare again, and all shall
 be well [Exit

ACT IV

SCENE I Titania, Lysander, Demetrius, Helena, and Hermia, by night

Enter Titania, Lysander, Demetrius, Helena, and Hermia, by night
Titania I have dream'd that my dear Lysander
 was a swain that lov'd me not, but I have dream'd
 that he lov'd me not, but I have dream'd
 that he lov'd me not, but I have dream'd

Tit Come sit thee down upon this flowery
bed

While I thy amiable cheeks do coy
And stick musk roses in thy sleek smooth
head

And kiss thy fair large ears my gentle
joy

Bot Where's Peaseblossom?

Peas Ready

Bot Scratch my head Peaseblossom Where's
Mounsieur Cobweb?

Cob Ready

Bot Mounsieur Cobweb good mounsieur get
you your weapons in your hand and kill me a
red hipped humble bee on the top of a thistle
and good mounsieur bring me the honey bag
Do not fret yourself too much in the action
mounsieur and good mounsieur have a care the
honey bag break not I would be loath to have
youe erflow with a honey bag signior Where's
Mounsieur Mustardseed?

Mus Ready

Bot Give me your neaf Mounsieur Mustard
seed Pray you leave your courtesy good moun-
sieur

Mus What's your will?

Bot Nothing good mounsieur but to help
Cavalery Cobweb to scratch I must to the bar-
ber's mounsieur for methinks I am marvellous
hairy about the face and I am such a tender ass
if my hair do but tickle me I must scratch

Tit What wilt thou hear some music my
sweet love?

Bot I have a reasonable good ear in music
Let's have the tongs and the bones

Tit Or say sweet love what thou desirest
to eat

Bot Truly a peck of provender I could
munch your good dry oats Methinks I have a
great desire to a bottle of hay good hay sweet
hay hath no fellow

Tit I have a venturous fairy that shall seek
The squirrel's hoard and fetch thee new nuts

Bot I had rather have a handful or two of dried
peas But I pray you I'll none of your people
stir me I have an exposition of sleep come upon me

Tit Sleep thou and I will wind thee in my
arms

Fairies be gone and be all ways away

[*Exeunt fairies*]

So doth the woodbine the sweet honeysuckle

Gently entwist the female ivy so

Eringers the barked finches of the elm

O how I love thee! how I dote on thee!

They sleep

Enter Puck

Obe [*Advancing*] Welcome good Robin
See'st thou this sweet sight?

Her dotage now I do begin to pity
For meeting her of late behind the wood
Seeking sweet favours for this hateful fool
I did upbraid her and fall out with her
For she has hairy temples then had rounded
With coronet of fresh and fragrant flowers
And that same dew which sometime on the buds
Was wont to swell like round and orient pearls
Stood now within the pretty flow'rets' eyes
Like tears that did their own disgrace bewail
When I had at my pleasure taunted her
And she in mild terms begged my patience
I then did ask her of her changeling child
Which straight she gave me and her fairy sent
To bear him to my bower in fairy land
And now I have the boy I will undo
This hateful imperfection of her eyes
And gentle Puck take this transformed scalp
From off the head of this Athenian swain
That he awaking when the other do
May all to Athens back again repair
And think no more of this night's accidents
But as the fierce vexation of a dream
But first I will release the fairy queen [*Touching*
her eyes]

Be as thou wast wont to be
See as thou wast wont to see
Dian's bud or Cupid's flower
Hath such force and blessed power
Now my Titania wake you my sweet queen.

Tit My Oberon! what visions have I seen!
Methought I was enamoured of an ass

Obe There lies your love

Tit How came these things to pass?
O how mine eyes do loathe his visage now!

Obe Silence awhile Robin take off this head
Titania music call and strike more dead

Than common sleep of all these five the sense

Tit Music, ho! music such as charmeth sleep!

Music still

Puck Now when thou wast with thine own
fool's eyes peep

Obe Sound music! Come my queen take
hands with me

And rock the ground whereon these sleepers be

Now thou and I are new in amity

And will to-morrow midnight solemnly

Dance in Duke Theseus' house triumphantly

And bless it to all fair prosperity

There shall the pairs of faithful lovers be

Wedded with Theseus all in jollity

Puck Fairy king attend and mark

I do hear the morning lark

Obe Then my queen in silence sad
Trip we after night's shade 100

We the globe can compass soon,
Swifter than the wandering moon

Tita Come, my lord, and in our flight
Tell me how it came this night
That I sleeping here was found
With these mortals on the ground

[*Exeunt*]

Horns winded within

Enter THESEUS HIPPOLITA EGEUS and train

The Go one of you find out the forester,
For now our observation is perform'd,
And since we have the vaward of the day
My love shall hear the music of my hounds 110
Uncouple in the western valley, let them go
Dispatch, I say, and find the forester

[*Exit an Attendant*]

We will, fair queen up to the mountain's top
And mark the musical confusion
Of hounds and echo in conjunction

Hip I was with Hercules and Cadmus once,
When in a wood of Crete they bay'd the bear
With hounds of Sparta never did I hear
Such gallant cluding, for, besides the groves
The skies the fountains every region near 120
Seem'd all one mutual cry. I never heard
So musical a discord, such sweet thunder

The My hounds are bred out of the Spartan
kind

So flew'd, so sanded, and their heads are hung
With ears that sweep away the morning dew
Crock-knee'd, and dew-lapp'd like Thessalian
bulls,

Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouth like bells
Each under each. A cry more tuneable
Was never holla'd to, nor cheer'd with horn
In Crete in Sparta nor in Thessaly 130
Judge when you hear. But, soft! what nymphs
are these?

Ege My lord, this is my daughter here asleep
And this, Ly-sander, this Demetrius is
This Helena, old Nedar's Helena
I wonder of their being here together

The No doubt they rose up early to observe
The rite of May, and hearing our intent
Came here in grace of our solemnity
But speak. Egeus is not this the day
That Hermia should give answer of her choice? 140

Ege It is, my lord 141
The Go, bid the huntsmen wake them with
their horns. *Horns and shout within*

LYSANDER DEMETRIUS HELENA and HERMIA
wake and start up

Good morrow friends. Saint Valentine is past
Begin these wood-birds but to couple now?

Lys Pardon, my lord

The I pray you all, stand up

I know you two are rival enemies
How comes this gentle concord in the world,
That hatred is so far from jealousy
To sleep by hate and fear no enmity?

Lys My lord, I shall reply amazedly 150

Half sleep, half waking—but as yet I swear,

I cannot truly say how I came here,

But as I think—for truly would I speak,

And now I do bethink me so it is—

I came with Hermia hither. Our intent

Was to be gone from Athens where we might,

Without the peril of the Athenian law—

Ege Enough, enough, my lord, you have
enough

I beg the law, the law, upon his head

They would have stolen away, they would,

Demetrius 160

Thereby to have defeated you and me

You of your wife and me of my consent,

Of my consent that she should be your wife

Dem My lord, fair Helen told me of their
stealth,

Of this their purpose hither to this wood,

And I in fury hither follow'd them,

Fair Helena in fancy following me

But my good lord, I wot not by what power—

But by some power it is—my love to Hermia,

Melted as the snow seems to me now 170

As the remembrance of an idle gawd

Which in my childhood I did dote upon,

And all the faith the virtue of my heart,

The object and the pleasure of mine eye,

Is only Helena. To her my lord

Was I betroth'd ere I saw Hermia

But like in sickness did I loathe this food,

But, as in health, come to my natural taste,

Now I do wish it, love it, long for it

And will for evermore be true to it 180

The Fair lovers, you are fortunately met

Of this discourse we more will hear anon

Egeus, I will overbear your will,

For in the temple by and by with us

These couples shall eternally be knit

And for the morning now is something worn,

Our purposed hunting shall be set aside

Away with us to Athens three and three,

We'll hold a feast in great solemnity

Come, Hippolyta 190

[*Exeunt THESEUS HIPPOLITA EGEUS and train*]

Dem These things seem small and undistin-

guishable

Like far-off mountains turned into clouds

Her Methinks I see these thunders with parted
eye

When every thing seems double

Hel So methinks

And I have foun I Demetrius like a jewel

Mine own and not mine own

Dem Are you sure

That we are awake? It seems to me

That yet we sleep we dream Do not you think

The Duke was here and bid us follow him? 199

Her Yea and my father

Hel And Hippolyta

Lys And he did bid us follow to the temple

Dem Why then we are awake let's follow
him

And by the way let us recount our dreams

[*Exeunt*]

Bot [*Awaking*] When my cue comes call me
and I will answer my next is Most fair Pyra-
mus Heigh ho! Peter Quince! Flute the bel-
lows mender! Snout the tinker! Starveling! God's
my life stolen hence and left me asleep! I have
had a most rare vision I have had a dream past
the wit of man to say what dream it was man is
but an ass if he go about to expound this dream
Methou he I was—there is no man can tell
what Methou he I was—and methought I had—
but man is but a patched fool if he will offer to
say what methought I had The eye of man hath
not heard the ear of man hath not seen man's
hand is not able to taste his tongue to conceive
nor his heart to report what my dream was I
will get Peter Quince to write a ballad of this
dream it shall be called Bottom's Dream
because it hath no bottom and I will sing it in
the latter end of a play before the Duke per-
adventure it make it the more gracious I shall
sing it at her death [*Exit*]

SCENE II Athens Quince's house

Enter QUINCE FLUTE, SNOOT and
STARVELING

Q in Have you sent to Bottom's house? Is he
come home yet?

Star He cannot be heard of Out of doubt
he is transported

Flu If he come not then the play is marred
it goes not forward doth it?

Quin It is not possible you have not a man
in all Athens able to discharge Pyramus but he

Flu No he hath simply the best wit of any
handicraft man in Athens 10

Q in Yea and the best person too and he is a
very paramour for a sweet voice

Flu You must say para on a paramour is
God bless us a thunders of naught

Enter SNOUT

Snug Masters the Duke is coming from the
temple and there is two or three lords and ladies
more married if our sport had gone forward we
had all been made men

Flu O sweet bully Bottom! Thus hath he lost
sixpence a day during his life he could not have
scaped sixpence a day an the Duke had not
given him sixpence a day for playing Pyramus
I'll be hanged he would have deserved it six-
pence a day in Pyramus or nothing

Enter BOTTOM

Bot Where are these lads? where are these
hearts?

Quin Bottom! O most courageous day! O most
happy hour!

Bot Masters I am to discourse wonders but
ask me not what for if I tell you I am no true
Athenian I will tell you everything right as it
fell out

Quin Let us hear sweet Bottom

Bot Not a word of me All that I will tell you
is that the Duke hath dined Get your apparel
together good strings to your beards new rib-
bons to your pumps meet presently at the pal-
ace every man look over his part for the short
and the long is our play is preferred In any
case let Thisby have clean linen and let not
him that plays the lion pare his nails for they
shall hang out for the lion's claws And most
dear actors eat no onions nor garlic for we are
to utter sweet breath and I do not doubt but to
hear them say it is a sweet comedy No more
words away! go away! [*Exeunt*]

ACT V

SCENE I Athens the palace of Theseus

Enter THESEUS HIPPOLYTA PHILOSTRATE Lords
and Attendants

Hip Tis strange my Theseus that these
lovers speak of

The More strange than true I never may be
here

These antique fables not these fairy toys
Lovers and madmen have such seething brains
Such shaping fantasies that apprehend
More than cool reason ever comprehends
The lunatic the lover and the poet
Are of imagination all compact

One sees more devils than vast hell can hold
That is the madman the lover all as frantic, 10
Sees Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt
The poet's eye in a fine frenzy rolling

SCENE I

Doth glance from heaven to earth, from earth to heaven,

And as imagination bodies forth
The forms of things unknown the poet's pen
Turns them to shapes and gives to airy nothing
A local habitation and a name

Such tricks hath strong imagination,
That, if it would but apprehend some joy,
It comprehends some bringer of that joy, 20
Or in the night, imagining some fear,
How easy is a bush supposed a bear!

Hip But all the story of the night told over,
And all their minds transfigured so together,
More witnesseth than fancy's images
And grows to something of great constancy,
But, howsoever, strange and admirable
The Here come the lovers full of joy and mirth

Enter LYSANDER DEMETRIUS HERMIA, and
HELENA

Joy, gentle friends' joy and fresh days of love
Accompany your hearts!

Lys More than to us 30
Wait in your royal walks, your board your bed!

The Come now, what masques, what dances
shall we have

To wear away this long age of three hours
Between our after supper and bed time?

Where is our usual manager of mirth?

What revels are in hand? Is there no play,
To ease the anguish of a torturing hour?

Call Philostrate

Phil Here, mighty Theseus

The Say, what abridgement have you for this
evening?

What masque? what music? How shall we be-
guile 40

The lazy time, if not with some delight?

Phil There is a brief how many sports are ripe
Make choice of which your highness will see
first

Giving a paper

The [Reads] "The battle with the Centaurs to
be sung

By an Athenian eunuch to the harp"

We'll none of that that have I told my love,

In glory of my kinsman Hercules

"The riot of the tipsy Bacchanals,

Tearing the Thracian singer in their rage" 50

That is an old device, and it was play'd

When I from Thebes came last a conqueror

'The thrice three Muses mourning for the death

Of learning late deceased in beggary

That in some satire keen and critical,

Not sorting with a nuptial ceremony

"A tedious brief scene of young Pyramus
And his love Thisby, very tragical mirth"
Merry and tragical! tedious and brief!

That is hot ice and wondrous strange snow
How shall we find the concord of this discord? 60
Phil A play there is my lord some ten words
long,

Which is as brief as I have known a play,
But by ten words my lord it is too long,
Which makes it tedious for in all the play
There is not one word apt one player fitted
And tragical my noble lord it is,
For Pyramus therein doth kill himself
Which when I saw rehearsed I must confess,
Made mine eyes water, but more merry tears 70
The passion of loud laughter never shed

The What are they that do play it?
Phil Hard handed men that work in Athens
here,

Which never labour'd in their minds till now,
And now have toil'd their unbreathed memories
With this same play against your nuptial

The And we will hear it

Phil No, my noble lord,

It is not for you I have heard it over
And it is nothing nothing in the world,
Unless you can find sport in their intents,
Extremely stretch'd and conn'd with cruel pain, 80
To do you service

The I will hear that play,

For never anything can be amiss

When simpleness and duty tender it

Go, bring them in and take your places ladies

[Exit PHILOSTRATE]

Hip I love not to see wretchedness o'ercharged
And duty in his service perishing

The Why, gentle sweet you shall see no such
thing

Hip He says they can do nothing in this kind

The The kinder we to give them thanks for
nothing

Our sport shall be to take what they mistake 90

And what poor duty cannot do, noble respect

Takes it in might not merit

Where I have come great clerks have purposed

To greet me with premeditated welcomes

Where I have seen them shiver and look pale

Make periods in the midst of sentences

Throttle their practised accent in their fears

And in conclusion dumbly have broke off

Not paying me a welcome Trust me sweet,

Out of this silence yet I pick'd a welcome,

And in the modesty of fearful duty

I read as much as from the rattling tongue

Of saucy and audacious eloquence

Love, therefore, and tongue tied simplicity

In least speak most to my capacity

Re-enter PHILOSTRATE

Phil So please your grace the Prologue is address'd

The Let him approach [*Flourish of trumpets*]

Enter QUINCE for the PROLOGUE

Pro If we offend it is with our good will

That you should think we come not to offend

But with good will To show our simple skill 110

That is the true beginning of our end

Consider then we come but in despite

We do not come as minding to content you

Our true intent is All for your delight

We are not here That you should here repent you

The actors are at hand and by their show

You shall know all that you are like to know

The This fellow doth not stand upon points

Lys He hath rid his prologue like a rough colt
he knows not the stop A good moral my lord
it is not enough to speak but to speak true

Hip Indeed he hath play'd on his prologue like
a child on a recorder a sound but not in govern-
ment

The His speech was like a tangled chain nothing
impaired but all disorder'd Who is next?

*Enter PYRAMUS and THISBE WALL MOONSHINE
and LION*

Pro Gentles perchance you wonder at this
show

But wonder on till truth make all things plain

This man is Pyramus if you would know 120

This beauteous lady Thisbe is certain

This man with lime and rowl-cast doth present

Wall that vile Wall which did these lovers
sunder

And through Wall's chink poor souls they are
content

To whisper At the which let no man wonder

This man, with lantern, dog, and bush of thorn,

Presenteth Moonshine for if you will know

By moonshine did these lovers think no scorn

To meet at Ninus tomb there there to woo

This grisly beast which Lion he, hit by name 140

The trusty Thisbe coming first by night

Did scare away or rather did affright

And as she fled her mantle she did fall

Which Lion vile with bloody mouth did stain

And now comes Pyramus sweet youth and tall

And finds his trusty Thisbe's mantle stain

Whereat with blade with bloody blameful
blade,

He bravely broach'd his boiling bloody breast

And Thisbe, carrying in mulberry shade

His dagger drew and died For all the rest,

Let Lion Moonshine Wall and lovers twain 151

At large discourse while here they do remain

[*Exit PROLOGUE PYRAMUS THISBE LION and
MOONSHINE*]

The I wonder if the lion be to speak

Dem No wonder my lord one lion may when
many asses do

Wall In this same interlude it doth befall

That I one Snout by name present a wall

And such a wall as I would have you think,

That had in it a crannied hole or chink

Through which the lovers Pyramus and Thisbe

Did whisper often very secretly 161

This loam thus rough-cast and thus stone doth
show

That I am that same wall the truth is so

And thus the cranny is right and sinister

Through which the fearful lovers are to whisper

The Would you desire lime and hair to speak
better?

Dem It is the wittiest partition that ever I
heard discourse my lord

Re-enter PYRAMUS

The Pyramus draws near the wall silence!

Pyr O grim look'd night! O night with hue
so black! 171

O night which ever art when day is not!

O night O night! alack alack alack

I fear my Thisbe's promise is forgot!

And thou O wall O sweet O lovely wall

That stand'st between her father's ground and
mine!

Thou wall O wall O sweet and lovely wall

Show me thy chink, to blink through with mine
eye!

[*Wall holds up his fingers*]
Thanks courteous wall Jove shield thee well for
this!

But what see I? No Thisbe do I see 180

O wicked wall through whom I see no bliss!

Curs'd be thy stones for thus deceiving me!

The The wall methinks being sensible should
curse again

Pyr No in truth sir he should not Deceiv-
ing me is Thisbe's cue she is to enter now

and I am to spy her through the wall You shall
see it will fall pat as I told you Yonder she
comes

Re-enter THISBE

This O wall full often hast thou heard my
moans 190

For parting my fair Pyramus and me!

My cherry lips have often kiss'd thy stones

Thy stones with lime and hair knit up in thee

Pyr I see a voice now will I to the chink,

To spy an I can hear my *Thysby* s face

Thysby!

This My love thou art, my love I think

Pyr Think what thou wilt, I am thy lover's grace,

And, like *Limander*, am I trusty still

This And I like *Helen* till the Fates me kill

Pyr Not *Shafalus* to *Procrus* was so true 200

This As *Shafalus* to *Procrus*, I to you

Pyr O kiss me through the hole of this vile wall!

This I kiss the wall s hole, not your lips at all

Pyr Wilt thou at *Ninny* s tomb meet me straightway?

This 'Tide life tide death, I come without delay

[*Exeunt PYRAMUS and THISBE*]

Wall Thus have I *Wall*, my part discharged so,

And being done, thus *Wall* away doth go [*Exit*]

The Now is the mural down between the two neighbours

Dem No remedy, my lord, when walls are so wilful to hear without warning 211

Hip This is the silliest stuff that ever I heard

The The best in this kind are but shadows and the worst are no worse if imagination amend them

Hip It must be your imagination then and not theirs

The If we imagine no worse of them than they of themselves, they may pass for excellent men Here come two noble beasts in, a man and a lion 221

Re-enter LION and MOONSHINE

Lion You, ladies you whose gentle hearts do fear

The smallest monstrous mouse that creeps on floor

May now perchance both quake and tremble here,

When lion rough in wildest rage doth roar

Then know that I, one *Snug* the joiner, am

A lion fell, nor else no lion s dam

For, if I should as lion come in strife

Into this place 'twere pity on my life

The A very gentle beast and of a good conscience 231

Dem The very best at a beast my lord that e'er I saw

Lys This lion is a very fox for his valour

The True, and a goose for his discretion

Dem Not so my lord for his valour cannot carry his discretion, and the fox carries the goose

The His discretion I am sure cannot carry his valour for the goose carries not the fox It is well leave it to his discretion, and let us listen to the moon

Moon This lanthorn doth the horned moon present—

Dem He should have worn the horns on his head

The He is no crescent, and his horns are invisible within the circumference

Moon This lanthorn doth the horned moon present

Myself the man; the moon do seem to be

The This is the greatest error of all the rest the man should be put into the lanthorn How is it else the man; the moon?

Dem He dares not come there for the candle for, you see it is already in snuff

Hip I am aweary of this moon would he would change!

The It appears by his small light of discretion that he is in the wane, but yet, in courtesy, in all reason, we must stay the time

Lys Proceed, Moon 260

Moon All that I have to say, is to tell you that the lanthorn is the moon, I the man in the moon, this thorn bush my thorn bush and this dog, my dog

Dem Why, all these should be in the lanthorn, for all these are in the moon But, silence! here comes *Thisbe*

Re-enter THISBE

This This is old *Ninny* s tomb Where is my love?

Lion [*Roaring*] Oh— [*THISBE runs off*]

Dem Well roared *Lion* -70

The Well run *Thisbe*

Hip Well shone *Moon* Truly, the moon shines with a good grace

[*THE LION shakes THISBE s mantle, and exit*]

The Well moused *Lion*

Lys And so the lion vanished

Dem And then came *Pyramus*

Re-enter PYRAMUS

Pyr Sweet *Moon* I thank thee for thy sunny beams

I thank thee, *Moon* for shining now so bright,

For by thy gracious golden glittering gleams

I trust to take of truest *Thisby* sight 280

But stay, O spite!

But mark poor knight

What dreadful dole is here!

Eyes do you see?

How can it be?

20 The Life and Death of KING JOHN

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING JOHN
 LANCELOT HENRY son to the King
 ARTHUR Duke of Bretagne nephew to the King
 EARL OF PEMBROKE
 EARL OF ESSEX
 EARL OF SALISBURY
 LORD BIGOT
 HUBERT DE BURGH
 ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE son to Sir Robert Faulconbridge
 PHILIP THE BASTARD his half brother late disinherited
Richard I Plantagenet
 JAMES GURNEY servant to Lady Faulconbridge
 PETER OF POMFREY a philosopher
 EXECUTIONER
 THOMAS MESSENGERS
 ENGLISH HERALD

PHILIP King of France
 LEWIS the Dauphin
 LYSBOURG Duke of Austria
 CARDINAL PANDULPH the Pope's legate
 MELUN a French Lord
 CHATILLON ambassador from France to King John
 CITIZEN of Angers
 FRENCH HERALD

QUEEN ELINOR mother to King John
 CONSTANCE mother to Arthur
 BLANCH of Spain niece to King John
 LADY FAULCONBRIDGE

NON-SPEAKING Lords Citizens of Angers Sheriff
 Officers Soldiers and their Attendants

SCENE Partly in England and partly in France



ACT I

SCENE I King John's palace

Enter KING JOHN QUEEN ELINOR PEMBROKE,
 ESSEX SALISBURY and others with CHATILLON

KING JOHN Now say Chatillon what would
 France with us?

CHATILLON Thus after greeting speaks the King
 of France

In my behaviour to the majesty

The borrowed majesty of England here

ELINOR A strange beginning borrowed majesty!

KING JOHN Silence good mother hear the embassy

CHATILLON Philip of France in right and true behalf

Of thy deceased brother Geoffrey's son,

Arthur Plantagenet lays most lawful claim

To this fair island and the territories 10

To Ireland Poitiers Anjou Touraine Maine

Desiring thee to lay aside the sword

Which he lays usurpingly these several titles

And put the same into young Arthur's hand

Thy nephew and right royal sovereign

KING JOHN What follows if we disallow of this?

CHATILLON The proud control of fierce and bloody
 war

To enforce these rights so forcibly withheld

KING JOHN Here have we war for war and blood
 for blood,

Controlment for controlment so answer France
 CHATILLON Then take my king's defiance from my
 mouth 21

The farthest limit of my embassy

KING JOHN Bear mine to him and so depart in
 peace

Be thou as lightning in the eyes of France

For ere thou canst report I will be there

The thunder of my cannon shall be heard

So hence! Be thou the trumpet of our wrath

And sullen presage of your own decay

An honourable conduct let him have

Pembroke look to it Farewell Chatillon 30

[Exit CHATILLON and PEMBROKE]

ELINOR What now my son! have I not ever said

I low that ambitious Constance would not cease

Till she had kindled France and all the world

Upon the right and party of her son?

Thus might have been prevented and made whole

With very easy arguments of love

Which now the manage of two kingdoms must

With fearful bloody issue arbitrate

KING JOHN Our strong possession and our right
 for us

ELINOR Your strong possession much more than
 your right

Or else it must go wrong with you and me

So much my conscience whispers in your ear

Which none but heaven and you and I shall hear

Enter a Sheriff

Enter My liege, here is the strangest controversy

Come from the country to be judged by you
That e'er I heard shall I produce the men?

K John Let them approach
Our abbey's and our priories shall pay
This expedition's charge

Enter ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, and PHILIP THE BASTARD

What men are you?

Bast Your faithful subject I a gentleman 50
Born in Northamptonshire and eldest son,
As I suppose, to Robert Faulconbridge,
A soldier, by the honour-giving hand
Of Cœur-de lion knighted in the field

K John What art thou?

Rob The son and heir to that same Faulconbridge

K John Is that the elder and art thou the heir?
You came not of one mother then it seems

Bast Most certain of one mother mighty king,
That is well known, and, as I think one father
But for the certain knowledge of that truth 61
I put you to a heav'n and to my mother
Of that I doubt as all men's children may

Elz Out on thee rude man! thou dost shame
thy mother

And wound her honour with this diffidence

Bast I madam? no, I have no reason for it,
That is my brother's plea and none of mine,
The which if he can prove, a' pops me out
At least from fair five hundred pound a year
Heaven guard my mother's honour and my land!

K John A good blunt fellow Why, being
younger born, 71

Doth he lay claim to thine inheritance?

Bast I know not why, except to get the land
But once he slander'd me with bastardy
But whether I be as true begot or no
That still I lay upon my mother's head
But that I am as well begot my liege—
Fair fall the bones that took the pains for me!—
Compare our faces and be judge yourself
If old sir Robert did beget us both 80

And were our father and this son like him,
O old sir Robert father, on my knee
I give heaven thanks I was not like to thee!

K John Why what a madcap hath heaven lent
us here!

Elz He hath a trick of Cœur-de lion's face,
The accent of his tongue affecteth him
Do you not read some tokens of my son
In the large composition of this man?

K John Mine eye hath well examined his parts
And finds them perfect Richard Sirrah speak, 90
What doth move you to claim your brother's
land?

Bast Because he hath a half face like my
father

With half that face would he have all my land
A half faced groat five hundred pound a year!

Rob My gracious liege when that my father
lived

Your brother did employ my father much—

Bast Well sir by this you cannot get my land
Your tale must be how he employ'd my mother

Rob And once dispatch'd him in an embassy
To Germany there with the Emperor 100
To treat of high affairs touching that time
The advantage of his absence took the king
And in the mean time sojourn'd at my father's
Where how he did prevail I shame to speak
But truth is truth large lengths of seas and
shores

Between my father and my mother lay
As I have heard my father speak himself
When this same lusty gentleman was got
Upon his death bed he by will bequeath'd
His lands to me and took it on his death 110
That this my mother's son was none of his,
And if he were, he came into the world
Full fourteen weeks before the course of time
Then good my liege let me have what is mine,
My father's land as was my father's will

K John Sirrah your brother is legitimate
Your father's wife did after wedlock bear him
And if she did play false the fault was hers
Which fault lies on the hazards of all husbands
That marry wives Tell me how if my brother
Who as you say, took pains to get this son 121
Had of your father claim'd this son for his?

In sooth good friend your father might have
kept

This calf bred from his cow from all the world
In sooth he might then if he were my brother's,
My brother might not claim him nor your father,
Being none of his refuse him this concludes
My mother's son did get your father's heir
Your father's heir must have your father's land

Rob Shall then my father's will be of no
force 130

To dispossess that child which is not his?

Bast Of no more force to dispossess me sir
Than was his will to get me, as I think

Elz Whether hadst thou rather be a Faulcon-
bridge

And like thy brother to enjoy thy land
Or the reputed son of Cœur-de lion
Lord of thy presence and no land beside?

Bast Madam an if my brother had my shape
 And I had his Sir Robert s his like him
 And if my legs were two such riding rods 140
 My arms such eel skins stuff'd my face so thin
 That in mine ear I durst not stick a rose
 Lest men should say Look where three farth
 ings goes!
 And to his shape were heir to all this land
 Would I might never stir from off this place,
 I would give it every foot to have this face
 I would not be Sir Nob in any case
Elis I like thee well wilt thou forsake thy
 fortune
Bequeath thy land to him and follow me?
 I am a soldier and now bound to France 150
Bast Brother take you my land I'll take my
 chance
 Your face hath got five hundred pound a year
 Yet sell your face for five pence and tis dear
 Madam I'll follow you unto the death
Elis Nay I would have you go before me
 thither
Bast Our country manners give our betters
 way
A John What is thy name?
Bast Philip my liege so is my name begun
 Philip good old Sir Robert s wife s eldest son
A John From henceforth bear his name whose
 form thou bear st 160
Kneel thou down Philip but rise more great
 Arise Sir Richard and Plantagenet
Bast Brother by the mother s side give me
 your hand
 My father gave me honour yours gave land
 Now blessed be the hour by night or day
 When I was got Sir Robert was away!
Elis The very spirit of Plantagenet!
 I am thy grandam Richard call me so
Bast Madam by chance but not by truth
 what though?
 Something about a little from the right 170
 In at the window or else o'er the hatch
 Who dares not stir by day must walk by night
 And have we have however men do catch
 Near or far off well won is still well shot
 And I am I however I was begot
A John Go, Faulconbridge now hast thou thy
 desire
 A landless knight makes thee a landed squire
 Come madam and come Richard, we must
 speed
 For France for France, for it is more than need
Bast Brother adieu good fortune come to
 thee 180
 For thou wast got i the way of honesty
 [Exeunt all but BASTARD]

A foot of honour better than I was
 But many a many foot of land the worse
 Well now can I make any Joan a lady
 Good den sir Richard! God a mercy fel
 low!
 And if his name be George I'll call him Peter
 For new made honour doth forget men s names
 Tis too respective and too sociable
 For your conversion Now your tras ellor
 He and his toothpick at my worship s mess 190
 And when my knightly stomach is sufficed
 Why then I suck my teeth and catechize
 My pickled man of countries My dear sir
 Thus leaning on mine elbow I begin
 I shall beseech you —that is question now
 And then comes answer like an Absey book
 O sir say s answer at you best command
 At your employment at your service sir
 No sir says question I sweet sir at
 yours
 And so ere answer knows what question would
 Saving in dialogue of compliment 201
 And talkin^g of the Alps and Apennines
 The Pyrcnean and the river Po
 It draws toward supper in conclusion so
 But this is worshipful society
 And fits the mourning spirit like myself
 For he is but a bastard to the time
 That doth not smack of observation
 And so am I whether I smack or no 210
 And not alone in habit and device
 Exterior form ourward accoutrement
 But from the inward motion to deliver
 Sweet sweet sweet poison for the age a tooth
 Which though I will not practise to deceive
 Yet to avoid deceit I mean to learn
 For it shall strew the footsteps of my rising
 But who comes in such haste in riding robes?
 What woman-post is this? hath she no husband
 That will take pains to blow a horn before her?
Enter LADY FAULCONBRIDGE and JAMES GURNEY
 Ome! it is my mother How now good lady!
 What brings you here to court so hastily? 221
Lady F Where is that slave thy brother?
 where is he
 That holds in chase mine honour up and down?
Bast My brother Robert? old Sir Robert s
 son?
 Colbrand the giant that same mighty man?
 Is it S r Robert a son that you seek so?
Lady F Sir Robert s son Ay thou unreverend
 boy
 Sir Robert s son why scornst thou at Sir
 Robert?
 He is Sir Robert s son, and so art thou

Bist James Gurney, wilt thou give us leave awhile? 230

Gur Good leave, good Philip

Bast Philip! sparrow James
There's toys abroad anon I'll tell thee more

[*Exit GURNEY*]

Madam I was not old Sir Robert's son
Sir Robert might have eat his part in me
Upon Good-Friday and ne'er broke his fast
Sir Robert could do well marry to confess
Could he get me? Sir Robert could not do it
We know his handiwork therefore good mother

To whom am I beholding for these limbs?

Sir Robert never help to make this leg 240

Lady F Hast thou conspired with thy brother too

That for thine own gain shouldst defend mine honour?

What means this scorn, thou most untoward I have?

Bast 'Knight, knight, good mother, Basilisco like

What! I am dubb'd! I have it on my shoulder

But mother, I am not Sir Robert's son

I have disclaim'd Sir Robert and my land

Legitimation name and all is gone

Then good my mother let me know my father,

Some proper man I hope who was it mother?

Lady F Hast thou denied thyself a Faulconbridge?

Bast As faithfully as I deny the devil

Lady F King Richard Cœur-de lion was thy father

By long and vehement suit I was seduced

To make room for him in my husband's bed

Heaven lay not my transgression to my charge!

Thou art the issue of my dear offence

Which was so strongly urged past my defence

Bast Now by this light were I to get again

Madam I would not wish a better father 260

Some sins do bear their privilege on earth

And so doth yours your fault was not your folly

Needs must you lay your heart at his dispose,

Subjected tribute to commanding love

Against whose fury and unmatched force

The awless lion could nor wage the fight

Nor keep his princely heart from Richard's hand

He that perforce robs lions of their hearts

May easily win a woman's Ay my mother

With all my heart I thank thee for my father! 270

Who lives and dares but say thou didst not well

When I was got I'll send his soul to hell

Come lady I will show thee to my kin

And they shall say when Richard me begot,

If thou hadst said him nay it had been sin

Who says it was, he lies, I say 'twas not

[*Exeunt*]

ACT II

SCENE I France before Angiers

Enter AUSTRIA and forces drums, etc on one side on the other KING PHILIP of France and his power, LEWIS ARTHUR, CONSTANCE and attendants

Lew Before Angiers well met brave Austria

Arthur, that great forerunner of thy blood

Richard, that robb'd the lion of his heart

And fought the holy wars in Palestine

By this brave duke came early to his grave

And for amends to his posterity,

At our importance hither is he come

To spread his colours boy in thy behalf,

And to rebuke the usurpation

Of thy unnatural uncle English John 20

Embrace him love him give him welcome hither

Arth God shall forgive you Cœur de lion's death

The rather that you give his offspring life,

Shadowing their right under your wings of war

I give you welcome with a powerless hand

But with a heart full of unstained love

Welcome before the gates of Angiers Duke

Lew A noble boy! Who would not do thee right?

Aust Upon thy cheek lay I this zealous kiss

As seal to this indenture of my love 20

That to my home I will no more return

Till Angiers and the right thou hast in France

Together with that pale that white faced shore,

Whose foot spurns back the ocean's roaring tides

And coops from other lands her islanders

Even till that England hedged in with the main,

That water-walled bulwark still secure

And confident from foreign purposes

Even till that utmost corner of the west

Salute thee for her king till then fair boy, 30

Will I not think of home but follow arms

Const O take his mother's thanks, a widow's thanks,

Till your strong hand shall help to give him strength

To make us more requital to your love!

Aust The peace of heaven is theirs that lift their swords

In such a just and charitable war

A Ph Well then to work our cannon shall be bent

Against the brows of this resisting town

Call for our chiefest men of discipline

To cull the plots of best advantages 40

We'll lay before this town our royal bones,

Wade to the market place in Frenchmen's blood
But we will make it subject to this boy

Const Stay for an answer to your embassy
Lest unadvised you stain your swords with
blood

My Lord Chatillon may from England bring
That right in peace which here we urge in war
And then we shall repent each drop of blood
That hot rash haste so indirectly shed

Enter CHATILLON

A Phil A wonder lady! lo upon thy wish
Our messenger Chatillon is arrived

What England says say briefly gentle lord
We coldly pause for thee Chatillon speak

Chat Then turn your forces from this paltry
siege

And stir them up against a mightier task
England impatient of your just demands
Hath put himself in arms the adverse winds
Whose leisure I have stay'd have given him
time

To land his legions all as soon as I
His marches are expedient to this town
His forces strong his soldiers confident
With him along is come the mother-queen,
An Ate stirring him to blood and strife
With her her niece the Lady Blanch of Spain
With them a bastard of the king's deceased
And all the unsettled humours of the land
Rash inconsiderate fiery voluntaries
With ladies' faces and herce dragons' spleens
I have sold their fortunes at their native homes
Bearing their birthrights proudly on their backs
To make a hazard of new fortunes here
In brief a braver choice of dauntless spirits
Than now the English bottoms have waft o'er
Did never float upon the swelling tide
To do offence and scath in Christendom

Drum beats

The interruption of their churlish drums
Cuts off twice circumstance they are at hand
To parley or to fight therefore prepare

A Phil How much unlook'd for is this expedition!

Aust By how much unexpected by so much
We must awake endeavour for defence
For courage mounteth with occasion
Let them be welcome then we are prepared

*Enter KING JOHN, ELINOR, BLANCH the
BASTARD, Lords and forces*

A Phil Peace be to France if France in peace
permit
Our just and lineal entrance to our own
If not bleed France and peace ascend to heaven,

While we God's wrathful agent do correct
Their proud contempt that beats his peace to
heaven

A Phil Peace be to England if that war return
From France to England there to live in peace
England we love and for that England's sake
With burden of our armour here we sweat
This toil of ours should be a work of thine
But thou from loving England art so far
That thou hast underwrought his lawful king
Cut off the sequence of posterity

Out faced infant state and done a rape
Upon the maiden virtue of the crown
Look here upon thy brother Geoffrey's face
These eyes these brows were moulded out of
his

This little abstract doth contain that large
Which died in Geoffrey and the hand of time
Shall draw this brief into as huge a volume
That Geoffrey was thy elder brother born
And this his son England was Geoffrey's right
And thus is Geoffrey in the name of God
How comes it then that thou art call'd a king
When living blood doth in these temples beat
Which owe the crown that thou masterest?

A John From whom hast thou this great com-
mission France

So draw my answer from thy articles?
A Phil From that supernal judge that stirs good
thou his

In any breast of strong authority
To look into the plots and stains of right
That judge hath made me guardian to this boy
Under whose warrant I impeach thy wrong
And by whose help I mean to chastise it

A John Alack thou dost usurp authority
A Phil I excuse it is to beat usurping down
Phil Who is it thou dost call usurper France?
Const Let me make answer thy usurping son
Phil Out in olent! thy bastard shall be king
That thou mayst be a queen and check the
world!

Const My bad was ever to thy son as true
As thine was to thy husband and this boy
Likely in feature to his father Geoffrey
Than thou and John in manners being as like
As rain to water or devil to his dam
My boy a bastard! By my soul I think
His father never was so true begot
It cannot be, an if thou wert his mother
Phil There's a good mother boy that plots thy
father

Const There's a good grandam boy that would
b'at thee

Aust Peace!

But Hear the crier

Aust What the devil art thou?

Bast One that will play the devil, sir, with you,
An a may catch your hide and you alone
You are the hare of whom the proverb goes,
Whose valour plucks dead lions by the beard
I'll smoke your skin-coat an I catch you right
Sirrah, look to t i faith I will i faith 140

Blanch O well did he become that lion's robe
That did disrobe the lion of that robe!

Bast It lies as sightly on the back of him
As great Alcides shows upon an ass
But, ass I'll take that burthen from your back
Or lay on that shall make your shoulders crack

Aust What cracker is this same that deafs our
ears

With this abundance of superfluous breath?

K Phi Lewis, derer mine what we shall do
straight

Lew Women and fools, break off your con-
ference 150

King John this is the very sum of all,
England and Ireland Anjou Touraine, Maine,
In right of Arthur do I claim of thee
Wilt thou resign them and lay down thy arms?

K John My life as soon I do defy thee
France

Arthur of Bretagne, yield thee to my hand
And out of my dear love I'll give thee more
Than e'er the coward hand of France can win
Submit thee boy

Eli Come to thy grandam child

Const Do child go to it grandam child 160

Give grandam kingdom and it grandam will
Give it a plum a cherry and a fig

There's a good grandam

Arth Good my mother peace!

I would that I were low laid in my grave

I am not worth this coil that's made for me

Eli His mother shames him so poor boy, he
weeps

Const Now shame upon you whether she does
or no!

His grandam's wrongs, and not his mother's
shames,

Draws those heaven moving pearls from his poor
eyes,

Which heaven shall take in nature of a fee 170

Ay with these crystal beads heaven shall be
bribed

To do him justice and revenge on you

Eli Thou monstrous slanderer of heaven and
earth!

Const Thou monstrous injurer of heaven and
earth!

Call not me slanderer thou and thine usurp
The dominations royalties and rights

Of this oppressed boy this is thy eld st son's son,
Infortunate in nothing but in thee
Thy sins are visited in this poor child,
The canon of the law is laid on him, 180
Being but the second generation
Removed from thy sin conceiving womb

K John Bedlam, have done

Const I have but this to say,

That he is not only plagued for her sin,
But God hath made her sin and her the plague
On this removed issue plagued for her
And with her plague her sin his injury,
Her injury the beadle to her sin

All punish'd in the person of this child
And all for her a plague upon her! 190

Eli Thou unadvised scold I can produce

A will that bars the title of thy son

Const Ay, who doubts that? a will! a wicked
will

A woman's will, a canker'd grandam's will!

K Phi Peace lady! pause, or be more tem-
perate

It ill becometh this presence to cry aim

To these ill tuned repetitions

Some trumpet summon hither to the walls

These men of Angiers let us hear them speak

Whose title they admit, Arthur's or John's 200

Trumpet sounds Enter a citizen upon
the walls attended

Cit Who is it that hath warn'd us to the walls?

K Phi 'Tis France for England

K John

England for itself

You men of Angiers and my loving subjects—

K Phi You loving men of Angiers Arthur's

subjects,

Our trumpet call'd you to this gentle parle—

K John For our advantage, therefore hear us
first

These flags of France that are advanced here

Before the eye and prospect of your town

Have hither march'd to your endamagement

The cannons have their bowels full of wrath 210

And ready mounted are they to spit forth

Their iron indignation gainst your walls

All preparation for a bloody siege

And merciless proceeding by these French

Confronts your city's eyes your winking gates,

And but for our approach those sleeping stones,

That as a waist doth girdle you about,

By the compulsion of their ordinance

By this time from their fixed beds of lime 220

Had been dishabited and wide havoc made

For bloody power to rush upon your peace

But on the sight of us your lawful king

Who painfully with much expedient march

Have brought a countercheck before your gates
To save unscratch'd your city's threatened
cheeks

Behold the French amazed vouchsafe a parole
And no vain tread of bullets wrapp'd in fire
To make a shaking fever in your walls
They shoot but calm words folded up in smoke
To make a faithless error in your ears 230
Which trust accordingly kind citizens
And let us in your king whose labour'd spirits
Forwearing in this action of swift speed
Crave harbourage within your city walls

K. Phi. When I have said make answer to us
both

So in this right hand whose protection
Is most divinely vow'd upon the right
Of him it holds stands young Plantagenet
Son to the elder brother of this man
And king o'er him and all that he enjoys 240
For this down-trodden equity we tread
In warlike march these greens before your town,
Being no further enemy to you
Than the constraint of hospitable zeal
In the relief of this oppressed child

Religiously provokes. Be pleased then
To pay that duty which you truly owe
To him that owes it namely this young prince
And then our arms like to a muzzled bear
Save in aspect hath all offence seal'd up 250
Our cannons' malice vainly shall be spent
Against the invulnerable clouds of heaven
And with a blessed and unmix'd retire
With unhack'd swords and helmets all unbruised
We'll beat home that lusty blood again
Which here we came to spout against you to win
And leave your children wives and you in peace
But if you fondly pass our proffer'd offer

'Tis not the roundure of your old faced walls
Can hide you from our messengers of war 260
Though all these English and their discipline
Were harbour'd in their rude circumference
Then tell us shall your city call us lord
In that behalf which we have challenged it?
Or shall we give the signal to our ram
And stalk in blood to our possession?

Cit. In brief we are the King of England's subjects

For him, and in his right we hold this town

K. John. Acknowledge then the King and let
me in

Cit. That can we not but he that proves the
King 270

To him will we prove loyal till that time
Have we ram'd up our gates against the world

K. John. Doth not the crown of England prove
the King?

And if not that I bring you witnesses
Twice fifteen thousand hearts of England's
breed—

Bast. Bastards and else

K. John. To verify our title with their lives

K. Phi. As many and as well born bloods as
those—

Bast. Some bastards too

K. Phi. Stand in his face to contradict his claim

Cit. Till you compound whose right is worth
est 281

We for the worthiest hold the right from both

K. John. Then God forgive the sin of all those
souls

That to their everlasting residence
Before the dew of evening fall shall fleet
In dreadful trial of our kingdom's king!

K. Phi. Amen amen! Mount chevaliers' to
arms!

Bast. Saint George that swinged the dragon,
and ever since

Sits on his horse back at mine hostess door
Teach us some fence! (*To ALSTRIA*) Sirrah were
I at home 290

At your den sirrah with your lioness

I would set an ox head to your lion's hide

And make a monster of you

Aust. Peace! no more

Bast. O tremble for you hear the lion roar

K. John. Up higher to the plain where we'll
set forth

In best appointment all our regiments

Bast. Speed then, to take advantage of the field

K. Phi. It shall be so and at the other hill

Command the rest to stand God and our right!
[*Exeunt*]

*Here after excursions enter the HERALD OF
FRANCE, with trumpets to the gates*

F. Her. You men of Angiers open wide your
gates 300

And let young Arthur Duke of Bretagne in
Who by the hand of France this day hath made
Much work for tears in many an English mother
Whose sons lie scattered on the bleeding ground
Many a widow's husband grovelling lies
Coldly embracing the discolour'd earth
And victory with little loss doth play
Upon the dancing banners of the French
Who are at hand triumphantly display'd,
To enter conquerors and to proclaim 310
Arthur of Bretagne England's king and yours

Enter ENGLISH HERALD with trumpet

E. Her. Rejoice you men of Angiers ring your
bells

King John your king and England's, doth approach
 Commander of this hot malicious day
 Their armours that march'd hence so silver-bright,
 Hither return all gilt with Frenchmen's blood,
 There stuck no plume in any English crest
 That is removed by a staff of France,
 Our colours do return in those same hands
 That did display them when we first march'd forth,

And, like a jolly troop of huntsmen come 321
 Our lusty English, all with purpled hands
 Dyed in the dying slaughter of their foes
 Open your gates and give the victors way
 Cit Heralds from off our towers we might behold,

From first to last the onset and retire
 Of both your armies, whose equality
 By our best eyes cannot be censured
 Blood hath bought blood and blows have answered blows
 Strength match'd with strength, and power confronted power 330

Both are alike, and both alike we like
 One must prove greatest while they weigh so even

We hold our town for neither, yet for both

Re-enter the two kings with their powers, severally

K John France hast thou yet more blood to cast away?

Say, shall the current of our right run on?
 Whose passage vex'd with thy impediment,
 Shall leave his native channel and overswell
 With course disturb'd even thy confining shores
 Unless thou let his silver water keep
 A peaceful progress to the ocean 340

K Phi England thou hast not saved one drop of blood,

In this hot trial more than we of France,
 Rather lost more And by this hand I swear
 That sways the earth this climate overlooks
 Before we will lay down our just borne arms
 We'll put thee down 'gainst whom these arms
 we bear

Or add a royal number to the dead
 Gracing the scroll that tells of this war's loss
 With slaughter coupled to the name of kings
 Bast Ha majesty! how high thy glory towers,
 When the rich blood of kings is set on fire! 351
 O now doth Death line his dead chaps with steel,
 The sword of soldiers are his teeth his fangs,
 And now he feasts mousing the flesh of men
 In undetermined differences of kings

Why stand these royal fronts amazed thus?
 Cry, "havoc!" kings, back to the stained field,
 You equal potents, fiery kindled spirits!
 Then let confusion of one part confirm
 The other's peace, till then blows, blood, and death! 360

K John Whose party do the townsmen yet admit?

K Phi Speak citizens, for England, who's your king?

Cit The King of England when we know the King

K Phi Know him in us, that here hold up his right

K John In us that are our own great deputy,
 And bear possession of our person here
 Lord of our presence, Angiers, and of you

Cit A greater power than we denies all this,
 And till it be undoubted we do lock
 Our former scruple in our strong barr'd gates,
 King'd of our fears, until our fears, resolved 371
 Be by some certain king purged and deposed

Bast By heaven, these scroyles of Angiers flout you kings,

And stand securely on their battlements
 As in a theatre whence they gape and point
 At your industrious scenes and acts of death
 Your royal presences be ruled by me
 Do like the mutines of Jerusalem
 Be friends awhile and both conjointly bend
 Your sharpest deeds of malice on this town 380
 By east and west let France and England mount
 Their battering cannon charged to the mouths,
 Till their soul-fearing clamours have brawl'd down

The flinty ribs of this contemptuous city
 I'd play incessantly upon these jades,
 Even till unfenced desolation
 Leave them as naked as the vulgar air
 That done discover your united strengths
 And part your mingled colours once again
 Turn face to face and bloody point to point, 390
 Then in a moment Fortune shall cull forth
 Out of one side her happy minion,
 To whom in favour she shall give the day,
 And kiss him with a glorious victory
 How like you this old counsel mighty states?
 Smacks it not something of the policy?

K John Now by the sky that hangs above our heads

I like it well France shall we knit our powers
 And lay thus Angiers even with the ground
 Then after fight who shall be king of it?

Bast An if thou hast the mettle of a king
 Being wrong'd as we are by this peevish town
 Turn thou the mouth of thy artillery,

And being rich my virtue then shall be
To say there is no vice but beggary
Since kings break faith upon Commodity
Gain be my lord for I will worship thee [Exit

ACT III

SCENE I *The French hear, & put it on*

Enter CONSTANCE ARTHUR and SALISBURY

Const. Gone to be married! gone to swear a
peace!

False blood to false blood join'd! gone to be
friends!

Shall Levis have Blanch and Blanch those prov-
inces?

It is not so thou hast misspoke misheard
Be well advised tell us thy tale again

It cannot be thou dost but say tis so
I trust I may not trust thee for thy word

Is but the vain breath of a common man

Believe me I do not believe thee man

I have a king's oath to the contrary, 10

Thou shalt be punish'd for thus frightening me,

For I am sick and capable of fears

Oppress'd with wrongs and therefore full of
fears

A widow husbandless subject to fears

A woman naturally born to fears

And though thou now confess thou didst but jest

With my vex'd spirits I cannot take a truce

But they will quake and tremble all this day

What dost thou mean by shaking of thy head?

Why dost thou look so sadly on my son? 20

What means that hand upon that breast of thine?

Why holds thine eye that lamentable rheum

Like a proud rier peering o'er his bounds?

Be these sad signs confirmers of thy ords?

Then speak again not all thy former tale

But this one word whether thy tale be true

Sal. As true as I believe you think them false

That give you cause to prove my say my true

Const. O if thou teach me to believe this sorrow

Teach thou this sorrow how to make me die, 30

And let belief and life encounter so

As doth the fury of two desperate men

Which in the very meeting fall and die

Levis arry Blanch O! then where art thou?

France friend with England, what becomes of
me?

Fell woe be gone I cannot brook thy sight

This news hath made thee a more truly man

Sal. What other harm have I good lady done

Put spoke the harm that is by others done?

Const. Which harm within itself so heinous is

As it makes harmful all that speak of it 41

Art! I do beseech you, madam be content

Const. If thou that bidst me be content wert
grim,

Ugly and slanderous to thy mother's womb

Full of displeasing blots and sightless stains

Lame foolish crooked swart prodigious

Patch'd with foul moles and eye-offending marks

I would not care I then would be content

For then I should not love thee no nor thou

Become thy great birth nor deserve a crown 50

But thou art fair and at thy birth dear boy

Nature and Fortune join'd to make thee great

Of Nature's gifts thou mayst with lilies boast

And with the half-blown rose But Fortune O

She is corrupted changed and won from thee

She adulterates hourly with thine uncle John

And with her golden hand hath pluck'd on France

To tread down fair respect of sovereignty

And made his majesty the bawd to theirs

France is a bawd to Fortune and King John 60

That strumpet Fortune that usurping John!

Tell me thou fellow is not France forsworn?

Envenom him with words or get thee gone

And leave those woes alone which I alone

Am bound to underbear

Sal. Pardon me madam

I may not go without you to the kings

Const. Thou mayst thou shalt I will not go

with thee

I will instruct my sorrows to be proud

For grief is proud and makes his owner stoop

To me and to the state of my great grief 70

Let kings assemble for my grief's to great

That no supporter but the huge firm earth

Can hold it up here I and sorrows sit

Here is my throne bid kings come bow to it

Sits herself on the ground

Enter KING JOHN KING PHILIP LEWIS BLANCH

ELINOR the BASTARD AUSTRIA and Attendants

A. Phi. Tis true fair daughter and this blessed

day

Ever in France shall be kept festival

To solemnize this day the glorious sun

Seas in his course and plays the alchemist

Turning with splendor of his precious eye

The meagre cloddy earth to glittering gold 80

The yearly course that brings this day about

Shall never see it but a holiday

Const. A wicked day and not a holy day!

Putting

What hath this day deserved? what hath it done,

That in golden letters should be set

Among the high tides in the calendar?

Day rather turn this day out of the week

Tis day of shame oppression perjury

Or if it must stand still let waves with child

Pray that their burthens may not fall this day 90
 Lest that their hopes prodigiously be cross d
 But on this day let seamen fear no wreck,
 No bargains break that are not this day made
 This day, all things begun come to ill end,
 Yea, faith itself to hollow falsehood change!

K Phi By heaven, lady, you shall have no cause

To curse the fair proceedings of this day
 Have I not pawn'd to you my majesty?

Const You have beguiled me with a counterfeited
 Resembling majesty, which, being touch'd and tried 100

Proves valueless you are forsworn forsworn,
 You came in arms to spill mine enemies blood
 But now in arms you strengthen it with yours
 The grappling vigour and rough frown of war
 Is cold in amity and painted peace
 And our oppression hath made up this league
 Arm, arm, you heavens, against these perjured kings!

A widow cries be husband to me heavens!
 Let not the hours of this ungodly day
 Wear out the day in peace but ere sunset, 110
 Set armed discord twixt these perjured kings!
 Hear me, O hear me!

At st Lady Constance peace!

Const War! war! no peace! peace is to me a war

O Lymoges! O Austria! thou dost shame
 That bloody spoul thou slave thou wretch, thou coward!

Thou little valiant great in villainy!
 Thou ever strong upon the stronger side!
 Thou Fortune's champion that dost never fight
 But when her humorous ladyship is by
 To teach thee safety! thou art perjured too 120
 And soothest up greatness What a fool art thou,
 A ramping fool to brag and stamp and swear
 Upon my party! Thou cold blooded slave,
 Hast thou not spoke like thunder on my side
 Been sworn my soldier bidding me depend
 Upon thy stars, thy fortune and thy strength
 And dost thou now fall over to my foes?

Thou wear a lion's hide! doff it for shame
 And hang a calf's skin on those recreant limbs
Aust O that a man should speak those words to me! 130

But And hang a calf's skin on those recreant limbs

Aust Thou darest not say so, villain, for thy life

But And hang a calf's skin on those recreant limbs

K John We like not this, thou dost forget thyself

Enter PANDULPH

K Phi Here comes the holy legate of the Pope

Pand Hail, you anointed deputies of heaven!
 To thee King John my holy errand is
 I Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal
 And from Pope Innocent the legate here,
 Do in his name religiously demand 140
 Why thou against the church our holy mother,
 So wilfully dost spurn, and force perforce
 Keep Stephen Langton chosen Archbishop
 Of Canterbury, from that holy see?
 This, in our foresaid Holy Father's name,
 Pope Innocent, I do demand of thee

K John What earthly name to interrogatories
 Can task the free breath of a sacred king?
 Thou canst not, Cardinal devise a name
 So slight, unworthy and ridiculous 150
 To charge me to an answer as the Pope
 Tell him this tale and from the mouth of England
 Add thus much more that no Italian priest
 Shall tithe or toll in our dominions
 But as we under heaven are supreme head,
 So under Him that great supremacy
 Where we do reign, we will alone uphold,
 Without the assistance of a mortal hand
 So tell the Pope all reverence set apart
 To him and his usurp'd authority 160

K Phi Brother of England, you blaspheme in this

K John Though you and all the kings of Christendom

Are led so grossly by this meddling priest,
 Dreading the curse that money may buy out,
 And by the merit of vile gold dross dust,
 Purchase corrupted pardon of a man
 Who in that sale sells pardon from himself
 Though you and all the rest so grossly led
 This juggling witchcraft with revenue cherish,
 Yet I alone alone do me oppose 170

Against the Pope and count his friends my foes
Pand Then by the lawful power that I have,
 Thou shalt stand cursed and excommunicate
 And blessed shall he be that doth revolt
 From his allegiance to an heretic
 And meritorious shall that hand be call'd
 Canonized and worshipp'd as a saint
 That takes away by any secret course
 Thy hateful life

Const O lawful let it be
 That I have room with Rome to curse awhile! 180
 Good father Cardinal cry thou amen
 To my keen curses for without my wrong
 There is no tongue hath power to curse him right

Pand There's law and warrant lady for my curse

Const And for mine too when law can do no right

Let it be, law ful that law bar no wrong
Law cannot give my child his kingdom here
For he that holds his kingdom holds the law
Therefore since law itself is perfect wrong
How can the law forbid my tongue to curse?

Lund Philip of France on peril of a curse
Let go the hand of that arch heretic

And raise the power of France upon his head
Unless he do submit himself to Rome

Eli Look st thou pale France? do not let go thy hand

Const Look to that devil lest that France repent

And by disjoining hands hell lose a soul

Aust King Philip listen to the Cardinal

Bast And hang a calf's skin on his recreant limbs

Aust Well ruffian, I must pocket up these wrongs 200

Because—

Bast Your breeches best may carry them

A. John Philip what say st thou to the Cardinal?

Const What should he say but as the Cardinal?

Lew Bethink you father for the difference

Is purchase of a heavy curse from Rome

Or the light loss of England for a friend

Forego the easier

Blanch That's the curse of Rome

Const O Lewis stand fast! the devil tempts thee here

In likeness of a new untrimmed bride

Blanch The Lady Constance speaks not from her faith 210

But from her need

Const O if thou grant my need

Which only lies but by the death of faith

That need must needs infer this principle

That faith would live again by death of need

O then, tread down my need, and faith mounts up

Keep my need up and faith is trodden down

A. John The King is moved and answers not to this

Const O be removed from him and answer well

A. Do so King Philip hang no more in doubt

Bast I have nothing but a calf's skin most sweet lord 220

A. Phil I am perplex'd and know not what to say

Pand What canst thou say but will perplex thee more

If thou stand excommunicate and cursed?

A. Phil Good reverend father make my person yours

And tell me how you would bestow yourself
This royal hand and mine are newly knit
And the conjunction of our inward souls
Married in league coupled and link'd together
With all religious strength of sacred vows
The latest breath that gave the sound of words 230
Was deep-sworn faith peace amity true love
Between our kingdoms and our royal selves
And even before this truce but new before,
No longer than we well could wash our hands
To clap this royal bargain up of peace
Heaven know they were besmeared and over-
stain'd

With slaughter's pencil where revenge did paint
The fearful difference of incensed kings
And shall these hands so lately purged of blood
So newly join'd in love so strong in both 240
Unyoke this seizure and this kind regret?
Play fast and loose with faith? jest with
heaven

Make such unconstant children of ourselves
As now again to snatch our palm from palm
Unswear faith sworn and on the marriage bed
Of smiling peace to march a bloody host
And make a riot on the gentle brow
Of true sincerity? O holy sir
My reverend father let it not be so!
Out of your grace devise ordain, unpose 250
Some gentle order and then we shall be blest
To do your pleasure and continue friends

Pand All form is formless order orderless
Save what is opposite to England's love
Therefore to arms! be champion of our church
Or let the church our mother breathe her curse
A mother a curse on her revolting son
France thou mayst hold a serpent by the tongue
A chafed lion by the mortal paw
A fasting tiger after by the tooth 260
Than keep in peace that hand which thou dost
hold

A. John I may disjoin my hand but not my faith

Pand So makest thou faith an enemy in faith
And like a civil war set st oath to oath
Thy tongue against thy tongue O let thy vow
First made to heaven, first be to heaven per-
form'd

That is to be the champion of our church!
What's next thou swear'st in sworn against thyself

And may not be performed by thyself,
 For that which thou hast sworn to do amiss . . . 270
 Is not amiss when it is truly done,
 And being not done where doing tends to ill,
 The truth is then most done not doing it
 The better act of purposes mistook
 Is to mistake again, though indirect,
 Yet indirection thereby grows direct,
 And falsehood falsehood cures as fire cools fire
 Within the scorched veins of one new burn'd
 It is religion that doth make vows kept
 But thou hast sworn against religion . . . 280
 By what thou swearst against the thing thou
 swearst,

And makest an oath the surety for thy truth
 Against an oath the truth thou art unsure
 To swear, swears only not to be forsworn,
 Else what a mockery should it be to swear!
 But thou dost swear only to be forsworn,
 And most forsworn, to keep what thou dost
 swear

Therefore thy later vows against thy first
 Is in thy self rebellion to thyself
 And better conquest never canst thou make . . . 290
 Than arm thy constant and thy nobler parts
 Against these giddy loose suggestions
 Upon which better part our prayers come in,
 If thou vouchsafe them But if not, then know
 The peril of our curses light on thee
 So heavy as thou shalt not shake them off
 But in despair die under their black weight
Aust Rebellion, flat rebellion!

Bast Will't not be?
 Will not a calf's skin stop that mouth of thine?
Lew Father, to arms!
Blanch Upon thy wedding day? . . . 300
 Against the blood that thou hast married?
 What shall our feast be kept with slaughter'd
 men?

Shall braying trumpets and loud churlish drums,
 Clamours of hell be measures to our pomp?
 O husband hear me! ay, alack, how new
 Is husband in my mouth! even for that name,
 Which till this time my tongue did never pro-
 nounce

Upon my knee I beg go not to arms
 Against mine uncle
Const O upon my knee,
 Made hard with kneeling I do pray to thee, . . . 310
 Thou virtuous Dauphin alter not the doom
 Forethought by heaven!
Blanch Now shall I see thy love what mo-
 tive may

Be stronger with thee than the name of wife?
Const That which upholdeth him that thee
 upholds,

His honour O, thine honour, Lewis, thine
 honour!

Lew I muse your Majesty doth seem so cold,
 When such profound respects do pull you on
Pand I will denounce a curse upon his head
K Phil Thou shalt not need England I will fall
 from thee . . . 3-0

Const O fair return of banish'd majesty!
Eli O foul revolt of French inconstancy!
K John France thou shalt rue this hour within
 this hour

Bast Old Time the clock setter that bald sex-
 ton Time

Is it as he will? well then, France shall rue
Blanch The sun so ercast with blood fair day,
 adieu!

Which is the side that I must go withal?
 I am with both each army hath a hand,
 And in their rage I having hold of both,
 They whirl asunder and dismember me . . . 330
 Husband, I cannot pray that thou mayst win
 Uncle, I needs must pray that thou mayst
 lose

Father, I may not wish the fortune thine
 Grandam I will not wish thy wishes thrive
 Whoever wins on that side shall I lose
 Assured loss before the match be play'd

Lew Lady, with me, with me thy fortune lies
Blanch There where my fortune lives there my
 life dies

K John Cousin go draw our puissance to-
 gether [Exit BASTARD]

France I am burn'd up with inflaming wrath . . . 340
 A rage whose heat hath this condition
 That nothing can allay nothing but blood
 The blood and dearest valued blood of France
K Phil Thy rage shall burn thee up and thou
 shalt turn

To ashes ere our blood shall quench that fire
 Look to thyself thou art in jeopardy
K John No more than he that threatens To arms
 let's hit! [Exeunt]

SCENE II *The same plains near Angiers*
Alarums, excursions Enter the BASTARD with
AUSTRIA'S head

Bast Now by my life this day grows won-
 drous hot
 Some airy devil hovers in the sky
 And pours down mischief Austria's head lie
 there
 While Philip breathes

Enter KING JOHN ARTHUR and HUBERT

K John Hubert keep this boy Philip make
 up

My mother is assailed in our tent

And to en I fear

Bast My lord I rescued her

Her Highness is in safety fear you not

But on my hege for very little pains

Will bring this labour to an happy end [*Exeunt*]

SCENE III *The same*

*Alarums excursions retreat Enter KING JOHN
ELINOR ARTHUR, the BASTARD HUBERT and
Lords*

A John [To ELINOR] So shall it be your Grace
shall stay behind

So strongly guarded [To ARTHUR] Cousin look
not sad

Thy grandam loves thee and thy uncle will

As dear be to thee as thy father was

Arth O this will make my mother die with
grief

A John [To the BASTARD] Cousin away for
Ln land! haste before

And ere our comin^g see thou shake the bags

Of hoarding^g abbots imprisoned angels

Set at liberty the fat ribs of peace

Must by the hungry now be fed upon 10

Use our commission in his utmost force

Bast Bell book and candle shall not drive me
back

When gold and silver beckons me to come on

I leave your highness Grandam I will pray

If ever I remember to be holy

For your fair safety so I kiss your hand

Els Farewell gentle cousin

A John Coz, farewell [*Exit BASTARD*]

Els Come hither little kinsman hark a word

A John Come hither Hubert O my gentle
Hubert

We owe thee much within this wall of flesh 20

There is a soul counts thee her creditor

And with advantage means to pay thy love

And, my good friend thy voluntary oath

Lives in this bosom dearly cherished

Give me thy hand I had a thing to say

Put I will fit it with some better time

By heaven, Hubert I am almost ashamed

To say what good respect I have of thee

Hub I am much bounden to your Majesty

A John Good friend thou hast no cause to say
so yet 30

But thou shalt have and creep time ne'er so slow

Yet it shall come for me to do thee good

I had a thing to say but let it go

The sun is in the heaven, and the proud day

Attended with the pleasures of the world

Is all too wanton and too full of gawds

To give me audience if the midnight bell

Did with his iron tongue and brazen mouth

Sound on into the drowsy race of night

If this same were a churchyard where we stand

And thou possessed with a thousand wrongs 41

Or if that surly spirit melancholy

Had baked thy blood and made it heavy thick

Which else runs tickling up and down the veins

Malting that idiot laughter keep men's eyes

And strain their cheeks to idle merriment

A passion hateful to my purposes

Or if that thou couldst see me without eyes

Hear me without thine ears and make reply

Without a tongue, using conceit alone 50

Without eyes ears and harmful sound of words

Then in despite of brooded watchful day

I would into thy bosom pour my thoughts

But ah I will not yet I love thee well

And by my troth I think thou lovest me well

Hub So well that what you bid me undertake

Though that my death were adjunct to my act

By heaven I would do it

A John Do not I know thou wouldst?

Good Hubert Hubert Hubert throw thine eye

On yon young boy I'll tell thee what my
friend 60

He is a very serpent in my way

And wheresoe'er this foot of mine doth tread

He lies before me dost thou understand me?

Thou art his keeper

Hub And I'll keep him so

That he shall not offend your Majesty

A John Death

Hub My lord?

A John A grave

Hub He shall not live

A John Enough

I could be merry now Hubert I love thee

Well I'll not say what I intend for thee

Remember Madam fare you well

I'll send those powers over to your Majesty 70

Els My blessing go with thee!

A John For England cousin go

Hubert shall be your man attend on you

With all true duty On to ward Calais ho!
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *The same the French King's tent*

*Enter KING PHILIP LEWIS PANDULPH and At
tendants*

A Phi So by a roaring tempest on the flood

A whole armada of convicted sail

Is scatter'd and disjointed from fellowship

Land! Courage and comfort! all shall yet go
well

A Phi What can go well when we have run
so ill?

Are we not beaten? Is not Angiers lost?
 Arthur ta'en prisoner? divers dear friends slain?
 And bloody England into England gone
 O'erbearing interruption, spite of France?
Lew What he hath won that hath he forti-
 fied

10

So hot a speed with such advice disposed,
 Such temperate order in so fierce a cause,
 Doth want example who hath read or heard
 Of any kindred action like to this?

K. Phi. Well could I bear that England had this
 praise,
 So we could find some pattern of our shame

Enter CONSTANCE

Look who comes here! a grave unto a soul,
 Holding the eternal spirit against her will,
 In the vile prison of afflicted breath
 I prithee lady, go away with me

20

Const. Lo now! now see the issue of your peace
K. Phi. Patience, good lady! comfort gentle
 Constance!

Const. No, I defy all counsel, all redress,
 But that which ends all counsel, true redress,
 Death, death, O amiable lovely death!
 Thou odoriferous stench! sound rottenness!
 Arise forth from the couch of lasting night,
 Thou hate and terror to prosperity
 And I will kiss thy detestable bones
 And put my eyeballs in thy vaulty brows
 And ring these fingers with thy household worms
 And stop this gap of breath with fulsome dust
 And be a carrion monster like thyself
 Come grin on me, and I will think thou smilest
 And buss thee as thy wife Misery's love,
 O, come to me!

30

K. Phi. O fair affliction peace!
Const. No no I will not having breath to cry
 O, that my tongue were in the thunder's mouth!
 Then with a passion would I shake the world
 And rouse from sleep that fell anatomy
 Which cannot hear a lady's feeble voice,
 Which scorns a modern invocation

40

Pand. Lady you utter madness, and not sorrow

Const. Thou art not holy to belie me so,
 I am not mad this hair I tear is mine
 My name is Constance I was Geoffrey's wife,
 Young Arthur is my son and he is lost
 I am not mad I would to heaven I were!
 For then 'tis like I should forget my self
 O, if I could, what grief should I forget!
 Preach some philosophy to make me mad,
 And thou shalt be canonized Cardinal
 For being not mad but sensible of grief,
 My reasonable part produces reason
 How I may be deliver'd of these woes,

50

And teaches me to kill or hang myself
 If I were mad I should forget my son,
 Or madly think a babe of clouts were he
 I am not mad, too well too well I feel
 The different plague of each calamity
K. Phi. Bind up those tresses O, what love
 I note

60

In the fair multitude of those her hairs!
 Where but by chance a silver drop hath fallen,
 Even to that drop ten thousand wily friends
 Do glue themselves in sociable grief
 Like true inseparable faithful loves,
 Sticking together in calamity

Const. To England if you will,
K. Phi. Bind up your hairs
Const. Yes that I will, and wherefore will I
 do it?

I tore them from their bonds and cried aloud
 "O that these hands could so redeem my son
 As they have given these hairs their liberty!"
 But now I envy at their liberty,
 And will again commit them to their bonds,
 Because my poor child is a prisoner
 And father Cardinal, I have heard you say
 That we shall see and know our friends in
 heaven

70

If that be true, I shall see my boy again,
 For since the birth of Cain the first male child
 To him that did but yesterday suspire,
 There was not such a gracious creature born
 But now will canker sorrow eat my bud
 And chase the native beauty from his cheek
 And he will look as hollow as a ghost,
 As dim and meagre as an ague's fit
 And so he'll die and, rising so again
 When I shall meet him in the court of heaven
 I shall not know him therefore never never
 Must I behold my pretty Arthur more

80

Pand. You hold too heinous a respect of grief

90

Const. He talks to me that never had a son
K. Phi. You are as fond of grief as of your
 child

Const. Grief fills the room up of my absent
 child

Lies in his bed, walks up and down with me,
 Puts on his pretty looks, repeats his words,
 Remembers me of all his gracious parts
 Stuffs out his vacant garments with his form,
 Then have I reason to be fond of grief?
 Fare you well had you such a loss as I
 I could give better comfort than you do
 I will not keep this form upon my head [tearing
 her hair]

100

When there is such disorder in my wit
 O Lord! my boy, my Arthur my fair son!
 My life, my joy my food, my all the world!

My widow-comfort and my sorrows cure!

[Exit

A *Phil* I fear some outrage and I'll follow her

[Exit

Lew There's nothing in this world can make me joy

Life is as tedious as a twice told tale

Exting the dull ear of a drowsy man

And bitter shame hath spoil'd the sweet world's taste, 110

That it yields nought but shame and bitterness

Pam Before the curing of a strong disease

Even in the instant of repair and health

The fit is strongest evils that take leave

On their departure most of all show evil

What have you lost by losing of this day?

Lew All days of glory, joy, and happiness

Pam If you have won it, certainly you had

No no, when Fortune means to men most good

She looks upon them with a threatening eye 120

'Tis strange to think how much King John hath lost

In this which he accounts so clearly won

Are not you grieved that Arthur is his prisoner?

Lew As heartily as he is glad he hath him

Pam Your mind is all as youthful as your blood

Now hear me speak with a prophetic spirit

For even the breath of what I mean to speak

Shall blow each dust, each straw, each little rub

Out of the path which shall directly lead

This foot to England's throne, and therefore mark

John hath seized Arthur, and it cannot be 131

That whiles warm life plays in that infant's veins

The misplaced John should entertain an hour

One minute, nay, one quick breath of rest

A scepter snatch'd with an unruly hand

Must be as boisterously maintain'd as gain'd

And he that stands upon a slippery place

Makes nice of no vile hold to stay him up

That John may stand, then Arthur needs must fall

So be it, for it cannot be but so 140

Lew But what shall I gain by young Arthur's fall?

Lant You, in the right of Lady Blanch, your wife

May then make all the claim that Arthur did

Lew And love it, life and all, as Arthur did

Pam How green you are and fresh in this old world

John lays your plots, if e'er times conspire with you

For he that steeps his safety in true blood

Shall find but bloody safety, and untrue

This act so evilly born shall cool the hearts

Of all his people and freeze up their zeal 150

That none so small advantage shall step forth

To check his reign, but they will cherish it

No natural exhalation in the sky

No scope of nature, no distemper'd day

No common wind, no customary event

But they will pluck away his natural cause

And call them meteors, prodigies, and signs

Abortives, pre-ages, and tongues of heaven,

Plainly denouncing vengeance upon John

Lew May be he will not touch young Arthur's life 160

But hold himself safe in his prisonment

Pam O sir, when he shall hear of your approach

If that young Arthur be not gone already

Even at that news he dies, and then the hearts

Of all his people shall revolt from him

And kiss the lips of unacquainted change

And pick strong matter of revolt and wrath

Out of the bloody fingers' ends of John

Ne thinks I see this hurly all on foot

And O, what better matter breeds for you 170

Than I have named! The bastard Faulconbridge

Is now in England, ransacking the church

Offending charity, if but a dozen French

Were there in arms, they would be as a call

To train ten thousand English to their side

Or as a little snow tumbled about

Anon becomes a mountain, O noble Dauphin

Go with me to the king, 'tis wonderful

What may be wrought out of their discontent

Now that their souls are topfull of offence 180

For England go, I will whet on the king

Lew Strong reasons make strong actions

let us go

If you say ay, the king will not say no [Exeunt

ACT IV

SCENE I A room in a castle

Enter HUBERT and EXECUTIONERS

Hub Heat me these irons hot, and look thou stand

Within the arras, when I strike my foot

Upon the bosom of the ground, rush forth

And bind the boy which you shall find with me

Fast to the chair, be heedful, hence, and watch in I see I hope your warrant will bear out the deed

Hub Uncleanly scruples! fear not, you look to it [Exeunt EXECUTIONERS

Young lad, come forth, I have to say with you

*Enter ARTHUR**Arth* Good morrow, Hubert*Hub* Good morrow, little prince*Arth* As little prince having so great a title

To be more prince as may be You are sad

Hub Indeed, I have been merrier*Arth* *Mercy on me!*

Methinks no body should be sad but I

Yet, I remember, when I was in France

Young gentlemen would be as sad as night,

Only for wantonness By my christendom,

So I were out of prison and kept sheep

I should be as merry as the day is long,

And so I would be here but that I doubt

My uncle practises more harm to me

He is afraid of me and I of him

Is it my fault that I was Geoffrey's son?

No, indeed is it not, and I would to heaven

I were your son, so you would love me Hubert

Hub [*Aside*] If I talk to him, with his innocent
prate

He will avail me my mercy which lies dead

Therefore I will be sudden and dispatch

Arth Are you sick, Hubert? you look pale
to-day

In sooth I would you were a little sick

That I might sit all night and watch with you

I warrant I love you more than you do me

Hub [*Aside*] His words do take possession of
my bosomRead here, young Arthur [*Showing a paper*][*Aside*] How now foolish rheum!

Turning dispiteous torture out of door!

I must be brief, lest resolution drop

Out at mine eyes in tender womanish tears

Can you not read it? is it not fair writ?

Arth Too fairly, Hubert for so foul effect

Must you with hot irons burn out both mine eyes?

Hub Young boy, I must*Arth* And will you?*Hub* And I will*Arth* Have you the heart? When your head did
but ache,

I hit my handkercher about your brows

The best I had, a princess wrought it me,

And I did never ask it you again

And with my hand at midnight held your head,

And like the watchful minutes to the hour,

Still and anon cheered up the heavy time

Saying 'What lack you?' and 'Where lies your
grief?'

Or 'What good love may I perform for you?'

Many a poor man's son would have lien still

And never have spoke a loving word to you,

But you at your sick service had a prince

Nay you may think my love was crafty love

And call it cunning do an if you will

If heaven be pleased that you must use me ill

Why then you must Will you put out mine eyes?

These eyes that never did nor never shall

So much as frown on you

Hub I have sworn to do it,

And with hot irons must I burn them out

Arth Ah, none but in this iron age would do
it!

The iron of itself, though heat red hot,

Approaching near these eyes, would drink my
tears

And quench his fiery indignation

Even in the matter of mine innocence

Nay, after that, consume away in rust,

But for containing fire to harm mine eye

Are you more stubborn hard than hammer'd
iron?

An if an angel should have come to me

And told me Hubert should put out mine eyes,

I would not have believed him—no tongue but

Hubert's

Hub Come forth [*Stamps*]*Re-enter EXECUTIONERS with a cord, irons, &c*

Do as I bid you do

Arth O save me, Hubert, save me! my eyes
are out

Even with the fierce looks of these bloody men

Hub Give me the iron, I say, and bind him
here*Arth* Alas, what need you be so boisterous-
rough?

I will not struggle I will stand stone-still

For heaven sake Hubert let me not be bound!

Nay hear me Hubert drive these men away,

And I will sit as quiet as a lamb

I will not stir nor wince nor speak a word,

Nor look upon the iron angrily

Thrust but these men away and I'll forgive you

Whatever torment you do put me to

Hub Go stand within let me alone with him
ist *Exit* I am best pleased to be from such a
deed [*Exit EXECUTIONERS*]*Arth* Alas I then have chid away my friend!

He hath a stern look but a gentle heart

Let him come back that his compassion may

Give life to yours

Hub Come, boy prepare yourself*Arth* Is there no remedy?*Hub* None but to lose your eyes*Arth* O heaven that there were but a mote in
yours

A grain a dust a gnat a wandering hair

Any annoyance in that precious sense!

Then feeling what small things are boisterous
there

Your vile intent must needs seem horrible

Hub Is this your promise? go to hold your
tongue

Arth Hubert the utterance of a brace of
tongues

Must needs want pleading for a pair of eyes

Let me not hold my tongue let me not Hubert

Or Hubert if you will cut out my tongue 101

So I may keep mine eyes O spare mine eyes

Though to no use but still to look on you!

Lo by my troth the instrument is cold

And would not harm me

Hub I can heat it boy

Arth No in good sooth the fire is dead with
grief

Being create for comfort to be used

In undeseried extremes see else yourself

There is no malice in this burning coal

The breath of heaven hath blown his spirit
out 110

And strew I repentant ashes on his head

Hul But with my breath I can revive it boy

Arth An if you do you will but make it blush

And glow with shame of your proceeding s Ha
be!!

Nay it perchance will sparkle in your eyes

And like a dog that is compell'd to fight

Snatch at his master that doth tarre him on

All things that you should use to do me wrong

Deny their office only you do lack

That mercy which fierce fire and iron extends 120

Creatures of note for mercy lacking uses

Hul Well see to live I will not touch thine eye

For all the treasure that thine uncle owes

Yet am I sworn and I did purpose, boy

With this same very iron to burn them out

Arth O now you look like Hubert all this
while

You were d smous'd

Hub Peace no more Adieu

Your uncle must not know but you are dead

I'll fill these damned spies with false reports

And pretty child sleep doubtless an I secure 130

That Hubert for the wealth of all the world

Will not offend thee

Arth O heaven! I thank you Hubert

H b Silence no more go closely in with me

Much danger do I undergo for thee {*Exeunt*

SCENE II KING JOHN'S palace

Enter KING JOHN, PEYBROKE, SALISBURY and
a few Lords

A John Here once again we sit once again
crown'd

And looked upon I hope with cheerful eyes

Pem This once again but that your High
ness pleased

Was once superfluous you were crown'd before

And that high royalty was ne'er pluck'd off

The faiths of men ne'er stained with revolt

Free expectation troubled not the land

With any lon'd for change or better state

Sai Therefore to be possess'd with double
pomp

To guard a title that was rich before 10

To gild refined gold to paint the lily

To throw a perfume on the violet

To smooth the ice or add another hue

Unto the rainbow or with taper light

To seek the beauteous eye of heaven to garnish

Is wasteful and ridiculous excess

Pem But that your royal pleasure must be
done

This act is as an ancient tale new told

And in the last repeating troublesome

Being urg'd at a time unseasonable 20

Sai In this the antique and well noted face

Of plain old form is much disfigured

And like a shifted wind unto a sail

It makes the course of thoughts to fetch about

Startles and frights consideration,

Makes sound opinion sick and truth suspected

For putting on so new a fashion'd robe

Iem When workmen strive to do better than
well

They do confound their skill in covetousness

An oftentimes excusing of a fault 30

Doth make the fault the worse by the excuse

As patches set upon a little breach

Discredit more in hiding of the fault

Than did the fault before it was so patch'd

Sai To this effect before you were new

crown'd

We breathed our counsel but it pleased your
highness

To overbear it and we are all well pleased

Since all and every part of what we would

Doth make a stand at what your Highness will

A John Some reasons of this double corona
tion 40

I have possess'd you with and think them strong

And more more strong than lesser is my fear

I shall induce you with meantime but ask

What you would have reformation that is not well

And all shall you perceive who will inly

I will both hear and grant you your requests

Iem Then I as one that am the tongue of

these

To sound the purposes of all their hearts

Both for my self and them but chief of all

Your safety, for the which myself and them 50
 Bend their best studies heartily request
 The enfranchisement of Arthur, whose restraint
 Doth move the murmuring lips of discontent
 To break into this dangerous argument—
 If what in rest you have in right you hold,
 Why then your fears, which, as they say, attend
 The steps of wrong should move you to mew up
 Your tender kinsman and to choke his days
 With barbarous ignorance and deny his youth
 The rich advantage of good exercise? 60
 That the time ■ enemies may not have this
 To grace occasions let it be our suit
 That you have bid us ask his liberty,
 Which for our goods we do no further ask
 Than whereupon our weal on you depending,
 Counts it your weal he have his liberty

Enter HUBERT

K John Let it be so I do commit his youth
 To your direction Hubert what news with you?
 [*Taking him apart*]

Pem This is the man should do the bloody
 deed,
 He show'd his warrant to a friend of mine 70
 The image of a wicked heinous fault
 Lives in his eye that close aspect of his
 Does show the mood of a much troubled breast,
 And I do fearfully believe 'tis done
 What we so fear'd he had a charge to do
Sal The colour of the King doth come and go
 Between his purpose and his conscience
 Like heralds twixt two dreadful battles set
 His passion is so ripe, it needs must break
Pem And when it breaks, I fear will issue
 thence 80

The foul corruption of a sweet child's death
K John We cannot hold mortality's strong
 hand
 Good lords although my will to give is living,
 The suit which you demand is gone and dead
 He tells us Arthur is deceased to-night
Sal Indeed we fear'd his sickness was past cure
Pem Indeed we heard how near his death he
 was
 Before the child himself felt he was sick
 Thus must be answer'd either here or hence
K John Why do you bend such solemn brows
 on me? 90

Think you I bear the shears of destiny?
 Have I commandment on the pulse of life?
Sal It is apparent foul play and 'tis shame
 That greatness should so grossly offer it
 So thrive it in your game! and so, farewell
Pem Stay yet, Lord Salisbury, I'll go with
 thee,

And find the inheritance of this poor child,
 His little kingdom of a forced grave
 That blood which owed the breadth of all
 this isle, 99
 Three foot of it doth hold bad world the while!
 This must not be thus borne this will break out
 To all our sorrows, and ere long I doubt

[*Exeunt Lords*]

K John They burn in indignation I repent
 There is no sure foundation set on blood,
 No certain life achieved by others' death

Enter a MESSENGER

A fearful eye thou hast where is that blood
 That I have seen inhabit in those cheeks?
 So foul a sky clears not without a storm
 Pour down thy weather how goes all in France?
Mess From France to England Never such a
 power 110

For any foreign preparation
 Was levied in the body of a land
 The copy of your speed is learn'd by them
 For when you should be told they do prepare,
 The tidings come that they are all arrived
K John O where hath our intelligence been
 drunk?
 Where hath it slept? Where is my mother's care,
 That such an army could be drawn in France,
 And she not hear of it?

Mess My hege her ear
 Is stopp'd with dust, the first of April died 120
 Your noble mother and as I hear, my lord,
 The Lady Constance in a frenzy died
 Three days before but this from rumour's
 tongue

I tidly heard if true or false I know not
K John Withhold thy speed dreadful occa-
 sion!

O make a league with me till I have pleased
 My discontented peers! What! mother dead!
 How wildly then walks my estate in France!
 Under whose conduct came those powers of
 France

That thou for truth givest out are landed here?

Mess Under the Dauphin

K John Thou hast made me giddy 131
 With these ill tidings

Enter the BASTARD and PETER OF POMFREY

Now what says the world
 To your proceedings? do not seek to stuff
 My head with more ill news for it is full
Bast But if you be afraid to hear the worst
 Then let the worst unheard fall on your head
K John Bear with me cousin for I was
 amazed

Under the tide but now I breathe again
Aloft the flood and can give audience
To any tongue speak it of what it will 140

Bast How I have sped among the clergymen
The suns I have collected shall express
Put as I travell'd hither through the land
I find the people strangely fantasied
Possess'd with rumours full of idle dreams
Not knowing what they fear but full of fear
And here's a prophet that I brought with me
From forth the streets of Pomfret whom I found
With many hundreds treading on his heels
To whom he sung in rude harsh sounding
rhymes

That ere the next Ascension-day at noon 151
Your happiness should deliver up your crown

A John Thou idle dreamer wherefore didst
thou so?

Peter Foreknow in that the truth will fall out
so

A John Hubert away with him imprison him
And on that day at noon whereon he says
I shall yield up my crown let him be hang'd
Deliver him to safety and return
For I must use thee [*Exit HUBERT with PETER*]

O my gentle cousin

Hear thou the news abroad who are arriv'd?

Bast The French my lord men's mouths are
full of it 161

Besides I met Lord Bigot and Lord Salisbury
With eyes as red as new-enkindled fire
And others more going to seek the grave
Of Arthur whom they say is kill'd to-night
On your suggestion

A John Gentle kinsman, go

And thrust thyself into their companies
I have a way to win their loves again
Bring them before me

Bast I will seek them out

A John Nay but make haste the better foot
before 170

O let me have no subject enemies
When adverse foreigners affright my towns
With dreadful pomp of stout invasion
Be Mercury set feathers to thy heels
And fly like thou, he from them to me again

Bast The spirit of the time shall reach me
speed [*Exit*]

A John Speak like a sprightly noble gentle
man

Go after him for he perhaps shall need
Some messenger betwixt me and the peers
And be thou he

Mess With all my heart my liege 180

[*Exit*]

A John My mother dead!

He cries HUBERT

Hub My lord they say five moons were seen
to-night

Four fixed and the fifth did whirl about
The other four in wondrous motion

A John Five moons!

Hub Old men and beldams in the streets
Do prophesy upon it dangerously
Young Arthur's death is common in their mouths
And when they talk of him they shake their heads
And whisper one another in the ear
And he that speaks doth gripe the hearer's wrist
Whilst he that hears makes fearful action 191
With wrinkled brows with nods with rolling
eyes

I saw a smith stand with his hammer thus
The whilst his iron did on the anvil cool
With open mouth swallowing a tailor a new's
Who with his shears and measure in his hand
Standing on slippers which his nimble haste
Had falsely thrust upon contrary feet
Told of a many thousand warlike French
That were embarrail'd and rank'd in bent 200

Another lean unwash'd artificer
Cuts off his tale and talks of Arthur's death

A John Why seekst thou to possess me with
these fears?

Why urgest thou so oft young Arthur's death?
Thy hand hath murder'd him I had a mighty
cause

To wish him dead but thou hadst none to kill
him

Hub No had my lord! why did you not pro-
voke me?

A John It is the curse of kings to be attended
By slaves that take their humours for a warrant
To break within the bloody house of life 210
And on the winking of authority
To understand a law to know the meaning
Of dangerous majesty when perchance it frowns
More upon humour than advised respect

Hub Here is your hand and seal for what I
did

A John O when the last account twist
heaven and earth

Is to be made then shall this hand and seal
Witness against us to damnation!

How oft the sight of means to do ill deeds
Make deeds ill done! I hadst not thou been by
A fellow by the hand of nature mark'd 221
Quoted and sworn to do a deed of shame
This murder had not come into my mind
Put taking note of thy abhorred aspect
Finest thee fit for bloody villainy
Yet halde to be employ'd in danger

I faintly broke with thee of Arthur's death,
And thou to be endeared to a king,

Made it no conscience to destroy a prince

Hub My lord—

A. John Hadst thou but shook thy head or
made a pause

230

When I spake darkly what I purposed,
Or turn'd an eye of doubt upon my face,
As bid me tell my tale in express words,
Deep shame had struck me dumb made me
break off,

And those thy fears might have wrought fears in
me

But thou didst understand me by my signs

And didst in signs again parley with sin

Yea without stop, didst let thy heart consent

And consequently thy rude hand to act

240

The deed, which both our tongues held vile to
name

Out of my sight and never see me more!

My nobles leave me, and my state is braved,

Even at my gates, with ranks of foreign powers

Nay in the body of this fleshly land,

This kingdom thus confine of blood and breath

Hostility and civil tumult reigns

Between my conscience and my cousin's death

Hub Arm you against your other enemies,

I'll make a peace between your soul and you

250

Young Arthur is alive this hand of mine

Is yet a maiden and an innocent hand

Nor painted with the crimson spots of blood

Within this bosom never enter'd yet

The dreadful motion of a murderous thought,

And you have slander'd nature in my form,

Which, howsoever rude exteriorly,

Is yet the cover of a fairer mind

Than to be butcher of an innocent child

A. John Doth Arthur live? O haste thee to the
peers

260

Throw this report on their incensed rage,

And make them tame to their obedience!

Forgive the comment that my passion made

Upon thy feature for my rage was blind,

And foul imaginary eyes of blood

Presented thee more hideous than thou art

O answer not, but to my closet bring

The angry lords with all expedient haste

I conjure thee but slowly, run more fast

[*Exeunt*]SCENE III *Before the castle*

Enter ARTHUR on the walls

Arth The wall is high and yet will I leap
down

Good ground be pitiful and hurt me not!

There's few or none do know me if they did

This ship-boy's semblance hath disguised me
quite

I am afraid, and yet I'll venture it

If I get down and do not break my limbs,

I'll find a thousand shifts to get away

As good to die and go as die and stay

Leaps down

O me! my uncle's spirit is in these stones

Heaven take my soul, and England keep my

bones! [*Dies* 10

Enter PEMBROKE, SALISBURY and BIGOT

Sal Lords, I will meet him at Saint Edmunds-
bury

It is our safety and we must embrace

This gentle offer of the perilous time

Pem Who brought that letter from the Card-
inal?

Sal The Count Melun, a noble lord of France

Whose private with me of the Dauphin's love

Is much more general than these lines import

Big To-morrow morning let us meet him then

Sal Or rather then set forward for twill be

Two long days journey lords, or ere we meet 20

Enter the BASTARD

Bast Once more to-day well met, distemper'd
lords!

The King by me requests your presence straight

Sal The King hath dispossest'd himself of us

We will not line his thin bestained cloak

With our pure honours nor attend the foot

That leaves the print of blood where'er it walks

Return and tell him so we'll now the worst

Bast Where'er you think, good words I
think were best

Sal Our griefs and not our manners reason
now

29

Bast But there is little reason in your grief,

Therefore were reason you had manners now

Pem Sir sir impatience hath his privilege

Bast 'Tis true, to hurt his master no man else

Sal This is the prison What is he lies here?

Seeing ARTHUR

Pem O death made proud with pure and prince-
ly beauty!

The earth had not a hole to hide this deed

Sal Murder, as hitting what himself hath done,

Doth lay it open to urge on revenge

Big Or when he doom'd this beauty to a
grave,

Found it too precious princely for a grave 40

Sal Sir Richard what think you have you be-
held,

Or have you read or heard? or could you think?

Or do you almost think although you see

That you do see^d could thought without this
object

Form such another? This is the very top
The height the crest or crest unto the crest
Of murder & arms this is the bloodiest shame
The wildest savagery the vilest stroke
That ever wall eyed wrath or staring rage
Presented to the tears of soft remorse 50

Pem All murders past do stand excused in this
And thus so sole and so unmatchable
Shall give a holiness a purity

To the yet unbegotten sin of times
And prove a deadly bloodshed but a jest
Exampl'd by this heinous spectacle

Bast It is a damned and a bloody work
The graceless action of a heavy hand
If that it be the work of any hand

Sal If that it be the work of any hand¹ 60
We had a kind of light what would ensue
It is the shameful work of Hubert's hand
The practice and the purpose of the king
From whose obedience I forbid my soul
Kneeling before this ruin of sweet life
And breathing to his breathless excellence

The incense of a vow a holy vow
Never to taste the pleasures of the world
Never to be infected with delight
Nor conversant with ease and idleness 70
Till I have set a glory to this hand
By giving it the worship of revenge

Pem Our souls religiously confirm thy
Big } words

Enter HUBERT

Hub Lords I am hot with haste in seeking you
Arthur doth live the king hath sent for you

Sal O he is bold and blushes not at death
Avaunt thou hateful villain get thee gone!

Hub I am no villain

Sal Must I rob the law?

Draws his sword

Bast Your sword is bright sir put it up again

Sal Not till I sheathe it in a murderer's skin 80

Hub Stand back Lord Salisbury stand back I

say

By heaven I think my sword as sharp as yours

I would not have you lord forget yourself

Nor tempt the danger of my true defence

Lest I by marking of your rage forget

Your worth your greatness and nobility

P Out dunghill darest thou brave a noble

man?

Hub Not for my life but yet I dare defend

My innocent life against an emperor

Sal Thou art a murderer

Hub Do not prove me so 90

Yet I am none whose tongue soe'er speaks false
Not truly speaks who speaks not truly lies

Pem Cut him to pieces

Bast Keep the peace, I say

Sal Stand by or I shall gall you Faulcon
bridge

Bast Thou wert better gall the devil Salisbury

If thou but frown on me or stir thy foot

Or teach thy hasty spleen to do me shame

I'll strike thee dead Put up thy sword betime

Or I'll so maul you and your toasting iron

That you shall think the devil is come from hell

Big What wilt thou do renowned Faulcon

bridge? 101

Second a villain and a murderer?

Hub Lord Bigot I am none

Big Who kill'd this prince?

Hub 'Tis not an hour since I left him well

I honour'd him I loved him and will weep

My date of life out for his sweet life's loss

Sal Trust not those cunning waters of his eyes

For villainy is not without such rheum

And he long traded in it makes it seem

Like rivers of remorse and innocency 110

Away with me all you whose souls abhor

The uncleanly savours of a slaughter house

For I am stuff'd with this smell of sin

Big Away toward Bury to the Dauphin there!

Pem There tell the king he may inquire us out

[*Exeunt Lords*]

Bast Here's a good world! knew you of this
fair work?

Beyond the infinite and boundless reach

Of mercy if thou didst this deed of death

Art thou damn'd Hubert

Hub Do but hear me sir

Bast Ha! I'll tell thee what 120

Thou art damn'd as black—nay nothing is so
black

Thou art more deep damn'd than Prince Lucifer

There is not yet so ugly a fiend of hell

As thou shalt be if thou didst kill this child

Hub Upon my soul—

Bast If thou didst but consent

To this most cruel act do but despair

And if thou want'st a cord the smallest thread

That ever spider twist'd from her womb

Will serve to strangle thee a rush will be a
beam

To hang thee on or wouldst thou drown thyself

Put but a little water in a spoon 131

And it shall be as all the ocean,

Enough to stifle such a villain up

I do suspect thee very grievously

Hub If I in act consent or sin of thought

Be guilty of the stealing that sweet breath

Which was embounded in this beauteous clay,
Let hell want pains enough to torture me
I left him well

Bast Go, bear him in thine arms
I am amazed, methinks, and lose my way
Among the thorns and dangers of this world
How easy dost thou tal' all England up!
From forth this morsel of dead royalty,
The life, the right, and truth of all this realm
Is fled to heaven and England now is left
To tug and scramble and to part by the teeth
The unowed interest of proud-swelling state
Now for the bare pick'd bone of majesty
Doth dogged war bristle his angry crest
And snarleth in the gentle eyes of peace
Now powers from home and discontents at home
Meet in one line, and vast confusion waits,
As doth a raven on a sick-fall'n beast
The imminent decay of wrested pomp
Now happy he whose cloak and cincture can
Hold out this tempest Bear away that child
And follow me with speed I'll to the King
A thousand businesses are brief in hand,
And heaven itself doth frown upon the land

[*Exeunt*]

ACT V

SCENE I *King John's palace**Enter KING JOHN, PANDULPH, and Attendants*

K. John Thus have I yielded up into your hand
The circle of my glory [*Giving the crown*]

Pand Take again
From this my hand, as holding of the Pope
Your sovereign greatness and authority

K. John Now keep your holy word go meet
the French

And from his Holiness use all your power
To stop their marches fore we are inflamed
Our discontented counties do revolt
Our people quarrel with obedience
Swearing allegiance and the love of soul
To stranger blood to foreign royalty
This inundation of mistemper'd humour

Rests by you only to be qualified
Then pause not, for the present times so sick
That present medicine must be minister'd
Or overthrow incurable ensues

Pand It was my breath that blew this tempest
up

Upon your stubborn usage of the Pope
But since you are a gentle convertite
My tongue shall hush again this storm of war
And make fair weather in your blustering land
On this Ascension-day remember well
Upon your oath of service to the Pope

Go I to make the French lay down their arms

[*Exit*]

K. John Is this Ascension day? Did not the
prophet

Say that before Ascension day at noon
My crown I should give off? Even so I have
I did suppose it should be on constraint
But, heaven be thank'd, it is but voluntary

Enter the BASTARD

Bast All Kent hath yielded nothing there holds
out

30

But Dover castle London hath received
Like a kind host the Dauphin and his powers
Your nobles will not hear you, but are gone
To offer service to your enemy,
And wild amazement hurries up and down
The little number of your doubtful friends

K. John Would not my lords return to me
again,

After they heard young Arthur was alive?

Bast They found him dead and cast into the
streets

An empty casket, where the jewel of life
By some damn'd hand was robb'd and taken
away

40

K. John That villain Hubert told me he did live

Bast So on my soul he did for aught he knew
But wherefore do you droop? why look you sad?
Be great in act as you have been in thought,

Let not the world see fear and sad distrust
Govern the motion of a kingly eye
Be stirring as the time be fire with fire
Threaten the threatener and outface the brow
Of bragging horror so shall inferior eyes,
That borrow their behaviours from the great,
Grow great by your example and put on
The dauntless spirit of resolution

50

Away and glister like the god of war,
When he intendeth to become the field
Show boldness and aspiring confidence
What, shall they seek the lion in his den,
And fright him there? and make him tremble
there?

O let it not be said forage and run
To meet displeasure farther from the doors,
And grapple with him ere he come so nigh

60

K. John The legate of the Pope hath been with
me

And I have made a happy peace with him
And he hath promised to dismiss the powers
Led by the Dauphin

Bast O inglorious league
Shall we upon the footing of our land
Send fair play orders and make
Insinuation parley and base truce

With that same weak wind which enkindled it
 You taught me how to know the face of right,
 Acquainted me with interest to this land,
 Yea thrust this enterprise into my heart 90
 And come ye now to tell me John hath made
 His peace with Rome? What is that peace to me?
 I, by the honour of my marriage-bed
 After young Arthur claim this land for mine,
 And, now it is half conquer'd must I back
 Because that John hath made his peace with
 Rome?

Am I Rome's slave? What penny hath Rome
 borne

*What men provided, what munition sent,
 To underprop this action? Is't not I
 That undergo this charge? who else but I 100
 And such as to my claim are liable
 Sweat in this business and maintain this war?
 Have I not heard these islanders shout out
 Vive le roi! as I have bank'd their towns?
 Have I not here the best cards for the game,
 To win this easy match play'd for a crown?
 And shall I now give o'er the yielded set?
 No, no, on my soul it never shall be said*

Pand You look but on the outside of this work

Lew Outside or inside I will not return 110

'Till my attempt so much be glorified
 As my ample hope was promised
 Before I drew this gallant head of war,
 And cull'd these fiery spirits from the world,
 To outlook conquest and to win renown
 Even in the jaws of danger and of death

Trumpet sounds

What lusty trumpet thus doth summon us?

Enter the BASTARD attended

Bast According to the fair play of the world,
 Let me have audience, I am sent to speak
 My holy lord of Milan from the King 120
 I come to learn how you have dealt for him,
 And as you answer, I do know the scope
 And warrant limited unto my tongue

Pand The Dauphin is too wilful-opposite
 And will not temporize with my entreaties
 He flatly says he'll not lay down his arms

Bast By all the blood that ever fury breathed
 The youth says so well Now hear our English
 King,

Or thus his royalty doth speak in me
 He is prepared and reason too he should 130
 This apish and unmannerly approach
 This harness'd masque and unadvised revel
 This unhair'd sauciness and boyish troops
 The King doth smile at and is well prepared
 O'erwhelm this dwarfish war these pigmy arms,
 Upon yon circle of his territories

That hand which had the strength, even at your
 door,

To cudgel you and make you take the hatch,
 To dive like buckets in concealed wells,
 To crouch in litter of your stable planks 140
 To lie like pawns lock'd up in chests and trunks,
 To hug with swine, to seek sweet safety out
 In vaults and prisons and to thrill and shake
 Even at the crying of your nation's crow,
 Thinking his voice an armed Englishman,
 Shall that victorious hand be feeble here
 That in your chambers gave you chastisement?
 No know the gallant monarch is in arms
 And like an eagle o'er his airy towers
 To souse annoyance that comes near his nest 150
 And you degenerate you ingrate revolts
 You bloody Neroes, ripping up the womb
 Of your dear mother England blush for shame,
 For your own ladies and pale visaged maids
 Like Amazons come tripping after drums
 Their thumbles into armed gauntlets change
 Their needles to lances and their gentle hearts
 To fierce and bloody inclination

Lew There end thy brave, and turn thy face in
 peace,

We grant thou canst outscold us fare thee well,
 We hold our time too precious to be spent 161
 With such a brabblor

Pand Give me leave to speak

Bist No, I will speak

Lew We will attend to neither
 Strike up the drums, and let the tongue of war
 Plead for our interest and our being here

Bist Indeed, your drums being beaten will cry
 out,

And so shall you being beaten do but start
 An echo with the clamour of thy drum
 And even at hand a drum is ready braced
 That shall reverberate all as loud as thine, 170
 Sound but another, and another shall
 As loud as thine rattle the welkin's ear
 And mock the deep-mouth'd thunder for at hand
 Nor trusting to this halting legate here
 Whom he hath used rather for sport than need,
 Is warlike John and in his forehead sits
 A bare ribb'd death whose office is this day
 To feast upon whole thousands of the French
Lew Strike up our drums to find this danger
 out

Bist And thou shalt find it Dauphin do not
 doubt [Exit 180

SCENE III *The field of battle*

Alarums Enter KING JOHN and

A John How goes the day with
 Hubert

Hub Badly I fear How fares y our Majesty?
A John This fever that hath troubled me so
 long
 Lies heavy on me O my heart is sick!

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess My lord your valiant kinsman Faulcon
 bridge

Desires your Majesty to leave the field
 And send him word by me which way you go

A John Tell him toward Swinstead to the
 abbey there

Mess Be of good comfort for the great supply
 That was expected by the Dauphin here 10

Are wreck'd three nights ago on Goodwin Sand
 This news was brought to Richard but even now

The French fight coldly and retire themselves
A John As me! this rampant fever burns me

up
 And will not let me welcome this good news
 Set on toward Swinstead to my litter straight

Weakness possesseth me and I am faint

[Exeunt]

SCENE IV *Another part of the field*

Enter SALISBURY DE BROKE and BIGOT

Sal I did not think the king so stored with
 friends

Pem Up once again put spirit in the French
 If they miscarry we miscarry too

Sal That misbegotten devil Faulconbridge
 In spite of spite alone upholds the day

Pem They say king John sore sick hath left the
 field

Enter MELLIN wounded

Mel Lead me to the revolts of England here

Sal When we were happy we had other names

Pem It is the Count Melun

Sal Wounded to death

Mel Fly noble English you are bought and
 sold 10

Unthread the rude eye of rebellion

And welcome home again discarded faith

Seek out king John and fall before his feet

For if the French be lords of this loud day

He means to recompense the pains you take

By cutting off your heads if us hath he sworn

And I with him and many more with me

Upon the altar at Saint Edmundsbury

Even on that altar where we swore to you

Dear amity and everlasting love 20

Sal May this be possible? may this be true?

Mel Have I not hideous death within my

view

Retaining but a quantity of life,

Which bleeds away even as a form of wax
 Resolveth from his figure against the fire?
 What in the world should make me now de-
 ceive

Since I must lose the use of all deceit?

Why should I then be false since it is true

That I must die here and live hence by truth?

I say again if Lewis do win the day 30

He is forsworn if e'er those eyes of yours

Behold another day break in the east

But even this night whose black contagious
 breath

Already smokes about the burning crest

Of the old feeble and day wearied sun

Even this ill night your breathing shall expire

Pay me the fine of rated treachery

Even with a treacherous fine of all your lives

If Lewis by your assistance win the day

Commend me to one Hubert with your king 40

The love of him and this respect besides

For that my grandsire was an Englishman

Awakes my conscience to confess all this

In lieu whereof I pray you bear me hence

From forth the noise and rumour of the field

Where I may think the remnant of my thoughts

In peace and part this body and my soul

With contemplation and devout desires

Sal We do believe thee and beshrew my soul

But I do love the favour and the form 50

Of this most fair occasion by the which

We will untread the steps of damned flight

And like a bated and retired flood

Leaving our rankness and irregular course

Stoop low within those bounds we have o'er

look'd

And calmly run on in obedience

Even to our ocean to our great king John

My arm shall give thee help to bear thee hence

For I do see the cruel pangs of death

Right in thine eye Away my friends! New 60

And happy newness that intends old right

[Exeunt leading off MELLIN]

SCENE V *The French camp*

Enter LEWIS and his train

Lew The sun of heaven methought was loath
 to set

But stay'd and made the western welkin blush

When English measure backward their own
 ground 1

In faint retire O bravely came we off

When with a volley of our needless shot

After such bloody toil we bid good night

And wound out rattering colours clearly up

Last in the field and almost lords of it!

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess Where is my prince the Dauphin?

Lew Here what news?

Mess The Count Melun is slain, the English
lords 10

By his persuasion are again fall'n off
And your supply, which you have wish'd so long
Are cast away and sunk on Goodwin Sands

Lew Ah, foul shrewd news! beshrew thy very
heart!

I did not think to be so sad to night
As this hath made me Who was he that said
King John did fly an hour or two before
The stumbling night did part our weary powers?

Mess Whoever spoke it, it is true my lord

Lew Well, keep good quarter and good care
to-night 20

The day shall not be up so soon as I
To try the fair adventure of to morrow [*Exeunt*

SCENE VI *An open place in the neighbourhood
of Swinstead Abbey*

Enter the BASTARD and HUBERT, severally

Hub Who's there? speak, ho! speak quickly,
or I shoot

Bast A friend What art thou?

Hub Of the part of England

Bast Whither dost thou go?

Hub What's that to thee? why may not I de-
mand

Of thine affairs as well as thou of mine?

Bst Hubert, I thinke?

Hub Thou hast a perfect thought

I will upon all hazards well believe

Thou art my friend that know'st my tongue so
well

Who art thou?

Bst Who thou wilt and if thou please

Thou mayst befriend me so much as to think 10

I come one way of the Plantagenets

Hub Unl and remembrance! thou and eyeless
night

Have done me shame brave soldier, pardon me

That any accent breaking from thy tongue

Should scape the true acquaintance of mine ear

Bast Come come sans compliment what news
abroad?

Hub Why, here walk I in the black brow of
night,

To find you out

Bst Brief then, and what's the news?

Hub O my sweet sir, news sitting to the night
Black fearful, comfortless and horrible 20

Bst Show me the very wound of this ill news

I am no woman I'll not swoon at it

Hub The King I fear is poison'd by a monk
I left him almost speechless, and broke out
To acquaint you with this evil that you might
The better arm you to the sudden time
Than if you had at leisure known of this

Bast How did he take it? who did taste to him?

Hub A monk I tell you a resolved villain,
Whose bowels suddenly burst out the King 30
Yet speaks and peradventure may recover

Bast Who didst thou leave to tend his Majesty?

Hub Why, know you not? the lords are all
come back,

And brought Prince Henry in their company
At whose request the King hath pardon'd them,
And they are all about his Majesty

Bast Withhold thine indignation mighty heav-
en,

And tempt us not to bear above our power!

I'll tell thee, Hubert half my power this night,
Passing these flats are taken by the tide 40

These Lincoln Washes have devoured them,
Myself well mounted, hardly have escaped
Away before conduct me to the King,
I doubt he will be dead ere I come [*Exeunt*

SCENE VII *The orchard in Swinstead Abbey*

Enter PRINCE HENRY, SALISBURY and BIGOT

P Hen It is too late the life of all his blood
Is touch'd corruptibly and his pure brain
Which some suppose the soul's frail dwelling-
house

Doth by the idle comments that it makes
Foretell the ending of mortality

Enter PEMBROKE

Pem His Highness yet doth speak, and holds
belief

That being brought into the open air,

It would allay the burning quality

Of that fell poison which assaileth him

P Hen Let him be brought into the orchard
here 10

Doth he still rage? [*Exit BIGOT*

Pem He is more patient

Than when you left him even now he sung

P Hen O vanity of sickness! fierce extremes

In their continuance will not feel themselves

Death having prevail'd upon the outward parts

Leaves them invisible and his siege is now
Against the mind the which he pricks and
wounds

With many legions of strange fantasies

Which in their throng and press to that last hold,
Confound themselves 'Tis strange that death

should sing

I am the subject to this pale faint swan

Who chants a doleful hymn to his own death
And from the organ pipe of frailty sings
His soul and body to their lasting rest

Sal Be of good comfort Prince for you are born

To set a form upon that indigest
Which he hath left so shapeless and so rude

Enter Attendants and a BROT carrying KING JOHN in a chair

K John Ay marry now my soul hath elbow room

I would not out at windows nor at doors
There is so hot a summer in my bosom 30
That all my bowels crumble up to dust
I am a scribbled form drawn with a pen
Upon a parchment and against this fire
Do I shrink up

P Hen How fares your Majesty?

K John Poison'd—all fare—dead forsook
cast off

And none of you will bid the winter come
To thrust his icy fingers in my maw
Nor let my kingdom's rivers take their course
Through my burn'd bosom nor entreat the north

To make his bleak winds kiss my parched lips 40
And comfort me with cold I do not ask you much

I beg cold comfort and you are so strait
And so inateful you deny me that

P Hen O that there were some virtue in my tears

That might relieve you!

K John The salt in them is hot
Within me is a hell and there the poison
Is as a fiend confined to tyrannize
On unreprieveable condemned blood

Enter the BASTARD

Bast O I am scalded with my violent motion,
And spleen of speed to see your Majesty! 50

K John O cousin, thou art come to set mine eye

The tackle of my heart is crack'd and burn'd
And all the shrouds wherewith my life should sail

Are turned to one thread one little hair
My heart hath one poor string to stay it by
Which holds but till thy news be uttered
And then all this thou seest is but a cloud
And module of confounded royalty

Ent The Dauphin is preparing hitherward
Where heaven He knows how we shall answer him 60

For in a night the best part of my power

As I upon advantage did remove
Were in the Washes all unwarily
Devoured by the unexpected flood

[The king dies]

Sal You breathe these dead news in as dead an ear

My liege! my lord! but now a king now thus
I Hen Even so must I run on and even so stop

What surety of the world what hope what stay

When this was now a king and now is clay?

Bast Art thou gone so? I do but stay behind 70

To do the office for thee of revenge
And then my soul shall wait on thee to heaven
As it on earth hath been thy servant still
Now now you stars that move in your right spheres

Where be your powers? show now your mended faiths

And instantly return with me again
To push destruction and perpetual shame
Out of the weak loor of our fainting land
Straight let us seek or straight we shall be sought

The Dauphin rages at our very heels 80

Sal It seems you know not then so much as we

The Cardinal Pandulph is within at rest
Who half an hour since came from the Dauphin
And brings from him such offers of our peace
As we with honour and respect may take
With purpose presently to leave this war

Bast He will the rather do it when he sees
Ourselves well sinew'd to our defence

Sal Nay it is in a manner done already
For many carriages he hath dispatch'd 90

To the sea side and put his cause and quarrel
To the disposing of the Cardinal
With whom yourself myself and other lords

If you think meet this afternoon will post
To consummate this business happily

Bast Let it be so and you my noble prince
With other princes that may best be spared
Shall wait upon your father's funeral

P Hen At Worcester must his body be interred

For so he will do it

Bast Thither shall it then 100

And happily may your sweet self put on
The lineal state and glory of the land!

To whom with all submission on my knee
I do bequeath my faithful services

And true subjection everlastingly

Sal And the like tender of our love we make

To rest without a spot for evermore

P Hen I have a kind soul that would give you thanks

And knows not how to do it but with rears

Bast O let us pay the time but needful woe,

Since it hath been beforehand with our griefs *///*

This England never did, nor never shall,

Lie at the proud foot of a conqueror,

But when it first did help to wound itself

Now these her princes are come home again,

Come the three corners of the world in arms,

And we shall shock them Nought shall make us rue

If England to itself do rest but true

[Exeunt]

THE MERCHANT OF VENICE

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

THE DUKE OF VENICE
 PRINCE OF MOROCCO | *see to s to Port a*
 PRINCE OF ARAGON |
 ANTONIO *a merchant of Ven*
 BASSANIO | *is friend su to I knew se to Portia*
 SALARINO |
 SALARINO | *is friend t A ton n and Bassanio*
 GRATIANO |
 SALARINO |
 LORENZO | *in lov e th Jessica*
 SHYLOCK | *rich Jew*
 TUBAL | *Jew h s friend*
 LAUNCELOT GO | *of the clown s servant to Shylock*
 OLD GOSSO | *of the to Laun lot*
 LEONARDO | *servant t Bassanio*

BALTHASAR | *is ru nts to Portia*
 STEPHANO |
 SERAPANT | *Antonio*
 SERVANT | *Portia*

PORTIA *a vi h heivest*
 NERISSA | *her am t ng maid*
 JESSICA | *daught r Shylock*

NON-SPEAKING | *Magnificoes of Ven ce Officers of the*
 COURT OF JUSTICE | *Gaoler Musicians Servants to*
 PORTIA | *and ther Attendants*

SCENE | *Partly in Ven ce and partly at Belmont the*
 | *is at of Portia on th continent*

ACT I

SCENE I Venice a street

Enter ANTONIO SALARINO and SALANIO

Ant In sooth I know not why I am so sad
 It wearies me you say it wearies you
 But how I caught it found it or came by it
 What stuff tis made of whereof it is born
 I am to learn
 And such a want wit sadness makes of me
 That I have much ado to know my self
Salar Your mind is tossing on the ocean
 There where your argosies with portly sail
 Like signiors and rich burghers on the flood 10
 Or as it were the parents of the sea
 Do overpeer the petty traffickers
 That curtsy to them do them reverence
 As they fly by them with their woven wings
Salar Believe me sir had I such venture forth
 The better part of my affections would
 Be with my hopes abroad I should be still
 Plucking the grass to know where sits the wind
 Peering in maps for ports and piers and roads
 And every object that might make me fear 20
 Misfortune to my ventures out of doubt
 Would make me sad
Salar My wind cooling my broth
 Would blow me to an aerie when I thought
 What harm a wind too great at sea might do
 I should not see the sandy hour-glass run
 But I should think of shallows and of flats
 And see my wealthy Andrew dock'd in sand,
 Vailing her high top lower than her ribs
 To kiss her burial Should I go to church

And see the holy edifice of stone 30
 And not bethink me straight of dangerous rocks
 Which touching but my gentle vessel's side
 Would scatter all her spices on the stream
 Enrobe the roaring waters with my silks
 And in a word but even now worth this
 And now worth nothing? Shall I have the thought
 To think on this and shall I lack the thought
 That such a thing bechanced would make me sad?
 But tell not me I know Antonio
 Is sad to think upon his merchandise 40
Ant Believe me no I thank my fortune for it
 My ventures are not in one bottom trusted
 Nor to one place nor is my whole estate
 Upon the fortune of this present year
 Therefore my merchandise makes me not sad
Salar Why then you are in love
Ant Fie fie!
Salar Not in love neither? Then let us say you
 are sad
 Because you are not merry and t were as easy
 For you to laugh and leap and say you are merry
 Because you are not sad Now by two-headed 50
 Janus
 Nature hath fram'd strange fellows in her time
 Some that will as merrily peep through their eyes
 And laugh like parrots at a bag-piper
 And other of such vinegar aspect
 That they'll not show their teeth in way of smile
 Though their vestors swear the jest be laughable

Enter BASSANIO LORENZO and GRATIANO

Salar Here comes Bassanio your most noble
 kinsman

Gratiano, and Lorenzo Fare ye well
 We leave you now with better company
Salar I would have stay'd till I had made you
 merry

60

If worthier friends had not prevented me
Ant Your worth is very dear in my regard

I take it, your own business calls on you
 And you embrace the occasion to depart

Salar Good morrow, my good lords
Bass Good signiors both, when shall we laugh
 say, when?

You grow exceeding strange, must it be so?
Salar We'll make our leisures to attend on
 yours

[*Exeunt SALARINO and SALANIO*]

Lor My lord Bassanio since you have found
 Antonio

We two will leave you but at dinner-time

70

I pray you have in mind where we must meet
Bass I will not fail you

Gra You lool not well Signior Antonio
 You have too much respect upon the world
 They lose it that do buy it with much care
 Believe me, you are marvellously changed

Ant I hold the world but as the world Gratiano,
 A stage where every man must play a part,
 And mine a sad one

Gra Let me play the fool
 With mirth and laughter let old wrinkles come,
 And let my liver rather heat with wine

81

Than my heart cool with mortifying groans
 Why should a man, whose blood is warm within
 Sit like his grandsire cut in alabaster?

Sleep when he wakes and creep into the jaundice
 By being peevish? I tell thee what, Antonio—
 I love thee and it is my love that speaks—

There are a sort of men whose visages
 Do cream and mantle like a standing pond,
 And do a wilful stillness entertain

90

With purpose to be dress'd in an opinion
 Of wisdom gravity, profound conceit,
 As who should say, "I am Sir Oracle,
 And when I ope my lips let no dog bark!"

O my Antonio I do know of these
 That therefore only are reputed wise
 For saying nothing when I am very sure,
 If they should speak would almost damn those
 ears

Which hearing them would call their brothers
 fools

I'll tell thee more of this another time

100

But fish not, with this melancholy bait
 For this fool gudgeon, this opinion
 Come good Lorenzo Fare ye well awhile
 I'll end my exhortation after dinner

Lor Well we will leave you then till dinnertime

I must be one of these same dumb wise men,
 For Gratiano never lets me speak

Gra Well, keep me company but two years
 moe,

Thou shalt not know the sound of thine own
 tongue

109

Ant Farewell I'll grow a talker for this gear

Gra Thanks! faith for silence is only com-
 mendable

In a neat's tongue dried and a maid not vendible
 [*Exeunt GRATIANO and LORENZO*]

Ant Is that any thing now?

Bass Gratiano speaks an infinite deal of nothing,
 more than any man in all Venice His reasons are
 as two grains of wheat hid in two bushels of chaff
 you shall seek all day ere you find them and
 when you have them they are not worth the
 search

Ant Well tell me now what lady is the same
 To whom you swore a secret pilgrimage

120

That you to day promised to tell me of?

Bass 'Tis not unkind to you Antonio,
 How much I have disabled mine estate
 By something showing a more swelling port
 Than my faint means would grant continuance

Nor do I now make moan to be abridged
 From such a noble rate but my chief care
 Is to come fairly off from the great debts
 Wherein my time something too prodigal

Hath left me gaged To you Antonio

130

I owe the most in money and in love
 And from your love I have a warranty
 To unburden all my plots and purposes
 How to get clear of all the debts I owe

Ant I pray you good Bassanio let me know it,
 And if it stand as you yourself still do
 Within the eye of honour, be assured

My purse my person my extremest means
 Lie all unlock'd to your occasions

Bass In my school-days when I had lost one
 shaft,

140

I shot his fellow of the self same flight
 The self same way with more advised watch
 To find the other forth, and by adventuring both

I oft found both I urge this childhood proof,
 Because what follows is pure innocence

I owe you much and like a wilful youth
 That which I owe is lost but if you please

To shoot another arrow that self way
 Which you did shoot the first I do not doubt

As I will watch the aim or to find both

150

Or bring your latter hazard back again
 And thankfully rest debtor for the first

Ant You know me well and herein spend but
 time

To wind about my love with circumstance,

And out of doubt you do me now more wrong
In making question of my uttermost
Than if you had made waste of all I have
Then do but say to me what I should do
That in your knowledge may by me be done
And I am prest unto it therefore speak

Bass. In Belmont is a lady richly left
And she is fair and fairer than that word
Of wondrous virtues sometimes from her eyes
I did receive fair speechless messages
Her name is Portia nothing undervalued
To Cato's daughter Brutus Portia
Nor is the wide world ignorant of her worth
For the four winds blow in from every coast
Renowned suitors and her sunny locks
Hang on her temples like a golden fleece
Which makes her seat of Belmont Colchus
strand

And many Jasons come in quest of her
O my Antonio had I but the means
To hold a rival place with one of them
I have a mind presaves me such thrift
That I should questionless be fortunate
Ant. Thou know'st that all my fortunes are at
sea

Neither have I money nor commodity
To raise a present sum therefore so forth
Try what my credit can in Venice do
That shall be rack'd even to the uttermost
To furnish thee to Belmont to fair Portia
Go presently inquire and so will I
Where money is and I no question make
To have it of my trust or for my sake

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II Belmont a room in Portia's house

Enter PORTIA and NERISSA

Por. By my troth Nerissa my little body is
sweary of this great world

Ner. You would be, sweet madam if your
miseries were in the same abundance as your
good fortunes are and yet for aught I see, they
are as sick that surfeit with too much as they that
starve with nothing It is no mean happiness
therefore, to be seated in the mean superfluous
comes sooner by white hairs but competency
lives longer

Por. Good sentences and well pronounced

Ner. They would be better if well followed

Por. If to do were as easy as to know what were
good to do chapels had been churches and poor
men's cottages princes' palaces It is a good
divine that follows his own instructions I can
easier teach twenty what were good to be done
than be one of the twenty to follow mine own
teaching The brain may devise laws for the
blood, but a hot temper leaps over a cold decree

such a hare is madness the youth, to skip
meshes of good counsel the cripple But this
reasoning is not the fashion in choose me
husband O me the word choose! I may
then choose whom I would nor refuse whom
dislike so is the will of a living daughter curd
by the will of a dead father Is it not hard
Nerissa that I cannot choose one nor
none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous and hol,
men at their death have good inspirations there-
fore the lottery that he hath devised in these
three chests of gold silver and lead, whereof
who chooses his meaning chooses you will no
doubt never be chosen by any richly but on
who shall rightly love But what warmth is
in your affection towards any of these princely
suitors that are already come?

Por. I pray thee over name them and as thou
namest them I will describe them and accord
ing to my description level at my affection

Ner. First there is the Neapolitan prince

Por. Ay that's a colt indeed for he doth not
but talk of his horse and he makes it a great
appropriation to his own good parts that he can
shoe him himself I am much afraid my lady his
mother played false with a smith

Ner. Then there is the County Palatine

Por. He doth nothing but frown as who should
say If you will not have me choose he hears
merry tales and smiles not I fear he will prove
the weeping philosopher when he grows old,
being so full of unmannerly sadness in his youth
I had rather be married to a death's head with
a bone in his mouth than to either of these God
defend me from these two!

Ner. How say you by the French lord, Mon-
sieur Le Bon?

Por. God made him and therefore let him pass
for a man In truth I know it is a sin to be a
mocker but he's why he hath a horse better than
the Neapolitan's a better bad habit of frowning
than the Count Palatine he is every man in no
man if a throstle sing he falls straight a caper
sing he will fence with his own shadow if I
should marry him I should marry twenty hus-
bands If he would despise me I would never
love him for if he love me to madness I shall never
requite him

Ner. What say you then to Falconbridge, the
young baron of England?

Por. You know I say nothing to him, for he
understands not me nor I him he hath neither
Latin French nor Italian and you will come
into the court and swear that I have a peer
pennyworth in the English He is a proper man

picture but, alas, who can converse with a dumb-show? How oddly he is suited! I think he bought his doublet in Italy, his round hose in France, his bonnet in Germany and his behaviour everywhere

Ner What think you of the Scottish lord, his neighbour?

Por That he hath a neighbourly charity in him, for he borrowed a box of the ear of the Englishman and swore he would pay him again when he was able I think the Frenchman became his surety and sealed under for another

Ner How like you the young German the Duke of Saxony's nephew?

Por Very vilely in the morning when he is sober, and most vilely in the afternoon when he is drunk when he is best, he is a little worse than a man, and when he is worst, he is a little better than a beast an the worst fall that ever fell I hope I shall make shift to go without him

Ner If he should offer to choose and choose the right casket, you should refuse to perform your father's will if you should refuse to accept him

Por Therefore, for fear of the worst I pray thee, set a deep glass of rhenish wine on the contrary casket for if the devil be within and that temptation without, I know he will choose it I will do anything Nerissa ere I'll be married to a sponge

Ner You need not fear, lady, the having any of these lords they have acquainted me with their determinations, which is, indeed, to return suit, unless you may be won by some other sort than your father's imposition depending on the caskets

Por If I live to be as old as Sibylla I will die as chaste as Diana unless I be obtained by the manner of my father's will I am glad this parcel of wooers are so reasonable for there is not one among them but I dote on his very absence, and I pray God grant them a fair departure

Ner Do you not remember lady in your father's time, a Venetian, a scholar and a soldier that came hither in company of the Marquis of Montferrat?

Por Yes yes, it was Bassanio as I think, he was so called

Ner True, madam he, of all the men that ever my foolish eyes looked upon was the best deserving a fair lady

Por I remember him well and I remember him worthy of thy praise

Enter a SERVING MAN

How now! what news?

Ser The four strangers seek for you madam,

to take their leave and there is a forerunner come from a fifth the Prince of Morocco, who brings word the Prince his master will be here to night

Por If I could bid the fifth welcome with so good a heart as I can bid the other four farewell, I should be glad of his approach, if he have the condition of a saint and the complexion of a devil I had rather he should shrive me than wive me

Come, Nerissa Sirrah, go before

Whiles we shut the gates upon one wooer, another knocks at the door

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III *Venice a public place*

Enter BASSANIO and SHYLOCK

Shy Three thousand ducats, well

Bass Ay, sir, for three months

Shy For three months, well

Bass For the which as I told you, Antonio shall be bound

Shy Antonio shall become bound well

Bass May you stead me? will you pleasure me? shall I know your answer?

Shy Three thousand ducats for three months and Antonio bound

Bass Your answer to that

Shy Antonio is a good man

Bass Have you heard any imputation to the contrary?

Shy Oh, no, no, no, no my meaning in saying he is a good man is to have you understand me that he is sufficient Yet his means are in supposition he hath an argosy bound to Tripolis another to the Indies I understand moreover upon the Rialto he hath a third at Mexico a fourth for England and other ventures he hath squandered abroad But ships are but boards, sailors but men there be land rats and water rats water thieves and land thieves, I mean pirates and then there is the peril of waters winds and rocks The man is notwithstanding sufficient Three thousand ducats I think I may take his bond

Bass Be assured you may

Shy I will be assured I may and that I may be assured I will bethink me May I speak with Antonio?

Bass If it please you to dine with us

Shy Yes to smell pork to eat of the habitation which your prophet the Nazarite conjured the devil into I will buy with you sell with you talk with you walk with you and so following but I will not eat with you drink with you nor pray with you What news on the Rialto Who is he comes here?

Enter ANTONIO

Bass This is Signior Antonio

Shy [*Aside*] How like a fawning publican he looks!

I hate him for he is a Christian

But more for that in low simplicity

He lends out money gratis and brings down

The rate of usance here with us in Venice

If I can catch him once upon the hip

I will feed fat the ancient grudge I bear him

He hates our sacred nation and he rails

Even there where merchants most do congregate

On me my bargains and my well won thrift 57

Which he calls interest Cursed be my tribe

If I forgive him!

Bass Shylock do you hear?

Shy I am debating of my present store

And by the near guess of my memory

I cannot instantly raise up the gross

Of full three thousand ducats What of that?

Tubal a wealthy Hebrew of my tribe

Will furnish me But soft how many months

Do you desire? [*To ANTONIO*] Rest you fair good signior 60

Your worship was the last man in our mouths

Ant Shylock although I neither lend nor borrow

By taking nor by giving of excess

Yet to supply the ripe wants of my friend

I'll break a custom Is he yet possess'd

How much ye would?

Shy Ay ay three thousand ducats

Ant And for three months

Shy I had forgot three months you told me so

Well then your bond and let me see but hear

you

Methought you said you neither lend nor borrow

Upon advantage

Ant I do never use it 72

Shy When Jacob grazed his uncle Laban's sheep—

This Jacob from our holy Abram was

As his wise mother would, he in his behalf

The third possessor as he was the third—

Ant And what of him? did he take interest?

Shy No nor take interest nor as you would say 82

Directly interest mark what Jacob did

When Laban and himself were compromised

That all the earnings which were streak'd and pied 80

Should fall as Jacob shitteth the ewes being rank

In the end of autumn turned to the rams

And when the week of generation was

Between these woolly breeders in the act

The skulful shepherd peel'd me certain wands

And in the doing of the deed of kind

He stuck them up before the fulsome ewes

Who then conceiving did in earning time

Fall parts colour'd lambs and those were Jacob's

This was a way to thrive and he was blest 90

And thrift is blessing if men steal it not

Ant This was a venture sir that Jacob served for

A thing not in his power to bring to pass

But sway'd and fashion'd by the hand of heaven

Was thus inserted to make interest good

Or is your gold and silver ewes and rams?

Shy I cannot tell I make it breed as fast

But note me signior

Ant Mark you this Bassanio

The devil can cite Scripture for his purpose

An evil soul producing holy witness 100

Is like a villain with a smiling cheek

A goodly apple rotten at the heart

O what a goodly outside falsehood hath!

Shy Three thousand ducats tis a good round sum

Three months from twelve then let me see the rate—

Ant Well Shylock shall we be beholding to you?

Shy Signior Antonio many a time and oft

In the Rialto you have rated me

About my moneys and my usances

Snill have I borne it with a patient shrug 110

For sufferance is the badge of all our tribe

You call me misbeliever cur throat dog

And spit upon my Jewish gaberdine

And all for use of that which is mine own

Well then it now appears you need my help

Go to then you come to me and you say

Shylock we would have moneys, you say so

You that did void your rheum upon my beard

And foot me as you spurn a stranger cur 120

Over your threshold moneys is your suit

What should I say to you? Should I not say

Ha! a dog money? is it possible

A cur can lend three thousand ducats? Or

Shall I bend low and in a bondman's key

With bated breath and whispering humbleness

Say this

Fair sir you spit on me on Wednesday last

You spurn'd me such a day another time

You call'd me dog and for these courtesies

I'll lend you thus much moneys? 130

Ant I am as like to call thee so again,

To spit on thee again to spurn thee too

If thou wilt lend this money lend it not

As to thy friends for when did friendship take

A breed for barren metal of his friend?

But lend it rather to thine enemy,
 Who if he break thou mayst with better face
 Exact the penalty
Shy Why, look you how you storm!
 I would be friends with you and have your love,
 Forget the shames that you have stain'd me
 with

Supply your present wants and take no doit 141
 Of usance for my money's and you'll not hear
 me

This is kind I offer

Bass This were kindness

Shy This kindness will I show
 Go with me to a notary seal me there
 Your single bond and in a merry sport
 If you repay me not on such a day
 In such a place such sum or sums as are
 Express'd in the condition let the forfeit
 Be nominated for an equal pound 150

Of your fair flesh to be cut off and taken
 In what part of your body pleaseth me

Ant Content, I' faith I'll seal to such a bond
 And say there is much kindness in the Jew

Bass You shall not seal to such a bond for me
 I'll rather dwell in my necessity

Ant Why, fear not, man I will not forfeit it
 Within these two months, that's a month be-
 fore

This bond expires I do expect return
 Of thrice three times the value of this bond 160

Shy O father Abram what these Christians
 are

Whose own hard dealings teaches them suspect
 The thoughts of others! Pray you tell me this,
 If he should break his day what should I gain
 By the exaction of the forfeiture?

A pound of man's flesh taken from a man
 Is not so estimable profitable neither
 As flesh of muttons' beefs or goats I say
 To buy his favour I extend this friendship
 If he will take it so if not, adieu 170

And for my love I pray you wrong me not

Ant Yes Shylock I will seal unto this bond

Shy Then meet me forthwith at the notary's

Give him direction for this merry bond

And I will go and purse the ducats straight

See to my house left in the fearful guard

Of an unthrifty knave and presently

I will be with you

Ant Hie thee, gentle Jew [Exit SHYLOCK]

The Hebrew will turn Christian he grows a

kind

Bass I like not fair terms and a villain's mind

Ant Come on in this there can be no dismay

My ships come home a month before the day [Exit]

ACT II

SCENE I Belmont a room in Portia's house

Flourish of cornets Enter the PRINCE OF MOROCCO
 and his train, PORTIA, VERISSA and others
 attending

Mor Mislike me not for my complexion
 The shadow'd livery of the burnish'd sun
 To whom I am a neighbour and near bred
 Bring me the fairest creature northward born
 Where Phœbus fire scarce thaws the icicles
 And let us make incision for your love
 To prove whose blood is reddest his or mine
 I tell thee lady this aspect of mine
 Hath fear'd the valiant by my love I swear
 The best regarded virgins of our clime 10
 Have loved it too I would not change this hue
 Except to steal your thoughts my gentle queen

Por In terms of choice I am not solely led
 By nice direction of a maiden's eyes,
 Besides the lottery of your destiny
 Bars me the right of voluntary choosing
 But if my father had not scanted me
 And hedged me by his wit to yield myself
 His wife who wins me by that means I told you,
 Yourself renowned Prince then stood as fair 20
 As any comer I have look'd on yet
 For my affection

Mor Even for that I thank you
 Therefore I pray you lead me to the caskets
 To try my fortune By this scimitar
 That slew the Sophy and a Persian prince
 That won three fields of Sultan Solymán
 I would outstate the sternest eyes that look
 Outbrave the heart most daring on the earth
 Pluck the young sucking cubs from the she bear,
 Yea mock the lion when he roars for prey 30
 To win thee lady But alas the while!

If Hercules and Lichas play at dice
 Which is the better man the greater throw
 May turn by fortune from the weaker hand
 So is Alcides beaten by his page
 And so may I blind fortune leading me
 Miss that which one unworthier may attain
 And die with grieving

Por You must take your chance,
 And either not attempt to choose at all
 Or swear before you choose if you choose
 wrong

Never to speak to lady afterward 41
 In way of marriage therefore be advised

Mor Nor will not Come bring me unto my
 chance

Por I'll set forward to the temple after dinner-
 Your hazard shall be made

Mor Good

To make me blest or cursed among men

[*Cornets and drums*]

SCENE II *Before a street*

Enter LAUNCELOT

Laun Certainly my conscience will serve me to run from this Jew my master. The fiend is at mine elbow and tempts me saying to me: Gobbo Launcelot, Gobbo good Launcelot, or good Gobbo, or good Launcelot, Gobbo use your legs take the start run away. My conscience says: No take heed honest Launcelot take heed honest Gobbo, or as aforesaid honest Launcelot, Gobbo do not run, scorn running with thy heels. Well, the most courageous fiend bids me pack. Via, says the fiend, away! says the fiend, for the heavens rouse up a brave mind, says the fiend, and run. Well, my conscience hanging about the neck of my heart, says very wisely to me: My honest friend Launcelot, being an honest man's son, or rather an honest woman's son, for indeed my father did something smack, something grow to, he had a kind of taste. Well, my conscience says: Launcelot budge not. Budge, says the fiend. But, enot, says my conscience. Conscience say I, you counsel well. Fiend say I, you counsel well, to be ruled by my conscience. I should stay with the Jew my master, who God bless the mark, is a kind of devil, and to run away from the Jew, I should be ruled by the fiend; who saving your reverence, is the devil himself. Certainly the Jew is the very devil incarnate, and in my conscience, my conscience is but a kind of hard conscience, to offer to counsel me to stay with the Jew. The fiend gives the more friendly counsel: I will run, fiend, my heels are at your command. I will run.

But enot, says my conscience. Conscience say I, you counsel well. Fiend say I, you counsel well, to be ruled by my conscience. I should stay with the Jew my master, who God bless the mark, is a kind of devil, and to run away from the Jew, I should be ruled by the fiend; who saving your reverence, is the devil himself. Certainly the Jew is the very devil incarnate, and in my conscience, my conscience is but a kind of hard conscience, to offer to counsel me to stay with the Jew. The fiend gives the more friendly counsel: I will run, fiend, my heels are at your command. I will run.

Enter OLD GOBBO, with a Lasker

Gol Master young man, you I pray you which is the way to master Jew's?

Laun [Aside] O heavens, this is my true be-
trayen father, who being more than sand-blind, his high-gravel blind, knows me not. I will try confusion with him.

Gol Master young gentleman, I pray you which is the way to master Jew's? 41

Laun Turn up on your right hand at the next turning; but at the next turning of all on your left, marry, at the very next turning, turn of no hand; but turn down indirectly to the Jew's house.

Gol By God's sonnies, twill be a hard way to his. Can you tell me whether one Launcelot that dwells with him, dwells with him or no? 42

Laun Talk you of young Master Launcelot?

[*Aside*] Mark me now, now will I raise the waters. Talk you of young Master Launcelot?

Gol No master sir, but a poor man's son, his father though I say it is an honest exceeding poor man and God be thanked well to live.

Laun Well, let his father be what a will, we talk of young Master Launcelot.

Gol Your worship's friend and Launcelot sir.

Laun But I pray you, ergo old man, ergo I beseech you, talk you of young Master Launcelot? 60

Gol Of Launcelot, an't please your mastership.

Laun Ergo Master Launcelot, talk not of Master Launcelot, father, for the young gentleman according to Fates and Destinies, and such odd sayings, the Sisters Three, and such branches of learning, is indeed deceased, or as you would say in plain terms, gone to heaven.

Gol Marry, God forbid! the boy was the very staff of my age, my very prop. 70

Laun Do I look like a cudgel or a hovelpost, a staff or a prop? Do you know me, father?

Gol Alack, the day I know you not, young gentleman, but I pray you tell me, is my boy, God rest his soul, alive or dead?

Laun Do you not know me, father?

Gol Alack, sir, I am sand-blind, I know you not.

Laun Nay, indeed, if you had your eyes, you might fail of the knowing me. It is a wise father that knows his own child. Well, old man, I will tell you news of your son, give me your blessing, truth will come to light, murder cannot be hid long, a man's son may, but at the length truth will out.

Gol Pray you, sir, stand up, I am sure you are not Launcelot, my boy.

Laun Pray you, let's have no more fooling about it, but give me your blessing. I am Launcelot, your boy, that was your son, that is your child, that shall be. 91

Gol I cannot think you are my son.

Laun I know not what I shall think of that, but I am Launcelot, the Jew's man, and I am sure Margery, your wife, is my mother.

Gol Her name is Margery, indeed, I'll be sworn, if thou be Launcelot, thou art mine own flesh and blood. Lord, worshipped might he be, what a beard hast thou got! thou hast got more hair on thy chin than Dobbin in my fill horse has on his tail. 101

Laun It should seem then, that Dobbin's tail grows backward. I am sure he had more hair of his tail than I have of my face, when I last saw him.

Gol Lord, how art thou charmed! How dost

thou and thy master agree? I have brought him a present How 'gree you now?

Laun Well well but, for mine own part as I have set up my rest to run away, so I will not rest till I have run some ground My master's a very Jew give him a present! give him a halter I am famished in his service, you may tell every finger I have with my ribs Father I am glad you are come give me your present to one Master Bassanio who indeed, gives rare new liveries if I serve not him I will run as far as God has any ground O rare fortune! here comes the man to him father, for I am a Jew, if I serve the Jew any longer 120

Enter BASSANIO, with LEONARDO and other followers

Bass You may do so, but let it be so hasted that supper be ready at the farthest by five of the clock See these letters delivered, put the liveries to making, and desire Gratiano to come anon to my lodging [Exit a Servant

Laun To him father

Gob God bless your worship!

Bass Gramercy! wouldst thou aught with me?

Gob Here's my son sir a poor boy— 129

Laun Not a poor boy sir but the rich Jew's man that would sir, as my father shall specify—

Gob He hath a great infection sir as one would say, to serve—

Laun Indeed the short and the long is I serve the Jew and have a desire as my father shall specify—

Gob His master and he saving your worship's reverence are scarce cater cousins— 139

Laun To be brief the very truth is that the Jew, having done me wrong doth cause me as my father being I hope an old man shall testify unto you—

Gob I have here a dish of doves that I would bestow upon your worship and my suit is—

Laun In very brief the suit is impertinent to myself as your worship shall know by this honest old man and, though I say it though old man yet poor man my father

Bass One speak for both What would you?

Laun Serve you sir 151

Gob That is the very defect of the matter sir

Bass I know thee well thou hast obtained thy suit

Shylock thy master spoke with me this day And hath preferred thee if it be preferred To leave a rich Jew's service to become The follower of so poor a gentleman

Laun The old proverb is very well parted Between my master Shylock and you sir you have the grace of God sir, and he hath enough

Bass Thou speak'st it well Go father, with thy son

Take leave of thy old master and inquire

My lodging out Give him a livery

More guarded than his fellows' see it done

Laun Father, in I cannot get a service, no, I have neither a tongue in my head Well if any man in Italy have a fairer table which doth offer to swear upon a boal I shall have good fortune Go to, here's a simple line of life here's a small trifle of wives alas fifteen wives is nothing! eleven widows and nine maids is a simple coming in for one man and then to 'scape drowning thrice, and to be in peril of my life with the edge of a feather-bed, here are simple scapes Well if Fortune be a woman she's a good wench for this gear Father, come I'll take my leave of the Jew in the twinkling of an eye

[Exit LAUNCELOT and OLD GOBBO]

Bass I pray thee good Leonardo think on this These things being bought and orderly bestowed, Return in haste, for I do feast to night 180

My best esteem'd acquaintance hie thee go

Leon My best endeavours shall be done herein

Enter GRATIANO

Gr Where is your master?

Leon Yonder sir, he walks [Exit

Gr Signior Bassanio!

Bass Gratiano!

Gra I have a suit to you

Bass You have obtain'd it

Gri You must needs deny me I must go with you to Belmont

Bass Why then you must But hear thee, Gratiano

Thou art too wild too rude and bold of voice, Parts that become thee happily enough 191

And in such eyes as ours appear not faults, But where thou art not known why there they show

Something too liberal Pray thee, take pain To allay with some cold drops of modesty Thy skipping spirit lest through thy wild behaviour

I be misconstrued in the place I go to And lose my hopes

Gra Signior Bassanio hear me If I do not put on a sober habit 199

Talk with respect and swear but now and then

Wear prayer books in my pocket, look demurely, Nay more, while grace is saying hood mine eyes

Thus with my hat and sigh and say amen

Use all the observance of civility,

I like one well studied in a sad ostent

To please his gramin never trust me more.

Bass Well we shall see your bearing

Gra Nay but I bar to-night you shall not
gauge me
B¹ what we do to-night
B¹ No that were pity
I would entreat you rather to put on 10
Your boldest suit of mirth for we have friends
That purpose merriment But fare you well
I have some business
Gra And I must to Lorenzo and the rest
But we will visit you at supper time [Exeunt]

SCENE III The same a room in Shylock's house

Enter JESSICA and LAUNCELOT

J¹ I am sorry thou wilt leave my father so
Our house is hell and thou a merry devil
Didst rob it of some taste of redousness
But fare thee well there is a ducat for thee
And Launcelot soon at supper shalt thou see
Lorenzo who is thy new master's guest
Give him this letter do it secretly
And so farewell I would not have my father
See me in talk with thee 9

Laun Adieu! tears exhibit my tongue Most
beautiful pagan most sweet Jew if a Christian
did not play the knave and get thee I am much
deceived But adieu these foolish drops do
something drown my manly spirit adieu
J¹ Farewell good Launcelot

[Exit LAUNCELOT]

A lack what heinous sin is it in me
To be ashamed to be my father's child!
But though I am a daughter to his blood,
I am not to his manners O Lorenzo
If thou keep promise I shall end this strife 20
Become a Christian and thy loving wife [Exit]

SCENE III The same a street

Enter GRATIANO, LORENZO, SALARINO and
BALANCIO

Lor Nay we will sink away in supper time,
Disguise us at my lodging and return,
All in an hour

G¹ We have not made good preparation.

Salar We have not spoke us yet of torch
bearers

Silm 'Tis vile, unless it may be quantly
order'd,

And better in my mind not undertook

Lor 'Tis now but four o'clock we have two
hours
To furnish us

Enter LAUNCELOT with a letter

Friend Launcelot what's the news?

Laun An it shall please you to break up this
it shall seem to signify 11

Lor I know the hand in faith 'tis a fair hand
And whiter than the paper it writ on
Is the fair hand that writ

G¹ Love news in faith

Laun By your leave sir

Lor Whither goest thou?

L¹ Marry sir to bid my old master the Jew
to sup to-night with my new master the Christian

Lor Hold here take this tell gentle Jessica I
will not fail her speak it privately 21

Go gentlemen, [Exit LAUNCELOT]

Will you prepare you for this masque to-night?

I am provided of a torch bearer

Salar Ay marry I'll be gone about it straight

Silm And so will I

Lor Meet me and Gratiano

At Gratiano's lodging some hour hence

Salar 'Tis good we do so

[Exit SALARINO and BALANCIO]

G¹ Was not that letter from fair Jessica?

Lor I must needs tell thee all She hath directed
How I shall take her from her father's house, 31

What gold and jewels she is furnish'd with

What page's suit she hath in readiness

If ere the Jew her father come to heaven

It will be for his gentle daughter's sake

And never dare misfortune cross her foot

Unless she do it under this excuse

That she is issue to a faithless Jew

Come go with me peruse this as thou goest

Fair Jessica shall be my torch bearer [Exeunt]

SCENE V The same before Shylock's house

Enter SHYLOCK and LAUNCELOT

Shy Well thou shalt see thy eyes shall be thy
judg

The difference of old Shylock and Bassanio —

What Jessica — thou shalt not gormandise,

As thou hast done with me — What Jessica! —

And sleep and snore and rend apparel out —

Why Jessica, I say!

Laun Why Jessica

Shy Who bids thee call? I do not bid thee call

Laun Your worship was wont to tell me that
I could do nothing without bidding

Enter JESSICA

J¹ Call you? what is your will? 39

Shy I am bid forth to supper Jessica

There are my keys But wherefore should I go?

I am not bid for love they flatter me

But yet I'll go in hate to feed upon

The prod gal Christian Jessica my girl

Look to my house I am right loath to go

There is some ill a brewing towards my rest

For I did dream of money bags to-night

Lam I beseech you, sir, go my young master
doth expect your reproach 20

Shy So do I his

Lam And they have conspired together I will
not say you shall see a masque, but if you do
then it was not for nothing that my nose fell
a bleeding on Black-Monday last at six o'clock 't
the morning falling out that year on Ash Wed-
nesday was four year in the afternoon

Shy What, are there masques? Hear you me,

Jessica

Lock up my doors, and when you hear the drum
And the vile squealing of the wry neck'd fife 30
Clamber not you up to the casements then,
Nor thrust your head into the public street
To gaze on Christian fools with varnish'd faces,
But stop my house's ears, I mean my casements
Let not the sound of shallow foppery enter
My sober house By Jacob's staff I swear
I have no mind of feasting forth to night
But I will go Go you before me sirrah,
Say I will come

Lam I will go before, sir Mistress, look out at
window, for all this 41

There will come a Christian by,
Will be worth a Jew's eye [Exit

Shy What says that fool of Hagar's offspring,
ha?

Jes His words were "Farewell mistress",
nothing else

Shy The patch is kind enough but a huge
feeder

Snail slow in profit, and he sleeps by day
More than the wild cat drones his note with me,
Therefore I part with him and part with him

To one that I would have him help to waste 50
His borrow'd purse Well Jessica go in
Perhaps I will return immediately

Do as I bid you shut doors after you
Fast bind fast find,

A proverb never stale in thrifty mind [Exit

Jes Farewell, and if my fortune be not cross
I have a father, you a daughter lost [Exit

SCENE VI The same

Enter GRATIANO and SALARINO masqued

Gra This is the pent house under which
Lorenzo

Desired us to make stand

Salar His hour is almost past

Gra And it is marvel he out-dwells his hour,
For lovers ever run before the clock

Salar O ten times faster Venus' pigeons fly
To seal love's bonds new made than they are
wont

To keep oblig'd faith unforfeited'

Gra That ever holds who riseth from a feast
With that keen appetite that he sits down?
Where is the horse that doth untread again 10
His tedious measures with the unbated fire
That he did pace them first? All things that are,
Are with more spirit chased than enjoy'd
How like a younker or a prodigal
The scarfed bark puts from her native bay,
Hugg'd and embraced by the strumpet wind!
How like the prodigal doth she return
With over weather'd ribs and ragged sails
Lean rent and beggar'd by the strumpet wind!
Salar Here comes Lorenzo more of this
hereafter 20

Enter LORENZO

Lor Sweet friends your patience for my long
abode,
Not I but my affairs have made you wait
When you shall please to play the thieves for
wives
I'll watch as long for you then Approach
Here dwells my father Jew Ho! who's within?

Enter JESSICA above, in boy's clothes

Jes Who are you? Tell me for more certainty,
Albeit I'll swear that I do know your tongue

Lor Lorenzo and thy love

Jes Lorenzo certain and my love indeed,
For who lov'st I so much? And now who knows
But you Lorenzo whether I am yours? 37

Lor Heaven and thy thoughts are witness that
thou art

Jes Here catch this casket, it is worth the
pains

I am glad 'tis night you do not look on me,
For I am much ashamed of my exchange
But love is blind and lovers cannot see
The pretty follies that themselves commit,
For if they could Cupid himself would blush
To see me thus transformed to a boy

Lor Descend for you must be my torch-
bearer 40

Jes What must I hold a candle to my shames?
They in themselves good sooth, are too too light
Why 'tis an office of discovery love,
And I should be obscured

Lor So are you sweet,
Even in the lovely garnish of a boy
But come at once

For the close night doth play the runaway,
And we are starv'd for at Bassanio's feast

Jes I will make fast the doors and gild myself
With some more ducats and be with you
straight [Exit above 50

Gra Now, by my hood a Gentle and no Jew

Lor Beshrew me but I love her heartily
For she is wise if I can juſtice of her
And fair ſhe is if that mine eyes be true
And true ſhe is as ſhe hath proved herſelf
And therefore like herſelf wiſe fair and true
Shall ſhe be placed in my conſtant ſoul

Enter JESSICA below

What art thou come? On gentlemen away!
Our marriage mates by this time for us ſtay
[*Exit with JESSICA and SALARINO*]

Enter ANTONIO

Ant Who's there? 60
Gra Signior Antonio
Ant Fie fie Gratiano! where are all the reſt?
'Tis nine o'clock our friends all ſtay for you
No masque to-night the wind is come about
Be ſano preſently will go aboard
I have ſent twenty out to ſeek for you
[*C*] I am glad on't I deſire no more delight
Than to be under ſail and gone to-night [*Exeunt*]

SCENE VII Belmont a room in Portia's houſe
Flouriſh of cornets. *Enter PORTIA with the PRINCE
OF MOROCCO in their trains*

Por Go draw aside the curtains and diſcover
The ſeveral caſkets to this noble prince
Now make your choice
Pr The firſt of gold who this inſcription
bears
Who chooſeth me ſhall gain what many men
deſire
The ſecond ſilver which this promiſe carries
Who chooſeth me ſhall get as much as he de-
ſerves
This third, dull lead, with warning all as blunt
Who chooſeth me muſt give and hazard all he
hath
How ſhall I know if I do chooſe the right? 10
Pr The one of them contains my picture
Prince
If you chooſe that then I am yours withal
Pr Some god direct my judgement Let me
ſee
I will ſurvey the inſcriptions back again
What ſays this leaden caſket?
Who chooſeth me muſt give and hazard all he
hath
Muſt give for what? for lead? hazard for
lead
Thiſt caſket threatens When that hazard all
Do it in hope of fair advantages
A golden mine ſtroops not to ſhow of dross 20
I'll then ſee you have and a whit for lead
What ſays the ſilver with her virgin hue?

Who chooſeth me ſhall get as much as he de-
ſerves
As much as he deſerves! Pauſe there Morocco
And weigh thy value with an even hand
If thou be ſtated by thy eſtimation
Thou doſt deſerve enough and yet enough
May not extend ſo far as to the lady
And yet to be afraid of my deſerving
Were but a weak diſabling of my ſelf 30
As much as I deſerve! Why that's the lady
I do in birth deſerve her and in fortunes
In graces and in qualities of breeding
But more than theſe in love I do deſerve
What if I ſtray do no further but choſe here?
Let ſee once more this ſaying graved in gold
Who chooſeth me ſhall gain what many men
deſire
Why that's the lady all the world deſires her
From the four corners of the earth they come
To kiſs this ſhrine this mortal breathing ſaint 40
The Hyrcanian deſerts and the vaſt wilds
Of wide Arabia are as thoroughfares now
For princes to come view fair Portia
The watery kingdom whoſe ambitious head
Spits in the face of heaven is no bar
To ſtop the foreign ſpirits but they come
As o'er a brook to ſee fair Portia
One of theſe three contains her heavenly picture
Is't like that lead contains her? Twere lamination
To think ſo baſe a thought it were too groſs 50
To rib her cœreloth in the obſcure grave
Or ſhall I think in ſilver ſhe's immured
Being ten times undervalued to tried gold?
O ſtill thought! Never ſo rich a gem
Was ſet in worſe than gold They have in Eng-
land
A count that bears the figure of an angel
Stamped in gold but that's inſculp'd upon
Be't here an angel in a golden bed
Lies all within I'll enter me the key
Here do I chooſe and thrive I aſſume 60
Pr There take it hence and if my form lie
there
Then I am yours [*He unlocks the golden caſket*]
Mo O hell what have we here?
A carrion Death within whoſe empty eye
There is a written ſcroll! I'll read the writing
[*Read*] All that glitters is not gold
Often have you heard that told
Many a man he ſeeth hath ſold
But my outſide to behold
Gilded tombs do warn ſinfolld 70
Had you been as wiſe as bold
Young in limbs in judgement old
Your anſwer had not been inſcroll'd
Fare you well your ſuit is cold

Cold, indeed, and labour lost
 Then farewell heat, and welcome frost!
 Portia, adieu I have too griev'd a heart
 To take a tedious leave thus losers part
[Exit with his train Flourish of cornets
For A gentle riddance Draw the curtains, go
Let all of his complexion choose me so *[Exeunt]*

SCENE VIII Venice a street

Enter SALARINO and SALANIO

Salar Why, man I saw Bassanio under sail
 With him is Gratiano gone along,
 And in their ship I am sure Lorenzo is not
Salan The villain Jew with outcries raised the
 Dule,
 Who went with him to search Bassanio's ship
Salar He came too late, the ship was under sail
 But there the Duke was given to understand
 That in a gondola were seen together
 Lorenzo and his amorous Jessica
 Besides Antonio certified the Duke
 They were not with Bassanio in his ship
Salan I never heard a passion so confused,
 So strange, outrageous, and so variable
 As the dog Jew did utter in the streets
 "My daughter! O my ducats! O my daughter!
 Fled with a Christian! O my Christian ducats!
 Justice! the law! my ducats, and my daughter!
 A sealed bag, two sealed bags of ducats
 Of double ducats, stolen from me by my daughter!
 And jewels, two stones, two rich and precious
 stones,
 Stolen by my daughter! Justice! find the girl
 She hath the stones upon her and the ducats"
Salar Why, all the boys in Venice follow him,
 Crying "His stones, his daughter, and his
 ducats"
Salan Let good Antonio look he keep his day,
 Or he shall pay for this
Salar Marry well remember'd
 I reason'd with a Frenchman yesterday,
 Who told me in the narrow seas that part
 The French and English there miscarried
 A vessel of our country richly fraught
 I thought upon Antonio when he told me
 And wish'd in silence that it were not his
Salan You were best to tell Antonio what you
 hear,
 Yet do not suddenly, for it may grieve him
Salar Al under gentleman treads not the earth
 I saw Bassanio and Antonio part
 Bassanio told him he would make some speed
 Of his return he answer'd "Do not so,
 Slubber not business for my sake Bassanio
 But stay the very riping of the time,"

And for the Jew's bond which he hath of me,
 Let it not enter in your mind of love
 Be merry, and employ your chiefest thoughts
 To courtship and such fair ostents of love
 As shall conveniently become you there"
 And even there his eye being big with tears,
 Turning his face, he put his hand behind him,
 And with affection wondrous sensible
 He wrung Bassanio's hand, and so they parted
Salan I think he only loves the world for him
 I pray thee let us go and find him out
 And quicken his embraced heaviness
 With some delight or other
Salar Do we so *[Exeunt]*

SCENE IX Belmont a room in Portia's house

Enter NERISSA with a Servitor

Ner Quick, quick, I pray thee, draw the curtain straight
 The Prince of Arragon hath taken his oath,
 And comes to his election presently

*Flourish of cornets Enter the PRINCE OF ARRAGON,
 PORTIA, and their trains*

Por Behold, there stand the caskets, noble
 Prince
 If you choose that wherein I am contain'd,
 Straight shall our nuptial rites be solemnized
 But if you fail without more speech my lord,
 You must be gone from hence immediately
Ar I am enjoined by oath to observe three
 things

First never to unfold to any one
 Which casket 'twas I chose, next if I fail
 Of the right casket never in my life
 To woo a maid in way of marriage
 Lastly
 If I do fail in fortune of my choice
 Immediately to leave you and be gone
Por To these injunctions every one doth swear
Ar And so have I address'd me Fortune now
 To my heart's hope! Gold silver and base lead
 "Who chooseth me must give and hazard all he
 hath"
 You shall look fairer ere I give or hazard
 What says the golden chest? ha! let me see
 "Who chooseth me shall gain what many men
 desire"
 What many men desire! that "many" may be
 meant
 By the fool multitude that choose by show,
 Not learning more than the fond eye doth teach
 Which pries not to the interior but like the
 martlet
 Builds in the weather on the outward wall

Even in the force and road of casualty 30
 I will not choose what many men desire
 Because I will not jump with common spirits
 And rank me with the barbarous multitudes
 Why then to thee thou silver treasure house
 Tell me once more what title thou dost bear
 Who chooseth me shall get as much as he de-
 serves

And well said too for who shall go about
 To cozen fortune and be honourable
 Without the stamp of merit? Let none presume
 To wear an undeserved dignity 40
 O that estates degrees and offices
 Were not derived corruptly and that clear
 honour

Were purchased by the merit of the wearer!
 How many then should cover that stand bare
 How many be commanded that command!
 How much low peasantry would then be glean'd
 From the true seed of honour! and how much
 honour

Picked from the chaff and ruin of the times
 To be new varnish'd. Well but to my choice
 Who chooseth me shall get as much as he de-
 serves 50

I will assume desert. Give me a key for this
 And instantly unlock my fortunes here.

He opens the silver casket

Por Too long a pause for that which you find
 there

Ar What's here? the portrait of a blinking
 idiot

Presenting me a schedule. I will read it
 How much unlike art thou to Portia!
 How much unlike my hopes and my deservings!
 Who chooseth me shall haue as much as he de-
 serves

Dost I deserve no more than a fool's head?
 Is that my prize? are my deserts no better? 60

Por To offend and judge are distinct offices
 And of opposed natures

A What is here?
[Reads] The fire seven times tried this

Seven times tried that judgment is

That did never choose amiss

Some there be that shadows kiss

Such have but a shadow's bliss

There be fools all ye know

Shier doer and so on as this

Tell me what wife you will to bed,

I will ever be your head

So be gone you are spoil

Still more will I shall appear

For the time I live or here

With one fool she did come to woo,

But I go away with two

Sweet adieu I'll keep my oath

Patience to bear my wroth

[Exit ARRAGON and train]

Por Thus hath the candle sing'd the moth
 O these deliberate fools! when they do choose,
 They have the wisdom by their wit to lose 80

Ar The ancient saying is no heresy

Hanging and wiving goes by destiny

Por Come draw the curtain. *Nerissa*

Enter a SERVANT

Ser What is my lady's?

Por Here what would my lord?

Ser Madam, there is alighted at your gate

A young Venetian, one that comes before

To signify the approaching of his lord

From whom he bringeth sensible regrets

To wit, besides commends and courteous breath,

Gifts of rich value. Yet I have not seen 90

So likely an ambassador of love

A day in April never came so sweet

To show how costly summer was at hand

As this force-spurrer comes before his lord

Por No more I pray thee. I am half-afraid

Thou wilt say anon he is some kin to thee

Thou spend'st such high-day wit in praising him

Come, come, *Nerissa*, for I long to see

Quick Cupid's post that comes so mannerly 100

Ar Bassanio, lord Love, if thy will it be!

[Exit]

ACT III

SCENE I. Venice a street

Enter SALARIO and SALARINO

Sal Now what news on the Rialto?

Sal Why, yet it lives, there unchecked, that
 Antonio hath a ship of rich lading wrecked on the
 narrow seas, the Goodwins. I think they call the
 place a very dangerous flat and fatal, where the
 carcasses of many a tall ship lie buried as they say,
 if my gossip Report be an honest woman of her
 word

Sal I would she were as lying a gossip in that
 as ever knapped ginger made her neighbours
 believe she wept for the death of a third husband

But it is true, without any slips of prolixity or
 crossing the plain highway of talk, that the good
 Antonio, the honest Antonio—O that I had a
 title good enough to keep his name company!—

Sal Come the full stop

Sal Ha, what sayest thou? Why, the end is
 he hath lost a ship

Sal I would it might prove the end of his
 losses 20

Sal Let me say amen, let me lest the

devil cross my prayer, for here he comes in the likeness of a Jew

Enter SHYLOCK

How now, Shylock! what news among the merchants?

Shy You knew, none so well, none so well as you, of my daughter's flight

Salar That's certain I for my part knew the tailor that made the wings she flew withal 30

Salan And Shylock, for his own part, knew the bird was fledged and then it is the complexion of them all to leave the dam

Shy She is damned for it

Salar That's certain, if the devil may be her judge

Shy My own flesh and blood to rebel!

Salan Out upon it, old carrion! rebels it at these years? 39

Shy I say my daughter is my flesh and blood

Salar There's more difference between thy flesh and hers than between jet and ivory, more between your bloods than there is between red wine and rhenish. But tell us, do you hear whether Antonio have had any loss at sea or no?

Shy There I have another bad match: a bankrupt, a prodigal who dare scarce show his head on the Rialto: a beggar that was used to come so smug upon the mart: let him look to his bond: he was wont to call me usurer: let him look to his bond: he was wont to lend money for a Christian courtesy: let him look to his bond

Salar Why, I am sure if he forfeit thou wilt not take his flesh: what's that good for?

Shy To bait fish withal: if it will feed nothing else, it will feed my revenge. He hath disgraced me, and hindered me half a million: laughed at my losses, mocked at my gains, scorned my nation, thwarted my bargains, cooled my friends, heated mine enemies: and what's his reason? I am a Jew. Hath not a Jew eyes? hath not a Jew hands, organs, dimensions, senses, affections, passions? fed with the same food, hurt with the same weapons, subject to the same diseases, healed by the same means, warmed and cooled by the same winter and summer as a Christian is? If you prick us, do we not bleed? if you tickle us, do we not laugh? if you poison us, do we not die? and if you wrong us, shall we not revenge? If we are like you in the rest, we will resemble you in that. If a Jew wrong a Christian, what's his humility? Revenge. If a Christian wrong a Jew, what should his sufferance be by Christian example? Why, revenge. The villainy you teach me, I will execute, and it shall go hard but I will better the instruction

Enter a SERVANT

Serv Gentlemen, my master Antonio is at his house and desires to speak with you both

Salar We have been up and down to seek him

Enter TUBAL

Salan Here comes another of the tribe: a third cannot be matched unless the devil himself turn Jew. *[Exit SALANIO, SALARINO, and SERVANT]*

Shy How now, Tubal! what news from Genoa? hast thou found my daughter?

Tub I often came where I did hear of her, but cannot find her

Shy Why there, there there there! a diamond gone: cost me two thousand ducats in Frankfort! The curse never fell upon our nation till now, I never felt it till now: two thousand ducats in that and other precious, precious jewels! I would my daughter were dead at my foot and the jewels in her ear! would she were hearsed at my foot and the ducats in her coffin! No news of them? Why, so, and I know not what's spent in the search: why thou loss upon loss! the thief gone with so much and so much to find the thief, and no satisfaction, no revenge, nor no ill luck stirring but what lights on my shoulders, no sighs but of my breathing, no tears but of my shedding 101

Tub Yes, other men have ill luck too: Antonio as I heard in Genoa—

Shy What what what? ill luck, ill luck?

Tub Hath an argosy cast away, coming from Tripolis

Shy I thank God, I thank God. Is't true, is't true?

Tub I spoke with some of the sailors that escaped the wreck. 110

Shy I thank thee, good Tubal: good news, good news! 'ha, ha! where? in Genoa?

Tub Your daughter spent in Genoa, as I heard, in one night fourscore ducats

Shy Thou stickest a dagger in me: I shall never see my gold again: fourscore ducats at a sitting! fourscore ducats!

Tub There came divers of Antonio's creditors in my company to Venice, that swear he cannot choose but break. 120

Shy I am very glad of it: I'll plague him, I'll torture him, I am glad of it

Tub One of them showed me a ring that he had of your daughter for a monkey

Shy Out upon her! Thou torturest me, Tubal! it was my turquoise: I had it of Leah when I was a bachelor: I would not have given it for a wilderness of monkey's

Tub But Antonio is certainly undone 19
Shy Nay that's true that's very true Go
Tubal fee me an officer bespeak him a fortnight
 before I will have the heart of him if he forfeit
 for were he out of Venice I can make what
 merchandise I will Go go *Tubal* and meet me
 at our synagogue go good *Tubal* at our syna-
 gogue *Tub* I [Exeunt]

SCENE II Belmont a room in Portia's house

Enter BASSANIO PORTIA GRATIANO NERISSA
 and attendants

Por I pray you tarry pause a day or two
 Before you hazard for in choosing wrong
 I lose your company therefore forbear awhile
 There's something tells me but it is not love
 I would not lose you and you know yourself
 Hate counsels not in such a quality
 But lest you should not understand me well—
 And yet a maiden hath no tongue but thought—
 I would detain you here some month or two
 Before you venture for me I could teach you
 How to choose right but I am then forsworn 11
 So will I never be so may you miss me
 But if you do you'll make me wish a sin
 That I had been forsworn Beshrew your eyes
 They have overlooked me and divided me
 One half of me is yours the other half yours
 Mine own, I would say but if mine then yours
 And so all yours O these naughty times
 Put bars between the owners and their rights
 And so though yours not yours Prove it so
 Let fortune go to hell for it not I 21
 I speak too long but 'tis to prize the time
 To eke it and to draw it out in length
 To stay you from election

Bass Let me choose

For as I am I live upon the rack

Por Upon the rack Bassanio! then confess

What treason there is mingled with your love

Bass None but that ugly treason of mistrust

Which makes me fear the enjoyment of my love

There may as well be amity and life 30

'Tween snow and fire as treason and my love

Por Ay but I fear you speak upon the rack

Where men enforced do speak anything

Bass Promise me life and I'll confess the truth

Por Well then, confess and live

Bass Confess and love

I had been the very sum of my confession

O happy torment when my torturer

Doth teach me answers for deliverance!

But let me to my fortune and the caskets

Por Ay ay then! I am lock'd in one of them 40

If you do love me you will find me out

Nerissa and the rest stand all aloof

Let music sound while he doth make his choice
 Then if he lose he makes a swan like end
 Fading in music that the comparison
 May stand more proper my eye shall be the
 stream

And watery death bed for him He may win
 And what is music then? Then music is
 Even as the flourish when true subjects bow
 To a new crowned monarch such it is 50
 As are those dulcet sounds in break of day
 That creep into the dreaming bridegroom's ear
 And summon him to marriage Now he goes
 With no less presence but with much more love
 Than young Alcides when he did redeem
 The virgin tribute paid by howling Troy
 To the sea monster I stand for sacrifice
 The rest aloof are the Dardanian wives
 With bleared visages come forth to view
 The issue of the exploit Go Hercules! 60
 Live thou I live with much much more dismay
 I view the fight than thou that makest the fray

Music whilst BASSANIO comments on the caskets
 to himself

SONG

Tell me where is fancy bred

Or in the heart or in the head?

How begot how nourished?

Reply reply

It is engender'd in the eyes

With gazing fed and fancy dies

In the cradle where it lies

Let us all ring fancy's knell 70

I'll begin it—Ding dong bell

All Ding dong bell

Bass So may the outward shows be least themselves

The world is still deceived with ornament

In law what plea so tainted and corrupt

But being season'd with a gracious voice,

Obscures the show of evil? In religion

What damned error but some sober brow

Will bless it and approve it with a text

Hiding the grossness with fair ornament? 80

There is no vice so simple but assumes

Some mark of virtue on his outward parts

How many cowards whose hearts are all as false

As stairs of sand wear yet upon their chins

The beards of Hercules and frowning Mars

Who inward search'd have livers white as milk

And these assume but valour's outwardment

To render them redoubtful! Look on beauty

And you shall see 'tis purchased by the weight 90

Which therein works a miracle in nature

Making them the lightest that wear most of it

So are those crisped snaky golden locks

Which make such wanton gambols with the wind,
 Upon supposed fairness, often known
 To be the dowry of a second head,
 The skull that bred them in the sepulchre
 Thus ornament is but the guiled shore
 To a most dangerous sea, the beauteous scarf
 Veiling an Indian beauty, in a word 99
 The seeming truth which cunning times put on
 To entrap the wisest Therefore, thou gaudy
 gold,
 Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee,
 Nor none of thee, thou pale and common drudge
 'Tween man and man but thou thou meagre
 lead

Which rather threatenest than dost promise aught,
 Thy paleness moves me more than eloquence,
 And here choose I joy be the consequence!
Por [Aside] How all the other passions fleet to
 air,

As doubtful thoughts, and rash-embraced despair,
 And shuddering fear, and green eyed jealousy!
 O love 111
 Be moderate, allay thy ecstasy
 In measure rein thy joy, scant this excess
 I feel too much thy blessing, make it less,
 For fear I surfeit

Bass What find I here?

Opening the leaden casket

Fair Portia's counterfeit! What demi god
 Hath come so near creation? Move these eyes?
 Or whether, riding on the balls of mine,
 Seem they in motion? Here are sever'd lips,
 Parted with sugar breath so sweet a bar 120
 Should sunder such sweet friends Here in her
 hairs

The painter plays the spider and hath woven
 A golden mesh to entrap the hearts of men
 Faster than gnats in cobwebs but her eyes—
 How could he see to do them? having made one,
 Methinks it should have power to steal both his
 And leave itself unfurnish'd Yet look how far
 The substance of my praise doth wrong this
 shadow

In underprizing it, so far this shadow
 Doth limp behind the substance Here's the
 scroll, 130

The content and summary of my fortune
[Reads] "You that choose not by the view,
 Chance as fair and choose as true!
 Since this fortune falls to you,
 Be content and seek no new
 If you be well pleased with this
 And hold your fortune for your bliss
 Turn you where your lady is
 And claim her with a loving kiss"

A gentle scroll Fair lady, by your leave, 140

I come by note, to give and to receive
 Like one of two contending in a prize,
 That thinks he hath done well in people's eyes,
 Hearing applause and unversal shout
 Giddy in spirit, still gazing in a doubt
 Whether those peals of praise be his or no,
 So thrice-fair lady, stand I even so,
 As doubtful whether what I see be true,
 Until confirm'd sign'd ratified by you
Por You see me Lord Bassanio where I stand,
 Such as I am though for myself alone 151
 I would not be ambitious in my wish,
 To wish myself much better, yet, for you
 I would be trebled twenty times myself
 A thousand times more fair ten thousand times
 More rich,
 That only to stand high in your account,
 I might in virtues beauties livings friends,
 Exceed account but the full sum of me
 Is sum of something which to term in gross
 Is an unlesson'd girl, unschool'd unpractis'd, 161
 Happy in this she is not yet so old
 But she may learn happier than this,
 She is not bred so dull but she can learn
 Happiest of all is that her gentle spirit
 Commits itself to yours to be directed
 As from her lord her governor, her king
 Myself and what is mine to you and yours
 Is now converted but now I was the lord
 Of this fair mansion, master of my servants 170
 Queen o'er my self and even now, but now,
 This house these servants and this same my self
 Are yours, my lord I give them with this ring,
 Which when you part from, lose or give away,
 Let it presage the ruin of your love
 And be my vantage to exclaim on you
Bass Madam, you have bereft me of all words,
 Only my blood speaks to you in my veins,
 And there is such confusion in my powers,
 As after some oration fairly spoke 180
 By a beloved prince there doth appear
 Among the buzzing pleased multitude
 Where every something being blent together
 Turns to a wild of nothing save of joy
 Express'd and not express'd But when this ring
 Parts from this finger, then parts life from hence
 O then be bold to say Bassanio's dead!
Ner My lord and lady it is now our time,
 That have stood by and seen our wishes prosper,
 To cry good joy good joy my lord and lady!
Gra My lord Bassanio and my gentle lady,
 I wish you all the joy that you can wish
 For I am sure you can wish none from me
 And when your honours mean to solemnize
 The bargain of your faith I do beseech you
 Even at that time I may be married too

Bass With all my heart so thou canst get a wife
Gra I thank your lordship you have got me one
 My eyes my lord can look as swift as yours
 You saw the mistress I beheld the maid 200
 You loved I loved full intermission
 No more pertains to me my lord than you
 Your fortune stood upon the casket there
 And so did mine too as the matter falls
 For wooing here until I sweat again
 And swearing till my very roof was dry
 With oaths of love at last if promise last
 I got a promise of this fair one here
 To have her love provided that your fortune
 Achieved her mistress

For Is this true Nerissa? 10
Ner Madam it is so you stand pleased withal
Bass And do you Gratiano mean good faith?
Gra Yes faith my lord
Bass Our feast shall be much honour'd in your
 marriage
Gra We'll play with them the first boy for a
 thousand ducats

Ner What and stake down?
Gra No we shall ne'er win at that sport and
 stake down 220
But who comes here? Lorenzo and his infidel?
What and my old Venetian friend Salerio?

Enter LORENZO, JESSICA and SALERIO
a Messenger from Venice

Bass Lorenzo and Salerio welcome hither
 If that the youth of my new interest here
 Have power to bid you welcome By your leave,
 I bid my friends and countrymen
 Sweet Portia welcome

For So do I my lord
 They are entirely welcome
For I thank your honour For my part my lord
 My purpose was not to have seen you here 240
 But meeting with Salerio by the way
 He intreat me past all saying nay
 To come with him alone

Salerio I did my lord
 And I have reason for it Sirrnot Antonio
 Commends him to you [Cries BASSANO a letter]
Bass Let I hope his letter
 I pray you tell me how my good friend doth
Salerio Not sick my lord unless it be in mind
 Nor well unless in mind his letter there
 Will show you his estate

Cressida cheer you stranger bid her
 welcome 40
 Your hand Salerio what's the news from
 Venice?
 If a doth that robs all merch and good Antonio?
 I know he will be glad of our success

We are the Jasons we have won the fleece
Salerio I would you had won the fleece that he
 hath lost
For There are some shrewd contents in your
 same paper
 That steals the colour from Bassanio's cheek
 Some dear friend dead else nothing in the world
 Could turn so much the constitution
 Of any constant man What worse and worse!
 With leave Bassanio I am half myself 50
 And I must freely have the half of anything
 That this same paper brings you

Bass O sweet Portia
 Here are a few of the unpleasant words
 That ever blotted paper! Gentle lady
 When I did first impart my love to you
 I freely told you all the wealth I had
 Ran in my veins I was a gentleman
 And then I told you true and yet dear lady
 Rating myself at nothing you shall see
 How much I was a braggar When I told you
 My state was nothing I should then have told
 you

That I was worse than nothing for indeed,
 I have engaged myself to a dear friend
 Engaged my friend to his mere enemy
 To feed my means Here is a letter lady
 The paper as the body of my friend
 And every word in it a gaping wound
 Issuing life blood But is it true Salerio?
 Have all his ventures fail'd? What not one hit?
 From Tripolis from Mexico and England 270
 From Lisbon Barbary and India?
 And not one vessel scape the dreadful touch
 Of merchant marring rocks?

Salerio Not one my lord
 Besides it should appear that if he had
 The present money to discharge the few
 He would not take it Never did I know
 A creature that did bear the shape of man
 So keen and greedy to confound a man 280
 He plies the Duke at morning and at night
 And doth impeach the freedom of the state
 If they deny him justice twenty merchants
 The Duke himself and the magnificoes
 Of greatest port have all persuaded with him
 But none can drive him from the envious plea
 Of forfeiture of justice and his bond
 For when I was with him I have heard him
 swear

To Tubal and to Chus his countrymen
 That he would rather have Antonio's flesh 290
 Than twenty times the value of the sum
 That he did owe him and I know my lord
 If law authority and power deny not
 It will go hard with poor Antonio

Por Is it your dear friend that is thus in trouble?

Bass The dearest friend to me, the kindest man
The best-condition'd and unwearied spirit
In doing courtesies, and one in whom
The ancient Roman honour more appears
Than any that draws breath in Italy

Por What sum owes he the Jew? 300

Bass For me three thousand ducats

Por What, no more?

Pay him six thousand, and deface the bond,
Double six thousand, and then treble that,
Before a friend of this description
Shall lose a hair through Bassanio's fault
First go with me to church and call me wife,
And then away to Venice to your friend
For never shall you lie by Portia's side
With an unquiet soul. You shall have gold

To pay the petty debt twenty times over 310

When it is paid, bring your true friend along
My maid Nerissa and my self meantime
Will live as maids and widows. Come away!
For you shall hence upon your wedding day
Bid your friends welcome, show a merry cheer
Since you are dear bought, I will love you dear
But let me hear the letter of your friend

Bass [*Reads*] "Sweet Bassanio, my ships have all
miscarried, my creditors grow cruel, my estate
is very low, my bond to the Jew is forfeit, and
since in paying it, it is impossible I should live
all debts are cleared between you and I, if I might
but see you at my death. Notwithstanding, use
your pleasure, if your love do not persuade you
to come, let not my letter."

Por O love, dispatch all business, and be gone!

Bass Since I have your good leave to go away,
I will make haste, but till I come again

No bed shall ere be guilty of my stay
No rest be interposer 'twixt us twain 320

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III Venice a street

Enter SHYLOCK, SALARINO, ANTONIO and Gaoler

Shy Gaoler, look to him, tell not me of
mercy

This is the fool that lent out money gratis

Gaoler, look to him

Ant Hear me yet, good Shylock

Shy I'll have my bond, speak not against my
bond

I have sworn an oath that I will have my bond
Thou call'st me dog before thou hadst a cause,

But, since I am a dog, beware my fangs

The Duke shall grant me justice. I do wonder,

Thou naughty gaoler, that thou art so fond

To come abroad with him at his request 10

Ant I pray thee hear me speak

Shy I'll have my bond, I will not hear thee
speak

I'll have my bond, and therefore speak no more

I'll not be made so soft and dully eyed fool

To shake the head, relent, and sigh and yield

To Christian intercessors. Follow not,

I'll have no speaking. I will have my bond

[*Exit*]

Salar It is most impenetrable cur

That ever I ept with men

Ant Let him alone

I'll follow him no more with bootless prayers 20

He seel's my life, his reason well I know

I oft deliver'd from his forfeitures

Many that have at times made moan to me,

Therefore he hates me

Salar I am sure the Duke

Will never grant this forfeiture to hold

Ant The Duke cannot deny the course of law

For the commodity that strangers have

With us in Venice, if it be denied

Will much impeach the justice of his state,

Since that the trade and profit of the city 30

Consisteth of all nations. Therefore go

These griefs and losses have so bated me

That I shall hardly spare a pound of flesh

To-morrow to my bloody creditor

Well gaoler, on Pray God Bassanio come

To see me pay his debt, and then I care not!

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV Belmont a room in Portia's house

Enter PORTIA, NERISSA, LORENZO, JESSICA
and BALTHASAR

Lor Madam, although I speak it in your
presence

You have a noble and a true conceit

Of god-like amity, which appears most strongly

In bearing thus the absence of your lord

But if you knew to whom you show this honour,

How true a gentleman you send relief

How dear a lover of my lord, your husband,

I know you would be prouder of the work

Than customary bounty can enforce you

Por I never did repent for doing good 10

Nor shall not now, for in companions

That do converse and waste the time together,

Whose souls do bear an equal yoke of love,

There must be needs a like proportion

Of lineaments of manners and of spirit

Which makes me think that this Antonio

Being the bosom lover of my lord

Must needs be like my lord. If it be so

How little is the cost I have bestowed

In purchasing the semblance of my soul 20

From out the state of hellish misery!

This comes too near the praising of my self
 Therefore no more of it hear other things
 Lorenzo I commit into your hands
 The husbandry and manage of my house
 Until my lord's return for mine own part
 I have toward heaven breathed a secret vow
 To live in prayer and contemplation
 Only attended by Nerissa here
 Until her husband and my lord's return
 There is a monastery two miles off
 And there will we abide I do desire you
 Not to deny this imposition
 The which my love and some necessity
 Now lays upon you

30

Lor Madam with all my heart
 I shall obey you in all fair commands
For My people do already know my mind
 And will acknowledge you and Jessica
 In place of Lord Bassanio and myself
 And so farewell till we shall meet again
Lor Fair thoughts and happy hours attend on
 you!

40

Jes I wish your ladyship all heart's content
For I thank you for your wish and am well
 pleased
 To wish it back on you fare you well Jessica
 [Exit JESSICA and LORENZO]

Now Balthazar
 As I have ever found thee honest true
 So let me find thee still Take this same letter
 And use thou all the endeavour of a man
 In speed to Padua see thou render this
 Into my cousin's hand Doctor Bellario
 And look what notes and garments he doth
 give thee,

50

Bring them I pray thee with imagined speed
 Unto the tranect to the common ferry
 Which trades to Venice Waste no time in words
 Put get thee gone I shall be there before thee
Balth Madam, I go with all convenient speed

[Exit

For Come on, Nerissa I have work in hand
 That you yet know not of we'll see our
 husbands

Before they think of us

Ner Shall they see us?

For They shall Nerissa but in such a habit
 That they shall think we are accomplished
 With that we lack I'll hold thee any wager
 When we are both accoutred like young men,
 I'll prove the prettier fellow of the two
 And wear my dagger with the braver grace,
 And speak between the change of man and boy
 With a reed's voice and turn two mincing steps
 Into a manly stride and speak of frays
 Like a fine bragging youth, and tell quaint lies

60

How honourable ladies sought my love
 Which I denying they fell sick and died
 I could not do withal then I'll repent
 And wish for all that that I had not kill'd them
 And twenty of these puny lies I'll tell
 That men shall swear I have discontinued school
 Above a twelvemonth I have within my mind
 A thousand raw tricks of these bragging Jacks
 Which I will practise

70

Ner Why shall we turn to men?
For Fie what a question's that
 If thou wert near a lewd interpreter!
 But come I'll tell thee all my whole device
 When I am in my coach which stays for us
 At the park gate and therefore haste away
 For we must measure twenty miles to-day

80

[Exit

SCENE V The same a garden

Enter LAUNCELOT and JESSICA

Laun Yes truly for look you the sins of the
 father are to be laid upon the children therefore
 I promise ye I fear you I was always plain with
 you and so now I speak my agitation of the
 matter therefore be of good cheer for truly I
 think you are damned There is but one hope in
 it can do you any good and that is but a kind of
 bastard hope neither

Jes And what hope is that I pray thee?

10

Laun Marry you may partly hope that your
 father got you not that you are not the Jew's
 daughter

Jes That were a kind of bastard hope, indeed
 so the sins of my mother should be visited upon
 me

Laun Truly then I fear you are damned both
 by father and mother thus when I shun Scylla
 your father I fall into Charybdis your mother
 well you are gone both ways

20

Jes I shall be saved by my husband he hath
 made me a Christian

Laun Truly the more to blame he we were
 Christians enow before even as many as could
 well live one by another This making of Chris-
 tians will raise the price of hogs if we grow all
 to be pork-eaters we shall not shortly have a
 rasher on the coals for money

Enter LORENZO

Jes I'll tell my husband Launcelot what you
 say here he comes

30

Lor I shall grow jealous of you shortly Laun-
 celot if you thus get my wife into corners

Jes Nay you need not fear us Lorenzo Laun-
 celot and I are out He tells me flatly there is no
 mercy for me in heaven, because I am a Jew's

daughter and he says, you are no good member of the commonwealth, for in converting Jews to Christians, you raise the price of pork 39

Lor I shall answer that better to the common wealth than you can the getting up of the negro's belly the Moor is with child by you, Launcelot

Lam It is much that the Moor should be more than reason but if she be less than an honest woman, she is indeed more than I took her for

Lor How every fool can play upon the word! I think the best grace of wit will shortly turn into silence, and discourse grow commendable in none only but parrots Go in, sirrah, bid them prepare for dinner

Lam That is done, sir, they have all stomachs
Lor Goodly Lord, what a wit snapper are you! then bid them prepare dinner

Lam That is done too, sir, only "cover" is the word

Lor Will you cover then, sir?

Lam Not so sir neither I know my duty 59
Lor Yet more quarrelling with occasion! Wilt thou show the whole wealth of thy wit in an instant? I pray thee, understand a plain man in his plain meaning go to thy fellows bid them cover the table, serve in the meat and we will come in to dinner

Lam For the table sir, it shall be served in for the meat sir, it shall be covered, for your coming in to dinner sir why, let it be as humours and conceits shall govern [Exit

Lor O dear discretion how his words are suited! 70

The fool hath planted in his memory
An army of good words, and I do know
A many fools that stand in better place,
Garnish'd like him that for a tricky word
Defy the matter How cheer'st thou Jessica?
And now, good sweet, say thy opinion
How dost thou like the Lord Bassanio's wife?

Jes Past all expressing It is very meet
The Lord Bassanio live an upright life, 80
For having such a blessing in his lady
He finds the joys of heaven here on earth
And if on earth he do not mean it, then
In reason he should never come to heaven
Why, if two gods should play some heavenly
match

And on the wager lay two earthly women
And Portia one there must be something else
Pau'n'd with the other, for the poor rude world
Hath not her fellow

Lor Given such a husband
Hast thou of me as she is for a wife

Jes Nay but ask my opinion too of that 90

Lor I will anon first let us go to dinner

Jes Nay, let me praise you while I have a stomach

Lor No, pray thee let it serve for table talk,
Then howsoe'er thou speak'st, 'mong other things

I shall digest it

Jes Well, I'll set you forth [Exeunt

ACT IV

SCENE I Venice a court of justice

Enter the DUKE, the Magnificoes ANTONIO,
BASSANIO GRATIANO SALERIO, and others

Duke What, is Antonio here?

Ant Ready, so please your Grace

Duke I am sorry for thee thou art come to answer

A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch
Uncapable of pity void and empty
From any dram of mercy

Ant I have heard
Your Grace hath ta'en great pains to qualify
His rigorous course, but since he stands obdurate
And that no lawful means can carry me
Out of his envy's reach, I do oppose 10
My patience to his fury, and am arm'd
To suffer with a quietness of spirit,
The very tynanny and rage of his

Duke Go on and call the Jew into the court
Saler He is ready at the door he comes my lord

Enter SHYLOCK

Duke Make room and let him stand before our face

Shylock the world thinks and I think so too
That thou but lead'st this fashion of thy malice
To the last hour of act and then 'tis thought
Thou'lt show thy mercy and remorse more
strange

Than is thy strange apparent cruelty 21
And where thou now exact'st the penalty,
Which is a pound of this poor merchant's flesh,
Thou wilt not only loose the forfeiture
But touch'd with human gentleness and love,
Forgive a moiety of the principal
Glancing an eye of pity on his losses
That have of late so huddled on his back
Know to press a royal merchant down
And pluck commiseration of his state 30
From brassy bosoms and rough hearts of flint
From stubborn Turks and Tartars never train'd
To offices of tender courtesy

We all expect a gentle answer Jew
Shy I have possess'd your Grace of what I
purpose

And by our holy Sabbath have I sworn
To have the due and forfeit of my bond
If you deny it let the danger light
Upon your charter and your city's freedom
You'll ask me why I rather choose to have
A weight of carrion flesh than to receive
Three thousand ducats I'll not answer that
But say it is my humour is it answer'd?
What if my house be troubled with a rat
And I be pleased to give ten thousand ducats
To have it baned? What are you answer'd yet?
Some men there are love not a gaping pig
Some that are mad if they behold a cat
And others when the bagpipe sings i' the nose
Cannot contain their urine for affection,
Mistress of passion sways it to the mood
Of what it likes or loathes Now for your
answer

As there is no firm reason to be render'd
Why he cannot abide a gaping pig
Why he a harmless necessary cat
Why he a woollen bagpipe but of force
Must yield to such inevitable shame
As to offend himself being offended
So can I give no reason nor I will not
More than a lodg'd hate and a certain loathing
I bear Antonio that I follow thus
A losing suit against him Are you answer'd?
Bass This is no answer thou unfeeling man
To excuse the current of thy cruelty

Shy I am not bound to please thee with my
answers

Bass Do all men kill the things they do not love?
Shy Hates any man the thing he would not kill?
Bass Every offence is not a hate at first
Shy What wouldst thou have a serpent sting
thee twice?

Ant I pray you, think you question with the
Jew

You may as well go stand upon the beach
And bid the main flood bate his usual height
You may as well use question with the wolf
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb
You may as well forbid the mountain pines
To wear their high tops and to make no noise
When they are frotten with the gusts of heaven
You may as well do any thing most hard
As seek to soften that—than which what's harder?
—

If a Jewish heart therefore I do beseech you
Make no more offers use no farther means
For with all therief and plain conveyance
Let me have judgement and the Jew his will
Bass For thy three thousand ducats here is six
Shy If every ducat in six thousand ducats
Were in six parts and every part a ducat

I would not draw them I would have my bond
Duke How shalt thou hope for mercy render
ing none?

Shy What judgement shall I dread doing no
wrong?

You have among you many a purchased slave
Which like your asses and your dogs and mules
You use in abject and in slavish parts
Because you bought them shall I say to you
Let them be free marry them to your heirs?
Why sweat they under burthens? let their beds
Be made as soft as yours and let their palates
Be season'd with such viands? You will answer
The slaves are ours so do I answer you
The pound of flesh which I demand of him
Is dearly bought 'tis mine and I will have it
If you deny me lie upon your law!

There is no force in the decrees of Venice
I stand for judgement answer shall I have it?

Duke Upon my power I may dismiss this court
Unless Bassanio a learned doctor
Whom I have sent for to determine this
Come here to-day

Saler My lord here stays without
A messenger with letters from the doctor
New come from Padua

Duke Bring us the letters call the messenger
Bass Good cheer Antonio! What man
courage yet!

The Jew shall have my flesh blood bones and
all

Ere thou shalt lose for me one drop of blood

Ant I am a tainted v'ether of the flock
Meetest for death the weakest kind of fruit
Drops earliest to the ground and so let me
You cannot better be employ'd Bassanio
Than to live still and write mine epitaph

Enter *NERISSA dressed like a lawyer's clerk*

Duke Came you from Padua from Bellario?
Ner From both my lord Bellario greets your
Grace {*Presenting a letter*}

Bass Why dost thou whet thy knife so
earnestly?

Shy To cut the forfeiture from that bankrupt
there

Gr Not on thy sole but on thy soul harsh
Jew

Thou makest thy knife keen but no metal can,
No not the hardman's axe bear half the keenness
Of thy sharp envy Can no prayers pierce thee?

Shy No none that thou hast wit enough to
make

Cs O be thou damn'd inextorable dog!

Ant I for thy life let justice be accused
Thou almost makest me waver in my faith

To hold opinion with Pythagoras
 That souls of animals infuse themselves
 Into the trunks of men thy currish spirit
 Govern'd a wolf, who, hang'd for human
 slaughter,
 Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet,
 And whilst thou lay'st in thy unhallow'd dam,
 Infused itself in thee for thy desires
 Are wolfish, bloody, starved and ravenous
Shy Till thou canst rail the seal from off my
 bond,
 Thou but offend'st thy lungs to speak so loud
 Repair thy wit good youth or it will fall 141
 To cureless ruin I stand here for law

Duke This letter from Bellario doth commend
 A young and learned doctor to our court
 Where is he?

Ner He attendeth here hard by
 To know your answer, whether you'll admit him
Duke With all my heart Some three or four
 of you

Go give him courteous conduct to this place
 Meantime the court shall hear Bellario's letter
Clerk [Reads] "Your Grace shall understand
 that at the receipt of your letter I am very sick
 but in the instant that your messenger came in
 loving visitation was with me a young doctor of
 Rome his name is Balthasar I acquainted him
 with the cause in controversy between the Jew
 and Antonio the merchant we turned over many
 books together he is furnished with my opinion
 which bettered with his own learning, the great
 ness whereof I cannot enough commend comes
 with him at my importunity to fill up your
 Grace's request in my stead I beseech you let
 his lack of years be no impediment to let him lack
 a reverend estimation for I never knew so young
 a body with so old a head I leave him to your
 gracious acceptance, whose trial shall better pub-
 lish his commendation"

Duke You hear the learn'd Bellario what he
 writes

And here, I take it, is the doctor come

Enter PORTIA dressed like a doctor of laws

Give me your hand Come you from old Bellario?
Por I did my lord

Duke You are welcome take your place
 Are you acquainted with the difference 171
 That holds this present question in the court?

Por I am informed thoroughly of the cause
 Which is the merchant here and which the Jew?

Duke Antonio and old Shylock both stand
 forth

Por Is your name Shylock?

Shy Shylock is my name

Por Of a strange nature is the suit you follow,
 Yet in such rule that the Venetian law
 Cannot impugn you as you do proceed
 You stand within his danger, do you not? 180

Ant Ay, so he says

Por Do you confess the bond?

Ant I do

Por Then must the Jew be merciful

Shy On what compulsion must I? tell me that

Por The quality of mercy is not strain'd,
 It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven
 Upon the place beneath it is twice blest
 It blesseth him that gives and him that takes
 'Tis mightiest in the mightiest it becomes
 The throned monarch better than his crown
 His sceptre shows the force of temporal power,
 The attribute to awe and majesty, 191

Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings,
 But mercy is above this sceptred sway,
 It is enthroned in the hearts of kings,
 It is an attribute to God himself,
 And earthly power doth then show likest God's
 When mercy seasons justice Therefore Jew,
 Though justice be thy plea, consider this,
 That in the course of justice none of us
 Should see salvation we do pray for mercy 200
 And that same prayer doth teach us all to render
 The deeds of mercy I have spoke thus much
 To mitigate the justice of thy plea
 Which if thou follow this strict court of Venice
 Must needs give sentence 'gainst the merchant
 there

Shy My deeds upon my head! I crave the law,
 The penalty and forfeit of my bond

Por Is he not able to discharge the money?

Bass Yes here I tender it for him in the court,
 Yea twice the sum if that will not suffice, 210
 I will be bound to pay it ten times over
 On forfeit of my hands my head my heart
 If this will not suffice it must appear
 That malice bears down truth And I beseech you,
 Wrest once the law to your authority
 To do a great right do a little wrong
 And curb this cruel devil of his will

Por It must not be there is no power in Venice
 Can alter a decree established

"I will be recorded for a precedent 220
 And many an error by the same example
 Will rush into the state it cannot be

Shy A Daniel come to judgement! Vea a
 Daniel!

O wise young judge how I do honour thee!

Por I pray you let me look upon the bond

Shy Here 'tis most reverend doctor here it is

Por Shylock there's thrice thy money offer'd
 thee

Shy An oath an oath I have an oath in heaven
Shall I lay perjury upon my soul?
No not for Venice

Por Why this bond is forfeit 230
And lawfully by this the Jew may claim
A pound of flesh to be by him cut off
Nearest the merchant's heart Be merciful
Take thrice thy money bid me tear the bond
Shy When it is paid according to the tenour
It doth appear you are a worthy judge
You know the law your exposition
Hath been most sound I charge you by the law
Whereof you are a well-deserving pillar
Proceed to judgement by my soul I swear 240
There is no power in the tongue of man
To alter me I stay here on my bond
Ant Most heartily I do beseech the court
To give the judgement

Por Why then, thus it is
You must prepare your bosom for his knife
Shy O noble judge O excellent young man!
Por For the intent and purpos of the law
Hath full relation to the penalty
Which here appeareth due upon the bond
Shy 'Tis very true O wise and upright
judge 250

How much more elder art thou than thy looks!
Por Therefore lay bare your bosom

Shy Ay his breast
So says the bond doth it not noble judge?
Nearest his heart those are the very words
Por It is so Are there balance here to weigh
The flesh?

Shy I have them ready
Por Have by some surgeon, Shylock, on your
charge

To stop his wounds lest he do bleed to death
Shy Is it so nominated in the bond?
Por It is not so express'd but what of that?
'Twere good you do so much for charity 260
Shy I cannot find it 'tis not in the bond
Por You merchant have you any thing to say?
Ant But little I am arm'd and well prepared
Give me your hand Bassanio fare you well!
Grieve not that I am fallen to this for you
For herein Fortune shows herself more kind
Than is her custom it is still her use
To let the wretched man outlive his wealth
To view with hollow eye and wrinkled brow 270
An age of poverty from which I never penance
Of such misery doth she cut me off
Commend me to your honourable wife
Tell her the process of Antonio's end
Say how I loved you, speak me fair in death
And when the tale is told bid her be judge
Whether Bassanio had not once a love

Repent but you that you shall lose your friend
And he repents not that he pays your debt
For if the Jew do cut but deep enough 280
I'll pay it presently with all my heart
Bass Antonio I am married to a wife
Which is as dear to me as life itself
But life itself my wife, and all the world
Are not with me esteem'd above thy life
I would lose all sacrifice them all
Here to this devil to deliver you

Por Your wife would give you little thanks for
that

If she were by to hear you make the offer
Gra I have a wife whom I protest I love
I would she were in heaven so she could 290
Entreat some power to change this curst Jew
Ant 'Tis well you offer it behind her back
The wish would make else an unquiet house

Shy These be the Christian husbands I have
a daughter

Would any of the stock of Barrabas
Had been her husband rather than a Christian!

[Aside]

We trifle time I pray thee pursue sentence

Por A pound of that same merchant's flesh is
thine

The court awards it and the law doth give it

Shy Most rightful judge! 300

Por And you must cut this flesh from off his
breast

The law allows it and the court awards it
Shy Most learned judge! A sentence! Come,
prepare!

Por Tarry a little there is something else
This bond doth give thee here no jot of blood
The words expressly are a pound of flesh
Take then thy bond, take thou thy pound of flesh
But in the cutting it if thou dost shed
One drop of Christian blood thy lands and goods
Are, by the laws of Venice confiscate 310
Unto the state of Venice

Gra O upright judge! Mark Jew O learned
judge!

Shy Is that the law?

Por Thyself shalt see the act
For as thou urgest justice be assured
Thou shalt have justice, more than thou desirest

Gra O learned judge! Mark Jew a learned
judge!

Shy I take this offer then pay the bond thrice
And let the Christian go

Bass Here is the money

Por Soft! 320

The Jew shall have all justice soft! no haste

He shall have nothing but the penalty

Gra O Jew! an upright judge a learned judge!

Por Therefore prepare thee to cut off the flesh
Shed thou no blood, nor cut thou less nor more
But just a pound of flesh if thou cut st more
Or less than a just pound, be it but so much
As makes it light or heavy in the substance,
Or the division of the twentieth part
Of one poor scruple nay, if the scale do turn 330
But in the estimation of a hair,

Thou diest and all thy goods are confiscate

Gra A second Daniel a Daniel, Jew!

Now infidel, I have you on the hip

Por Why doth the Jew pause? take thy forfeiture

Shy Give me my principal and let me go

Bass I have it ready for thee here it is

Por He hath refused it in the open court

He shall have merely justice and his bond 339

Gra A Daniel, still say I, a second Daniel!

I thank thee Jew for teaching me that word

Shy Shall I not have barely my principal?

Por Thou shalt have nothing but the forfeiture,
To be so taken at thy peril Jew

Shy Why, then the devil give him good of it!

I'll stay no longer question

Por Tarry Jew

The law hath yet another hold on you

It is enacted in the laws of Venice,

If it be proved against an alien

That by direct or indirect attempts 350

He seek the life of any citizen,

The party 'gainst the which he doth contrive

Shall seize one half his goods the other half

Comes to the privy coffer of the state,

And the offender's life lies in the mercy

Of the Duke only, 'gainst all other voice

In which predicament I say thou stand st

For it appears by manifest proceeding

That indirectly and directly too

Thou hast contrived against the very life

Of the defendant and thou hast incurr'd

The danger formerly by me rehearsed

Down therefore and beg mercy of the Duke

Gra Beg that thou mayst have leave to hang
thyself

And yet thy wealth being forfeit to the state

Thou hast not left the value of a cord

Therefore thou must be hang'd at the state's
charge

Duke That thou shalt see the difference of our
spirits

I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it

For half thy wealth it is Antonio's 370

The other half comes to the general state

Which humbleness may drive unto a fine

Por Ay, for the state not for Antonio

Shy Nay take my life and all pardon not that

You take my house when you do take the prop

That doth sustain my house you take my life

When you do take the means whereby I live

Por What mercy can you render him Antonio?

Gra A halter gratis, nothing else, for God's
sake

Ant So please my lord the Duke and all the
court 380

To quit the fine for one half of his goods,

I am content so he will let me have

The other half in use to render it,

Upon his death unto the gentleman

That lately stole his daughter

Two things provided more that for this favour,

He presently become a Christian

The other, that he do record a gift

Here in the court of all he dies possess'd,

Unto his son Lorenzo and his daughter 390

Duke He shall do this or else I do recant

The pardon that I late pronounced here

Por Art thou contented Jew? what dost thou
say?

Shy I am content

Por Clerk draw a deed of gift

Shy I pray you give me leave to go from hence,

I am not well send the deed after me

And I will sign it

Duke Get thee gone but do it

Gra In christening shalt thou have two god-
fathers

Had I been judge, thou shouldst have had ten
more

To bring thee to the gallows, not the font 400

[Exit SHYLOCK]

Duke Sir I entreat you home with me to dinner

Por I humbly do desire your Grace of pardon

I must away this night toward Padua

And it is meet I presently set forth

Duke I am sorry that your leisure serves you
not

Antonio gratify this gentleman

For in my mind you are much bound to him

[Exit Duke and his train]

Bass Most worthy gentleman I and my friend

Have by your wisdom been this day acquitted

Of grievous penalties in lieu whereof 410

Three thousand ducats due unto the Jew

We freely cope your courteous pains withal

Ant And stand indebted over and above,

In love and service to you evermore

Por He is well paid that is well satisfied,

And I delivering you am satisfied

And therein do account myself well paid

My mind was never yet more mercenary

I pray you know me when we meet again

I wish you well, and so I take my leave

Bass Dost thou force I must attempt you further

Take some remembrance of us as a tribute
Not as a fee grant me two things I pray you

Not to deny me and to pardon me

Por You press me far and therefore I will yield

[*To ANTONIO*] Give me your gloves I'll wear them for your sake

[*To BASSANIO*] And for your love I'll take this ring from you

Do not draw back your hand I'll take no more

And you in love shall not deny me this

Bass This ring good sir alas it is a trifle!

I will not shame myself to give you this 431

Por I will have nothing else but only this

And now methinks I have a mind to it

Bass There is more depends on this than on the value

The dearest ring in Venice will I give you

And find it out by proclamation

Only for this I pray you pardon me

Por I see sir you are liberal in offers

You taught me first to beg and now methinks

You teach me how a beggar should be answer'd

Bass Good sir this ring was given me by my wife 441

And when she put it on she made me vow

That I should neither sell nor give nor lose it

Por That excuse serves many men to save their gifts

And if your wife be not a mad woman,

And know how well I have deserved the ring

She would not hold out enemy for ever

For giving it to me Well peace be with you!

[*Exit PORTIA and NESSA*]

Ant My Lord Bassanio let him have the ring

Let his desires and my love wishal 450

Be valued gainst your wife's commandment

Bass Go Gratiano run and overtake him

Cite him the ring and bring him if thou canst

Unto Antonio's house away make haste

[*Exit GRATIANO*]

Come you and I will thither presently

And in the morning early will we both

Fly toward Belmont come Antonio [*Exit*]

SCENE II The same street

Enter PORTIA and NESSA

Por Inquire the Jew's house out give him this deed

And let him sign it well away to-night

And be a day before our husbands home

This deed will be well welcome to Lorenzo

Enter GRATIANO

Gra Fair sir you are well o'ertaen

My Lord Bassanio upon more advice

Hath sent you here this ring and doth entreat

Your company at dinner

Por

That cannot be

His ring I do accept most thankfully

And so I pray you tell him furthermore 10

I pray you show my youth old Shylock's house

Gra That will I do

Ant

Sir I would speak with you

[*Aside to PORTIA*] I'll see if I can get my husband's ring

Which I did make him swear to keep for ever

Por [*Aside to NESSA*] Thou mayst I warrant

We shall have old swearing

That they did give the rings away to men

But we'll outface them and outswear them too

[*Aloud*] Away! make haste thou knowst where

I will tarry

Ant Come good sir will you show me to this

house? [*Exeunt*]

ACT V

SCENE I Belmont avenue to Portia's house

Enter LORENZO and JESSICA

Lor The moon shines bright in such a night as this

When the sweet wind did gently kiss the trees

And they did make no noise in such a night

Troilus methinks mounted the Trojan walls

And sigh'd his soul toward the Grecian tents

Where Cressid lay that night

Jes

In such a night

Did Thisbe fearfully o'ertrip the dew

And saw the lion's shadow ere himself

And ran dismay'd away

Lor

In such a night

Stood Dido with a willow in her hand 10

Upon the wild sea banks and waft her love

To come again to Carthage

Jes

In such a night

Moeda gather'd the enchanted herbs

That did renew old Asdon

Lor

In such a night

Did Jessica steal from the wealthy Jew

And with an unthrift love did run from Venice

As far as Belmont

Jes

In such a night

Did young Lorenzo swear he loved her well

Stealing her soul with many oaths of faith

And ne'er a true one

Lor

In such a night

Did pretty Jessica, like a little shrew 20

Slander her love, and he forgave it her
Jes I would out-night y^e did no body come,
 But, hark, I hear the footing of a man

Enter STEPHANO

Lor Who comes so fast in silence of the night?

Steph A friend

Lor A friend! what friend? your name I pray
 you friend?

Steph Stephano is my name, and I bring word
 My mistress will before the break of day
 Be here at Belmont she doth stray about 30
 By holy crosses where she kneels and prays
 For happy wedlock hours

Lor Who comes with her?

Steph None but a holy hermit and her maid
 I pray you is my master yet return d?

Lor He is not, nor we have not heard from him
 But go we in, I pray thee Jessica
 And ceremoniously let us prepare
 Some welcome for the mistress of the house

Enter LAUNCELOT

Laun Sola, sola! wo ha, ho! sola sola!

Lor Who calls? 40

Laun Sola! did you see Master Lorenzo? Mas-
 ter Lorenzo, sola, sola!

Lor Leave hollaing man here

Laun Sola! where? where?

Lor Here

Laun Tell him there's a post come from my
 master, with his horn full of good news my mas-
 ter will be here ere morning [Exit

Lor Sweet soul, let's in, and there expect
 their coming

And yet no matter why should we go in? 50
 My friend Stephano signify, I pray you
 Within the house your mistress is at hand,
 And bring your music forth into the air

[Exit STEPHANO

How sweet the moonlight sleeps upon this bank!
 Here will we sit and let the sounds of music
 Creep in our ears soft stillness and the night
 Become the touches of sweet harmony
 Sir Jessica Look how the floor of heaven
 Is thick inlaid with patines of bright gold
 There's not the smallest orb which thou behold'st
 But in his motion like an angel sings 61
 Still quiring to the young-eyed cherubins
 Such harmony is in immortal souls
 But whilst this muddy vesture of decay
 Doth grossly close it in we cannot hear it

Enter MUSICIANS

Come, ho! and wake Diana with a hymn
 With sweetest touches pierce your mistress' ear

And draw her home with music

Music

Jes I am never merry when I hear sweet music
Lor The reason is your spirits are attentive 71
 For do but note a wild and wanton herd
 Or race of youthful and unhandled colts,
 Fetching mad bounds, bellowing, and neighing
 loud

Which is the hot condition of their blood,
 If they but hear perchance a trumpet sound,
 Or any air of music touch their ears
 You shall perceive them make a mutual stand,
 Their savage eyes turn'd to a modest gaze
 By the sweet power of music therefore the poet
 Did feign that Orpheus drew trees stones and
 floods 80

Since nought so stockish hard and full of rage,
 But music for the time doth change his nature
 The man that hath no music in himself,
 Nor is not mov'd with concord of sweet sounds,
 Is fit for treasons stratagems and spoils
 The motions of his spirit are dull as night
 And his affections dark as Erebus
 Let no such man be trusted Mark the music.

Enter PORTIA and CRESSIDA

Por That light we see is burning in my hall
 How far that little candle throws his beams! 90
 So shines a good deed in a naughty world

Ner When the moon shone, we did not see the
 candle

Por So doth the greater glory dim the less
 A substitute shines brightly as a king
 Until a king be by and then his state
 Empties itself as doth an inland brook
 Into the main of waters Music! hark!

Ner It is your music, madam of the house

Por Nothing is good I see without respect
 Methinks it sounds much sweeter than by day
Ner Silence bestows that virtue on it, madam

Por The crow doth sing as sweetly as the lark
 When neither is attended and I think
 The nightingale if she should sing by day
 When every goose is cackling would be thought
 No better a musician than the wren
 How many things by season season'd are
 To their right praise and true perfection!
 Peace ho! the moon sleeps with Endymion
 And would not be awak'd

Music ceases

Lor That is the voice 110
 Or I am much deceived of Portia
Por He knows me as the blind man knows the
 cuckoo

By the bad voice

Lor Dear lady, welcome home

Per We have been praying for our hu bands
healths
Which speed we hope the better for our words
Are they return'd?

Lor Madam, they are not yet
Put there is com a messenger before
To signify their coming

Per Com Nerissa
Give order to my servants that they take
No note at all of our bein absent hence 120
Nor you Lorenzo Jessica nor you
Ancket so mads

Lor Your hu bands at hand I hear his
trumpet
We are no tell tales madam fear you not
Per This right methinks is but the day light
sick
It looks a little paler tis a day
Such as the day is when the sun is hid

*Enter BASSANIO ANTONIO GRATIANO and
their followers*

Bass We should hold day with the Antipodes
If you would walk in absence of the sun
Lor Let me give light but let me not be li ht
For al he wife doth make a heavu husband 130
And never be Bassanio so for me
But God sort all You are welcome home my
lord

Bass I thank you madam Give welcome to my
friend

This is the man this is Antonio
To whom I am so infinitely bound
Per You should in all sense be much bound to
him.

For as I hear he was much bound for you
Ant No more than I am well acquainted of
Per Sir you are very welcome to our house
It mu appear in other ways than words 140
Theref re I scant this breathing courtesy

Grat [To Nerissa] By yonder moon I swear you
do me wrong

In faith I gave it to the judg s clerk
Would he were gelt that had it for my part
S nee you do take it for so much at heart
Lor Vagabond ho already! hat s the matter?
That s he did give me whose posy was
For a l the world like cutler s poetry
Upon a knife Love me and leave me not 150

Lor What talk you of the posy or the value?
You swore to me when I judg d it you
That you would wear it till your hour of death
And that it should lie with you in your grave
Through not for me yet f r your val euent oaths
You should have been respective and have kept it

Gave it a judg s clerk! no God s my judg e
The clerk will ne er wear hair on s face that had

it
Grat He will an if he live to be a man
Lor Ay if a woman live to be a man 160
Grat Now by thus han I gave it to a youth
A kind of boy a little scrubbed boy
No higher than thy self the judg s clerk
A prating boy th begg d it as a fee
I could not for my heart deny it him
Lor You were to blame I mu t be plain with
you

To part so slightly with your wife s first gift
A thing stuck on with oaths upon your finger
And so riveted with faith unto your flesh
I gave my love a ring and made him swear 170
Never to part with it and here he stands
I dare be sworn for him he wou l not leave it
Nor pluck it from his finger for the wealth
That the world masters Now in faith Gratiano
You give your wife too unkind a cause of grief
An swere to me I shoud i be mad at it
Bass [Aside] Why I were best to cut my left
hand off

And swear I lost the ring defending it
Grat My Lord Bassanio gave his ring away
Unto the judg e that begg d it and indeed 180
Deserve I it too and then the boy his clerk
That took some pains in writing he begg d mine
And neither man nor master would take aught
But the two rings

Per What ring gave you my lord?
I or that I hope which you received of me

Bass If I could add a lie unto a fault
I wou l deny it but you see my finger
Hath not the ring upon it it is gone

Per Even so void is your false heart of truth
By heaven I will ne er come in your bed 190
Until I see the ring

Lor Nor I in yours

Till I again see mine

Bass Sweet Portia
If you did know to whom I gave the ring
If you did know for whom I gave the ring
And wou ld conceive for what I gave the ring
An how unwillin ly I left the ring
When now it wou ld be accepted but the rin
You wou ld abate the strength of your displeasure

Per If you had known the virtue of the rin
Or half her worthiness that gave the ring 200
Or your own honour to contain the ring
You wou ld not then have parted with the ring
What man is there so much unreasonable
If you had please I to l ave defended it
With any term of zeal wou ld I the modesty
To urge the thing held as a ceremony?

Nerissa teaches me what to believe

I'll die for't but some woman had the ring

Bass No by my honour madam by my soul,
No woman had it but a civil doctor, 210

Which did refuse three thousand ducats of me

And begged the ring, the which I did deny him

And suffer'd him to go displeased away,

Even he that did uphold the very life

Of my dear friend What should I say, sweet lady?

I was enforced to send it after him,

I was beset with shame and courtesy,

My honour would not let ingratitude

So much besmear it Pardon me, good lady,

For, by these blessed candles of the night, 220

Had you been there, I think you would have

begged

The ring of me to give the worthy doctor

Por Let not that doctor e'er come near my
house

Since he hath got the jewel that I loved

And that which you did swear to keep for me,

I will become as liberal as you

I'll not deny him any thing I have,

No not my body nor my husband's bed

Know him I shall I am well sure of it

Lie not a night from home watch me like Argus

If you do not if I be left alone 231

Now, by mine honour which is yet mine own,

I'll have that doctor for my bedfellow

Ner And I his clerk therefore be well advised

How you do leave me to mine own protection

Gra Well do you so let not me take him then

For if I do I'll mar the young clerk's pen

Ant I am the unhappy subject of these quarrels

Por Sir grieve not you, you are welcome not-
withstanding

Bass Portia forgive me this enforced wrong,

And, in the hearing of these many friends 241

I swear to thee even by thine own fair eyes

Wherein I see my self—

Por Mark you but that!

In both my eyes he doubly sees himself

In each eye, one swear by your double self,

And there's an oath of credit

Bass Nay but hear me

Pardon this fault and by my soul I swear

I never more will break an oath with thee

Ant I once did lend my body for his wealth

Which but for him that had your husband's ring

Had quite miscarried I dare be bound again

My soul upon the forfeit that your lord

Will never more break faith advisedly

Por Then you shall be his surety Give him this

And bid him keep it better than the other

Ant Here Lord Bassanio swear to keep this
ring

Bass By heaven it is the same I gave the doctor!

Por I had it of him pardon me, Bassanio

For by this ring the doctor lay with me 259

Ner And pardon me, my gentle Gratiano

For that same scrubbed boy, the doctor's clerk,

In lieu of this last night did lie with me

Gra Why, this is like the mending of highways

In summer where the ways are fair enough

What are we cuckolds ere we have deserved it?

Por Speak not so grossly You are all amazed

Here is a letter read it at your leisure,

It comes from Padua, from Bellario

There you shall find that Portia was the doctor,

Nerissa there her clerk Lorenzo here 270

Shall witness I set forth as soon as you

And even but now returned, I have not yet

Entered my house Antonio you are welcome,

And I have better news in store for you

Than you expect unseal this letter soon

There you shall find three of your argosies

Are richly come to harbour suddenly

You shall not know by what strange accident

I chanced on this letter

Ant I am dumb

Biss Were you the doctor and I knew you not?

Gra Were you the clerk that is to make me
cuckold? 281

Ner Ay but the clerk that never means to do it,
Unless he live until he be a man

Biss Sweet doctor you shall be my bedfellow

When I am absent, then lie with my wife.

Ant Sweet lady you have given me life and
living

For here I read for certain that my ships

Are safely come to road

Por How now Lorenzo!

My clerk hath some good comforts too for you

Ner Ay, and I'll give them him without a fee 291

There do I give to you and Jessica

From the rich Jew a special deed of gift

After his death, of all he dies possessed of

Lor Fair ladies you drop manna in the way

Of starved people

Por It is almost morning

And yet I am sure you are not satisfied

Of these events at full Let us go in

And charge us there upon intergatories

And we will answer all things faithfully

Gra Let it be so the first intergatory 300

That my Nerissa shall be sworn on is

Whether till the next night she had rather stay

Or go to bed now being two hours to day

But were the day come I should wish it dark

That I were couching with the doctor's clerk

Well while I live I'll fear no other thing

So sore as keeping safe Nerissa's ring

20 The First Part of KING HENRY THE FOURTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY THE FOURTH
HENRY PRINCE OF WALES | *sons to the King*
JOHN OF LANCASTER
EARL OF WESTMORELAND
SIR WALTER BLUNT
THOMAS PERCY EARL OF WORCESTER
HARRY PERCY EARL OF NORTHUMBRIA
HENRY PERCY *turnum HOTSPUR his son*
JACQUARD MORTIMER EARL OF MARCH
RICARD SCROOP ARCHBISHOP OF YORK
ARCHBISHOP OF DOUGLAS
OVEN GENDON
SIR RICHARD VERNON
SIR JOHN FALSTAFF
SIR MICHAEL, a friend to the Archbishop of York
POINS
GUILDEN
PETO
BARDOLPH

TWO CARRIERS
OSTLER
A CHAMBERLAIN
SEVERAL TRAVELLERS
A VINTNER
FRANCIS the drayler
SHERIFF
THOMAS MESSENGERS
SERVANT to Hotspur

LADY PERCY *wife to Hotspur and sister to Mortimer*
LADY MORTIMER *daughter to Glendower and wife to Moister*
MISTRESS QUICKLY *hostess of a tavern in Eastcheap*
NOVISEDGE *and other Lords Officers Draylers Travellers and Attendants*

SCENE England



ACT I

SCENE I London the palace

Enter KING HENRY LORD JOHN OF LANCASTER
the EARL OF WESTMORELAND SIR WALTER
BLUNT and others

King So shaken as we are so taken with care
Find we a time for frightened peace to pant
And breathe short winded accents of new broils
To be commenced in strands afar remote
No more the thirsty entrance of this soil
Shall daub her lips with her own children's blood
No more shall trenching war channel her fields
Nor bruise her flossy tresses with the armed hoofs
Of hostile paces those opposed eyes
Which like the meteors of a troubled heaven
All of one nature of one substance bred
Differently meet in the intestine shock
And furious close of civil butchery
Shall no more in mutual well beseeeming ranks
March all one way and be no more opposed
Against acquaintance kindred and allies
The edge of war like an ill sheathed knife
No more shall cut his master Therefore friends
As far as to the sepulchre of Christ
Whose sold or now under whose blessed cross
We are impressed and entered to fight

Forthwith a power of English shall we levy
Whose arms were moulded in their mothers' wombs
To chase these pagans in those holy fields
Over whose acres walk'd those blessed feet
Which fourteen hundred years ago were nail'd
For our advancement on the better cross
But this our purpose now is twelve month old
And bootless 'tis to tell you we will go
Therefore we meet not now Then let me hear
Of you my gentle cousin Westmoreland
What yesternight our council did decree
In forwarding this dear expedience
West My liege this haste was hot in question
And many limits of the charge set down
But yesternight when all at once there came
A post from Wales laden with heavy news
Whose worst was that the noble Mortimer
Leading the men of Herefordshire to fight
Against the irregular and wild Glendower
Was by the rude hands of that Welshman taken
A thousand of his people butchered
Upon whose dead corpse there was such misuse
Such beastly shameless transformation
By those Welshwomen done as may not be
Without much shame retold or spoken of
King It seems then that the tidings of this broil

Brake off our business for the Holy Land

West This match'd with other did my gracious lord,

For more uneven and unwelcome news 50

Came from the north and thus it did import

On Holy-rod day, the gallant Hotspur there,

Young Harry Percy and brave Archibald

That ever-vaillant and approved Scot

At Holmedon met

Where they did spend a sad and bloody hour,

As by discharge of their artillery

And shape of likelihood, the news was told,

For he that brought them in the very heat

And pride of their contention did take horse 60

Uncertain of the issue any way

King Here is a dear, a true industrious friend,

Sir Walter Blunt, new lighted from his horse,

Stain'd with the variation of each soil

Betwixt that Holmedon and this seat of ours,

And he hath brought us smooth and welcome news

The Earl of Douglas is discomfited

Ten thousand bold Scots, two and twenty knights,

Balk'd in their own blood did Sir Walter see

On Holmedon's plains Of prisoners, Hotspur took 70

Mordake the Earl of Fife and eldest son

To beaten Douglas, and the Earl of Athol,

Of Murray Angus and Menteith

And is not this an honourable spoil?

A gallant prize? ha, cousin, is it not?

West In faith

It is a conquest for a prince to boast of

King Yea there thou makest me sad and makest me sin

In envy that my Lord Northumberland

Should be the father to so blest a son, 80

A son who is the theme of Honour's tongue,

Amongst a grove, the very straightest plant

Who is sweet Fortune's minion and her pride

Whilst I by looking on the praise of him

See riot and dishonour stain the brow

Of my young Harry O that it could be proved

That some night tripping fairy had exchanged

In cradle-clothes our children where they lay,

And call'd mine Percy his Plantagenet!

Then would I have his Harry and he mine 90

But let him from my thoughts What think you coz,

Of this young Percy's pride? the prisoners

Which he in this adventure hath surprised

To his own use he keeps and sends me word

I shall have none but Mordake Earl of Fife

West This is his uncle's teaching this is Worcester,

Malevolent to you in all aspects,

Which makes him prune himself, and bristle up

The crest of youth against your dignity

King But I have sent for him to answer this,

And for this cause awhile we must neglect 101

Our holy purpose to Jerusalem

Cousin on Wednesday next our council we

Will hold at Windsor so inform the lords

But come yourself with speed to us again,

For more is to be said and to be done

Than out of anger can be uttered

West I will, my liege [Exit

SCENE II *London an apartment of the Prince's*

Enter the PRINCE OF WALES and FALSTAFF

Fal Now Hal what time of day is it lad?

Prince Thou art so fat witted, with drinking

of old sack and unbuttoning thee after supper

and sleeping upon benches after noon that thou

hast forgotten to demand that truly which thou

wouldst truly know What a devil hast thou to

do with the time of the day? Unless hours were

cups of sack and minutes capons and clocks the

tongues of bawds and dials the signs of leaping-

houses and the blessed sun himself a fair hot

wench in flame coloured taffeta I see no reason

why thou shouldst be so superfluous to demand

the time of the day

Fal Indeed you come near me now Hal,

for we that take purses go by the moon and the

seven stars, and not by Phœbus he 'that wander-

ing knight so fair' And I prithee, sweet

wag when thou art king as God save thy

Grace—Majesty I should say for grace thou

wilt have none— 20

Prince What none?

Fal No by my troth, not so much as will serve

to be prologue to an egg and butter

Prince Well how then? come, roundly,

roundly

Fal Marry, then sweet wag when thou art

king let not us that are squires of the night's

body be called thieves of the day's beauty let

us be Diana's foresters gentlemen of the shade

minions of the moon, and let men say we be men

of good government being governed as the sea

is by our noble and chaste mistress the moon,

under whose countenance we steal

Prince Thou sayest well and it holds well too

for the fortune of us that are the moon's men

doth ebb and flow like the sea being governed

as the sea is by the moon As for proof now

a purse of gold most resolutely snatched on—

Monday night and most dissolutely spent

Tuesday morning got with swearing 'Lay

and spent with crying 'Bring in now

an ebb as the foot of the ladder and by and by in as high a flow as the ridge of the gallows

Fal By the Lord thou sayest true lad And is not my hostess of the tavern a most sweet wench?

Prince As the honey of Hybla my old lad of the castle And is not a buff jerkin a most sweet robe of durance?

Fal How now how now mad wag! what in thy quips and thy quiddities? what a plague have I to do with a buff jerkin?

Prince Why what a pox have I to do with my hostess of the tavern?

Fal Well thou hast called her to a reckoning many a time and oft

Prince Did I ever call for thee to pay thy part?

Fal No I'll give thee thy due thou hast paid all there

Prince Yea, and elsewhere so far as my coin would stretch and where it would not I have used my credit

Fal Yea and so used it that were it not here apparent that thou art heir apparent—But I prithee sweet wag shall there be gallows standing in England when thou art king? and resolution thus fobbed as it is with the rusty curb of old father antic the law? Do not thou when thou art king hang a thief

Prince No thou shalt

Fal Shall I? O rare! By the Lord I'll be a brave judge

Prince Thou judgest false already I mean thou shalt have the hanging of the thieves and so become a rare hangman

Fal Well Hal well and in some sort it jumps with my humour as well as waiting in the court I can tell you

Prince For obtaining of suits?

Fal Yea, for obtaining of suits whereof the hangman hath no lean wardrobe Sblood I am as melancholy as a green cat or a turned bear

Prince Or an old lion, or a lover's lute.

Fal Yea, or the drone of a Lincolnshire bagpipe

Prince What sayest thou to a hare or the melancholy of Moor-ditch?

Fal Thou hast the most unsavoury similes and art indeed the most comparative rascaliest sweet young prince But Hal I prithee trouble me no more with vanity I would to God thou and I knew where a commodity of good names were to be bought An old lord of the council rated me the other day in the street at sixpence, sir but I marked him not and yet he talked very wisely but I regarded him not and yet he talked wisely and in the street too

Prince Thou wilt well for wisdom cries out

in the streets and no man regards it

Fal O thou hast damnable iteration and art indeed able to corrupt a saint Thou hast done much harm upon me Hal God forgive thee for it! Before I knew thee Hal I knew nothing and now am I if a man should speak truly little better than one of the wicked I must give over this life and I will give it over by the Lord an I do not I am a villain I'll be damned for never a king's son in Christendom

Prince Where shall we take a purse to-morrow Jack?

Fal Zounds where thou wilt lad I'll make one an I do not call me villain and baffle me

Prince I see a good amendment of life in thee from praying to purse-taking

Fal Why Hal tis my vocation Hal tis no sin for a man to labour in his vocation

Enter POINS

Poins Now shall we know if Gadshill have set a match O if men were to be saved by merit what hole in hell were hot enough for him? This is the most omnipotent villain that ever cried Stand to a true man

Prince Good morrow Ned

Poins Good morrow sweet Hal What says Monsieur Remorse? what says Sir John Sack and Sugar? Jack! how agrees the devil and thee about thy soul that thou soldest him on Good Friday last for a cup of Madeira and a cold capon's leg?

Prince Sir John stands to his word the devil shall have his bargain for he was never yet a breaker of proverbs he will give the devil his due

Poins Then art thou damned for keeping thy word with the devil

Prince Else he had been damned for cozening the devil

Poins But my lads my lads to-morrow morning by four o'clock early at Gadshill! there are pilgrims going to Canterbury with rich offerings and traders riding to London with fat purses I have vizards for you all you have horses for yourselves Gadshill lies to-night in Rochester I have bespoke supper to-morrow night in Eastcheap we may do it as secure as sleep If you will go I will stuff your purses full of crowns if you will not tarry at home and be hanged

Fal Hear ye Yedward if I tarry at home and go not I'll hang you for going

Poins You will chop?

Fal Hal I'll do thou make one?

Prince Who I rob? I a thief? not I by my faith

Fal There's neither honesty, manhood nor good fellowship in thee, nor thou camest not of the blood royal, if thou dar'st not stand for ten shillings

Prince Well then, once in my days I'll be a madcap 160

Fal Why, that s well said

Prince Well, come what will, I'll tarry at home

Fal By the Lord, I'll be a traitor then, when thou art king

Prince I care not

Poins Sir John, I prithee leave the Prince and me alone I will lay him down such reasons for this adventure that he shall go 169

Fal Well, God give thee the spirit of persuasion and him the ears of profiting, that what thou speakest may move and what he hears may be believed, that the true prince may, for recreation sake, prove a false thief for the poor abuses of the time want countenance Farewell you shall find me in Eastcheap

Prince Farewell, thou latter spring! farewell All hallow summer! [Exit FALSTAFF

Poins Now my good sweet honey lord ride with us to-morrow I have a jest to execute that I cannot manage alone Falstaff, Bardolph Peto and Gadshill shall rob those men that we have already waylaid, yourself and I will not be there, and when they have the booty if you and I do not rob them, cut this head off from my shoulders

Prince How shall we part with them in setting forth?

Poins Why, we will set forth before or after them, and appoint them a place of meeting wherein it is at our pleasure to fail and then will they adventure upon the exploit themselves, which they shall have no sooner achieved but we'll set upon them

Prince Yea but 'tis like that they will know us by our horses by our habits and by every other appointment to be ourselves

Poins Tut! our horses they shall not see I'll tie them in the wood our vizards we will change after we leave them and sirrah I have cases of buckram for the nonce, to immask our noted outward garments

Prince Yea but I doubt they will be too hard for us

Poins Well for two of them I know them to be as true bred cowards as ever turned back and for the third if he fight longer than he sees reason I'll forswear arms The virtue of this jest will be the incomprehensible lies that this same fat rogue will tell us when we meet at supper

how thirty, at least he fought with, what wards, what blows, what extremities he endured, and in the reproof of this lies the jest

Prince Well, I'll go with thee provide us all things necessary and meet me to-morrow night in Eastcheap, there I'll sup Farewell

Poins Farewell my lord [Exit

Prince I'll now you all and will awhile uphold The unyok'd humour of your idleness

Yet herein will I imitate the sun 220

Who doth permit the base contagious clouds

To smother up his beauty from the world,

That when he please again to be himself,

Being wanted he may be more wonder'd at,

By breaking through the foul and ugly mists

Of vapours that did seem to strangle him

If all the year were playing holiday,

To sport would be as tedious as to work

But when they seldom come, they wish'd for come,

And nothing pleaseth but rare accidents 230

So when this loose behaviour I throw off

And pay the debt I never promised

By how much better than my word I am,

By so much shall I falsify men's hopes

And like bright metal on a sullen ground,

My reformation glittering o'er my fault,

Shall show more goodly and attract more eyes

Than that which hath no foil to set it off

I'll so offend to make offence a skill,

Redeeming time when men think least I will 240

[Exit

SCENE III London the palace

Enter the KING NORTHUMBERLAND WORCESTER, HOTSPUR, SIR WALTER BLUNT with others

King My blood hath been too cold and temperate,

Unapt to stir at these indignities

And you have found me for accordingly

You tread upon my patience but be sure

I will from henceforth rather be myself

Mighty and to be fear'd than my condition,

Which hath been smooth as oil soft as young down

And therefore lost that title of respect

Which the proud soul ne'er pays but to the proud

Woe Our house, my sovereign liege, little deserves 10

The scourge of greatness to be used on it

And that same greatness too which our own hands

Have help to make so partly

North My lord—

King Worcester get thee gone for I do see

Danger and disobedience in thine eye
 O sir your presence is too bold and peremptory
 And majesty might never yet endure
 The moody frontier of a servant brow
 You have good leave to leave us when we need
 Your use and counsel we shall send for you 21

[Exit WORCESTER]

You were about to speak. [To NORTHUMBERLAND
 North] Yes my good lord

Those prisoners in your Highness name demanded

Which Harry Percy here at Holmedon took
 Were as he says not with such strength denied
 As is delivered to your Majesty
 Either envy therefore or misprision
 Is guilty of this fault and not my son

Hot My liege I did deny no prisoners
 But I remember when the fight was done, 30
 When I was dry with rage and extreme toil
 Breathless and faint leaning upon my sword
 Came there a certain lord neat and trimly
 dressed d

Fresh as a bridegroom and his chin new reap d
 Show d like a stubble land at harvest home
 He was perfum'd like a milliner
 And twist his finger and his thumb he held
 A pouncet box which ever and anon

He gave his nose and took it away again 39
 Who therewith angry when it next came there

Took it in snuff and still he smil'd and talk d
 And as the soldiers bore dead bodies by

He call d them untrau ht knaves unmannerly
 To bring a slovenly unhandsome corse

Between the wind and his nobility
 With many holiday and lady terms

He question d me amongst the rest demanded
 My prisoners in your Majesty s behalf

I then all smarting with my wounds being cold
 To be so pester d with a popinjay 50

Out of my grief and my impatience
 Answer d neglectingly I know not what

He should or he should not for he made me
 mad

To see him shine so brisk and smell so sweet
 And talk so like a waiting-gentlewoman

Of guns and drums and wounds—God save the
 mark —

And telling me the sovereign st thing on earth
 Was parracets for an inward bruise

And that it was great pity so it was
 This villainous salt petre should be d d 60

Out of the bowels of the harmless earth
 Which many a good tall fellow had destroy d

So cowardly and but for these vile guns
 He would himself have been a soldier
 This bald unpainted chat of his my lord

I answer d indirectly as I said
 And I beseech you let not his report
 Come current for an accusation
 Between my love and your high Majesty
 Blunt The circumstance consider d good my
 lord 70

Whate'er Lord Harry Percy then had said
 To such a person and in such a place

At such a time with all the rest retold
 May reasonably die and never rise

To do him wrong or any way impeach
 What then he said so he unsay it now

King Why yet he doth deny his prisoners
 But with proviso and exception

That we at our own charge shall ransom strait 80
 His brother in law the foolish Mortimer

Who on my soul hath wilfully betray d
 The lives of those that he did lead to fight

Against that great magician damn d Glendower
 Whose daughter as we hear the Earl of March

Hath lately married Shall our coffers then
 Be emptied to redeem a traitor home?

Shall we buy treason and indent with fears
 When they have lost and forfeited themselves?

No on the barren mountains let him starve
 For I shall never hold that man my friend 90

Whose tongue shall ask me for one penny cost
 To ransom home revolted Mortimer

Hot Revolted Mortimer!
 He never did fall off my sovereign liege

But by the chance of war to prove that true
 Needs no more but one tongue for all those

wounds
 Those mouthed wounds which valiantly he took

When on the gentle Severn s sedge bank
 In single opposition hand to hand

He did confound the best part of an hour 100
 In changing hardiment with great Glendower

Three times they breathed and three times d d
 they drink

Upon agreement of swift Severn s flood
 Who then affrighted with their bloody looks

Ran fearfully among the trembling reeds
 And hid his crisp head in the hollow bank

Bloodstained with these valiant combatants
 Never d d base and rotten policy

Colour her working with such deadly wounds
 Nor never could the noble Mortimer 110

Receive so many and all willingly
 Then let not him be slander d with revolt

King Thou dost belie him Percy thou dost
 belie him

He never did encounter with Glendower
 I tell thee

He durst as well have met the devil alone
 As Owen Glendower for an enemy

Art thou not ashamed? But, sirrah, henceforth
 Let me not hear you speak of Mortimer
 Send me your prisoners with the speediest means,
 Or you shall hear in such a kind from me 121
 As will displease you My Lord Northumber-
 land,

We license your departure with your son
 Send us your prisoners, or you'll hear of it

[*Exeunt KING HENRY, BLUNT, and tram*]

Hot An if the devil come and roar for them

I will not send them I will after straight
 And tell him so, for I will ease my heart,
 Albeit I make a hazard of my head

North What, drunk with choler? stay and
 pause awhile

Here comes your uncle

Re enter WORCESTER

Hot Speak of Mortimer! 130

'Zounds, I will speak of him and let my soul
 Want mercy, if I do not join with him
 Yea, on his part I'll empty all these veins
 And shed my dear blood drop by drop in the dust,
 But I will lift the down trod Mortimer
 As high in the air as this unthankful ling
 As this ingrate and canker'd Bolingbroke

North Brother the King hath made your
 nephew mad

Wor Who struck this heat up after I was
 gone? 139

Hot He will forsooth have all my prisoners,
 And when I urged the ransom once again
 Of my wife's brother then his cheek look'd pale,
 And on my face he turn'd an eye of death
 Trembling even at the name of Mortimer

Wor I cannot blame him was not he pro-
 claim'd

By Richard that dead is, the next of blood?

North He was I heard the proclamation
 And then it was when the unhappy king—
 Whose wrongs in us God pardon!—did set forth
 Upon his Irish expedition 150

From whence he intercepted did return

To be deposed and shortly murdered

Wor And for whose death we in the world's
 wide mouth

Live scandalized and foully spoken of

Hot But soft I pray you did King Richard then
 Proclaim my brother Edmund Mortimer

Hier to the crown?

North He did my self did hear it

Hot Nay then I cannot blame his cousin king
 That wish'd him on the barren mountains starve
 But shall it be that you that set the crown 160

Upon the head of this forgetful man

And for his sake wear the detested blot

Of murderous subornation, shall it be
 That you a world of curses undergo
 Being the agents or base second means,
 The cords the ladder or the hangman rather?
 O pardon me that I descend so low
 To show the line and the predicament
 Wherein you range under this subtle king,
 Shall it for shame be spoken in these days, 170
 Or fill up chronicles in time to come,
 That men of your nobility and power
 Did gage them both in an unjust behalf
 As both of you—God pardon it!—have done
 To put down Richard, that sweet lovely rose,
 And plant this thorn, this canker, Bolingbroke?
 And shall it in more shame be further spoken
 That you are fool'd, discarded and shook off
 By him for whom these shames ye underwent?
 No yet time serves wherein you may redeem 180
 Your banish'd honours and restore yourselves
 Into the good thoughts of the world again,
 Revenge the jeering and disdain'd contempt
 Of this proud king who studies day and night
 To answer all the debt he owes to you
 Even with the bloody payment of your deaths
 Therefore, I say—

Wor Peace, cousin say no more

And now I will unclasp a secret book
 And to your quick-conceiving discontents
 I'll read you matter deep and dangerous, 190
 As full of peril and adventurous spirit
 As to o'er-walk a current roaring loud
 On the unsteadfast footing of a spear

Hot If he fall in good night! or sink or swim
 Send Danger from the east unto the west
 So Honour cross it from the north to south,
 And let them grapple O, the blood more stirs
 To rouse a lion than to start a hare!

North Imagination of some great exploit
 Drives him beyond the bounds of patience 200

Hot By heaven methinks it were an easy leap
 To pluck bright Honour from the pale faced
 moon,

Or dive into the bottom of the deep

Where fathom line could never touch the
 ground

And pluck up drowned Honour by the locks
 So he that doth redeem her thence might wear

Without cornal all her dignities

But our upon this half faced fellow ship!

Wor He apprehends a world of figures here,
 But not the form of what he should attend 210

Good cousin, give me audience for a while

Hot I cry you mercy

Wor Those same noble Scots

That are your prisoners—

Hot I'll keep them all,

By God he shall not have a Scot of them
No if a Scot would save his soul he shall not
I'll keep them by this hand

Or You start away
And lend no ear unto my purposes
Those prisoners you shall keep

Ho Nay I will that's flat
He said he would not ransom Mortimer
Forbade my tongue to speak of Mortimer 220
But I will find him when he lies asleep
And in his ear I'll holla 'Mortimer'

Nay
I'll have a starting shall be taught to speak
Nothing but Mortimer and give it him,
To keep his anger still in motion

War Hear you cousin a word
Hot All studies here I solemnly defy
Save how to gall and pinch this Bolin^o broke
And that same sword and buckler Prince of

Wales 30
But that I think his father loves him not
And would be glad he met with some mischance,

I would have him poison'd with a pot of ale
Or Farewell kinsman I'll talk to you

When you are better temper'd to attend
North Why what a wasp-stung and impatient
fool

Art thou to break into this woman's mood
Tying thine ear to no tongue but thine own'

Hot Why look you I am whipp'd and
scourged with rods

Nettled and stung with pismires when I hear
Of this vile politician, Bolingbroke 241
In Richard's time—what do you call the place?—
A plague upon it it is in Gloucestershire
'Twas where the madcap duke his uncle kept
His uncle York where I first bow'd my knee
Unto this king of smiles this Bolin^o broke—
Sblood—

When you and he came back from Ravenspurgh
North At Berkeley castle

Hot You say true 250
Why what a cardy deal of courtesy
Th's fawning greyhound then did proffer me!
Look when his infant fortune came to age
And gentle Harry Percy and kind cousin
O the devil take such cozeners God forgive me!
Good uncle, tell your tale I have done

Or Nay if you have not to it again
We will stay your leisure

Hot I have done, I faith
Or Then once more to your Scottish prison-
ers

Deliver them up without their ransom straight
And make the Douglas son your only mean 261
For powers which 15

Which I shall send you written, be assured,
Will easily be granted. You, my lord,

To NORTHUMBERLAND
Your son in Scotland being thus employ'd,
Shall secretly into the bosom creep
Of that same noble prelate, well beloved,
The Archbishop

Ho Of York is it not?
Or True who bears hard 20
His brother's death at Bristol, the Lord Scroop
I speak not thus in estimation,
As what I think might be, but what I know
Is ruminaed plotted, and set down,
And only stay's but to behold the face
Of that occasion that shall bring it on
Hot I smell it upon my life it will do well
North Before the game is afoot thou still let it
slip

Hot Why it cannot choose but be a noble plot
And then the power of Scotland and of York 280
To join with Mortimer has?

Or And so they shall
Hot In faith, it is exceedingly well aim'd
Or And tis no little reason I'll do us speed,
To save our heads by raising of a head
For bear ourselves as even as we can,
The hang will always think him in our debt
And think we think ourselves unsatisfied,
Till he hath found a time to pay us home
And see already how he doth begin
To make us strangers to his looks of love 290

Hot He does he does we'll be revenged on
him

Or Cousin, farewell no further go in this
Than I by letters shall direct your course
When time is ripe which will be suddenly
I'll steal to Glendower and Lord Mortimer
Where you and Douglas and our powers at once,
As I will fashion it shall happily meet
To beat our fortunes in our own strong arms
Which now we hold at much uncertainty
North Farewell good brother we shall thrive,
I trust 300

Hot Uncle adieu O let the hours be short
Till fields and blows and groans applaud our
sport! [Exeunt]

ACT II

SCENE I Roelster an urn yard

Enter a CARRIER with a lantern in his hand
at Car Heigh-ho! an it be not four by the day
I'll be hanged Charles wain is over the new
chimney and yet our horse not packed What
ostler!

On [Whim] Anon, anon

1st Car I prithee, Tom, beat Cur's saddle put a few flocks in the point, poor jade, is wrung in the withers out of all cess

Enter a SECOND CARRIER

2nd Car Peas and beans are as dank here as a dog, and that is the next way to give poor jades the bots this house is turned upside down since Robin Ostler died

1st Car Poor fellow, never joyed since the price of oats rose, it was the death of him

2nd Car I think this be the most villainous house in all London road for fleas I am stung like a tench

1st Car Like a tench! by the mass, there is ne'er a king christen could be better bit than I have been since the first cock 20

2nd Car Why, they will allow us ne'er a jordan, and then we leak in your chimney, and your chamber lie breeds fleas like a loach

1st Car What, ostler! come away and be hanged! come away

2nd Car I have a gammon of bacon and two razes of ginger, to be delivered as far as Charing cross

1st Car God's body! the turkeys in my panner are quite starved What ostler! A plague on thee! hast thou never an eye in thy head? canst not hear? An t were not as good deed as drink, to break the pate on thee, I am a very villain Come, and be hanged! hast no faith in thee?

Enter GADSHILL

Gads Good morrow carriers What's o'clock?

1st Car I think it be two o'clock

Gads I prithee, lend me thy lantern to see my gelding in the stable

1st Car Nay, by God soft, I know a trick worth two of that! 41

Gads I pray thee, lend me thine

2nd Car Ay, when? canst tell? Lend me thy lantern quoth he? marry, I'll see thee hanged first

Gads Sirrah carrier, what time do you mean to come to London?

2nd Car Time enough to go to bed with a candle I warrant thee Come neighbour Mugs we'll call up the gentlemen they will along with company for they have great charge 51

[*Exit CARRIERS*]

Gads What ho! chamberlain!

Cham [Within] At hand quo h pick purse

Gads That's even as fair as—at hand quoth the chamberlain for thou varrest no more from picking of purses than giving direction doth from

labouring, thou layest the plot how

Enter CHAMBERLAIN

Cham Good morrow, Master Gadshill It holds current that I told you yesternight there's a franklin in the Wild of Kent hath brought three hundred marks with him in gold I heard him tell it to one of his company last night at supper, a kind of auditor, one that hath abundance of charge too God knows what They are up already and call for eggs and butter they will away presently

Gads Sirrah if they meet not with Saint Nicholas' clerks I'll give thee this neck 69

Cham No I'll none of it I pray thee keep that for the hangman for I know thou worshipp'st Saint Nicholas as truly as a man of falsehood may

Gads What talkest thou to me of the hangman? if I hang I'll make a fat pair of gallows for if I hang, old Sir John hangs with me, and thou knowest he is no starveling Tur! there are other Trojans that thou dreamest not of the which for sport sake are content to do the profession some grace, that would if matters should be looked into, for their own credit sake make all whole I am joined with no foot land rakers, no long staff sixpenny strikers, none of these mad mustachio purple-hued malt-worms but with nobility and tranquility burgomasters and great ones such as can hold in such as will strike sooner than speak, and speak sooner than drink and drink sooner than pray and yet, 'zounds, I lie, for they pray continually to their saint the commonwealth or rather not pray to her, but prey on her, for they ride up and down on her and make her their boots 91

Cham What the commonwealth their boots? will she hold out water in foul way?

Gads She will she will justice hath liquored her We steal as in a castle cock sure we have the receipt of fern seed we walk invisible

Cham Nay by my faith I think you are more beholding to the night than to fern seed for you walk invisible

Gads Give me thy hand thou shalt have a share in our purchase as I am a true man 101

Cham Nay rather let me have it as you are a false thief

Gads Go to *102* is a common name to all men Bid the ostler bring my gelding out of the stable Farewell you muddy knave [*Exit*]

SCENE II The highway near Gadshill

Enter PRINCE HENRY and POINS

Poins Come, shelter shelter I have re-

Falstaff's horse and he frets like a gummed velvet

Prince Stand close

Enter FALSTAFF

Fal Poin's Poin's and be hanged Poin's

Prince Peace ye fat kidneyed rascal what a bawling dost thou keep

Fal Where's Poin's Hal?

Prince He is walked up to the top of the hill I'll go seek him

Fal I am accursed to rob in that thief's company the rascal hath removed my horse and tied him I know not where If I travel but four foot by the squire further afoot I shall break my wind Well I doubt not but to die a fair death for all this if I scape hanging for killing that rogue I have forsworn his company hourly any time this two and twenty years and yet I am bewitched with the rogue's company If the rascal have not given me medicines to make me love him I'll be hanged it could not be else I have drunk medicines Poin's Hal! a plague upon you both Bardolph! Peto! I'll starve ere I'll rob a foot further An t'were not as good a deed as drink to turn true man and to leave these rogues I am the veriest varlet that ever chewed with a tooth Eight yards of uneven ground is three score and ten miles afoot with me and the stony hearted villains know it well enough a plague upon them when thieves cannot be true one to another [They whistle] Whew! A plague upon you all Give me my horse you rogues give me my horse and be hanged

Prince Peace ye fat-guts! lie down lay thine ear close to the ground and list if thou canst hear the tread of travellers

Fal Have you any levers to lift me up again being down? Shblood I'll not bear mine own flesh so far afoot again for all the coin in thy father's exchequer What a plague mean ye to colt me thus?

Prince Thou liest thou art not colted thou art uncolted

Fal I prithee good Prance Hal help me to my horse good king's son

Prince Out ye rogue shall I be your ostler?

Fal Go hang thyself in thine own heir apparent garters! If I be to en I'll peach for this An I have not ballads made on you all and sung to filthy tunes let a cup of sack be my poison when a jest is so forward and afoot too! I hate it

Enter GADSHILL, BARDOLPH and PETO with him

Gads Stand

Fal So I do against my will

Poin's O tis our setter I know his voice Bardolph what news?

Bard Case ye case ye on with your vizards there's money of the king's coming down the hill tis going to the king's exchequer

Fal You lie ye rogue tis going to the king's tavern

Gads There's enough to make us all

Fal To be hanged

Prince Sirs you four shall front them in the narrow lane Ned Poin's and I will walk lower if they scape from your encounter then they light on us

I to How many be there of them?

Gads Some eight or ten

Fal Zounds will they not rob us?

Prince What a coward Sir John Paunch?

Fal Indeed I am not John of Gaunt your grand father but yet no coward Hal

Prince Well we leave that to the proof

Poin's Strah Jack thy horse stands behind the hedge when thou needest him there thou shalt find him Farewell and stand fast

Fal Now cannot I strike him if I should be hanged

Prince Ned where are our disguises?

Poin's Here hard by stand close

[Exeunt PRINCE and POIN'S]

Fal Now my masters happy man be his dole say I every man to his business

Enter the TRAVELLERS

1st Trav Come neighbour the boy shall lead our horses down the hill we'll walk afoot awhile and ease our legs

Thurs Stand!

Travellers Jesus bless us!

Fal Strike down with them cut the villains' throats ah! whoreson caterpillars! bacon fed knaves! they hate us youth down with them fleece them

Travellers O we are undone both we and ours for ever!

Fal Hang ye gorbelled knaves are ye undone? No ye fat chuffs I would your store were here! On, bacons on! What ye knaves! young men must live You are grandjurors are ye? we'll pure ye faith

[Here they rob them and bind them Exeunt]

Re-enter PRINCE HENRY and POIN'S in buckram

Prince The thieves have bound the true men Now could thou and I rob the thieves and go merrily to London it would be argument for a week laughter for a month and a good jest for ever

Poins Stand close, I hear them coming

Enter the THIEVES again

Fal Come, my masters, let us share, and then to horse before day. An the Prince and Poins be not two arrant cowards, there's no equity stirring: there's no more valour in that Poins than in a wild duck.

Prince Your money!

Poins Villains! 110

As they are sharing, the PRINCE and POINS set upon them, they all run away, and FALSTAFF, after a blow or two runs away too, leaving the booty behind them

Prince Got with much ease. Now merrily to horse.

The thieves are all scatter'd and possess'd with fear.

So strongly that they dare not meet each other, Each takes his fellow for an officer.

Away good Ned Falstaff sweats to death, And lards the lean earth as he walks along.

Were't not for laughing, I should pity him.

Poins How the rogue roar'd! *[Exeunt]*

SCENE III. *Warkworth castle*

Enter HOTSPUR, solus, reading a letter

Hot "But for mine own part, my lord, I could be well contented to be there in respect of the love I bear your house. He could be contented why he not, then? In respect of the love he bears our house, he shows in this: he loves his own barn better than he loves our house. Let me see some more. "The purpose you undertake is dangerous, why that's certain 'tis dangerous to take a cold to sleep to drink, but I tell you, my lord, fool out of this nettle danger we pluck this flower safety. 'The purpose you undertake is dangerous: the friends you have named uncertain the time itself unsorted, and your whole plot too light for the counterpoise of so great an opposition. Say you so, say you so? I say unto you again, you are a shallow cowardly hind and you lie. What a lack-brain is this! By the Lord, our plot is a good plot as ever was laid: our friends true and constant, a good plot, good friends, and full of expectation, an excellent plot, very good friends. What a frosty spirited rogue is this! Why, my lord, of York commends the plot and the general course of the action. 'Tisounds, an I were now by this rascal, I could brain him with his lady's fan. Is there not my father, my uncle, and myself? Lord Edmund Mortimer, my lord of York, and Owen Glendower: is there not besides the Douglas? have I not all their letters to meet me in arms by the ninth of next month?"

and are they not some of them set forward already? What a pagan rascal is this! an infidel! Ha! you shall see now in very sincerity of fear and cold heart, will he to the king and lay open all our proceedings. O, I could divide myself and go to buffets for moving such a dish of skim milk with so honourable an action! Hang him! let him tell the King we are prepared. I will set forward to night.

Enter LADY PERCY

How now, Kate! I must leave you within these two hours.

Lady O my good lord, why are you thus alone? 40

For what offence have I this fortnight been A banish'd woman from my Harry's bed?

Tell me, sweet lord, what is 't that takes from thee.

Thy stomach, pleasure, and thy golden sleep?

Why dost thou bend thine eyes upon the earth,

And start so often when thou sit'st alone?

Why hast thou lost the fresh blood in thy cheeks,

And given my treasures and my rights of thee

To thick-eyed musing and cursed melancholy? 50

In thy faint slumbers I by thee have watch'd

And heard thee murmur tales of iron wars,

Speak terms of manage to thy bounding steed,

Cry 'Courage! to the field!' And thou hast

talk'd

Of sallies and retires, of trenches, tents,

Of palisadoes, frontiers, parapets,

Of basilisks, of cannon, culverin,

Of prisoners' ransom, and of soldiers slain,

And all the currents of a heady fight.

Thy spirit within thee hath been so at war,

And thus hath so bestir'd thee in thy sleep, 60

That beads of sweat have stood upon thy brow,

Like bubbles in a late-disturbed stream,

And in thy face strange motions have appear'd,

Such as we see when men restrain their breath.

On some great sudden hest: O, what portents are

these.

Some heavy business hath my lord in hand,

And I must know it, else he loves me not.

Hot What ho!

First SERVANT

Is Williams with the packet gone?

Ser. He is, my lord, an hour ago.

Hot Hath Butler brought those horses from the sheriff? 70

Ser. One horse, my lord, he brought even now.

Hot What horse? a roan, a crop-ear, is it not?

Ser. It is, my lord.

He That roan shall be my throne.

Well I will back him straight *Oesperme!*

Bid Butler lead him forth into the park

[*Exit SERVANT*]

Lady But hear you my lord

Hot What sayst thou my lady?

Lady What is it carries you away?

Hot Why, my horse my love my horse

Lady Out you mad-headed ape

A weasel hath not such a deal of spleen

As you are ross'd with. In faith

I'll know your business Harry, that I will

I fear my brother Mortimer doth stir

About his title and hath sent for you

To line his enterprize, but if you go—

Hot So far afoot I shall be weary, love

Lady Come, come you paraquito, answer me

Directly unto this question that I ask.

In faith, I'll break thy little finger Harry,

An if thou wilt not tell me all things true

Hot Away

Away you trifler. Love! I love thee not

I care not for thee, Kate, this is no world

To play with maniments and to tilt with lips

We must have bloody noses and crack'd crowns

And pass them current too. God's me, my horse!

What sayst thou, Kate? what wouldst thou

have with me?

Lady Do you not love me? do you not indeed?

Well, do not then, for since you love me not

I will not love myself. Do you not love me?

Nay, tell me if you speak in jest or no

Hot Come with thou see me ride?

And when I am on horseback I will swear

I love thee infinitely. But hark you, Kate

must not have you henceforth question me

Whither I go, nor reason whereabouts

Whither I must, I must, and to conclude

This evening must I leave you, gentle Kate

I know you wise, but yet no farther wise

Than Harry Percy's wife, constant you are

But yet a woman, and for secrecy

No lady closer, for I will believe

Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know

And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate

Lady How! so far?

Hot Not an inch further. But hark you, Kate

Whither I go, thither shalt you go too

To-day will I set forth, to-morrow you

Will th's content you, Kate?

Lady It must of force. [*Exeunt* 120

SCENE IV. *The Boar's Head Tavern, Eastcheap*

Enter the PRINCE and POINS

Prince Ned, prithee, come out of that fat room,
and lend me thy hand to laugh a little

Poins Where hast been, Hal?

Prince With three or four logetheads amongst
three or four score horseheads I have sounded
the very base string of humility. Sirrah, I am
sworn brother to a leash of drawers, and can
call them all by their christen names, as Tom Dick
and Francis. They take it already upon their sal-
vation, that though I be but Prince of Wales, yet
I am the king of courtesy, and tell me flatly I am
no proud Jack, like Falstaff, but a Corinthian, a
lad of mettle, a good boy, by the Lord, so they
call me, and when I am king of England I shall
command all the good lads in Eastcheap. They
call drinking deep, dyeing scarlet, and when you
breathe in your watering, they cry, hem! and
bid you play it off. To conclude, I am so good a
proficient in one quarter of an hour, that I can
drink with any tinker in his own language during
my life. I tell thee, Ned, thou hast lost much
honour, that thou wert not with me in this action.
But sweet Ned—to sweeten which name of Ned,
I give thee this pennyworth of sugar clapped
even now into my hand by an under skinker, one
that never spake other English in his life than
Eight shillings and sixpence, and you are
welcome, with this shrill addition, Anon
anon sir! Score a pint of bastard in the Half
moon, or so. But Ned, to drive away the time
till Falstaff come, I prithee, do thou stand in
some by-room, while I question my puny drawer
to what end he gave me the sugar, and do thou
never leave calling Francis, that his tale to me
may be nothing but, Anon. Step aside, and I'll
show thee a precedent.

Poins Francis!

Prince Thou art perfect.

Poins Francis!

[*Exit POINS* 40

Enter FRANCIS

Fran Anon, anon, sit. Look down into the
Porgatner Ralph.

Prince Come hither, Francis.

Fran My lord?

Prince How long hast thou to serve, Francis?

Fran Forsooth, five years, and as much as to—

Poins [*Within*] Francis!

Fran Anon, anon, sir.

Prince Five year! by a lady, a long lease for the
clinking of pewter. But Francis, darrest thou be
so valiant as to play the coward with thy inden-
ture and show it a fair pair of heels and run from
it?

Fran O Lord, sir, I'll be sworn upon all the
books in England, I could find in my heart.

Poins [*Within*] Francis!

Fran Anon, sir.

Prince How old art thou, Francis?

Fran Let me see—about Michaelmas next I shall be— 61

Poins [Within] Francis!

Fran Anon, sir Pray stay a little my lord

Prince Nay, but hark you Francis for the sugar thou gavest me 'twas a penny worth was it not?

Fran O Lord, I would it had been two!

Prince I will give thee for it a thousand pound ask me when thou wilt and thou shalt have it 70

Poins [Within] Francis!

Fran Anon anon

Prince Anon Francis? No, Francis, but tomorrow, Francis or Francis o' Thursday or indeed Francis when thou wilt But, Francis!

Fran My lord?

Prince Wilt thou rob this leathern jerkin crystal-button not-pated agate ring puke-stocking caddis-garter, smooth tongue Spanish pouch,—

Fran O Lord, sir, who do you mean? 81

Prince Why, then your brown bastard in your only drink for look you Francis your white canvas doublet will sully in Barbary sir it cannot come to so much

Fran What sir?

Poins [Within] Francis!

Prince Away, you rogue! dost thou not hear them call? [Here they both call him, the drawer stands amazed not knowing which way to go]

Enter VINTNER

Vint What standest thou still and hearest such a calling? Look to the guests within [Exit FRANCIS] My lord, old Sir John with half a-dozen more, are at the door shall I let them in?

Prince Let them alone awhile, and then open the door [Exit VINTNER] *Poins*!

Re-enter POINS

Poins Anon anon sir

Prince Sirrah Falstaff and the rest of the thieves are at the door shall we be merry? 99

Poins As merry as crickets my lad But hark ye what cunning match have you made with this jest of the drawer? come what's the issue?

Prince I am now of all humours that have showed themselves humours since the old days of Goodman Adam to the pupil age of this present twelve o'clock at midnight

Re-enter FRANCIS

What's o'clock Francis?

Fran Anon anon sir [Exit 109

Prince That ever this fellow should have fewer words than a parrot and yet the son of a woman!

His industry is up stairs and down stairs, his eloquence the parcel of a reckoning I am not yet of Percy's mind the Hotspur of the north he that kills me some six or seven dozen of Scots at a breakfast washes his hands, and says to his wife "Fie upon this quiet life! I want work" "O, my sweet Harry" says she "how many hast thou killed to-day?" Give my roan horse a drench" says he and answers Some fourteen, an hour after "a trifle a trifle" I prithee call in Falstaff I'll play Percy and that damned brawn shall play Dame Mortimer his wife "Rivo" says the drunkard Call in ribs call in tallow

Enter FALSTAFF GADSHILL, BARDOLPH and PETO FRANCIS following with wine

Poins Welcome Jack where hast thou been

Fal A plague of all cowards I say, and a vengeance too! marry and amen! Give me a cup of sack boy Ere I lead this life long I'll sew nether stocks and mend them and foot them too A plague of all cowards! Give me a cup of sack, rogue Is there no virtue extant?

He drinks

Prince Didst thou never see Titan kiss a dish of butter? pitiful hearted Titan that melted at the sweet tale of the sun's! if thou didst then behold that compound

Fal You rogue here's lime in this sack too there is nothing but roguery to be found in villainous man yet a coward is worse than a cup of sack with lime in it A villainous coward! Go thy ways old Jack die when thou wilt if manhood good manhood be not forgot upon the face of the earth then am I a shotten herring There live not three good men unhanged in England and one of them is fat and grows old God help the while! a bad world, I say I would I were a weaver I could sing psalms or anything A plague of all cowards I say still

Prince How now wool sack! what mutter you? 149

Fal A king's son! If I do not beat thee out of thy kingdom with a dagger of lath and drive all thy subjects afore thee like a flock of wild-geese I'll never wear hair on my face more You Prince of Wales!

Prince Why you whorson round man what's the matter?

Fal Are not you a coward answer me to that and Poins there

Poins Zounds ye fat paunch an ye call me coward by the Lord I'll stab thee 160

Fal I call thee coward! I'll see thee dead ere I call thee coward but I would give a thousand

pound I could run as fast as thou canst. You are straight enough in the shoulders; you care not who sees your back: call you that backing of your friends? A plague upon such backing! give me them that will face me. Give me a cup of sack. I am a rogue if I drunk to-day.

Prince O villain! thy lips are scarce wiped since thou drunkenest last. 171

Fal All's one for that. [*He drinks*] A plague of all cowards! still say I!

Prince What's the matter?

Fal What's the matter? there be four of us here have taken a thousand pound this day morn'ing.

Prince Where is it, Jack? where is it?

Fal Where is it? taken from us it is: a hundred upon poor four of us. 180

Prince What a hundred man?

Fal I am a rogue if I were not at half sword with a dozen of them two hours together. I have escaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through the doublet, four through the hose, my buckler cut through and through, my sword hacked like a hand saw—*recite signum!* I never dealt better since I was a man: all would not do. A plague of all cowards! Let them speak if they speak more or less than truth: they are villains and the sons of darkness. 191

Prince Speak, sirs, how was it?

Ga We four set upon some dozen—

Fal Seven at least, my lord.

Ga And bound them.

P No, no, they were not bound.

Fal You rogue, they were bound every man of them, or I am a Jew else: an Hebrew Jew.

Ga As we were sharing some six or seven fresh men set upon us— 200

Fal And unbound the rest, and then come in the other.

Prince What fought you with them all?

Fal All I know not what you call all, but if I fought not with fifty of them, I am a bunch of radish; if there were not two or three and fifty upon poor old Jack, then am I no two-legged creature.

Prince Pray God you have not murdered some of them. 210

Fal Nay, that's past praying for. I have peppered two of them: two I am sure I have paid two rogues in buckram suits. I tell thee what, Hal! if I tell thee a lie, spit in my face, call me horse. Thou knowest my old ward here I lay, and thus I bore my point. Four rogues in buckram let drive at me—

Prince What four? thou saidst but two even now.

Fal Four, Hal! I told thee four. 220

Points Ay, ay, he said four.

Fal These four came all a front, and mainly thrust at me. I made me no more ado but took all their seven points in my target thus.

Prince Seven? why there were but four even now.

Fal In buckram?

Points Ay, four in buckram suits.

Fal Seven by these hilt, or I am a villain else.

Prince Prishee! let him alone: we shall have more anon. 232

Fal Dost thou hear me, Hal?

Prince Ay, and mark thee too, Jack.

Fal Do so, for 'tis worth the listening to.

These nine in buckram that I told thee of—

Prince So, two more already.

Fal Their points being broken—

Points Down fell their hose. 239

Fal Began to give me ground, but I followed me close, came in foot and hand, and with a thought seven of the eleven I paid.

Prince O monstrous! eleven buckram men grown out of two!

Fal But as the devil would have it, three misbegotten knaves in Kendal green came at my back and let drive at me, for it was so dark, Hal, that thou couldst not see thy hand.

Prince These lies are like their father that begets them: gross as a mountain, open, palpable. Why, thou clay-brained guts, thou knotty-pared fool, thou whoreson obscene greasy tallow catch—

Fal What art thou mad? art thou mad? is not the truth the truth?

Prince Why, how couldst thou know these men in Kendal green, when it was so dark thou couldst not see thy hand? come, tell us your reason, what sayest thou to this? 259

Points Come, your reason, Jack, your reason.

Fal What upon compulsion? Zounds, an I were at the strappado, or all the racks in the world, I would not tell you on compulsion. Give you a reason on compulsion? if reasons were as plentiful as blackberries, I would give no man a reason upon compulsion.

Prince I'll be no longer guilty of this sin: this sanguine coward, this bed-presser, this horse-back breaker, this huge hill of flesh— 69

Fal Sblood, you starveling, you elf-skin, you dried neat's tongue, you bull's pizzle, you stock-fish! O for breath to utter what is like thee! you tailor's yard, you sheath, you bow-case, you vile strand ng tuck—

Prince Well, breathe awhile, and then to it again, and when thou hast tired thyself in base

comparisons, hear me speak but this

Poins Mark, Jack.

Prince We two saw you four set on four and bound them, and were masters of their wealth. Mark now, how a plain tale shall put you down. Then did we two set on you four, and, with a word out faced you from your prize, and have it, yea, and can show it you here in the house and Falstaff, you carried your guts away as nimbly, with as quick dexterity, and roared for mercy and still run and roared as ever I heard bull-calf. What a slave art thou, to hack thy sword as thou hast done, and then say it was in fight! What trick, what device, what starting hole canst thou now find out to hide thee from this open and apparent shame?

Poins Come, let's hear Jack, what trick hast thou now?

Fal By the Lord, I knew ye as well as he that made ye. Why, hear you my masters: was it for me to kill the heir-apparent? should I turn upon the true prince? why, thou knowest I am as valiant as Hercules: but beware instinct: the lion will not touch the true prince. Instinct is a great matter, I was now a coward on instinct. I shall think the better of myself and thee during my life. I for a valiant lion, and thou for a true prince. But, by the Lord, lads, I am glad you have the money. Hostess, clap to the doors: watch to-night: pray to-morrow. Gallants, lads, boys, hearts of gold, all the titles of good fellowship come to you! What, shall we be merry? shall we have a play extempore?

Prince Content, and the argument shall be thy running away. 311

Fal Ah, no more of that. Hal, an thou lovest me!

Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY, the Hostess

Quick O Jesu my lord the prince!

Prince How now my lady the hostess! what sayest thou to me?

Quick Marry, my lord, there is a nobleman of the court at door would speak with you: he says he comes from your father. 319

Prince Give him as much as will make him a royal man and send him back again to my mother.

Fal What manner of man is he?

Quick An old man.

Fal What doth gravity out of his bed at midnight? Shall I give him his answer?

Prince Prithce do, Jack.

Fal Faith, and I'll send him packing. [Exit

Prince Now, sirs, by your lady, you fought fair: so did you, Peto: so did you, Bardolph: you are

lions too, you ran away upon instinct, you will not touch the true prince, no, fie!

Bard Faith, I ran when I saw others run.

Prince Faith, tell me now in earnest, how came Falstaff's sword so hacked?

Peto Why, he hacked it with his dagger, and said he would swear truth out of England but he would make you believe it was done in fight, and persuaded us to do the like. 339

Bird Yea, and to tickle our noses with spear-grass to make them bleed, and then to beslobber our garments with it and swear it was the blood of true men. I did that I did not this seven year before. I blushed to hear his monstrous devices.

Prince O villain, thou stolest a cup of sack eighteen years ago and wert taken with the manner: and ever since thou hast blushed extempore. Thou hadst fire and sword on thy side, and yet thou rankest away: what instinct hadst thou for it? 350

Bard My lord, do you see these meteors? do you behold these exhalations?

Prince I do.

Bird What think you they portend?

Prince Hot livers and cold purses.

Bard Choler, my lord, if rightly taken.

Prince No, if rightly taken, halter.

Re-enter FALSTAFF

Here comes lean Jack: here comes bare bone. How now, my sweet creature of bombast! How long is it ago, Jack, since thou sawest thine own knee? 361

Fal My own knee! when I was about thy years. Hal, I was not an eagle's talon in the waist. I could have crept into any alderman's thumb-ring: a plague of sighing and grief! it blows a man up like a bladder. There's villainous news abroad: here was Sir John Bracy from your father: you must to the court in the morning. That same mad fellow of the north, Percy, and he of Wales that gave Amamon the bastinado and made Lucifer cuckold and swore the devil his true liegeman upon the cross of a Welsh hook—what a plague call you him?

Poins O Glendower.

Fal Owen Owen the same, and his son in law Mortimer and old Northumberland and that sprightly Scot of Scots Douglas that runs on horseback up a hill perpendicular—

Prince He that rides at high speed and with his pistol kills a sparrow flying. 360

Fal You have hit it.

Prince So did he never the sparrow.

Fal Well, that rascal hath good rattle in his will not run.

Prince Why what a rascal art thou then, to praise him so for running?

Fal O horseback! ye cuckoo but afoot he will not budge a foot

Prince Yes Jack upon instinct 389

Fal I grant ye upon instinct Well he is there too and one Mordake and a thousand blue-caps more Worcester is stolen away to-night thy father's beard is turned white with the news you may buy land now as cheap as stinking mackerel

Prince Why then it is like if there come a hot June and this civil buffering hold we shall buy maidenheads as they buy hob-nails by the hundred 399

Fal By the mass lad thou sayest true it is like we shall have good trading that way But tell me Hal art not thou horrible afraid? thou being here apparent could the world pick thee out three such enemies again as that fiend Douglas that spirit Percy and that devil Glendower? Art thou not horribly afraid? doth not thy blood thrill at it?

Prince Not a whit: faith I lack some of thy instinct 409

Fal Well thou wilt be horribly chid to-morrow when thou comest to thy father if thou love me practise an answer

Prince Do thou stand for my father and examine me upon the particulars of my life?

Fal Shall I? content this chair shall be my state this dagger my sceptre, and this cushion my crown

Prince Thy state is taken for a joined stool thy golden sceptre for a leaden dagger and thy precious rich crown for a painful bald crown! 420

Fal Well an the fire of grace be not quite out of thee, now shalt thou be moved Give me a cup of sack to make my eyes look red that it may be thought I have wept for I must speak in passion and I will do it in King Cambyses vein

Prince Well here is my leg

Fal And here is my speech Stand aside nobility 429

Quick O Jesu, this is excellent sport: faith!

Fal Weep not sweet queen for trickling tears are vain

Quick O the father how he holds his countenance!

Fal For God's sake lords convey my trustful queen

For tears do stop the flood-gates of her eyes

Quick O Jesu, he doth it as like one of these harlotry players as ever I see!

Fal Peace good pint pot peace good tickle brain Harry I do not only marvel where thou spendest thy time but also how thou art accom-

panied for though the camomile the more it is trodden on the faster it grows yet youth, the more it is wasted the sooner it wears That thou art my son, I have partly thy mother's word partly my own opinion but chiefly a villainous trick of thine eye and a foolish hanging of thy nether lip that doth warrant me If then thou be son to me, here lies the point why being son to me art thou so pointed at? Shall the blessed sun of heaven prove a richer and eat blackberries? a question not to be asked Shall the son of England prove a thief and take purses? a question to be asked There is a thing Harry which thou hast often heard of and it is known to many in our land by the name of pitch this pitch as ancient writers do report doth defile so doth the company thou keepest for Harry now I do not speak to thee in drink but in tears not in pleasure but in passion, not in words only but in woes also and yet there is a virtuous man whom I have often noted in thy company but I know not his name 461

Prince What manner of man an it like your Majesty?

Fal A goodly portly man, a faith and a corpulent of a cheerful look a pleasing eye and a most noble carriage and as I think his age some fifty or by a lady inclining to three score and now I remember me his name is Falstaff if that man should be lewdly given, he deceiveth me for Harry I see virtue in his looks If then the tree may be known by the fruit as the fruit by the tree then peremptorily I speak it there is virtue in that Falstaff him keep with the rest banish And tell me now thou naughty varlet tell me where hast thou been this month?

Prince Dost thou speak like a king? Do thou stand for me and I'll play my father

Fal Depose me? if thou dost it half so gravely so majestically both in word and matter hant me up by the heels for a rabbit sucker or a poulter's hare 481

Prince Well here I am set

Fal And here I stand judge my masters

Prince Now Harry whence come you?

Fal My noble lord from Eastcheap

Prince The complaints I hear of thee are grievous 501

Fal Shblood my lord they are false nay I'll tickle ye for a young prince: faith 489

Prince Swarest thou ungracious boy? henceforth ne'er look on me Thou art violently carried away from grace there is a devil haunts thee in the likeness of an old fat man a tun of man is thy companion Why dost thou converse with that trunk of humours that bolting hutch of

beastliness, that swollen parcel of dropsies that huge bombard of sack, that stuffed cloak bag of guts, that roasted Manningtree ox with the pudding in his belly, that reverend vice that grey iniquity, that father ruffian, that vanity in years? Wherein is he good, but to taste sack and drink it? wherein neat and cleanly, but to carve a capon and eat it? wherein cunning but in craft? where in crafty but in villainy? wherein villainous but in all things? wherein worthy but in nothing?

Fal I would your Grace would take me with you whom means your Grace?

Prince That villainous abominable misleader of youth Falstaff, that old white bearded Satan

Fal My lord the man I'll now 510

Prince I know thou dost

Fal But to say I know more harm in him than in myself, were to say more than I know. That he is old the more the pity his white hairs do witness it, but that he is, saving your reverence a whoremaster, that I utterly deny. If sack and sugar be a fault God help the wicked! if to be old and merry be a sin, then many an old host that I know is damned if to be fat be to be hated then Pharaoh's lean kine are to be loved. No my good lord banish Peto banish Bardolph banish Pouns but for sweet Jack Falstaff kind Jack Falstaff, true Jack Falstaff, valiant Jack Falstaff and therefore more valiant being, as he is old Jack Falstaff, banish not him thy Harry's company, banish not him thy Harry's company banish plump Jack and banish all the world

Prince I do, I will [*A knocking heard. Exeunt*]
MISTRESS QUICKLY, FRANCIS and BARDOLPH

Re-enter BARDOLPH, running

Bard O, my lord my lord! the sheriff with a most monstrous watch is at the door 520

Fal Out ye rogue! Play out the play, I have much to say in the behalf of that Falstaff

Re-enter MISTRESS QUICKLY

Quick O Jesu my lord my lord!

Prince Heigh heigh! the devil rides upon a fiddlestick what's the matter?

Quick The sheriff and all the watch are at the door they are come to search the house Shall I let them in?

Fal Dost thou hear, Hal? never call a true piece of gold a counterfeit thou art essentially mad without seeming so 541

Prince And thou a natural coward without in sin

Fal I deny your major if you will deny the sheriff so if no let him enter if I become not a cart as well as another man a plague on my

bringing up! I hope I shall as soon be strangled with a halter as another

Prince Go, hide thee behind the arras the rest walk up above Now my masters for a true face and good conscience 551

Fal Both which I have had but their date is out and therefore I'll hide me

Prince Call in the sheriff

[*Exeunt all except the PRINCE and PETO*]

Enter SHERIFF and the FIRST CARRIER

Now master sheriff what is your will with me?

Sher First, pardon me my lord A hue and cry Hath follow'd certain men unto this house

Prince What men?

Sher One of them is well known my gracious lord

A gross fat man

1st Car As fat as butter 560

Prince The man I do assure you is not here, For I myself at this time have employ'd him

And sheriff I will engage my word to thee That I will by to-morrow dinner time,

Send him to answer thee or any man,

For anything he shall be charged withal And so let me entreat you leave the house

Sher I will my lord There are two gentlemen Have in this robbery lost three hundred marks

Prince It may be so if he have robb'd these men 570

He shall be answerable, and so farewell

Sher Good night my noble lord

Prince I think it is good morrow is it not?

Sher Indeed my lord I think it be two o'clock

[*Exeunt SHERIFF and FIRST CARRIER*]

Prince This oily rascal is known as well as Paul's Go call him forth

Peto Falstaff!—Fast asleep behind the arras and snorting like a horse

Prince Hark how hard he fetches breath Search his pockets [*He searcheth his pockets and findeth certain pipers*] What hast thou found

Peto Nothing but papers my lord

Prince Let's see what they be read them

Peto [*Reads*] Item A capon, 2s d

Item Sauce, 4d

Item Sack, two gallons 1s 8d

Item Anchovies an I sack

after supper 5 6d

Item Bread 6d

Prince O monstrous! but one half penny worth of bread to this intolerable deal of sack! What there is else I'll keep close we'll read it at my advantage there let him sleep till day I'll to the court in the morning We must all to the wars and this place shall be honourable. I'll procure

this fat rogue a charge of foot and I know his death will be a march of twelve score The money shall be paid back again with advantage Be with me betimes in the morning and so good morrow Peto

601

Peto Good morrow good my lord [Exit]

ACT III

SCENE I *Bristol The Archdeacon's house*

Enter HOTSPUR WORCESTER MORTIMER, and
GLENDOVER

Mort These promises are fair the parties sure
And our induction full of prosperous hope

Hot Lord Mortimer and cousin Glendower

Will you sit down?

And Uncle Worcester a plague upon it!

I have forgot the map

Glend No here it is

Sit cousin Percy sit good cousin Hotspur

For by that name as oft as Lancaster

Doth speak of you his cheek looks pale and with

A rising sigh he wisheth you in heaven 10

Hot And you in hell as oft as he hears Owen

Glendower spoke of

Glend I cannot blame him at my nativity

The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes

Of burning cressets and at my birth

The frame and huge foundation of the earth

Shaked like a coward

Hot Why so it would have done at the same
season, if your mother's cat had but kitted

though yourself had never been born 20

Glend I say the earth did shake when I was
born

Hot And I say the earth was not of my mind

If you suppose as fearing you it shook

Glend The heavens were all on fire the earth
did tremble

Hot O then the earth shook to see the heavens
on fire

And not in fear of your nativity

Diseased nature's furies times breaks forth

In strange eruptions oft the seeming earth

Is with a kind of colic pinch'd and codd

By the imprisoning of unruly wind 30

Within her womb which for enlargement striv-

ing Shakes the old beldam earth and topples down

Steeple and moss-grown towers At your birth

Our grandam earth, having thus distemperature

In passion shook

Glend Cousin, of many men

I do not bear these crossings Give me leave

To tell you once again that at my birth

The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes

The goats ran from the mountains and the herds
Were strangely clamorous to the frightened fields
These signs have mark'd me extraordinary
And all the courses of my life do show
I am not in the roll of common men
Where is he living clipp'd in with the sea
That chides the banks of England Scotland
Wales

Which calls me pupil or hath read to me?

And bring him out that is but woman's son

Can trace me in the tedious ways of art

And hold me pace in deep experiments

Hot I think there's no man speaks better

Welsh I'll to dinner

51

Hot Peace cousin Percy you will make him
mad

Glend I can call spirits from the vasty deep

Hot Why so can I or so can any man

But will they come when you do call for them?

Glend Why I can teach you cousin to com-
mand

The devil

Hot And I can teach thee coz to shame the
devil

By telling truth tell truth and shame the devil

If thou have power to raise him bring him
hither

And I'll be sworn I have power to shame him
hence 61

O while you live tell truth and shame the devil!

Mort Come come no more of this unprofitable
chat

Glend Three times hath Henry Bolingbroke
made head

Against my power thrice from the banks of Wy-

And sandy bottom'd Severn have I sent him

Bootless home and weather beaten back

Hot Home without boots and in foul weather
too!

How scapes he agues in the devil's name?

Glend Come here's the map shall we divide
our robe 70

According to our threefold order to en?

Mort The Archdeacon hath divided it

Into three limits very equally

England from Trent and Severn hitherto

By south and east to my part assign'd

All westward Wales beyond the Severn shore

And all the fertile land within that bound

To Owen Glendower and dear coz to you

The remnant northward lying off from Trent

And our indentures tripartite are drawn 80

Which being sealed interchangeably

A business that this night may execute

To-morrow cousin Percy you and I

And my good Lord of Worcester will set forth

To meet your father and the Scottish power,
As is appointed us, at Shrewsbury
My father Glendower is not ready yet,
Nor shall we need his help these fourteen days
Within that space you may have drawn together
Your tenants, friends, and neighbouring gentle-
men 90

Glend A shorter time shall send me to you,
lords

And in my conduct shall your ladies come
From whom you now must steal and take no
leave,

For there will be a world of water shed
Upon the parting of your wives and you

Hot Methinks my moiety, north from Burton
here,

In quantity equals not one of yours
See how this river comes me cranking in,
And cuts me from the best of all my land
A huge half moon, a monstrous cantle out 100
I'll have the current in this place damm'd up
And here the smug and silver Trent shall run
In a new channel, fair and evenly
It shall not wind with such a deep indent,
To rob me of so rich a bottom here

Glend Not wind? it shall, it must, you see it
doth

Mort Yea but

Mark how he bears his course and runs me up
With like advantage on the other side
Gelding the opposed continent as much 110
As on the other side it takes from you

War Yea, but a little charge will trench him
here

And on this north side within this cape of land
And then he runs straight and even

Hot I'll have it so a little charge will do it

Glend I'll not have it alter'd

Hot Will not you?

Glend No nor you shall not

Hot Who shall say me nay?

Glend Why, that will I

Hot Let me not understand you then speak it
in Welsh 120

Glend I can speak English lord as well as you
For I was train'd up in the English court
Where being but young I fram'd to the harp
Many an English dittie lovely well
And gave the tongue a helpful ornament,
A virtue that was never seen in you

Ho Merry

And I am glad of it with all my heart
I had rather be a jester and cry mew
Than one of these same metre ballad mongers
I had rather hear a brayn canstick turn'd 130
Or a dry wheel grate on the axle tree,

And that would set my teeth nothing on edge,
Nothing so much as mincing poetry
'Tis like the forced gait of a shuffling nag
Glend Come, you shall have Trent turn'd
Hot I do not care I'll give thrice so much land
To any well-deserving friend,
But in the way of bargain mark ye me,
I'll cavil on the ninth part of a hair 140
Are the indentures drawn? shall we be gone?

Glend The moon shunes fair you may away
by night

I'll haste the writer and withal
Break with your wives of your departure hence
I am afraid my daughter will run mad,
So much she doth on her Mortimer [Exit
Mort Fie, cousin Percy! how you cross my
father!

Hot I cannot choose sometime he angers me
With telling me of the moldwarp and the ant,
Of the dreamer Merlin and his prophecies, 150
And of a dragon and a finless fish,
A clip-wing'd griffin and a moulten raven
A couching lion and a ramping cat
And such a deal of skumble skamble stuff
As puts me from my faith I tell you what,
He held me last night at least nine hours
In reckoning up the several devils' names
That were his lackeys I cried 'hum' and
'well go to'

But mark'd him not a word O, he is as tedious
As a tired horse, a railing wife, 160
Worse than a smoky house I had rather live
With cheese and garlic in a windmill far,
Than feed on cates and have him talk to me
In any summer house in Christendom

Mort In faith he is a worthy gentleman
Exceedingly well read and proflited
In strange concealments valiant as a lion
And wondrous affable and as bountiful
As mines of India Shall I tell you cousin?
He holds your temper in a high respect 170
And curbs himself even of his natural scope
When you come cross his humour faith he
does

I warrant you that man is not alive
Might so have tempted as you have done
Without the taste of danger and reproof
But do not use it oft let me entreat you

Hot In faith my lord you are too wilful
blame

And since your coming hither have done enough
To put him quite beside his patience
You must needs learn, lord to amend this fault
Though sometimes it show greatness you are
blood— 180

And that's the dearest grace it renders

Yet oftentimes it doth present harsh rage
 Defect of manners want of government
 Pride haughtiness opinion and disdain
 The least of which haunting a nobleman
 Loseth men's hearts and leaves behind a stain
 Upon the beauty of all parts besides
 Beguiling them of commendation

Hot Well I am school'd good manners be
 your speed! 190
 Here comes our wives and let us take our leave

Re-enter GLENDOWER with the ladies

Mort This is the deadly spite that angers me
 My wife can speak no English I no Welsh

Glend My daughter weeps she will not part
 with you

She'll be a soldier too she'll to the wars

Mort Good father tell her that she and my
 aunt Percy

Shall follow in your conduct speedily

*GLENDOWER speaks to LADY MORTIMER in Welsh
 and she answers him in the same*

Glend She is desperate here a peevish self
 will'd harlotry one that no persuasion can do
 good upon

The LADY MORTIMER speaks in Welsh

Mort Understand thy looks that pretty
 Welsh 201

Which thou pour'st down from these swelling
 heavens

I am too perfect in and but for shame
 In such a parley should I answer thee

The LADY MORTIMER speaks again in Welsh

I understand thy kisses and thou mine

And that's a feeling disputation

But I will never be a truant love

Till I have learn'd thy language for thy tongue

Makes Welsh as sweet as ditties highly penn'd

Sung by a fair queen in a summer's bower 210

With ravishing division to her lute

Glend Nay if you melt when will she run mad

The LADY MORTIMER speaks again in Welsh

Mort O I am ignorance itself in this!

Glend She bids you on the wanton rushes
 lay you down

And rest your gentle head upon her lap
 And she will sing the song that pleaseth you

And on your eyelids crown the god of sleep

Charming your blood with pleasing heaviness

Makes no such difference 'twixt wake and sleep

As is the difference betwixt day and night 220

The hour before the heavenly harness'd team

Begins his golden progress in the east

Mort With all my heart I'll sit and hear her sing

By that time will our book I think be drawn

Glend Do so

And those musicians that shall play to you
 Hang in the air a thousand leagues from hence
 And straight they shall be here sit and attend
Hot Come Kate thou art perfect in lying
 down come quick quick that I may lay my
 head in thy lap 231

Lady P Go ye giddy goose

The music plays

Hot Now I perceive the devil understands
 Welsh

And tis no marvel he is so humorous

By'r lady he is a good musician

Lady P Then should you be nothing but
 musical for you are altogether governed by hu-
 mours Lie still ye thief and hear the lady sing
 in Welsh

Hot I had rather hear Lady my brach howl
 in Irish 241

Lady P Wouldst thou have thy head broken?

Hot No

Lady P Then be still

Hot Neither tis a woman's fault

Lady P Now God help thee!

Hot To the Welsh lady's bed

Lady P What's that?

Hot Peace! she sings

Here the LADY MORTIMER sings a Welsh song

Hot Come Kate I'll have your song too

Lady P Not mine, in good sooth 251

Hot Not yours in good sooth! Heart! you

swear like a comfit-maker's wife Not you in

good sooth and as true as I live and as

God shall mend me and as sure as day

And givest such sarcenet surety for thy oaths

As if thou never walk'st further than Finsbury

Swear me Kate like a lady as thou art

A good mouth filling oath and leave in sooth

And such protest of pepper gingerbread 260

To velvet-guards and Sunday-citizens

Come sing

Lady P I will not sing

Hot 'Tis the nett way to turn tailor or be

red-breast teacher An the indentures be drawn

I'll away within these two hours and so come

in when ye will [Exit]

Glend Come come Lord Mortimer you are

as slow

As hot Lord Percy is on fire to go

By this our book is drawn we'll but seal 270

And then to horse immediately

Mort With all my heart [Exit]

SCENE II London the palace

Enter the KING PRINCE OF WALES and others

King Lords give us leave the Prince of

Wales and I

Must have some private conference but be near
at hand,

For we shall presently have need of you

[Exeunt Lords]

I know not whether God will have it so,
For some displeasing service I have done,
That, in his secret doom out of my blood
He'll breed revengement and a scourge for me,
But thou dost in thy passages of life
Make me believe that thou art only mark'd
For the hot vengeance and the rod of heaven
To punish my mistreadings. Tell me else
Could such inordinate and low desires,
Such poor, such bare, such lewd, such mean
attempts

Such barren pleasures, rude society,
As thou art match'd withal and grafted to,
Accompany the greatness of thy blood
And hold their level with thy princely heart?

Prince So please your Majesty, I would I
could

Quit all offences with as clear excuse
As well as I am doubtless I can purge

Myself of many I am charged withal
Yet such extenuation let me beg
As in reproof of many tales devised,
Which oft the ear of greatness needs must hear,
By smiling pick thanks and base newsmongers
I may, for some things true, wherein my youth
Hath faulty wander'd and irregular,
Find pardon on my true submission

King God pardon thee! yet let me wonder,
Harry,

At thy affections which do hold a wing
Quite from the flight of all thy ancestors

Thy place in council thou hast rudely lost
Which by thy younger brother is supplied,

And art almost an alien to the hearts
Of all the court and princes of my blood

The hope and expectation of thy time
Is ruin'd and the soul of every man

Prophetically doth forethink thy fall
Had I so lavish of my presence been,

So common hackney'd in the eyes of men,
So stale and cheap to vulgar company

Opinion that did help me to the crown,
Had still kept loyal to possession

And left me in reputeless banishment
A fellow of no mark nor likelihood

By being seldom seen I could not stir
But like a comet I was wonder'd at

That men would tell their children This is he
Others would say Where which is Boling

broke?
And then I sold all courtship from heaven

And dress'd my self in such humility

That I did pluck allegiance from men's hearts,
Loud shouts and salutations from their mouths,
Even in the presence of the crown'd King
Thus did I keep my person fresh and new,
My presence, like a robe pontifical,
Ne'er seen but wonder'd at and so my state,
Seldom but sumptuous showed like a feast
And won by rareness such solemnity

The skipping King he ambled up and down
With shallow jesters and rash bawling wits

Soon kindled and soon burnt carded his state,
Mingled his royalty with capering fools,

Had his great name profan'd with their scorns
And gave his countenance against his name,

To laugh at gibing boys and stand the push
Of every beardless vain comparative

Grew a companion to the common streets,
Unfeoff'd himself to popularity,

That being daily swallow'd by men's eyes,
They surfeited with honey and began

To loathe the taste of sweetness whereof a little
More than a little is by much too much

So when he had occasion to be seen,
He was but as the cuckoo is in June

Heard not regarded seen but with such eyes
As sick and blunted with community,

Afford no extraordinary gaze,
Such as is bent on sun like majesty

When it shines seldom in admiring eyes,
But rather drows'd and hung their eyelids down

Slept in his face and render'd such aspect
As cloudy men use to their adversaries

Being with his presence glutt'd gorged and full
And in that very line Harry standest thou

For thou hast lost thy princely privilege
With vile participation not an eye

But is a weary of thy common sight
Save mine which hath desired to see thee more

Which now doth that I would not have it do
Make blind itself with foolish tenderness

Prince I shall hereafter, my thrice gracious
lord

Be more myself

King For all the world
As thou art to this hour was Richard then

When I from France set foot at Ravenspurgh
And even as I was then is Percy now

Now by my sceptre and my soul to boot
He hath more worthy interest to the state

Than thou the shadow of succession
I or of no right nor colour like to right

He doth fill fields with harness in the realm
Turns head against the lion's armed jaw

And being no more in debt to care than thou
Leads ancient lords and reverend bishops on

To bloody battles and to bruising arms

What never-dying honour hath he got
 Against renown'd Douglas? whose high deeds
 Whose hot incursions and great name in arms
 Holds from all soldiers chief majority
 And military title capital 110
 Through all the kingdoms that acknowledge
 Christ

Thrice hath this Hotspur Mars in swathing
 clothes

This infant warrior in his enterprises
 Discomfited great Douglas: ta'en him once
 Enlarged him and made a friend of him
 To fill the mouth of deep defiance up
 And shake the peace and safety of our throne
 And what say you to this? Percy, Northumberland

The Archbishop a grace of York, Douglas, Mortimer

Capitulate against us and are up 120
 But v' herefore do I tell these news to thee?

Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes
 Which art my near and dear enemy?
 Thou that art like enough through vassal fear
 Base inclination and the start of spleen
 To fight against me under Percy's pay
 To dog his heels and curtsy at his frowns
 To show how much thou art degenerate

Primer Do not think so: you shall not find it so
 And God forgive them that so much have sway'd
 Your Majesty, a good thought away from me! 130
 I will redeem all this on Percy's head
 And in the closing of some glorious day
 Be bold to tell you that I am your son
 When I will wear a garment all of blood
 And stain my favours in a bloody mask
 Which wash'd away shall scour my shame with

it

And that shall be the day when'er it lights
 That this same child of honour and renown
 This gallant Hotspur, this all-praised knight 140
 And your unwrought-of Harry chame to meet
 For every honour sitting on his helm
 Would they were multitudes and on my head
 My shames redoubled! for the time will come
 That I shall make this northern youth exchange
 His glorious deeds for my indignities
 Percy is but my far-off good my lord
 To engross up glorious deeds on my behalf
 And I will call him to so strict account
 That he shall render every glory up 150
 Yea, even the slightest v' orship of his time
 Or I will tear the reckoning from his heart
 This in the name of God I promise here
 The which if He be pleas'd I shall perform
 I do beseech your Majesty may save
 The long-grown wounds of my intemperance

If not the end of life cancels all bands
 And I will die a hundred thousand deaths
 Ere break the smallest parcel of this vow
 King A hundred thousand rebels die in this
 Thou shalt have charge and sovereign trust
 herein

Enter BLUNT

How now good Blunt? thy looks are full of
 speed

Blunt So hath the business that I come to
 speak of

Lord Mortimer of Scotland hath sent word
 That Douglas and the English rebels met
 The eleventh of this month at Shrewsbury
 A mighty and a fearful head they are
 If promises be kept on every hand
 As ever offer'd soul play in a state

King The Earl of Westmoreland set forth 170
 to-day

With him my son Lord John of Lancaster
 For this advertisement is five days old
 On Wednesday next Harry you shall set for
 ward

On Thursday we ourselves will march our
 meeting

Is Bridgenorth and Harry you shall march
 Through Gloucestershire by which account
 Our business valued some twelve days hence
 Our general forces at Bridgenorth shall meet
 Our hands are full of business: let's away
 Advantage feeds him fat while men delay 180

[Exeunt]

SCENE III *Eastcheap the Boar's Head Tavern*

Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH

Fal Bardolph am I not fallen away vilely
 since this last action? do I not bate? do I no
 dwindle? Why my skin hangs about me like an
 old lady's loose gown. I am withered like an old
 apple-john. Well, I'll repent and that suddenly
 while I am in some liking. I shall be out of heart
 shortly and then I shall have no strength to
 repent. An I have not forgotten what the inside
 of a church is made of. I am a peppercorn, a
 brewer's horse, the inside of a church! Com-
 pany villainous company hath been the spoil of
 me

Bard Sir John you are so fretful you cannot
 live long

Fal Why there is it come sing me a bawdy
 song make me merry. I was as virtuously given
 as a gentleman need to be: virtuous enough
 sworn little deed not above seven times a week
 went to a bawdy house no above once in a
 quarter—of an hour paid money that I bor-

rowed three or four times lived well and in good compass and now I live out of all order, out of all compass

Bard Why, you are so fat, Sir John that you must needs be out of all compass out of all reasonable compass, Sir John

Fal Do thou amend thy face, and I'll amend my life thou art our admiral, thou bearest the lantern in the poop but tis in the nose of thee, thou art the Knight of the Burning Lamp 30

Bard Why, Sir John my face does you no harm

Fal No I'll be sworn, I make as good use of it as many a man doth of a Death's-head or a *nervento mori* I never see thy face but I think upon hell fire and Dives that lived in purple for there he is in his robes, burning burning If thou wert any way given to virtue I would swear by thy face, my oath should be, By this fire that's God's angel but thou art altogether given over, and wert indeed but for the light in thy face, the son of utter darkness When thou rankest up Gadshill in the night to catch my horse, if I did not think thou hadst been an *ignis fatuus* or a ball of wildfire, there's no purchase in money O, thou art a perpetual triumph, an everlasting bonfire light! Thou hast saved me a thousand marks in links and torches walking with thee in the night betwixt tavern and tavern but the sack that thou hast drunk me would have bought me lights as good cheap at the dearest chandler's in Europe I have maintained that salamander of yours with fire any time thus two and thirty years God reward me for it!

Bard Sblood I would my face were in your belly!

Fal God a mercy! so should I be sure to be heart burned

Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY

How now Dame Partlet the hen? have you inquired yet who picked my pocket? 61

Quick Why, Sir John what do you think Sir John? do you think I keep thieves in my house? I have searched, I have inquired so has my husband, man by man boy by boy, servant by servant the tithe of a hair was never lost in my house before

Fal Ye lie, hostess Bardolph was shaved and lost many a hair and I'll be sworn my pocket was picked Go to you are a woman go

Quick Who I? no I defy thee God's light I was never called so in mine own house before

Fal Go to I know you well enough

Quick No Sir John you do not know me,

Sir John I know you Sir John you owe me money Sir John, and now you pick a quarrel to beguile me of it I bought you a dozen of shirts to your back

Fal Dowlas filthy dowlas I have given them away to bakers wives, and they have made bolters of them 87

Quick Now as I am a true woman, holland of eight shillings an ell You owe money here besides Sir John for your diet and by-drinkings and money lent you, four and twenty pound

Fal He had his part of it let him pay

Quick He? alas he is poor, he hath nothing

Fal How! poor? look upon his face what call you rich let them coin his nose, let them coin his cheeks I'll not pay a denier What will you make a younker of me? shall I not take mine ease in mine inn but I shall have my pocket picked? I have lost a seal-ring of my grandfather's worth forty mark

Quick O Jesu I have heard the Prince tell him I know not how oft, that that ring was copper!

Fal How! the Prince is a Jack a sneak-cup sblood an he were here, I would cudgel him like a dog if he would say so 101

Enter the PRINCE and PETO marching, and FALSTAFF meets them playing on his truncheon like a fife

How now lad! is the wind in that door, a faith? must we all march?

Bard Yea two and two Newgate fashion

Quick My lord I pray you hear me

Prince What sayest thou Mistress Quickly? How doth thy husband? I love him well, he is an honest man

Quick Good my lord hear me

Fal Prithce, let her alone and list to me

Prince What sayest thou Jack? 111

Fal The other night I fell asleep here behind the arras and had my pocket picked this house is turned bawdy-house, they pick pockets

Prince What didst thou lose, Jack?

Fal Wilt thou believe me, Hal? three or four bonds of forty pound a piece and a seal ring of my grandfather's

Prince A trifle some eight penny matter

Quick So I told him my lord and I said I heard your Grace say so and, my lord, he speaks most vilely of you like a foul mouthed man as he is and said he would cudgel you

Prince What! he did not?

Quick There's neither faith truth nor womanhood in me else

Fal There's no more faith in thee than in a stewed prune nor no more truth in thee than in a drawn fox and for womanhood Maid Marian may be the deputy's wife of the ward to thee
Go you thing go 131

Quick Say what thing? what thing?

Fal What thing? why a thing to thank God on

Quick I am no thing to thank God on I would thou shouldst know it I am an honest man's wife and setting thy knighthood aside thou art a knave to call me so

Fal Setting thy womanhood aside thou art a beast to say otherwise 140

Quick Say what beast thou knave thou?

Fal What beast why an otter

Prince An otter Sir John? why an otter?

Fal Why she's neither fish nor flesh a man knows not where to have her

Quick Thou art an unjust man in saying so thou or any man knows where to have me thou knave thou!

Prince Thou sayest true, hostess and he slanders thee most grossly 150

Quick So he doth you my lord and said this other day you ought him a thousand pound

Prince Sirrah do I owe you a thousand pound?

Fal A thousand pound Hal? a million thy love is worth a million thou owest me thy love

Quick Nay my lord he called you Jack and said he would cudgel you

Fal Did Bardolph? 160

Bard Indeed Sir John you said so

Fal Yea if he said my ring was copper

Prince I say 'tis copper darrest thou be as good as thy word now?

Fal Why Hal thou knowest as thou art but man I dare but as thou art Prince I fear thee as I fear the roaring of the lion's whelp

Prin And why not as the lion?

Fal The lion himself is to be feared as the lion dost thou think I'll fear thee as I fear thy father? nay an I do I pray God my girdle break

Prince O if it should how would thy goes fall about thy knees! But sirrah there's no room for faith truth nor honesty in this bosom of thine it is all filled up with guts and mudriff Charge an honest woman with picking thy pocket! why thou whoreson impudent embowled rascal if there were anything in thy pocket but tavern reckonings memorandums of bawdy houses and one poor penny worth of sugar candy to make thee long winded if thy pocket were enriched with any other injuries but these I am a villain and yet you will stand so it you will not pocket up wrong art thou not ashamed?

Fal Dost thou hear Hal? thou knowest in the

state of innocency Adam fell and what should poor Jack Falstaff do in the days of villainy? Thou seest I have more flesh than another man and therefore more frailty You confess then you picked my pocket? 190

Prince It appears so by the story

Fal Hostess I forgive thee go make ready breakfast love thy husband look to thy servants cherish thy guests thou shalt find me tractable to any honest reason thou seest I am pacified still Nay prithee be gone [*Exit MISTRESS QUICKLY*] Now Hal to the news at court for the robbery had how is that answered?

Prince O my sweet beef I must still be good angel to thee the money paid back again 200

Fal O I do not like that paying back 'tis a double labour

Prince I am good friends with my father and may do anything

Fal Rob me the exchequer the first thing thou doest and do it with unwashed hands too

Bard Do my lord

Prince I have procured thee, Jack a charge of foot 209

Fal I would it had been of horse Where shall I find one that can steal well? O for a fine thief of the age of two and twenty or thereabouts! I am heinously unprovided Well God be thanked for these rebels they offend none but the virtuous I laud them I praise them

Prince Bardolph!

Bard My lord?

Prince Go bear this letter to Lord John of Lancaster to my brother John this to my Lord of Westmoreland [*Exit BARDOLPH*] Go Peto to horse to horse for thou and I have thirty miles to ride yet ere dinner time [*Exit PETO*] Jack meet me to-morrow in the Temple hall at two o'clock in the afternoon

There shalt thou know thy charge and there receive

Money and order for their furniture

The land is burning Percy stands on high

And either we or they must lower lie [*Exit*

Fal Rare words! brave words! Hostess my breakfast come! 229

O I could wish this tavern were my drum! [*Exit*

ACT IV

SCENE I The rebel camp near Shrewsbury

Enter HORSFORD WORCESTER and DOUGLAS

Hal Well said my noble Scot if speaking truth

In this fine age were not thought flattery
Such attribution should the Douglas have

As not a soldier of this season's stamp
Should go so general current through the world
By God I cannot flatter I do defy
The tongues of soothers, but a braver place
In my heart's love hath no man than yourself
Nay task me to my word, approve me, lord

Doug Thou are the king of honour 10
No man so potent breathes upon the ground
But I will beard him

Hot Do so, and 'tis well

Enter a MESSENGER with letters

What letters hast thou there?—I can but thank
you

Mess These letters come from your father

Hot Letters from him? why comes he not
himself?

Mess He cannot come, my lord, he is grievous
sick

Hot Zounds! how has he the leisure to be sick

In such a justling time? Who leads his power?
Under whose government come they along? 19

Mess His letters bear his mind not I my
lord

Wor I prithee, tell me, doth he keep his bed?

Mess He did, my lord four days ere I set forth

And at the time of my departure thence

He was much fear'd by his physicians

Wor I would the state of time had first been
whole

Ere he by sickness had been visited

His health was never better worth than now

Hot Sick now! droop now! this sickness doth
infect

The very life blood of our enterprise,

'Tis catching hither, even to our camp 30

He writes me here that inward sickness—

And that his friends by deputation could not

So soon be drawn nor did he think it meet

To lay so dangerous and dear a trust

On any soul removed but on his own

Yet doth he give us bold advertisement

That with our small conjunction we should on

To see how fortune is disposed to us

For as he writes there is no quailing now,

Because the King is certainly possess'd 40

Of all our purposes What say you to it?

Wor Your father's sickness is a main to us

Hot A perilous gash, a very limb lopp'd off

And yet, in faith, it is not his present want

Seems more than we shall find it were it good

To set the exact wealth of all our states

All at one cast? to set so rich a main

On the nice hazard of one doubtful hour?

It were not good for therein should we read 50

The very bottom and the soul of hope

The very list, the very utmost bound
Of all our fortunes

Doug Faith and so we should,
Where now remains a sweet reversion
We may boldly spend upon the hope of what
Is to come in

A comfort of retirement lives in this

Hot A rendezvous a home to fly unto,

If that the devil and mischance look big

Upon the maidenhead of our affairs

Wor But yet I would your father had been
here 60

The quality and hair of our attempt

Brooks no division it will be thought

By some, that know not why he is away,

That wisdom loyalty and mere dislike

Of our proceedings kept the earl from hence

And think how such an apprehension

May turn the tide of fearful faction

And breed a kind of question in our cause,

For well you know we of the offering side

Must keep aloof from strict arbitrement 70

And stop all sight holes every loop from whence

The eye of reason may pry in upon us

This absence of your father's draws a curtain,

That shows the ignorant a kind of fear

Before not dreamt of

Hot You strain too far

I rather of his absence make this use

It lends a lustre and more great opinion,

A larger dare to our great enterprise

Than if the earl were here for men must think

If we without his help can make a head 80

To push against a kingdom with his help

We shall overturn it topsy-turvy down

Yet all goes well yet all our joints are whole

Doug As heart can think there is not such a
word

Spoke of in Scotland as this term of fear

Enter SIR RICHARD VERNON

Hot My cousin Vernon! welcome by my soul

Ver Pray God my news be worth a welcome,
lord

The Earl of Westmoreland seven thousand
strong

Is marching hitherwards, with him Prince John

Hot No harm what more?

Ver And further I have learn'd, 90

The King himself in person is set forth

Or hitherwards intended speedily

With strong and mighty preparation

Hot He shall be welcome too Where is his son,

The nimble footed madcap Prince of Wales

And his comrades, that daff'd the world aside,

And bid it pass?

Ver All furnish'd all in arms
 All plumed like estridges that with the wind
 Baited like eagles having largely bathed
 Glittering in golden coats like images
 As full of spirit as the month of May
 And gorgeous as the sun at midsummer
 Wanton as youthful goats wild as young bulls
 I saw young Harry with his beaver on
 His cuisses on his thighs gallantly arm'd
 Rise from the ground like feather'd Mercury
 And vaulted with such ease into his seat
 As if an angel dropp'd down from the clouds
 To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus
 And witch the world with noble horsemanship
Hot No more, no more worse than the sun in
 March

This praise doth nourish agues Let them come
 They come like sacrifices in their trim
 And to the fire-eyed maid of smoky war
 All hot and bleeding will we offer them
 The mailed Mars shall on his altar sit
 Up to the ears in blood I am on fire
 To hear this rich reprisal is so nigh
 And yet not ours Come let me taste my horse
 Who is to bear me like a thunderbolt
 Against the bosom of the Prince of Wales
 Harry to Harry shall hot horse to horse
 Meet and ne'er part till one drop down a corse
 O that Glendower were come!

Ver There is more news
 I learn'd in Worcester as I rode along
 He cannot draw his power this fourteen days
Doug That's the worst tidings that I hear of
 yet

War Ay by my faith that bears a frosty
 sound

Hot What may the King's whole battle reach
 unto?

Ver To thirty thousand

Hot Forty let it be

My father and Glendower being both away

The powers of us may serve so great a day

Come let us take a muster speedily

Doomsday is near'd e all die merrily

Doug Talk not of dying I am out of fear

Of death or death's hand for this one half year
 [Exeunt]

SCENE II A public road near Coventry

Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH

F. A penny get thee before to Coventry
 a long winded sack our soldiers shall march
 away other injurious Cophill to-night

Bardolph I stand e money captain?

ough we'll to

W. If you given

ay out lay

h's be

Fal An if it do take it for thy labour and if it
 make twenty take them all I'll answer the
 coinage Bid my lieutenant Pero meet me at
 town's end

Bird I will captain farewell

Fal If I be not ashamed of my soldiers I am
 a soused gurnet I have mus'd the King's press
 damnably I have got in exchange of a hundred
 and fifty soldiers three hundred and odd pounds
 I press me none but good householders yemen's
 sons inquire me out contracted bachelors such
 as had been asked twice on the banns such a
 commodity of warm slaves as had as lieve hear
 the devil as a drum such as fear the report of a
 caliver worse than a struck fowl or a hurt wild
 ducl I pressed me none but such toasts and
 butter with hearts in their bellies no bigger than
 pins heads and they have bought out their serv-
 ices and now my whole charge consists of
 ancients corporals lieutenants gentlemen of
 companies slaves as ranged as Lazarus in the
 painted cloth where the glutton's dogs licked his
 sores and such as indeed were never soldiers
 but discarded unjust serving men yonger sons
 to younger brothers reviled tapsters and ostlers
 trade fallen the cankers of a calm world and a
 long peace ten times more dishonourable rag'd
 than an old faced ancient and such have I to
 fill up the rooms of them that have bought out
 their services that you would think that I had a
 hundred and fifty tattered prodigals lately come
 from swine keeping from eating draff and husks
 A mad fellow met me on the way and told me I
 had unload'd all the gibbets and pressed the
 dead bodies No eye hath seen such scarecrows
 I'll not march through Coventry with them
 that's flat nay and the villains march wide
 betwixt the legs as if they had gyves on for
 indeed I had the most of them out of prison
 There's but a shirt and a half in all my company
 and the half shirt is two napkins tacked together
 and thrown over the shoulders like a herald's
 coat without sleeves and the shirt to say the
 truth stolen from my host at Saint Alban's or
 the red nose innkeeper of Daventry But that's
 all one they'll find linen enough on every hedge

Enter the PRINCE and WESTMORELAND

Prince How now blown Jack! how now
 quite

Fal What Hal! how now mad wag! what
 a devil dost thou in Warwickshire? My good
 Lord of Westmoreland I cry you mercy I
 thought your honour had already been at Shrews-
 bury

West Faith, Sir John, tis more than time that

I were there, and you too, but my powers are there already The King, I can tell you, looks for us all we must away all night

Fal Tut, never fear me I am as vigilant as a cat to steal cream

Prince I think, to steal cream indeed for thy theft hath already made thee butter But tell me Jack whose fellows are these that come after?

Fal Mine, Hal, mine 69

Prince I did never see such pitiful rascals

Fal Tut tut, good enough to toss, food for powder, food for powder, they'll fill a pit as well as better tush, man, mortal men mortal men

West Ay but, Sir John methinks they are exceeding poor and bare too beggarly

Fal Faith, for their poverty, I know not where they had that and for their bareness, I am sure they never learned that of me

Prince No, I'll be sworn, unless you call three fingers on the ribs bare But, sirrah, make haste Percy is already in the field 81

Fal What is the King encamped?

West He is, Sir John I fear we shall stay too long

Fal Well,

To the latter end of a fray and the beginning of a feast

Fits a dull fighter and a keen guest [*Exeunt*]

SCENE III *The rebel camp near Shrewsbury*

Enter HOTSPUR WORCESTER, DOUGLAS and VERNON

Hot We'll fight with him to night

Wor It may not be

Doug You give him then advantage

Ver Not a whit

Hot Why say you so? looks he not for supply?

Ver So do we

Hot His is certain ours is doubtful

Wor Good cousin, be advised, stir not tonight

Ver Do not my lord

Doug You do not counsel well

You speak it out of fear and cold heart

Ver Do me no slander, Douglas by my life,

And I dare well maintain it with my life,

If well respected honour bid me on 10

I hold as little counsel with weak fear

As you, my lord, or any Scot that this day lives

Let it be seen to-morrow in the battle

Which of us fears

Doug Yea or to night

Ver Content

Hot To-night, say I

Ver Come come, it may not be I wonder much

Being men of such great leading as you are,

That you foresee not what impediments
Drag back our expedition certain horse
Of my cousin Vernon's are not yet come up 20
Your uncle Worcester's horse came but to day,
And now their pride and mettle is asleep,
Their courage with hard labour tame and dull,
That not a horse is half the half of himself

Hot So are the horses of the enemy
In general journey bated and brought low
The better part of ours are full of rest

Wor The number of the King exceedeth ours
For God's sake cousin stay till all come in

The trumpet sounds a parley

Enter SIR WALTER BLUNT

Blunt I come with gracious offers from the King 30

If you vouchsafe me hearing and respect

Hot Welcome, Sir Walter Blunt, and would to God

You were of our determination!
Some of us love you well and even those some
Envy your great deservings and good name,
Because you are not of our quality,
But stand against us like an enemy

Blunt And God defend but still I should stand so

So long as out of limit and true rule
You stand against anointed majesty 40

But to my charge The King hath sent to know

The nature of your griefs and whereupon

You conjure from the breast of civil peace

Such bold hostility teaching his duteous land

Audacious cruelty If that the King

Have any way your good deserts forgot

Which he confesseth to be manifold

He bids you name your griefs and with all speed

You shall have your desires with interest

And pardon absolute for yourself and these 50

Herein misled by your suggestion

Hot The King is kind and well we know the

King

Knows at what time to promise when to pay

My father and my uncle and myself

Did give him that same royalty he wears,

And when he was not six and twenty strong

Sick in the world's regard wretched and low,

A poor unminded outlaw sneaking home

My father gave him welcome to the shore

And when he heard him swear and vow to God

He came but to be Duke of Lancaster 61

To sue his livery and beg his peace

With tears of innocence and terms of zeal

My father, in kind heart and pity moved

Swore him assistance and perform'd it too

Now when the lords and barons of the

Perceiv'd Northumberland did lean to him
 The more and less came in with cap and knee
 Met him in boroughs cities villages
 Attended him on bridges stood in lanes 70
 Laid gifts before him proffer'd him their oaths
 Gave him their heirs as pages follow'd him
 Liven'd the heels in golden multitudes
 He presently as greatness knows himself
 Stes me a little higher than his vow
 Made to my father while his blood was poor
 Upon the naked shore at Ravenspurgh
 And now for oath takes on him to reform
 Some certain edicts and some strait decrees
 That lie too heavy on the commonwealth 80
 Cries out upon abuses seems to weep
 Over his country's wrongs and by this face
 This seeming brow of justice did he win
 The hearts of all that he did angle for
 Proceeded further cut me off the heads
 Of all the favourites that the absent King
 In deputation left behind him here
 When he was personal in the Irish war
 Blunt But I came not to hear this

Hot Then to the point
 In short time after he deposed the King 90
 Soon after that deprive I him of his life
 And in the neck of that task'd the whole state
 To make that worse suffer'd his kinsman March
 Who is if every owner were well placed
 Indeed his kin to be engaged in Wales
 There without ransom to lie forfeited
 Disgraced me in my happy victories
 Sought to entrap me by intelligence
 Pated mine uncle from the council board
 In rage dismiss'd my father from the court 100
 Broke oath on oath committed wrong on wrong
 And in conclusion drove us to seek out
 This head of safety and withal to pry
 Into his title the which we find
 Too indirect for long continuance

Blunt Shall I return this answer to the King?
 Hot Not so Sir Walter we'll withdraw awhile
 Go to the King and let there be unpawn'd
 Some surety for a safe return again
 And in the morning early shall my uncle 110
 Bring him our purposes and so farewell
 Blunt I would you would accept of grace and
 love

Hot And I may be so we shall
 Blunt Pray God you do
 [Exeunt]

SCENE IV York The Archbishop's palace
 Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK and SIR MICHAEL
 Arch Hie good Sir Michael bear this sealed
 brief

With winged haste to the Lord Marshal
 Thus to my cousin Scroop and all the rest
 To whom they are directed If you knew
 How much they do import you would make
 haste
 Sir M My good lord
 I guess their tenour
 Arch Like enough you do
 To-morrow good Sir Michael is a day
 Wherein the fortune of ten thousand men
 Must bide the touch for sir at Shrewsbury 110
 As I am truly given to understand
 The King with mighty and quick raised power
 Meets with Lord Harry and I fear Sir Michael
 What with the sickness of Northumberland
 Who e power was in the first proportion
 And what with Owen Glendower's absence
 thence

Who with them was a rated sinew too
 And comes not in mer ruled ty prophecies
 I fear the power of Percy is too weak
 To wage an instant trial with the King 120

Sir M Why my good lord you need not fear
 There is Douglas and Lord Mortimer
 Arch No Mortimer is not there
 Sir M But there is Mordake Vernon Lord
 Harry Percy

And there is my Lord of Worcester and a head
 Of gallant warriors noble gentlemen
 Arch And so there is but yet the King hath
 drawn

The special head of all the land to gether
 The Prince of Wales Lord John of Lancaster
 The noble Westmoreland and warlike Blunt 130
 And many more cornivals and dear men
 Of estimation and command in arms
 Sir M Doubt not my lord they shall be well
 opposed

Arch I hope no less yet needful tis to fear
 And to prevent the worst Sir Michael speed
 For if Lord Percy thrive not ere the King
 Dismiss his power he means to visit us
 For he hath heard of our confederacy
 And tis but wisdom to make strong against him
 Th'efore make haste I must go write again
 To other friends and so farewell Sir Michael
 [Exit]

ACT V

SCENE I The King's camp near Shrewsbury
 Enter the KING PRINCE OF WALES LORD JOHN OF
 LANCASTER EARL OF WESTMORELAND SIR WAL-
 TER BLUNT and FALSTAFF

King How bloody the sun begins to peer
 Above yon barry hill the day looks pale
 At his distemperature

Prince The southern wind
Doth play the trumpet to his purposes,
And by his hollow whistling in the leaves
Foretells a tempest and a blustering day
King Then with the losers let it sympathise,
For nothing can seem foul to those that win
The trumpet sounds

Enter WORCESTER and VERNON

How now, my Lord of Worcester! 'tis not well
That you and I should meet upon such terms;
As now we meet. You have deceived our trust,
And made us doff our easy robes of peace
To crush our old limbs in ungentle steel.
This is not well, my lord: this is not well.
What say you to it? will you again unknit
This churlish knot of all abhorred war?
And move in that obedient orb again
Where you did give a fair and natural light,
And be no more an exhaled meteor,
A prodigy of fear and a portent
Of broached mischief to the unborn times?

Wor Hear me, my liege
For mine own part, I could be well content
To entertain the lag end of my life
With quiet hours, for I do protest,
I have not sought the day of this dislike.
King You have not sought it! how comes it,
then?

Fal Rebellion lay in his way, and he found it.

Prince Peace chewet, peace!

Wor It pleased your Majesty to turn your
lool s

Of favour from myself and all our house
And yet I must remember you, my lord.
We were the first and dearest of your friends.
For you my staff of office did I break.
In Richard's time and posted day and night
To meet you on the way, and I kiss your hand,
When yet you were in place and in account
Nothing so strong and fortunate as I.
It was myself, my brother and his son
That brought you home and boldly did outdare
The dangers of the time. You swore to us,
And you did swear that oath at Doncaster
That you did nothing purpose against the state,
Nor claim no further than your new fall'n right,
The seat of Gaunt, dukedom of Lancaster.
To this we swore our aid. But in short space
It rain'd down fortune showering on your head.
And such a flood of greatness fell on you,
What with our help, what with the absent King,
What with the injuries of a wanton time,
The seeming sufferances that you had borne,
And the contrarious winds that held the King
So long in his unlucky Irish wars

That all in England did repute him dead
And from this swarm of fair advantages
You took occasion to be quickly woo'd
To gripe the general sway into your hand,
Forgot your oath to us at Doncaster
And being fed by us you used us so
As that ungentle gull the cuckoo is a bird,
Useth the sparrow, did oppress our nest,
Grew by our feeding to so great a bulk
That even our love durst not come near your
sight

For fear of swallowing, but with humble wing
We were enforced for safety sake to fly
Out of your sight and raise this present head,
Whereby we stand opposed by such means
As you yourself have forged against yourself
By unkind usage, dangerous countenance,
And violation of all faith and troth

Sworn to us in your younger enterprise.
King These things indeed you have articulate,
Proclaim'd at market crosses, read in churches,
To face the garment of rebellion
With some fine colour that may please the eye
Of fickle changelings and poor discontents,
Which gape and rub the elbow at the news
Of hurlyburly innovation
And never yet did insurrection want
Such water colours to impaint his cause,
Nor moody beggars, starving for a time
Of pell-mell havoc and confusion

Prince In both your armies there is many a soul
Shall pay full dearly for this encounter
If once they join in trial. Tell your nephew,
The Prince of Wales doth join with all the world
In praise of Henry Percy, by my hopes
This present enterprise set off his head.
I do not think a braver gentleman,
More active, valiant, or more valiant young,
More daring or more bold is now alive
To grace this latter age with noble deeds.
For my part, I may speak it to my shame,
I have a truant been to chivalry,
And so I hear he doth account me too.
Yet thus before my father's majesty —
I am content that he shall take the odds
Of his great name and estimation
And will to save the blood on either side,
Try fortune with him in a single fight

King And, Prince of Wales, so dare we venture
thee,

Albeit considerations infinite
Do make against it. No good Worcester, no,
We love our people well, even those we love
That are misled upon your cousin's part.
And will they take the offer of our grace,
Both he and they and you, ye every man

Shall be my friend again and I'll be his
 So tell your cousin and bring me word
 What he will do but if he will not yield 110
 Rebuke and dread correction wait on us
 And they shall do their office So be gone
 We will not now be troubled with reply
 We offer fair take it advisedly

[*Exeunt WORCESTER and VERNON*]

Prince It will not be accepted on my life
 The Douglas and the Hotspur both together
 Are confident against the world in arms

King Hence therefore every leader to his charge

For on their answer will we set on them
 And God befriend us as our cause is just! 120

[*Exeunt all but the PRINCE OF WALES and FALSTAFF*]

Fal Hal if thou see me down in the battle and
 bestride me so 'tis a point of friendship

Prince Nothing but a colossus can do thee that
 friendship Say thy prayers and farewell

Fal I would twere bed time Hal and all well

Prince Why thou owest God a death

[*Exit*]

Fal 'Tis not due yet I would be loath to pay
 him before his day What need I be so forward
 with him that calls not on me? Well 'tis no
 matter honour pricks me on Yea but how if
 honour prick me off when I come on? how then?
 Can honour set to a leg? no or an arm? no or
 take away the grief of a wound? no Honour
 hath no skill in surgery then? no What is hon-
 our? a word What is in that word honour? what
 is that honour? air A trim reckoning! Who hath
 it? he that died o' Wednesday Doth he feel it?
 no Doth he hear it? no 'Tis insensible then?
 Yea to the dead But will it not live with the
 living? no Why? detraction will not suffer it
 Therefore I'll none of it Honour is a mere
 scutcheon and so ends my catechism [*Exit*]

SCENE II *The rebel camp*

[*Enter WORCESTER and VERNON*]

War O no my nephew must not know Sir
 Richard

The liberal and kind offer of the King

Ver Twere best he did

War Then are we all undone

It is not possible it cannot be
 The King should keep his word in love us
 He will suspect us still and find a time
 To punish this offence in other faults
 Suspicion all our lives shall be stuck full of eyes
 For treason as but trusted like the fox
 Who ne'er so tame so cherish'd and lock'd up
 Will have a wild trick of his ancestors 11

Look how we can or sad or merrily
 Interpretation will misquote our looks
 And we shall feed like oxen at a stall
 The better cherish'd still the nearer death
 My nephew's trespass may be well forgot
 It hath the excuse of youth and heat of blood,
 And an adopted name of privilege
 A hare brain'd Hotspur govern'd by a spleen
 All his offences live upon my head 20
 And on his father's we did train him on,
 And his corruption being taken from us
 We as the spring of all shall pay for all
 Therefore good cousin let not Harry know
 In any case the offer of the King
Ver Deliver what you will I'll say tis so
 Here comes your cousin

[*Enter HOTSPUR and DOUGLAS*]

Hot My uncle is return'd
 Deliver up my Lord of Westmoreland
 Uncle what news? 30

War The King will bid you battle presently

Doug Defy him by the Lord of Westmoreland

Hot Lord Douglas go you and tell him so

Doug Marry and shall and very willingly [*Exit*]

War There is no seeming mercy in the King

Hot Did you beg any? God forbid!

War I told him gently of our grievances
 Of his oath breaking which he mended thus
 By now forswearing that he is forsworn
 He calls us rebels traitors and will scourge 40
 With haughty arms this hateful name in us

[*Re-enter DOUGLAS*]

Doug Arm gentlemen to arms! for I have
 thrown

A brave defiance in King Henry's teeth
 And Westmoreland that was engaged did bear
 it

Which cannot choose but bring him quickly on

War The Prince of Wales stepp'd forth before
 the King

And nephew challenged you to single fight

Hot O would the quarrel lay upon our heads
 And that no man might draw short breath to-day
 But I and Harry Monmouth! Tell me tell me 50
 How show'd his tasking? seem'd it in contempt?

Ver No by my soul I never in my life
 Did hear a challenge urged more modestly
 Unless a brother should a brother dare
 To gentle exercise and proof of arms
 He gave you all the duties of a man
 Triumf'd up your praises with a princely tongue,
 Spoke your deservings like a chronicle,
 Making you ever better than his praise

By still dispraising praise valued with you, 60
 And, which became him like a prince indeed,
 He made a blushing cital of himself,
 And chid his truant youth with such a grace
 As if he master'd there a double spirit
 Of teaching and of learning instantly
 There did he pause but let me tell the world,
 If he outlive the envy of this day,
 England did never owe so sweet a hope,
 So much misconstrued in his wantonness
Hot Cousin, I think thou art enamoured 70
 On his follies never did I hear
 Of any prince so wild a libertine
 But be he as he will yet once ere night
 I will embrace him with a soldier's arm,
 That he shall shrink under my courtesy
 Arm, arm with speed and, fellows, soldiers,
 friends,
 Better consider what you have to do
 Than I, that have not well the gift of tongue,
 Can lift your blood up with persuasion

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess My lord, here are letters for you 80
Hot I cannot read them now
 O gentlemen, the time of life is short!
 To spend that shortness basely were too long,
 If life did ride upon a dial's point,
 Still ending at the arrival of an hour
 An if we live, we live to tread on kings
 If die, brave death when princes die with us!
 Now, for our consciences, the arms are fair,
 When the intent of bearing them is just

Enter another MESSENGER

Mess My lord, prepare, the King comes on 90
 apace
Hot I thank him, that he cuts me from my tale,
 For I profess not talking, only this—
 Let each man do his best and here draw I
 A sword whose temper I intend to stain
 With the best blood that I can meet withal
 In the adventure of this perilous day
 Now, *Esperance!* *Percy!* and set on
 Sound all the lofty instruments of war,
 And by that music let us all embrace,
 For, heaven to earth some of us never shall 100
 A second time do such a courtesy
[The trumpets sound They embrace, and exeunt]

SCENE III *Plain between the camps*

The KING enters with his power Alarum to the battle Then enter DOUGLAS and SIR WALTER BLUNT

Blunt What is thy name, that in the battle thus
 Thou crossest me? what honour dost thou seek
 Upon my head?

Doug Know then my name is Douglas,
 And I do haunt thee in the battle thus
 Because some tell me that thou art a king
Blunt They tell thee true
Doug The Lord of Stafford dear to day hath
 bought
 Thy likeness, for instead of thee King Harry,
 This sword hath ended him so shall it thee,
 Unless thou yield thee as my prisoner 10
Blunt I was not born a yielder thou proud Scot,
 And thou shalt find a king that will revenge
 Lord Stafford's death

They fight DOUGLAS kills BLUNT

Enter HOTSPUR

Hot O Douglas hadst thou fought at Holme-
 don thus
 I never had triumph'd upon a Scot
Doug All's done, all's won, here breathless lies
 the King
Hot Where?
Doug Here
Hot This, Douglas? no I know this face full
 well
 A gallant knight he was, his name was Blunt, 20
 Semblably furnish'd like the King himself
Doug A fool go with thy soul whither it goes!
 A borrow'd title hast thou bought too dear
 Why didst thou tell me that thou wert a king?
Hot The King hath many marching in his coats
Doug Now by my sword, I will kill all his
 coats,
 I'll murder all his wardrobe piece by piece,
 Until I meet the King
Hot Up and away!
 Our soldiers stand full fairly for the day 29
[Exeunt]

Alarum Enter FALSTAFF solus

Fal Though I could 'scape shot free at London,
 I fear the shot here, here's no scoring but upon
 the pate Soft! who are you? Sir Walter Blunt
 there's honour for you! here's no vanity! I am as
 hot as molten lead, and as heavy too God keep
 lead out of me! I need no more weight than mine
 own bowels I have led my ragamuffins where
 they are peppered there's not three of my hun-
 dred and fifty left alive, and they are for the
 town's end to beg during life But who comes
 here? 40

Enter the PRINCE

Prince What stand'st thou idle here? lend me
 thy sword
 Many a nobleman lies stark and stiff
 Under the hoofs of vaunting enemies,

Who e deaths are yet unrevenged I prithe thee lend me thy sword

Fal O Hal I prithe thee give me leave to breathe awhile Turk Gregory never did such deeds in arms as I have done this day I have paid Percy I have made him sure

Prince He is indeed and living to kill thee I prithe thee lend me thy sword 50

Fal Nay before God Hal if Percy be alive thou getst not my sword but take my pistol if thou wilt

Prince Give it me what is it in the case?
Fal Ay Hal tis hot tis hot there's that will sack a city

The Prince draws it out and finds it to be a bottle of sack

Prince What is it a time to jest and dally now?
[He throws the bottle at him Exit]

Fal Well if Percy be alive I'll pierce him If he do come in my way so if he do not if I come in his willingly let him make a carbonado of me I like not such grinning honour as Sir Walter hath give me life which if I can save so if not honour comes unlooked for and there's an end [Exit]

SCENE IV Another part of the field

Alarm Excursions Enter the KING the PRINCE LORD JOHN OF LANCASTER, and EARL OF WEST MORELAND

King I prithe thee Harry withdraw thyself thou bleedst too much

Lord John of Lancaster go you with him
Lan Not I my lord unless I did bleed too

Prince I beseech your Majesty make up
West your retirement do amaze your friends
King I will do so

My Lord of Westmoreland lead him to his tent
West Come my lord I'll lead you to your tent

Prince Lead me, my lord? I do not need your help 10

And God forbid a shallow scratch should drive The Prince of Wales from such a field as this Where stained nobility lies trodden on And rebels' arms triumph in massacres!

Lan We breathe too long come cousin Westmoreland

Our duty this way lies for God's sake come
[Exit PRINCE JOHN and WESTMORELAND]

Prince By God thou hast deceived me Lancaster

I did not think thee lord of such a spirit
Before I loved thee as a brother John

But now I do respect thee as my soul 20
Ham. I saw him hold Lord Percy at the point

With lustier maintenance than I did look for
Of such an untrun warrior

Prince O this boy
Lends mettle to us all! [Exit]

Enter DOUGLAS

Doug Another king! they grow like Hydras heads

I am the Douglas fatal to all those
That wear those colours on them what art thou
That counterfeitst the person of a king?

King The king himself who Douglas grieves at heart

So many of his shadows thou hast met 30
And not the very king I have two boys

Seek Percy and thyself about the field
But seeing thou fallst on me so luckily
I will assay thee so defend thyself

Doug I fear thou art another counterfeit
And yet in faith thou bearst thee like a king
But mine I am sure thou art who'er thou be
And thus I win thee

They fight the KING being in danger retreats
PRINCE OF WALES

Prince Hold up thy head vile Scot or thou art like

Never to hold it up again! the spirits
Of valiant Shurley Stafford Blunt are in my arms 40

It is the Prince of Wales that threatens thee
Who never promiseth but he means to pay

They fight DOUGLAS flies
Cheerly my lord how fares your Grace?
Sir Nicholas Cawsey hath for succour sent
And so hath Clifton I'll to Clifton straight

King Stay and breathe awhile
Thou hast redeemed thy lost opinion
And should thou makest some tender of my life
In this fair rescue thou hast brought to me 50

Prince O God! they did me too much injury
That ever said I hearken'd for your death
If it were so I might have let alone
The insulting hand of Douglas over you
Which would have been as speedy in your end
As all the poisonous potions in the world
And saved the treacherous labour of your son

King Make up to Clifton I'll to Sir Nicholas Cawsey [Exit]

Enter HOTSPUR

Hot If I mistake not thou art Harry Monmouth

Prince Thou speakest as if I would deny my name 60

Hot My name is Harry Percy

Prin^c

Why, then I see

A very valiant rebel of the name
I am the Prince of Wales, and think not, Percy,
To share with me in glory any more
Two stars keep not their motion in one sphere
Nor can one England brook a double reign
Of Harry Percy and the Prince of Wales
Hot Nor shall it, Harry, for the hour is come
To end the one of us, and would to God
Thy name in arms were now as great as mine! 70
Prince I'll make it greater ere I part from thee,
And all the budding honours on thy crest
I'll crop, to make a garland for my head
Hot I can no longer brook thy vanities

They fight

Enter FALSTAFF

Fal Well said Hal! to it, Hal! Nay, you shall
find no boy's play here I can tell you

Re-enter DOUGLAS, he fights with FALSTAFF, who
falls down as if he were dead, and exit DOUGLAS
HOTSPUR is wounded, and falls

Hot O, Harry, thou hast robb'd me of my
youth!

I better brook the loss of brittle life
Than those proud titles thou hast won of me,
They wound my thoughts worse than thy sword
my flesh 80

But thought's the slave of life, and life time's fool
And time, that takes survey of all the world,
Must have a stop O, I could prophesy,
But that the earthy and cold hand of death
Lies on my tongue no, Percy, thou art dust
And food for— {Dies}

Prince For worms, brave Percy fare thee well
great heart!

Ill weav'd ambition how much art thou shrunk!
When that this body did contain a spirit
A kingdom for it was too small a bound 90
But now two paces of the vilest earth
Is room enough this earth that bears thee dead
Bears not alive so stout a gentleman
If thou wert sensible of courtesy,
I should not make so dear a show of zeal
But let my favours hide thy mangled face
And, even in thy behalf, I'll thank myself
For doing these fair rites of tenderness
Adieu and take thy praise with thee to heaven!
Thy ignominy sleep with thee in the grave 100
But not remember'd in thy epitaph!

He spitieth FALSTAFF on the ground
What, old acquaintance! could not all this flesh
Keep in a little life? Poor Jack farewell!
I could have better spared a better man

O, I should have a heavy miss of thee,
If I were much in love with vanity!
Death hath not struck so fat a deer to day,
Though many dearer, in this bloody fray
Embowell'd will I see thee by and by
Till then in blood by noble Percy lie {Exit 110

Fal {Rising up} Embowell'd! if thou embowel
me to-day, I'll give you leave to powder me and
eat me too to-morrow 'Sblood 'twas time to
counterfeit or that hot termagant Scot had paid
me scot and lot too Counterfeit? I lie, I am no
counterfeit to die is to be a counterfeit for he
is but the counterfeit of a man who hath not the
life of a man but to counterfeit dying, when a
man thereby liveth, is to be no counterfeit, but
the true and perfect image of life indeed The
better part of valour is discretion, in the which
better part I have saved my life Zounds I am
afraid of this gunpowder Percy, though he be
dead how, if he should counterfeit too and rise?
by my faith, I am afraid he would prove the
better counterfeit Therefore I'll make him sure
yea and I'll swear I killed him Why may not he
rise as well as I? Nothing confutes me but eyes,
and nobody sees me Therefore sirrah {stabbing
him}, with a new wound in your thigh, come you
along with me {Takes up HOTSPUR on his back}

Re-enter the PRINCE OF WALES and LORD JOHN
OF LANCASTER

Prince Come brother John, full bravely hast
thou flesh'd

Thy maiden sword

Lan But soft! whom have we here?

Did you not tell me this fat man was dead?

Prince I did I saw him dead

Breathless and bleeding on the ground Art thou
alive?

Or is it fantasy that plays upon our eyesight?
I prithee, speak we will not trust our eyes 130
Without our ears thou art not what thou seem'st
Fal No that's certain I am not a double man
but if I be not Jack Falstaff then am I a Jack
There is Percy {throwing the body down} if your
father will do me any honour so if not let him
kill the next Percy himself I look to be either
earl or duke I can assure you

Prince Why, Percy I killed my self and saw
thee dead

Fal Didst thou? Lord Lord how this world is
given to lying! I grant you I was down and out of
breath and so was he but we rose both at an
instant and fought a long hour by Shrewsbury
clock If I may be believed so if not, let them
that should reward valour bear the sin upon their
own heads I'll take it upon my death, I gave him

this wound in the thigh if the man were alive
and would deny it wounds I would make him
eat a piece of my sword

Lam This is the strangest tale that ever I heard

Prince This is the strangest fellow brother

John 159

Come bring your luggage nobly on your back

For my part if a lie may do thee grace

I'll gild it with the happiest terms I have

A retreat is sounded

The trumpet sounds retreat the day is ours

Come brother let us to the highest of the field

To see what friends are living who are dead

[Exeunt PRINCE OF WALES and LANCASTER

Fal I'll follow as they say for reward He that

rewards me God reward him! If I do grow great

I'll grow less for I'll purge and leave sack and

live cleanly as a nobleman should do *[Exit*

SCENE V Another part of the field

The trumpets sound Enter the KING PRINCE OF

WALES LORD JOHN OF LANCASTER EARL OF

WESTMORELAND with WORCESTER and VERNON

prisoners

King Thus ever did rebellion find rebuke

I'll spirited Worcester! did not we send grace

Pardon and terms of love to all of you?

And wouldst thou turn our offers contrary?

Misuse the tenour of thy kinsman's trust?

Three knights upon our party slain to-day

A noble earl and many a creature else

Had been alive this hour

If like a Christian thou hadst truly borne

Between our armies true intelligence 20

Bor What I have done my safety urged me to

And I embrace this fortune patiently

Since not to be avoided it falls on me

King Bear Worcester to the death and Vernon
too

Other offenders we will pause upon

[Exeunt WORCESTER and VERNON guarded

How goes the field?

Prince The noble Scot Lord Douglas when he
saw

The fortune of the day quite turn'd from him

The noble Percy slain and all his men

Upon the foot of fear fled with the rest 20

And falling from a hill he was so bruised

That the pursuers took him At my tent

The Douglas is and I beseech your Grace

I may dispose of him

King With all my heart

Prince Then brother John of Lancaster to you

This honourable bounty shall belong

Go to the Douglas and deliver him

Up to his pleasure ransomless and free

His valour shown upon our crests to-day

Hath taught us how to cherish such high deeds

Even in the bosom of our adversaries 21

Lam I thank your Grace for this high courtesy

Which I shall give away immediately

King Then thus remains that we divide our

power

You son John and my cousin Westmoreland

Towards York shall bend you with your duest

speed

To meet Northumberland and the prelate Scroop

Who as we hear are busily in arms

Myself and you son Harry will towards Wales

To fight with Glendower and the Earl of March

Rebellion in this land shall lose his way 21

Meeting the check of such another day

And since this business so fair is done

Let us not leave till all our own be won *[Exeunt*

The Second Part of KING HENRY THE FOURTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY THE FOURTH		<i>his sons</i>
HENRY PRINCE OF WALES		
<i>afterwards</i> KING HENRY V		
THOMAS DUKE OF CLARENCE		
PRINCE JOHN OF LANCASTER		
PRINCE HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER		<i>recruits</i>
EARL OF WARWICK		
EARL OF WESTMORELAND		
GOWER		
HARCOURT		
LORD CHIEF JUSTICE of the King's Bench		<i>sheriff's officers</i>
A SERVANT of the Chief Justice		
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND		
SCROOP ARCHBISHOP OF YORK		
LORD MOWBRAY		
LORD HASTINGS		<i>retainers of Northumberland</i>
LORD BARDOLPH		
SIR JOHN COLEVILLE		
TRAVERS		
MORTON		
SIR JOHN FALSTAFF		<i>hostess of a tavern in Eastcheap</i>
PAGE to Falstaff		
BARDOLPH		
PISTOL		
POINS		
PETO		<i>Blunt Lords, Beadles Musicians and Attendants</i>

SHALLOW		<i>country justices</i>
SILENCE		
DAVY		
MOULDI		
SHADOW		
WART		<i>recruits</i>
FEEBLE		
BULLCalf		
FANG		
SNARE		
A PORTER		<i>sheriff's officers</i>
TWO DRAWERS		
A MESSENGER		
A BEADLE		
TWO GROOVS		
RUMOUR the Presenter		<i>hostess of a tavern in Eastcheap</i>
A DANCER speaker of the Epilogue		
LADY NORTHUMBERLAND		
LADY PERCY		
MISTRESS QUICKLY		
DOLL TEARSHEET		<i>Blunt Lords, Beadles Musicians and Attendants</i>

SCENE England

INDUCTION

Warkworth before the castle

Enter RUMOUR painted full of tongues

Rum Open your ears for which of you will stop

The vent of hearing when loud Rumour speaks?

I from the orient to the drooping west,

Making the wind my post horse, still unfold

The acts commenced on this ball of earth

Upon my tongues continual slanders ride,

The which in every language I pronounce

Stuffing the ears of men with false reports

I speak of peace while covert enmity

Under the smile of safety wounds the world

And who but Rumour who but only I

Make fearful musters and prepared defence,

Whiles the big year, swoln with some other

grief

Is thought with child by the stern tyrant war,

And no such matter? Rumour is a pipe

Blown by surmises jealousies, conjectures,

And of so easy and so plain a stop
 That the blunt monster with uncounted heads
 The still-discordant wavering multitude
 Can play upon it. But what need I thus
 My well known body to anatomize
 Among my household? Why is Rumour here?
 I run before King Harry's victory
 Who in a bloody field by Shrewsbury
 Hath beaten down young Hotspur and his troops,
 Quenching the flame of bold rebellion
 Even with the rebels' blood. But what mean I
 To speak so true at first? my office is
 To noise abroad that Harry Monmouth fell
 Under the wrath of noble Hotspur's sword
 And that the king before the Douglas rage
 Stoop'd his anointed head as low as death
 This have I rumour'd through the peasant towns
 Between the royal field of Shrewsbury
 And this worm-eaten hold of ragged stone
 Where Hotspur's father old Northumberland,
 Lies crafty sick the posts come tiring on
 And not a man of them brings other news

Than they have learn'd of me from Ramour's
tongues

They bring smooth comforts false worse than
true wrongs [Exit 40

ACT I

SCENE I *The same**Enter LORD BARDOLPH*

L. Bard Who keeps the gate here ho?

The PORTER opens the gate

Where is the Earl?

Port What shall I say you are?

L. Bard Tell thou the Earl

That the Lord Bardolph doth attend him here

Port His lordship is walk'd forth into the orchard

Please it your honour knock but at the gate
And he himself will answer

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND

L. Bard Here comes the Earl

[Exit PORTER

North What news Lord Bardolph? every man
ute now

Should be the father of some stratagem

The times are wild contention like a horse
Full of high feeding madly hath broke loose
And bears down all before him

L. Bard Noble Earl

I bring you certain news from Shrewsbury

North Good an God will!

L. Bard As good as heart can wish

The King is almost wounded to the death

And in the fortune of my lord your son

Prince Harry slain outright and both the

Blunts

Kill'd by the hand of Douglas young Prince

John

And Westmoreland and Stafford fled the field

And Harry Monmouth's brawn the hulk Sir

John

Is prisoner to your son O such a day

So fought so follow'd, and so fairly won,

Came not till now to d'grify the times

Since Cæsar's fortunes!

North How is this deriv'd?

Saw you the field? came you from Shrewsbury?

L. Bard I spake with one my lord that came
from thence

A gentleman well bred and of good name

That freely render'd me these news for true

North Here comes my servant Travers whom
I sent

On Tuesday last to listen after news

Enter TRAVERS

L. Bard My lord I over rode him on the way
And he is furnish'd with no certainties

More than he haply may retail from me

North Now Travers what good tidings comes
with you?

Trs My lord Sir John Umfrevile turn'd me
back

With joyful tidings and being better horsed,
Out rode me After him came spurring hard

A gentleman almost spent with speed

That stopp'd by me to breathe his bloodied horse

He ask'd the way to Chester and of him

I did demand what news from Shrewsbury

He told me that rebellion had bad luck

And that young Harry Percy's spur was cold

With that he gave his able horse the head,

And bending forward struck his armed heels

Against the panting sides of his poor jade

Up to the rowel head and starting so

He seem'd in running to devour the way

Staying no longer question

North Ha! Again

Said he young Harry Percy's spur was cold?

Of Hotspur Coldspur? that rebellion

Had met ill luck?

L. Bard My lord I'll tell you what

If my young lord your son have not the day

Upon mine honour for a sicken point

I'll give my barony never talk of it

North Why should that gentleman that rode by
Travers

Give then such instances of loss?

L. Bard Who he?

He was some hiding fellow that had stoven

The horse he rode on and upon my life

Spoke at a venture Look here comes more news

Enter MORTON

North Yes this man's brow like to a title leaf

Foretells the nature of a tragic volume

So looks the strand whereon the impetuous flood

Hath left a witness'd usurpation

Sav Morton didst thou come from Shrewsbury?

Mor I ran from Shrewsbury my noble lord

Where hateful death put on his best mask

To fight our party

North How doth my son and brother?

Thou tremblest and the whiteness in thy cheek

Is apter than thy tongue to tell thy errand

Even such a man is faint so spiritless

So dull so dead in look so woe begone

Drew Priam's curtain in the dead of night

And would have told him half his Troy was
burnt

But Priam found the fire ere he his tongue,
And I my Percy's death ere thou report st it
This thou wouldst say, "Your son did thus and
thus,

Your brother thus so fought the noble Douglas"
Stopping my greedy ear with their bold deeds
But in the end to stop my ear indeed,
Thou hast a sigh to blow away this praise, 80
Ending with "Brother, son, and all are dead"
Mor Douglas is living, and your brother, yet,
But for my lord your son—

North Why, he is dead
See what a ready tongue suspicion hath!
He that but fears the thing he would not know
Hath by instinct knowledge from others' eyes
That what he fear'd is chanced Yet speak,

Morton,
Tell thou an earl his divination lies
And I will take it as a sweet disgrace
And make thee rich for doing me such wrong 90
Mor You are too great to be by me gainsaid
Your spirit is too true, your fears too certain
North Yet, for all this, say not that Percy's
dead

I see a strange confession in thine eye
Thou shakest thy head and holdst it I fear or sin
To speak a truth If he be slain, say so,
The tongue offends not that reports his death
And he doth sin that doth belie the dead
Not he which says the dead is not alive
Yet the first bringer of unwelcome news 100
Hath but a losing office, and his tongue
Sounds ever after as a sullen bell
Remember'd tolling a departing friend
L Bard I cannot think, my lord, your son is
dead

Mor I am sorry I should force you to believe
That which I would to God I had not seen,
But these mine eyes saw him in bloody state,
Rendering faint quittance, wearied and out-
breathed

To Harry Monmouth, whose swift wrath beat
down

The never-daunted Percy to the earth, 110
From whence with life he never more sprung up
In few, his death whose spirit lent a fire
Even to the dumbest peasant in his camp,
Being bruited once took fire and heat away
From the best temper'd courage in his troops,
For from his metal was his party steel'd,
Which once in him abated, all the rest
Turn'd on themselves like dull and heavy lead
And as the thing that's heavy in itself
Upon enforcement flies with greatest speed, 120
So did our men heavy in Hotspur's loss,
Lend to this weight such lightness with their fear

That arrow's fled not swifter toward their aim
Than did our soldiers aiming at their safety,
Fly from the field Then was that noble Wor-
cester

Too soon ta'en prisoner and that furious Scot,
The bloody Douglas whose well labouring
sword

Had three times slain the appearance of the King,
'Gave ail his stomach and did grace the shame
Of those that turn'd their backs, and in his flight,
Stumbling in fear was took The sum of all 131

Is that the King hath won and hath sent out
A speedy power to encounter you, my lord,
Under the conduct of young Lancaster
And Westmoreland This is the news at full
North For this I shall have time enough to
mourn

In poison there is physic and these new
Having been well that would have made me sick,
Being sick have in some measure made me well
And as the wretch whose fever weaken'd joints,
Like strengthless hinges, buckle under life, 141
Impatient of his fit, breaks like a fire
Out of his keeper's arms even so my limbs
Weaken'd with grief, being now enraged with
grief,

Are thrice themselves Hence, therefore thou
nice crutch!

A scaly gauntlet now with joints of steel
Must glove this hand and hence thou sickly
quof!

Thou art a guard too wanton for the head
Which princes flesh'd with conquest, aim to hit
Now bind my brows with iron, and approach 150
The ragged at hour that time and spite dare bring
To frown upon the enraged Northumberland!
Let heaven kiss earth! now let not Nature's hand
Keep the wild flood confined! let order die!
And let this world no longer be a stage
To feed contention in a lingering act
But let one spirit of the first-born Cain
Reign in all bosoms that each heart being set
On bloody courses the rude scene may end,
And darkness be the burier of the dead! 160

Tra This strained passion doth you wrong,
my lord

L Bard Sweet Earl divorce not wisdom from
your honour

Mor The lives of all your loving complices
Lean on your health the which if you give over
To stormy passion, must perforce decay
You cast the event of war my noble lord
And summi'd the account of chance before you
said

"Let us make head" It was your presumption
That, in the dole of blows, your son might drop

You knew he walk'd o'er perils on an edge 170
 More likely to fall in than to get o'er
 You were advised his flesh was capable
 Of wounds and scars and that his forward spirit
 Would lift him where most trade of danger
 ranged

Yet did you say Go forth and none of this
 Though strongly apprehended could restrain
 The stiff-borne action what hath then befallen,
 Or what hath this bold enterprise brought forth
 More than that being which was like to be?

L. Bard. We all that are engaged to this loss 180
 Knew that we ventured on such dangerous seas
 That if we wrought out life 'twas ten to one
 And yet we ventured for the gain proposed
 Choked the respect of likely peril fear'd
 And since we are o'er-set venture again
 Come we will all put forth body and goods

Mor. 'Tis more than time and my most noble
 lord

I hear for certain and do speak the truth
 The gentle Archbishop of York is up
 With well-appointed powers he is a man 190
 Who with a double surety binds his followers
 My lord your son had only but the corpse
 But shadows and the shows of men to fight
 For that same word rebellion did divide
 The action of their bodies from their souls
 And they did fight with queasiness constrain'd
 As men drink potions that their weapons only
 Seem'd on our side but for their spirits and
 souls

This word rebellion it had froze them up
 As fish are in a pond But now the Bishop 200
 Turns insurrection to religion
 Supposed sincere and holy in his thoughts
 He's followed both with body and with mind
 And doth enlarge his rising with the blood
 Of fair King Richard scraped from Pomfret
 stones

Derives from heaven his quarrel and his cause
 Tells them he doth bestride a bleeding land
 Gasping for life under great Bolinobroke
 And more and less do flock to follow him

North. I knew of this before but to speak
 truth 210

This present grief had wiped it from my mind
 Go in with me and counsel every man
 The aptest way for safety and revenge
 Get posts and letters and make friends with
 speed

Never so few and never yet more need [*Exeunt*]

SCENE II London a street

*Enter FALSTAFF with his PAGE bearing his
 sword and buckler*

Fal. Sirrah you giant what says the doctor to
 my water?

Page. He said sir the water itself was a good
 healthy water but for the party that owed it he
 might have more diseases than he knew for

Fal. Men of all sorts take a pride to gird at me
 the brain of this foolish-compounded clay man,
 is not able to invent any thing that tends to laugh
 ter more than I invent or is invented on me I
 am not only witty in myself but the cause that
 wit is in other men I do here walk before thee
 like a sow that hath overwhelmed all her litter
 but one If the Prince put thee into my service
 for any other reason than to set me off why then
 I have no judgement Thou whoreson mandrake,
 thou art fitter to be worn in my cap than to wait
 at my heels I was never manned with an agate
 till now but I will inset you neither in gold nor
 silver but in vile apparel and send you back
 again to your master for a jewel—the juvenile
 the Prince your master whose chin is not yet
 fledged I will sooner have a beard grow in the
 palm of my hand than he shall get one on his
 cheek and yet he will not stick to say his face is
 a face royal God may finish it when he will in
 not a hair amiss yet he may keep it still at a face
 royal for a barber shall never earn sixpence out
 of it and yet he'll be crowing as if he had writ
 man ever since his father was a bachelor He
 may keep his own grace but he's almost out of
 mine I can assure him What said Master Dom-
 bledon about the satin for my short cloak and my
 slops?

Page. He said sir you should procure him better
 assurance than Bardolph he would not take his
 band and yours he liked not the security

Fal. Let him be damned like the glutton! pray
 God his tongue be hotter! A whoreson Achitophel!
 a rascally yea forsooth knave! to bear a
 gentleman in hand and then stand upon security!
 The whoreson smooth pates do now wear nothing
 but lugh shoes and bunches of keys at their
 girdles and if a man in through with them in
 honest taking up then they must stand upon se-
 curity I had as lief they would put ratsbane in
 my mouth as offer to stop it with security I
 looked a should have sent me two and twenty
 yards of satin as I am a true knight and he sends
 me security Well he may sleep in security for
 he hath the horn of abundance and the lightness
 of his wife shines through it and yet cannot he
 see though he have his own lantern to light
 him Where's Bardolph?

Page. He's gone into Smithfield to buy your
 worship a horse

Fal. I bought him in Paul's and he'll buy me a

horse in Smithfield an I could get me but a wife in the stews, I were manned horsed, and wined

Enter the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE and SERVANT

Page Sir here comes the nobleman that committed the Prince for striking him about Bardolph

Fal Wait close I will not see him

Ch Just What s he that goes there?

Serv Falstaff an t please your lordship

Ch Just He that was in question for the robbery? 69

Serv He, my lord but he hath since done good service at Shrewsbury, and, as I hear is now going with some charge to the Lord John of Lancaster

Ch Just What to York? Call him back again

Serv Sir John Falstaff!

Fal Boy, tell him I am deaf

Page You must speak louder my master is deaf

Ch Just I am sure he is, to the hearing of anything good Go, pluck him by the elbow, I must speak with him

Serv Sir John!

Fal What! a young knave, and begging! Is there not wars? is there not employment doth not the King lack subjects? do not the rebels need soldiers? Though it be a shame to be on any side but one, it is worse shame to beg than to be on the worst side, were it worse than the name of rebellion can tell how to make it 90

Serv You mistake me sir

Fal Why, sir, did I say you were an honest man? setting my knighthood and my soldiership aside, I had lied in my throat, if I had said so

Serv I pray you sir, then set your knighthood and your soldiership aside, and give me leave to tell you, you lie in your throat, if you say I am any other than an honest man

Fal I give thee leave to tell me so! I lay aside that which grows to me! If thou gettest any leave of me hang me, if thou takest leave, thou wert better be hanged You hunt counter hence! a aunt!

Serv Sir, my lord would speak with you

Ch Just Sir John Falstaff a word with you

Fal My good lord! God give your lordship good time of day I am glad to see your lordship abroad I heard say your lordship was sick I hope your lordship goes abroad by advice Your lordship though not clean past your youth hath yet some smack of age in you, some relish of the saltness of time and I most humbly beseech your lordship to have a reverent care of your health

Ch Just Sir John I sent for you before your expedition to Shrewsbury

Fal An t please your lordship I hear his Majesty is returned with some discomfort from Wales

Ch Just I talk not of his Majesty you would not come when I sent for you 121

Fal And I hear, moreover, his Highness is fallen into this same whoreson apoplexy

Ch Just Well, God mend him! I pray you let me speak with you

Fal This apoplexy is as I take it a kind of lethargy an t please your lordship a kind of sleeping in the blood, a whoreson tingling

Ch Just What tell you me of it? be it as it is 130

Fal It hath its original from much grief, from study and perturbation of the brain I have read the cause of his effects in Galen it is a kind of deafness

Ch Just I think you are fallen into the disease, for you hear not what I say to you

Fal Very well my lord, very well rather, an't please you it is the disease of not listening the malady of not marking that I am troubled withal 140

Ch Just To punish you by the heels would amend the attention of your ears, and I care not if I do become your physician

Fal I am as poor as Job my lord but not so patient your lordship may munster the potion of imprisonment to me in respect of poverty, but how I should be your patient to follow your prescriptions the wise may make some dram of a scruple, or indeed a scruple itself

Ch Just I sent for you when there were matters against you for your life, to come speak with me

Fal As I was then advised by my learned counsel in the laws of this land service, I did not come

Ch Just Well the truth is, Sir John, you live in great infamy

Fal He that buckles him in my belt cannot live in less

Ch Just Your means are very slender and your waste is great 160

Fal I would it were otherwise, I would my means were greater, and my waist slenderer

Ch Just You have misled the youthful Prince

Fal The young Prince hath misled me I am the fellow with the great belly, and he my dog

Ch Just Well I am loath to gall a new-healed wound your day's service at Shrewsbury hath a little gilded over your night's exploit on Gadshill you may thank the unquiet time for o'er posting that action.

Fal My lord

Ch Just But since all is well keep it so wake not a sleeping wolf

Fal To wake a wolf is as bad as to smell a fox

Ch Just What you are as a candle the better part burnt out

Fal A wassail candle my lord all tallow if I did say of wax my growth would approve the truth

Ch Just There is not a white hair on your face but should have his effect of gravity

Fal His effect of gravity gravity gravv

Ch Just You follow the young Prince up and down like his ill angel

Fal Not so my lord your ill angel is light but I hope he that looks upon me will take me with out weighing and yet in some respects I grant I cannot go I cannot tell Virtue is of so little regard in these costermonner times that true valour is turned bear herd pregnancy is made a tapster and hath his quick wit wasted in giving reckonings all the other gifts appertinent to man as the malice of this age shapes them are not worth a gooseberry You that are old consider not the capacities of us that are young you do measure the heat of our livers with the bitterness of your galls and we that are in the vaward of our youth I must confess are wags too

Ch Just Do you set down your name in the scroll of youth that are written down old with all the characters of age? Have you not a moist eye? a dry hand? a yellow cheek? a white beard? a decreasing leg? an increasing belly? or not your voice broken? your wind short? your chun double? your wit single? and every part about you blasted with antiquity? and will you yet call yourself young? Fie fie fie Sir John

Fal My lord I was born about three of the clock in the afternoon with a white head and something a round belly For my voice I have lost it with hallooing and singing of anthems To approve my youth further I will nor the truth is I am only old in judgement and understanding and he that will caper with me for a thousand marks let him lend me the money and have at him! For the box of the ear that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince and you took it like a sensible lord I have checked him for it and the young lion repents marry not at ashes and sackcloth, but in new silk and old sack

Ch Just Well God send the Prince a better companion!

Fal God send the companion a better prince! I cannot rid my hands of him

Ch Just Well the King hath severed you and Prince Harry I hear you are going with Lord John of Lancaster against the Archbishop

and the Earl of Northumberland

Fal Yea I thank you pretty sweet wit for it But look you pray all you that kiss my lady Peace at home that our armies join not in a hot day for by the Lord I take but two shirts out with me and I mean not to swear extraordinarily if it be a hot day and I brandish anything but a bottle I would I might never spit white again There is not a dangerous action can creep out his head but I am thrust upon it well I cannot last ever but it was always yet the trick of our English nation if they have a good thing to make it too common If ye will needs say I am an old man you should give me rest I would to God my name were not so terrible to the enemy as it is I were better to be eaten to death with a rust than to be scoured to nothing with perpetual motion

Ch Just Well be honest be honest and God bless your expedition!

Fal Will your lordship lend me a thousand pound to furnish me forth?

Ch Just Not a penny not a penny you are too impatient to bear crosses Fare you well commend me to my cousin Westmoreland

[*Exit* CHIEF JUSTICE and SERVANT] *Fal* If I do fillip me with a three man beetle A man can no more separate age and covetousness than a can part young limbs and lechery but the gout galls the one, and the pot pinches the other and so both the degrees prevent my curses Boy!

Page Sir?

Fal What money is in my purse?

Page Seven groats and two pence

Fal I can get no remedy against this consumption of the purse borrowing only livers and liners it out but the disease is incurable Go bear this letter to my Lord of Lancaster this to the Prince this to the Earl of Westmoreland and this to old Mistress Ursula whom I have weekly sworn to marry since I perceived the first white hair on my chun About it you know where to find me [*Exit* PAGE] A pot of this gout! or a gout of this pot! for the one or the other plays the rogue with my great toe 'Tis no matter if I do halt I have the wars for my colour and my pension shall seem the more reasonable A good wit will make use of anything I will turn diseases to commodity [*Exit*]

SCENE III *York the Arch bishop's place*
Enter the ARCHBISHOP the LORDS MASTINGS NOW
BRAY and BARDOLPH

Arch Thus have you heard our cause and known our means

And, my most noble friends, I pray you all,
 Speak plainly your opinions of our hopes
 And first, Lord Marshal, what say you to it?

Mowb I well allow the occasion of our arms,
 But gladly would be better satisfied
 How in our means we should advance ourselves
 To look with forehead bold and big enough
 Upon the power and puissance of the King
Hast Our present musters grow upon the file 10
 To five and twenty thousand men of choice
 And our supplies live largely in the hope
 Of great Northumberland, whose bosom burns
 With an incensed fire of injuries

L Bard The question then, Lord Hastings,
 standeth thus,
 Whether our present five and twenty thousand
 May hold up head without Northumberland?

Hast With him, we may
L Bard Yea, marry, there's the point
 But if without him we be thought too feeble,
 My judgement is, we should not step too far 20
 Till we had his assistance by the hand
 For in a theme so bloody-faced as this
 Conjecture, expectation, and surmise
 Of aids uncertain should not be admitted

Arch 'Tis very true, Lord Bardolph, for indeed
 It was young Hotspur's case at Shrewsbury

L Bard It was, my lord, who lined himself
 with hope,

Eating the air on promise of supply,
 Flattering himself in project of a power
 Much smaller than the smallest of his thoughts
 And so, with great imagination 31
 Proper to madmen, led his powers to death
 And winking leap'd into destruction

Hast But, by your leave it never yet did hurt
 To lay down likelihoods and forms of hope

L Bard Yes, if this present quality of war,
 Indeed the instant action a cause on foot
 Lives so in hope as in an early spring
 We see the appearing buds which to prove fruit,
 Hope gives not so much warrant as despair 40
 That frosts will bite them When we mean to
 build,

We first survey the plot then draw the model,
 And when we see the figure of the house,
 Then must we rate the cost of the erection,
 Which if we find outweighs ability
 What do we then but draw anew the model
 In fewer offices or at last desist
 To build at all? Much more, in this great work,
 Which is almost to pluck a kingdom down
 And set another up should we survey 50
 The plot of situation and the model,
 Consent upon a sure foundation
 Question surveyors, know our own estate,

How able such a work to undergo
 To weigh against his opposite or else
 We fortify in paper and in figures,
 Using the names of men instead of men
 Like one that draws the model of a house
 Beyond his power to build it who, half through,
 Gives o'er and leaves his part-created cost 60
 A naked subject to the weeping clouds
 And waste for churlish winter's tyranny
Hast Grant that our hopes yet likely of fair
 birth,

Should be still born and that we now possess'd
 The utmost man of expectation
 I think we are a body strong enough
 Even as we are, to equal with the King
L Bard What, is the King but five and twenty
 thousand?

Hast To us no more, nay, not so much, Lord
 Bardolph

For his divisions, as the times do brawl 70
 Are in three heads one power against the French,
 And one against Glendower perforce a third
 Must take up us so is the unfirm King
 In three divided, and his coffers sound
 With hollow poverty and emptiness

Arch That he should draw his several strengths
 together

And come against in full puissance,
 Need not be dreaded

Hast If he should do so,
 He leaves his back unarm'd the French and Welsh
 Baying him at the heels never fear that 80

L Bard Who is it like should lead his forces
 hither?

Hast The Duke of Lancaster and Westmore-
 land,

Against the Welsh himself and Harry Monmouth
 But who is substituted against the French
 I have no certain notice

Arch Let us on
 And publish the occasion of our arms
 The commonwealth is sick of their own choice,
 Their over greedy love hath surfeited
 An habitation giddy and unsure

Hath he that buildeth on the vulgar heart 90
 O thou fond many, with what loud applause
 Didst thou beat heaven with blessing Bolingbroke,
 Before he was what thou wouldst have him be!
 And being now trimm'd in thine own desires,
 Thou beastly feeder art so full of him
 That thou provokest thy self to cast him up
 So, so thou common dog didst thou disgorge
 Thy glutton bosom of the royal Richard,
 And now thou wouldst eat thy dead vomit up,
 And howl'st to find it What trust is in these
 times?

They that when Richard lived would have him
die 101

Are now become enamour'd on his grave
Thou that threw'st dust upon his goodly head
When through proud London he came sighing on
After the admired heels of Bolingbroke
Cries now O earth yield us that king again
And take thou this! O thoughts of men accus'd!
Past and to come seems best things present
worst

Alon. Shall we go draw our numbers and set
on?

Hast. We are time's subjects and time bids be
gone [Exeunt 110

ACT II

SCENE I London a street

*Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY FANG and his Boy with
her and SNARE following*

Quick. Master Fang have you entered the
action?

Fang. It is entered

Quick. Where's your woman? Is't a lusty
woman? will she stand to't?

Fang. Sirrah where's Snare?

Q. c. O Lord a' good Master Snare

Snare. Here here

Fang. Snare we must arrest Sir John Falstaff

Quick. Yea good Master Snare I have en-
tered him and all 11

Snare. It may chance cost some of us our lives
for he will stab

Quick. Alas the day! take heed of him he
stabbed me in mine own house and that most
beastly in good faith he cares not what mischief
he does if his weapon be out he will foam like
any devil he will spare neither man woman
nor child

Fang. If I can close with him I care not for
his thrust 21

Q. c. No nor I neither I'll be at your elbow

Fang. An I but fist him once an't come but
within my vice—

Quick. I am undone by his going I warrant
you he is an infective thing upon my score Good
Master Fang hold him sure good Master Snare
let him not scape A comes continually to Pie
corner—saying your manhoods—to buy a saddle
and he is and red m'd nner to the Lubber's head
in Lambert street to Master Smooch's the silk
man I pray ye since my action is entered and
my case so openly known to the world let him
be a long one for a poor lone woman to bear
and I have borne and borne and borne and have

been subbed off and subbed off and subbed off
from this day to that day that it is a shame to
be thought on There is no honesty in such
dealing unless a woman should be made an ass
and a beast to bear every knave's wrong Yonder
he comes and that arrant malmsey nose knave
Bardolph with him Do your offices do your
offices Master Fang and Master Snare do me
do me do me your offices

Enter FALSTAFF PAGE and BARDOLPH

Fal. How now! whose mate's dead? what's
the matter?

Fang. Sir John I arrest you at the suit of Mis-
tress Quickly 49

Fal. Away varlets! Draw Bardolph curse me off
the villain's head throw the qucan in the channel

Quick. Throw me in the channel! I'll throw
thee in the channel Wilt thou? wilt thou? thou
bastardly rogue! Murder murder! Ah thou
honey suckle villain! wilt thou kill God's officers
and the king? Ah thou honey seed rogue! thou
art a honey seed a man-queller and a woman
queller

Fal. Keep them off Bardolph 60

Fang. A rescue! a rescue!

Quick. Good people bring a rescue or two
Thou wilt not thou? thou wilt not thou? do
do thou rogue! do thou hemp-seed!

Fal. Away you scullion! you rampallian! you
fastidarian! I'll tickle your catastrophe

Enter the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE and his men

Ch. Just. What is the matter? keep the peace
here ho!

Quick. Good my lord be good to me I be-
seech you stand to me 70

Ch. Just. How now Sir John! what are you
brawling here?

Doth this become your place your time and
business?

You should have been well on your way to York
Stand from him fellow wherefore hang at upon
him?

Q. c. O my most worshipful lord an't please
your Grace I am a poor widow of Eastcheap
and he is arrested at my suit

Ch. Just. For what sum?

Quick. It is more than for some my lord it is
for all all I have He hath eaten me out of house
and home he hath put all my substance into that
fat belly of his but I will have some of it out
again or I will ride thee on nights like the mare

Fal. I think I am as light to ride the mare if I
have any vantage of ground to get up

Ch. Just. How comes this Sir John? Fie!

what man of good temper would endure this tempest of exclamation? Are you not ashamed to enforce a poor widow to so rough a course to come by her own? 90

Fal What is the gross sum that I owe thee?

Quick Marry, if thou wert an honest man thyself and the money too Thou didst swear to me upon a parcel gilt goblet, sitting in my Dolphin-chamber, at the round table, by a sea coal fire upon Wednesday in Wheeson week when the Prince broke thy head for liking his father to a singing man of Windsor, thou didst swear to me then as I was washing thy wound to marry me and make me my lady thy wife Canst thou deny it? Did not goodwife Keech, the butcher's wife come in then and call me gossip Quickly? coming in to borrow a mess of vinegar, telling us she had a good dish of prawns, whereby thou didst desire to eat some, whereby I told thee they were ill for a green wound? And didst thou not, when she was gone downstairs, desire me to be no more so familiarly with such poor people saying that ere long they should call me madam? And didst thou not kiss me and bid me fetch thee thirty shillings? I put thee now to thy book oath deny it if thou canst

Fal My lord this is a poor mad soul and she says up and down the town that her eldest son is like you she hath been in good case, and the truth is, poverty hath distracted her But for these foolish officers, I beseech you I may have redress against them

Ch Just Sir John, Sir John, I am well acquainted with your manner of wrenching the true cause the false way It is not a confident brow nor the throng of words that come with such more than impudent sauciness from you, can thrust me from a level consideration you have as it appears to me practised upon the easy-yielding spirit of this woman and made her serve your uses both in purse and in person

Quick Yea, in truth my lord

Ch Just Pray thee, peace Pay her the debt you owe her and unpay the villainy you have done her the one you may do with sterling money and the other with current repentance

Fal My lord I will not undergo this sneap without reply You call honourable boldness impudent sauciness if a man will make courtesy and say nothing he is virtuous no, my lord, my humble duty remembered I will not be your sutor I say to you I do desire deliverance from these officers being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs 140

Ch Just You speak as having power to do wrong but answer in the effect of your reputa-

tion, and satisfy the poor woman

Fal Come hither, hostess

Enter GOWER

Ch Just Now Master Gower, what news?

Gow The King, my lord and Harry Prince of Wales

Are near at hand the rest the paper tells

Fal As I am a gentleman

Quick Faith you said so before

Fal As I am a gentleman Come no more words of it 151

Quick By this heavenly ground I tread on I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers

Fal Glasses glasses, is the only drinking and for thy walls a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in water-work is worth a thousand of these bed-hangings and these fly-bitten tapestries Let it be ten pound if thou canst Come an twere not for thy humours, there's not a better wench in England Go wash thy face, and draw the action Come thou must not be in this humour with me dost not know me? come, come, I know thou wast set on to this

Quick Pray thee Sir John let it be but twenty nobles I faith, I am loath to pawn my plate so God save me la!

Fal Let it alone, I'll make other shift you'll be a fool still 170

Quick Well, you shall have it though I pawn my gown I hope you'll come to supper You'll pay me all together?

Fal Will I live? [To BARDOLPH] Go with her, with her hook on, hook on

Quick Will you have Doll Tearsheet meet you at supper?

Fal No more words, let me have her
[Exit MISTRESS QUICKLY BARDOLPH, Officers and Boy]

Ch Just I have heard better news

Fal What's the news my lord? 180

Ch Just Where lay the King last night?

Gow At Basingstoke my lord

Fal I hope my lord all's well what is the news my lord?

Ch Just Come all his forces back?

Gow No fifteen hundred foot five hundred horse

Are march'd up to my Lord of Lancaster Against Northumberland and the Archbishop

Fal Comes the King back from Wales, my noble lord?

Ch Just You shall have letters of me presently

Come go along with me good Master Gower

Fal My lord!

Ch Just What's the matter?

Fal Master Gower shall I entreat you with me to dinner?

Gow I must wait upon my good lord here I thank you good Sir John

Ch Just Sir John you loiter here too long being you are to take soldiers up in counties as you go

Fal Will you sup with me Master Gower?

Ch Just What foolish master taught you these manners Sir John?

Fal Master Gower if they become me not he was a fool that taught them me This is the right fencing grace my lord rap for rap and so part fair

Ch Just Now the Lord lighten thee! thou art a great fool [Exit]

SCENE II London another street

Enter PRINCE HENRY and POINS

Prince Before God, I am exceeding weary

Poins Is it come to that? I had thought we might not have attracted one of so high blood

Prince Falst. it does me though it discolours the complexion of my greatness to acknowledge it Doth it not show rudely in me to desire small beer?

Poins Why a prince should not be so loosely studied as to remember so weak a composition

Prince Behike then my appetite was not princely got for by my troth I do now remember the poor creature small beer But indeed these humble considerations make me out of love with my greatness What a disgrace is it to me to remember thy name! or to know thy face tomorrow! or to take note how many pair of silk stockings thou hast viz these and those that were thy peach coloured ones! or to bear the inventory of thy shirts as one for superfluity and another for use! But that the tennis-court keeper driveth better than I for it is a low ebb of linen with thee when thou keepest not racket there as thou hast not done a great while because the rest of thy low countries have made a shift to eat up thy holland and God knows whether those that bawl out the runs of thy linen shall inherit his kingdom but the mad wives say the children are not in the fault whereupon the world increases and hundreds are mightily strengthened

Poins How ill it follows after you have laboured so hard you should talk so idly! Tell me, how many good young princes would do so their fathers being so sick as yours at this time is?

Prince Shall I tell thee one thing Poins?

Poins Yes faith and let it be an excellent good thing

Prince It shall serve among wits of no higher breeding than thine

Poins Go to I stand the push of your one thing that you will tell

Prince Marry I tell thee it is not meet that I should be sad now my father is sick albeit I could tell to thee no one it pleases me for fault of a better to call my friend, I could be sad, and sad indeed too

Poins Very hardly upon such a subject

Prince By this hand, thou thinkest me as far in the devil's book as thou and Falstaff for obduracy and persistency let the end try the man But I tell thee my heart bleeds inwardly that my father is so sick and keeping such vile company as thou art hath no reason taken from me all ostentation of sorrow

Poins The reason?

Prince What wouldst thou think of me if I should weep?

Poins I would think thee a most princely hypocrite

Prince It would be every man's thought and thou art a blessed fellow to think in every man thinks never a man's thought in the world keeps the road way better than thine every man would think me an hypocrite indeed And what accites your most worshipful thought to think so?

Poins Why because you have been so lewd and so much enraptured to Falstaff

Prince And to thee

Poins By this light I am well spoke on I can hear it with mine own ears the worst that they can say of me is that I am a second brother and that I am a proper fellow of my hands and those two things I confess I cannot help By the mass, here comes Bardolph

Enter BARDOLPH and PAGE

Prince And the boy that I gave Falstaff a had him from me Christian and look if the fat villain have not transformed him ape

Bardolph God save your Grace

Prince And yours most noble Bardolph?

Bardolph Come you curious ass you bashful fool must you be blushing? why refore blush you now? What a maidenly man at arms are you become? I'll such a matter to get a pottle pot of me denhead?

Page A calls even now my lord through a red lattice and I could discern no part of his face from the window at last I spied his eyes and methought he had made two holes in the

ale wife's new petticoat and so peeped through

Prince Has not the boy profited? 90

Bard Away, you whoreson upright rabbit, way!

Page Away, you rascally Althæa's dream way!

Prince Instruct us, boy, what dream boy?

Page Marry, my lord, Althæa dreamed she was delivered of a fire-brand, and therefore I call him her dream

Prince A crown's worth of good interpretation there 'tis, boy 100

Poins O, that this good blossom could be kept from canl'ers! Well there is sixpence to preserve thee

Bard An you do not make him hanged among you the gallows shall have wrong

Prince And how doth thy master Bardolph?

Bird Well my lord He heard of your Grace's coming to town there's a letter for you

Poins Delivered with good respect And how doth the martlemas, your master? 110

Bird In bodily health, sir

Poins Marry, the immortal part needs a physician but that moves not him though that be sick it dies not

Prince I do allow this wen to be as familiar with me as my dog and he holds his place, for look you how he writes

Poins [Reads] "John Falstaff, knight"—every man must know that as oft as he has occasion to name himself even like those that are kin to the king for they never prick their finger but they say "There's some of the King's blood spilt" 'How comes that?' says he, that takes upon him not to conceive The answer is as ready as a borrower's cap, "I am the King's poor cousin sir"

Prince Nay, they will be kin to us or they will fetch it from Japhet But to the letter

Poins [Reads] "Sir John Falstaff, knight to the son of the king, nearest his father, Harry Prince of Wales greeting" Why this is a certificate

Prince Peace!

Poins [Reads] "I will imitate the honourable Romans in brevity" he sure means brevity in breath short-winded "I commend me to thee I commend thee and I leave thee Be not too familiar with Poins for he misuses thy favours so much that he swears thou art to marry his sister Nell Repent at idle times as thou mayest and so farewell 141

'Thine by yea and no which is as much as to say, as thou usest him *Jack Falstaff* with my familiars *John* with my

brothers and sisters, and *Sir John* with all Europe'

My lord I'll steep this letter in sack and mal'um eat it

Prince That's to make him eat twenty of his words But do you use me thus, Ned? must I marry your sister? 151

Poins God send the wench no worse fortune! But I never said so

Prince Well, thus we play the fools with the time, and the spirits of the wise sit in the clouds and mock us Is your master here in London?

Bard Yea my lord

Prince Where sups he? doth the old boar feed in the old frank? 160

Bird At the old place my lord in Eastcheap

Prince What company?

Page Ephesians my lord of the old church

Prince Sup any women with him?

Page None, my lord but old Mistress Quickly and Mistress Doll Tearsheet

Prince What pagan may that be?

Page A proper gentlewoman, sir, and a kinswoman of my master's 170

Prince Even such kin as the parish heifers are to the town bull Shall we steal upon them Ned at supper?

Poins I am your shadow my lord I'll follow you

Prince Sirrah you boy, and Bardolph no word to your master that I am yet come to town there's for your silence

Bird I have no tongue sir

Page And for mine sir I will govern it 180

Prince Fare you well, go [Exit BARDOLPH and PAGE] This Doll Tearsheet should be some road

Poins I warrant you as common as the way between Saint Alban's and London

Prince How might we see Falstaff bestow himself to night in his true colours and not ourselves be seen?

Poins Put on two leathern jerkins and aprons and wait upon him at his table as drawers 191

Prince From a God to a bull? a heavy descension! it was Jove's case From a prince to a prentice? a low transformation! that shall be mine for in every thing the purpose must weigh with the folly Follow me, Ned [Exit

SCENE III *Warkworth before the castle*

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND LADY NORTHUMBERLAND and LADY PERCY

North I pray thee loving wife and gentle daughter

Give even way unto my rough affairs
Put not you on the visage of the times
And be like them to Percy troublesome

Lady N I have given over I will speak no more

Do what you will your wisdom be your guide

North Alas sweet wife my honour is at pawn

And but my going nothing can redeem it

Lady P O yet for God's sake go not to these wars!

The time was fatter that you broke your word
When you were more endear'd to it than now //

When your own Percy when my heart's dear Harry

Threw many a northward look to see his father

Bring up his powers but he did long in vain

Who then persuaded you to stay at home?

There were two honours lost yours and your son's

For yours the God of heaven brighten it!

For his is stuck upon him as the sun

In the grey vault of heaven and by his light

Did all the chivalry of England move 20

To do brave acts he was indeed the glass

Wherein the noble youth did dress themselves

He had no legs that practis'd nor his gair

And speaking thick which nature made his blemish

Became the accents of the valiant

For those that could speak low and tardily

Would turn their own perfection to abuse

To seem like him so that in speech in gair

In diet in affections of delight 30

In many rules humours of blood

He was the mark and glass copy and book

That fashion'd others And him O wondrous him!

O miracle of men! him did you leave

Second to none unseconded by you

To look upon the hideous god of war

In disadvantage to abide a field

Where nothing but the sound of Hotspur's name

Did seem defensible so you left him

Never O never do his ghost the wrong

To hold your honour more precious and nice 40

With others than with him let them alone

The Marshal and the Archbishop are strong

Had my sweet Harry had but half their numbers

To-day might I hanging on Hotspur's neck

Have talk'd of Monmouth's grave

North Beshrew your heart

Fair daughter you do draw my spirits from me

With new lamenting ancient overights

But I must go and meet with danger there

Or it will seek me in another place

And find me worse provided

Lady V O fly to Scotland 50

Till that the nobles and the armed commons

Have of their puissance made a little taste

Lady P If they get ground and vantage of the

king

Then join you with them like a rib of steel

To make strength stronger but for all our loves

First let them try themselves So did your son

He was so suffer'd so came I a widow

And never shall have length of life enough

To rain upon remembrance with mine eyes

That it may grow and sprout as high as heaven

For recordation to my noble husband 61

North Come come go in with me 'Tis with my mind

As with the tide swell'd up unto his height

That makes a still stand running neither way

Fain would I go to meet the Archbishop

But many thousand reasons hold me back

I will resolve for Scotland there am I

Till time and vantage crave my company [Exeunt]

SCENE IV London the Boar's head Tavern in East ch 1p

Enter two DRAWERS

1st Draw What the devil hast thou brought there? Apple johns? thou knowest Sir John can not endure an apple john

2nd Draw Mass thou sayest true The Prince once set a dish of apple johns before him and told him there were five more Sir Johns and putting off his hat said I will now take my leave of these six dry round old withered knights It angered him to the heart but he hath forgot that 10

1st Draw Why then cover and set them down and see if thou canst find out Sneak's noise Mistress Tearsheet would fain hear some music Dispatch the room where they supped is too hot they'll come in straight

2nd Draw Surah here will be the Prince and Master Points anon and they will put on two of our jerkins and aprons and Sir John must not know of it Bardolph hath brought word 20

1st Draw By the mass here will be old uns it will be an excellent stratagem

2nd Draw I'll see if I can find out Sneak [Exit]

Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY th Hostess and DOLL TEARSHEET

Quick I faith sweetheart methinks now you are in an excellent good temperality your pulside bears as extraordinarily as heart would desire and your colour I warrant you is as

red as any rose, in good truth la! But, I faith, you have drunk too much canaries and that's a marvellous searching wine and it perfumes the blood ere one can say 'What's this?' How do you now?

Dol Better than I was hem!

Quick Why, that's well said a good heart's worth gold Lo, here comes Sir John

Enter FALSTAFF

Fal [Singing] "When Arthur first in court"
—Empty the jordan [*Exit FIRST DRAWER*] —
[Singing] "And was a worthy king" How now, Mistress Doll!

Quick Sick of a calm yea, good faith 40

Fal So is all her sect, an they be once in a calm they are sick

Dol You muddy rascal, is that all the comfort you give me?

Fal You make fat rascals, Mistress Doll

Dol I make them! gluttony and diseases make them, I make them not

Fal If the cook help to make the gluttony you help to make the diseases, Doll we catch of you, Doll we catch of you, grant that my poor virtue grant that 51

Dol Yea, joy, our chains and our jewels

Fal "Your brooches, pearls, and ouches"
for to serve bravely is to come halting off you know to come off the breach with his pike bent bravely, and to surgery bravely, to venture upon the charged chambers bravely—

Dol Hang yourself, you muddy conger, hang yourself! 59

Quick By my troth, this is the old fashion you two never meet but you fall to some discord you are both I' good truth, as rheumatic as two dry toasts you cannot one bear with another's confirmities What the good year! one must bear, and that must be you you are the weal er vessel, as they say, the emptier vessel

Dol Can a weak empty vessel bear such a huge full hogshead? there's a whole merchant's venture of Bourdeaux stuff in him, you have not seen a hulk better stuffed in the hold Come, I'll be friends with thee, Jack thou art going to the wars and whether I shall ever see thee again or no there is nobody cares

Re-enter FIRST DRAWER

1st Draw Sir Ancient Pistol's below, and would speak with you

Dol Hang him, swaggering rascal! let him not come hither it is the foul mouthed st rogue in England

Quick If he swagger let him not come here

no by my faith, I must live among my neighbours, I'll no swaggerers I am in good name and fame with the very best shut the door, there comes no swaggerers here I have not lived all this while to have swaggering now shut the door, I pray you

Fal Dost thou hear hostess?

Quick Pray ye pacify yourself Sir, John there comes no swaggerers here

Fal Dost thou hear? it is mine ancient 89

Quick Tilly fally Sir John ne'er tell me your ancient swaggerer comes not in my doors I was before Master Tisick the deputy t other day and, as he said to me twas no longer ago than Wednesday last "I good faith neighbour Quick ly says he, Master Dumble our minister, was by then 'neighbour Quickly, says he, "receive those that are civil, for," said he you are in an ill name" now a said so I can tell whereupon, "for," says he "you are an honest woman and well thought on, therefore take heed what guests you receive receive," says he, "no swaggering companions There comes none here you would bless you to hear what he said no I'll no swaggerers

Fal Hes no swaggerer, hostess, a tame cheater, I faith, you may stroke him gently as a puppy greyhound he'll not swagger with a Barbary hen if her feathers turn back in any show of resistance Call him up drawer

[*Exit FIRST DRAWER*]

Quick Cheater call you him? I will bar no honest man from my house, nor no cheater but I do not lov' swaggering, by my troth I am the worse, when one says swagger feel masters, how I shake look you I warrant you

Dol So you do, hostess

Quick Do I? yea in very truth do I an tware an aspen leaf I cannot abide swaggers

Enter PISTOL BARDOLPH and PAGE

Pist God save you Sir John! 119

Fal Welcome, Ancient Pistol Here Pistol I charge you with a cup of sack do you discharge upon mine hostess

Pist I will discharge upon her, Sir John with two bullets

Fal She's pistol proof sir you shall hardly offend her

Quick Come I'll drink no proofs nor no bullets I'll drink no more than will do me good for no man's pleasure I

Pist Then to you Mistress Dorothy I will charge you

Dol Charge me! I scorn you scurvy

panion What' you poor base rascally cheat
ing lack linen mate! Away you mouldy rogue
away! I am meat for your master

Put I know you Mistress Dorothy

Dol Away you cut purse rascal' you filthy
bun^o away! by this wine I'll thrust my knife in
your mouldy chaps an' you play the saucy curtle
with me Away you bottle ale rascal' you
basket hilt stale juggler you! Since when I
pray you sir? God's light with two points on
your shoulder^s much

Pist God let me not live but I will murder
your ruff for this

Fal No more Pistol I would not have you
go off here discharge yourself of our company
Pistol

Quick No good Captain Pistol not here
sweet captain 150

Dol Captain! thou abominable damned cheater
art thou not ashamed to be called captain? An
captains were of my mind they would truncheon
you out for taking their names upon you before
you have earned them You a captain you slave
for what? for tearing a poor whore a ruff in a
bawdy house? He a captain! hang him rogue!
he lives upon mouldy stewed prunes and dried
cakes A captain! God's light these villains
will make the word as odious as the word
occupy which was an excellent good word
before it was ill sorted therefore captains had
need look to it

Bard Pray thee go down good ancient

Fal Hark thee hither Mistress Doll

Put Not I I tell thee what Corporal Bar
dolph I could tear her I'll be revenged of her

Pist Pray thee go down

Pist I'll see her damned first to Pluto's
damned lake by this hand to the infernal deep
with Erebus and torments vile also Hold hook
and line say I Down down dogs! down
fainters! Have we not Hiren here?

Quick Good Captain Peesel be quiet tis
very late I faith I beseech you now aggravate
your choler

Pist These be good humors indeed! Shall
pael horses

And hollow pamper d pades of Asia
Which cannot go but thirty mile a-day
Compare with Cæsars and with Cannibals 180
And Trojan Greeks? nay rather damn them with
king Cerberus and let the welkin roar
Shall we fall foul for toys?

Quick By my troth captain these are very
bitter words

Bard Be gone good ancient this will grow
to a brawl anon

Pist Die men like dogs! give crowns like pins!
Have we not Hiren here? 189

Quick O my word captain there's none such
here What the good year! do you think I would
deny her? For God's sake be quiet

Ist Then feed and be fat my fair Calpurnia
Come give's some sack

Si fortune me tormenta sperato me contento

Fear we broadsides? no let the fiend give fire
Give me some sack and sweetheart lie thou
there [*Laying down his sword*]

Come we to full points here and are etceteras
nothing?

Fal Pistol I would be quiet

Pist Sweet knight I kiss thy neck what! we
have seen the seven scars 201

Dol For God's sake thrust him downstairs
I cannot endure such a fustian rascal

Pist Thrust him downstairs! know we not
Galloway nars?

Fal Quoit him down Bardolph like a shove
groat shilling nay and a do nothing but speak
nothing a shall be nothing here

Bird Come get you downstairs

Pist What! shall we have incision? shall we
imbrue? [*Snatching up his sword*] 210

Then death rock me asleep abridge my doleful
days!

Why then let grievous ghastly gaping wounds
Untwine the Sisters Three! Come Atropos I say!

Quick Here's goodly stuff toward!

Fal Give me my rapier boy

Dol I pray thee Jack I pray thee do not draw
Fal Get you down stairs

Drawing and driving pistol out

Quick Here's a goodly tumult! I'll forswear
keeping house afore I'll be in these tittits and
frights So murder I warrant now Alas alas!
put up your naked weapons put up your naked
weapons [*Exeunt pistol and bardolph*]

Dol I pray thee Jack be quiet the rascal's
gone Ah you whoreson little valiant villain
you!

Quick Are you not hurt? the groin's methought
a made a shrewd thrust at your belly

Re-enter BARDOLPH

Fal Have you turned him out o' doors?

Bard Yea sir The rascal's drunk you have
hurt him sir i the shoulder 231

Fal A rascal! to brave me!

Dol Ah you sweet little rogue you! Alas poor
ape how thou sweatest! come let me wipe thy
face come on you whoreson chops ah rogue!
i faith I love thee thou art as valorous as
Hector of Troy worth five of Agamemnon, and

ten times better than the Nine Worthies ah, villain!

Fal A rascally slave! I will toss the rogue in a blanket 241

Dol Do, an thou darest for thy heart an thou dost, I'll canvass thee between a pair of sheets

Enter Music

Page The music is come, sir

Fal Let them play Play, sirs Sit on my knee, Doll A rascal bragging slave! the rogue fled from me like quicksilver

Dol I' faith, and thou followedst him like a church Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar pig, when wilt thou leave fighting o days and foining o' nights, and begin to patch up thine old body for heaven?

Enter, behind, PRINCE HENRY and POINS, disguised

Fal Peace, good Doll! do not speak like a death's head, do not bid me remember mine end *Dol* Sirrah what humour's the Prince of?

Fal A good shallow young fellow a' would have made a good pantler, a would ha' chipped bread well

Dol They say Poins has a good wit 260

Fal He a good wit? hang him, baboon! his wit's as thick as Tewksbury mustard, there's no more conceit in him than is in a mallet

Dol Why does the Prince love him so, then?

Fal Because their legs are both of a bigness and a' plays at quoits well, and eats conger and fennel, and drinks off candles' ends for flapdragons, and rides the wild mare with the boys, and jumps upon joined stools, and swears with a good grace and wears his boots very smooth like unto the sign of the leg and breeds no bate with telling of discreet stories, and such other gambol faculties a' has, that show a weak mind and an able body for the which the Prince admires him for the Prince himself is such another, the weight of a hair will turn the scales between their avoirdupois

Prince Would not this nave of a wheel have his ears cut off?

Poins Let's beat him before his whore 280

Prince Look, whether the withered elder hath not his poll clawed like a parrot

Poins Is it not strange that desire should so many years outlive performance?

Fal Kiss me, Doll

Prince Saturn and Venus this year in conjunction! what says the almanac to that?

Poins And, look, whether the fiery Trigon, his

man, be not lipping to his master's old tables, his note-book, his counsel keeper 290

Fal Thou dost give me flattering busses

Dol By my troth, I kiss thee with a most constant heart

Fal I am old I am old

Dol I love thee better than I love e'er a scurvy young boy of them all

Fal What stuff wilt have a kirtle of? I shall receive money o' Thursday shalt have a cap tomorrow A merry song come it grows late, we'll to bed Thou'll forget me when I am gone

Dol By my troth thou'll set me a weeping an thou sayest so prove that ever I dress myself handsome till thy return well hearken at the end

Fal Some sack Francis

Prince } Anon, anon, sir [*Coming forward*

Poins }

Fal Ha! a bastard son of the King's? And art not thou Poins his brother?

Prince Why thou globe of sinful continents what a life dost thou lead! 310

Fal A better than thou I am a gentleman, thou art a drawer

Prince Very true, sir, and I come to draw you out by the ears

Quick O the Lord preserve thy good Grace! by my troth, welcome to London Now, the Lord bless that sweet face of thine! O Jesu are you come from Wales?

Fal Thou whoreson mad compound of majesty by this light flesh and corrupt blood, thou art welcome 321

Dol How you fat fool! I scorn you

Poins My lord he will drive you out of your revenge and turn all to a merriment, if you take not the heat

Prince You whoreson candle mine, you how vilely did you speak of me even now before this honest virtuous, civil gentlewoman!

Quick God's blessing of your good heart! and so she is by my troth 330

Fal Didst thou hear me?

Prince Yea and you knew me as you did when you ran away by Gadshill you knew I was at your back, and spoke it on purpose to try my patience

Fal No no, no not so, I did not think thou wast within hearing

Prince I shall drive you then to confess the wilful abuse and then I know how to handle you

Fal No abuse Hal o' mine honour, no abuse

Prince Not to dispraise me and a pantler and bread-chipper and I

Fal No abuse Hal

Poins No abuse?

Fal No abuse Ned & the world honest
Ned none I dispraised him before the wicked
that the wicked might not fall in love with him
in which doing I have done the part of a careful
friend and a true subject and thy father is to
give me thanks for it No abuse Hal none
Ned none no faith boys none 351

Prince See now whether pure fear and entire
cowardice doth not make thee wrong this vir-
tuous gentlewoman to close with us Is she of the
wicked? is thine hostess here of the wicked? or
is thy boy of the wicked? or honest Bardolph
whose zeal burns in his nose of the wicked?

Poins Answer thou dead elm answer

Fal The fiend hath pricked down Bardolph
irrecoverable and his face is Lucifer's privy
kitchen where he doth nothing but roast malt
worms For the boy there is a good angel about
him but the devil outbids him too

Prince For the women?

Fal For one of them she is in hell already
and burns poor souls For the other I owe her
money and whether she be damned for that I
know not

Quick No I warrant you 369

Fal No I think thou art not I think thou
are quit for that Marry there is another indict-
ment upon thee for suffering flesh to be eaten in
thy house contrary to the law for the which I
think thou wilt howl

Quick All victuallers do so what's a joint of
mutton or two in a whole Lent?

Prince You gentlewoman—

Dol What says your Grace?

Fal His Grace says that which his flesh rebels
against

Knocking within 380

Quick Who knocks so loud at door? Look to
the door there Francis

Enter Peto

P in Peto how now! what news?

P in The King your father is at Westminster
And there are twenty weak and wearied posts
Come from the north and as I came along
I met and overtook a dozen captains
Bare headed sweating knocking at the taverns
And asking every one for Sir John Falstaff

Prince By heaven Poins I feel me much to
blame 390

So idly to profane the precious time
When tempest of commotion like the south
Borne with black vapour both begun to melt
And drop upon our bare unarm'd heads

Give me my sword and cloak Falstaff goodnight

[*Exeunt PRINCE HENRY POINS PETO
and BARDOLPH*]

Fal Now comes in the sweetest morsel of the
the night and we must hence and leave it un-
picked [*Knocking within*] More knocking at
the door!

Re enter BARDOLPH

How now! what's the matter? 400

Bard You must away to court sir presently
A dozen captains stay at door for you

Fal [*To the PAGE*] Pay the musicians sirtah
Farewell hostess farewell Doll You see my
good wenches how men of merit are sought after
the undesert may sleep when the man of action
is called on Farewell good wenches if I be not
sent away post I will see you again ere I go

Dol I cannot speak if my heart be not ready
to burst—well sweet Jack have a care of thyself

Fal Farewell farewell [*Exeunt FALSTAFF and
BARDOLPH*]

Quick Well fare thee well I have known thee
these twenty nine years come peascod time but
an honest and true hearted man—well fare
thee well

Bird [*Within*] Mistress Tearsheet!

Quick What's the matter?

Bird [*Within*] Bid Mistress Tearsheet come
to my master 419

Quick O run Doll run run good Doll come
[*She comes blubbered*] Yes will you come Doll?

[*Exeunt*]

ACT III

SCENE I Westminster the palace

Enter the KING in his night gown with a Page

King Go call the Earls of Surrey and of War-
wick

But ere they come bid them never read these
letters

And well consider of them make good speed

[*Exit Page*]

How many thousands of my poorest subjects
Are at this hour asleep! O Sleep O gentle Sleep
Nature's soft nurse how have I frightened thee
That thou no more wilt weigh my eyelids down
And steep my senses in forgetfulness?

Why rather Sleep liest thou in smoky cribs

Upon uneasy pallets stretching thee 10
And hush'd with buzzing night flies to thy slum-
ber

Than in the perfumed chambers of the great

Under the canopies of costly state

And lull'd with sound of sweetest melody?

O thou dull god why liest thou with the vile
 In loathsome beds, and leavest the kingly couch
 A watch-case or a common larum-bell?
 Wilt thou upon the high and giddy mast
 Seal up the ship-boy's eyes, and rock his brains
 In cradle of the rude imperious surge 20
 And in the visitation of the winds,
 Who take the ruffian billows by the top,
 Curling their monstrous heads and hanging them
 With deafening clamour in the slippery clouds,
 That, with the hurly, death itself awakes?
 Canst thou O partial Sleep, give thy repose
 To the wet sea-boy in an hour so rude,
 And in the calmest and most stillest night,
 With all appliances and means to boot,
 Deny it to a king? Then happy low lie down! 30
 Uneasy lies the head that wears a crown

Enter WARWICK and SURREY

War Many good morrows to your Majesty!

King Is it good morrow lords?

War 'Tis one o'clock, and past

King Why, then, good morrow to you all, my lords

Have you read o'er the letters that I sent you?

War We have, my liege

King Then you perceive the body of our kingdom

How foul it is what rank diseases grow,
 And with what danger, near the heart of it 40

War It is but as a body yet disemper'd,

Which to his former strength may be restored

With good advice and little medicine

My Lord Northumberland will soon be cool'd

King O God! that one might read the book of fate,

And see the revolution of the times

Make mountains level, and the continent,

Weary of solid firmness melt itself

Into the sea! and other times, to see

The beachy girdle of the ocean 50

Too wide for Neptune's ships, how chances mock,

And changes fill the cup of alteration

With divers liquors! O, if this were seen

The happiest youth viewing his progress through,

What perils past, what crosses to ensue

Would shut the book, and sit him down and die

'Tis not ten years gone

Since Richard and Northumberland great friends,

Did feast together, and in two years after

Were they at wars it is but eight years since 60

This Percy was the man nearest my soul,

Who like a brother toil'd in my affairs

And laid his love and life under my foot

Yea for my sake, even to the eyes of Richard

Gave him defiance But which of you was by—

You cousin Nevil as I may remember—

To WARWICK

When Richard, with his eye brimful of tears
 Then check'd and rated by Northumberland
 Did speak these words now proved a prophecy?
 "Northumberland thou ladder by the which 70
 My cousin Bolingbroke ascends my throne
 Though then God knows I had no such intent,
 But that necessity so bow'd the state
 That I and greatness were compell'd to kiss
 "The time shall come, thus did he follow it,
 'The time will come that foul sin gathering
 head

Shall break into corruption so went on,

Foretelling this same time & condition

And the division of our amity

War There is a history in all men's lives, 80

Figuring the nature of the times deceased

The which observed a man may prophesy,

With a near aim of the main chance of things

As yet not come to life which in their seeds

And weak beginnings lie intresured

Such things become the hatch and brood of time,

And by necessary form of this

King Richard might create a perfect guess

That great Northumberland, then false to him,

Would of that seed grow to a greater falseness,

Which should not find a ground to root upon, 90

Unless on you

King Are these things then necessities?

Then let us meet them like necessities

And that same word even now cries out on us

They say the Bishop and Northumberland

Are fifty thousand strong

War It cannot be my lord,

Rumour doth double like the voice and echo

The numbers of the fear'd Please it your Grace

To go to bed Upon my soul my lord

The powers that you already have sent forth 100

Shall bring this prize in very easily

To comfort you the more I have received

A certain instance that Glendower is dead

Your Majesty hath been thus fortnight ill

And these unseason'd hours perforce must add

Unto your sickness

King I will take your counsel

And were these inward wars once out of hand

We would, dear lords, unto the Holy Land

[Exeunt]

SCENE II Gloucestershire before Justice Shallow's house

Enter SHALLOW and SILENCE, meeting, MOULDY, SHADOW WART, FEEBLE BULLCAMP a Servant or two with them

Shal Come on come on, come on sir, b

me your hand sir give me your hand sir an
early surrer by the rood And how doth my
good cousin Silence?

Sil Good morrow good cousin Shallow

Shal And how doth my cousin your bedfel-
low and your fairest daughter and mine my
god-daughter Ellen?

Sil Alas a black ousel cousin Shallow v¹ 9

Shal By yea and nay sir I dare say my
cousin William is become a good scholar he is at
Oxford still is he not?

Sil Indeed sir to my cost

Shal A must then to the Inns o Court shortly
I was once of Clements Inn where I think they
will talk of mad Shallow yet

Sil You were called lusty Shallow then
cousin

Shal By the mass I was called any thing
and I could have done anythin^e indeed too and
roundly too There was I and little John Dorr
of Stafford hire and black George Barnes and
Francis Pickbone and Will Squele a Cotswold
man you had not four such swine bucklers in
all the Inns o Court again and I may say to you
we knew where the bona robas were and had the
best of them all at commandment Then was
Jack Falstaff now Sir John a boy and page to
Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolk

Sil This Sir John cousin that comes hither
anon about soldiers? 31

Shal The same Sir John the very same I
see him break Shogan's head at the court-gate
when a was a crack not thus hush and the very
same day did I fight with one Sampson Stockfish
a fruiterer behind Gray's Inn Jesu Jesu the
mad days that I have spent and to see how many
of my old acquaintance are dead!

Sil We shall all follow cousin 39

Shal Certain tis certain very sure very
sure death as the Psalmist saith is certain to
all all shall die How a good yoke of bullocks
at Stamford fair?

Sil By my troth I was not there

Shal Death is certain Is old Double of your
town living yet?

Sil Dead sir

Shal Jesu Jesu dead a drew a good bow
and dead! a shot a fine shoot John a Gaunt
loved him well and betted much money on his
head Dead! a would have clapped the clout
at twelve score and carried you a forehead shaft
a fourteen and fourteen and a half that it would
have done a man's heart good to see How a
score of ewes now?

Sil Thereafter as they be a score of good
ewes may be worth ten pounds

Shal And is old Double dead?

Sil Here come two of Sir John Falstaff's men,
as I think 60

Enter BARDOLPH and one with him

Bard Good morrow honest gentlemen I
beseech you which is Justice Shallow?

Shal I am Robert Shallow sir a poor esquire
of this country and one of the King's justices of
the peace what is your good pleasure with me?

Bard My captain sir commends him to you
my captain Sir John Falstaff a tall gentleman,
by heaven and a most gallant leader

Shal He greets me well sir I knew him a
good backsword man How doth the good knight?
may I ask how my lady his wife doth? 71

Bard Sir pardon a soldier is better accom-
modated than with a wife

Shal It is well said in faith sir and it is well
said indeed too Better accommodated! it is good
yea indeed is it good phrases are surely and
ever were very commendable Accommodated!
it comes of *accommo* to very good a good
phrase 79

Bard Pardon me sir I have heard the word
Phrase call you it? by this good day I know not
the phrase but I will maintain the word with
my sword to be a soldier like word and a word
of exceeding good command by heaven Accom-
modated that is when a man is they say
accommodated or when a man is been where-
by a may be thought to be accommodated which
is an excellent thing 89

Shal It is very just

Enter FALSTAFF

Look here comes good Sir John Give me your
good hand give me your worship's good hand
by my troth you like well and bear your years
very well welcome good Sir John

Fal I am glad to see you well good Master
Robert Shallow Master Surecard as I think?

Shal No Sir John it is my cousin Silence my
cousin son with me

Fal Good Master Silence it well befits you
should be of the peace

Sil Your good worship is welcome 100

Fal Fie! this is hot weather gentlemen Have
you provided me here half a dozen sufficient
men?

Shal Marry have we sir Will you sir?

Fal Let me see them I beseech you

Shal Where's the roll? where's the roll
where's the roll? I let me see let me see
see So so so so so so so yea marry sir
Ralph Mouldy! Let them appear as I call!

them do so, let them do so Let me see, where is Mouldy? 111

Moul Here, an't please you

Shal What think you Sir John? a good limbed fellow young, strong, and of good friends

Fal Is thy name Mouldy?

Moul Yea an't please you

Fal 'Tis the more time thou wert used

Shal Ha, ha ha! most excellent, i' faith! things that are mouldy lack use very singular good! in faith, well said, Sir John, very well said

Fal Prick him 121

Moul I was pricked well enough before, an you could have let me alone my old dame will be undone now for one to do her husbandry and her drudgery you need not to have pricked me there are other men fitter to go out than I

Fal Go to peace, Mouldy, you shall go Mouldy it is time you were spent

Moul Spent! 129

Shal Peace, fellow, peace, stand aside know you where you are? For the other, Sir John let me see Simon Shadow!

Fal Yea, marry, let me have him to sit under he's like to be a cold soldier

Shal Where's Shadow?

Shad Here, sir

Fal Shadow, whose son art thou?

Shad My mother's son, sir

Fal Thy mother's son! like enough, and thy father's shadow so the son of the female is the shadow of the male it is often so indeed, but much of the father's substance!

Shal Do you like him Sir John?

Fal Shadow will serve for summer prick him for we have a number of shadows to fill up the muster-book

Shal Thomas Wart!

Fal Where's he

Wart Here sir

Fal Is thy name Wart? 150

Wart Yea sir

Fal Thou art a very ragged wart

Shal Shall I prick him down Sir John?

Fal It were superfluous for his apparel is built upon his back and the whole frame stands upon pins prick him no more

Shal Ha ha ha! you can do it, sir you can do

it I commend you well Francis Feeble!

Fee Here, sir

Fal What trade art thou Feeble? 160

Fee A woman's tailor sir

Shal Shall I prick him sir?

Fal You may but if he had been a man's tailor, he'd ha' pricked you Wilt thou make as many

holes in an enemy's battle as thou hast done in a woman's petticoat?

Fee I will do my good will, sir you can have no more

Fal Well said good woman's tailor! well said, courageous Feeble! thou wilt be as valiant as the wrathful dove or most magnanimous mouse Prick the woman's tailor well, Master Shallow, deep Master Shallow

Fee I would Wart might have gone sir

Fal I would thou wert a man's tailor, that thou mightest mend him and make him fit to go I cannot put him to a private soldier that is the leader of so many thousands let that suffice most forcible Feeble

Fee It shall suffice sir 180

Fal I am bound to thee, reverend Feeble Who next?

Shal Peter Bullcalf o the green!

Fal Yea marry let's see Bullcalf

Bull Here sir

Fal 'Tore God, a likely fellow! Come, prick me Bullcalf till he roar again

Bull O Lord! good my lord captain—

Fal What, dost thou roar before thou art pricked? 190

Bull O Lord sir! I am a diseased man

Fal What disease hast thou?

Bull A whoreson cold sir a cough sir which I caught with ringing in the King's affairs upon his coronation-day sir

Fal Come, thou shalt go to the wars in a gown we will have away thy cold and I will take such order that thy friends shall ring for thee Is here all? 199

Shal Here is two more called than your number, you must have but four here, sir and so, I pray you go in with me to dinner

Fal Come I will go drink with you but I cannot tarry dinner I am glad to see you by my troth Master Shallow

Shal O Sir John do you remember since we lay all night in the windmill in Saint George's field?

Fal No more of that, good Master Shallow no more of that

Shal Ha! 'twas a merry night And is Jane Nightwork alive? 211

Fal She lives Master Shallow

Shal She never could away with me

Fal Never, never, she would always say she could not abide Master Shallow

Shal By the mass I could anger her to the heart She was then a bona roba Doth she hold her own well?

Fal Old, old Master Shallow 219

Shal Nay she must be old she cannot choose but be old certain she's old and had Robin Nightwork by old Nightwork before I came to Clement's Inn

Sir That's fifty five year 260

Shal Ha cousin Silence that thou hadst seen that that this knight and I have seen! Ha Sir John said I well?

Fal We have heard the chimes at midnight Master Shallow 229

Shal That we have, that we have that we have in faith Sir John we have our watchword was

Hem boys! Come let's to dinner come let's to dinner Jesus the days that we have seen! Come come

[*Exeunt FALSTAFF and the JUSTICES*]

Bull Good Master Corporate Bardolph stand my friend and here's four Harry ten shillings in French crowns for you In very truth sir I had as lief be hanged sir as go and yet for mine own part sir I do not care but rather because I am unwilling and for mine own part have a desire to stay with my friends else, sir I did not care for mine own part so much

Bird Go to stand aside

Moul And good master corporal captain for my old dame's sake stand my friend she has nobody to do anything about her when I am gone and she is old and cannot help herself you shall have forty sir

Bird Go to stand aside 249

Fee By my troth I care not a man can die but once we owe God a death I'll ne'er bear a base mind an't be my destiny so an't be nor so no man is too good to serve's prince and let it go which way it will he that dies this year is quit for the next

Bard Well said thou'rt a good fellow

Fee Faith I'll bear no base mind

[*Re-enter FALSTAFF and the JUSTICES*]

Fal Come sir which men half I have?

Shal Four of which you please

Bard Sir a word with you I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bulcalf 261

Fal Go to well

Shal Come Sir John which four will you have?

Fal Do you choose for me

Shal Marry then Mouldy Bulcalf Feeble and Shadow

Fal Mouldy and Bulcalf for you Mouldy stay at home till you are past service and for your part Bulcalf grow till you come unto it I will none of you 271

Shal Sir John Sir John do not yourself wrong

they are your likeliest men, and I would have you served with the best

Fal Will you tell me Master Shallow how to choose a man? Care I for the limb the thewes the stature bulk and big assemblance of a man? Give me the spirit Master Shallow Here's Wart you see what a ranged appearance it is a shall charge you and discharge you with the motion of a pewterer's hammer come off and on swifter than he that gibbets on the brewer's bucket And this same half faced fellow Shadow give me this man he presents no mark to the enemy the foeman may with as great aim level at the edge of a penknife And for a retreat how swiftly will this Feeble the woman's tailor run off! O give me the spare men and spare me the great ones Put me a caliver into Wart's hand Bardolph 290

Bird Hold Wart traverse thus thus thus

Fal Come manage me your caliver So very well go to very good exceeding good O give me always a little lean old chap bald shot Well said I faith Wart thou'rt a good scab hold there's a tester for thee

Shal He is not his craft's master he doth not do it right I remember at Mile end Green when I lay at Clement's Inn—I was then Sir Dagonet in Arthur's show—there was a little quiver fellow and a would manage you his piece thus and a would about and about and come you in and come you in rah tah tah would a say bounce would a say and away again would a go and again would a come I shall ne'er see such a fellow

Fal These fellows will do well Master Shallow God keep you Master Silence I will not use many words with you Fare you well gentlemen both I thank you I must a dozen mile to-night Bardolph give the soldiers coats 311

Shal Sir John the Lord bless you! God prosper your affairs! God send us peace! At your return visit our house let our old acquaintance be renewed peradventure I will with ye to the court

Fal Fore God I would you would Master Shallow

Shal Go to I have spoke at a word God keep you 320

Fal Fare you well gentle gentlemen [*Exeunt JUSTICES*] On Bardolph lead the men a way [*Exeunt BARDOLPH RECRUITS &c*] As I return, I will fetch off these justices I do see the bottom of Justice Shallow Lord Lord how subject we old men are to this vice of lying! This same starved justice hath done nothing but prate to me of the wildness of his youth and the fears he hath done about Turnbull Street and every third

word a lie, duer paid to the hearer than the Turk's tribute I do remember him at Clement's Inn like a man made after supper of a cheese-paring when a was naked, he was for all the world, like a forked radish, with a head fantastically carved upon it with a knife a was so forlorn that his dimensions to any thick sight were invincible a' was the very genius of famine yet lecherous as a monkey, and the whores called him mandrake a' came ever in the rearward of the fashion and sung those tunes to the over-scuted huswives that he heard the carmen whistle, and sw are they were his fancies or his good nights And now is this Vice's dagger become a squire, and talks as familiarly of John a Gaunt as if he had been sworn brother to him, and I'll be sworn a' ne'er saw him but once in the Tilt yard and then he burst his head for crowding among the marshal's men I saw it, and told John a Gaunt he beat his own name, for you might have thrust him and all his apparel into an eel skin the case of a treble hautboy was a mansion for him a court and now has he land and beefs Well, I'll be acquainted with him if I return and it shall go hard but I will make him a philosopher's two stones to me if the young dace be a bait for the old pike I see no reason in the law of nature but I may snap at him Let time shape, and there an end [Exit

And dash themselves to pieces

Enter a MESSENGER

Hast Now, what news?
Mess West of this forest scarcely off a mile,
 In goodly form comes on the enemy, 20
 And by the ground they hide I judge their number
 Upon or near the rate of thirty thousand
Mowb The just proportion that we gave them
 out
 Let us sway on and face them in the field
Arch What well appointed leader fronts us
 here?

Enter WESTMORELAND

Mowb I think it is my Lord of Westmoreland
West Health and fair greeting from our general,
 The Prince Lord John and Duke of Lancaster
Arch Say on, my Lord of Westmoreland, in
 peace

What doth concern your coming?
West Then my lord, 30
 Unto your Grace do I in chief address
 The substance of my speech If that rebellion
 Came like itself, in base and abject routs
 Led on by bloody youth, guarded with rags,
 And countenanced by boys and beggary,
 I say, if damn'd commotion so appear'd
 In his true native and most proper shape
 You reverend father, and these noble lords
 Had not been here to dress the ugly form
 Of base and bloody insurrection 40
 With your fair honours You Lord Archbishop,
 Whose see is by a civil peace maintain'd
 Whose beard the silver hand of peace hath
 touch'd,
 Whose learning and good letters peace hath
 tutor'd
 Whose white investments figure innocence,
 The dove and very blessed spirit of peace
 Wherefore do you so ill translate yourself
 Out of the speech of peace that bears such grace
 Into the harsh and boisterous tongue of war
 Turning your books to graves, your ink to blood,
 Your pens to lances and your tongue divine 50
 To a loud trumpet and a point of war?

Arch Wherefore do I this? so the question
 stands

Briefly to this end we are all diseased,
 And with our surfeiting and wanton hours
 Have brought ourselves into a burning fever,
 And we must bleed for it of which disease
 Our late king Richard being infected died
 But my most noble Lord of Westmoreland
 I take not on me here as a physician,

ACT IV

SCENE I *Yorkshire Gaultree Forest*

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK MOWBRAY,
 HASTINGS, and others*

Arch What is this forest call'd?

Hast 'Tis Gaultree Forest, and 't shall please
 your Grace

Arch Here stand my lords, and send discover-
 ers forth

To know the numbers of our enemies

Hast We have sent forth already

Arch 'Tis well done

My friends and brethren in these great affairs,

I must acquaint you that I have received

New-dated letters from Northumberland,

Their cold intent tenour, and substance, thus

Here doth he wish his person with such powers

As might hold sortance with his quality 11

The which he could not levy, whereupon

He is retired to ripe his growing fortunes,

To Scotland and concludes in hearty prayers

That your attempts may overcome the hazard

And fearful meeting of their opposite

Mowb Thus do the hopes we have in him
 touch ground

Nor do I as an enemy to peace
 Troop in the thron's of military men
 But rather show awhile like fearful war
 To diet rank minds sick of happiness
 And purge the obstructions which begin to stop
 Our very veins of life. Hear me more plainly
 I have in equal balance justly weigh'd
 What wrongs our arms may do what wrongs we
 suffer

And find our griefs heavier than our offences
 We see which way the stream of time doth run
 And are enforced from our most quiet there 71
 By the rough torrent of occasion
 And have the summary of all our griefs
 When time shall serve to show in articles
 Which long ere this we offer'd to the King
 And might by no suit gain our audience
 When we are wrong'd and would unfold our
 griefs

We are denied access unto his person
 Even by those men that most have done us
 wrong

The dangers of the days but newly gone 80
 Whose memory is written on the earth
 With yet appearing blood and the examples
 Of every minute's instance present now
 Hath put us in these ill beseeching arms
 Not to break peace or any branch of it
 But to establish here a peace indeed
 Concurring both in name and quality

West. When ever yet was your appeal denied?
 Wherein have you been galled by the King?
 What peer hath been suborn'd to grate on you 90
 That you should seal this lawless bloody book
 Of forged rebellion with a seal divine
 And consecrate commotion's bitter edge?

Arch. My brother general the commonwealth
 To brother born an household cruelty
 I make my quarrel in particular

West. There is no need of any such redress
 Or if there were it not belongs to you

Mowb. Why not to him in part and to us all 100
 That feel the bruises of the days before
 And suffer the condition of these times
 To lay a heavy and unequal hand
 Upon our honours?

West. O my good Lord Mowbray
 Construe the times to their necessities
 And you shall say indeed it is the time
 And not the King that doth you injuries
 Yet for your part it not appears to me
 Either from the King or in the present time
 That you should have an inch of any ground
 To build a grief on were you not restored 110
 To all the Duke of Norfolk's snories
 Your noble and right well remember'd father's?

Mowb. What thing in honour had my father
 lost

That need to be revived and breathed in me?
 The King that loved him as the state stood
 then

Was force perforce compell'd to banish him
 And then that Henry Bolingbroke and he
 Being mounted and both roused in their seats
 Their neighing couriers daring of the spur 119
 Their armed staves in charge their beavers
 down

Their eyes of fire sparking through sights of
 steel

And the loud trumpet blowing them together
 Then then when there was nothing could have
 stay'd

My father from the breast of Bolingbroke
 O when the King did throw his warder down
 His own life hung upon the staff he threw
 Then threw he down himself and all their lives
 That by indictment and by dint of sword
 Have since miscarried under Bolingbroke

West. You speak Lord Mowbray now you 130
 know not what

The Earl of Hereford was reputed then
 In England the most valiant gentleman
 Who knows on whom Fortune would then have
 smiled?

But if your father had been victor there
 He ne'er had borne it out of Coventry
 For all the country in a general voice
 Cried hate upon him and all their prayers and
 love

Were set on Hereford whom they doted on
 And bless'd and graced indeed more than the
 King

But this is mere digression from my purpose 140
 Here come I from our princely general
 To know your griefs to tell you from his Grace
 That he will give you audience and wherein
 It shall appear that your demands are just
 You shall enjoy them everything set off
 That might so much as think you enemies

Mowb. But he hath forced us to compel this
 offer

And it proceeds from policy not love

West. Mowbray you overween to take it so
 This offer comes from mercy not from fear 150
 For lo' within a ken our arms lies
 Upon mine honour all too confident
 To give admittance to a thought of fear
 Our battle is more full of names than yours
 Our men more perfect in the use of arms
 Our armour all as strong our cause the best
 Then reason will our hearts should be as good
 Say you not then our offer is compell'd

Mowb Well by my will we shall admit no
parley
West That argues but the shame of your of-
fence 160

A rotten case abides no handling
Hast Hath the Prince John a full commission
In very ample virtue of his father
To hear and absolutely to determine
Of what conditions we shall stand upon?

West That is intended in the general's name
I muse you make so slight a question

Arch Then take, my Lord of Westmoreland,
this schedule,

For this contains our general grievances
Each several article herein redress'd, 170
All members of our cause, both here and hence,
That are insinew'd to this action

Acquitted by a true substantial form
And present execution of our wills
To us and to our purposes confined,
We come within our awful banks again
And knit our powers to the arm of peace

West This will I show the general. Please you,
lords

In sight of both our battles we may meet
And either end in peace, which God so frame! 180
Or to the place of difference call the swords
Which must decide it

Arch My lord we will do so

[*Exit WESTMORELAND*]

Mowb There is a thing within my bosom tells
me

That no conditions of our peace can stand
Hast Fear you not that if we can make our
peace

Upon such large terms and so absolute
As our conditions shall consist upon
Our peace shall stand as firm as rocky mountains

Mowb Yea but our valuation shall be such
That every slight and false-derived cause, 190
Yea every idle, nice and wanton reason
Shall to the King taste of this action,

That were our royal faith's martyrs in love,
We shall be winnow'd with so rough a wind
That even our corn shall seem as light as chaff
And good from bad find no partition

Arch No no my lord Note thus the King is
weary

Of dainty and such picking grievances
For he hath found to end one doubt by death
Revises two greater in the heirs of life 200
And therefore will he wipe his tables clean
And keep no tell tale to his memory
That may repeat and history his loss
To new remembrance for full well he knows
He cannot so precisely weed this land

As his misdoubts present occasion
His foes are so enrooted with his friends
That, plucking to unfix an enemy
He doth unfasten so and shake a friend
So that this land like an offensive wife 210
That hath enraged him on to offer strokes,
As he is striking holds his infant up
And hangs resolved correction in the arm
That was uprear'd to execution
Hast Besides the King hath wasted all his rods
On late offenders that he now doth lack
The very instruments of chastisement
So that his power like to a fangless lion
May offer but not hold

Arch 'Tis very true
And therefore be assured my good Lord Mar-
shal
If we do now make our atonement well 221
Our peace will like a broken limb united,
Grow stronger for the breaking

Mowb Be it so
Here is return'd my Lord of Westmoreland

[*Re enter WESTMORELAND*]

West The Prince is here at hand pleaseth your
lordship
To meet his Grace just distance 'tween our
armies

Mowb Your Grace of York in God's name
then set forward

Arch Before and greet his Grace my lord we
come [*Exeunt*]

SCENE II *Another part of the forest*

Enter from one side MOWBRAY attended, after-
wards the ARCHBISHOP HASTINGS and others
from the other side PRINCE JOHN OF LANCASTER
and WESTMORELAND, Officers, and others with
them

Lan You are well encounter'd here my cousin
Mowbray

Good day to you gentle Lord Archbishop
And so to you Lord Hastings and to all
My Lord of York it better show'd with you
When that your flock assembled by the bell
Encircled you to hear with reverence
Your exposition on the holy text
Than now to see you here an iron man
Cheering a rout of rebels with your drum

Turning the Word to sword and life to death 211
That man that sits within a monarch's heart
And ripens in the sunshine of his favour
Would he abuse the countenance of the King
Alack what mischiefs might be set abroad
In shadow of such greatness! With you Lord
Bishop

It is even so Who hath not heard it spoken
 How deep you were within the books of God?
 To us the speaker in His parliament
 To us the imagined voice of God himself
 The very openet and intelligencer 20
 Between the grace the sanctities of Heaven
 And our dull workings O who shall believe
 But you misuse the reverence of your place
 Employ the countenance and grace of Heaven
 As a false favourite doth his prince's name
 In deeds dishonourable? You have taken up
 Under the counterfeited zeal of God
 The subjects of His substitute my father
 And both against the peace of Heaven and him
 Have here up-swarm'd them

Arch. Good my Lord of Lancaster 30
 I am not here against your father's peace
 But as I told my Lord of Westmoreland
 The time misorder doth in common sense
 Crowd us and crush us to this monstrous form
 To hold our safety up I sent your Grace
 The parcels and particulars of our grief
 The which hath been with scorn shov'd from the
 court

Whereon this Hydra son of war is born
 Whose dangerous eyes may well be charm'd
 asleep

With grant of our most just and right desires 40
 And true obedience of this madness cure I
 Stoop ravelly to the foot of majesty

Mor. If not we ready are to try our fortunes
 To the last man

Hast. And though we here fall down,
 We have supplies to second our attempt
 If they miscarry theirs shall second them
 And so success or mischief shall be born
 And heir from heir shall hold this quarrel up
 Whiles England shall have generation

Lan. You are too shallow Hastings much too
 shallow 50

To sound the bottom of the after times
West. Pleaseth your Grace to answer them
 directly

How far forth you do like their articles

Lan. I like them all and do allow them well
 And swear here by the honour of my blood
 My father's purposes have been mistook
 And some about him have too lavishly
 Wasted his meaning and authority
 My lord these griefs shall be with speed re-
 dress'd

Upon my soul they shall If this may please you
 Discharge your powers unto their several coun-
 ties

As we will ours and here between the armies
 Let's drink together friendly and embrace,

That all their eyes may bear those tokens home
 Of our restored love and amity

Arch. I take your princely word for these re-
 dresses

Lan. I give it you and will maintain my word
 And thereupon I drink unto your Grace
Hast. Go captain and deliver to the army 60
 This news of peace let them have pay and part
 I know it will well please them Hie thee cap-
 tain [Exit Officer]

Arch. To you my noble Lord of Westmore-
 land

West. I pledge your Grace and if you knew
 what pains

I have bestow'd to breed this present peace
 You would drink freely but my love to ye
 Shall show itself more openly hereafter

Arch. I do not doubt you

West. I am glad of it
 Health to my lord and gentle cousin Mowbray

Mor. You wish me health in very happy
 season

For I am on the sudden something ill 80

Arch. Against all chances men are ever merry
 But heaviness foreruns the good event

West. Therefore be merry coz since sudden
 sorrow

Serves to say thus some good thing comes to-
 morrow

Arch. Believe me I am passing light in spirit

Mor. So much the worse, if your own rule be
 true

Shouts within

Lan. The word of peace is render'd hark how
 they shout!

Mor. Thus had been cheerful after victory

Arch. A peace is of the nature of a conquest
 For then both parties nobly are subdued 90
 And neither party loser

Lan. Go my lord
 And let our army be discharged too

[Exit WESTMORELAND]
 And good my lord so please you let our trains
 March by us that we may peruse the men
 We should have coped withal

Arch. Go good Lord Hastings
 And ere they be dismiss'd let them march by

[Exit HASTINGS]
Lan. I trust lords we shall lie to-night to-
 gether

Re-enter WESTMORELAND

Now cousin wherefore stands our army still?

West. The leaders having charge from you to
 stand

Will not go off until they hear you speak 100

Lan They know their duties

Re enter HASTINGS

Hast My lord our army is dispersed already
Like youthful steers unyoked, they take their
courses

East, west north, south, or, like a school broke
up

Each hurries toward his home and sporting place

West Good tidings, my Lord Hastings, for the
which

I do arrest thee traitor, of high treason

And you Lord Archbishop and you, Lord

Mowbray,

Of capital treason I attach you both

Mowb Is this proceeding just and honourable?

West Is your assembly so? 111

Arch Will you thus break your faith?

Lan I pawn'd thee none

I promised you redress of these same grievances

Whereof you did complain which by mine
honour,

I will perform with a most Christian care

But for you, rebels look to taste the due

Meet for rebellion and such acts as yours

Most shallowly did you these arms commence,

Fondly brought here and foolishly sent hence

Strike up our drums pursue the scatter'd stray 121

God and not we, hath safely fought to day

Some guard these traitors to the block of death,

Treason's true bed and yielder up of breath

[Exeunt]

SCENE III *Another part of the forest*

Alarum Excursions Enter FALSTAFF

and COLEVILLE, meeting

Fal What's your name, sir? of what condition
are you and of what place, I pray?

Cole I am a knight, sir, and my name is Cole
ville of the Dale

Fal Well, then Coleville is your name a
knight is your degree, and your place the Dale
Coleville shall be still your name a traitor your
degree and the dungeon your place a place deep
enough so shall you be still Coleville of the
Dale 10

Cole Are not you Sir John Falstaff?

Fal As good a man as he sir, whoe'er I am
Do ye yield sir? or shall I sweat for you? If I
do sweat, they are the drops of thy lovers and
they weep for thy death therefore rouse up fear
and trembling, and do observance to my mercy

Cole I think you are Sir John Falstaff, and in
that thought yield me 19

Fal I have a whole school of tongues in this
belly of mine, and not a tongue of them all

speaks any other word but my name An I had
but a belly of any indifferency, I were simply
the most active fellow in Europe my womb,
my womb my womb, undoes me Here comes
our general

*Enter PRINCE JOHN OF LANCASTER, WESTMORE
LAND, BLUNT, and others*

Lan The heat is past, follow no further now
Call in the powers, good cousin Westmoreland

[Exit WESTMORELAND]

Now, Falstaff, where have you been all this
while?

When everything is ended, then you come 30

These tardy tricks of yours will on my life

One time or other break some gallows back

Fal I would be sorry, my lord, but it should

be thus I never knew yet but rebuke and check

was the reward of valour Do you thin! me a

swallow an arrow or a bullet? have I in my

poor and old motion the expedition of thought?

I have speeded hither with the very extremest

inch of possibility, I have foundered nine score

and odd posts and here, travel tainted as I am,

have, in my pure and immaculate valour taken

Sir John Coleville of the Dale a most furious

knight and valorous enemy But what of that?

he saw me, and yielded, that I may justly say,

with the hook-nosed fellow of Rome I came,

I saw and overcame "

Lan It was more of his courtesy than your de-
serving

Fal I know not here he is and here I yield

him and I beseech your Grace let it be booked

with the rest of this day's deeds or by the Lord,

I will have it in a particular ballad else with

mine own picture on the top on't Coleville

issing my foot to the which course if I be

enforced if you do not all show like gilt two-

pences to me and I in the clear sky of fame

o'er shine you as much as the full moon doth the

cinders of the element, which show like pins'

heads to her, believe not the word of the noble

therefore let me have right and let desert

mount 61

Lan Thine's too heavy to mount

Fal Let it shine then

Lan Thine's too thiel to shine

Fal Let it do something my good lord that

may do me good and call it what you will

Lan Is thy name Coleville?

Cole It is my lord

Lan A famous rebel art thou Coleville

Fal And a famous true subject took him 70

Cole I am my lord but as my betters are

That led me hither had they been ruled by me,

You should have won them dearer than you have
Fal I know not how they sold themselves but
 thou like a kind fellow gavest thyself away
 gratis and I thank thee for thee

Re-enter WESTMORELAND

Lan Now have you left pursuit?
West Retreat is made and execution stay'd
Lan Sent Coleville with his confederates
 To York to present execution 80
Blunt lead him hence and see you guard him
 sure

[Exit BLUNT and others with COLEVILLE]
 And now dispatch we toward the court my
 lords

I hear the King my father is sore sick
 Our news shall go before us to his Majesty
 Which cousin you shall bear to comfort him
 And we with sober speed will follow you

Fal My lord I beseech you give me leave to
 go
 Through Gloucestershire and when you come
 to court

Stand my good lord pray in your good report

Lan Fare you well Falstaff I in my condi-
 tion 90
 Shall better speak of you than you deserve

[Exit all but FALSTAFF]

Fal I would you had but the wit twere
 better than your dukedom Good faith this
 ame young sober blooded boy doth not love
 me nor a man cannot make him laugh but
 that's no marvel he drinks no wine There's
 never none of these demure boys come to any
 proof for thin drink doth so over cool their
 blood and making many fish meals that they
 fall into a kind of male green sickness and then
 when they marry they get wenches they are
 generally fools and cowards which some of us
 should be too but for inflammation A good
 sherris sack hath a two-fold operation in it It
 ascends me into the brain dries me there all the
 foolish and dull and crudy vapours which environ
 it makes it apprehensive quick forgetive full
 of nimble fiery and delectable shapes which
 delivered over to the voice the tongue which
 is the birth becomes excellent wit The second
 property of your excellent sherris is the warming
 of the blood which before cold and settled
 left the liver white and pale which is the badge
 of pusillanimity and cowardice but the sherris
 warms it and makes it course from the inwards
 to the parts extreme it illumineth the face
 which as a beacon gives warning to all the rest
 of this little kingdom man to arm and then
 the val commoners and inland petty spirits

muster me all to their captain, the heart who,
 great and puffed up with this retinue, doth any
 deed of courage and this valour comes of sherris
 So that skill in the weapon is nothing without
 sack for that sets it a work and learning a mere
 hoard of gold kept by a devil till sack com-
 mences it and sets it in act and use Hereof
 comes it that Prince Harry is valiant for the
 cold blood he did naturally inherit of his father
 he hath like lean sterile and bare land, manured
 husbanded and tilled with excellent endeavour
 of drinking good and good store of fertile sherris
 that he is become very hot and valiant If I
 had a thousand sons the first humane principle I
 would teach them should be to forswear thin
 potations and to addict themselves to sack

Enter BARDOLPH

How now Bardolph?

Bard The army is discharged all and gone

Fal Let them go I'll through Gloucester
 shire and there will I visit Master Robert Shal-
 low esquire I have him already temperin'
 between my finger and my thumb and shortly
 will I seal with him Come away [Exit]

SCENE IV Westminster the Jerusalem Chamber

*Enter the KING the PRINCES THOMAS OF CLARENCE
 and HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER WARWICK and
 others*

King Now lords if God doth give successful
 end

To this debate that bleedeth at our doors
 We will our youth lead on to higher fields
 And draw no swords but what are sanctified
 Our navy in address d our power collected
 Our substitutes in absence well invested
 And everything lies level to our wish
 Only we want a little personal strength
 And pause us till these rebels now afoot
 Come underneath the yoke of government 10

War Both which we doubt not but your
 Majesty

Shall soon enjoy

King Humphrey my son of Gloucester
 Where is the Prince your brother?

Glou I think he's gone to hunt my lord at
 Windsor

King And how accompanied?

Glou I do not know my lord

King Is not his brother Thomas of Clarence
 with him?

Glou No my good lord he is in presence here

Clar What would my lord and father?

King Nothing but well to thee Thomas of
 Clarence

How chance thou art not with the Prince thy
brother? 20

He loves thee and thou dost neglect him,

Thomas,

Thou hast a better place in his affection
Than all thy brothers cherish it my boy,
And noble offices thou mayst effect
Of mediation after I am dead,
Between his greatness and thy other brethren
Therefore omit him not, blunt not his love,
Nor lose the good advantage of his grace
By seeming cold or careless of his will,
For he is gracious, if he be observed 30
He hath a tear for pity and a hand
Open as day for melting charity
Yet notwithstanding being incensed, he is flint,
As humorous as winter and as sudden
As flaws congealed in the spring of day
His temper, therefore, must be well observed
Chide him for faults and do it reverently,
When you perceive his blood inclined to mirth
But, being moody, give him line and scope,
Till that his passions like a whale on ground, 40
Confound themselves with working Learn this

Thomas,

And thou shalt prove a shelter to thy friends,
A hoop of gold to bind thy brothers in,
That the united vessel of their blood,
Mingled with venom of suggestion—

As force perforce, the age will pour it in—
Shall never leak, though it do work as strong
As aconitum or rash gunpowder

Clar I shall observe him with all care and love

King Why art thou not at Windsor with him, 50
Thomas?

Clar He is not there to-day, he dines in
London

King And how accompanied? canst thou tell
that?

Clar With Poinz and other his continual fol-
lowers

King Most subject is the fattest soil to weeds,
And he, the noble image of my youth,
Is overspread with them therefore my grief
Stretches itself beyond the hour of death
The blood weeps from my heart when I do shape
In forms imaginary the unguided days
And rotten times that you shall look upon 60

When I am sleeping with my ancestors
For when his headstrong riot hath no curb
When rage and hot blood are his counsellors
When means and lavish manners meet together,
O, with what wings shall his affections fly
Towards fronting peril and opposed decay!

War My gracious lord, you look beyond him
quite

The Prince but studies his companions
Like a strange tongue wherein to gain the lan-
guage

'Tis needful that the most immodest word 70
Be look'd upon and learn'd, which once attain'd,
Your Highness I nows comes to no further use
But to be known and hated So like gross terms,
The Prince will in the perfectness of time
Cast off his followers, and their memory
Shall as a pattern or a measure live,
By which his Grace must mete the lives of others,
Turning past evils to advantages

King 'Tis se'dom when the bee doth leave her
comb

In the dead carrion

Enter WESTMORELAND

Who's here? Westmoreland? 80

West Health to my sovereign, and new happi-
ness

Added to that that I am to deliver!

Prince John your son doth kiss your Grace's
hand

Mowbray, the Bishop Scroop Hastings and all
Are brought to the correction of your law
There is not now a rebel sword unsheathed,
But Peace puts forth her olive everywhere
The manner how this action hath been borne
Here at more leisure may your Highness read,
With every course in his particular 90

King O Westmoreland thou art a summer bird
Which ever in the haunch of winter sings
The lifting up of day

Enter HARCOURT

Look here's more news

Har From enemies heaven keep your Majesty,
And when they stand against you may they fall
As those that I am come to tell you of!
The Earl Northumberland and the Lord Bar-
dolph,

With a great power of English and of Scots,
Are by the sheriff of Yorkshire overthrow'n
The manner and true order of the fight 100
This packet please it you contains at large

King And wherefore should these good news
make me sick?

Will Fortune never come with both hands full
But write her fair words still in foulest letters?
She either gives a stomach and no food
Such are the poor in health or else a feast
And takes away the stomach such are the rich,
That have abundance and enjoy it not
I should rejoice now at this happy news
And now my sight fails and my brain is giddy
O me! come near me now I am much ill

Glou Comfort your Majesty!

Clar O my royal father!

Hest My sovereign lord, cheer up yourself
look up

War Be patient Princes you do know these
fits

Are with his Highness very ordinary
Stand from him give him air he'll straight be
well

Clir No no he cannot long hold out these
pangs

The incessant care and labour of his mind
Hath wrought the mure that should confine it in
So thin that life looks through and will break out

Glou The people fear me for they do observe
Unfather'd heirs and loathly births of nature
The seasons change their manners as the year
Had found some months asleep and leaped them
over

Clar The river hath thrice flow'd no ebb be-
tween

And the old folk time's doctress chronicles
Say it did so a little time before

That our great grandsire Edward sick'd and
died

War Speak lower Princes for the king re-
covers

Glou This apoplexy will certain be his end 130
King I pray you take me up and bear me
hence

Into some other chamber softly pray [*Exeunt*]

SCENE V Another chamber

The king lying on a bed CLARENCE, GLOUCESTER
WARWICK and others in attendance

King Let there be no noise made my gentle
friends

Unless some dull and favourable hand

Will whisper music to my weary spirit

War Call for the music in the other room

King Set me the crown upon my pillow here

Clar His eye is hollow and he changes much

War Less noise less noise!

Enter PRINCE HENRY

Prince Who saw the Duke of Clarence?

Clar I am here brother full of heaviness

Prince How now! ran within doors and none
abroad!

How doth the king?

Glou Exceeding ill

Prince Heard he the good news yet?

Tell it him

Glou He alter'd much upon the hearing it

Prince If he be sick with joy he'll recover
without physic

War Not so much noise my lords sweet
prince speak low

The king your father is disposed to sleep

Clar Let us withdraw into the other room

War Will't please your Grace to go along
with us?

Prince No I will sit and watch here by the
king. [*Exeunt all but the Prince* 20

Why doth the crown lie there upon his pillow

Being so troublesome a bedfellow?

O polish'd perturbation! golden care!

That keepst the ports of slumber open wide

To many a watchful night! sleep with it now!

Yet not so sound and half so deeply sweet

As he whose brow with homely biggen bound

Snores out the watch of night O majesty!

When thou dost pinch thy bearer thou dost sit

Like a rich armour worn in heat of day 30

That scalds with safety By his gates of breath

There lies a downy feather which stirs not

Did he suspire that light and weightless down

Perforce must move My gracious lord! my
father!

This sleep is sound indeed this is a sleep

That from this golden rigol hath divorced

So many English kings Thy due from me

Is tears and heavy sorrows of the blood

Which nature love and filial tenderness

Shall O dear father pay thee plenteously 40

My due from thee is this imperial crown

Which as immediate from thy place and blood

Derives itself to me [*Puts on the crown*] Lo here
it sits

Which God shall guard and put the world's
whole strength

Into one giant arm it shall not force

This lineal honour from me this from thee

Will I to mine leave as tis left to me [*Exit*]

King Warwick! Gloucester! Clarence!

*Re-enter WARWICK GLOUCESTER CLARENCE and
the rest*

Clar Doth the king call?

War What would your Majesty? How fares
your Grace? 50

King Why did you leave me here alone my
lords?

Clar We left the Prince my brother here my
liege

Who undertook to sit and watch by you

King The Prince of Wales! Where is he?
let me see him

He is not here

War This door is open he is gone this way

Glou He came not through the chamber where
we stay'd

King Where is the crown? who took it from my pillow?

War When we withdrew my liege, we left it here

King The Prince hath taken it hence go seek him out

60

Is he so hasty that he doth suppose

My sleep my death?

Find him, my Lord of Warwick, chide him hither

[Exit WARWICK]

This part of his conjoints with my disease

And helps to end me See, sons, what things you are!

How quickly nature falls into revolt

When gold becomes her object!

For this the foolish over-careful fathers

Have broke their sleep with thoughts, their brains with care,

Their bones with industry

70

For thus they have engross'd and piled up

The canker'd heaps of strange achieved gold,

For thus they have been thoughtful to invest

Their sons with arts and martial exercises

When like the bee culling from every flower

The virtuous sweets,

Our thighs pack'd with wax, our mouths with honey,

We bring it to the hive and like the bees

Are murdered for our pains This bitter taste

Yield his engrossments to the ending father

80

Re-enter WARWICK

Now where is he that will not stay so long

Till his friend sickness hath determined me?

War My lord, I found the Prince in the next room

Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks,

With such a deep demeanour in great sorrow

That t' ranny, which never quaff'd but blood,

Would by beholding him have wash'd his knife

With gentle eye-drops He is coming hither

King But wherefore did he take away the crown?

Re-enter PRINCE HENRY

Lo where he comes Come hither to me, Harry

Depart the chamber, leave us here along

91

[Exit WARWICK and the rest]

Prince I never thought to hear you speak again

King Thy wish was father, Harry, to that thought

I stay too long by thee, I weary thee

Dost thou so hunger for mine empty chair

That thou wilt needs invest thee with my honours

Before thy hour be ripe? O foolish youth!

Thou seek'st the greatness that will overwhelm thee

Stay but a little, for my cloud of dignity

Is held from falling with so weak a wind

100

That it will quickly drop my day is dim

Thou hast stolen that which after some few hours

Were thine without offense and at my death

Thou hast seal'd up my expectation

Thy life did manifest thou lov'd'st me not,

And thou wilt have me die assured of it

Thou hid'st a thousand daggers in thy thoughts,

Which thou hast whetted on thy stony heart

To stab at half an hour of my life

109

What! canst thou not forbear me half an hour?

Then get thee gone and dig my grave thyself,

And bid the merry bells ring to thine ear

That thou art crown'd not that I am dead

Let all the tears that should bedew my hearse

Be drops of balm to sanctify thy head

Only compound me with forgotten dust

Give that which gave thee life unto the worms

Pluck down my officers break my decrees

For now a time is come to mock at form

Harry the Fifth is crown'd up vanity!

110

Down royal state! all you sage counsellors, hence!

And to the English court assemble now,

From every region, apes of idleness!

Now neighbour confines, purge you of your scum

Have you a ruffian that will swear drink, dance,

Revel the night rob, murder and commit

The oldest sins the newest kind of ways?

Be happy he will trouble you no more,

England shall double gild his treble guilt

England shall give him office honour might

110

For the fifth Harry from curb'd license plucks

The muzzle of restraint and the wild dog

Shall flesh his tooth on every innocent

O my poor kingdom sick with civil blows!

When that my care could not withhold thy riots,

What wilt thou do when riots is thy care?

O thou wilt be a wilderness again

Peopled with wolves thy old inhabitants!

Prince O, pardon me, my liege! but for my tears

The most impediments unto my speech

110

I had forestall'd this dear and deep rebuke

Ere you with grief had spoke and I had heard

The course of it so far There is your crown,

And he that wears the crown immortally

Long guard it yours! If I affect it more

Than as your honour and as your renown

Let me no more from this obedience rise

Which my most inward, true and dutiful spirit

Teacheth this prostrate and exterior bending
 God witness with me when I here came in 150
 And found no course of breath within your Majesty

How could it struck my heart! If I do feign
 O let me in my present wildness die
 And never live to show the incredulous world
 The noble change that I have purposed!
 Comin to look on you *thinking you dead*
 And dead almost my liege to think you were
 I spake unto this crown as having sense
 And thus upbraided it The care on thee de-
 pend ng

Hath fed upon the body of my father 160
 Therefore thou best of gold art worst of gold
 Other less fine in carat is more precious
 Preserving life in medicine potable
 But thou most fine most honour'd most re-
 nown'd
 Hast eat thy bearer up Thus my most royal
 liege

Accusing it I put it on my head
 To try with it as with an enemy
 That had before my face murder'd my father
 The quarrel of a true inheritor
 But if it did infect my blood with joy 170
 Or swell my thougts with any strain of pride
 If any rebel or vain spirit of mine
 Did with the least affection of a welcome
 Give entertainment to the might of it
 Let God for ever keep it from my head
 And make me as the poorest vassal is
 That doth with awe and terror kneel to it!

King O my son
 God put it in thy mind to take it hence
 That thou might'st win the more thy father's
 love 180

Pleading so wisely in excuse of it!
 Come hither Harry sit thou by my bed
 And hear I think the very latest counsel
 That ever I shall breathe God knows my son
 By what by paths and indirect crook'd ways
 I met this crown and I myself know well
 How troublesome it sat upon my head
 To thee it shall descend with better quiet
 Better opinion better confirmation
 For all the toil of the achievement goes 190
 With me into the earth It seem'd in me
 But as an honour snatch'd with boisterous
 hand

And I had many living to upbraid
 My gain of it by their assistances
 Which daily grew to quarrel and to bloodshed
 Wounding supposed peace all these bold fears
 Thou see with peril I have answered
 For all my reign hath been but as a scene

Acting that argument and now my death
 Changes the mode for what in me was pur-
 chased 200

Falls upon thee in a more fairer sort
 So thou the garland wear'st successively
 Yet though thou stand'st more sure than I could
 do
 Thou art not firm enough since griefs are green
 And all my friends which thou must make thy
 friends

Have but their stings and teeth newly enout
 By whose fell workings I was first advanced
 And by whose power I well might lodge a fear
 To be again displaced which to avoid
 I cut them off and had a purpose now 210
 To lead out many to the Holy Land
 Lest rest and lying still might make them lool
 Too near unto my state Therefore my Harry
 Be it thy course to busy giddy minds
 With foreign quarrels that action hence borne
 out

May waste the memory of the former days
 More would I but my lungs are wasted so
 That strength of speech is utterly denied me
 How I came by the crown O God forgive
 And grant it may with thee in true peace live!
Prince My gracious liege 215
 You won it worse it kept it gave it me
 Then plain and right must my possession be
 Which I with more than with a common pain
 Gainst all the world will rightfully maintain

Enter LORD JOHN OF LANCASTER

King Lo! look here comes my John of
 Lancaster

Lan Health peace and happiness to my royal
 father!

King Thou bring'st me happiness and peace
 son John

But health alack with youthful wines is flown
 From this bare wither'd trunk upon thy sight
 My worldly business makes a period 231
 Where is my Lord of Warwick?

Prince My Lord of Warwick!

Re-enter WARWICK and others

King Doth any name particular belong
 Unto the lodgings where I first did swoon?

War 'Tis call'd Jerusalem my noble lord

King Laud be to God! even there my life must
 end

It hath been prophesied to me many years
 I should not die but in Jerusalem
 Which vainly I supposed the Holy Land
 But beat me to that chamber there I'll lie 240
 In that Jerusalem shall Harry die [*Exeunt*]

ACT V

SCENE I Gloucestershire Shallow's house

Enter SHALLOW, FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH and PAGE

Shal By cock and pie sir you shall not away to-night What Davy, I say!

Fal You must excuse me Master Robert Shallow

Shal I will not excuse you, you shall not be excused, excuses shall not be admitted, there is no excuse shall serve, you shall not be excused Why Davy!

Enter DAVY

Davy Here, sir 9

Shal Davy, Davy, Davy, Davy let me see Davy, let me see, Davy let me see yea marry William cook bid him come hither Sir John you shall not be excused

Davy Marry, sir thus, those precepts cannot be served and, again sir shall we sow the headland with wheat?

Shal With red wheat Davy But for William cook are there no young pigeons?

Davy Yes, sir Here is now the smith's note for shoeing and plough irons 20

Shal Let it be cast and paid Sir John, you shall not be excused

Davy Now, sir, a new link to the bucket must needs be had and, sir, do you mean to stop any of William's wages about the sack he lost the other day at Hinckley fair?

Shal A' shall answer it Some pigeons Davy a couple of short-legged hens a joint of mutton and any pretty little tiny kickshaws tell William cook 30

Davy Doth the man of war stay all night sir?

Shal Yea Davy I will use him well a friend in the court is better than a penny in purse Use his men well Davy, for they are arrant knaves and will backbite

Davy No worse than they are backbitten sir for they have marvellous foul linen

Shal Well conceited, Davy about thy business Davy 40

Davy I beseech you sir, to countenance William Visor of Woncot against Clement Perkes of the hill

Shal There is many complaints Davy against that Visor that Visor is an arrant knave on my knowledge

Davy I grant your worship that he is a knave, sir but yet, God forbid sir but a knave should have some countenance at his friend's request An honest man, sir, is able to speak for himself

when a knave is not I have served your worship truly sir this eight years and if I cannot once or twice in a quarter bear out a knave against an honest man I have but a very little credit with your worship The knave is mine honest friend, sir therefore I beseech your worship let him be countenanced

Shal Go to I sav he shall have no wrong Look about Davy [Exit DAVY] Where are you Sir John? Come come come off with your boots Give me your hand Master Bardolph

Bird I am glad to see your worship

Shal I thank thee with all my heart kind Master Bardolph and welcome my tall fellow [to the PAGE] Come, Sir John

Fal I'll follow you good Master Robert Shallow [Exit SHALLOW] Bardolph look to our horses [Exit BARDOLPH and PAGE] If I were sawed into quantities I should make four dozen of such bearded hermits staves as Master Shallow It is a wonderful thing to see the sensible coherence of his men's spirits and his they by observing of him do bear themselves like foolish justices he by conversing with them is turned into a justice like serving man their spirits are so married in conjunction with the participation of society that they flock together in consent like so many wild-geese If I had a suit to Master Shallow I would humour his men with the imputation of being near their master if to his men I would curry with Master Shallow that no man could better command his servants It is certain that either wise bearing or ignorant carriage is caught as men take diseases one of another therefore let men take heed of their company I will devise matter enough out of this Shallow to keep Prince Harry in continual laughter the wearing out of six fashions which is four terms or two actions and a shall laugh without interallums O it is much that a lie with a slight oath and a jest with a sad brow will do with a fellow that never had the ache in his shoulders! O you shall see him laugh till his face be like a wet cloak all laid up!

Shal [Within] Sir John!

Fal I come Master Shallow I come Master Shallow [Exit Shallow]

SCENE II Westminster the Palace

Enter WARWICK and the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE, meeting

War How now my Lord Chief Justice whither away?

Ch Just How doth the King?

War Exceeding well his cares are now all ended

Ch Just I hope not dead

War He s walk d the way of nature

And to our purposes he lives no more

Ch Just I would his Majesty had call d me with him

The service that I truly did his life

Hath left me open to all injuries

War Indee I I think the young King loves you not

Ch Just I know he doth not and do arm my self 10

To welcome the condition of the time

Which cannot look more hideously upon me

Than I have drawn it in my fantasy

Enter LANCASTER CLARENCE GLOUCESTER WEST
MORELAND and others

War Here come the heavy issue of dead Harry
O that the living Harry had the temper
Of him the worst of these three gentlemen'

How many nobles then should hold their places

That must strike sail to spirits of vile sort'

Ch Just O God I fear all will be overturn d'

Lan Good morrow cousin Warwick good morrow 20

Glou }
Clar } Good morrow cousin

Lan We meet like men that had forgot to speak

War We do remember but our argument

Is all too heavy to admit much talk

Lan Well peace be with him that hath made us heavy'

Ch Just Peace be with us lest we be heavier'

Glou O good my lord you have lost a friend indeed

And I dare swear you borrow not that face

Of seeming sorrow it is sure your own

Lan Though no man be assured what Grace to find, 30

You stand in coldest expectation

I am the sorrier would twere otherwise

Clar Well you must now speak Sir John Falstaff fa r

Which swims against your stream of quality

Ch Just Sweet Princes what I did I did in honour

Led by the impartial conduct of my soul

And never shall you see that I will beg

A red and forestall d remission

If truth and upright innocency fail me

I'll to the King my master that is dead, 40

And tell him who hath sent me after him

War Here comes the Prince

Enter KING HENRY THE FIFTH attended

Ch Just Good morrow and God save your Majesty'

King This new and gorgeous garment majesty

Sits not so easy on me as you think

Brothers you mix your sadness with some fear

This is the English not the Turkish court

Not Amurath an Amurath succeeds

But Harry Harry Yet be sad good brothers

For by my faith it very well becomes you 50

Sorrow so royally in you appears

That I will deeply put the fashion on

And wear it in my heart why then be sad

But entertain no more of it good brothers

Than a joint burden laid upon us all

For me by heaven I bid you be assured

I'll be your father and your brother too

Let me but bear your love I'll bear your cares

Yet weep that Harry s dead and so will I

But Harry lives that shall convert those tears 60

By number into hours of happiness

Princes We hope no other from your Majesty

King You all look strangely on me and you most

You are I think assured I love you not

Ch Just I am assured if I be measured rightly

Your Majesty hath no just cause to hate me

King No'

How might a prince of my great hopes forget

So great indignities you laid upon me? 69

What rate rebuke and roughly send to prison

The immediate heir of England? Was this easy?

May this be wash d in Lethe and forgotten?

Ch Just I then did use the person of your father

The image of his power lay then in me

And in the administration of his law

Whiles I was busy for the commonwealth,

Your Highness pleased to forget my place

The majesty and power of law and justice

The image of the King whom I presented

And struck me in my very seat of judgement 80

Whereon as an offender to your father

I gave bold way to my authority

And did commit you If the deed were ill

Be you contented wearing now the garland

To have a son set your decrees at nought

To pluck down justice from your awful bench

To trip the course of law and blunt the sword

That guards the peace and safety of your person

Nay more to spurn at your most royal image

And mock your workings in a second body 90

Question your royal thoughts make the case

your

Be now the father and propose a son,
 Hear your own dignity so much profaned
 See your most dreadful laws so loosely slighted,
 Behold yourself so by a son disdain'd,
 And then imagine me taking your part
 And in your power soft silencing your son
 After this cold consideration, sentence me,
 And as you are a king, speak in your state
 What I have done that misbecame my place, 100
 My person or my liege's sovereignty

King You are right, Justice, and you weigh
 this well,

Therefore still bear the balance and the sword
 And I do wish your honours may increase,
 Till you do live to see a son of mine
 Offend you and obey you, as I did
 So shall I live to speak my father's words
 'Happy am I, that have a man so bold,
 That dares do justice on my proper son,
 And not less happy, having such a son, 110
 That would deliver up his greatness so
 Into the hands of justice' You did commit me
 For which, I do commit into your hand
 The unstained sword that you have used to bear,
 With this remembrance that you use the same
 With the like bold, just and impartial spirit
 As you have done 'gainst me There is my hand
 You shall be as a father to my youth
 My voice shall sound as you do prompt mine ear, 120
 And I will stoop and humble my intents
 To your well practised wise directions
 And Princes all, believe me I beseech you,
 My father is gone wild into his grave,
 For in his tomb lie my affections
 And with his spirit sadly I survive,
 To mock the expectation of the world,
 To frustrate prophecies and to raze out
 Rotten opinion who hath writ me down
 After my seeming The tide of blood in me
 Hath proudly flow'd in vanity till now 130
 Now doth it turn and ebb back to the sea,
 Where it shall mingle with the state of floods
 And flow henceforth in formal majesty
 Now call we our high court of parliament
 And let us choose such limbs of noble counsel,
 That the great body of our state may go
 In equal rank with the best govern'd nation
 That war, or peace or both at once, may be
 As things acquainted and familiar to us
 In which you father, shall have foremost hand
 Our coronation done we will accite 141
 As I before remember'd all our state
 And God consigning to my good intents
 No prince nor peer shall have just cause to say
 God shorten Harry's happy life one day' [Exeunt

SCENE III Gloucestershire Shallow's
 orchard

Enter FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, SILENCE DAVY BARDOLPH, and the PAGE

Shal Nay, you shall see my orchard, where
 in an arbour we will eat a last year's pippin
 of my own grafting, with a dish of caraways,
 and so forth come cousin Silence and then to bed

Fal Fore God, you have here a goodly
 dwelling and a rich

Shal Barren, barren barren, beggars all
 beggars all, Sir John marry good air Spread
 Davy spread Davy well said Davy 10

Fal Thus Davy serves you for good uses he
 is your serving man and your husband

Shal A good varlet, a good varlet a very good
 varlet Sir John by the mass I have drunk too
 much sack at supper a good varlet Now sit
 down now sit down come cousin

Sil Ah sirrah! quoth a we shall [*Singing*]
 'Do nothing but eat and make good cheer
 And praise God for the merry year,
 When flesh is cheap and females dear, 20
 And lusty lads roam here and there

So merrily,

And ever among so merrily

Fal There's a merry heart! Good Master

Silence I'll give you a health for that anon

Shal Give Master Bardolph some wine

Davy

Davy Sweet sir, sit I'll be with you anon
 most sweet sir, sit Master page, good master
 page sit Proface! What you want in meat,
 we'll have in drink but you must bear the
 heart's all [*Exit*]

Shal Be merry, Master Bardolph and, my
 little soldier there be merry

Sil [*Singing*] "Be merry be merry, my wife
 has all,

For women are shrews both short and tall

'Tis merry in hall when beards wag all,

And welcome merry Shrove tide

Be merry be merry

Fal I did not think Master Silence had been a
 man of this mettle 41

Sil Who? I have been merry twice and once
 ere now

Re-enter DAVY

Davy There's a dish of leather coats for you
 [*To BARDOLPH*]

Shal Davy!

Davy Your worship! I'll be with you straight
 [*To BARDOLPH*] A cup of wine sir?

Sil [*Singing*] A cup of wine that's brisk and
fin

And drink unto the leman mine

And a merry heart lives long a 50

Fal Well said Master Silence

Sil And we shall be merry now comes in the
sweet o' the night

Fal Health and long life to you Master Silence

Sil [*Singing*] Fill the cup and let it come

I'll pledge you a mile to the
bottom

Shal Honest Bardolph welcome if thou
wanrest anythin and wilt no call beshrew thy
heart Welcome my little my thief [*to the*
stage] and welcome indeed too I'll drink to
Master Bardolph and to all the cavaleros about
London

Davy I hope to see London once ere I die

Bird An I might see you there Davy—

Shal By the mass you'll crack a quart to-
gether ha! will you not Master Bardolph?

Bird Yea sir in a pottle pot

Shal By God's liggers I thank thee the
knave will tick by thee I can assure thee that

A will not out he is true bred 71

Bard And I'll stick by him sir

Shal Why there poke a king Lack nothing
be merry [*Knocking within*] Look who's at
door there ho! who knocks?

[*Exit DAVID*]

Fal Why now you have done me right
To silence seeing him take off a bumper

Sil [*Singing*] Do me right

And dub me knight

Samuel

Is it not so? 80

Fal 'Tis so

Sil Is it? Why then say an old man can do
somewhat

[*Re-enter DAVID*]

Davy And please your worship there's one

Pistol come from the court with news

Fal From the court! let him come in

[*Enter PISTOL*]

How now Pistol!

Pistol Sir John God save you!

Fal What wind blew you hither Pistol? 89

Pistol Not the ill wind which blows no man to
good Sweet knight thou art now one of the
greatest men in this realm

Sil By r lady I think a be but goodman

Puff of Barson

Pistol Puff!

Puff in thy teeth most recreant coward base!

Sir John I am thy Pistol and thy friend,
And helter skelter have I rode to thee,

And tidings do I bring and lucky joys

And golden times and happy news of price 100

Fal I pray thee now deliver them like a man
of this world

Pistol A fount for the world and workings
base!

I speak of Africa and golden joys

Fal O base Assyrian knight what is thy news?

Let King Cophetua know the truth thereof

Sil [*Singing*] And Robin Hood Scarlet and
John

Pistol Shall dunghill curs confront the Helicons?
And shall good news be baffled?

Then Iistol lay thy head in Furies' lap 110

Shal Honest gentleman I know not your
breeding

Pistol Why then lament therefore

Shal Give me pardon sir if sir you come
with news from the court I take it there's but

two ways either to utter them or to conceal
them I am sir under the king in some au-
thority

Pistol Under which king Besonian? speak, or
die

Shal Under King Harry

Pistol Harry the Fourth? or Fifth?

Shal Harry the Fourth

Pistol A fount for thine office! 121

Sir John thy tender lambkin now is kin

Harry the Fifth's the man I speak the truth

When Pistol lies do this and fig me, like

The brazen Spaniard

Fal What's the old king dead?

Pistol As nail in door the things I speak are just

Fal Away Bardolph! saddle my horse Master

Robert Shallow choose what office thou wilt in

the land 'tis thine Pistol I will double-charge

thee with dignities 131

Bird O joyful day!

I would not take a knighthood for my fortune

Ist What! I do bring good news

Fal Carry Master Silence to bed Master

Shallow my Lord Shallow—be what thou wilt

I am fortune's steward—see on thy boots we'll

ride all night O sweet Pistol! Away Bardolph!

[*Exit BARDOLPH*] Come Pistol utter more to

me and withal devise something to do thyself

good Boot boot Master Shallow I know the

young king is sick for me Let us take any

man's horses the laws of England're at my

commandment Blessed are they that have been

my friends and foe to my Lord Chief Justice

Ist Let's vultures' wife seize on his lungs also!

Where is the life that late I led? say they

Why, here it is, welcome these pleasant days!

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *London a street*

Enter BEADLES, dragging in MISTRESS QUICKLY and DOLL TEARSHEET

Quick No, thou arrant knave, I would to God that I might die, that I might have thee hanged thou hast drawn my shoulder out of joint
1st Bead The constables have delivered her over to me, and she shall have whipping cheer enough, I warrant her there hath been a man or two lately killed about her

Dol Nut hook nut hook you lie Come on, I'll tell thee what thou damned tripe visaged rascal an the child I now go with do miscarry, thou wert better thou hadst struck thy mother, thou paper faced villain

Quick O the Lord, that Sir John were come! he would make this a bloody day to somebody! But I pray God the fruit of her womb miscarry!

1st Bead If it do, you shall have a dozen of cushions again, you have but eleven now Come, I charge you both go with me, for the man is dead that you and Pistol beat amongst you

Dol I'll tell you what, you thin man in a censer, I will have you as soundly swung for this— you blue bottle rogue, you filthy famished correctioner, if you be not swung I'll forswear half kirtles

1st Bead Come, come you she knight-errant, come

Quick O God, that right should thus overcome might! Well of sufferance comes ease

Dol Come, you rogue, come bring me to a justice

30

Quick Ay, come, you starved blood hound

Dol Goodman death Goodman bones!

Quick Thou atomy, thou!

Dol Come, you thin thing some, you rascal

1st Bead Very well

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE V *A public place near Westminster Abbey*

Enter TWO GROOMS strewn rushes

1st Groom More rushes, more rushes

2nd Groom The trumpets have sounded twice

1st Groom 'Twill be two o'clock ere they come from the coronation dispatch, dispatch

[*Exeunt*]

Enter FALSTAFF, SHALLOW PISTOL, BARDOLPH, and PAGE

Fal Stand here by me Master Robert Shallow, I will make the King do you grace I will leer upon him as a comes by and do but mark the countenance that he will give me

Pist God bless thy lungs good knight
Fal Come here, Pistol stand behind me O, if I had had time to have made new liveries, I would have bestowed the thousand pound I borrowed of you But tis no matter, this poor show doth better this doth infer the zeal I had to see him

Shal It doth so

Fal It shows my earnestness of affection—

Shal It doth so

Fal My devotion—

Shal It doth, it doth it doth

20

Fal As it were to ride day and night and not to deliberate not to remember not to have patience to shift me—

Shal It is best certain

Fal But to stand stained with travel and sweating with desire to see him, thinking of nothing else, putting all affairs else in oblivion as if there were nothing else to be done but to see him

29

Pist 'Tis *semper idem* for *obsque hoc nihil est* tis all in every part

Shal 'Tis so indeed

Pist My knight, I will inflame thy noble liver, And make thee rage

Thy Doll and Helen of thy noble thoughts,

Is in base durance and contagious prison,

Haled thither

By most mechanical and dirty hand

Rouse up revenge from ebon den with fell

Alecto's snake

39

For Doll is in Pistol speaks nought but truth

Fal I will deliver her

Shouts within and the trumpets sound

Pist There roar'd the sea, and trumpet-clangor sounds

Enter the KING and his train, the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE among them

Fal God save thy Grace King Hal! my royal Hal!

Pist The heavens thee guard and keep, most royal imp of fame!

Fal God save thee my sweet boy!

King My Lord Chief Justice speak to that vain man

Ch. Just Have you your wits? know you what 'tis you speak?

Fal My King! my Jove! I speak to thee my heart!

50

King I'll now thee not old man fall to thy prayers

How all white hairs become a fool and jester!

I have long dream'd of such a kind of man

So surfeit swell'd so old and so profane

But being awak'd I do despise my dream

Make less thy body hence and more thy grace
 Leave gormandizing know the grave doth gape
 For thee thrice wider than for other men
 Reply not to me with a fool born jest
 Presume not that I am the thing I was 60
 For God doth know so shall the world perceive
 That I have turn'd away my former self
 So will I those that kept me company
 When thou dost hear I am as I have been
 Approach me and thou shalt be as thou wast
 The tutor and the feeder of my riots
 Till then I banish thee on pain of death
 As I have done the rest of my misleaders
 Not to come near our person by ten mile
 For competence of life I will allow you 70
 That lack of means enforce you not to evil
 And as we hear you do reform yourselves
 We will according to your strengths and qual-
 ities

Give you advancement Be it your charge my
 lord,

To see perform'd the tenure of our word

Set on [Exeunt KING &c]
Fal Master Shallow I owe you a thousand
 pound

Shal Yea marry Sir John which I beseech you
 to let me have home with me 80

Fal That can hardly be Master Shallow Do
 not you grieve at this I shall be sent for in pri-
 vate to him look you he must seem thus to the
 world fear not your advancements I will be the
 man yet that shall make you great

Shal I cannot well perceive how unless you
 should give me your doublet and stuff me out
 with straw I beseech you good Sir John let me
 have five hundred of my thousand

Fal Sir I will be as good as my word this that
 you heard was but a colour 91

Shal A colour that I fear you will die in Sir
 John

Fal Fear no colours go with me to dinner
 come Lieutenant Pistol come Bardolph I shall
 be sent for soon at night

Re-enter PRINCE JOHN the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE
Officers with them

Ch Just Go carry Sir John Falstaff to the
 Fleet

Take all his company along with him

Fal My lord my lord—

Ch Just I cannot now speak I will hear you
 soon 100

Take them away

Pist *Sil* *fortuna me tormenta spero contenta*

[Exeunt all but PRINCE JOHN and the
 CHIEF JUSTICE]

Lan I like this fair proceeding of the King's
 He hath intent his wonted followers
 Shall all be very well provided for
 But all are banish'd till their conversions
 Appear more wise and modest to the world
Ch Just And so they are
Lan The King hath call'd his parliament my
 lord
Ch Just He hath 110
Lan I will lay odds that ere this year expire
 We bear our civil swords and native fire
 As far as France I heard a bird so sing
 Whose music to my thinking pleased the
 King
 Come will you hence? [Exeunt]

EPILOGUE

Spoken by a DANCER

First my fear then my courtesy last my
 speech My fear is your displeasure my cour-
 tesy my duty and my speech to beg your par-
 dons If you look for a good speech now you
 undo me for what I have to say is of mine own
 making and what indeed I should say will I
 doubt prove mine own marring But to the pur-
 pose and so to the venture Be it known to you,
 as it is very well I was lately here in the end of
 a displeasing play to pray your patience for it
 and to promise you a better I meant indeed to
 pay you with this which if like an ill venture it
 come unluckily home I break and you my
 gentle creditors lose Here I promised you I
 would be and here I commit my body to your
 mercies bate me some and I will pay you some
 and as most debtors do promise you infinitely

If my tongue cannot entreat you to acquit me
 will you command me to use my legs? and yet
 that were but light payment to dance out of your
 debt But a good conscience will make any pos-
 sible satisfaction and so would I All the gentle
 women here have forgiven me if the gentlemen
 will not then the gentlemen do not agree with
 the gentlewomen which was never seen before
 in such an assembly

One word more I beseech you If you be not
 too much cloyed with fat meat our humble au-
 thor will continue the story with Sir John in it
 and make you merry with fair Katharine of
 France where for anything I know Falstaff
 shall die of a sweat unless already a be killed
 with your hard opinions for Oldcastle died a
 martyr and this is not the man My tongue is
 weary when my legs are too I will bid you good
 night and so kneel down before you but indeed
 to pray for the Queen

MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DON PEDRO *Prince of Arragon*
 DON JOHN, *his bastard brother*
 CLAUDIO *a young lord of Florence*
 BENEDICK *a young lord of Padua*
 LEONATO, *Governor of Messina*
 ANTONIO, *his brother*
 BALTHASAR, *attendant on Don Pedro*
 CONRADE
 BORACHIO } *followers of Don John*
 FRIAR FRANCIS
 DOGBERRY *a constable*
 VERGES *a headborough*
 A SEXTON
 A BOY

TWO MESSENGERS
 TWO WATCHMEN
 A LORD

HERO *daughter to Leonato*
 BEATRICE *niece to Leonato*
 MARGARET
 URSULA } *gentlewomen attending on Hero*

NON SPEAKING *Messengers Watch Attendants,
 and Musicians*

SCENE *Messina*

ACT I

SCENE I *Before Leonato's house*

Enter LEONATO, HERO, and BEATRICE, with a MESSENGER

Leon I learn in this letter that Don Peter of Arragon comes this night to Messina

Mess He is very near by this he was not three leagues off when I left him

Leon How many gentlemen have you lost in this action?

Mess But few of any sort, and none of name

Leon A victory is twice itself when the achiever brings home full numbers I find here that Don Peter hath bestowed much honour on a young Florentine called Claudio

Mess Much deserved on his part and equally remembered by Don Pedro he hath borne him self beyond the promise of his age, doing, in the figure of a lamb the feats of a lion he hath indeed bettered bettered expectation than you must expect of me to tell you how

Leon He hath an uncle here in Messina will be very much glad of it

Mess I have already delivered him letters and there appears much joy in him even so much that joy could not show itself modest enough without a badge of bitterness

Leon Did he break out into tears?

Mess In great measure

Leon A kind overflow of kindness there are no faces truer than those that are so washed How much better is it to weep at joy than to joy at weeping!

Beat I pray you, is Signior Mountanto returned

from the wars or no? 31

Mess I know none of that name lady there was none such in the army of any sort

Leon What is he that you ask for, niece?

Hero My cousin means Signior Benedick of Padua

Mess O, he is returned and as pleasant as ever he was

Beat He set up his bills here in Messina and challenged Cupid at the flight and my uncle's fool, reading the challenge subscribed for Cupid, and challenged him at the bird bolt I pray you how many hath he killed and eaten in these wars? But how many hath he killed? for indeed I promised to eat all of his killing

Leon Faith niece, you tax Signior Benedick too much, but he'll be meet with you I doubt it not

Mess He hath done good service, lady, in these wars 49

Beat You had musty victual and he hath help to eat it he is a very valiant trencherman, he hath an excellent stomach

Mess And a good soldier too lady

Beat And a good soldier to a lady but what is he to a lord?

Mess A lord to a lord a man to a man, stuffed with all honourable virtues

Beat It is so indeed he is no less than a stuffed man but for the stuffing—well, we are all mortal 60

Leon You must not sir mistake my niece There is a kind of merry war betwix Signior Benedick and her they never meet but there is a skirmish of wit between them

Beat Alas! he gets nothing by this

conflict four of his five wits went halting off and now \equiv the whole man governed with one so that if he have wit enough to keep himself warm let him bear it for a difference between himself and his horse for it is all the wealth that he hath left to be known a reasonable creature Who is his companion now? He hath every month a new sworn brother

Mess Is it possible?

Beat Very easily possible he wears his faith but as the fashion of his hat \equiv ever changes with the next block

Mess I see lady the gentleman is not in your books 79

Beat No an he were I would burn my study But I pray you who is his companion? Is there no young squarer now that will make a voyage with him to the devil?

Mess He is most in the company of the right noble Claudio

Beat O Lord he will hang upon him like a disease he \equiv sooner caught than the pestilence and the taker runs presently mad God help the noble Claudio! if he have caught the Benedick it will cost him a thousand pound ere a be cured

Mess I will hold friends with you lady 91

Beat Do good friend

Leon You will never run mad niece

Beat No nor till a hot January

Mess Don Pedro is approached

*Enter DON PEDRO DON JOHN CLAUDIO
BENEDICK and BALTHASAR*

D Pedro Good Signior Leonato you are come to meet your trouble the fashion of the world is to avoid cost and you encounter it

Leon Never came trouble to my house in the likeness of your Grace for trouble being gone comfort should remain but when you depart from me sorrow abides and happiness takes his leave

D Pedro You embrace your charge too willingly I think this is your daughter

Leon Her mother hath many times told me so

Beat Were you in doubt sir that you asked her?

Leon Signior Benedick no for then were you a child 109

D Pedro You have it full Benedick we may guess by this that you are being a man Truly the lady fathers herself Be happy lady for you are like an honourable father

Bene If Signior Leonato be her father she would not have his head on her shoulders for all Messina as like him as she \equiv

Beat I wonder that you will still be talking Signior Benedick nobody marks you

Bene What my dear Lady Disdain! are you yet living? 120

Beat Is it possible disdain should die while she hath such meet food to feed it as Signior Benedick? Courtesy itself must convert to disdain if you come in her presence

Bene Then is courtesy a turncoat But it is certain I am loved of all ladies only you excepted and I would I could find in my heart that I had not a hard heart for truly I love none

Beat A dear happiness to women they would else have been troubled with a pernicious suitor I thank God and my cold blood I am of your humour for that I had rather hear my dog bark at a crow than a man swear he loves me

Bene God keep your ladyship still in that mind! so some gentleman or other shall scape a predestinate scratched face

Beat Scratching could not make \equiv worse an twere such a face as yours were

Bene Well you are a rare parrot teacher

Beat A bird of my tongue is better than a beast of yours 141

Bene I would my horse had the speed of your tongue and so good a continuer But keep your way I God's name I have done

Beat You always end with a jade's trick I know you of old

D Pedro That is the sum of all Leonato Signior Claudio and Signior Benedick my dear friend Leonato hath invited you all I tell him we shall stay here at the least a month and he heartily prays some occasion may detain us longer I dare swear he is no hypocrite but prays from his heart

Leon If you swear my lord you shall not be forsworn [To DON JOHN] Let me bid you welcome my lord being reconciled to the Prince your brother I owe you all duty

D John I thank you I am not of many words but I thank you

Leon Please it your Grace lead on? 160

D Pedro Your hand Leonato we will go together

[*Exeunt all except BENEDICK and CLAUDIO*
Claud Benedick didst thou note the daughter of Signior Leonato?

Bene I noted her not but I looked on her

Claud Is she not a modest young lady?

Bene Do you question me as an honest man should do for my simple true judgement or would you have me speak after my custom as being a professed tyrant to their sex? 170

Claud No I pray thee speak in sober judgement

Bene Why I faith methinks she's too low for

a high praise, too brown for a fair praise and too little for a great praise only this commendation I can afford her, that were she other than she is, she were unhandsome, and being no other but as she is I do not like her

Claud Thou thinkest I am in sport I pray thee tell me truly how thou likest her 180

Bene Would you buy her, that you inquire after her?

Claud Can the world buy such a jewel?

Bene Yea, and a case to put it into But speak you this with a sad brow? or do you play the flouting Jack, to tell us Cupid is a good hare-flinder and Vulcan a rare carpenter? Come, in what key shall a man take you to go in the song?

Claud In mine eye she is the sweetest lady that ever I looked on 190

Bene I can see yet without spectacles and I see no such matter there's her cousin, an she were not possessed with a fury, exceeds her as much in beauty as the first of May doth the last of December But I hope you have no intent to turn husband, have you?

Claud I would scarce trust myself though I had sworn the contrary, if Hero would be my wife

Bene Is't come to this? In faith, hath not the world one man but he will wear his cap with suspicion? Shall I never see a bachelor of three-score again? Go to, i' faith, an thou wilt needs thrust thy neck into a yoke wear the print of it and sigh away Sundays Look, Don Pedro is returned to seek you

Re-enter DON PEDRO

D Pedro What secret hath held you here that you followed not to Leonato's?

Bene I would your Grace would constrain me to tell

D Pedro I charge thee on thy allegiance

Bene You hear, Count Claudio I can be secret as a dumb man I would have you think so, but on my allegiance, mark you this on my allegiance He is in love With who? now that in your Grace's part Mark how short his answer is—With Hero, Leonato's short daughter

Claud If this were so, so were it uttered

Bene Like the old tale, my lord "It is not so nor twas not so, but, indeed, God forbid it should be so" 220

Claud If my passion change not shortly, God forbid it should be otherwise

D Pedro Amen if you love her, for the lady is very well worthy

Claud You speak this to fetch me in my lord

D Pedro By my troth I speak my thought

Claud And in faith my lord I spoke mine.

Bene And, by my two faiths and troths, my lord, I spoke mine

Claud That I love her, I feel 230

D Pedro That she is worthy, I know

Bene That I neither feel how she should be loved nor know how she should be worthy in the opinion that fire cannot melt out of me I will die in it at the stake

D Pedro Thou wast ever an obstinate heretic in the despite of beauty

Claud And never could maintain his part but in the force of his will

Bene That a woman conceived me I thank her that she brought me up I likewise give her most humble thanks but that I will have a recheat winded in my forehead or hang my bugle in an invisible baldrick, all women shall pardon me Because I will not do them the wrong to mistrust any I will do myself the right to trust none and the fine is for the which I may go the finer, I will live a bachelor

D Pedro I shall see thee ere I die, look pale with love 250

Bene With anger, with sickness, or with hunger, my lord not with love prove that ever I lose more blood with love than I will get again with drinking pick out mine eyes with a ballad maker's pen and hang me up at the door of a brothel house for the sign of blind Cupid

D Pedro Well, if ever thou dost fall from this faith, thou wilt prove a notable argument

Bene If I do, hang me in a bottle like a cat and shoot at me, and he that hits me, let him be clapped on the shoulder, and called Adam 261

D Pedro Well as time shall try
"In time the savage bull doth bear the yoke"

Bene The savage bull may, but if ever the sensible Benedick bear it pluck off the bull's horns and set them in my forehead and let me be vilely painted and in such great letters as they write "Here is good horse to hire" let them signify under my sign "Here you may see Benedick the married man" 270

Claud If this should ever happen, thou wouldst be horn mad

D Pedro Nay, if Cupid have not spent all his quiver in Venice, thou wilt quake for this shortly

Bene I look for an earthquake too then

D Pedro Well you will temporize with the hours In the meantime, good Signior Benedick, repair to Leonato's commend me to him and tell him I will not fail him at supper for indeed he hath made great preparation 280

Bene I have almost matter enough in me for such an embassy and so I commit you—

Claud To the tuition of God From my house,
if I had it—

D Pedro The sixth of July Your loving friend
Benedick

Bene Nay mock not mock not The body of
your discourse is sometime guarded with frag-
ments and the guards are but slightly basted on
neither ere you flout old ends any further
examine your conscience and so I leave you

[*Exit* 291

Claud My liege your Highness now may do
me good

D Pedro My love is thine to teach teach it
but how

And thou shalt see how apt it is to learn

Any hard lesson that may do thee good

Claud Hath Leonato any son my lord?

D Pedro No child but Hero she has only
her

Dost thou affect her Claudio?

Claud O my lord
When you went onward on this ended action
I look'd upon her with a soldier's eye 300
That liked but had a rougher task in hand
Than to drive liking to the name of love
But now I am return'd and that war thoughts
Have left their places vacant in their rooms
Come thronging soft and delicate desires
All prompting me how fair young Hero is
Saying I liked her ere I went to wars

D Pedro Thou wilt be like a lover presently
And tire the hearer with a book of words
If thou dost love fair Hero cherish it, 310
And I will break with her and with her father
And thou shalt have her Was it not to this end
That thou began'st to twist so fine a story?

Claud How sweetly you do minister to love
That know love's grief by his complexion!
But lest my liking might too sudden seem
I would have salved it with a longer
treatise

D Pedro What need the bride much broader
than the flood?

The fairest grant is the necessary
Look what will serve is fit tis once thou
lovest 320

And I will fit thee with the remedy
I know we shall have revelling to-night
I will assume thy part in some disguise
And tell fair Hero I am Claudio
And in her bosom I'll unclasp my heart
And take her hearing prisoner with the force
And strong encounter of my amorous tale
Then after to her father will I break
And the conclusion is she shall be thine
In practice let us put it presently [*Exeunt* 330

SCENE II A room in Leonato's house

Enter LEONATO and ANTONIO meeting

Leon How now brother! Where is my cousin,
your son? hath he provided this music?

Ant He is very busy about it But brother I
can tell you stranger news that you yet dreamt
not of

Leon Are they good?

Ant As the mint stamps them but they have
a good cover they show well outward The
Prince and Count Claudio walking in a thick
pleached alley in mine orchard were thus much
overheard by a man of mine the Prince dis-
covered to Claudio that he loved my niece your
daughter and meant to acknowledge it this night
in a dance and if he found her accordant he
meant to take the present time by the top and
instantly break with you of it

Leon Hath the fellow any wit that told you
this?

Ant A good sharp fellow I will send for him
and question him yourself 30

Leon No no we will hold it as a dream till it
appear itself but I will acquaint my daughter
withal that she may be the better prepared for
an answer if peradventure this be true Go you
and tell her of it [*Enter attendants*] Cousins
you know what you have to do O I cry you
mercy friend go you with me and I will use
your skill Good cousin have a care this busy
time [*Exeunt*

SCENE III The same

Enter DON JOHN and CONRADE

Con What the good year my lord! why are
you thus out of measure sad?

D John There is no measure in the occasion
that breeds therefore the sadness is without
limit

Con You should hear reason

D John And when I have heard it what
blessing brings it?

Con If not a present remedy at least a patient
sufferance 10

D John I wonder that thou being as thou
sayest thou art born under Saturn goest about
to apply a moral medicine to a mortifying mis-
chief I cannot hide what I am I must be sad
when I have cause and smile at no man's jests
eat when I have stomach and wait for no man's
leisure sleep when I am drowsy and tend on no
man's business laugh when I am merry and claw
no man in his humour

Con Yea but you must not make the full show
of this till you may do it without controlment

You have of late stood out against your brother, and he hath ta'en you newly into his grace, where it is impossible you should take true root but by the fair weather that you make yourself it is needful that you frame the season for your own harvest

D John I had rather be a canker in a hedge than a rose in his grace, and it better fits my blood to be disdained of all than to fashion a carriage to rob love from any in this, though I cannot be said to be a flattering honest man, it must not be denied but I am a plain dealing villain I am trusted with a muzzle and enfranchised with a clog therefore I have decreed not to sing in my cage If I had my mouth, I would bite, if I had my liberty, I would do my liking in the meantime let me be that I am and seek not to alter me

Con Can you make no use of your discontent? 40

D John I make all use of it, for I use it only Who comes here?

Enter BORACHIO,

What news Borachio?

Bora I came yonder from a great supper the Prince your brother is royally entertained by Leonato, and I can give you intelligence of an intended marriage

D John Will it serve for any model to build mischief on? What is he for a fool that betroths himself to unquietness? 50

Bora Marry, it is your brother's right hand

D John Who? the most exquisite Claudio?

Bora Even he

D John A proper squire! And who, and who? which way looks he?

Bora Marry, on Hero, the daughter and heir of Leonato

D John A very forward March chuck! How came you to this?

Bora Being entertained for a perfumer as I was smoking a musty room comes me the Prince and Claudio hand in hand in sad conference I whipt me behind the arras and there heard it agreed upon that the Prince should woo Hero for himself and having obtained her, give her to Count Claudio

D John Come come, let us thither this may prove food to my displeasure That young start-up hath all the glory of my overthrow if I can cross him any way, I bless myself every way You are both sure and will assist me? 71

Con To the death my lord

D John Let us to the great supper their cheer is the greater that I am subdued Would the cook

were of my mind! Shall we go prove what's to be done?

Bora We'll wait upon your lordship [Exit]

ACT II

SCENE I A hall in Leonato's house

Enter LEONATO ANTONIO HERO, BEATRICE, and others

Leon Was not Count John here at supper?

Ant I saw him not

Beat How tartly that gentleman looks! I never can see him but I am heart burned an hour after

Hero He is of a very melancholy disposition

Beat He were an excellent man that were made just in the midway between him and Benedick the one is too like an image and says nothing and the other too like my lady's eldest son evermore tattling 11

Leon Then half Signior Benedick's tongue in Count John's mouth and half Count John's melancholy in Signior Benedick's face—

Beat With a good leg and a good foot uncle, and money enough in his purse such a man would win any woman in the world if a could get her good will

Leon By my troth niece thou wilt never get thee a husband if thou be so shrewd of thy tongue 21

Ant In faith she's too curst

Beat Too curst is more than curst I shall lessen God's sending that way, for it is said, 'God sends a curst cow short horns' but to a cow too curst he sends none

Leon So by being too curst God will send you no horns

Beat Just if he send me no husband for the which blessing I am at him upon my knees every morning and evening Lord I could not endure a husband with a beard on his face I had rather lie in the woollen

Leon You may light on a husband that hath no beard

Beat What should I do with him? dress him in my apparel and make him my waiting-gentlewoman? He that hath a beard is more than a youth and he that hath no beard is less than a man and he that is more than a youth is not for me and he that is less than a man I am not for him therefore I will even take sixpence in earnest of the bear ward and lead his apes into hell

Leon Well then go you into hell?

Beat No but to the gate and there will the devil meet me like an old cuckold with horns on his head and say Get you to heaven Beatrice get you to heaven here's no place for you maids so deliver I up my apes and away to

Saint Peter for the heavens he shows me where the bachelors sit and there live we as merry as the day is long

Ant [To *HERO*] Well niece I trust you will be ruled by your father

Beat Yes faith it is my cousin's duty to make curtsy and say Father as it please you But yet for all that cousin, let him be a handsome fellow or else make another curtsy and say Father as it please me

Leon Well niece I hope to see you one day fitted with a husband 61

Beat Not till God make men of some other metal than earth Would it not grieve a woman to be overmastered with a piece of valiant dust to make an account of her life to a clod of wayward mari? No uncle I'll none Adam's sons are my brethren and truly I hold it a sin to match in my kindred

Leon Daughter remember what I told you if the Prince do solicit you in that kind you know your answer 71

Beat At the fault will be in the music cousin if you be not wooed in good time if the Prince be too important tell him there is measure in every thing and so dance out the answer For hear me Hero wooing wedding and repenting is as a Scotch jig a measure and a cinque pace the first suit is hot and hasty like a Scotch jig and full as fantastical the wedding mannerly modest as a measure full of state and ancientry and then comes repentance and with his bad legs falls into the cinque pace faster and faster till he sink into his grave

Leon Cousin you apprehend passing shrewdly
Beat I have a good eye uncle I can see a church by daylight

Leon The revellers are entering brother make good room [All put on their masks]

Enter DON PEDRO CLAUDIO BENEDICK BILTIASAR DON JOHN BORACHIO MARGARET URSULA and others masked

D Pedro Lady will you walk about with your friend? 90

Hero So you walk softly and look sweetly and say nothing I am yours for the walk and especially when I walk away

D Pedro With me in your company?

Hero I may say so when I please

D Pedro And when please you to say so?

Hero When I like your favour for God defend the lute should be like the case!

D Pedro My visor is Philemon's roof within the house is Jove 100

Hero Why then your visor should be thatched

D Pedro Speak low if you speak love

Drawing her aside

Balth Well I would you did like me

Marg So would not I for your own sake for I have many ill qualities

Balth Which in one?

Marg I say my prayers aloud

Balth I love you the better the hearers may cry Amen 110

Marg God match me with a good dancer!

Balth Amen

Marg And God keep him out of my sight when the dance is done! Answer clerk

Balth No more words the clerk is answered

Urs I know you well enough you are Signior Antonio

Ant At a word I am not

Urs I know you by the wagging of your head

Ant To tell you true I counterfeit him 121

Urs You could never do him so ill well unless you were the very man Here's his dry hand up and down you are he you are he

Ant At a word I am not

Urs Come come do you think I do not know you by your excellent wit? can virtue hide itself? Go to mum you are he Graces will appear and there's an end

Beat Will you not tell me who told you so?

Bene No you shall pardon me 131

Bat Nor will you not tell me who you are?

Bene Not now

Beat That I was disdainful and that I had my good wit out of the Hundred Merry Tales well this was Signior Benedick that said so

Bene What's he?

Beat I am sure you know him well enough

Bene Not I believe me

Beat Did he never make you laugh? 140

Bene I pray you what is he?

Beat Why he is the Prince's jester a very dull fool only his gift is in devising impossible slanders none but libertines delight in him and the commendation is not in his wit but in his villainy for he both pleases men and angers them and then they laugh at him and beat him I am sure he is in the fleet I would he had boarded me

Bene When I know the gentleman I'll tell him what you say 151

Beat Do do he'll but break a comparison or two on me which peradventure not marked or not laugh'd at strikes him into melancholy and then there's a partridge wing saved for the fool will eat no supper that night [Music] We must follow the leaders

Bene In every good thing

Beat Nay, if they lead to any ill, I will leave them at the next turning 160

[*Dance Then exeunt all except DON*

JOHN BORACHIO, and CLAUDIO

D John Sure my brother is amorous on Hero and hath withdrawn her father to break with him about it The ladies follow her and but one visor remains

Bora And that is Claudio I know him by his bearing

D John Are not you Signior Benedick?

Claud You know me well, I am he

D John Signior, you are very near my brother in his love he is enamoured on Hero, I pray you, dissuade him from her she is no equal for his birth you may do the part of an honest man in it

Claud How know you he loves her?

D John I heard him swear his affection

Bora So did I too and he swore he would marry her to night

D John Come let us to the banquet

[*Exeunt DON JOHN and BORACHIO*

Claud Thus answer I in name of Benedick But hear these ill news with the ears of Claudio 'Tis certain so the Prince wooes for himself 181

Friendship is constant in all other things

Save in the office and affairs of love

Therefore all hearts in love use their own tongues,

Let every eye negotiate for itself

And trust no agent, for beauty is a witch

Against whose charms faith melteth into blood

This is an accident of hourly proof,

Which I mistrusted not Farewell therefore, Hero!

Re enter BENEDICK

Bene Count Claudio? 190

Claud Yea the same

Bene Come will you go with me?

Claud Whither?

Bene Even to the next willow about your own business County What fashion will you wear the garland of? about your neck like an usurer's chain? or under your arm, like a lieutenant's scarf? You must wear it one way for the Prince hath got your Hero

Claud I wish him joy of her 200

Bene Why, that's spoken like an honest drover so they sell bullocks But did you think the Prince would have served you thus?

Claud I pray you, leave me

Bene Ho! now you strike like the blind man 'twas the boy that stole your meat and you'll beat the post

Claud If it will not be, I'll leave you [Exit

Bene Alas, poor hurt fowl! now will he creep into sedges But that my Lady Beatrice should know me and not know me! the Prince's fool! Ha? It may be I go under that title because I am merry Yea, but so I am apt to do myself wrong, I am not so reputed it is the base, though bitter, disposition of Beatrice that puts the world into her person, and so gives me out Well, I'll be revenged as I may

Re enter DON PEDRO

D Pedro Now signior where's the Count? did you see him? 219

Bene Troth, my lord, I have played the part of Lady Fame I found him here as melancholy as a lodge in a warren I told him and I think I told him true that your Grace had got the good will of this young lady, and I offered him my company to a willow tree either to maul e him a garland as being forsaken, or to bind him up a rod, as being worthy to be whipped

D Pedro To be whipped! What's his fault?

Bene The flat transgression of a school boy, who being overjoyed with finding a birds nest shows it his companion, and he steals it 231

D Pedro Wilt thou make a trust a transgression? The transgression is in the stealer

Bene Yet it had not been amiss the rod had been made and the garland too, for the garland he might have worn himself, and the rod he might have bestowed on you who as I take it, have stolen his birds nest

D Pedro I will but teach them to sing and restore them to the owner 240

Bene If their singing answer your saying, by my faith you say honestly

D Pedro The Lady Beatrice hath a quarrel to you the gentleman that danced with her told her she is much wronged by you

Bene O, she misused me past the endurance of a block! an oak but with one green leaf on it would have answered her, my very visor began to assume life and scold with her She told me not thinking I had been myself that I was the Prince's jester that I was duller than a great chaw, huddling jest upon jest with such impossible conveyance upon me that I stood like a man at a mark, with a whole army shooting at me She speals poniards and every word stabs if her breath were as terrible as her terminations there were no living near her she would infect to the north star I would not marry her though she were endowed with all that Adam had left him before he transgressed she would ha-- Hercules have turned spit and have club to make the fire too Come, talk

you shall find her the infernal Ate in good apparel I would to God some scholar would conjure her for certainly while she is here a man may live as quiet in hell as in a sanctuary and people sin upon purpose because they would go thither so indeed all disquiet horror and perturbation follows her

D Pedro Look here she comes 270

Re-enter CLAUDIO BEATRICE, HERO and LEONATO

Bene Will your Grace command me any service to the world's end? I will go on the slightest errand now in the Antipodes that you can devise to send me on I will fetch you a tooth-picker now from the furthest inch of Asia, bring you the length of Prester John's foot fetch you a hair off the great Cham's beard do you any embassy to the Pigmies rather than hold three words conference with this harpy You have no employment for me? 280

D Pedro None but to desire your good company

Bene O God sir here's a dish I love not I cannot endure my Lady's Tongue [Exit]

D Pedro Come lady come you have lost the heart of Signior Benedick

Beat Indeed my lord he lent it me awhile and I gave him use for it a double heart for his single one marry once before he won it of me with false dice therefore your Grace may well say I have lost it 291

D Pedro You have put him down lady you have put him down

Beat So I would not he should do me my lord lest I should prove the mother of fools I have brought Count Claudio whom you sent me to seek

D Pedro Why how now Count? wherefore are you sad?

Claud Not sad my lord 300

D Pedro How then? sick?

Claud Neither my lord

Beat The Count is neither sad nor sick nor merry nor well but civil Count civil as an orange and something of that jealous complexion

D Pedro I faith lady I think your blazon to be true though I'll be sworn if he be so his conceit is false Here Claudio I have wooed in thy name and fair Hero is won I have broke with her father and his good will obtained name the day of marriage and God give thee joy!

Leon Count take of me my daughter and with her my fortunes his Grace hath made the match, and all grace say Amen to it

Beat Speak, Count in your cue

Claud Silence is the perfectest herald of joy were but little happy if I could say how much Lady as you are mine I am yours I give away myself for you and dote upon the exchange 310

Beat Speak cousin or if you cannot stop his mouth with a kiss and let not him speak neither

D Pedro In faith lady you have a merry heart

Beat Yea my lord I thank it poor fool keeps on the windy side of care My cousin tells him in his ear that he is in her heart

Claud And so she doth cousin

Beat Good Lord for alliance! Thus goes every one to the world but I and I am sunburnt I may sit in a corner and cry heigh ho for a husband!

D Pedro Lady Beatrice I will get you one.

Beat I would rather have one of your father's getting Hath your Grace ne'er a brother like you? Your father got excellent husbands if a maid could come by them

D Pedro Will you have me lady? 315

Beat No my lord unless I might have another for working days your Grace is too costly to wear every day But I beseech your Grace, pardon me I was born to speak all mirth and no matter

D Pedro Your silence most offends me and to be merry best becomes you for out of question, you were born in a merry hour

Beat No sure my lord my mother cried but then there was a star danced and under that was I born Cousins God give you joy! 320

Leon Niece will you look to those things I told you of?

Beat I cry you mercy uncle By your Grace's pardon [Exit]

D Pedro By my troth a pleasant spirited lady

Leon There's little of the melancholy element in her my lord she is never sad but when she sleeps and not ever sad then for I have heard my daughter say she hath often dreamed of unhappiness and waked herself with laughing

D Pedro She cannot endure to hear tell of a husband

Leon O by no means she mocks all her wooers out of suit

D Pedro She were an excellent wife for Benedick

Leon O Lord my lord if they were but a week married they would talk themselves mad

D Pedro Count Claudio when mean you to go to church? 321

Claud To-morrow my lord time goes on crutches till love have all his rites

Leon Not till Monday my dear son which is hence a just seven night and a time too brief too to have all things answer my mind

D Pedro Come, you shake the head at so long a breathing but, I warrant thee, Claudio, the time shall not go dully by us I will in the interim undertake one of Hercules labours which is, to bring Signior Benedick and the Lady Beatrice into a mountain of affection the one with the other I would fain have it a match, and I doubt not but to fashion it, if you three will but minister such assistance as I shall give you direction

Leon My lord, I am for you, though it cost me ten night's watchings.

Claud And I my lord

D Pedro And you too, gentle Hero?

Hero I will do any modest office, my lord to help my cousin to a good husband 391

D Pedro And Benedick is not the unhopfullest husband that I know Thus far can I praise him he is of a noble strain, of approved valour and confirmed honesty I will teach you how to humour your cousin, that she shall fall in love with Benedick, and I, with your two helps, will so practice on Benedick that, in despite of his quick wit and his queasy stomach he shall fall in love with Beatrice If we can do this, Cupid is no longer an archer his glory shall be ours, for we are the only love-gods Go in with me, and I will tell you my drift [Exeunt

SCENE II The same

Enter DON JOHN and BORACHIO

D John It is so, the Count Claudio shall marry the daughter of Leonato

Bora Yea, my lord, but I can cross it.

D John Any bar, any cross any impediment will be medicinable to me I am sick in displeasure to him and whatsoever comes athwart his affection ranges evenly with mine How canst thou cross this marriage?

Bora Not honestly, my lord, but so covertly that no dishonesty shall appear in me 10

D John Show me briefly how

Bora I think I told your lordship a year since, how much I am in the favour of Margaret the waiting gentlewoman to Hero

D John I remember

Bora I can at any unseasonable instant of the night, appoint her to look out at her lady's chamber window

D John What life is in that to be the death of this marriage? 20

Bora The poison of that lies in you to temper Go you to the Prince your brother spare not to tell him that he hath wronged his honour in marrying the renowned Claudio—whose estimation do you mightily hold up—to a contaminated stale, such a one as Hero

D John What proof shall I make of that?

Bora Proof enough to misuse the Prince, to vex Claudio, to undo Hero and kill Leonato Look you for any other issue? 30

D John Only to despise them, I will endeavour anything

Bora Go, then, find me a meet hour to draw Don Pedro and the Count Claudio alone tell them that you know that Hero loves me, intend a kind of zeal both to the Prince and Claudio as—in love of your brother's honour who hath made this match, and his friend's reputation who is thus like to be cozened with the semblance of a maid—that you have discovered thus They will scarcely believe this without trial offer them instances, which shall bear no less likelihood than to see me at her chamber-window, hear me call Margaret Hero, hear Margaret term me Claudio, and bring them to see this the very night before the intended wedding—for in the meantime I will so fashion the matter that Hero shall be absent—and there shall appear such seeming truth of Hero's disloyalty that jealousy shall be called assurance and all the preparation overthrown 51

D John Grow this to what adverse issue it can, I will put it in practice Be cunning in the working this, and thy fee is a thousand ducats

Bora Be you constant in the accusation and my cunning shall not shame me

D John I will presently go learn their day of marriage [Exeunt

SCENE III Leonato's orchard

Enter BENEDICK

Bene Boy!

Enter BOY

Boy Signior?

Bene In my chamber window lies a book bring it hither to me in the orchard

Boy I am here already, sir

Bene I know that, but I would have thee hence, and here again [Exit boy] I do much wonder that one man seeing how much another man is a fool when he dedicates his behaviours to love, will after he hath laughed at such shallow follies in others become the argument of his own scorn by falling in love and such a man is Claudio I have known when there was no music with him but the drum and the fife and now had he rather hear the tabor and the pipe I have known when he would have walked ten mile a foot to see a good armour and now will he lie ten nights awake carving the fashion of a new doublet He was wont to speak plain and

to the purpose like an honest man and a soldier
 an' now is he turned orthography his words are
 a very fantastical banquet just so many strange
 dishes May I be so converted and see with these
 eyes? I cannot tell I think not I will not be
 sworn but love may transform me to an oyster
 but I'll take my oath on it till he have made an
 oyster of me he shall never make me such a fool
 One woman is fair yet I am well another is
 wise yet I am well another virtuous yet I am
 well but till all graces be in one woman one
 woman shall not come in my grace Rich she
 shall be that's certain wise or I'll none vir-
 tuous or I'll never cheapen her fair or I'll never
 look on her mild or come not near me noble
 or not I for an angel of good discourse an
 excellent musician and her hair shall be of what
 colour it please God Ha! the Prince and Mon-
 sieur Love! I will hide me in the arbour

[*He withdraws*]

Enter DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO and LEONATO

D Pedro Come shall we hear this music?

Claudio Yea, my good lord How still the
 evening is 40

As hush'd on purpose to grace harmony!

D Pedro See you where Benedick hath hid him-
 self?

Claudio O very well my lord the music ended
 We'll fit the kid fox with a pennyworth

Enter BALTHASAR with Music

D Pedro Come Balthasar we'll hear that song
 again

Balthasar O good my lord say not so bad a voice
 To slander music any more than once

D Pedro It is the witness still of excellency
 To put a strange face on his own perfection
 I pray thee sing and let me woo no more 50

Balthasar Because you talk of wooing I will sing
 Since many a wooer doth commence his suit
 To her he thinks not worthy yet he woos
 Yet will he swear he loves

D Pedro Now pray thee come
 Or if thou wilt hold longer argument
 Do it in notes

Balthasar Note this before my notes
 There's not a note of mine that's worth the
 noting

D Pedro Why these are very crotchets that
 he speaks

Note notes forsooth, and nothing! [*Exit*]

Bene Now divine art now is his soul ravished
 Is it not strange that sheeps guts should hale
 souls out of men's bodies? Well a horn for my
 money when all's done

SONG

Balthasar Sigh no more ladies sigh no more
 Men were deceivers ever
 One foot in sea and one on shore
 To one thing constant never
 Then sigh not so but let them go
 And be you blithe and bonny
 Converting all your sounds of woe 70
 Into Hey nonny nonny

Sing no more ditties sing no more,
 Of dumps so dull and heavy
 The fraud of men was ever so
 Since summer first was leavy
 Then sigh not so &c

D Pedro By my troth a good song

Balthasar And an ill singer my lord

D Pedro Ha no no faith thou singest well
 enough for a shaft 80

Bene An he had been a dog that should have
 howled thus they would have hanged him and
 I pray God his bad voice bode no mischief I had
 as lief have heard the night raven come what
 plague could have come after it

D Pedro Yea marry dost thou hear Baltha-
 sar? I pray thee get us some excellent music for
 to-morrow night we would have it at the Lady
 Hero's chamber window

Balthasar The best I can my lord 90

D Pedro Do so farewell [*Exit BALTHASAR*]
 Come hither Leonato What was it you told me
 of to-day that your niece Beatrice was in love
 with Signior Benedick?

Claudio O ay stalk on stalk on the fowl sits
 I did never think that lady would have loved any
 man

Leon No nor I neither but most wonderful
 that she should be dote on Signior Benedick
 whom she hath in all outward behaviours seemed
 ever to abhor 100

Bene Is it possible? Sits the wind in that corner?

Leon By my troth my lord I cannot tell what
 to think of it but that she loves him with an
 enraged affection it is past the infinite of
 thought

D Pedro May be she doth but counterfeit

Claudio Faith like enough

Leon O God, counterfeit! There was never
 counterfeit of passion came so near the life of
 passion as she discovers it 110

D Pedro Why what effects of passion shows
 she?

Claudio But the hook well this fish will bite

Leon What effects my lord? She will eat you,
 you heard my daughter tell you how

Claud She did, indeed

D Pedro How, how, I pray you? You amaze me I would have thought her spirit had been invincible against all assaults of affection 120

Leon I would have sworn it had, my lord especially against Benedick

Bene I should think this a gull, but that the white bearded fellow speaks it knavery cannot, sure hide himself in such reverence

Claud He hath ta'en the infection hold it up

D Pedro Hath she made her affection known to Benedick?

Leon No, and swears she never will that's her torment 130

Claud 'Tis true, indeed so your daughter says "Shall I," says she, "that have so oft encountered him with scorn, write to him that I love him?"

Leon This says she now when she is beginning to write to him, for she'll be up twenty times a night and there will she sit in her smock till she have writ a sheet of paper my daughter tells us all

Claud Now you talk of a sheet of paper, I remember a pretty jest your daughter told us of

Leon O when she had writ it and was reading it over, she found Benedick and Beatrice between the sheets?

Claud That

Leon O she tore the letter into a thousand halfpence, railed at herself, that she should be so immodest to write to one that she knew would flout her, "I measure him," says she "by my own spirit for I should flout him if he writ to me, yea though I love him I should" 151

Claud Then down upon her knees she falls, weeps, sobs, beats her heart tears her hair, prays, curses, 'O sweet Benedick! God give me patience!'

Leon She doth indeed my daughter says so and the ecstasy hath so much overborne her that my daughter is sometime afraid she will do a desperate outrage to herself it is very true

D Pedro It were good that Benedick knew of it by some other if she will not discover it 161

Claud To what end? He would make but a sport of it and torment the poor lady worse

D Pedro An he should it were an alms to hang him She's an excellent sweet lady and out of all suspicion she is virtuous

Claud And she is exceeding wise

D Pedro In everything but in loving Benedick

Leon O my lord wisdom and blood combating in so tender a body we have ten proofs to one that blood hath the victory I am sorry for her,

as I have just cause being her uncle and her guardian

D Pedro I would she had bestowed this dotage on me I would have daffed all other respects and made her half myself I pray you, tell Benedick of it and hear what a will say

Leon Were it good think you? 179

Claud Hero thinks surely she will die for she says she will die if he love her not, and she will die ere she make her love known and she will die if he woo her rather than she will bate one breath of her accustomed crossness

D Pedro She doth well if she should make tender of her love 'tis very possible he'll scorn it for the man, as you know all hath a contemptible spirit

Claud He is a very proper man

D Pedro He hath indeed a good outward happiness 191

Claud Before God! and in my mind very wise

D Pedro He doth indeed show some sparks that are like wit

Claud And I take him to be valiant

D Pedro As Hector I assure you and in the managing of quarrels you may say he is wise for either he avoids them with great discretion or undertakes them with a most Christian like fear

Leon If he do fear God a must necessarily keep peace if he break the peace he ought to enter into a quarrel with fear and trembling

D Pedro And so will he do for the man doth fear God howsoever it seems not in him by some large jests he will make Well, I am sorry for your niece Shall we go seek Benedick and tell him of her love?

Claud Never tell him, my lord let her wear it out with good counsel

Leon Nay that's impossible she may wear her heart out first 210

D Pedro Well we will hear further of it by your daughter let it cool the while I love Benedick well, and I could wish he would modestly examine himself to see how much he is unworthy so good a lady

Leon My lord will you walk? dinner is ready

Claud If he do not dote on her upon this I will never trust my expectation 220

D Pedro Let there be the same net spread for her and that must your daughter and her gentlewomen carry The sport will be when they hold one an opinion of another's dotage and no such matter that's the scene that I would see which will be merely a dumb-show Let us send her to call him in to dinner

[*Exit DON PEDRO CLAUDIO & LEONATO*]

Bene [*Coming forward*] This can be

the conference was sadly borne. They have the truth of this from Hero. They seem to pity the lady: it seems her affections have their full bent. Love me! why, it must be requited. I hear how I am censured: they say I will bear myself proudly: if I perceive the love come from her, they say too that she will rather die than give any sign of affection. I did never think to marry. I must not seem proud. Happy are they that hear their detractions and can put them to mending. They say the lady is fair: 'tis a truth I can bear: them witness and virtuous 'tis so I cannot reprove it: and wise, but for loving me, by my troth, it is no addition to her wit: nor no great argument of her folly, for I will be horribly in love with her. I may chance have some odd quirks and remnants of wit broken on me, because I have tailed so long against marriage, but doth not the appetite alter? a man loves the meat in his youth that he cannot endure in his age. Shall quips and sentences and these paper bullets of the brain awe a man from the career of his humour? No: the world must be peopled. When I said I would die a bachelor, I did not think I should live till I were married. Here comes Beatrice. By this day, she's a fair lady. I do spy some marks of love in her.

Enter BEATRICE

Beat. Against my will I am sent to bid you come in to dinner.

Bene. Fair Beatrice, I thank you for your pains.

Beat. I took no more pains for those thanks than you take pains to thank me: if it had been painful, I would not have come. 261

Bene. You take pleasure then in the message?

Beat. Yea, just so much as you may take upon a knife's point and choke a daw withal. You have no stomach, signior, fare you well.

[Exit]

Bene. Ha! Against my will I am sent to bid you come in to dinner: there's a double meaning in that. I took no more pains for those thanks than you took pains to thank me: that's as much as to say, Any pains that I take for you is as easy as thanks. If I do not take pity of her, I am a villain: if I do not love her, I am a Jew. I will go get her picture. *[Exit]*

ACT III

SCENE I. Leonato's garden

Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA

Hero. Good Margaret, run thee to the parlour. There shalt thou find my cousin Beatrice, proposing with the Prince and Claudio.

Whisper her ear and tell her I and Ursula walk in the orchard and our whole discourse. All of her say that thou overheard'st us. And bid her steal into the pleached bower, where honey-suckles ripen'd by the sun, forbid the sun to enter, like favourites made proud by princes, that advance their pride against that power that bred it: there will she hide her. 11

To listen our purpose. This is thy office. Bear thee well in it and leave us alone.

Marg. I'll make her come. I warrant you presently. *[Exit]*

Hero. Now Ursula, when Beatrice doth come, as we do trace alley up and down, our talk must only be of Benedick. When I do name him, let it be thy part to praise him more than ever man did merit. My talk to thee must be how Benedick is sick in love with Beatrice. Of this matter is little Cupid's crafty arrow made. That only wounds by hearsay. 20

Enter BEATRICE, behind

Now begin

For look where Beatrice, like a lapwing, runs close by the ground to hear our conference.

Urs. The pleasant'st angling is to see the fish cut with her golden oars the silver stream.

And greedily devour the treacherous bait.

So angle we for Beatrice, who even now

is couched in the woodbine coverture. 30

Fear you not my part of the dialogue?

Hero. Then go we near her, that her ear lose nothing.

Of the false sweet bait that we lay for it.

Approaching the bower

No truly, Ursula, she is too disdainful.

I know her spirits are as coy and wild

as haggards of the rock.

Urs.

But are you sure

that Benedick loves Beatrice so entirely?

Hero. So says the Prince and my new trothed lord.

Urs. And did they bid you tell her of it, madam?

Hero. They did entreat me to acquaint her of it. But I persuaded them if they loved Benedick

to wish him wrestle with affection and never to let Beatrice know of it. 41

Urs. Why did you so? Doth not the gentleman deserve as full as fortunate a bed as ever Beatrice shall couch upon?

Hero. O god of love! I know he doth deserve

as much as may be yielded to a man.

But Nature never framed a woman's heart

Of prouder stuff than that of Beatrice. 50

Disdain and scorn ride sparkling in her eyes,
Misprising what they look on and her wit
Values itself so highly that to her
All matter else seems weak she cannot love,
Nor take no shape nor project of affection,
She is so self endeared

Urs Sure, I think so,
And therefore certainly it were not good
She knew his love, lest she make sport at it

Hero Why, you speak truth I never yet saw
man,

How wise, how noble, young, how rarely fea-
tured, 60

But she would spell him backward if fair-faced,
She would swear the gentleman should be her
sister,

If black, why, Nature drawing of an antique,
Made a foul blot, if tall, a lance ill headed,

If low an agate very vilely cut,

If speaking, why, a vane blown with all winds,

If silent, why, a block moved with none

So turns she every man the wrong side out

And never gives to truth and virtue that

Which simpleness and merit purchaseth 70

Urs Sure sure, such carping is not com-
mendable

Hero No, not to be so odd and from all fashions

As Beatrice is, cannot be commendable

But who dare tell her so? If I should speak

She would mock me into air, O, she would laugh
me

Out of myself press me to death with wit

Therefore let Benedick, like cover d fire,

Consume away in sighs, waste inwardly

It were a better death than die with mocks

Which is as bad as die with tickling 80

Urs Yet tell her of it hear what she will say

Hero No, rather I will go to Benedick.

And counsel him to fight against his passion

And truly, I ll devise some honest slanders

To stain my cousin with one doth not know

How much an ill word may empoison liking

Urs O do not do your cousin such a wrong

She cannot be so much without true judgement—

Having so swift and excellent a wit

As she is prized to have—as to refuse 90

So rare a gentleman as Signior Benedick

Hero He is the only man of Italy,

Always excepted my dear Claudio

Urs I pray you, be not angry with me madam,

Speaking my fancy Signior Benedick

For shape for bearing argument and valour

Goes foremost in report through Italy

Hero Indeed he hath an excellent good name

Urs His excellence did earn it ere he had it 100

When are you married madam?

Hero Why, every day, to-morrow Come, go

in

I ll show thee some attires and have thy counsel

Which is the best to furnish me to-morrow

Urs She s limed I warrant you we have

caught her, madam

Hero If it prove so then loving goes by haps

Some Cupid kills with arrows some with traps

[*Exeunt HERO and URSULA*]

Beat [*Coming forward*] What fire is in mine
ears? Can this be true?

Stand I condemn d for pride and scorn so
much?

Contempt, farewell! and maiden pride adieu!

No glory lives behind the back of such 110

And, Benedick, love on I will requite thee

Taming my wild heart to thy loving hand

If thou dost love, my kindness shall incite thee

To bind our loves up in a holy band

For others say thou dost deserve and I

Believe it better than reportingly [*Exit.*]

SCENE II A room in Leonato s house

*Enter DON PEDRO CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, and
LEONATO*

D Pedro I do but stay till your marriage be
consummate, and then go I toward Arragon

Claud I ll bring you thither my lord if you ll
vouchsafe me

D Pedro Nay that would be as great a soil in
the new gloss of your marriage as to show a child

his new coat and forbid him to wear it I will
only be bold with Benedick for his company, for,

from the crown of his head to the sole of his foot,
he is all mirth he hath twice or thrice cut Cupid s

bow string and the little hangman dare not shoot
at him, he hath a heart as sound as a bell and his

tongue is the clapper, for what his heart thinks
his tongue speaks

Bene Gallants, I am not as I have been

Leon So say I methinks you are sadder

Claud I hope he be in love

D Pedro Hang him traitor! there s no true drop
of blood in him to be truly touched with love if

he be sad he wants money 20

Bene I have the toothache

D Pedro Draw it

Bene Hang it!

Claud You must hang it first and draw it after-
wards

D Pedro What! sigh for the toothache?

Leon Where is but a humour or a worm

Bene Well every one can master a grief but he
that has it 30

Claud Yet say I he is in love

D Pedro There is no appearance of fancy in

him unless it be a fancy that he hath to strange disguises as to be a Dutchman to-day a French man to-morrow or in the shape of two countries at once as a German from the waist downward all slops and a Spaniard from the hip upward no doublet Unless he have a fancy to this foolery as he appears he hath he is no fool for fancy as you would have it appear he is

Claud If he be not in love with some woman there is no believing old signs a brushers his hat o mornings what should that bode? 42

D Pedro Hath any man seen him at the barber's?

Claud No but the barber's man hath been seen with him and the old ornament of his cheek hath already stuffed tennis balls

Leon Indeed he looks younger than he did by the loss of a beard

D Pedro Nay a rubs himself with civet can you smell him out by that? 51

Claud That is as much as to say the sweet youth is in love

D Pedro The greatest note of it is his melancholy

Claud And when was he wont to wash his face?

D Pedro Yea or to paint himself? for the which I hear what they say of him

Claud Nay but his jesting spirit which is now crept into a lute string and now governed by stops

D Pedro Indeed that tells a heavy tale for him conclude he is in love

Claud Nay but I know who loves him

D Pedro That would I know too I warrant one that knows him not

Claud Yes and his ill conditions and in despite of all dies for him

D Pedro She shall be buried with her face upwards 71

Bene Yet is this no charm for the toothache Old signior walk aside with me I have studied eight or nine wise words to speak to you which these hobby horses must not hear

[*Exeunt BENEDICK and LEONATO*]

D Pedro For my life, to break with him about Beatrice

Claud 'Tis even so Hero and Margaret have by this played their parts with Beatrice and then the two bears will not bite one another when they meet 81

[*Enter DON JOHN*]

D John My lord and brother you'

D Pedro Good

D John If your leisure served I would speak with you

D Pedro In private?

D John If it please you yet Count Claudio may hear for what I would speak of concerns him

D Pedro What is the matter? 90

D John [To *CLAUDIO*] Means your lordship to be married to-morrow?

D Pedro You know he does

D John I know not that when he knows what I know

Claud If there be any impediment I pray you discover it

D John You may think I love you not let that appear hereafter and aim better at me by that I now will manifest For my brother I think he holds you well and in dearth of heart hath help to effect your ensuing marriage—surely suit ill spent and labour ill bestowed

D Pedro Why what is the matter?

D John I came hither to tell you and circumstances shortened for she has been too long a talking of the lady is disloyal

Claud Who Hero?

D John Even she Leonato's Hero your Hero every man's Hero 110

Claud Disloyal?

D John The word is too good to paint out her wickedness I could say she were worse think you of a worse title and I will fit her to it Wonder not till further warrant go but with me tonight you shall see her chamber window entered even the night before her wedding day if you love her then to-morrow wed her but it would better fit your honour to change your mind

Claud May this be so? 120

D Pedro I will not think it

D John If you dare not trust that you see confess not that you know if you will follow me I will show you enough and when you have seen more and heard more proceed accordingly

Claud If I see anything to-night why I should not marry her to-morrow in the congregation where I should wed there will I shame her

D Pedro And as I wooed for thee to obtain her I will join with thee to disgrace her 130

D John I will disparage her no farther till you are my witnesses bear it coldly but till midnight and let the issue show itself

D Pedro O day untowardly turned!

Claud O mischief strangely thwarting!

D John O plague right well prevented! so will you say when you have seen the sequel

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III *A street**Enter DOGBERRY and VERGES with the WATCH**Dog* Are you good men and true?*Verg* Yea, or else it were pity but they should suffer salvation, body and soul*Dog* Nay, that were a punishment too good for them if they should have any allegiance in them, being chosen for the Prince's watch*Verg* Well, give them their charge, neighbour Dogberry*Dog* First, who think you the most desartless man to be constable?*1st Watch* Hugh Otecake, sir, or George Seacole, for they can write and read*Dog* Come hither, neighbour Seacole God hath blessed you with a good name to be a well-favoured man in the gift of fortune, but to write and read comes by nature*2nd Watch* Both which, master constable—*Dog* You have I knew it would be your answer Well, for your favour, sir, why, give God thanks and make no boast of it, and for your writing and reading, let that appear when there is no need of such vanity You are thought here to be the most senseless and fit man for the constable of the watch, therefore bear you the lantern This in your charge you shall comprehend all vagrom men, you are to bid any man stand, in the Prince's name*2nd Watch* How if a will not stand?*Dog* Why, then take no note of him, but let him go, and presently call the rest of the watch together and thank God you are rid of a knave*Verg* If he will not stand when he is bidden, he is none of the Prince's subjects*Dog* True and they are to meddle with none but the Prince's subjects You shall also make no noise in the streets, for for the watch to babble and to talk is most tolerable and not to be endured*2nd Watch* We will rather sleep than talk we know what belongs to a watch*Dog* Why, you speak like an ancient and most quiet watchman for I cannot see how sleeping should offend only, have a care that your bills be not stolen Well you are to call at all the ale-houses, and bid those that are drunk get them to bed*2nd Watch* How if they will not?*Dog* Why then let them alone till they are sober if they make you not then the better answer you may say they are not the men you took them for*2nd Watch* Well sir*Dog* If you meet a thief you may suspect him,

by virtue of your office, to be no true man, and, for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty

2nd Watch If we know him to be a thief, shall we not lay hands on him?*Dog* Truly, by your office, you may, but I think they that touch pitch will be defiled the most peaceable way for you, if you do take a thief is to let him show himself what he is and steal out of your company*Verg* You have been always called a merciful man, partner*Dog* Truly, I would not hang a dog by my will, much more a man who hath honesty in him*Verg* If you hear a child cry in the night, you must call to the nurse and bid her still it*2nd Watch* How if the nurse be asleep and will not hear us?*Dog* Why, then depart in peace, and let the child wake her with crying, for the ewe that will not hear her lamb when it baes will never answer a calf when he bleats*Verg* 'Tis very true*Dog* This is the end of the charge you constable are to present the Prince's own person if you meet the Prince in the night, you may stay him*Verg* Nav, by'r lady, that I think a' cannot*Dog* Five shillings to one on't, with any man that knows the statutes he may stay him marry, not without the Prince be willing for, indeed, the watch ought to offend no man and it is an offence to stay a man against his will*Verg* By'r lady, I think it be so*Dog* Ha ah, ha! Well, masters good night an there be any matter of weight chances call up me keep your fellows counsels and your own and good night Come neighbour*2nd Watch* Well masters we hear our charge let us go sit here upon the church bench till two, and then all to bed*Dog* One word more honest neighbours I pray you watch about Signior Leonato's door for the wedding being there to-morrow there is a great coil to-night Adieu be vigilant I beseech you*[Exeunt DOGBERRY and VERGES]**Enter BORACHIO and CONRADE**Bora* What Conrade?*2nd Watch* *[Aside]* Peace! stir not*Bora* Conrade I say!*Con* Here man I am at this elbow*Bora* Mass and my elbow itched I there would a scab follow

Con I will owe thee an answer for that and now forward with thy tale 109

Bora Stand thee close, then, under this pent house, for it drizzles rain and I will like a true drunkard, utter all to thee

2nd Watch *[Aside]* Some treason, masters let stand close.

Bora Therefore know I have earned of Don John a thousand ducats

Con Is it possible that any villainy should be so dear?

Bora Thou shouldst rather ask if it were possible any villainy should be so rich for when rich villains have need of poor ones poor ones may make what price they will

Con I wonder at it

Bora That shows thou art unconfirmed Thou knowest that the fashion of a doublet or a hat or a cloak is nothing to a man

Con Yes it is apparel

Bora I mean, the fashion

Con Yes the fashion is the fashion 119

Bora Tush I may as well say the fool is the fool But seest thou not what a deformed thief this fashion is?

2nd Watch *[Aside]* I know that Deformed a has been a vile thief this seven year a goes up and down like a gentleman I remember his name

Bora Didst thou not hear somebody?

Con No was the voice on the house

Bora Seest thou not I say what a deformed thief this fashion is? how giddily a turns about all the hot bloods between fourteen and five and thirty? sometimes fashioning them like Pharaoh's soldiers in the reechy painting sometime like god Bel's priests in the old church window sometime like the shaven Hercules in the smirched worm-eaten tapestry where his codpiece seems as massy as his club?

Con All this I see and I see that the fashion wears out more apparel than the man But art not thou thyself giddy with the fashion too that thou hast shifted out of thy tale into telling me of the fashion?

Bora Not so neither but know that I have to-night wooed Margaret the Lady Hero a gentlewoman, by the name of Hero she leans me out at her mistress chamber window bids me a thousand times good night—I tell this tale wisely I should first tell thee how the Prince Claudio and my master planted and placed and possessed by my master Don John, saw afar off in the orchard this amiable encounter 161

Con And thought they Margaret was Hero?

Bora Two of them did, the Prince and Claudio but the devil my master knew she was Margaret

and partly by his oaths which first possessed them, partly by the dark night which did deceive them, but chiefly by my villainy which did confirm any slander that Don John had made, away went Claudio enraged swore he would meet her as he was appointed, next morning at the temple, and there, before the whole congregation shame her with what he saw o'er night and send her home again without a husband

1st Watch We charge you, in the Prince's name, stand!

2nd Watch Call up the right master constable We have here recovered the most dangerous piece of lechery that ever was known in the commonwealth 181

1st Watch And one Deformed is one of them I know him a wears a lock

Con Masters masters—

2nd Watch You'll be made bring Deformed forth, I warrant you

Con Masters—

1st Watch Never speak we charge you let us obey you to go with us

Bora We are like to prove a goodly commodity being taken up of these men's bills 191

Con A commodity in question, I warrant you Come, we'll obey you [Exit]

SCENE IV Hero's apartment

Enter HERO MARGARET and URSULA

Hero Good Ursula, wake my cousin Beatrice and desire her to rise

Urs I will lady

Hero And bid her come hither

Urs Well [Exit]

Marg Troth I think your other rabato were better

Hero No pray thee good Meg I'll wear this

Marg By my troth, 's not so good and I warrant your cousin will say so 10

Hero My cousin's a fool and thou art another I'll wear none but this

Marg I like the new tite within excellently if the hair were a thought browner and your gown's a most rare fashion I faith I saw the Duchess of Milan's gown that they praise so

Hero O that exceeds they say

Marg By my troth, a but a night-gown in respect of yours cloth o' gold and cuts and laced with silver set with pearls down sleeves side sleeves and skirts round underborne with a bluish unsel but for a fine quaint graceful and excellent fashion yours is worth ten on't

Hero God give me joy to wear it! for my heart is exceeding heavy

Marg 'Twill be heavier soon by the weight of a man

Hero Fie upon thee! art not ashamed?

Marg Of what lady? of speaking honourably? Is not marriage honourable in a beggar? Is not your lord honourable without marriage? I think you would have me say, "saving your reverence, a husband" an bad thinking do not wrest true speaking I'll offend nobody is there any harm in "the heavier for a husband"? None, I think an it be the right husband and the right wife, otherwise tis light and not heavy ask my Lady Beatrice else, here she comes

Enter BEATRICE

Hero Good morrow, coz

Beat Good morrow, sweet Hero 40

Hero Why, how now? do you speak in the sick tune?

Beat I am out of all other tune, methinks

Marg Clap's into "Light o' love", that goes without a burden do you sing it, and I'll dance it

Beat Ye light a love with your heels! then if your husband have stables enough, you'll see he shall lack no barns

Marg O illegitimate construction! I scorn that with my heels 51

Beat 'Tis almost five o'clock cousin, 'tis time you were ready By my troth, I am exceeding ill heigh ho!

Marg For a hawk, a horse or a husband?

Beat For the letter that begins them all H

Marg Well an you be not turned Turk, there's no more sailing by the star

Beat What means the fool trow?

Marg Nothing I, but God send every one their heart's desire! 61

Hero These gloves the Count sent me, they are an excellent perfume

Beat I am stuffed, cousin I cannot smell

Marg A maid and stuffed! there's goodly catching of cold

Beat O, God help me! God help me! how long have you professed apprehension?

Marg Ever since you left it Doth not my wit become me rarely? 70

Beat It is not seen enough, you should wear it in your cap By my troth I am sick

Marg Get you some of this distilled Carduus Benedictus and lay it to your heart it is the only thing for a qualm

Hero There thou prickest her with a thistle

Beat Benedictus! why Benedictus? you have some moral in this Benedictus

Marg Moral! no by my troth I have no moral meaning! I meant, plain holy thistle You may

think perchance that I think you are in love nay, by r lady, I am not such a fool to think what I list, nor I list not to think what I can nor indeed I cannot think if I would think my heart out of thinking, that you are in love or that you will be in love or that you can be in love Yet Benedick was such another, and now he become a man he swore he would never marry and yet now, in despite of his heart, he eats his meat without grudging and how you may be converted I know not, but methinks you look with your eyes as other women do

Beat What pace is this that thy tongue keeps?

Marg Not a false gallop

Re-enter URSULA

Urs Madam, withdraw the Prince the Count, Signior Benedick, Don John and all the gallants of the town, are come to fetch you to church

Hero Help to dress me, good coz good Meg, good Ursula [Exit

SCENE V Another room in Leonato's house

Enter LEONATO, with DOGBERRY and VERGES

Leon What would you with me, honest neighbour?

Dog Marry, sir, I would have some confidence with you that concerns you nearly

Leon Brief I pray you, for you see it is a busy time with me

Dog Marry, this it is, sir

Verg Yes truth it is sir

Leon What is it, my good friends?

Dog Goodman Verges sir speaks a little off the matter an old man sir and his wits are not so blunt as, God help, I would desire they were, but in faith, honest as the skin between his brows

Verg Yes I thank God I am as honest as any man living that is an old man and no honestier than I

Dog Comparisons are odorous palabras, neighbour Verges

Leon Neighbours, you are tedious 20

Dog It pleases your worship to say so but we are the poor Duke's officers but truly for mine own part if I were as tedious as a king I could find it in my heart to bestow it all of your worship

Leon All thy tediousness on me ah?

Dog Yea an twere a thousand pound more than tis for I hear as good exclamation on your worship as of any man in the city and though I be but a poor man I am glad to hear it 30

Verg And so am I

Leon I would fain know what you have to say

Irr Matry sir our watch to-night excepting your worship's presence ha ta en a couple of as arrant knaves as any in Messina

Dog A good old man sir he will be talking as they say. When the age is in the wit is out. God help us! it is a world to see. Well said! faith neighbour Verges well. God's a good man an two men ride of a horse one must ride behind. An honest soul! faith sir by my troth he is as ever broke bread but God is to be worshipped all men are not alike alas good neighbour!

Leon Indeed neighbour he comes too short of you

Dog Gifts that God gives

Leon I must leave you

Dog One word sir our watch sir have indeed comprehended two aspicuous persons and we would have them this morning examined before your worship

Leon Take their examination yourself and bring it me I am now in great haste as it may appear unto you

Dog It shall be suffigance

Leon Drink some wine ere you go fare you well

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess My lord they stay for you to give your daughter to her husband 60

Leon I'll wait upon them I am ready

[Exit LEONATO and MESSENGER]

Dog Go good partner go get you to Francis Seacole bid him bring his pen and inkhorn to the gaol we are now to examination these men

Irr And we must do it wisely

Dog We will spare for no wit I warrant you here a that shall drive some of them to a non come only get the learned writer to set down our excommunication and meet me at the gaol

[Exit]

ACT IV

SCENE I A Church

Enter DON PEDRO DON JOHN LEONATO FRIAR FRANCIS CLAUDIO BENEDICK HERO BEATRICE, and attendants

Leon Come Friar Francis be brief only to the plain form of marriage and you shall recount their particular duties afterwards

Fri You come hither my lord to marry this lady

Claud No

Leon To be married to her friar you come to marry her

Friar Lady you come hither to be married to this Count 10

Hero I do

Friar If either of you know any inward impediment why you should not be conjoined I charge you on your souls to utter it

Claud Know you any Hero?

Hero None my lord

Friar Know you any Count?

Leon I dare make his answer none

Claud O what men dare do! what men may do! what men daily do not knowing what they do! 21

Beat How now! interjections? Why then, some be of laughing as ah ha he!

Claud Stand thee by friar Father by your leave

Will you with free and unconstrained soul Give me this maid your daughter?

Leon As freely son as God did give her me

Claud And what have I to give you back whose worth

May counterpoise this rich and precious gift?

D Pedro Nothing unless you render her again

Claud Sweet Prince you learn me noble thankfulness 31

There Leonato take her back again

Give not this rotten orange to your friend

She's but the sign and semblance of her honour

Behold how like a maid she blushes here!

O what authority and show of truth

Can cunning sin cover itself withal!

Comes not that blood as modest evidence

To witness simple virtue? Would you not swear

All you that see her that she were a maid 40

By these exterior shows? But she is none

She knows the heat of a luxurious bed

Her blush is guiltiness not modesty

Leon What do you mean my lord?

Claud Not to be married

Not to knit my soul to an approved wanton

Leon Dear my lord if you in your own proof

Have vanquish'd the resistance of her youth

And made defeat of her virginity—

Claud I know what you would say if I have known her

You will say she did embrace me as a husband

And so extenuate the forehand sin 51

No Leonato

I never tempted her with word too large

But as a brother to his sister show'd

Bashful sincerity and comely love

Hero And seem'd I ever otherwise to you?

Claud Out on thee! Seeming I will write against it

You seem to me as Dian in her orb,
As chaste as is the bud ere it be blown

But you are more intemperate in your blood 60
Than Venus, or those pamp'ring animals
That rage in savage sensuality
Hero Is my lord well, that he doth speak so
wide?

Leon Sweet Prince, why speak not you?
D Pedro What should I speak?

I stand dishonour'd that have gone about
To link my dear friend to a common stale
Leon Are these things spoken, or do I but dream?
D John Sir, they are spoken, and these things
are true

Bene This looks not like a nuptial
Hero True! O God!

Claud Leonato stand I here? 70

Is this the Prince? is this the Prince's brother?
Is this face Hero's? are our eyes our own?

Leon All this is so but what of this my lord?

Claud Let me but move one question to your
daughter,

And, by that fatherly and kindly power
That you have in her, bid her answer truly
Leon I charge thee do so, as thou art my child

Hero O, God defend me! how am I beset!

What kind of catechising call you this?

Claud To make you answer truly to your
name 80

Hero Is it not Hero? Who can blot that name
With any just reproach?

Claud Marry that can Hero,
Hero itself can blot out Hero's virtue

What man was he talk'd with you yesternight
Out at your window betwixt twelve and one?

Now, if you are a maid answer to this

Hero I talk'd with no man at that hour my lord

D Pedro Why, then are you no maiden

Leonato
I am sorry you must hear upon mine honour,
Myself, my brother and this griev'd Count 90

Did see her, hear her, at that hour last night

Talk with a ruffian at her chamber window,

Who hath indeed, most like a liberal villain,

Confess'd the vile encounters they have had

A thousand times in secret

D John Fie, fie! they are not to be named, my
lord,

Not to be spoke of

There is not chastity enough in language
Without offence to utter them Thus, pretty lady,

I am sorry for thy much misgovernment 100

Claud O Hero what a Hero hadst thou been,

If half thy outward graces had been placed

About thy thoughts and counsels of thy heart!

Put far thee well most foul most fair! farewell

Thou pure impiety and impious purity!

For thee I'll lock up all the gates of love

And on my eyelids shall conjecture hang,
To turn all beauty into thoughts of harm,
And never shall it more be gracious

Leon Hath no man's dagger here a point for
me?

[*Hero swoons*]

Beat Why how now cousin! wherefore sink
you down?

D John Come let us go These things come
thus to light

Smother her spirits up

[*Exeunt DON PEDRO, DON JOHN, and CLAUDIO*]

Bene How doth the lady?

Beat Dead I think Help uncle!

Hero's why, *Hero*'s Uncle! Signior Benedick!
Friar!

Leon O Fate! take not away thy heavy hand
Death is the fairest cover for her shame

That may be wish'd for

Beat How now, cousin *Hero*!

Friar Have comfort lady

Leon Dost thou look up? 120

Friar Yea wherefore should she not?

Leon Wherefore! Why, doth not every earthly
thing

Cry shame upon her? Could she here deny

The story that is printed in her blood?

Do not live *Hero* do not open thine eyes

For did I think thou wouldest not quickly die,

Thought I thy spirits were stronger than thy
shames,

Myself would on the rearward of reproaches,

Strike at thy life Grieved I, I had but one?

Child I for that at frugal nature's frame? 130

O one too much by thee! Why had I one?

Why ever wast thou lovely in my eyes?

Why had I not with charitable hand

Took up a beggar's issue at my gates

Who smirched thus and mired with infamy,

I might have said No part of it is mine

This shame derives itself from unknown joins?"

But mine and mine I loved and mine I praised

And mine that I was proud on mine so much

That I myself was to myself not mine 140

Valuing of her—why she O she is fallen

Into a pit of ink that the wide sea

Hath drops too few to wash her clean again

And salt too little which may season give

To her foul tainted flesh!

Bene Sir sir be patient

For my part I am so attir'd in wonder

I know not what to say

Beat O on my soul my cousin is belied!

Bene I ads, were you her bedfellow last night?

Beat No truly not although until last night

I have thus twelvemonth been her bedfellow 150

Leon Confirm d confirm d! O that is stronger made

Which was before barr d up with ribs of iron!
Would the two Princes lie and Claudio lie
Who loved her so that speaking of her foulness
Wash d it with tears? Hence from her! let her die

Friar Hear me a little for I have only been
Silent so long and given way unto
This course of fortune

By noting of the lady I have mark d 160
A thousand blushing apparitions
To start into her face a thousand innocent
shames

In angel whiteness beat away those blushes
And in her eye there hath appear d a fire
To burn the errors that these Princes hold
Against her maiden truth Call me a fool
Trust not my reading nor my observations
Which with experimental seal doth warrant
The tenour of my book trust not my age
My reverence calling nor divinity 170
If this sweet lady lie not guiltless here
Under some biting error

Leon *Friar* it cannot be
Thou seest that all the grace that she hath left
Is that she will not add to her damnation
A sin of perjury she not denies it
Why seek ■ thou then to cover with excuse
That which appears in proper nakedness?

Friar Lady what man is he you are accused of?
Hero They know that do accuse me I know
none

If I know more of any man alive 180
Than that which maiden modesty doth warrant,
Let all my sins lack mercy! O my father
Prove you that any man with me conversed
At hours unmeet or that I yesternight
Maintain d the change of words with any
creature,

Refuse me, hate me torture me to death!

Friar There is some strange misprision in the
Princes

Bene Two of them have the very bent of
honour

And if their wisdoms be misled in this
The practice of it lives in John the Bastard 190
Whose spirits toil in frame of villainies

Leon I know not if they speak but truth of her
These hands shall tear her if they wrong her
honour

The proudest of them shall well hear of it
Time hath not yet so dried this blood of mine
Nor are so eat up my invention,
Nor fortune made such havoc of my means
Nor my bad life left me so much of friends

But they shall find awaked in such a kind
Both strength of limb and policy of mind 200
Ability in means and choice of friends
To quit me of them thoroughly

Friar Pause awhile
And let my counsel sway you in this case
Your daughter here the Princes left for dead
Let her awhile be secretly kept in
And publish it that she is dead indeed
Maintain a mourning ostentation
And on your family's old monument
Hang mournful epiraphs and do all rites
That appertain unto a burial 210

Leon What shall become of this? what will this
do?

Friar Marry thus well carried shall on her
behalf

Change slander to remorse that ■ some good
But not for that dream I on this strange course,
But on this travail look for greater birth
She dying as it must be so maintain d
Upon the instant that she was accused
Shall be lamented pitied and excused
Of every hearer for it so falls out
That what we have we prize not to the worth 220
Whiles we enjoy it but being lack d and lost
Why then we rack the value then we find
The virtue that possession would not show us
Whiles it was ours So will it fare with Claudio
When he shall hear she died upon his words
The idea of her life shall sweetly creep
Into his study of imagination

And every lovely organ of her life
Shall come apparell d in more precious habit
More moving delicate and full of life 230
Into the eye and prospect of his soul
Than when she lived indeed then shall he mourn
If ever love had interest in his liver
And wish he had not so accused her
No though he thought his accusation true
Let this be so and doubt not but success
Will fashion the event in better shape
Than I can lay it down in likelihood
But if all aim but this be level d false
The supposition of the lady's death 240

Will quench the wonder of her infamy
And if it sort not well you may conceal her
As best befits her wounded reputation
In some reclusive and religious life
Out of all eyes ■ tongues minds and injuries

Bene Signior Leonato let the friar advise you
And though you know my inwardness and love
Is very much unto the Prince and Claudio
Yet by mine honour I will deal in this 250
As secretly and justly as your soul
Should wish your body

Leon Being that I flow in grief,
The smallest twine may lead me
Friar 'Tis well consented presently away,
For to strange sores strangely they strain the
cure

Come, lady, die to live this wedding-day
Perhaps is but prolong'd have patience and
endure

[*Exeunt all but BENEDICK and BEATRICE*]

Bene Lady Beatrice, have you wept all this
while?

Beat Yea, and I will weep a while longer

Bene I will not desire that

Beat You have no reason, I do it freely 260

Bene Surely I do believe your fair cousin is
wronged

Beat Ah, how much might the man deserve of
me that would right her!

Bene Is there any way to show such friendship?

Beat A very even way, but no such friend

Bene May a man do it?

Beat It is a man's office, but not yours

Bene I do love nothing in the world so well as
you is not that strange? 270

Beat As strange as the thing I know not It were
as possible for me to say I loved nothing so well
as you but believe me not, and yet I lie not I
confess nothing nor I deny nothing I am sorry
for my cousin

Bene By my sword, Beatrice, thou lovest me

Beat Do not swear and eat it

Bene I will swear by it that you love me and I
will make him eat it that says I love not you

Beat Will you not eat your word? 280

Bene With no sauce that can be devised to it
I protest I love thee

Beat Why, then, God forgive me!

Bene What offence sweet Beatrice?

Beat You have stayed me in a happy hour I was
about to protest I loved you

Bene And do it with all thy heart

Beat I love you with so much of my heart that
none is left to protest

Bene Come bid me do anything for thee 290

Beat Kill Claudio

Bene Ha! not for the wide world

Beat You kill me to deny it Farewell

Bene Tarry, sweet Beatrice

Beat I am gone though I am here there is no
live in you nay, I pray you, let me go

Bene Beatrice—

Beat In faith I will go

Bene We'll be friends first

Beat You dare easier be friends with me than
fight with mine enemy 301

Bene Is Claudio thine enemy?

Beat Is he not approved in the height a villain,
that hath slandered, scorned dishonoured my
kinswoman? O that I were a man! What bear
her in hand until they come to take hands, and
then, with public accusation uncovered slander,
unmitigated rancour—O God that I were a man!
I would eat his heart in the market place

Bene Hear me Beatrice— 310

Beat Talk with a man out at a window! A
proper saying!

Bene Nay, but Beatrice—

Beat Sweet Hero! She is wronged, she is
slandered, she is undone

Bene Beat—

Beat Princes and counties! Surely, a princely
testimony, a goodly count, Count Comfect a
sweet gallant, surely! O that I were a man for
his sake! or that I had any friend would be a man
for my sake! But manhood is melted into cour-
tesies, valour into compliment, and men are only
turned into tongue, and trim ones too he is now
as valiant as Hercules that only tells a lie and
swears it I cannot be a man with wishing there-
fore I will die a woman with grieving.

Bene Tarry, good Beatrice By this hand, I love
thee

Beat Use it for my love some other way than
swearing by it 320

Bene Think you in your soul the Count Claudio
hath wronged Hero?

Beat Yea as sure as I have a thought or a
soul

Bene Enough I am engaged I will challenge
him I will kiss your hand, and so I leave you
By this hand, Claudio shall render me a dear
account As you hear of me, so think of me Go
comfort your cousin I must say she is dead, and
so, farewell [Exeunt 340]

SCENE II A prison

*Enter DOGBERRY VERGES, and SEXTON in gowns,
and the WATCH with CONRADE and BORACHIO*

Dog Is our whole dissembly appeared?

Verg O, a stool and a cushion for the sexton

Sex Which be the malefactors?

Dog Marry that am I and my partner

Verg Nay that's certain we have the exhi-
bition to examine

Sex But which are the offenders that are to be
examined? let them come before master con-
stable

Dog Yea marry let them come before me
What is your name friend? 11

Bora Borachio

Dog Pray write down, Borachio Yours,
sirrah?

Con I am a gentleman sir and my name is Conrade

Dog Write down master gentleman Conrade
Masters do you serve God?

Con { Yes sir we hope
Bora }

Dog Write down that they hope they serve God and write God first for God defend but God should go before such villains! Masters it is proved already that you are little better than false knaves and it will go near to be thought so shortly How answer you for yourselves?

Con Marry sir we say we are none

Dog A marvellous witty fellow I assure you but I will go about with him Come you hither sirrah a word in your ear sir I say to you it is thought you are false knaves 30

Bora Sir I say to you we are none

Dog Well stand aside Fore God they are both in a tale Have you writ down that they are none?

Ser Master constable you go not the way to examine you must call forth the watch that are their accusers

Dog Yes marry that is the easiest way Let the watch come forth Masters I charge you in the Prince's name accuse these men 40

1st Watch This man said us that Don John the Prince's brother was a villain

Dog Write down I since John a villain Why this is flat perjury to call a Prince's brother villain

Bo a Master constable—

Dog Pray thee fellow peace I do not like thy look I promise thee

Ser What heard you him say else?

and What Marry that he had received a thousand ducats of Don John for accusing the Lady Hero wrongfully 50

Dog Flat burglary as ever was committed

1st Watch Yes by mass that it is

Ser What else fellow?

1st Watch And that Count Claudio did mean upon his words to disgrace Hero before the whole assembly and not marry her

Dog O villain! thou wilt be condemned into everlasting redemptions for this

Ser What else? 60

1st Watch This is all

Ser And thus is more, masters than you can deny Prince John is this morning secretly stolen away Hero was in this manner accused in this very manner refused, and upon the grief of this suddenly died Master constable let these men be bound, and brought to Leonato's I will go before and show him their examination. [Exit

Dog Come let them be opinioned

1st Watch Let them be in the hands— 70

Con Off corcombs!

Dog God's my life where's the sergent? let him write down the Prince's officer corcombs Come bind them Thou naughty varlet!

Con Away! you are an ass you are an ass

Dog Dost thou not suspect my place? dost thou not suspect my years? O that he were here to write me down an ass! But, masters remember that I am an ass though I be not written down, yet forget not that I am an ass No thou villain thou art full of pity as shall be proved upon thee by good witness I am a wise fellow and, which is more an officer and which is more a householder and which is more as pretty a piece of flesh as any is in Messina and one that knows the law go to and a rich fellow enough go to and a fellow that hath had losses and one that hath two gowns and every thing handsome about him Bring him away O that I had been writ down an ass! [Exeunt 80

ACT V

SCENE I Before Leonato's house

Enter LEONATO and ANTONIO

Ant If you go on thus you will kill yourself And tis not wisdom thus to second grief Against yourself

Leon I pray thee cease thy counsel Which falls into mine ears as profitless As water in a sieve give not me counsel Nor let no comforter delight mine ear But such a one whose wrongs do suit with mine

Bring me a father that so loved his child Whose joy of her is overhelmed like mine And bid him speak of patience Measure his woe the length and breadth of mine And let it answer every strain for strain As thus for thus and such a grief for such In every lineament branch shape and form If such a one will smile and stroke his beard Bid sorrow wag cry hem! when he should groan

Patch grief with proverbs make misfortune drunk

With candle wasters bring him yet to me And I of him will gather patience But there is no such man For brother men 20 Can counsel and speak comfort to that grief Which they themselves not feel but tasting it Their counsel turns to passion, which before Would give preceptual medicine to rage Fester strong madness in a silken thread

Charm ache with air and agony with words
 No no, 'tis all men's office to speak patience
 To those that w ring under the load of sorrow,
 But no man's virtue nor sufficiency
 To be so moral when he shall endure 30
 The like himself Therefore give me no counsel
 My griefs cry louder than advertisement
Ant Therein do men from children nothing
 differ

Leon I pray thee, peace I will be flesh and
 blood,
 For there was never yet philosopher
 That could endure the toothache patiently,
 However they have writ the style of gods
 And made a push at chance and sufferance
Ant Yet bend not all the harm upon yourself,
 Make those that do offend you suffer too 40
Leon There thou speak'st reason nay, I will
 do so

My soul doth tell me Hero is belied,
 And that shall Claudio know, so shall the Prince
 And all of them that thus dishonour her
Ant Here comes the Prince and Claudio hastily

Enter DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO

D Pedro Good den, good den
Claud Good day to both of you
Leon Hear you, my lords—
D Pedro We have some haste, Leonardo
Leon Some haste, my lord! well, fare you well,
 my lord
 Are you so hasty now? well all is one
D Pedro Nay, do not quarrel with us, good
 old man 50
Ant If he could right himself with quarrelling,
 Some of us would lie low

Claud Who wrongs him?
Leon Marry thou dost wrong me, thou dis-
 sembler, thou —
 Nay, never lay thy hand upon thy sword,
 I fear thee not

Claud Marry, beshrew my hand
 If it should give your age such cause of fear
 In faith my hand meant nothing to my sword
Leon Tush, tush, man, never flee and jest at
 me

I speak not like a dotard nor a fool,
 As under privilege of age to brag 60
 What I have done being young or what would do
 Were I not old know Claudio to thy head
 Thou hast wrong'd mine innocent child and
 me
 That I am forced to lay my reverence by
 And, with grey hairs and bruise of many days
 Do challenge thee to trial of a man
 I say thou hast belied mine innocent child,

Thy slander hath gone through and through her
 heart
 And she lies buried with her ancestors,
 O in a tomb where never scandal slept, 70
 Save this of hers framed by thy villainy!

Claud My villainy?
Leon Thine Claudio thine, I say
D Pedro You say not right old man
Leon My lord, my lord,
 I'll prove it on his body if he dare
 Despite his nice fence and his active practice,
 His May of youth and bloom of lusthood
Claud Away! I will not have to do with you
Leon Canst thou so daff me? Thou hast kill'd
 my child

If thou kill'st me boy thou shalt kill a man
Ant He shall kill two of us, and men indeed 81
 But that's no matter, let him kill one first
 Win me and wear me let him answer me
 Come follow me, boy, come, sir boy come, fol-
 low me

Sir boy I'll whip you from your foining fence,
 Nay as I am a gentleman, I will
Leon Brother—
Ant Content yourself God knows I loved my
 niece,

And she is dead, slander'd to death by villains
 That dare as well answer a man indeed
 As I dare take a serpent by the tongue 90
 Boys apes braggarts, Jacks, milksops!
Leon Brother Antony—

Ant Hold you content What man! I know
 them yea,
 And what they weigh even to the utmost
 scruple—

Scrambling out facing, fashion monging boys
 That lie and cog and flout deprave and slander,
 Go anticly show outward hideousness,
 And speak off half a dozen dangerous words
 How they might hurt their enemies if they durst,
 And this is all

Leon But brother Antony—
Ant Come, 'tis no matter 100
 Do not you meddle, let me deal in this
D Pedro Gentlemen both we will not wake
 your patience

My heart is sorry for your daughter's death
 But on my honour, she was charged with noth-
 ing

But what was true and very full of proof
Leon My lord my lord—
D Pedro I will not hear you
Leon No? Come, brother away! I will be
 heard

Ant And shall or some of us will smart for it
 [Exit LEONARDO and ANTONIO]

D Pedro See see here comes the man we went to seek 110

Enter BENEDICK

Claud Now signior what news?

Bene Good day my lord

D Pedro Welcome signior you are almost come to part almost a fray

Claud We had like to have had our two noses snapped off with two old men without teeth

D Pedro Leonato and his brother What thinkest thou? Had we fought I doubt we should have been too young for them

Bene In a false quarrel there is no true valour I came to seek you both 121

Claud We have been up and down to seek thee for we are high proof melancholy and would fain have it beaten away Wilt thou use thy wit?

Bene It is in my scabbard shall I draw it?

D Pedro Dost thou wear thy wit by thy side?

Claud Never any did so though very many have been beside their wit I will bid thee draw as we do the minstrels draw to pleasure us

D Pedro As I am an honest man he looks pale Art thou sick or angry? 131

Claud What courage man? What though care killed a cat thou hast mettle enough in thee to kill care

Bene Sir I shall meet your wit in the career an you charge it against me I pray you choose another subject

Claud Nay then give him another staff this last was broke cross

D Pedro By this light he changes more and more I think he be angry indeed 141

Claud If he be he knows how to turn his girdle

Bene Shall I speak a word in your ear?

Claud God bless me from a challenge!

Bene [Aside to CLAUDIO] You are a villain I jest not I will make it good how you dare with what you dare and when you dare Do me right or I will protest your cowardice You have killed a sweet lady and her death shall fall heavy on you Let me hear from you 151

Claud Well I will meet you so I may have good cheer

D Pedro What a feast a feast?

Claud I faith, I thank him he hath bid me to a calf's head and a capon the which if I do not carve most curiously say my knife's naught Shall I not find a woodcock too?

Bene Sir your wit ambles well it goes easily

D Pedro I'll tell thee how Beatrice praised thy wit the other day I said thou hadst a fine wit

'True said she, a fine title one No said I a great wit Right says she, a great

gross one Nay said I a good wit Just said she it hurts nobody Nay said I the gentleman is wise Certain said she a wise gentleman Nay said I he hath the tongues That I believe said she for he swore a thing to me on Monday night which he for swore on Tuesday morning there's a double tongue there's two tongues Thus did she an hour together trans shape thy particular virtues yet at last she concluded with a sigh thou wast the properest man in Italy

Claud For the which she wept heartily and said she cared not

D Pedro Yea that she did but yet for all that an if she did not hate him deadly she would love him dearly the old man's daughter told us all 180

Claud All all and moreover God saw him when he was hid in the garden

D Pedro But when shall we see the savage bull a horns on the sensible Benedick's head?

Claud Yea and text underneath Here dwells Benedick the married man?

Bene Fare you well boy you know my mind I will leave you now to your gossip-like humour you break jests in braggarts do their blades which God be thanked hurt not My lord for your many courtesies I thank you I must discontinue your company your brother the bastard is fled from Messina you have among you killed a sweet and innocent lady For my Lord Lackbeard there he and I shall meet and till then peace be with him [Exit]

D Pedro He is earnest

Claud In most profound earnest and I'll warrant you for the love of Beatrice

D Pedro And hath challenged thee 200

Claud Most sincerely

D Pedro What a pretty thing man is when he goes in his doublet and hose and leaves off his wit!

Claud He is then a giant to an ape but then is an ape a doctor to such a man

D Pedro But soft you let me be pluck up my heart and be sad Did he not say my brother was fled?

Enter DOGBERRY VERGES and the WATCH with CO-RUDE and BORACHIO

Dog Come you sir if justice cannot tame you she shall ne'er weigh more reasons in her balance nay an you be a cursing hypocrite once you must be looked to

D Pedro How now? two of my brother's men bound Borachio one!

Claud Harken after their offence my lord

D Pedro Officers, what offence have these men done?

Dog Marry, sir, they have committed false report, moreover, they have spoken untruths, secondarily, they are slanders, sixth and lastly, they have belied a lady, thirdly, they have verified unjust things, and, to conclude they are lying knaves

D Pedro First, I ask thee what they have done, thirdly, I ask thee what's their offence, sixth and lastly, why they are committed, and, to conclude, what you lay to their charge

Claud Rightly reasoned, and in his own division and, by my troth, there's one meaning well suited

D Pedro Who have you offended, masters, that you are thus bound to your answer? this learned constable is too cunning to be understood what's your offence?

Bora Sweet Prince, let me go no farther to mine answer do you hear me, and let this Count kill me I have deceived even your very eyes what your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light, who in the night overheard me confessing to this man how Don John your brother incensed me to slander the Lady Hero how you were brought into the orchard and saw me court Margaret in Hero's garments, how you disgraced her, when you should marry her my villainy they have upon record, which I had rather seal with my death than repeat over to my shame The lady is dead upon mine and my master's false accusation, and, briefly, I desire nothing but the reward of a villain

D Pedro Runs not this speech like iron through your blood?

Claud I have drunk poison whiles he utter'd it

D Pedro But did my brother set thee on to this?

Bora Yea, and paid me richly for the practice of

D Pedro He is composed and framed of treachery

And fled he is upon this villainy

Claud Sweet Hero! now thy image doth appear In the rare semblance that I loved it first

Dog Come, bring away the plaintiffs by this time our sexton hath reformed Signior Leonato of the matter and, masters do not forget to specify, when time and place shall serve that I am an ass

Ver Here, here comes master Signior Leonato, and the sexton too

Re-enter LEONATO and ANTONIO with the SEXTON

Leon Which is the villain? let me see his eyes,

That, when I note another man like him, I may avoid him which of these is he?

Bora If you would know your wronger, look on me

Leon Art thou the slave that with thy breath hast kill'd

Mine innocent child?

Bora Yea even I alone

Leon No, not so, villain, thou beliest thyself Here stand a pair of honourable men,

A third is fled, that had a hand in it

I thank you Princes for my daughter's death

Record it with your high and worthy deeds

'Twas bravely done, if you bethink you of it

Claud I know not how to pray your patience Yet I must speak Choose your revenge yourself,

Impose me to what penance your invention

Can lay upon my sin yet sinn'd I not

But in mistaking

D Pedro By my soul nor I

And yet to satisfy this good old man,

I would bend under any heavy weight

That he'll enjoin me to

Leon I cannot bid you bid my daughter live,

That were impossible, but I pray you both,

Possess the people in Messina here

How innocent she died and if your love

Can labour aught in sad invention

Hang her an epitaph upon her tomb

And sing it to her bones sing it to-night

To-morrow morning come you to my house

And since you could not be my son in law

Be yet my nephew my brother hath a daughter,

Almost the copy of my child that's dead

And she alone is heir to both of us

Give her the right you should have given her

cousin

And so dies my revenge

Claud O noble sir,

Your over kindness doth wring tears from me!

I do embrace your offer and dispose

For henceforth of poor Claudio

Leon To-morrow then I will expect your

coming,

To-night I take my leave This naughty man

Shall face to face be brought to Margaret

Who I believe was pack'd in all this wrong

Hired to it by your brother

Bora No by my soul she was not,

Nor knew not what she did when she spoke to

me,

But always hath been just and virtuous

In any thing that I do know by her

Dog Moreover sir which indeed is not under

white and black this plaintiff here, the offender,

did call me ass I beseech you, let it be remem-

bered in his punishment And also the watch heard them talk of one Deformed they say he wears a key in his ear and a lock hanging by it and borrows money in God's name the which he hath used so long and never paid that now men grow hard hearted and will lend nothing for God's sake pray you examine him upon that point

Leon I thank thee for thy care and honest pains

Dog Your worship speaks like a most thankful and reverend youth and I praise God for you

Leon There's for thy pains

Dog God save the foundation!

Leon Go I discharge thee of thy prisoner and I thank thee 370

Dog I leave an arrant knave with your worship which I beseech your worship to correct yourself for the example of others God keep your worship! I wish your worship well God restore you to health! I humbly give you leave to depart and if a merry meeting may be wished God prohibit it! Come, neighbour

[*Exeunt DOGBERRY and VERGES*]

Leon Until to-morrow morning lords farewell

Ant Farewell my lords we look for you to-morrow

D *Prd* o We will not fail

Claud To-night I'll mourn with Hero

Leon [To the watch] Bring you these fellows on We'll talk with Margaret 342

How her acquaintance grew with this lewd fellow

[*Exeunt severally*]

SCENE II *Leonato's garden*

[*Enter BENEDICK and MARGARET meeting*]

Bene Pray thee sweet Mistress Margaret describe well at my hands by helping me to the speech of Beatrice

Marg Will you then write me a sonnet in praise of my beauty?

Bene In so high a style Margaret that no man living shall come over it for in most comely truth thou deservest it

Marg To have no man come over me! why shall I always keep below stairs? 30

Bene Thy wit is as quick as the greyhound's mouth it catches

Marg And yours as blunt as the fencer's foils which hit but hurt not

Bene A most manly wit Margaret it will not hurt a woman and so I pray thee call Beatrice I give thee the bucklers

Marg Give us the swords we have bucklers of our own

Bene If you use them, Margaret you must put

in the pikes with a vice and they are dangerous weapons for maids

Marg Well I will call Beatrice to you who I think hath legs

Bene And therefore will come

[*Exit MARGARET*]

[*Sings*] The god of love

That sits above

And knows me and knows me,

How pitiful I deserve—

I mean in sinning but in loving Leander the good swimmer Troilus the first employer of pandars and a whole bookful of these quondam carper mongers whose names yet run smoothly in the even road of a blank verse why they were never so truly turned over and over as my poor self in love Marry I cannot show it in rhyme I have tried I can find out no rhyme to lady but baby an innocent rhyme for scorn horn a hard rhyme for school fool a babbling rhyme very ominous endings no I was not born under a rhyming planet nor I can not woo in festival terms 41

[*Enter BEATRICE*]

Sweet Beatrice wouldst thou come when I called thee?

B at Yes signior and depart when you bid me

Bene O stay but till then!

B at Then is spoken fare you well now and yet ere I go let me go with that I came which is with knowing what hath passed betwixt you and Claudio

Bene Only foul words and thereupon I will kiss thee 51

B at Foul words is but foul wind and foul wind is but foul breath and foul breath is not some therefore I will depart unknissed

Bene Thou hast frightened the word out of his right sense so forcible is thy wit But I must tell thee plainly Claudio undergoes my challenge and either I must shortly hear from him or I will subscribe him a coward And I pray thee now tell me for which of my bad parts didst thou first fall in love with me? 61

B at For them all together which maintained so politic a state of evil that they will not admit any good part to intermingle with them But for which of my good parts did you first suffer love for me?

Bene Suffer love! a good epithet! I do suffer love indeed for I love thee against my will

B at In spite of your heart I think alas poor heart! If you spite it for my sake I will spite it for yours for I will never love that which my friend hates

Bene Thou and I are too wise to woo peaceably
Bent It appears not in this confession there's
 not one wise man among twenty that will praise
 himself

Bene An old an old instance, Beatrice, that
 lived in the time of good neighbours If a man do
 not erect in this age his own tomb ere he dies, he
 shall live no longer in monument than the bell
 rings and the widow weeps

Beat And how long is that think you?
Bene Question why an hour in clamour and a
 quarter in reum therefore is it most expedient
 for the wise, if Don Worm, his conscience find
 no impediment to the contrary, to be the trumpet
 of his own virtues, as I am to myself So much
 for praising myself, who, I myself will bear wit-
 ness is praiseworthy and now tell me, how doth
 your cousin? 91

Beat Very ill
Bene And how do you?
Beat Very ill too
Bene Serve God, love me, and mend There
 will I leave you too for here comes one in haste

Enter URSULA

Urr Madam, you must come to your uncle
 Yonder's old coil at home it is proved my Lady
 Hero hath been falsely accused the Prince and
 Claudio mightily abused, and Don John is the
 author of all who is fled and gone Will you
 come presently?

Beat Will you go hear this news signior?
Bene I will live in thy heart die in thy lap and
 be buried in thy eyes and moreover I will go
 with thee to thy uncle's [Exeunt]

SCENE III *A church*

Enter DON PEDRO CLAUDIO and three or four
with tapers

Claudio Is this the monument of Leonato?

A Lord It is, my lord

Claudio [Reading out of a scroll]

'Done to death by slanderous tongues

Was the Hero that here lies

Death, in guerdon of her wrongs

Gives her fame which never dies

So the life that died with shame

Lives in death with glorious fame"

Hang thou there upon the tomb
 Praising her when I am dumb 10
 Now, music, sound and sing your solemn hymn

SONG

"Pardon goddess of the night
 Those that slew thy virgin knight,

For the which, with songs of woe,
 Round about her tomb they go

Midnight assist our moan,

Help us to sigh and groan,

Heavily, heavily

Graves, yawn and yield your dead,

Till death be uttered,

Heavily heavily'

20

Claudio Now unto thy bones good night!

Yearly will I do this rite

D Pedro Good morrow masters put your
 torches out

The wolves have prey'd, and look, the gentle
 day

Before the wheels of Phoebus round about

Dapples the drowsy east with spots of grey

Thanks to you all, and leave us fare you well

Claudio Good morrow, masters each his several
 way

D Pedro Come let us hence and put on
 other weeds 30

And then to Leonato's we will go

Claudio And Hymen now with luckier issue
 speed's

Than this for whom we render'd up this woe
 [Exeunt]

SCENE IV *A room in Leonato's house*

Enter LEONATO ANTONIO, BENEDICH, BEATRICE,
MARGARET, URSULA, FRIAR FRANCIS and HERO

Friar Did I not tell you she was innocent?

Leon So are the Prince and Claudio who
 accused her

Upon the error that you heard debated

But Margaret was in some fault for this,

Although against her will as it appears

In the true course of all the question

Ant Well I am glad that all things sort so well

Bene And so am I being else by faith enforced

To call young Claudio to a reckoning for it

Leon Well daughter and you gentlewomen
 all

Withdraw into a chamber by yourselves 11

And when I send for you come hither mask'd
 [Exeunt LADIES]

The Prince and Claudio promised by this hour

To visit me You know your office, brother

You must be father to your brother's daughter

And give her to young Claudio

Ant Which I will do with confirm'd coun-
 tenance

Bene Friar I must entreat your pains I think

Friar To do what signior?

Bene To bind me or undo me one of them
 Signior Leonato truth it is good signior,

Your niece regards me with an eye of favour
Leon That eye my daughter lent her tis most true

Bene And I do with an eye of love requite her

Leon The sight whereof I think you had from me

From Claudio and the Prince but what's your will?

Bene Your answer sir is enigmatical

But for my will my will is your good will

May stand with ours this day to be conjoin'd

In the state of honourable marriage 30

In which good friar I shall desire your help

Leon My heart is with your liking

Friar And my help

Here comes the Prince and Claudio

I am your husband if you like of me
Hera And when I lived I was your other wife [Unmasking] 60

And when you loved you were my other husband

Claud Another Hero?

Hera Nothing certainer

One Hero died defiled but I do live

And surely as I live I am a maid

D Pedro The former Hero? Hero that is dead?

Leon She died my lord but whiles her slander lived

Friar All this amazement can I qualify

When after that the holy rites are ended,

I'll tell you largely of fair Hero's death

Meantime let wonder seem familiar 70

And to the chapel let us presently

Bene Soft and fair friar Which is Beatrice?

Beat [Unmasking] I answer to that name

What is your will?

Bene Do not you love me?

Beat Why no no more than reason

Bene Why then your uncle and the Prince and

Claudio

Have been deceived they swore you did

Beat Do not you love me?

Bene Troth no no more than reason

B at Why then my cousin Margaret and

Ursula

Are much deceived for they did swear you did

Bene They swore that you were almost sick 80

for me

B at They swore that you were well nigh

dead for me

Bene 'Tis no such matter Then you do not

love me?

B at No truly but in friendly recompense

Leon Come cousin I am sure you love the

gentleman

Claud And I'll be sworn upon't that he loves

her

For here's a paper written in his hand

A halting sonnet of his own pure brain,

Fashion'd to Beatrice

Hera

And here's another

Writ in my cousin's hand stolen from her pocket

Containing her affection unto Benedick 90

Bene A miracle! here's our own hands against

our hearts Come I will have thee but by this

light I take thee for pity

B at I would not deny you but by this good

day I yield upon great persuasion and partly

to save your life for I was told you were in a

consumption

Bene Peace! I will stop your mouth

Kissing her

Enter DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO and two or three others

D Pedro Good morrow to this fair assembly

Leon Good morrow Prince good morrow

Claudio

We here attend you Are you yet determined

To-day to marry with my brother's daughter?

Claud I'll hold my mind were she an Ethiop

Leon Call her forth, brother here's the friar

ready [Exit ANTONIO]

D Pedro Good morrow Benedick Why

what's the matter 40

That you have such a February face

So full of frost of storm and cloudiness?

Claud I think he thinks upon the savage bull

Tush fear not man we'll tip thy horns with

gold

And all Europa shall rejoice at thee

As once Europa did at lusty Jove

When he would play the noble beast in love

Bene Bull Jove sir had an amiable low

And some such strange bull leap'd your father a

cow

And got a calf in that same noble feat 50

Much I like to you for you have just his bleat

Claud For this I owe you here comes other

reckonings

Re-enter ANTONIO with the LADIES masked

Which is the lady I must seize upon?

Ant This same is she and I do give you her

Claud Why then she's mine Sweet let me see

your face

Leon No that you shall not till you take her

hand

Before this friar and swear to marry her

Claud Give me your hand before this holy

friar

D Pedro How dost thou Benedick, the married man? 100

Bene I'll tell thee what, Prince, a college of wit-crackers cannot flout me out of my humour. Dost thou think I care for a satire or an epigram? No, if a man will be beaten with brains, I shall wear nothing handsome about him. In brief, since I do purpose to marry, I will think nothing to any purpose that the world can say against it, and therefore never flout at me for what I have said against it, for man is a giddy thing, and this is my conclusion. For thy part Claudio, I did think to have beaten thee, but in that thou art like to be my kinsman, live unbruised and love my cousin.

Claud I had well hoped thou wouldst have denied Beatrice, that I might have cudgelled thee out of thy single life, to make thee a double dealer, which, out of question, thou wilt be, if

my cousin do not look exceeding narrowly to thee.

Bene Come, come, we are friends. Let's have a dance ere we are married, that we may lighten our own hearts and our wives' heels. 121

Leon We'll have dancing afterward.

Bene First of my word, therefore play, music. Prince, thou art sad, get thee a wife; get thee a wife: there is no staff more reverend than one tipped with horn.

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess My lord, your brother John is taken in flight,

And brought with armed men back to Messina.

Bene Think not on him till to-morrow. I'll devise thee brave punishments for him. Strike up, pipers. 122

Dance

[Exeunt]

20 The Life of KING HENRY THE FIFTH

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

KING HENRY THE FIFTH
DUKE OF GLOUCESTER } *brothers to the King*
DUKE OF BEDFORD }
DUKE OF EXETER } *Uncle to the King*
DUKE OF YORK } *cousin to the King*
EARL OF SALISBURY
EARL OF WESTMORELAND
EARL OF WARRICK
ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY
BISHOP OF ELY
EARL OF CAMBRIDGE
LORD SCROOP
SIR THOMAS GREY
SIR THOMAS SPRINGHAM } *officers in King Henry's army*
GOWER }
FLUELLEN }
MACMORRIS }
JANY } *soldiers in King Henry's army*
BATES }
COLLET }
WILLIAMS }
PISTOL }
NYCK }
BARDOLOPH }
BOY }
A HERALD

THREE MESSENGERS
CHARLES THE SIXTH *King of France*
LEWIS THE DAUPHIN
DUKE OF BURGUNDY
DUKE OF ORLEANS
DUKE OF BOURBON
THE CONSTABLE OF FRANCE
RAMBLERS } *French Lords*
GRANDPÉRE }
GOVERNOR OF HARFLEUR
MONTJOY *a French Herald*
AMBASSADOR to the King of England
FRENCH PRISONER

ISABEL, *Queen of France*
KATHARINE, *daughter to Charles and Isabel*
ALCEA, *a lady attending on her*
HOSTESS of a tavern in Eastcheap formerly MISTRESS
QUICKLY and now married to Pistol

CHORUS

NOBLES, EARLS, LORDS, LADIES, OFFICERS, SOLDIERS
CITIZENS and Attendants

SCENE England after wards France



PROLOGUE

Enter CHORUS

Chor. O for a Muse of fire, that would ascend
The brightest heaven of invention,
A kingdom for a stage, princes to act
And monarchs to behold the swelling scene!
Then should the warlike Harry, like himself,
Assume the port of Mars; and at his heels
Leash'd in like hounds, should famine, sword
and fire,
Crouch for employment. But pardon, gentles,
all,
The flat unraised spirits that have dared
On this unworthy scaffold to bring forth
So great an object: can this cockpit hold
The vasty fields of France? or may we cram
Within this wooden O the very casques
That did affright the air at Agincourt?
O pardon! since a crooked figure may
Attest in little place a million;
And let us ciphers to this great accompt

On your imaginary forces work.
Suppose within the girdle of these walls
Are now confined two mighty monarchies;
Whose high upreared and abutting fronts
The perilous narrow ocean parts asunder.
Piece out our imperfections with your
thoughts;
Into a thousand parts divide one man,
And make imaginary puissance.
Think when we talk of horses that you see
them
Printing their proud hoofs i' the receiving
earth;
For 'tis your thoughts that now must deck our
kings;
Carry them here and there, jumping o'er
times;
Turning the accomplishment of many years
Into an hour-glass, for the which supply
Admit me Chorus to this history,
Who prologue like your humble patience pray
Gently to hear kindly to judge our play. *[Exit]*

ACT I

SCENE I *London an ante-chamber in the
King's palace*

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP of CANTERBURY, and the
BISHOP OF ELY*

Cam My lord, I'll tell you, that self bill is urged,
Which in the eleventh year of the last king's reign
Was like, and had indeed against us pass'd,
But that the scrambling and unquiet time
Did push it out of farther question

Ely But how, my lord, shall we resist it now?

Cam It must be thought on If it pass against us,
We lose the better half of our possession

For all the temporal lands which men devout
By testament have given to the Church 10

Would they strip from us, being valued thus
As much as would maintain, to the King's honour,

Full fifteen earls and fifteen hundred knights,
Six thousand and two hundred good esquires,

And, to relief of lazars and weak age,
Of indigent faint souls past corporal toil,

A hundred almshouses right well supplied,
And to the coffers of the King beside,

A thousand pounds by the year thus runs the bill
Ely This would drink deep

Cam 'Twould drink the cup and all 20
Ely But what prevention?

Cam The King is full of grace and fair regard
Ely And a true lover of the holy Church

Cam The courses of his youth promised it not
The breath no sooner left his father's body,

But that his wildness, mortified in him
Seem'd to die too, yea at that very moment

Consideration like an angel, came
And whipp'd the offending Adam out of him,

Leaving his body as a paradise, 30
To envelope and contain celestial spirits

Never was such a sudden scholar made,
Never came reformation in a flood

With such a heady currance scouring faults,
Nor never Hydra-headed wilfulness

So soon did lose his seat and all at once
As in this King

Ely We are blessed in the change

Cam Hear him but reason in divinity
And all admiring with an inward wish

You would desire the King were made a prelate 41
Hear him debate of commonwealth affairs

You would say it hath been all in all his study
List his discourse of war, and you shall hear

A fearful battle render'd you in music
Turn him to any cause of policy,

The Gordian knot of it he will unloose,
Familiar as his garter that when he speaks,

The air, a charter'd libertine, is still,

And the mute wonder lurketh in men's ears,
To steal his sweet and honey'd sentences, 50

So that the art and practis'd part of life
Must be the mistress to this theoric

Which is a wonder how his Grace should glean it,
Since his addiction was to courses vain

His companies unletter'd rude and shallow,
His hours fill'd up with riots, banquets, sports,

And never noted in him any study,
Any retirement, any sequestration

From open haunts and popularity
Ely The strawberry grows underneath the

nettle 60

And wholesome berries thrive and ripen best
Neighbour'd by fruit of baser quality

And so the Prince obscured his contemplation
Under the veil of wildness which no doubt,

Grew like the summer grass fastest by night,
Unseen yet crevice in his faculty

Cam It must be so, for miracles are ceased,
And therefore we must needs admit the means

How things are perfected
Ely But, my good lord,

How now for mitigation of this bill 70
Urged by the commons? Doth his Majesty

Incline to it or no?

Cam He seems indifferent,
Or rather swaying more upon our part

Than cherishing the exhibitors against us,
For I have made an offer to his Majesty,

Upon our spiritual convocation
And in regard of causes now in hand,

Which I have open'd to his Grace at large,
As touching France, to give a greater sum

Than ever at one time the clergy yet 80
Did to his predecessors part withal

Ely How did this offer seem received my
lord?

Cam With good acceptance of his Majesty,
Save that there was not time enough to hear

As I perceived his Grace would fain have done,
The several and unhidden passages

Of his true titles to some certain dukedoms
And generally to the crown and seat of France

Derived from Edward his great grandfather
Ely What was the impediment that broke this

off? 90

Cam The French ambassador upon that instant
Craved audience and the hour I think is come

To give him hearing is it four o'clock?

Ely It is

Cam Then go we in to know his embassy,
Which I could with a ready guess declare,

Before the Frenchman speak a word of it
Ely I'll wait upon you and I long to hear

SCENE II *The same the presence chamber*

Enter KING HENRY GLOUCESTER BEDFORD EXETER WARWICK WESTMORELAND and Attendants

K. Hen Where is my gracious Lord of Canterbury?

Exe Not here in presence

K. Hen Send for him good uncle

West Shall we call in the ambassador my liege?

K. Hen Not yet my cousin we would be resolved

Before we hear him of some things of weight That task our thoughts concerning us and France

Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY and the BISHOP OF ELY

Cant God and his angels guard your sacred throne

And make you long become it

K. Hen Sure we thank you

My learned lord we pray you to proceed

And justly and religiously unfold 10

Why the law Salique that they have in France

Or should or should not bar us in our claim

And God forbid my dear and faithful lord

That you should fashion wrest or bow your reading

Or nicely charge your understanding soul

With opening titles miscreate whose right

Suits not in native colours with the truth

For God doth know how many now in health

Shall drop their blood in approbation

Of what your reverence shall incite us to 20

Therefore take heed how you impawn our person

How you awake our sleeping sword of war

We charge you in the name of God take heed

For never two such kingdoms did contend

Without much fall of blood whose guiltless drops

Are every one a woe a sore complaint

Gainst him whose wrongs give edge unto the swords

That make such waste in brief mortality

Under this conjunction speak my lord

For we will hear note and believe in heart 30

That what you speak is in your conscience wash'd

As pure as sin with baptism

Cant Then hear me gracious sovereign and you peers

That owe yourselves your lives and services

To this imperial throne There is no bar

To make against your Highness claim to France

But this which they produce from Pharamond

In terram Salicam mulieres ne succedant

No woman shall succeed in Salique land

Which Salique land the French unjustly glose 40
To be the realm of France and Pharamond
The founder of this law and female bar
Yet their own authors faithfully affirm
That the land Salique is in Germany
Between the floods of Sala and of Elbe
Where Charles the Great having subdued the
Saxons

There left behind and settled certain French
Who holding in disdain the German women
For some dishonest manners of their life
Establish'd then this law to wit no female 50
Should be inheritrix in Salique land

Which Salique as I said twixt Elbe and Sala

Is at this day in Germany call'd Meisen

Then doth it well appear the Salique law

Was not devised for the realm of France

Nor did the French possess the Salique land

Until four hundred one and twenty years

After defunction of King Pharamond

Idly supposed the founder of this law

Who died within the year of our redemption 60

Four hundred twenty six and Charles the Great

Subdued the Saxons and did seat the French

Beyond the river Sala in the year

Eight hundred five Besides their writers say

King Pepin which deposed Childeric

Did as heir general being descended

Of Blithild which was daughter to King Clothair

Make claim and title to the crown of France

Hugh Capet also who usurp'd the crown 69

Of Charles the Duke of Lorraine stole heir male

Of the true line and stock of Charles the Great

To find his title with some shows of truth

Though in pure truth it was corrupt and naughty

Convey'd himself as heir to the Lady Ingare

Daughter to Charlemain who was the son

To Lewis the Emperor and Lewis the son

Of Charles the Great Also King Lewis the

Tenth

Who was sole heir to the usurper Capet

Could not keep quiet in his conscience

Wearing the crown of France till satisfied 80

That fair Queen Isabel his grandmother

Was lineal of the Lady Ermengare

Daughter to Charles the foresaid Duke of

Lorraine

By the which marriage the line of Charles the

Great

Was re-united to the crown of France

So that as clear as is the summer sun

King Pepin's title and Hugh Capet's claim

King Lewis has satisfaction all appear

To hold in right and title of the female

So do the kings of France unto this day 90
Howbeit they would hold up this Salique law

To bar your Highness claiming from the female,
And rather choose to hude them in a net
Than amply to imbar their crooked titles
Usurp'd from you and your progenitors
A Hen May I with right and conscience make
this claim?

Cant The sin upon my head, dread sovereign!
For in the book of Numbers is it writ
"When the man dies, let the inheritance
Descend unto the daughter." Gracious lord, 100
Stand for your own, unwind your bloody flag,
Look back into your mighty ancestors
Go my dread lord to your great-grandsire's
tomb,

From whom you claim, invoke his warlike spirit,
And your great uncle's Edward the Black
Prince,

Who on the French ground play'd a tragedy,
Making defeat on the full power of France,
Whiles his most mighty father on a hill
Stood smiling to behold his lion's whelp 110
Forage in blood of French nobility
O noble English that could entertain
With half their forces the full pride of France
And let another half stand laughing by,
All out of work and cold for action!

Ely Awake remembrance of these valiant dead
And with your puissant arm renew their feats
You are their heir, you sit upon their throne,
The blood and courage that renown'd them
Runs in your veins, and my thrice puissant liege 120
Is in the very May morn of his youth,
Rape for exploits and mighty enterprises

Exe Your brother kings and monarchs of the
earth
Do all expect that you should rouse yourself,
As did the former lions of your blood
Hen They know your Grace hath cause and
means and might,
So hath your Highness, never King of England
Had nobles richer and more loyal subjects,
Whose hearts have left their bodies here in Eng-
land

And lie pavilion'd in the fields of France 129
Cant O let their bodies follow, my dear liege,
With blood and sword and fire to win your
right

In aid whereof we of the spirituality
Will raise your Highness such a mighty sum
As never did the clergy at one time
Bring in to any of your ancestors
A Hen We must not only arm to invade the
French,

But lay down our proportions to defend
Against the Scot, who will make road upon us
With all advantages

Cant They of those marches, gracious
sovereign 140
Shall be a wall sufficient to defend
Our inland from the puffing borderers
K Hen We do not mean the coursing snatchers
only,

But fear the main intendment of the Scot,
Who hath been still a giddy neighbour to us,
For you shall read that my great-grandfather
Never went with his forces into France
But that the Scot on his unfurnish'd kingdom
Came pouring like the tide into a breach,
With ample and brim fulness of his force 150
Galling the gleaned land with hot assays
Girding with grievous siege castles and towns,
That England being empty of defence
Hath shook and trembled at the ill neighbour-
hood

Cant She hath been then more fear'd than
harm'd my liege,
For hear her but exempl'd by herself
When all her chivalry hath been in France
And she a mourning widow of her nobles,
She hath herself not only well defended 160
But taken and impounded as a stray
The King of Scots, whom she did send to France,
To fill King Edward's fame with prisoner kings
And make her chronicle as rich with praise
As is the ooze and bottom of the sea
With sunken wreck and sumless treasures

West But there's a saying very old and true,
"If that you will France win
Then with Scotland first begin
For once the eagle England being in prey,
To her unguarded nest the wassel Scot 170
Comes sneaking and so sucks her princely eggs,
Playing the mouse in absence of the cat,
To tear and havoc more than she can eat

Exe It follow's then the cat must stay at home
Yet that is but a crush'd necessity
Since we have locks to safeguard necessities,
And pretty traps to catch the petty thieves
While that the armed hand doth fight abroad
The advised head defends itself at home,
For government though high and low and lower, 181
Put into parts doth keep in one consent,
Congreering in a full and natural close,
Like music

Cant Therefore doth heaven divide
The state of man in divers functions
Setting endeavors in continual motion,
To which is fixed, as an aim or butt
Obedience for so work the honey bees,
Creatures that by a rule in nature teach
The act of order to a peopled kingdom
They have a king and officers of sorts, 190

Enter PISTOL *and* MISTRESS QUICKLY *the hostess*

Bard Here comes Ancient Pistol and his wife
good corporal be patient here How now mine
host Pistol! 30

Put Base like call st thou me host?

Now by this hand I swear I scorn the term
Nor shall my Nell keep lodgers

Quick No by my troth not long for we can
not lodge and board a dozen or fourteen gentle
women that live honestly by the prick of their
needles but it will be thought we keep a bawdy
house straight [*Nym and Pistol draw*] O well a
day Lady if he be not drawn now! we shall see
wilful adultery and murder committed 40

Bard Good lieutenant! good corporal! offer
nothing here

Nym Pish!

Put Pish for thee Iceland dog! thou prick-ear d
cur of Iceland!

Quick Good Corporal Nym show thy valour
and put up your sword

Nym Will you shog off? I would have you
solus

Put 'Solus' egregious dog! O viper vile!

The solus in thy most mercurious face 50

The solus in thy teeth and in thy throat

And in thy hateful lungs yes in thy maw perdy

And which is worse within thy nasty mouth!

I do retort the solus in thy bowels

For I can take and Pistol's cock is up

And flashing fire will follow

Nym I am not Barbason you cannot conjure
me I have an humour to knock you indifferently
well If you grow foul with me, Pistol I will
scour you with my rapier as I may in fair terms
if you would walk off I would prick your gurs a
little in good terms as I may and that's the
humour of it

Put O braggart vile and damned furious wight!
The grave doth gape and doting death is near
Therefore exhale

Bard Hear me hear me what I say he that
strikes the first stroke I'll run him up to the hilts
as I am a soldier [*Drums*]

Put An oath of muckle might and fury shall
abate 70

Give me thy fist thy fore foot to me give

Thy spurs are most tall

Nym I will cut thy throat one time or other in
fair terms that is the humour of it

Put Coup a spore!

That is the word I thee defy again

O hound of Crete think st thou my spouse to get?

No to the spital go

And from the powdering tub of infancy

Fetch forth the Lazar kite of Cressid's kind, do
Doll Tearsheet she by name, and her espouse
I have, and I will hold, the quondam Quickly
For the only she and—*puce* there's enough.
Go to

Enter the boy

Boy Mine host Pistol you must come to my
master and you hostess he is very sick and
would to bed Good Bardolph put thy face
between his sheets and do the office of a warm-
ing pan Faith, he's very ill

Bard Away you rogue! 90

Quick By my troth he'll yield the crow a
pudding one of these days The king has killed
his heart Good husband come home presently

[*Exeunt* MISTRESS QUICKLY *and* BOY]

Bard Come shall I make you two friends? We
must to France together why the devil should
we keep knives to cut one another's throats?

Put Let floods o'erswell and fiends for food
howl on!

Nym You'll pay me the eight shillings I won of
you at betting?

Put Base is the slave that pays 100

Nym That now I will have that's the humour
of it

Put As manhood shall compound push home

They draw

Bard By this sword he that makes the first
thrust I'll kill him by this sword I will

Put Sword is an oath, and oaths must have
their course

Bard Corporal Nym, an thou wilt be friends be
friends an thou wilt not why then be enemies
with me too Prishee put up

Nym I shall have my eight shillings I won of
you at betting? 110

Put A noble shalt thou have, and present pay
And liquor likewise will I give to thee
And friendship shall combine and brotherhood
I'll in e by Nym and Nym shall live by me

Is not this just? for I shall surter be

Unto the camp and profits will accrue

Give me thy hand

Nym I shall have my noble?

Put In cash most justly paid 120

Nym Well, then, that's the humour of it.

Re-enter MISTRESS QUICKLY

Quick As ever you came of women, come in
quickly to Sir John Ah poor heart! he is so
shaked of a burning quotidian tertian that it is
most lamentable to behold Sweet men, come to
him

Nym The king hath run bad humours on the

knight that's the even of it

Put Nym, thou hast spoke the right,
His heart is fractured and corroborate 130

Nym The King is a good King but it must be
as it may he passes some humours and careers

Put Let us condole the knight, for, lamblins,
we will live

SCENE II *Southampton a council-chamber*

Enter EXETER, BEDFORD, and WESTMORELAND

Bed 'Fore God, his Grace is bold, to trust these
traitors

Ex They shall be apprehended by and by

West How smooth and even they do bear
themselves!

As if allegiance in their bosoms sat,

Crowned with faith and constant loyalty

Bed The King hath note of all that they intend,

By interception which they dream not of

Ex Nay but the man that was his bedfellow

Whom he hath dull'd and cloy'd with gracious
favours,

That he should, for a foreign purse, so sell 10

His sovereign's life to death and treachery

Trumpets sound *Enter* KING HENRY SCROOP,
CAMBRIDGE, GREY, and Attendants

A Hen Now sits the wind fair, and we will
aboard

My Lord of Cambridge, and my kind Lord of
Masham,

And you, my gentle knight, give me your
thoughts

Think you not that the powers we bear with us

Will cut their passage through the force of
France,

Doing the execution and the act

For which we have in head assembled them?

Scroop No doubt, my liege, if each man do his
best

A Hen I doubt not that since we are well
persuaded 20

We carry not a heart with us from hence

That grows not in a fair consent with ours

Nor leave not one behind that doth not wish

Success and conquest to attend on us

Cam Never was monarch better fear'd and
loved

Than is your Majesty there's not I think a
subject

That sits in heart-grief and uneasiness

Under the sweet shade of your government

Grey True those that were your father's
enemies

Have steep'd their galls in honey and do serve
you 30

With hearts create of duty and of zeal

A Hen We therefore have great cause of
thankfulness

And shall forget the office of our hand

Sooner than quittance of desert and merit

According to the weight and worthiness

Scroop So service shall with steeled sinews toil,

And labour shall refresh itself with hope,

To do your Grace incessant services

A Hen We judge no less Uncle of Exeter,
Enlarge the man committed yesterday 40

That rail'd against our person we consider

It was excess of wine that set him on

And on his more advice we pardon him

Scroop That's mercy, but too much security

Let him be punish'd sovereign lest example

Breed by his sufferance, more of such a kind

A Hen O, let us yet be merciful

Cam So may your Highness and yet punish too

Grey Sir

You show great mercy, if you give him life 50

After the taste of much correction

A Hen Alas, your too much love and care of
me

Are heavy orisons 'gainst this poor wretch!

If little faults proceeding on distemper

Shall not be wink'd at, how shall we stretch our
eye

When capital crimes chew'd swallow'd, and
digested,

Appear before us? We'll yet enlarge that man,

Though Cambridge, Scroop and Grey in their
dear care

And tender preservation of our person,

Would have him punish'd And now to our

French causes 60

French causes

Who are the late commissioners?

Cam I one, my lord

Your Highness bade me ask for it to-day

Scroop So did you me my liege

Grey And I my royal sovereign

A Hen Then, Richard Earl of Cambridge,

there is yours

There is yours Lord Scroop of Masham and, sir

knight

Grey of Northumberland this same is yours

Read them and know I know your worthiness

My Lord of Westmoreland and uncle Exeter 70

We will aboard to-night Why how now gentlemen!

What see you in those papers that you lose

So much complexion? Look ye, how they change!

Their cheeks are paper Why what read you

there,

That ha's so coward'd and chased your blood

Out of appearance?

Cam I do confess my fault
 And do submit me to your Highness' mercy
Grey } To which we all appeal
Scroop }
A Hen The mercy that was quick in us but late
 By your own counsel is suppress'd and kill'd 80
 You must not dare for shame to talk of mercy
 For your own reasons turn into your bosoms
 As dogs upon their masters worrying you
 See you my princes and my noble peers
 These English monsters! My Lord of Cambridge here
 You know how apt our love was to accord
 To furnish him with all appertinents
 Belonging to his honour and this man
 Hath for a few light crowns lightly conspired
 And sworn unto the practices of France, 90
 To kill us here in Hampton to the which
 This knight no less for bounty bound to us
 Than Cambridge is hath likewise sworn But O
 What shall I say to thee Lord Scroop? thou
 cruel

Ingrateful savage and inhuman creature!
 Thou that didst bear the key of all my counsels
 That knew'st the very bottom of my soul
 That almost mightst have coin'd me into gold
 Wouldst thou have practis'd on me for thy use!
 May it be possible that foreign hire 100
 Could out of thee extract one spark of evil
 That might annoy my finger? 'Tis so strange,
 That though the truth of it stands off as gross
 As black and white my eye will scarcely see it
 Treason and murder ever kept together
 As two yoke-devils sworn to either's purpose,
 Working so grossly in a natural cause
 That admiration did not hoop at them
 But thou against all proportion, didst bring in
 Wonder to wait on treason and on murder 110
 And whatsoever cunning fiend it was
 That wrought upon thee so preposterously
 Hath got the voice in hell for excellence
 All other devils that suggest by treasons
 Do botch and bungle up damnation
 With patches, colours and with forms being
 fetch'd
 From glistering semblances of piety
 But he that temper'd thee had thee stand up
 Gave thee no instance why thou shouldst do
 treason,
 Unless to dub thee with the name of traitor 120
 If that same demon that hath gull'd thee thus
 Should with his lion gait walk the whole world,
 He might return to a sorry Tartar back
 And tell the legions I can never win
 A soul so easy as that Englishman's

O how hast thou with jealousy infected
 The sweetness of alliance! Show men dutiful?
 Why so didst thou seem they grave and
 learned?
 Why so didst thou come they of noble family?
 Why so didst thou seem they religious? 130
 Why so didst thou or are they spare in diet
 Free from gross passion or of mirth or anger
 Constant in spirit not swerving with the blood
 Garnish'd and deck'd in modest complement
 Not working with the eye without the ear
 And but in purged judgement trusting neither?
 Such and so finely boild didst thou seem
 And thus thy fall hath left a kind of blot
 To mark the full fraught man and best indued
 With some suspicion I will weep for thee 140
 For this revolt of thine methinks is like
 Another fall of man Their faults are open
 Arrest them to the answer of the law
 And God acquit them of their practice!
Exe I arrest thee of high treason by the name
 of Richard Earl of Cambridge
 I arrest thee of high treason by the name of
 Henry Lord Scroop of Masham
 I arrest thee of high treason by the name of
 Thomas Grey knight of Northumberland 150
Scroop Our purposes God justly hath discover'd
 And I repent my fault more than my death
 Which I beseech your Highness to forgive
 Although my body pay the price of it
Cam For me the gold of France did not seduce
 Although I did admit it as a motive
 The sooner to effect what I intended
 But God be thanked for prevention
 Which I in sufferance heartily will rejoice
 Beseeching God and you to pardon me 160
Grey Never did faithful subject more rejoice
 At the discovery of most dangerous treason
 Than I do at this hour joy in myself
 Prevented from a damned enterprise
 My fault but not my body pardon sovereign
A Hen God quit you in his mercy! Hear your
 sentence
 You have conspired against our royal person,
 Join'd with an enemy proclaim'd and from his
 coffers
 Received the golden earnest of our death
 Wherein you would have sold your king to
 slaughter 170
 His princes and his peers to servitude
 His subjects to oppression and contempt
 And his whole kingdom into desolation
 Touching our person seek we no revenge
 But we our kingdom's safety must so tender
 Whose ruin you have sought that to her laws

We do deliver you Get you therefore hence,
 Poor miserable wretches to your death
 The taste whereof, God of his mercy give
 You patience to endure, and true repentance 180
 Of all your dear offences! Bear them hence

[*Exeunt* CAMBRIDGE, SCROOP and GREY,
guarded]

Now, lords, for France, the enterprise whereof
 Shall be to you as us, like glorious
 We doubt not of a fair and lucky war,
 Since God so graciously hath brought to light
 This dangerous treason lurking in our way
 To hinder our beginnings We doubt not now
 But every rub is smoothed on our way
 Then forth, dear countrymen let us deliver
 Our puissance into the hand of God, 190
 Putting it straight in expedition
 Cheerly to sea, the signs of war advance
 No king of England, if not king of France

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III *London before a tavern*

Enter PISTOL, MISTRESS QUICKLY, NYM, BARDOLPH,
and BOY

Quick Prithee, honey-sweet husband let me
 bring thee to Staines

Pist No for my manly heart doth yearn
 Bardolph, be blithe Nym, rouse thy vaunting

voice

Boy, bristle thy courage up for Falstaff he is
 dead,

And we must yearn therefore

Bard Would I were with him, wheresome'er he
 is either in heaven or in hell!

Quick Nay, sure, he's not in hell he's in
 Arthur's bosom if ever man went to Arthur's
 bosom A made a finer end and went away an
 it had been any christom child, a parted even
 just between twelve and one even at the turning
 of the tide for after I saw him fumble with the
 sheets and play with flowers and smile upon his
 fingers' ends, I knew there was but one way, for
 his nose was as sharp as a pen and a babbled of
 green fields "How now, Sir John! quoth I
 what, man! be o'good cheer So a cried out
 God God God! three or four times Now I
 to comfort him, bid him a should not think of
 God I hoped there was no need to trouble him-
 self with any such thoughts yet So a bade me
 lay more clothes on his feet I put my hand into
 the bed and felt them and they were as cold as
 any stone, then I felt to his knees an they were
 as cold as any stone and so up and up and
 an all was as cold as any stone

Nym They say he cried out of sack

Quick Ay that a did

30

Bard And of women
 Quick Nay, that a did not
 Boy Yes, that a did and said they were devils
 incarnate

Quick A' could never abide carnation, 'twas a
 colour he never liked

Boy A' said once, the devil would have him
 about women

Quick A did in some sort, indeed, handle
 women but then he was rheumatic, and talked
 of the whore of Babylon 41

Boy Do you not remember, a saw a flea stick
 upon Bardolph's nose and a' said it was a black
 soul burning in hell fire?

Bard Well the fuel is gone that maintained that
 fire that s all the riches I got in his service

Nym Shall we shog? the King will be gone
 from Southampton

Pist Come let s away My love, give me
 thy lips

Look to my chattels and my movables 50
 Let senses rule, the word is 'Pitch and Pay'

Trust none

For oaths are straws men's faiths are wafer-
 cakes

And hold fast is the only dog my duck

Therefore *Caveto* be thy counsellor

Go clear thy crystals Yoke-fellows in arms,

Let us to France, like horse leeches my boys

To suck to suck the very blood to suck!

Boy And that s but unwholesome food they
 say 60

Pist Touch her soft mouth and march

Bard Farewell, hostess [*Kissing her*]

Nym I cannot kiss that is the humour of it,
 but adieu

Pist Let housewifery appear keep close, I thee
 command

Quick Farewell adieu [*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV *France the King's palace*

*Flourish Enter the FRENCH KING the DAUPHIN, the
 DUKES OF BERRI and BRETAGNE, the CONSTABLE,
 and others*

Fr King Thus comes the English with full
 power upon us,

And more than carefully it us concerns

To answer roy ally in our defences

Therefore the Dukes of Berri and of Bretagne

Of Brabant and of Orleans shall make forth

And you Prince Dauphin with all swift dispatch

To line and new repair our towns of war

With men of courage and with means defendant

For England his approaches makes as fierce

As waters to the sucking of a gulf

It fits us then to be as provident

10

As fear may teach us out of late examples
Left by the fatal and neglected English
Upon our fields

Duc My most redoubted father
It is most meet we arm us against the foe
For peace itself should not so dull a kingdom
Though war nor no known quarrel were in ques-
tion

But that defences musters preparations
Should be maintain'd assembled and collected
As were a war in expectation 20
Therefore I say tis meet we all go forth
To view the sick and feeble parts of France
And let us do it with no show of fear
No with no more than if we heard that England
Were busied with a Whitsun morris-dance
For my good liege she is so idly king'd
Her sceptre so fantastically borne
By a vain giddy shallow humorous youth
That fear attends her not

Com O peace Prince Dauphin!
You are too much mistaken in this king 30
Question your Grace the late ambassadors
With what great state he heard their embassy
How well supplied with noble counsellors
How modest in exception and withal
How terrible in constant resolution
And you shall find his vanities forespent
Were but the outside of the Roman Brutus
Covering discretion with a coat of folly
As gardeners do with ordure hide those roots
That shall first spring and be most delicate 40
Duc Well tis not so my Lord High Con-
table

But though we think it so it is no matter
In cases of defence tis best so weigh
The enemy more mighty than he seems
So the proportions of defence are fill'd
Which of a weak and negligardly projection
Dorth like a muser spoil his coat with scanting
A little cloth

Fr King Think we King Harry strong
And Princes look you strongly arm to meet him
The kindred of him hath been flesh'd upon us 50
And he is bred out of that bloody strain
That haunted us in our famil'ar paths
Witness our too much memorable shame
When Cressy battle fatally was struck
And all our princes captured by the hand
Of that black name Edward Black Prince of
Wales

Whiles that his mountain sure on mountain
standing
Up in the air crown'd with the golden sun,
Saw his heroical seed and smiled to see him,
Mangle the work of nature and deface 60

The patterns that by God and by French fathers
Had twenty years been made This is a stem
Of that victorious stock and let us fear
The native mightiness and fare of him

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess Ambassadors from Harry King of Eng-
land

Do crave admittance to your Majesty
Fr King We'll give them present audience
Go and bring them

[Exit MESSENGER and certain Lords]

You see this chase is hotly follow'd friends
Duc Turn head and stop pursuit for coward
dogs
Most spend their mouths when what they seem
to threaten 70
Runs far before them Good my sovereign,
Take up the English short and let them know
Of what a monarchy you are the head
Self love my liege is not so vile a sin
As self neglecting

Re-enter Lord with EXETER and train

Fr King From our brother England?
Ex From him and thus he greets your
Majesty
He wils you in the name of God Almighty
That you divest yourself and lay apart
The borrow'd glories that by gift of heaven,
By law of nature and of nations long 80
To him and to his heirs namely the crown
And all wide stretched honours that pertain
By custom and the ordinance of times
Unto the crown of France That you may know
'Tis no sinister nor no awkward claim,
Pick'd from the worm holes of long vanish'd
days

Not from the dust of old oblivion raked,
He sends you this most memorable line
In every branch truly demonstrative 90
Willing you overlook this pedigree
And when you find him evenly deriv'd
From his most famed of famous ancestors
Edward the Third, he bids you then resign
Your crown and kingdom, and rectly held
From him the native and true challenger
Fr King Or else what follows?
Ex Bloody constraint for if you hide the
crown

Even in your hearts there will he rake for it
Therefore in fierie tempest is he coming
In thunder and in earthquake like a Jov'e 100
That if requiring fail he will compel
And bids you in the bowels of the Lord
Deliver up the crown and to take mercy

On the poor souls for whom this hungry war
Opens his vasty jaws and on your head
Turning the widows' tears the orphans' cries,
The dead men's blood the pining maidens'
groans

For husbands fathers, and betrothed lovers,
That shall be swallow'd in this controversy
This is his claim his threatening, and my mes-
sage, 110

Unless the Dauphin be in presence here
To whom expressly I bring greeting too
Fr King For us, we will consider of this
further

To-morrow shall you bear our full intent
Back to our brother England

Dau For the Dauphin,
I stand here for him what to him from Eng-
land?

Exe Scorn and defiance, slight regard con-
tempt,

And anything that may not misbecome
The mighty sender, doth he prize you at
Thus says my king an if your father's high-
ness

Do not in grant of all demands at large 121
Sweeten the bitter mock you sent his Majesty,
He'll call you to so hot an answer of it
That eaves and wombly vaultages of France
Shall chide your trespass and return your mock
In second accent of his ordnance

Dau Sav, if my father render fair return,
It is against my will for I desire
Nothing but odds with England to that end
As matching to his youth and vanity, 130
I did present him with the Paris balls
Exe He'll make your Paris Louvre shake
for it,

Were it the mistress-court of mighty Europe
And be assured you'll find a difference
As we his subjects have in wonder found,
Between the promise of his greener days
And these he masters now now he weighs
time

Even to the utmost grain that you shall read
In your own losses, if he stay in France
Fr King To-morrow shall you know our
mind at full 140

Exe Dispatch us with all speed lest that our
king

Come here himself to question our delay
For he is footed in this land already

Fr King You shall be soon dispatch'd with
fair conditions

A night is but small breath and little pause
To answer matters of this consequence

[*Flurish* *Exeunt*]

ACT III

PROLOGUE

Enter CHORUS

Chor Thus with imagined wing our swift scene
flies

In motion of no less celerity
Than that of thought Suppose that you have seen
The well appointed king at Hampton pier
Embark his royalty, and his brave fleet
With silken streamers the young Phoebus
fanning

Play with your fancies, and in them behold
Upon the hempen tackle ship-boys climbing
Hear the shrill whistle which doth order give
To sounds confused, behold the threaden sails
Borne with the invisible and creeping wind 11
Draw the huge bottoms through the furrow'd sea,
Breasting the lofty surge O do but think
You stand upon the rivage and behold
A city on the inconstant billow dancing,
For so appears this fleet majestic

Holding due course to Harfleur Follow follow
Grapple your minds to sternage of this navy
And leave your England as dead midnight still
Guarded with grandsires babies, and old women
Either past or not arrived to pith and puissance
For who is he, whose chin is but enrich'd
With one appearing hair that will not follow
These cull'd and choice-drawn cavaliers to
France? 121

Work, work your thoughts and therein see a
siege

Behold the ordnance on their carriages
With fatal mouths gaping on grided Harfleur
Suppose the ambassador from the French comes
back

Tells Harry that the king doth offer him
Katharine his daughter and with her to dowry
Some petty and unprofitable dukedoms 131
The offer likes not and the nimble gunner
With linstock now the devilish cannon touches
Alarm and drummers go off

And down goes all before them Still be kind
And cheere out our performance with your mind
[*Exe*]

SCENE I *Town before Harfleur*

Alarm *Enter* KING HENRY, EXETER BEDFORD
GLOUCESTER and Soldiers with scaling ladders

A Hen Once more unto the breach dear
friends once more

Or close the wall up with our English dead
In peace there's nothing so becomes a man
As modest stillness and humility

But when the blast of war blows in our ears
 Then imitate the action of the tiger
 Stiffen the sinews summon up the blood
 Disguise fair nature with hard favour'd rage
 Then lend the eye a terrible aspect
 Let it pry through the portage of the head 10
 Like the brass cannon let the brow overwhelm it
 As fearfully as doth a galled rock
 Obhang and jutting his confounded base
 Swill'd with the wild and wasteful ocean
 Now set the teeth and stretch the nostril wide
 Hold hard the breath and bend up every spirit
 To his full height On on you noblest English
 Whose blood is fet from fathers of war proof
 Fathers that like so many Alexanders 19
 Have in these parts from morn till even fought
 And sheathed their swords for lack of argument
 Dishonour no your mothers now attest
 That those whom you call'd fathers did beget you
 Be copy now to men of grosser blood
 And teach them how to war And you good
 yeoman

Whose limbs were made in England show us
 here
 The mettle of your pasture let us swear
 That you are worth your breeding which I
 doubt not
 For there is none of you so mean and base
 That hath not noble lustre in your eyes 30
 I see you stand like greyhounds in the slips
 Straining upon the start The game's afoot
 Follow your spirit and upon this charge
 Cry God for Harry England and Saint
 George!

[*Exeunt Alarum and chambers go off*]

SCENE II *The same*

Enter NYM BARDOLPH PISTOL and BOY

Bard On, on, on, on, on! to the breach to the
 breach

Nym Pray thee corporal stay the knocks are
 too hot and for mine own part I have not a case
 of lives the humour of it is too hot that is the
 very plain song of it

Pist The plain-song is most just for humours
 do abound

'Knocks go and come God's vassals drop and
 die

And sword and shield

In bloody field 10

Both win immortal fame

Boy Would I were in an alehouse in London!
 I would give all my fame for a pot of ale and
 safety

Pist And I

If wishes would prevail with me,

My purpose should not fail with me
 But rather would I live

Boy As duly but not as truly
 As bird doth sing on bough 20

Enter FLUELLEN

Flu Up to the breach you dogs! avaunt you
 cullions! [*D rings them forward*]

Pist Be merciful great Duke to men of mould
 Abate thy rage abate thy manly rage
 Abate thy rage great Duke!
 Good hawkcock bate thy rage use lenity sweet
 chuck!

Nym These be good humours! your honour
 wins bad humours [*Exeunt all but boy*]

Boy As young as I am I have observed these
 three swashers I am bor to them all three but
 all they three though they would serve me could
 not be man to me for indeed three such antics
 do not amount to a man For Bardolph he is
 white livered and red faced by the means where
 of a faces it our but fights not For Pistol he
 hath a killing tongue and a quiet sword by the
 means whereof a breaks words and keeps whole
 weapons For Nym he hath heard that men of
 few words are the best men and therefore he
 scorns to say his prayers lest a should be thought
 a coward but his few bad words are matched
 with as few good deeds for a never broke any
 man's head but his own and that was against a
 post when he was drunk They will steal any
 thing and call it purchase Bardolph stole a hute
 case bore it twelve leagues and sold it for three
 half pence Nym and Bardolph are sworn bro-
 thers in drinking and in Calais they stole a fire
 shovel I knew by that piece of service the men
 would carry coals They would have me as
 familiar with men's pockets as their gloves or
 their handkerchers which makes much against
 my manhood if I should take from another's
 pocket to put into mine for it is plain pocketing
 up of wrongs I must leave them and seek some
 better service their villainy goes against my weak
 stomach and therefore I must cast it up [*Exit*]

Re-enter FLUELLEN *GOWER following*

Gow Captain Fluellen, you must come pre-
 sently to the mines the Duke of Gloucester
 would speak with you 60

Flu To the mines! tell you the Duke it is not
 so good to come to the mines for look you, the
 mines is not according to the disciplines of the
 war the concavities of it is not sufficient for
 look you th' adversary you may discuss unto
 the Duke, look you as d'ge himself four yard
 under the countermine by Cheshu I think a

will plow up all if there is not better directions
Gow The Duke of Gloucester, to whom the order of the siege is given is altogether directed by an Irishman, a very valiant gentleman, i' faith
Flu It is Captain Macmorris, is it not?
Gow I think it be

Flu By Cheshu he is an ass, as in the world I will verify as much in his beard he has no more directions in the true disciplines of the wars, look you, of the Roman disciplines, than is a puppy-dog

Enter MACMORRIS and CAPTAIN JAMY

Gow Here a' comes, and the Scots captain, Captain Jamy, with him 80

Flu Captain Jamy is a marvellous valorous gentleman, that is certain, and of great expedition and knowledge in th' aunchient wars, upon my particular knowledge of his directions by Cheshu he will maintain his argument as well as any military man in the world, in the disciplines of the pristine wars of the Romans

Jamy I say gud day, Captain Fluellen

Flu God-den to your worship, good Captain James 90

Gow How now, Captain Macmorris! have you quit the mines? have the pioners given o'er?

Mac By Chrish la! tish ill done the work ish give over, the trompet sound the retreat By my hand, I swear, and my father's soul the work ish ill done, it ish give over I would have blowed up the town, so Chrish save me la! in an hour O, tish ill done, tish ill done, by my hand, tish ill done! 99

Flu Captain Macmorris, I beseech you now, will you voutsafe me, look you, a few disputations with you, as partly touching or concerning the disciplines of the war, the Roman wars in the way of argument look you, and friendly communication, partly to satisfy my opinion, and partly for the satisfaction look you of my mind as touching the direction of the military discipline, that is the point

Jamy It sall be vary gud gud feith gud captains bath and I sall quit you with gud leve, as I may pick occasion, that sall I, marry 100

Mac It is no time to discourse so Chrish save me the day is hot and the weather, and the wars and the king and the Dukes it is no time to discourse The town is beseeched and the trumpet call us to the breach, and we talk and be Chrish, do nothing 'tis shame for us all so God sa' me, 'tis shame to stand still it is shame by my hand and there is throats to be cut and works to be done and there ish nothing done so Chrish sa me la! 101

Jamy By the mess, ere these eyes of mine tal e themselves to slomber, ay ll de gud service, or ay'll lig i' the grund for it, ay, or go to death, and ay ll pay 't as valorously as I may, that sall I suerly do that is the breff and the long Marry, I wad full fain hear some question 'tween you tway

Flu Captain Macmorris, I think look you, under your correction there is not many of your nation— 102

Mac Of my nation! What ish my nation? Ish a villain, and a bastard, and a knave, and a rascal— What ish my nation? Who talks of my nation?

Flu Look you, if you take the matter otherwise than is meant Captain Macmorris peradventure I shall think you do not use me with that affability as in discretion you ought to use me, look you, being as good a man as yourself both in the disciplines of war and in the derivation of my birth, and in other particularities

Mac I do not know you so good a man as myself so Chrish save me I will cut off your head

Gow Gentlemen both you will mistake each other

Jamy A' that s a foul fault

A parley sounded

Gow The town sounds a parley 109

Flu Captain Macmorris when there is more better opportunity to be required look you I will be so bold as to tell you I know the disciplines of war, and there is an end [Exeunt

SCENE III *The same before the gates*

The GOVERNOR and some Citizens on the walls, the English forces below Enter KING HENRY and his train

K Hen How yet resolves the governor of the town?

This is the latest parole we will admit
 Therefore to our best mercy give yourselves,
 Or like to men proud of destruction
 Defy us to our worst for as I am a soldier,
 A name that in my thoughts becomes me best
 If I begin the battery once again
 I will not leave the half achieved Harfleur
 Till in her ashes she lie buried
 The gates of mercy shall be all shut up 110
 And the flesh'd soldier, rough and hard of heart
 In liberty of bloody hand shall range
 With conscience wide as hell mowing like grass
 Your fresh fair virgins and your flowering
 infants

What is it then to me if impious war
 Array'd in flames like to the prince of fiends
 Do with his smirch'd complexion all fell feats
 Enlink'd to waste and desolation?

What is t to me when you yourselves are
cause

If your pure maidens fall into the hand 20

Of hot and forcing violation?

What rein can hold licentious wickedness

When down the hill he holds his fierce career?

We may as bootless spend our vain command

Upon the enraged soldiers in their spoil

As send precepts to the Leviathan

To come ashore. Therefore you men of Harfleur

Take pity of your town and of your people

Whiles yet my soldiers are in my command

Whiles yet the cool and temperate wind of
grace

O'erblows the filthy and contagious clouds 1

Of heady murder spoil and villainy

If not why in a moment look to see

The blind and bloody soldier with foul hand

Defile the locks of your shrill shrieking
daughters

Your fathers taken by the silver beards

And their most reverend heads dash'd to the
walls

Your naked infants spitted upon pikes

Whiles the mad mothers with their howls con-
fused

Do break the clouds as did the wives of Jewry

At Herod's bloody hunting slaughtermen 41

What say you? will you yield and thus avoid

Or guilty in defence be thus destroy'd?

Gov. Our expectation hath this day an end

The Dauphin whom of succours we entreated

Returns us that his powers are yet not ready

To raise so great a siege. Therefore great
King

We yield our town and lives to thy soft mercy

Enter our gates dispose of us and ours

For we no longer are defensible 50

A. Hen. Open your gates. Come uncle Exeter

Go you and enter Harfleur there remain

And fortify it strongly 'gainst the French

Use mercy to them all. For us dear uncle

The winter coming on and sickness growing

Upon our soldiers we will retire to Calais

To-morrow in Harfleur will we be your guest

To-morrow for the march are we address'd

{Flourish. The King and his train enter
the town}

SCENE IV. The French King's palace

Enter KATHARINE and ALICE

Kath. Alice tu as te en Angleterre et tu parl's
bien le langage

Alice. Un peu madame

Kath. J'ai p' te m'enseigner il faut que j'apprenne
à parler. Comment appelez-vous la main en Anglois?

Alice. La main? elle est appelée de hand

Kath. De hand. Et les doigts?

Alice. Les doigts? ma foi j'oublie les doigts mais
je me souviens bras. Les doigts? je pense qu'ils sont
appelés de fingres ou de fingres 11

Kath. La main de hand les doigts de fingres
Je pense que je suis le bon cocher j'ai gagné deux
mots d'Anglois. Vient. Comment appelez-vous les
ongles?

Alice. Les ongles? nous les appelons de nails

Kath. De nails. Écoutez dites moi si je parle
bien de hand de fingres et de nails

Alice. C'est bien dit madame si est fort bon
Anglois 20

Kath. Dites moi l'Anglois pour le bras

Alice. De arm m'arm

Kath. Et l'elbow?

Alice. De elbow

Kath. De elbow. Je m'en fais la répétition de tout
les mots que vous m'avez appris des à présent

Alice. Il est trop difficile madame comme je pense

Kath. Excusez moi Alice cochez de hand de
fingres de nails de arma de bilbow 31

Alice. De elbow madame

Kath. O Seigneur Dieu j'm'en oublie l'elbow
Comment appelle-t-on l'col?

Alice. De neck madame

Kath. De neck. Et le menton?

Alice. De chin

Kath. De sin. Le col de neck le menton de sin 39

Alice. Oui Sans votre honneur en vérité vous
prononcez les mots aussi droit que les natifs d'Angle-
terre

Kath. Je ne doute point d'apprendre par la grâce de
Dieu et en peu de temps

Alice. N'avez-vous pas dit j'ai oublié ce que je vous ai
enseigné?

Kath. Non je reciterai à vous promptement de
hand de fingres de mails—

Alice. De nails madame

Kath. De nails de arm de elbow 50

Alice. Sans votre honneur de elbow

Kath. Aussi dis je de elbow de neck et de sin
Comment appelle-t-on le p' et la robe?

Alice. De foot m'arm et de coun

Kath. De foot et de coun. O Seigneur Dieu! ce sont
mots de sonnerie corruptible gros et impuissants
et non pour les dames d'honneur d'user. Je ne vous fais
prononcer ces mots des à présent les seigneurs de France

pour tout le monde. Ici le foot et le coun!

A. Ammonis j'irai une autre fois et je vous en
semblerai de hand de fingres de nails de arm de
elbow de neck de sin de foot de coun

Alice. Excellent madame

Kath. C'est assez pour une fois allons nous à dîner
{Exeunt}

SCENE V *The same*

Enter the KING OF FRANCE, the DAUPHIN, the DUKE OF BOURBON, the CONSTABLE OF FRANCE and others

Fr King 'Tis certain he hath pass'd the river Somme

Con And if he be not fought withal, my lord, Let us not live in France, let us quit all

And give our vineyards to a barbarous people

Dau O *Dieu* *vivant*! shall a few sprays of us, The emptying of our father's luxury,

Our scions put in wild and savage stock,

Spirit up so suddenly into the clouds

And overlook their grafters?

Bour Normans, but bastard Normans, Norman bastards! 10

Mort de ma vie! if they march along

Unfought withal, but I will sell my dukedom,

To buy a slobbery and a dirty farm

In that nook shotten isle of Albion

Con *Dieu de batailles*! where have they this mettle?

Is not their climate foggy, raw and dull,

On whom, as in despite, the sun looks pale

Killing their fruit with frowns? Can sodden water,

A drench for sur-rein'd jades their barley broth,

Decoet their cold blood to such valiant hear? 20

And shall our quick blood, spirited with wine,

Seem frosty? O, for honour of our land,

Let us not hang like roping icicles

Upon our houses thatch, whiles a more frosty

people

Sweat drops of gallant youth in our rich fields!

Poor we may call them in their native lords

Dau By faith and honour

Our madams mock at us and plainly say

Our mettle is bred out and they will give

Their bodies to the lust of English youth 30

To new store France with bastard warriors

Bour They bid us to the English dancing

schools,

And teach lavoltas high and swift corantos,

Saying our grace is only in our heels

And that we are most lofty runaways

Fr King Where is Montjoy the herald?

speed him hence

Let him greet England with our sharp defiance

Up princes! and with spirit of honour edged

More sharper than your swords hie to the field

Charles Delabreth High Constable of France

You Dukes of Orleans Bourbon and of Berry 41

Alençon Brabant Bar and Burgundy

Jaques Chatillon Rambures Vaudemont

Beaumont, Grandpré Roussi and Laucenberg

Fort, Lestrale, Boucqualt, and Charolois, High dukes, great princes barons, lords, and knights,

For your great seats now quit you of great shames

Bar Harry England that sweeps through our land

With pennons painted in the blood of Harfleur

Rush on his host as doth the melted snow 50

Upon the valleys whose low vassal seat

The Alps doth spit and void his rheum upon

Go down upon him you have power enough,

And in a captive chariot into Rouen

Bring him our prisoner

Con This becomes the great

Sorry am I his numbers are so few

His soldiers sick and famish'd in their march,

For I am sure when he shall see our army,

He'll drop his heart into the sink of fear

And for achievement offer us his ransom 60

Fr King Therefore, Lord Constable haste on

Montjoy,

And let him say to England that we send

To know what willing ransom he will give

Prince Dauphin, you shall stay with us in Rouen

Dau Not so I do beseech your Majesty

Fr King Be patient for you shall remain with us

Now forth Lord Constable and princes all,

And quickly bring us word of England's fall

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE VI *The English camp in Picardy*

Enter COWER and FLUELLEN meeting

Cow How now, Captain Fluellen! come you from the bridge?

Flu I assure you there is very excellent service committed at the bridge

Cow Is the Duke of Exeter safe?

Flu The Duke of Exeter is as magnanimous as

Agamemnon and a man that I love and honour

with my soul and my heart and my duty, and

my life and my living and my uttermost power

he is not—God be praised and blessed!—any

hurt in the world but keeps the bridge most

valiantly with excellent discipline There is an

aunchient lieutenant there at the bridge I think

in my very conscience he is as valiant a man as

Mark Antony and he is a man of no estimation

in the world but I did see him do as gallant

service

Cow What do you call him?

Flu He is called Aunchient Pistol

Cow I know him not

Fr et PISTOL

Flu Here is the man

First Captain I thee beseech to do me favours

The Duke of Exeter doth love thee well

Flu Ay I praise God and I have merited some love at his hands

First Bardolph a soldier firm and sound of heart

And of buxom valour hath by cruel fate

And giddy Fortune's furious fickle wheel

That goddess blind

That stands upon the rolling restless stone— 30

Flu By your patience Aunchient Pistol Fortune is painted blind with a muffle afore her eyes to signify to you that Fortune is blind and she is painted also with a wheel to signify to you which is the moral of it that she is turning and inconstant and mutability and variation and her foot look you is fixed upon a spherical stone which rolls and rolls and rolls in good truth the poet makes a most excellent description of it Fortune is an excellent moral 40

First Fortune is Bardolph's foe and frowns on him

For he hath stolen a pax and hanged must a be

A damned death!

Let gallows gape for dogs let man go free

And let not hemp his wind pipe suffocate

But Exeter hath given the doom of death

For pax of little price

Therefore, go speak the Duke will hear thy voice

And let not Bardolph's vital thread be cut

With edge of penny cord and vile reproach 50

Speak captain for his life and I will thee requite

Flu Aunchient Pistol I do partly understand your meaning

First Why then, rejoice therefore

Flu Certainly aunchient it is not a thing to rejoice at for if look you he were my brother I would desire the Duke to use his good pleasure and put him to execution for discipline ought to be used

First Die and be damn'd and fgo for thy friendship 60

Flu It is well

First The fig of Spain!

Flu Very good

Gow Why this is an arrant counterfeit rascal I remember him now a bawd a cutpurse

Flu I'll assure you a uttered as brave words at the bridge as you shall see in a summer's day But it is very well what he has spoke to me, that is well I warrant you when time is serve 69

Gow Why tis a gull a fool a rogue that now and then goes to the wars to grace himself at his

return into London under the form of a soldier And such fellows are perfect in the great commander's names and they will learn you by rote where services were done at such and such a sounce at such a breach at such a convoy who came off bravely who was shot who disgraced what terms the enemy stood on and thus they con perfectly in the phrase of war which they trid up with new tuned oaths and what a beard of the general's cut and a horrid suit of the camp will do among foaming bottles and ale washed wars is wonderful to be thought on But you must learn to know such slanders of the age or else you may be marvellously mistook

Flu I tell you what Captain Gowen I do perceive he is not the man that he would gladly make show to the world he is if I find a hole in his coat I will tell him my mind [Drum heard] Hark you the king is coming and I must speak with him from the bridge 91

Drum and colours Enter KING HENRY GLOUCESTER and Soldiers

God bless your Majesty!

A Hen How now Fluellen! earnest thou from the bridge?

Flu Ay so please your Majesty The Duke of Exeter has very gallantly maintained the bridge the French is gone off look you and there is gallant and most brave passages marry the adversary was have possession of the bridge but he is enforced to retire and the Duke of Exeter is master of the bridge I can tell your Majesty the Duke is a brave man 101

A Hen What men have you lost Fluellen?

Flu The perdicion of the adversary hath been very great reasonable great marry for my part I think the Duke hath lost never a man but one that is like to be executed for robbing a church one Bardolph if your Majesty know the man his face is all bubukles and wheelks and knobs and flames o' fire and his lips blows at his nose and it is like a coal of fire sometimes blue and sometimes red but his nose is executed and his fire's out

A Hen We would have all such offenders so cut off and we give express charge that in our marches through the country there be nothing compelled from the villages nothing taken but paid for none of the French upbraided or abused in disdainful language for when leniv and cruelty play for a kingdom the gentler gamester is the soonest winner 120

Tucket Enter MONTJOY

Mont You know me by my habit.

H. Hen Well then I know thee what shall I know of thee?

Mont My master's mind

H. Hen Unfold it

Mont Thus says my king "Say thou to Harry of England Though we seemed dead, we did but sleep advantage is a better soldier than rashness Tell him we could have rebuked him at Harfleur, but that we thought not good to bruise an injury till it were full ripe now we speak upon our cue, and our voice imperial England shall repent his folly see his weakness, and admire our sufferance Bid him therefore consider of his ransom, which must proportion the losses we have borne, the subjects we have lost, the disgrace we have digested, which in weight to re answer his pettiness would bow under For our losses his exchequer is too poor for the effusion of our blood, the muster of his kingdom too faint a number, and for our disgrace, his own person, kneeling at our feet, but a weak and worthless satisfaction To this add defiance and tell him, for conclusion he hath betrayed his followers, whose condemnation is pronounced" So far my King and master, so much my office

H. Hen What is thy name? I know thy quality

Mont Montjoy

H. Hen Thou dost thy office fairly Turn thee back,

And tell thy King I do not seek him now,
But could be willing to march on to Calais 150
Without impeachment for, to say the sooth,
Though 'tis no wisdom to confess so much
Unto an enemy of craft and vantage
My people are with sickness much enfeebled,
My numbers lessen'd and those few I have
Almost no better than so many French,
Who when they were in health I tell thee herald,
I thought upon one pair of English legs
Did march three Frenchmen Yet, forgive me,
God, 159

That I do brag thus! This your air of France
Hath blown that vice in me, I must repent
Go therefore, tell thy master here I am
My ransom is this frail and worthless trunk,
My army but a weak and sickly guard
Yet, God before tell him we will come on
Though France himself and such another neigh-
bour

Stand in our way There's for thy labour, Mont-
joy

Go bid thy master well advise himself
If we may pass we will if we be hinder'd 169
We shall your tawny ground with our red blood
Discolour and so Montjoy fare you well
The sum of all our answer is but thus

We would not seek a battle as we are,
Nor, as we are we say we will not shun it
So tell your master

Mont I shall deliver so Thanks to your

Highness

Glou I hope they will not come upon us now

K. Hen We are in God's hand, brother, not in theirs

March to the bridge it now draws toward night
Beyond the river we'll encamp ourselves 180
And on to-morrow bid them march away

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE VII *The French camp near Agincourt*

Enter the CONSTABLE OF FRANCE the LORD RAMBURES ORLEANS, DAUPHIN, with others

Con Tur! I have the best armour of the world
Would it were day!

Orl You have an excellent armour, but let my horse have his due

Con It is the best horse of Europe

Orl Will it never be morning?

Dau My Lord of Orleans, and my Lord High Constable, you talk of horse and armour?

Orl You are as well provided of both as any prince in the world 190

Dau What a long night is this! I will not change my horse with any that treads but on four pasterns *Ca hir!* he bounds from the earth as if his entrails were hairs, *le cheval volant* the Pegasus *chez les nuées de feu!* When I bestride him I soar I am a hawk he trots the air the earth sings when he touches it the basest horn of his hoof is more musical than the pipe of Hermes

Orl He's of the colour of the nutmeg 20

Dau And of the heat of the ginger It is a beast for Perseus he is pure air and fire, and the dull elements of earth and water never appear in him but only in patient stillness while his rider mounts him he is indeed a horse, and all other jades you may call beasts

Con Indeed my lord it is a most absolute and excellent horse

Dau It is the prince of palfreys his neigh is like the bidding of a monarch and his countenance enforces homage 31

Orl No more cousin

Dau Nay the man hath no wit that cannot from the rising of the lark to the lodging of the lamb vary deserved praise on my palfrey it is a theme as fluent as the sea turn the sands into eloquent tongues and my horse is argument for them all tis a subject for a sovereign to reason on and for a sovereign's sovereign to ride and for the world familiar to us and un-
lay apart their particular functions and

him I once writ a sonnet in his praise and began thus Wonder of nature —

Orl I have heard a sonnet begin so to one's mistress

Dau Then did they imitate that which I composed to my courser for my horse is my mistress

Orl Your mistress bears well

Dau Me well which is the prescript praise and perfection of a good and particular mistress

Con Nay for methought yesterday your mistress shrewdly shook your back

Dau So perhaps did yours

Con Mine was not bridled

Dau O then belike she was old and gentle and you rode like a kern of Ireland your French horse off and in your strait crossers

Con You have good judgement in horseman ship 59

Dau Be warned by me then they that ride so and ride not warily fall into foul bogs I had rather have my horse to my mistress

Con I had as lief have my mistress a jade

Dau I tell thee Constable my mistress wears his own hair

Con I could make as true a boast as that if I had a sow to my mistress

Dau *Le chien se retourne à son propre vomissement et la truie lève au bourbier* thou makest use of any thing 70

Con Yet do I not use my horse for my mistress or any such proverb so little kin to the purpose

Ram My Lord Constable the armour that I saw in your tent to-night are those stars or suns upon it?

Con Stars my lord

Dau Some of them will fall to-morrow I hope

Con And yet my sky shall not want

Dau That may be for you bear a many superfluously and twere more honour some were away 81

Con Even as your horse bears your praises who would trot as well were some of your brags dismounted

Dau Would I were able to load him with his desert! Will it never be day? I will trot to-morrow a mile and my way shall be paved with English faces

Con I will not say so for fear I should be faced out of my way but I would it were morning for I would fain be about the ears of the English

Ram Who will go to hazard with me for twenty prisoners?

Con You must first go yourself to hazard ere you have them

Dau 'Tis midnight I'll go arm myself [Exit
O! The Dauphin longs for morning

Ram He longs to eat the English

Con I think he will eat all he kills 100

Orl By the white hand of my lady he's a gallant prince

Con Swear by her foot that she may tread out the oath

Orl He is simply the most active gentleman of France

Con Doing is activity and he will still be doing

Orl He never did harm that I heard of

Con Nor will do none to-morrow he will keep that good name still 111

Orl I know him to be valiant

Con I was told that by one that knows him better than you

Orl What's he?

Con Marry he told me so himself and he said he cared not who knew it

Orl He needs not it is no hidden virtue in him 119

Con By my faith sir but it is never any body saw it but his lackey 'tis a hooded valour and when it appears it will bate

Orl Ill will never said well

Con I will cap that proverb with There is flattery in friendship

Orl And I will take up that with Give the devil his due

Con Well placed there stands your friend for the devil have at the very eye of that proverb with A pox of the devil 130

Orl You are the better at proverbs by how much A fool's bolt is soon shot

Con You have shot over

Orl 'Tis not the first time you were overshot

Enter a MESSENGER

As is My Lord High Constable the English lie within fifteen hundred paces of your tents

Con Who hath measured the ground?

Alas The Lord Grandpre

Con A valiant and most expert gentleman Would it were day! Alas poor Harry of England! he longs not for the dawning as we do 141

O! What a wretched and peevish fellow is this King of England to mope with his fat brained followers so far out of his knowledge!

Con If the English had any apprehension they would run away

Orl That they lack for if their heads had any intellectual armour they could never wear such heavy head pieces 149

Ram That island of England breeds very valiant creatures their mastiffs are of unmatchable courage

Orl Foolish curs that run winking into the

mouth of a Russian bear and have their heads
crushed like rotten apples! You may as well say,
that's a valiant flea that dare eat his breakfast on
the lip of a lion

Con Just, just, and the men do sympathize with
the mastiffs in robustious and rough coming on,
leaving their wits with their wives and then give
them great meals of beef and iron and steel, they
will eat like wolves and fight like devils

Orl Ay, but these English are shrewdly out of
beef

Con Then shall we find to-morrow they have
only stomachs to eat and none to fight Now is it
time to arm come, shall we about it?

Orl It is now two o'clock but, let me see, by
ten

We shall have each a hundred Englishmen.

[*Exeunt*]

ACT IV PROLOGUE

Enter CHORUS

Chor Now entertain conjecture of a time
When creeping murmur and the poring dark
Fills the wide vessel of the universe
From camp to camp through the foul womb of
night

The hum of either army stilly sounds,
That the fix'd sentinels almost receive
The secret whispers of each other's watch
Fire answers fire, and through their paly flames
Each battle sees the other's umber'd face,
Steed threatens steed in high and boastful neighs
Piercing the night's dull ear, and from the tents
The armourers accomplishing the knights
With busy hammers closing rivets up
Give dreadful note of preparation

The country cocks do crow, the clocks do toll,
And the third hour of drowsy morning name
Proud of their numbers and secure in soul,
The confident and over-lusty French
Do the low-rated English play at dice
And chide the cripple tardy-gaited night
Who like a foul and ugly witch doth limp
So tediously away The poor condemned English,
Like sacrifices by their watchful fires
Sit patiently and inly ruminate
The morning's danger and their gesture sad
Investing lank lean cheeks and war-worn coats
Presenteth them unto the gazing moon
So many horrid ghosts O now who will behold
The royal captain of this ruin'd band
Walking from watch to watch from tent to tent
Let him cry, Praise and glory on his head!
For forth he goes and visits all his host
Bids them good morrow with a modest smile

And calls them brothers, friends, and country-
men

Upon his royal face there is no note
How dread an army hath enrounded him,
Nor doth he dedicate one jot of colour
Unto the weary and all-watched night,
But freshly looks and over bears attaint
With cheerful semblance and sweet majesty
That every wretch pining and pale before,
Beholding him plucks comfort from his looks
A largess universal like the sun
His liberal eye doth give to every one,
Thawing cold fear that mean and gentle all
Behold as may unworthiness define,
A little touch of Harry in the night
And so our scene must to the battle fly
Where—O for pity!—we shall much disgrace
With four or five most vile and ragged foils,
Right ill-disposed in brawl ridiculous
The name of Agincourt Yet sit and see
Minding true things by what their mockeries be
[*Exit*]

SCENE I The English camp at Agincourt

Enter KING HENRY, BEDFORD and GLOUCESTER

K Hen Gloucester, 'tis true that we are in
great danger,

The greater therefore should our courage be
Good morrow, brother Bedford God Almighty!
There is some soul of goodness in things evil,
Would men observingly distil it out
For our bad neighbour makes us early stirrers,
Which is both healthful and good husbandry
Besides they are our own and consciences
And preachers to us all admonishing
That we should dress us fairly for our end
Thus may we gather honey from the weed
And make a moral of the devil himself

Enter ERPINGHAM

Good morrow old Sir Thomas Erpingham
A good soft pillow for that good white head
Were better than a churlish turf of France
Erp Not so my liege this lodging likes me
better

Since I may say "Now lie I like a king"
K Hen 'Tis good for men to love their present
gains

Upon example so the spirit is eaved
And when the mind is quicken'd out of doubt,
The organs though defunct and dead before
Break up their drowsy grave and newly move
With eaved slough and fresh legentry
Lend me thy cloak Sir Thomas Brothers both,
Commend me to the princes in our camp
Do my good morrow to them and anon

Desire them all to my pavilion

Glow. We shall my liege

Erp. Shall I attend your Grace?

A. Hen.

No my good knight

Go with my brothers to my lords of England 30

I and my bosom must debate a while

And then I would no other company

Erp. The Lord in heaven bless thee noble

Harry!

[*Exeunt all but KING*]

A. Hen. God a mercy old heart! thou speak at cheerfully

Enter PISTOL.

Pist. Quia la?

A. Hen. A friend

Pist. Discuss unto me art thou officer?

Or art thou base common and popular?

A. Hen. I am a gentleman of a company

Pist. Trail it thou the puissant pike? 40

A. Hen. Even so. What are you?

Pist. As good a gentleman as the Emperor

A. Hen. Then you are a better than the King

Pist. The King is a bawcock and a heart of gold

A lad of life an imp of fame

Of parents good of fist most valiant

I kiss his dirty shoe and from heart string

I love the lovely bully. What is thy name?

A. Hen. Harry le Roy

Pist. Le Roy! a Cornish name art thou of

Cornish crew? 50

A. Hen. No I am a Welshman

Pist. Knowst thou Fluellen?

A. Hen. Yes

Pist. Tell him I'll knock his leek about his pate

Upon Saint Davy's day

A. Hen. Do not you wear your dagger in your

cap that day lest he knock that about yours

Pist. Art thou his friend?

A. Hen. And his kinsman too

Pist. The fga for thee then! 60

A. Hen. I thank you. God be with you!

Pist. My name is Pistol call d [Exit]

A. Hen. It sorts well with your fierceness

Enter FLUELLEN and COWER.

Cow. Captain Fluellen

Flu. So in the name of Jesus Christ speak lower. It is the greatest admiration in the universal world when the true and ancient prerogatives and laws of the wars is not kept if you would take the pains but to examine the wars of Pompey the Great you shall find I warrant you, that there is no tiddle taddle nor pibble pibble in Pompey's camp. I warrant you you shall find the ceremonies of the wars and the cares of it

and the forms of it and the sobriety of it and the modesty of it to be otherwise

Cow. Why the enemy is loud you hear him all night

Flu. If the enemy is an ass and a fool and a prating cockcomb is it meet think you that we should also look you be an ass and a fool and a prating cockcomb in your own conscience, now?

Cow. I will speak lower

Flu. I pray you and beseech you that you will

[*Exeunt COWER and FLUELLEN*]

A. Hen. Though it appear a little out of fashion There is much care and valour in this Welshman

Enter three soldiers JOHN BATES ALEXANDER

COURT and MICHAEL WILLIAMS

Court. Brother John Bates is not that the morning which breaks yonder?

Bates. I think it be but we have no great cause to desire the approach of day 90

Will. We see yonder the beginning of the day but I think we shall never see the end of it. Who goes there?

A. Hen. A friend

Will. Under what captain serve you?

A. Hen. Under Sir Thomas Erpingham

Will. A good old commander and a most kind gentleman. I pray you what thinks he of our estate?

A. Hen. Even as men wrecked upon a sand that look to be washed off the next tide 101

Bates. He hath not told his thought to the King?

A. Hen. No nor it is not meet he should. For though I speak it to you I think the King is but a man as I am the violet smells to him as it doth to me the element shows to him as it doth to me all his senses have but human conditions his ceremonies laid by in his nakedness he appears but a man and though his affections are higher mounted than ours yet when they stoop they stoop with the like wing. Therefore when he sees reason of fears as we do his fears out of doubt be of the same relish as ours are yet no reason no man should possess him with any appearance of fear lest he, by showing it should dishearten his army

Bates. He may show what outward courage he will but I believe as cold a night as this he could wish himself in Thames up to the neck and so I would he were, and I by him at all adventures so we were quit here

A. Hen. By my troth I will speak my conscience of the King. I think he would not wish himself any where but here he is

Bates. Then I would he were here alone 110

should he be sure to be ransomed, and a many poor men's lives saved

K Hen I dare say you love him not so ill to wish him here alone, howsoever you speak this to feed other men's minds methinks I could not die any where so contented as in the King's company his cause being just and his quarrel honourable

Will That's more than we know

Bates Ay, or more than we should seek after, for we know enough, if we know we are the King's subjects if his cause be wrong our obedience to the King wipes the crime of it out of us

Will But if the cause be not good, the King himself hath a heavy reckoning to make, when all those legs and arms and heads, chopped off in a battle, shall join together at the latter day and cry all "We died at such a place", some swearing, some crying for a surgeon, some upon their wives left poor behind them, some upon the debts they owe, some upon their children rawly left I am afraid there are few die well that die in a battle for how can they charitably dispose of anything, when blood is their argument? Now, if these men do not die well, it will be a black matter for the King that led them to it, whom to disobey were against all proportion of subjection

K Hen So if a son that is by his father sent about merchandise do sinfully miscarry upon the sea, the imputation of his wickedness, by your rule should be imposed upon his father that sent him or if a servant, under his master's command transporting a sum of money, be assailed by robbers and die in many unreconciled iniquities, you may call the business of the master the author of the servant's damnation but this is not so the King is not bound to answer the particular endings of his soldiers, the father of his son nor the master of his servant for they purpose not their death, when they purpose their services Besides, there is no king be his cause never so spotless if it come to the arbitrement of swords can try it out with all unspotted soldiers some peradventure have on them the guilt of premeditated and contrived murder, some of beguiling virgins with the broken seals of perjury some, making the wars their bulwark, that have before gored the gentle bosom of peace with pillage and robbery Now, if these men have defeated the law and outrun native punishment, though they can outstrip men they have no wings to fly from God war is his beadle, war is his vengeance so that here men are punished for before breach of the King's laws in now the King's quarrel where they feared the death they have borne life away and where they would be safe they perish then

if they die unprovided, no more is the King guilty of their damnation than he was before guilty of those impieties for the which they are now visited Every subject's duty is the King's, but every subject's soul is his own Therefore should every soldier in the wars do as every sick man in his bed wash every mote out of his conscience and dying so death is to him advantage or not dying the time was blessedly lost wherein such preparation was gained and in him that escapes, it were not sin to think that making God so free an offer, He let him outlive that day to see His greatness and to teach others how they should prepare

Will 'Tis certain every man that dies ill, the ill upon his own head the King is not to answer it 199

Bates I do not desire he should answer for me, and yet I determine to fight lustily for him

K Hen I myself heard the King say he would not be ransomed

Will Ay, he said so to make us fight cheerfully but when our throats are cut he may be ransomed, and we are the wiser

K Hen If I live to see it I will never trust his word after

Will You pay him then That's a perilous shot out of an elder-gun that a poor and a private displeasure can do against a monarch! you may as well go about to turn the sun to ice with fanning in his face with a peacock's feather You'll never trust his word after! come 'tis a foolish saying

K Hen Your reproof is something too round I should be angry with you, if the time were convenient

Will Let it be a quarrel between us if you live *K Hen* I embrace it 201

Will How shall I know thee again?

K Hen Give me any gage of thine and I will wear it in my bonnet then, if ever thou dar'st acknowledge it, I will make it my quarrel

Will Here's my glove give me another of thine

K Hen There

Will This will I also wear in my cap if ever thou come to me and say after to-morrow 'This is my glove' by this hand I will take thee a box on the ear

K Hen If ever I live to see it I will challenge it

Will Thou dar'st as well be hanged

K Hen Well I will do it though I take thee in the King's company

Will I keep thy word fare thee well

Bates Be friends you English fools be friends we have French quarrels now, if you could tell how to reckon 201

K Hen Indeed the French may say

French crowns to one they will beat us for they
bear them on their shoulders but it is no English
treason to cut French crowns and to-morrow the
king himself will be a clipper

[*Exeunt SOLDIERS*]

Upon the king! let us our lives our souls
Our debts our careful wives
Our children and our sins lay on the king!
We must bear all O hard condition 250
Twin born with greatness subject to the breath
Of every fool whose sense no more can feel
But his own wringing! What infinite heart's-ease
Must kings neglect that private men enjoy!
And what have kings that privates have not too
Save ceremony, save general ceremony?
And what art thou that idol Ceremony?
What kind of god art thou that suffer'st more
Of mortal griefs than do thy worshippers?
What are thy rents? what are thy comings in?
O Ceremony show me but thy worth! 261
What is thy soul of adoration?
Art thou aught else but place, degree and form
Creating awe and fear in other men?
Wherein thou art less happy being fear'd
Than they in fearing
What drink'st thou oft instead of homage sweet
But poison'd flattery? O be sick, great greatness
And bid thy Ceremony give thee cure!
Think'st thou the fiery fever will go out 270
With titles blown from adulation?
Will it give place to flexure and low bending?
Canst thou when thou command'st the beggar a
knee

Command the health of it? No thou proud dream
That play'st so subtilly with a king's repose
I am a king that find thee and I know
Tis not the balm, the sceptre and the ball
The sword the mace the crown imperial
The intertissued robe of gold and pearl
The farced title running fore the king 280
The throne he sits on, nor the tide of pomp
That beats upon the high shore of this world
No not all these, thrice-gorgeous Ceremony
Nor all these, laid in bed majestical
Can sleep so soundly as the wretched slave,
Who with a body fill'd and vacant mind
Gets him to rest cramm'd with distressful
bread

Never sees horrid night the child of hell
But like a lackey from the rise to set
Sweats in the eye of Phoebus and all night 290
Sleeps in Elysium next day after dawn,
Doth rise and help IHyperion to his horse
And follows so the crier running year
With profitable labour to his grave
And, but for ceremony such a wretch,

Winding up days with toil and nights with sleep
Had the fore hand and vantage of a king
The slave a member of the country's peace
Enjoys it but in gross brain little wots
What watch the king keeps to maintain the
peace

Whose hours the peasant best advantages 301

Re-enter TRIPOLITAN

Exp My lord your nobles jealous of your
absence
Seek through your camp to find you
H *Hm* Good old knight
Collect them all together at my tent
I'll be before thee
Exp I shall do it my lord [*Exit*]
H *Hm* O God of battles! steel my soldiers
hearts
Possess them not with fear take from them
now
The sense of reckoning if the opposed numbers
Pluck their hearts from them Not to-day O
Lord
O not to-day think not upon the fault 310
My father made in compassing the crown!
I Richard's body have interred new
And on it have bestow'd more contrite tears
Than from it issued forced drops of blood
Five hundred poor I have in yearly pay
Who twice a-day their wither'd hands hold up
Toward heaven to pardon blood and I have
built

Two chantries where the sad and solemn priests
Sing still for Richard's soul More will I do
Though all that I can do is nothing worth 320
Since that my penitence comes after all
Imploping pardon

Re-enter GLOUCESTER

Glou My liege!
H *Hm* My brother Gloucester's voice? Ay
I know thy errand I will go with thee
The day my friends and all things stay for me
[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II The French camp

*Enter the DAUPHIN ORLEANS RAMBOURS
and others*

O! The sun doth gild our armour up my
lords!
Dau *Montre à cheval!* My horse! varlet! *Liquor!*
ha!
Orl O brave spirit!
Dau *Les uns les autres et la terre*
Orl *Rien pu s' l'air et le feu*
Dau *Ciel cousin Orleans*

Enter CONSTABLE

Now, my Lord Constable!
Con Hark, how our steeds for present service neigh!
Dau Mount them, and make incision in their hides,
 That their hot blood may spin in English eyes, 10
 And dout them with superfluous courage, ha!
Ran What will you have them weep our horses blood?
 How shall we, then, behold their natural tears?

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess The English are embattled, you French peers
Con To horse you gallant princes! straight to horse!
 Do but behold yon poor and starved band
 And your fair show shall suck away their souls,
 Leaving them but the shales and husks of men
 There is not work enough for all our hands,
 Scarce blood enough in all their sickly veins 20
 To give each naked curtle axe a stain,
 That our French gallants shall to day draw out
 And sheathe for lack of sport let us but blow on them,
 The vapour of our valour will o'turn them
 'Tis positive 'gainst all exceptions lords,
 That our superfluous lackeys and our peasants,
 Who in unnecessary action swarm
 About our squares of battle, were enow
 To purge this field of such a hiding foe,
 Though we upon this mountain's basis by 30
 Took stand for idle speculation
 But that our honours must not What's to say?
 A very little little let us do,
 And all is done Then let the trumpets sound
 The rucker sonance and the note to mount,
 For our approach shall so much dare the field
 That England shall couch down in fear and yield

Enter GRANDPRE

Grand Why do you stay so long, my lords of France?
 On island carrions, desperate of their bones,
 I favouredly become the morning field 40
 Their ragged curtains poorly are let loose
 And our air shakes them passing scornfully
 As Mars seems bankrupt in their beggar'd host
 And faintly through a rusty beaver peeps
 The horsemen sit like fixed candlesticks
 With torch staves in their hand and their poor
 Jades
 Ob down their heads dropping the hides and hips
 The gum down roping from their pale-dead eyes,

And in their pale dull mouths the gimball bit
 Lies foul with chew'd grass still and motionless,
 And their executors, the knavish crows, 51
 Fly o'er them, all impatient for their hour
 Description cannot suit itself in words
 To demonstrate the life of such a battle
 In life so lifeless as it shows itself
Con They have said their prayers, and they stay for death
Dau Shall we go send them dinners and fresh suits
 And give their fasting horses provender,
 And after fight with them?
Con I stay but for my guidon to the field!
 I will the banner from a trumpet take 61
 And use it for my haste Come, come away!
 The sun is high, and we outwear the day
 [Exeunt]

SCENE III The English camp

Enter GLOUCESTER, BEDFORD, EXETER, ERPINGHAM, with all his host SALISBURY and WESTMORELAND

Glou Where is the King?
Bed The King himself is rode to view their battle
West Of fighting men they have full three score thousand
Exe There's five to one, besides they all are fresh
Sal God's arm strike with us 'tis a fearful odds
 God be wi' you princes all, I'll to my charge
 If we no more meet till we meet in heaven
 Then joyfully my noble Lord of Bedford
 My dear Lord Gloucester, and my good Lord
 Exeter
 And my kind kinsman warriors all adieu! 10
Bed Farewell good Salisbury, and good luck go with thee!
Exe Farewell kind lord fight valiantly to-day
 And yet I do thee wrong to mind thee of it
 For thou art framed of the firm truth of valour
 [Exit SALISBURY]
Bed He is as full of valour as of kindness
 Princely in both

Enter the KING

West O that we now had here
 But one ten thousand of those men in England
 That do no work to-day!
Hen What's he that wishes so?
 My cousin Westmoreland? No my fair cousin
 If we are mark'd to die we are enow 20
 To do our country loss and if to live,
 The fewer men, the greater share of honour
 God's will! I pray thee, wish not one man more

By Jove I am not covetous for gold
 Nor care I who doth feed upon my cost
 It earns me not if men my garments wear
 Such outward things dwell not in my desires
 But if it be a sin to cover honour
 I am the most offending soul alive 29
 No faith my coz, wish not a man from England
 God's peace! I would not lose so great an honour
 As one man more methinks would share from
 me
 For the best hope I have O do not wish one
 more!
 Rather proclaim it Westmoreland through my
 host

That he which hath no stomach to this fight
 Let him depart his passport shall be made
 And crowns for convoy put into his purse
 We would not die in that man's company
 That fears his fellowship to die with us
 This day is call'd the feast of Crispian 40
 He that outlives this day and comes safe home
 Will wear a rippled robe when this day is named
 And rouse him at the name of Crispian
 He that shall live this day and see old age
 Will yearly on the vigil feast his neighbours
 And say To-morrow is Saint Crispian
 Then will he strip his sleeve and show his scars
 And say These wounds I had on Crispian's
 day

Old men forget yet all shall be forgot
 But he'll remember with advantages 50
 What feats he did that day then shall our names
 Familiar in his mouth as household words
 Harry the King Bedford and Exeter
 Warwick and Talbot Salisbury and Gloucester
 Be in their flowing cups freshly remember'd
 This story shall the good man teach his son
 And Crispin Crispian shall ne'er go by
 From this day to the ending of the world
 But we in it shall be remembered
 We few we happy few we band of brothers 60
 For he to-day that sheds his blood with me
 Shall be my brother be he ne'er so vile
 This day shall gentle his condition
 And gentlemen in England now a-bed
 Shall think themselves accursed they were not
 here
 And hold their manhoods cheap whiles any
 speaks

That fought with us upon Saint Crispian's day

Re-entrance SALISBURY

Sal My sovereign lord bestow yourself with
 speed

The French are bravely in their battles set
 And will with all expedience charge on us 70

A Hen All things are ready if our minds be so
 West Perish the man whose mind is backward
 now!
 W Hen Thou dost not wish more help from
 England coz?
 West God's will! my liege would you and I
 alone
 Without more help could fight this royal battle!
 A Hen Why now thou hast unwish'd five
 thousand men
 Which likes me better than to wish us one
 You know your places God be with you all!

Tucket Enter MORTYMER

Mont Once more I come to know of thee, King
 Harry
 If for thy ransom thou wilt now compound 80
 Before thy most assured overthrow
 For certainly thou art so near the gulf
 Thou needs must be engulft Besides in mercy
 The Constable desires thee thou wilt mind
 Thy followers of repentance that their souls
 May make a peaceful and a sweet retire
 From off these fields where wretches their
 poor bodies
 Must lie and fester
 A Hen Who hath sent thee now?
 Mont The Constable of France
 A Hen I pray thee bear my former answer 90
 back
 Bid them achieve me and then sell my bones
 Good God! why should they mock poor fellows
 thus?

The man that once did sell the lion's skin
 While the beast lived was killed with hunting
 him
 A many of our bodies shall no doubt
 Find native graves upon the which I trust
 Shall witness live in brass of this day's work
 And those that leave their valiant bones in
 France
 Dying like men though buried in your dunghills
 They shall be famed for there the sun shall greet
 them 100
 And draw their honours reeking up to heaven
 Leaving their earthly parts to choke your clime
 The smell whereof shall breed a plague in
 France
 Mark then abounding valour in our English
 That being dead lie to the bullet's grazing
 Break out into a second course of mischief
 Killing in relapse of mortal ty
 Let me speak proudly tell the Constable
 We are but warriors for the working-day
 Our gayness and our gilt are all besmear'd 110
 With rainy marching in the painful field

There's not a piece of feather in our host—
 Good argument, I hope, we will not fly—
 And time hath worn us into slovenry
 But, by the mass, our hearts are in the trim,
 And my poor soldiers tell me, yet ere night
 They'll be in fresher robes, or they will pluck
 The gay new coats o'er the French soldiers'
 heads
 And turn them out of service If they do this—
 As, if God please, they shall—my ransom then
 Will soon be levied Herald, save thou thy
 labour, 121
 Come thou no more for ransom gentle herald
 They shall have none, I swear, but these my
 joints
 Which if they have as I will leave 'em them
 Shall yield them little tell the Constable
Mont I shall, King Harry And so fare thee
 well
 Thou never shalt hear herald any more [Exit
 A *Hen* I fear thou'lt once more come again for
 ransom

Enter YORK

York My lord most humbly on my knee I beg
 The leading of the vaward 130
 A *Hen* Take it, brave York Now, soldiers,
 march away
 And how thou pleasest, God dispose the day!
 [Exeunt

SCENE IV The field of battle

Alarum Excursions Enter PISTOL, FRENCH
 SOLDIER, and BOY

Pist Yield, cur!
Fr Sol Je pense que vous etes gentilhomme de
 bonne qualite
Pist Quel titre calme custure me? Art thou a gen-
 tleman? what is thy name? discuss
Fr Sol O Seigneur Dieu!
Pist O Signieur Dew should be a gentleman
 Perpend my words O Signieur Dew and mark
 O Signieur Dew, thou diest on point of fox,
 Except, O signieur, thou do give to me 10
 Egregious ransom
Fr Sol O, prenez misericorde! ayez pitie de moi!
Pist Moy shall not serve, I will have forty
 moys,
 Or I will fetch thy rim out at thy throat
 In drops of crimson blood
Fr Sol Est il impossible d'echapper la force de ton
 bras?
Pist Brass, cur!
 Thou damned and luxurious mountain goat 20
 Offer st me brass?
Fr Sol O pardonnez moi!

Pist Say st thou me so? is that a ton of moys?
 Come hither boy ask me this slave in French
 What is his name
Boy Écoutez comment etes-vous appele?
Fr Sol Monsieur le Fer
Boy He says his name is Master Fer
Pist Master Fer! I'll fer him, and firk him and
 ferret him discuss the same in French unto him
Boy I do not know the French for fer, and
 ferret, and firk 32
Pist Bid him prepare for I will cut his throat
Fr Sol Que dit il monsieur?
Boy Il me commande de vous dire que vous faites
 vous pret, car ce soldat icy est dispose tout a cette heure
 de couper votre gorge
Pist Owy cuppele gorge permafoy
 Peasant, unless thou give me crowns, brave
 crowns, 40
 Or mangled shalt thou be by this my sword
Fr Sol O je vous supplie, pour l'amour de Dieu,
 me pardonner! Je suis gentilhomme de bonne maison
 gardez ma vie et je vous donnerai deux cents ecus
Pist What are his words?
Boy He prays you to save his life he is a gen-
 tleman of a good house, and for his ransom he
 will give you two hundred crowns
Pist Tell him my fury shall abate, and I 50
 The crowns will take
Fr Sol Petit monsieur que dit il?
Boy Encore qu'il est contre son jurement de par-
 donner aucun prisonnier neanmoins pour les ecus
 que vous l'a ez promis il est content de vous donner
 la liberte le frinchisement
Fr Sol Sur mes genoux je vous donne mille remer-
 ciemens et je me estime heureux que je suis tombe
 entre les mains d'un cher-cher je pense le plus bra-ve
 vaillant et tres distingue seigneur d'Angleterre 61
Pist Expound unto me boy
Boy He gives you upon his knees, a thousand
 thanks, and he esteems himself happy that he
 hath fallen into the hands of one as he thinks the
 most brave valorous and thrice worthy seigneur
 of England
Pist As I suck blood I will some mercy show
 Follow me! 69
Boy Sur ce vous le grant capitaine [Exeunt *Pist*
 70, and *Fr Sol* 70, 71] I did never know so
 full a voice issue from so empty a heart but the
 saying is true The empty vessel makes the
 greatest sound Bardolph and Nim had ten
 times more valour than this roaring devil the
 old play that every one may pare his nails with a
 wooden dagger and they are both hanged 72
 so would this be if I durst steal anything
 venturously I must stay with the baggage
 the luggage of our camp the French

a good prey of us if he knew of it for there is none to guard it but boys {Exit

SCENE V *Another part of the field*

Enter CONSTABLE ORLEANS BOURBON

DAUPHIN and RAMBURES

Con O duple!

Orl O seigneur! le jour est perdu tout est perdu!

Daup Mort de ma vie! all is confounded all!

Reproach and everlasting shame

Sits triumphing in our plumes O meekhearted fortune!

Do not run away

A short alarm

Con Why all our ranks are broke

Daup O perdurable shame let's stab ourselves

Be these the wretches that we play'd at dice for?

Orl Is this the king we sent to for his ransom?

Bour Shame and eternal shame nothing but shame! 10

Let us die in honour once more back again

And he that will not follow Bourbon now

Let him go hence and with his cap in hand

Like a base pandar hold the chamber-door

Whist by a slave no gentler than my dog

His fairest daughter is contaminated

Con Disorder that hath spoil'd us friend us now!

Let us on heaps go offer up our lives

Orl We are enow yet living in the field

To smother up the English in our throgs 20

If any order might be thought upon

Bour The devil take order now! I'll to the throng

Let life be short else shame will be too long

{Exeunt

SCENE VI *Another part of the field*

Alarums Enter KING HENRY and forces

EXETER and others

H. Hen Well have we done thrice valiant countrymen

But all's not done yet keep the French the field

Exe The Duke of York commends him to your Majesty

H. Hen Lives he, good uncle? thrice within this hour

I saw him down thrice up again, and fighting from helmet to the spur all blood he was

Exe In which array brave soldier doth he lie

Larding the plain and by his bloody de

Yoke fellow to his honour-ou'ring wounds

The noble Earl of Suffolk also lies

Suffolk first d'ed and York all haggled over 10

Comes to him where in gore he lay insteep'd

And takes him by the beard kisses the gashes

That bloodily did yawn upon his face

And cries aloud Tarry dear cousin Suffolk!

My soul shall thine keep company to heaven

Tarry sweet soul for mine then fly abreast

As in this glorious and well foughten field

We kept together in our chivalry!

Upon these words I came and cheer'd him up 20

He smil'd me in the face caught me his hand

And with a feeble gripe says Dear my lord,

Commend my service to my sovereign

So did he turn and over Suffolk's neck

He threw his wounded arm and kiss'd his lips

And so espoused to death with blood he seal'd

A testament of noble-ending love

The pretty and sweet manner of it forced

Those waters from me which I would have

stopp'd

But I had not so much of man in me 30

And all my mother came into mine eyes

And gave me up to tears

H. Hen

I blame you not

For hearing this I must perforce compound

With misful eyes or they will issue too

Alarm

But hark! what new alarm is this same?

The French have reinforced their scatter'd men

Then every soldier kill his prisoners

Give the word through

{Exeunt

SCENE VII *Another part of the field*

Enter FLEELLEN and GOWER

Flu Kill the boys and the luggage! 'tis expressly against the law of arms 'tis as arrant a piece of knavery mark you now as can be offer'd in your conscience now is it not?

Gow 'Tis certain there's not a boy left alive and the cowardly rascals that ran from the battle ha done this slaughter besides they have burned and carried away all that was in the king's tent wherefore the king most worthily hath caused every soldier to cut his prisoner's throat O 'tis a gallant king! 11

Flu Ay he was born at Monmouth Captain Gower What call you the town's name where Alexander the Pig was born?

Gow Alexander the Great

Flu Why I pray you is not pig great? the pig or the great or the mighty or the huge or the magnanimous are all one reckonings save the phrase is a little variations 19

Gow I think Alexander the Great was born in Macedon his father was called Phillip of Macedon, as I take it

Flu I think it is in Macedon where Alexander is born I tell you captain if you look in the maps of the world I warrant you shall find in the comparisons between Macedon and Monmouth

that the situations, look you, is both alike. There is a river in Macedon, and there is also moreover a river at Monmouth: it is called Wye at Monmouth, but it is out of my prains what is the name of the other river, but 'tis all one, 'tis alike as my fingers is to my fingers: and there is salmons in both. If you mark Alexander's life well Harry of Monmouth's life is come after it indifferently well, for there is figures in all things. Alexander, God knows, and you know, in his rages, and his furies, and his wraths, and his cholers, and his moods, and his displeasures, and his indignations, and also being a little intoxicated in his prains, did, in his ales and his angers, look you kill his best friend Cleitus. 41

Gow. Our King is not like him in that: he never killed any of his friends.

Flu. It is not well done: mark you now, to take the tales out of my mouth, ere it is made and finished. I speak but in the figures and comparisons of it: as Alexander killed his friend Cleitus being in his ales and his cups, so also Harry Monmouth, being in his right wits and his good judgements, turned away the fat knight with the great belly doubler: he was full of jests, and pipes and knaveries and mocks, I have forgot his name.

Gow. Sir John Falstaff.

Flu. That is he: I'll tell you there is good men born at Monmouth.

Gow. Here comes his Majesty.

Alarum. Enter KING HENRY, and forces, WARWICK, LOUCESTER, EXETER, and others.

H. Hen. I was not angry, since I came to France. Until this instant. Take a trumpet herald, Ride thou unto the horsemen on yon hill. 60 If they will fight with us, bid them come down, Or void the field: they do offend our sight. If they'll do neither, we will come to them. And make them skirr away as swift as stones Enforced from the old Assyrian slings. Besides, we'll cut the throats of those we have, And not a man of them that we shall take Shall taste our mercy. Go and tell them so.

Enter MONTJOY.

Ex. Here comes the herald of the French, my liege.

Glo. His eyes are humbler than they used to be.

H. Hen. How now! what means this herald? 71

know'st thou not?

That I have fined these bones of mine for ransom? Comest thou again for ransom?

Mont. No great king.

I come to thee for charitable license,

That we may wander o'er this bloody field To look our dead: and then to bury them, To sort our nobles from our common men. For many of our princes—woe the while!— Lie drown'd and soak'd in mercenary blood. 80 So do our vulgar drench their peasant limbs. In blood of princes, and their wounded steeds Fret fetlock deep in gore, and with wild rage Yerk out their armed heels at their dead masters, Killing them twice. O give us leave, great King, To view the field in safety and dispose Of their dead bodies!

K. Hen. I tell thee truly, herald,

I know not if the day be ours or no,

For yet a many of your horsemen peer

And gallop o'er the field.

Mont. The day is yours.

K. Hen. Praised be God, and not our strength, for it! 90

What is this castle call'd that stands hard by?

Mont. They call it Agincourt.

K. Hen. Then call we this the field of Agincourt.

Fought on the day of Crispin Crispianus.

Flu. Your Grandfather of famous memory, an't please your Majesty, and your great uncle Edward the Plack Prince of Wales, as I have read in the chronicles, fought a most prave battle here in France.

H. Hen. They did, Fluellen. 100

Flu. Your Majesty says very true: if your Majesties is remembered of it, the Welshmen did good service in a garden where leeks did grow, wearing leeks in their Monmouth caps, which, your Majesty know, to this hour is an honourable badge of the service: and I do believe your Majesty takes no scorn to wear the leek upon Saint Davy's day.

H. Hen. I wear it for a memorable honour. For I am Welsh, you know, good countryman.

Flu. All the water in Wye cannot wash your Majesty's Welsh blood out of your body, I can tell you that. God bless it and preserve it as long as it pleases His Grace and His Majesty too!

H. Hen. Thanks, good my countryman.

Flu. By Jesu, I am your Majesty's countryman. I care not who know it. I will confess it to all the world. I need not be ashamed of your Majesty, praised be God, so long as your Majesty is an honest man. 120

H. Hen. God keep me so! Our heralds go with him.

Bring me just notice of the numbers dead.

On both our parts. Call yonder fellow hither.

[*Enter a soldier.*]

Exit Soldier you must come to the King
K Hen Soldier why wearest thou that glove in thy cap?

Will An please your Majesty 'tis the gage of one that I should fight withal if he be alive

K Hen An Englishman? 129

Will An't please your Majesty a rascal that swaggred with me last night who if alive and ever dare to challenge this glove I have sworn to take him a box o' th' ear or if I can see my glove in his cap which he swore as he was a soldier he he would wear if alive I will strike it out soundly

K Hen What think you Captain Fluellen? is it fit this soldier keep his oath?

Flu He is a craven and a villain else an't please your Majesty in my conscience 140

K Hen It may be his enemy is a gentleman of great sort quite from the answer of his degree

Flu Though he be as good a gentleman as the devil is as Lucifer and Belzebub himself it is necessary look your Grace that he keep his vow and his oath if he be perjured see you now his reputation is as arrant a villain and a Jacksaunce as ever his black shoe trod upon God's ground and his earth in my conscience la! 150

K Hen Then keep thy vow sirrah when thou meetest the fellow

Will So I will my liege as I live

K Hen Who seriest thou under?

Will Under Captain Gower my liege

Flu Gower is a good captain and is good knowledge and literated in the wars

K Hen Call him hither to me soldier

Will I will my liege [Exit] 160

K Hen Here Fluellen wear thou this favour for me and stick it in thy cap when Alençon and my self were down together I plucked this glove from his helm if any man challenge this he is a friend to Alençon and an enemy to our person if thou encounter any such apprehend him and thou dost me love

Flu Your Grace doo's me as great honours as can be desired in the hearts of his subjects I would fain see the man that has but two legs that shall find himself aggrieved at this glove that is all but I would fain see it once an please God of his grace that I might see

K Hen Knowest thou Gower?

Flu He is my dear friend an please you

K Hen Pray thee go seek him, and bring him to my tent

Flu I will fetch him [Exit] 170

K Hen My Lord of Warwick and my brother Gloucester

Follow Fluellen closely at the heels

The glove which I have given him for a favour

May haply purchase him a box o' th' ear 181
 It is the soldier's I by bargain should wear it myself Follow good cousin Warwick
 If that the soldier strike him as I judge
 By his blunt bearing he will keep his word
 Some sudden mischief may arise of it
 For I do know Fluellen valiant
 And touch'd with choler hot as gunpowder
 And quickly will return an injury 189
 Follow and see there be no harm between them
 Go you with me uncle of Exeter [Exit]

SCENE VII Before King Henry's palace

Enter GOWER and WILLIAMS

Will I warrant it is to night you captain

Enter FLUELLEN

Flu God's will and his pleasure captain I be sech you now come apace to the King there is more good toward you peradventure than is in your knowledge to dream of

Will Sir know you this glove?

Flu Know the glove! I know the glove is a glove

Will I know this and thus I challenge it

Strik him

Flu Sblood an arrant traitor as any is in the universal world or in France or in England! 190

Gow How now sir you villain!

Will Do you think I'll be forsworn?

Flu Stand away Captain Gower I will give treason his payment into plows I warrant you

Will I am no traitor

Flu That's a lie in thy throat I charge you in his Majesty's name apprehend him he's a friend of the Duke of Alençon's 195

Enter WARWICK and GLOUCESTER

War How now how now! what's the matter?

Flu My Lord of Warwick here is—praised be God for it—a most contagious treason come to light look you as you shall desire in a summer's day Here is his Majesty's

Enter KING HENRY and EXETER

K Hen How now! what's the matter?

Flu My liege here is a villain and a traitor that look your Grace has struck the glove which your Majesty is take out of the helmet of Alençon

Will My liege this was my glove here is the fellow of it and he that I gave it to in change promised to wear it in his cap I promised to strike him if he did I met this man with my glove in his cap and I have been as good as my word

Flu Your Majesty hear now saying your Ma

jesty s manhood, what an arrant, rascally, beggarly, lousy knave it is I hope your Majesty is pear me testimony and witness and will avouchment, that this is the glove of Alençon, that your Majesty is give me in your conscience now 40
K Hen Give me thy glove, soldier look here is the fellow of it

'Twas I, indeed, thou promised st to strike,
 And thou hast given me most bitter terms
Flu And please your Majesty, let his neck answer for it, if there is any martial law in the world

K Hen How canst thou make me satisfaction?
Will All offences, my lord, come from the heart never came any from mine that might offend your Majesty 51

K Hen It was ourself thou didst abuse
Will Your Majesty came not like yourself you appeared to me but as a common man, witness the night, your garments your lowliness, and what your Highness suffered under that shape, I beseech you take it for your own fault and not mine for had you been as I took you for I made no offence, therefore, I beseech your Highness pardon me 60

K Hen Here, uncle Exeter, fill this glove with crowns,
 And give it to this fellow Keep it fellow,
 And wear it for an honour in thy cap
 Till I do challenge it Give him the crowns
 And captain, you must needs be friends with him

Flu By this day and this light the fellow has mettle enough in his belly Hold, there is twelve pence for you, and I pray you to serve God and keep you out of prawls and prabbles, and quarrels and dissensions, and I warrant you it is the better for you 71

Will I will none of your money
Flu It is with a good will, I can tell you it will serve you to mend your shoes come wherefore should you be so pashful? your shoes is not so good tis a good silling I warrant you, or I will change it

Enter an ENGLISH HERALD

K Hen Now, herald are the dead number d?
Hr Here is the number of the slaughter d French

K Hen What prisoners of good sort are taken, uncle? 80
Exe Charles Duke of Orleans nephew to the King
John Duke of Bourbon and Lord Bouciqualt
 Of other lords and barons knights and squires
 Full fifteen hundred besides common men

K Hen This note doth tell me of ten thousand French
 That in the field lie slain of princes, in this number
 And nobles bearing banners there lie dead
 One hundred twenty six added to these
 Of knights esquires and gallant gentlemen, 89
 Eight thousand and four hundred of the which,
 Five hundred were but yesterday dubb d knights
 So that, in these ten thousand they have lost,
 There are but sixteen hundred mercenaries,
 The rest are princes barons lords, knights
 squires,

And gentlemen of blood and quality
 The names of those their nobles that lie dead
 Charles Delabreth High Constable of France,
 Jacques de Chatillon admiral of France
 The master of the cross bows, Lord Rambures,
 Great Master of France, the brave Sir Guichard
 Dolphin 100
 John Duke of Alençon Anthony Duke of Brabant
 The brother to the Duke of Burgundy,
 And Edward Duke of Bar of lusty earls,
 Grandpre and Roussi Fauconberg and Foix,
 Beaumont and Marle Vaudemont and Lestrale
 Here was a royal fellowship of death!
 Where is the number of our English dead?

Herald shows him another paper
 Edward the Duke of York the Earl of Suffolk
 Sir Richard Ketly Davy Gam esquire
 None else of name and of all other men 110
 But five and twenty O God thy arm was here,
 And not to us but to thy arm alone
 Ascribe we all! When without stratagem,
 But in plain shock and even play of battle,
 Was ever known so great and little loss
 On one part and on the other? Take it God
 For it is none but thine!

Exe 'Tis wonderful!
K Hen Come, go we in procession to the village
 And be it death proclaimed through our host
 To boast of this or take that praise from God 120
 Which is his only

Flu Is it not law ful an please your Majesty to tell how many is killed?

K Hen Yes, captain but with this acknowledgment
 That God fought for us
Flu Yes my conscience he did us great good
K Hen Do we all holy rites
 Let there be sung *Non nobis* is and *Te Deum*,
 The dead with charity enclosed in clay
 And then to Calais and to England then 13
 Where ne er from France arriv'd more happy men {*Exe*

ACT V

PROLOGUE

Enter CHORUS

Chor Vouchsafe to those that have not read the story

That I may prompt them and of such as have I humbly pray them to admit the excuse
Of time of numbers and due course of things
Which cannot in their huge and proper life
Be here presented. Now we bear the King
Toward Calais grant him there there seen
Heave him away upon your winged thoughts
A thwart the sea. Behold the English beach
Paler in the flood with men with waves and
boys

Whose shouts and claps out voice the deep-
mouth'd sea,

Which like a mighty whistler fore the King
Seems to prepare his way so let him land
And solemnly see him set on to London
So swift a pace hath thought that even now
You may imagine him upon Blackheath
Where that his lords desire him to have borne
His bruised helmet and his bended sword
Before him through the city he forbids it
Being free from vainness and self-glorious pride
Giving full trophy signal and ostent

Quite from himself to God. But now behold
In the quick forge and working house of thought
How London doth pour out her citizens!

The mayor and all his brethren in best sort
Like to the senators of the antique Rome
With the plebeians swarming at their heels
Go forth and fetch their conquering Caesar in
As by a lower but loving likelihood

Were now the general of our gracious Empress
As in good time he may from Ireland coming
Bring up rebellion broached on his sword
How many would the peaceful city quit
To welcome him much more and much more
cause,

Did they thus Harry. Now in London place him
As yet the lamentation of the French
Invites the King of England stay at home
The Emperor's coming in behalf of France
To order peace between them and omit
All the occurrences whate'er chanced
Till Harry's back return again to France
There must we bring him and myself have
play'd

The interim, by remembering you tis past
Then brook abridgement and your eyes advance
After your thoughts straight back again to
France

[*Exit*]SCENE I *France the English camp**Enter FLEUELLEN and GOWER*

Gow Nay that's right but why wear you
your leek to-day? Saint Davy's day is past

Flu There is occasions and causes why and
wherefore in all things. I will tell you asse my
friend Captain Gower the rascally scould beg-
garly lousy praggng knave Pistol which you
and yourself and all the world know to be no
petter than a fellow look you now of no merits
he is come to me and prings me pread and salt
yesterday look you and bid me eat my leek it
was in a place where I could not breed no conten-
tion with him but I will be so bold as to wear it
in my cap till I see him once again and then I will
tell him a little piece of my desires

Enter PISTOL

Gow Why here he comes swelling like a
turkey-cock

Flu 'Tis no matter for his swellings nor his
turkey-cocks. God pless you Aunchient Pistol!

Pist Ha! art thou bedlam? dost thou thirst
base Trojan

To have me fold up Parca's fatal web?
Hence! I am qualmish at the smell of leek

Flu I psecch you heartily scurvy lousy knave
at my desires and my requests and my petitions
to eat look you this leek because look you
you do not love it nor your affections and your
appetites and your digestions doo's not agree
with it I would desire you to eat it

Pist Nor for Cadwallader and all his goats
Flu There is one goat for you [*Strikes him*]
Will you be so good scould knave as eat it?

Pist Bate Trojan thou shalt die

Flu You say very true scould knave when
God's will is I will desire you to live in the mean
time and eat your victuals come there is sauce
for n [*Strikes him*] You called me yesterday
mountain squire but I will make you to-day a
squire of low degree I pray you fall to if you
can mock a leek you can eat a leek

Gow Enough captain you have astonished
him

Flu I say I will make him eat some part of my
leek or I will peat his pate four days. Bate I
pray you it is good for your green wound and
your ploddy corcomb

Pist Must I bate?

Flu Yes certainly and out of doubt and out of
question too and amb gutties

Pist By this leek I will most horribly revenge
I eat and eat I swear—

50

Flu Eat, I pray you will you have some more
‘auce to your leek’ there is not enough leek to
swear by

Put Quiet thy cudgel, thou dost see I eat

Flu Much good do you, scould knave, heartily
nay, pray you, throw none away, the skin is
good for your broken covcomb When you take
occasions to see leeks hereafter, I pray you,
mock at ‘ern, that is all

Put Good 60

Flu Ay, leeks is good hold you, there is a
groat to heal your pate

Flu Yes, verily and in truth, you shall take it
or I have another leek in my pocket, which you
shall eat

Put I take thy groat in earnest of revenge

Flu If I owe you anything, I will pay you in
cudgels you shall be a woodmonger, and buy
nothing of me but cudgels God b wi’ you and
keep you and heal your pate [Exit 71

Put All hell shall stir for this

Go Go, go, you are a counterfeit cowardly
knave Will you mock at an ancient tradition
begun upon an honourable respect, and worn as a
memorable trophy of predeceased valour and dare
not avouch in your deeds any of your words? I
have seen you gleeking and galling at this gentle
man twice or thrice You thought, because he
could not speak English in the native garb he
could not therefore handle an English cudgel
you find it otherwise, and henceforth let a Welsh
correction teach you a good English condition
Fare ye well [Exit

Put Doth Fortune play the huswife with me
now?

News have I, that my Nell is dead i’ the spinal
Of malady of France,

And there my rendezvous is quite cut off

Old I do wax and from my weary limbs

Honour is cudgelled Well bawd I’ll turn 90

And something learn to curpurse of quick hand

To England will I steal, and there I’ll steal

And parches will I get unto these cudgelled scars

And swear I got them in the Gallia wars [Exit

SCENE II France a royal palace

Enter at one door, KING HENRY, EXETER BEDFORD
GLOUCESTER, WARWICK, WESTMORELAND and
other Lords, at another the FRENCH KING QUEEN
ISABEL, the PRINCESS KATHARINE ALICE and
other Ladies, the DUKE OF BURGUNDY and his
train

K. Hen Peace to this meeting wherefore we
are met!

Upon our brother France and to our sister
Health and fair time of day, joy and good wishes

To our most fair and princely cousin Katharine,
And as a branch and member of this royalty,
By whom this great assembly is contrived,
We do salute you Duke of Burgundy,
And, princes French and peers health to you all!
Fr. King Right joyous are we to behold your
face

Most worthy brother England fairly met 10
So are you princes English every one

Q. Is So happy be the issue brother England,
Of this good day and of this gracious meeting,
As we are now glad to behold your eyes
Your eyes which hitherto have borne in them
Against the French that met them in their bent
The fatal balls of murdering basilisks
The venom of such looks we fairly hope,

Have lost their quality and that this day
shall change all griefs and quarrels into love 20

K. Hen To cry amen to that thus we appear

Q. Is You English princes all I do salute you

Bur My duty to you both on equal love

Great Kings of France and England! That I
have labour’d,

With all my wits, my pains, and strong endea-
vours

To bring your most imperial Majesties

Unto this bar and royal interview

Your mightiness on both parts best can witness

Since then my office hath so far prevail’d

That face to face and royal eye to eye 30

You have congregated let it not disgrace me,

If I demand before this royal view

What rub or what impediment there is

Why that naked poor and mangled Peace,

Dear nurse of arts plenties and joyful births,

Should not in this best garden of the world,

Our fertile France put up her lovely visage?

Alas she hath from France too long been chased,

And all her husbandry doth lie on heaps

Corrupting in its own fertility 40

Her vine, the merry cheerer of the heart

Unpruned dies her hedges even pleach’d

Like prisoners wildly overgrown with hair,

Put forth disorder’d twigs her fallow leas

The darnel hemlock, and rank fumitory

Doth root upon while that the coulter rusts

That should deracinate such savagers

The even mead that erst brought sweetly forth

The freckled cowslip burnet and green clover 50

Wanting the scythe all unrecr’d to it

Conceals by idleness and nothun, seems

But hateful dock rough thistles, knacksie burs,

Losing both beauty and utility

As in our vineyards fallows meads and

hedges

Defective in their nature grow to wildness!

Even so our houses and ourselves and children
Have lost or do not learn for want of time
The sciences that should become our country
But grow like savages—as soldiers will
That nothing do but meditate on blood— 60
To swearing and stern looks diffused attire
And every thing that seems unnatural
Which so reduce into our former favour
You are assembled and my speech entreats
That I may know the let why gentle Peace
Should not expel these inconveniences
And bless us with her former qualities
K. Hen. If Duke of Burgundy you would the
peace

Whose want gives growth to the imperfections
Which you have cured you must buy that peace
With full accord to all our just demands 71
Whose tenours and particular effects
You have enscheduled briefly in your hands
But The King hath heard them to the which
as yet

There is no answer made

K. Hen. Well then the peace
Which you before so urged lies in his answer
Fr. King. I have but with a cursory eye
O'er glanced the articles please thy Grace
To appoint some of your council presently
To sit with us once more with better heed 80
To re-survey them we will suddenly
Pass our accept and peremptory answer

K. Hen. Brother we shall Go uncle Exeter
And brother Clarence and you brother Glou-
cester

Warwick and Huntingdon go with the King
And take with you free power to ratify
Augment or alter as your wisdoms best
Shall see advantageous for our dignity
Anything in or out of our demands
And we'll consign thereto Will you fair
sister

Go with the princes or stay here with us? 91

Q. Is. Our gracious brother I will go with
them

Haply a woman's voice may do some good
When articles too nicely urged be stood on

K. Hen. Yet leave our cousin Katharine here
with us

She is our capital demand, comprised
Within the fore rank of our articles

Q. Is. She hath good leave

[*Exeunt all except HENRY, KATHARINE,
and ALICE*]

K. Hen. Fair Katharine and most fair
Will you vouchsafe to teach a sold or terms
Such as will enter at a lady's ear 100
And plead his love-suit to her gentle heart?

Kath. Your Majesty shall mock at me I can
not speak your England

K. Hen. O fair Katharine if you will love me
soundly with your French heart I will be glad to
hear you confess in brokenly with your English
tongue Do you like me Kate?

Kath. Pardon me I cannot tell war is like
me

K. Hen. An angel in like you hate and you are
like an angel 111

Kath. Que dit il? que je suis semblable à les anges?

Alice. Ous vraiment sans votre grace ainsi dit il

K. Hen. I said so dear Katharine and I must
not blush to affirm it

Kath. O Lon Dieu! les langues des hommes sont
pleines de tromperies

K. Hen. What says she fair one? that the ton-
gues of men are full of deceits? 121

Alice. Ous dat de tongues of de mans in be full
of deceits dat is de princess

K. Hen. The princess is the better English
woman I faith Kate my wooing is fit for thy
understanding I am glad thou canst speak no
better English for if thou couldst thou wouldst
find me such a plain king that thou wouldst think
I had sold my farm to buy my crown I know
no ways to munge it in love but directly to say
I love you then if you urge me farther than to
say do you in faith? I wear out my suit Give
me your answer I faith do and so clap hands
and a bargain how say you lady?

Kath. Sans votre honneur me understand well

K. Hen. Marry if you would put me to verses
or to dance for your sake Kate, why you undid
me for the one I have neither words nor mea-
sure and for the other I have no strength in
measure yet a reasonable measure in strength
If I could win a lady at leap-frog or by vaulting
into my saddle with my armour on my back
under the correction of bragging be it spoken I
should quickly leap into a wife Or if I might
buffet for my love or bound my horse for her
favours I could lay on like a butcher and sit like
a jack an ape never off But before God Kate
I cannot look greenly nor gasp out my eloquence
nor I have no cunning in protestation only down-
right oaths which I never use till urged nor
never break for urging If thou canst love a
fellow of this temper Kate whose face is not
worth sun burning that never looks in his glass
for love of anything he sees there let thine eye
be thy cook I speak to thee plain sold or if
thou canst love me for this take me if not to
say to thee that I shall die is true but for thy
love by the Lord no yet I love thee too And
while thou livest dear Kate take a fellow of

plain and uncoined constancy, for he perforce must do thee right, because he hath not the gift to woo in other places for these fellows of infinite tongue, that can rhyme themselves into ladies' favours, they do always reason themselves out again What! a speaker is but a prater, a rhyme is but a ballad A good leg will fall, a straight back will stoop, a black beard will turn white, a curled pate will grow bald, a fair face will wither, a full eye will wax hollow but a good heart, Kate, is the sun and the moon or rather the sun and not the moon for it shines bright and never changes, but keeps his course truly If thou would have such a one take me, and take me take a soldier, take a soldier, take a king And what sayest thou then to my love? speak, my fair, and fairly, I pray thee

Kath Is it possible dat I sould love de enemy of France? 179

A Hen No it is not possible you should love the enemy of France Kate but, in loving me, you should love the friend of France for I love France so well that I will not part with a village of it, I will have it all mine and Kate, when France is mine and I am yours, then yours is France and you are mine

Kath I cannot tell vat is dat

A Hen No, Kate? I will tell thee in French, which I am sure will hang upon my tongue like a new married wife about her husband's neck hardly to be shook off *Je auant sur le possession de France, et quand vous avez le possession de moi—* let me see, what then? Saint Denis be my speed!—*done votre est France et vous etes mienne* It is easy for me Kate to conquer the kingdom as to speak so much more French I shall never move thee in French, unless it be to laugh at me

Kath *Sauf votre honneur, le François que vous parlez, il est meilleur que l'Anglois lequel je parle* 201

A Hen No faith, is't not Kate but thy speaking of my tongue, and I thine most truly-falsely, must needs be granted to be much at one But Kate dost thou understand thus much English canst thou love me?

Kath I cannot tell

A Hen Can any of your neighbours tell Kate? I'll ask them Come I know thou lovest me and I'll ask them when you come into your closet you'll question this gentlewoman about me and I know Kate, you will to her dispraise those parts in me that you love with your heart but good Kate mock me mercifully, the rather gentle princess because I love thee cruelly If ever thou beest mine Kate, as I have a saving faith within me tells me thou shalt I get thee with scambling and thou must therefore needs prove a good

soldier breeder shall not thou and I, between Saint Denis and Saint George compound a boy, half French half English, that shall go to Constantinople and take the Turk by the beard? shall we not? what sayest thou, my fair flower-de luce?

Kath I do not know dat

K Hen No 'tis hereafter to know, but now to promise do but now promise Kate you will endeavour for your French part of such a boy, and for my English moiety take the word of a king and bachelor How answer you, *la plus belle Katharine du monde, mon tres cher et de in desse?*

Kath Your majestee ave fausse French enough to deceive de most sage demoiselle dat is en France

K Hen Now, fie upon my false French! By mine honour, in true English, I love thee Kate by which honour I dare not swear thou lovest me, yet my blood begins to flatter me that thou dost, notwithstanding the poor and untempering effect of my visage Now, beshrew my father's ambition! he was thinking of civil wars when he got me therefore was I created with a stubborn outside with an aspect of iron that when I come to woo ladies, I fright them But in faith Kate the elder I wax the better I shall appear my comfort is, that old age that ill layer up of beauty, can do no more spoil upon my face thou hast me, if thou hast me at the worst and thou shalt wear me if thou wear me better and better and therefore tell me most fair Katharine, will you have me? Put off your maiden blushes avouch the thoughts of your heart with the looks of an empress take me by the hand and say 'Harry of England I am thine which word thou shalt no sooner bless mine ear withal but I will tell thee aloud 'England is thine Ireland is thine France is thine and Henry Plantagenet is thine who though I speak it before his face, if he be not fellow with the best king thou shalt find the best king of good fellows Come your answer in broken music for thy voice is music and thy English broken therefore queen of all Katharine break thy mind to me in broken English wilt thou have me?

Kath Dat is as it sall please de roi mon pere

A Hen Nay it will please him well Kate it shall please him Kate

Kath Den it sall also content me 210

A Hen Upon that I kiss your hand and I call you my queen

Kath *Laissez-moi s'entretenir avec vous car je ne puis m'empêcher de vous en parler*

*serviteur excusez-moi je vous supplie mon tres
puissant seigneur*

K Hen Then I will kiss your lips Kate
*hath Les dames et demoiselles pour tre bass es
devant leur noees il n est pas la coutume de France*

281

K Hen Madam my interpreter what says
she?

Alice Dar it is not be de fashion pour les
ladies of France—I cannot tell vat is *Laiser en*
English

K Hen To kiss

Alice Your Majesty *entendre better que nous*

K Hen It is not a fashion for the maids in
France to kiss before they are married would
she say?

Alice Oui *vraiment*

K Hen O Kate nice customs courtesy to great
kings Dear Kate you and I cannot be confined
within the weak list of a country's fashion we
are the makers of manners Kate and the liberty
that follows our places stops the mouth of all
find faults as I will do yours for upholding the
nice fashion of your country in denying me a
kiss therefore patiently and yielding [kissing
her] You have witchcraft in your lips Kate
there is more eloquence in a sugar touch of them
than in the tongues of the French council and
they should sooner persuade Harry of England
than a general petition of monarchs Here comes
your father

*Re-enter the FRENCH KING and his QUEEN BUR
GUNDY and other Lords*

Bur God save your Majesty, my royal cousin,
teach you our princess English?

K Hen I would have her learn my fair cousin
how perfectly I love her and that is good Eng-
lish

Bur Is she not apt?

K Hen Our tongue is rough too and my
condition is not smooth so that having neither
the voice nor the heart of flattery about me I
cannot so conjure up the spirit of love in her
that he will appear in his true likeness

Bur Pardon the frankness of my mirth if I
answer you for that If you would conjure in
her you must make a circle if conjure up love
in her in his true likeness he must appear naked
and blind Can you blame her then, being a
maid yet rosed over with the virgin crimson of
modesty if she deny the appearance of a naked
blind boy in her naked seeing self? It were my
lord a hard condition for a maid to consign to

K Hen Yet they do wink and yield, as love
is blind and enforces

Bur They are then excused my lord when
they see not what they do 330

K Hen Then, good my lord teach your cousin
to consent winking

Bur I will wink on her to consent my lord
if you will teach her to know my meaning for
maids well summered and warm kept are like
flies at Bartholomew tide blind though they
have their eyes and then they will endure hand-
ling which before would not abide looking on

K Hen This moral ties me over to time and a
hot summer and so I shall catch the fly your
cousin in the latter end and she must be blind
too

Bur As love is my lord before it loves

K Hen It is so and you may some of you
thank love for my blindness who cannot see
many a fair French city for one fair French maid
that stands in my way

Fr King Yes my lord you see them per-
spectively the cities turned into a maid for they
are all girdled with maiden walls that war hath
never entered 330

K Hen Shall Kate be my wife?

Fr King So please you

K Hen I am content so the maiden cities
you talk of may wait on her so the maid that
stood in the way for my wish shall show me the
way to my will

Fr King We have consented to all terms of
reason

K Hen Is it so my lords of England? 339

Wist The king hath granted every article
His daughter first and then in sequel all
According to their firm proposed natures

Exe Only he hath not yet subscribed this
Where your Majesty demands that the King of
France having any occasion to write for matter
of grant shall name your Highness in this form
and with this addition in French *Notre très
cher fils Hen r Roi d'Angleterre Heritier de
France* and thus in Latin, *Præclarissimus filius
nos er Henricus Rex Angliæ et Hæres Franciæ*

Fr King Nor this I have not brother so
denied

Bur your request shall make me let it pass

K Hen I pray you then, in love and dear all-
ance

Let that one article rank with the rest
And thereupon give me your daughter

Fr King Take her fair son and from her
blood raise up

Issue to me that the contending kingdoms
Of France and England whose very shores look
pale

With envy of each other's happiness

May cease their hatred, and this dear conjunction
 Plant neighbourhood and Christian-like accord
 In their sweet bosoms, that never war advance
 His bleeding sword 'twixt England and fair
 France

All Amen!

K Hen Now, welcome, Kate and bear me
 witness all,

That here I kiss her as my sovereign queen
 [Flourish]

Q Isa God, the best maker of all marriages,
 Combine your hearts in one, your realms in one!
 As man and wife, being two, are one in love,
 So be there 'twixt your kingdoms such a spousal
 That never may ill office, or fell jealousy,
 Which troubles oft the bed of blessed marriage,
 Thrust in between the paction of these kingdoms,
 To make divorce of their incorporate league,
 That English may as French, French English-
 men,

Receive each other God speak this Amen!

All Amen!

K Hen Prepare we for our marriage on which
 day,
 My Lord of Burgundy, we'll take your oath,

And all the peers', for surety of our leagues : 400
 Then shall I swear to Kate, and you to me,
 And may our oaths well kept and prosperous be!
 [Sennet Exeunt]

EPILOGUE

Enter CHORUS

Chor Thus far, with rough and all unable pen,
 Our bending author hath pursued the story,
 In little room confining mighty men
 Mangling by starts the full course of their
 glory
 Small time, but in that small most greatly lived
 This star of England Fortune made his sword,
 By which the world's best garden he achieved,
 And of it left his son imperial lord
 Henry the Sixth, in infant bands crown'd King
 Of France and England, did this king suc-
 ceed, 10
 Whose state so many had the managing,
 That they lost France and made his England
 bleed
 Which oft our stage hath shown, and for their
 sake
 In your fair minds let this acceptance take

[Exit]

JULIUS CÆSAR

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

JULIUS CÆSAR *I try as a ghost*
 OCTAVIUS CÆSAR
 MARCUS ANTONIUS *Try to see the death of Julius Cæsar*
 M. ÆMILIUS LEPIDUS
 CICERO
 PUBLIUS
 POPILIUS LENA *Senators*
 MARCUS BRUTUS
 CASSIUS
 CASCA
 TREBONIUS
 LIGARIUS
 DECIVS BRUTUS
 METELLUS CIMBER
 CINNA
 FLAVIUS
 MARULLUS *Tribunes*
 ARTEMIDORUS OF CYNDOUS *a teacher of historic*
 A SOOTH-SAYER
 CINNA *a poet*
 ANOTHER POET
 LUCILIUS
 TITINIUS
 MESSALA
 YOUNG CATO
 VOLUPTUUS *friend to Brutus and Cassius*

VARRO
 CLITUS
 CLAUDIUS
 STRATO *servants to Brutus*
 LECTIUS
 DARDANIUS
 PINDARUS *sent to call us*
 TWO COMMONERS
 A SERVANT to CÆSAR
 A SERVANT to Antony
 A SERVANT to Octavius
 FOUR CITIZENS
 THREE SOLDIERS
 A MESSENGER

CALPURNIA *wife to Cæsar*
 PORTIA *wife to Brutus*

NON-SPEAKING *Senators Citizens Guards Soldiers and Attendants*

SCENE *Rome the neighborhood of Sardis and the neighborhood of Plippis*



ACT I

SCENE I *Rome a street*

Enter FLAVIUS MARULLUS and certain COMMONERS

Flav Hence! home you idle creatures get you home
 Is this a holiday? what know you not
 Being mechanical you ought not walk
 Upon a labouring day without the sign
 Of your profession? Speak what trade art thou?
1st Com Why sir a carpenter
 Alas Where is thy leather apron and thy rule?
 What dost thou with thy best apparel on?
 You sir what trade are you?
2nd Com Truly sir in respect of a fine work
 man, I am but as you would say a cobbler
 Alas But what trade art thou? answer me
 directly
2nd Com A trade, sir that I hope I may use
 with a safe conscience which is indeed sir
 a mender of bad soles
 Alas What trade thou knave? thou naughty
 knave, what trade?
2nd Com Nay I beseech you, sir be not out
 with me yet, if you be out sir I can mend you

Mar What meanest thou by that? mend me
 thou saucy fellow! 21

2nd Com Why sir cobble you
 Flav Thou art a cobbler art thou?
2nd Com Truly sir all that I live by is with
 the awl I meddle with no tradesman's matters
 nor women's matters but with awl I am in-
 deed sir a surgeon to old shoes when they are
 in great danger I recover them As proper men
 as ever trod upon neat's leather have gone upon
 my handiwork 30

Flav But wherefore art not in thy shop today?
 Why dost thou lead these men about the streets?

2nd Com Truly sir to wear out their shoes
 to get myself into more work But indeed sir
 we make holiday to see Cæsar and to rejoice in
 his triumph

Alas Wherefore rejoice? What conquest brings
 he home?

What tributaries follow him to Rome
 To grace in cap and bonds his chariot wheels?
 You blocks you stones you worse than sense-
 less things! 40

O you hard hearts you cruel men of Rome
 Know you not Pompey? Many a time and oft
 Have you climb'd up to walls and battlements

To towers and windows, yea to chimney-tops,
Your infants in your arms and there have sat
The live long day, with patient expectation,
To see great Pompey pass the streets of Rome
And when you saw his chariot but appear,
Have you not made an universal shout,
That Tiber trembled underneath her banks 50
To hear the replication of your sounds
Made in her concave shores?
And do you now put on your best attire?
And do you now cull out a holiday?
And do you now strew flowers in his way
That comes in triumph over Pompey's blood?
Be gone!
Run to your houses, fall upon your knees,
Pray to the gods to intermit the plague
That needs must light on this ingratitude 60
Flav Go, to, good country men, and, for this
fault,
Assemble all the poor men of your sort,
Draw them to Tiber banks and weep your tears
Into the channel, till the lowest stream
Do kiss the most exalted shores of all

[*Exeunt all the COMMONERS*]

See, whether their basest metal be not moved,
They vanish tongue tied in their guiltiness
Go you down that way towards the Capitol,
This way will I disrobe the images,
If you do find them deck'd with ceremonies 70
Mar May we do so?

You know it is the feast of Lupercal
Flav It is no matter, let no images
Be hung with Cæsar's trophies I'll about
And drive away the vulgar from the streets
So do you too where you perceive them thick
These growing feathers pluck'd from Cæsar's
wing

Will make him fly an ordinary pitch
Who else would soar above the view of men 79
And keep us all in servile fearfulness [Exeunt]

SCENE II A public place

Flourish Enter CÆSAR, ANTONY for the course,
CALPURNIA, PORTIA, DECIVS CICERO BRUTUS
CASSIUS, and CASCA, a great crowd following
anong them a SOOTHSAYER

Cæs Calpurnia!

Cæs Peace ho! Cæsar speaks
Calpurnia

Cal Here my lord

Cæs Stand you directly in Antonius way

When he doth run his course Antonius!

Ant Cæsar my lord?

Cæs Forget not in your speed Antonius

To touch Calpurnia for our elders say

The barren touched in this holy chase

Shake off their sterile curse

Ant I shall remember
When Cæsar says "do this, it is perform'd" 10
Cæs Set on and leave no ceremony out

Flourish

Sooth Cæsar!

Cæs Ha! who calls?

Casca Bid every noise be still peace yet again!

Cæs Who is it in the press that calls on me?

I hear a tongue shriller than all the music,

Cry 'Cæsar! Speak, Cæsar is turn'd to hear

Sooth Beware the ides of March

Cæs What man is that?

Bru A soothsayer bids you beware the ides of
March 19

Cæs Set him before me let me see his face

Cæs Fellow come from the throng look upon

Cæsar

Cæs What say'st thou to me now? speak once
again

Sooth Beware the ides of March

Cæs He is a dreamer, let us leave him pass

[*Sennet* *Exeunt all except*
BRUTUS and CASSIUS]

Cæs Will you go see the order of the course?

Bru Not I

Cæs I pray you do

Bru I am not gamesome I do lack some part

Of that quick spirit that is in Antony

Let me not hinder, Cassius your desires, 20

I'll leave you

Cæs Brutus I do observe you now of late

I have not from your eyes that gentleness

And show of love as I was wont to have

You bear too stubborn and too strange a hand

Over your friend that loves you

Bru Cassius

Be not deceived if I have veil'd my look,

I turn the trouble of my countenance

Merely upon myself Vexed I am

Of late with passions of some difference, 40

Conceptions only proper to myself

Which give some soil perhaps to my behaviours

But let not therefore my good friends be grieved—

Among which number Cassius be you one—

Not construe any further my neglect

Than that poor Brutus with himself at war

Forgets the shows of love to other men

Cæs Then, Brutus I have much mistook your

passion

By means whereof this breast of mine hath burned

Thou, hits of great value worthy cogitations 50

Tell me good Brutus can you see your face?

Bru No Cassius for the eye sees not itself,

But by reflection b. some other things

Cæs This part

And it is very much lamented Brutus
That you have no such mirrors as will turn
Your hidden worthiness into your eye
That you might see your shadow I have heard
Where many of the best respect in Rome
Except immortal Cæsar speaking of Brutus 60
And groaning underneath this age's yoke
Have wish'd that noble Brutus had his eyes
Bru Into what dangers would you lead me
Cassius

That you would have me seek into myself
For that which is not in me?

Ca Therefore good Brutus be prepared to
hear

And since you know you cannot see yourself
So well as by reflection, I your glass
Will modestly discover to yourself
That of yourself which you yet know not of 70
And be not jealous on me gentle Brutus
Were I a common laughèr or did use
To stale with ordinary oaths my love
To every new protester if you know
That I do fawn on men and hug them hard
And after scandal them or if you know
That I profess my self in banqueting
To all the rout then hold me dangerous
Flourish and shout

Bru What means this shouting? I do fear the
people

Choose Cæsar for their king

Ca Ay do you fear it? So
Then must I think you would not have it so

Bru I would not Cassius yet I love him well
But wherefore do you hold me here so long?

What is it that you would impart to me?
If it be aught toward the general good,
Set honour in one eye and death in the other
And I will look on both indifferently
For let the gods so speed me as I love

The name of honour more than I fear death 89

Ca I know that virtue to be in you Brutus
As well as I do know your own and favour
Well honour is the subject of my story
I cannot tell what you and other men
Think of this life but for my single self
I had as lief not be as live to be

In awe of such a thing as I myself
I was born free as Cæsar so were you
We both have fed as well and we can both
Endure the winter's cold as well as he
For once upon a raw and gusty day 100

The troubled Tiber chafing with her shores
Cæsar said to me Darest thou, Cassius now
Leap in with me into this angry flood
And swim to yonder point? Upon the word
Accounted as I was I plunged in

And bade him follow so indeed he did
The torrent roar'd, and we did buffet it
With lusty sinews throwing it aside
And stemming it with hearts of controversy
But ere we could arrive the point proposed 110
Cæsar cried Help me Cassius or I sink!
I as Æneas our great ancestor
Did from the flames of Troy upon his shoulder
The old Anchises bear so from the waves of
Tiber

Did I the tired Cæsar And this man
Is now become a god and Cassius is
A wretched creature and must bend his body
If Cæsar carelessly but nod on him
He had a fever when he was in Spain
And when the fit was on him I did mark 120
How he did shake 'tis true this god did shake
His coward lips did from their colour fly
And that same eye whose bend doth awe the
world

Did lose his lustre I did hear him groan
Ay and that tongue of his that bade the Romans
Mark him and write his speeches in their books
Alas it cried Give me some drink Titinius
As a sick girl Ye gods it doth amaze me
A man of such a feeble temper should
So get the start of the majestic world 130

And bear the palm alone

Shout Flourish

Bru Another general shout!
I do believe that these applauses are
For some new honours that are heap'd on Cæsar
Ca Why man, he doth bestride the narrow
world

Like a Colossus and we petty men
Walk under his huge legs and peep about
To find ourselves dishonourable graves
Men at some time are masters of their fates
The fault dear Brutus is not in our stars 140

But in ourselves that we are underlings
Brutus and Cæsar what should be in that
Cæsar?

Why should that name be sounded more than
yours?

We're them together yours is as fair a name
Sounded them it doth become the mouth as well
Weigh them it is as heavy conjure with em,
Brutus will start a spirit as soon as Cæsar
Now in the names of all the gods at once
Upon what meat doth this our Cæsar feed 159

That he is grown so great? Age thou art shamed
Rome thou hast lost the breed of noble bloods!
When went there by an age since the great flood
But it was fam'd with more than with one man?
When could they say till now that talk'd of
Rome

That her wide walls encompass'd but one man?
Now is it Rome indeed and room enough,
When there is in it but one only man
O you and I have heard our fathers say
There was a Brutus once that would have brook'd
The eternal devil to keep his state in Rome 160
As easily as a king

Bru That you do love me, I am nothing jealous,
What you would work me to, I have some aim
How I have thought of this and of these times,
I shall recount hereafter, for this present,
I would not, so with love I might entreat you,
Be any further moved What you have said
I will consider, what you have to say 169
I will with patience hear, and find a time

Both meet to hear and answer such high things
Till then my noble friend, chew upon this
Brutus had rather be a villager
Than to repute himself a son of Rome
Under these hard conditions as this time
Is like to lay upon us

Car I am glad that my weak words
Have struck but thus much show of fire from
Brutus

Bru The games are done and Cæsar is re-
turning

Car As they pass by, pluck Casca by the sleeve,
And he will, after his sour fashion, tell you 180
What hath proceeded worthy note to-day

Re-enter CÆSAR and his Train

Bru I will do so But, look you, Cassius
The angry spot doth glow on Cæsar's brow,
And all the rest look like a chidden train
Calpurnia's cheek is pale and Cicero
Looks with such ferret and such fiery eyes
As we have seen him in the Capitol

Being cross'd in conference by some senators

Car Casca will tell us what the matter is

Car Antonius' 190

Ant Cæsar?

Car Let me have men about me that are fat,
Sleek headed men and such as sleep nights
Yond Cassius has a lean and hungry look

He thinks too much such men are dangerous,

Ant Fear him not Cæsar, he is not dangerous,
He is a noble Roman and well given

Car Would he were fatter! But I fear him not
Yet if my name were liable to fear 200

I do not know the man I should avoid
So soon as that spare Cassius He reads much

He is a great observer and he looks
Quite through the deeds of men he loves no plays

As thou dost Antony, he hears no music
Seldom he smiles and smiles in such a sort

As if he mock'd himself and scorn'd his spirits

That could be moved to smile at anything
Such men as he be never at heart's ease
Whiles they behold a greater than themselves,
And therefore are they very dangerous 210
I rather tell thee what is to be fear'd
Than what I fear, for always I am Cæsar
Come on my right hand, for this ear is deaf,
And tell me truly what thou think'st of him

*[Sennet. Exeunt CÆSAR and all his
Train, but CASCA*

Casca You pull'd me by the cloak, would you
speak with me?

Bru Ay, Casca, tell us what hath chanced
to day

That Cæsar looks so sad

Casca Why you were with him were you not?

Bru I should not then ask Casca what had
chanced 219

Casca Why, there was a crown offered him
and being offered him he put it by with the back
of his hand, thus, and then the people fell a shout-
ing

Bru What was the second noise for?

Casca Why, for that too

Cas They shouted thrice what was the last
cry for?

Casca Why, for that too

Bru Was the crown offered him thrice?

Casca Ay, marry was't and he put it by
thrice, every time gentler than other, and at
every putting by mine honest neighbours shouted

Car Who offered him the crown?

Cas Why, Antony

Bru Tell us the manner of it gentle Casca

Cas I can as well be hanged as tell the manner
of it it was mere foolery I did not mark it I
saw Mark Antony offer him a crown yet 'twas
not a crown neither 'twas one of these coronets
and as I told you he put it by once but for all
that, to my thinking he would fain have had it
Then he offered it to him again then he put it
by again but to my thinking he was very loath
to lay his fingers off it And then he offered it the
third time he put it the third time by and still
as he refused the rabblement hooted and clapped
their chopped hands and threw up their sweaty
night-caps and uttered such a deal of stinking
breath because Cæsar refused the crown that it
had almost choked Cæsar for he swoonded and
fell down at it and for mine own part I durst
not laugh for fear of opening my lips and re-
ceiving the bad air

Car But soft I pray you what did Cæsar
swoond

Cas He fell down in the market-place and
foamed at mouth and was speechless

Brutus 'Tis very like he hath the falling sickness
Cas No Caesar hath it not but you and I

And honest *Casca* we have the falling sickness

Cas I know not what you mean by that but I am sure Caesar fell down If the rag rag people did not clap him and hiss him according as he pleased and displeased them as they use to do the players in the theatre I am no true man

Brutus What said he when he came unto him self?

Cas Marry before he fell down when he perceived the common herd was glad he refused the crown he plucked me ope his doublet and offered them his throat to cut An I had been a member of any occupation if I would not have taken him at a word I would I might go to hell among the rogues And so he fell When he came to himself again he said if he had done or said any thing amiss he desired their worship to think it was his infirmity Three or four wenches where I stood cried Alas good soul and forgave him with all their hearts but there's no heed to be taken of them if Caesar had stabbed their mothers they would have done no less

Brutus And after that he came thus sad away?

Cas Ay 280

Cas Did *Cicero* say anything?

Cas Ay he spoke Greek

Cas To what effect?

Cas Nay an I tell you that I'll never look you in the face again but those that understood him smiled at one another and shook their heads but for mine own part it was Greek to me I could tell you more news too *Marullus* and *Flavius* for pollin^o scarfed off Caesar's images are put to silence Fare you well There was more foolery yet if I could remember it 291

Cas Will you sup with me to-night *Casca*?

Cas No I am promised forth

Cas Will you dine with me to-morrow?

Cas Ay if I be alive and your hand hold and your inner worth the eating

Cas Good I will expect you

Cas Do so Farewell both [Exit 300

Brutus What a blunt fellow is this grown to be! He was quick mettle when he went to school 300

Cas So is he now in execution

Of any bold or noble enterprise

However he puts on this ruddy form

This rudeness is a sauce to his good wit

Which gives men stomach to digest his words

With better appetite

Brutus And so it is For that time I will leave you

To-morrow if you please to speak with me

I will come home to you or if you will

Come home to me, and I will wait for you 310

Cas I will do so till then think of the world

[Exit *BRUTUS*

Well *Brutus* thou art noble yet I see,
 Thy honourable metal may be wrought
 From that it is disposed therefore it is meet
 That noble minds keep ever with their likes
 For who so firm that cannot be seduced?
 Caesar doth bear me hard but he loves *Brutus*
 If I were *Brutus* now and he were *Cassius*
 He should not humour me I will this night
 In several hands in at his windows throw 320
 As if they came from several citizens
 Writings all tending to the great opinion
 That Rome holds of his name wherein obscurely
 Caesar's ambition shall be glanced at
 And after this let Caesar scar him sure
 For we will shake him or worse days endure [Exit

SCENE III The same a street

Thunder and lightning Enter from opposite sides
CASCA with his sword drawn and *CICERO*

Cas Good even *Casca* brought you Caesar home?

Why are you breathless? and why stare you?

Cas Are not you moved when all the sway of earth

Shakes like a thing unfirm? O *Cicero*

I have seen tempests when the scolding winds

Have riven the knotty oaks and I have seen

The ambitious ocean swell and rage and foam

To be exalted with the threatening clouds

But never till to-night never till now

Did I go through a tempest dropping fire 10

Either there is a civil strife in heaven

Or else the world too saucy with the gods

Incenses them to send destruction

Cas Why saw you anything more wonderful?

Cas A common slave—you know him well by sight—

Held up his left hand which did flame and burn

Like twenty torches join'd, and yet his hand

Not sensible of fire remain'd unscorch'd

Besides—I have not since put up my sword—

Against the Capitol I met a lion 20

Who glared upon me and went surly by

Without annoying me and there were drawn

Upon a heap a hundred ghostly women,

Transformed with their fear who swore they saw 25

Men all in fire walk up and down the streets

And yesterday the bird of night did sit

Even at noon-day upon the market place

Hooting and shrieking When these prodigies

Do so conjunctly meet let not men say

These are th'ir reasons they are natural 30

For I believe they are portentous things

Unto the climate that they point upon

Cic Indeed, it is a strange-disposed time
But men may construe things after their fashion,
Clean from the purpose of the things themselves
Comes Cæsar to the Capitol to-morrow?

Casca He doth, for he did bid Antonius
Send word to you he would be there to-morrow

Cic Good night then, Casca this disturbed sky
Is not to walk in

Casca Farewell, Cicero [*Exit CICERO*] 40

Enter CASSIUS

Cas Who's there?

Casca A Roman

Cas Casca, by your voice

Casca Your ear is good Cassius, what night is
this?

Cas A very pleasing night to honest men

Casca Who ever knew the heavens menace so?

Cas Those that have known the earth so full of
faults

For my part, I have walk'd about the streets,
Submitting me unto the perilous night,

And, thus unbraced, Casca, as you see

Have bared my bosom to the thunder-stone,
And when the cross blue lightning seem'd to open

The breast of heaven, I did present myself 51

Even in the aim and very flash of it

Casca But wherefore did you so much tempt
the heavens?

It is the part of men to fear and tremble

When the most mighty gods by tokens send

Such dreadful heralds to astonish us

Cas You are dull, Casca, and those sparks of
life

That should be in a Roman you do want

Or else you use not You look pale and gaze 60

And put on fear and cast yourself in wonder

To see the strange impatience of the heavens

But if you would consider the true cause

Why all these fires, why all these gliding ghosts

Why birds and beasts from quality and kind

Why old men fool and children calculate

Why all these things chinge from their ordinance

Their natures and preformed faculties

To monstrous quality, why you shall find

That heaven hath infused them with these spirits

To make them instruments of fear and warning 70

Unto some monstrous state

Now could I Casca name to thee a man

Most like this dreadful night

That thunders lightens opens graves and roars

As doth the lion in the Capitol

A man no mightier than thyself or me

In personal action yet prodigious grown

And fearful as these strange eruptions are

Casca 'Tis Cæsar that you mean, is it not,
Cassius?

Cas Let it be who it is for Romans now 80

Have thews and limbs like to their ancestors

But, woe the while! our fathers' minds are dead,

And we are govern'd with our mothers' spirits,

Our yoke and sufferance show us womanish

Casca Indeed they say the senators to-morrow

Mean to establish Cæsar as a king

And he shall wear his crown by sea and land,

In every place, save here in Italy

Cas I know where I will wear this dagger then,
Cassius from bondage will deliver Cassius 90

Therein ye gods, you make the weak most

strong

Therein ye gods, you tyrants do defeat

Nor stony tower nor walls of beaten brass

Nor airless dungeon, nor strong links of iron,

Can be retentive to the strength of spirit,

But life being weary of these worldly bars,

Never lacks power to dismiss itself

If I know this know all the world besides,

That part of tyranny that I do bear

I can shake off at pleasure [*Thunder still*] 100

Casca So can I

So every bondman in his own hand bears

The power to cancel his captivity

Cas And why should Cæsar be a tyrant then?

Poor man! I know he would not be a wolf

But that he sees the Romans are but sheep

He were no lion were not Romans hinds

Those that with haste will make a mighty fire

Begin it with weak straw what trash is Rome,

What rubbish and what offal when it serveth 110

For the base matter to illuminate

So vile a thing as Cæsar! But O grief

Where hast thou led me? I perhaps speak this

Before a willing bondman then I know

My answer must be made But I am arm'd

And dangers are to me indifferent

Casca You speak to Casca and such a man

That is no fleecing tell tale I hold my hand

Be factious for redress of all these griefs

And I will set this foot of mine as far

As who goes farthest

Cas There's a bargain made! 120

Now know you Casca I have moved already

Some certain of the noblest minded Romans

To undergo with me an enterprise

Of honourable-dangerous consequence

And I do know by this they stand for me

In Pompey's porch for now this fearful night,

There is no stir or walking in the streets

And the complexion of the element

In favour's like the winter we have in

Most bloody fiery and most terrible

Casca Stand close awhile for here comes one in haste

Cas 'Tis Cinna I do know him by his gait
He is a friend

Enter CINNA

Cinna where haste you so?

Cin To find out you Who's that? *Metellus*
Camber?

Cas No it is *Casca* one incorporate
To our attempts Am I not stay'd for *Cinna*?

Cin I am glad on't What a fearful night is this!
There's two or three of us have seen strange sights

Cas Am I not stay'd for? tell me

Cin Yes you are

O *Cassius* if you could 140
But win the noble *Brutus* to our party—

Cas Be you content good *Cinna* take this paper

And look you lay it in the prætor's chair
Where *Brutus* may but find it and throw this
In at his window set this up with way
Upon old *Brutus* statue all this done
Repair to *Pompey's* porch where you shall find us

Is *Decius Brutus* and *Trebonius* there?

Cin All but *Metellus Camber* and he's gone
To seek you at your house Well I will hie 150

And so bestow these papers as you bade me

Cas That done, repair to *Pompey's* theatre
[Exit CINNA]

Come *Casca* you and I will yet ere day
See *Brutus* at his house three parts of him

Is ours already and the man entire

Upon the next encounter yields him ours

Casca O he sits high in all the people's hearts

And that which would appear offence in us

His countenance like richest alchemy

Will change to virtue and to worthiness 160

Cas Him and his worth and our great need of him

You have sight well conceited Let us go

For it is after midnight and ere day

We will awake him and be sure of him *[Exeunt]*

ACT II

SCENE I *Rome Brutus's orchard*

Enter BRUTUS

Bru What, *Lucius* ho

I cannot by the progress of the stars

Give guess how near to day *Lucius* I say!

I would it were my fault to sleep so soundly

When, *Lucius*, when? awake I say! what

Lucius!

Enter LUCIUS

Luc Call'd you my lord?

Bru Get me a taper in my study *Lucius*
When it is lighted come and call me here

Luc I will my lord *[Exit]*

Bru It must be by his death and for my part

I know no personal cause to spurn at him 11

But for the general He would be crown'd
How that might change his nature, there's the question

It is the bright day that brings forth the adder
And that craves wary walking Crown him?

That—

And then I grant we put a sting in him

That at his will he may do danger with

The abuse of greatness is when it disjoins

Remorse from power and, to speak truth of
Cæsar

I have not known when his affections sway'd 20

More than his reason But 'tis a common proof

That lowliness is young ambition's ladder

Whereto the climber upward turns his face

But when he once attains the upmost round

He then unto the ladder turns his back

Looks in the clouds scorning the base degrees

By which he did ascend So *Cæsar* may

Then lest he may prevent And since the
quarrel

Will bear no colour for the thing he is

Fashion it thus that what he is augmented 30

Would run to these and these extremities

And therefore think him as a serpent's egg

Which hatch'd would, as his kind grow mis-
chievous

And kill him in the shell

Re-enter LUCIUS

Luc The taper burneth in your closet sir

Searching the window for a flint I found

This paper thus seal'd up and I am sure

It did not lie there when I went to bed

Gives him the letter

Bru Get you to bed again it is not day
Is not to-morrow boy the ides of March? 40

Luc I know not sir

Bru Look in the calendar and bring me word

Luc I will sir *[Exit]*

Bru The exhalations whizzing in the air
Give so much light that I may read by them

Opens the letter and reads

Brutus, thou sleep'st awake and see thyself

Shall Rome &c Speak strike redress!

Brutus thou sleep'st awake!

Such instigations have been often dropp'd

Where I have took them up. 50

"Shall Rome, &c." Thus must I piece it out
Shall Rome stand under one man's awe? What,
Rome?

My ancestors did from the streets of Rome
The Tarquin drive, when he was call'd a king
"Speak, strike, redress!" Am I entreated
To speak and strike? O Rome, I make thee
promise,

If the redress will follow, thou receivest
Thy full petition at the hand of Brutus!

Re enter LUCIUS

Luc Sir, March is wasted fourteen days

Knocking within

Bru 'Tis good Go to the gate, somebody
knocks *[Exit Lucius 60]*

Since Cassius first did whet me against Cæsar,
I have not slept

Between the acting of a dreadful thing
And the first motion, all the interim is
Like a phantasma or a hideous dream
The Genius and the mortal instruments
Are then in council, and the state of man,
Like to a little kingdom, suffers then
The nature of an insurrection

Re-enter LUCIUS

Luc Sir, 'tis your brother Cassius at the door,
Who doth desire to see you

Bru Is he alone? *71*

Luc No, sir, there are more with him

Bru Do you know them?

Luc No, sir, their hats are pluck'd about their
ears

And half their faces buried in their cloaks,

That by no means I may discover them

By any mark of favour

Bru Let 'em enter *[Exit Lucius]*

They are the faction O Conspiracy,

Shamest thou to show thy dangerous brow by
night,

When evils are most free? O, then by day

Where wilt thou find a cavern dark enough *80*

To mask thy monstrous visage? Seek none con-
spiracy,

Hide it in smiles and affability

For if thou path thy native semblance on,

Not Trebus itself were dim enough

To hide thee from prevention

*Enter the conspirators CASSIUS, CASCAS, BRUTUS,
CINNA, METELLUS CIMBER, &c.*

Cas I think we are too bold upon your rest

Good morrow Brutus do we trouble you?

Bru I have been up this hour awake all night

Know I these men that come along with you?

Cas Yes, every man of them, and no man
here *90*

But honours you, and every one doth wish

You had but that opinion of yourself

Which every noble Roman bears of you

This is Trebonius

Bru He is welcome hither

Cas This, Decius Brutus

Bru He is welcome too

Cas This, Casca, thus, Cinna, and this, Me-
tellus Cimber

Bru They are all welcome

What watchful cares do interpose themselves

Betwixt your eyes and night?

Cas Shall I entreat a word? *100*

BRUTUS and CASSIUS whisper

Der Here lies the east doth not the day break
here?

Casca No

Cin O, pardon, sir, it doth, and yon gray lines

That fret the clouds are messengers of day

Casca You shall confess that you are both de-
ceived

Here, as I point my sword, the sun arises,

Which is a great way growing on the south,

Weighing the youthful season of the year

Some two months hence up higher toward the
north

He first presents his fire, and the high east *110*

Stands as the Capitol, directly here

Bru Give me your hands all over one by one

Cas And let us swear our resolution

Bru No not an oath if not the face of men

The sufferance of our souls the time's abuse—

If these be motives weak break off betimes,

And every man hence to his idle bed,

So let high sighted ranny range on

Till each man drop by lottery But if these,

As I am sure they do bear fire enough *120*

To kindle cowards and to steel with valour

The melting spirits of women then countrymen,

What need we any spur but our own cause

To prick us to redress? what other bond

Than secret Romans, that have spoke the word

And will not palter? and what other oath

Than honesty to honesty engaged

That this shall be or we will fall for it?

Swear priests and cowards and men callous

Old feeble earriots and such suffering souls *130*

That welcome wrongs unto bad causes swear

Such creatures as men doubt, but do not stain

The even virtue of our enterprise

Not the impress of a mercile of our spirits

To think of it or to see it or our performance

Do need as much when every drop of blood

This every Roman bears and nobly bears,

Is guilty of a several b stardy
If he do break the smallest particle
Of any promise that hath pass'd from him 140
Cas But what of Cicero's shall we sound him?
I think he will stand very strong with us
Cas a Let us not leave him out
Cin No by no means
M t O let us have him for his silver hairs
Will purchase us a good opinion
And buy men's voices to commend our deeds
It shall be said his judgement ruled our hands
Our youths and wildness shall no whit appear
But all be buried in his gravity
Bru O name him not let us not break with
him 150
For he will never follow any thing
That other men begin
Cas Then leave him out
Casca Indeed he is not fit
Der Shall no man else be touch'd but only
Cæsar?
Cas D'rus well urged I think it is not meet,
Mark Antony so well beloved of Cæsar
Should outlive Cæsar we shall find of him
A shrewd contriver and you know his means
If he improve them may well stretch so far
As to annoy us all which to prevent 160
Let Antony and Cæsar fall together
Bru Our course will seem too bloody Cains
Cassius
To cut the head off and then hack the limbs
Like wretch in death and envy afterwards
For Antony is but a limb of Cæsar
Let us be sacrificers but not butchers Cains
We all stand up against the spirit of Cæsar
And in the spirit of men there is no blood
O that we then could come by Cæsar's spirit,
And not d'smember Cæsar But alas 170
Cæsar must bleed for it! And gentle friends
Let's kill him boldly but not rashly
Let's carve him as a dish fit for the gods
Not hew him as a carcass fit for hounds
And let our hearts as subtle masters do
Stir up their servants to an act of rage
And after seem to chide em This shall make
Our purpose necessary and not envious
Which so appearing to the common eyes
We shall be call'd purgers not murderers 180
And for Mark Antony think not of him
For he can do no more than Cæsar's arm
When Cæsar's head is off
Cas Yet I fear him
For in the ingrafted love he bears to Cæsar—
Bru Alas good Cassius do not think of him
If he love Cæsar all that he can do
Is to himself take thought and die for Cæsar

And that were much he should for he is given
To sports to wildness and much company
Treb There is no fear in him let him not die
For he will live and laugh at this hereafter 191
Clock strikes
Bru Peace! count the clock
Cas The clock hath stricken three
Treb 'Tis time to part
Cas But it is doubtful yet
Whether Cæsar will come forth today or no
For he is superstitious grown of late
Quite from the main opinion he held once
Of fantasy of dreams and ceremonies
It may be these apparent prodigies
The unaccustom'd terror of this night
And the persuasion of his augurers 200
May hold him from the Capitol to-day
Der Never fear that if he be so resolv'd
I can o'ersway him for he loves to hear
That unicorns may be betray'd with trees
And bears with glasses elephants with holes
Lions with roils and men with flatterers
But when I tell him he hates flatterers
He says he does being then most flattered
Let me work
For I can give his humour the true bent 210
And I will bring him to the Capitol
Cas Nay we will all of us be there to fetch him
Bru By the eighth hour is that the uttermost?
Cin Be that the uttermost and fail not then
M t Cains Lagarius doth bear Cæsar hard
Who rated him for speaking well of Pompey
I wonder none of you have thought of him
Bru Now good Metellus go along by him
He loves me well and I have given him reasons
Send him but hither and I'll fashion him 220
Cas The morning comes upon's we'll leave
you Brutus
And friends disperse yourselves but all re-
member
What you have said and show yourselves true
Romans
Bru Good gentlemen look fresh and merrily
Let not our looks put on our purposes
But bear it as our Roman actors do
With untired spirits and formal constancy
And so good morrow to you every one
{Exeunt all but BRUTUS
Boy! Lucius! Fast asleep? It is no matter
Enjoy the honey heavy dew of slumber 230
Thou hast no figures nor no fantasies
Which busy care draws in the brains of men
Therefore thou sleep'st so sound

EXIT PORTA

For Brutus my lord!

Bru Portia, what mean you? wherefore rise you now?

It is not for your health thus to commit your weak condition to the raw cold morning.
Por Nor for yours neither. You are ungentle, Brutus.

Sole from my bed and yesternight, at supper, you suddenly arose and walk'd about, Musing and sighing, with your arms across, 240 And when I ask'd you what the matter was, you started upon me with ungentle looks, I urg'd you further, then you scratch'd your head

And too impatiently stamp'd with your foot, Yet I insisted, yet you answer'd not, But with an angry wafure of your hand Gave sign for me to leave you: so I did, Fearing to strengthen that impatience Which seem'd too much enkindled and withal Hoping it was but an effect of humour, 250

Which sometime hath his hour with every man. It will not let you ear nor talk, nor sleep And could it work so much upon your shape As it hath much prevail'd on your condition, I should not know you. Brutus, Dear my lord, Make me acquainted with your cause of grief.

Bru I am not well in health and that is all.
Por Brutus is wise and were he not in health He would embrace the means to come by it.
Bru Why, so I do. Good Portia go to bed.
Por Is Brutus sick? and is it physical? 261

To walk unbraced and suck up the humours Of the dank morning? What, is Brutus sick And will he steal out of his wholesome bed To dare the vile contagion of the night And tempt the rheumy and unpurg'd air To add unto his sickness? No, my Brutus, You have some sick offence within your mind Which by the right and virtue of my place Iought to know of and upon my knees I charm you by my once-commended beauty, By all your vows of love and that great vow Which did incorporate and make us one, That you unfold to me, yourself, your half, Why you are heavy, and what men to-night Have had resort to you: for here have been Some six or seven who did hide their faces Even from darkness. 270

Bru Kneel not, gentle Portia.
Por I should not need if you were gentle. Brutus.

Within the bond of marriage tell me, Brutus, Is it excepted I should know no secrets That appertain to you? Am I yourself But as it were in sort or limitation To keep with you at meals, comfort your bed

And talk to you sometimes? Dwell I but in the suburbs

Of your good pleasure? If it be no more,

Portia is Brutus' harlot, not his wife.

Bru You are my true and honourable wife,

As dear to me as are the ruddy drops

That visit my sad heart. 290

Por If this were true, then should I know this secret.

I grant I am a woman, but withal

A woman that Lord Brutus took to wife.

I grant I am a woman, but withal

A woman well reputed, Cato's daughter.

Think you I am no stronger than my sex

Being so father'd and so husband'd?

Tell me your counsels: I will not disclose 'em.

I have made strong proof of my constancy

Giving myself a voluntary wound. 300

Here, in the thigh, can I bear that with patience

And not my husband's secrets?

Bru O ye gods,

Render me worthy of this noble wife!

Knocking within

Hark, hark! one knocks. Portia go in awhile

And by and by thy bosom shall partake

The secrets of my heart.

All my engagements I will construe to thee,

All the character of my sad brows.

Leave me with haste. *[Exit PORTIA]* Lucius,

who's that knocks?

Re-enter LUCIUS with LIGARIUS

Luc Here is a sick man that would speak with you. 310

Bru Caius Ligarius! that Metellus spake of? Boy, stand aside. Caius Ligarius' hour?

Lig Vouch safe good morrow from a feeble tongue.

Bru O, what a time have you chose out! brave Caius.

To wear a kerchief? Would you were no sick!

Lig I am not sick, if Brutus have in hand

Any exploit worthy the name of honour.

Bru Such an exploit have I in hand. Ligarius,

Had you a healthful ear to hear of it?

Lig By all the gods that Romans bow before

I here discard my sickness! So il of Rome! 320

Brave so I derived from honest Juno!

Thou like an exorcist hast conjur'd up

My mortified spirit. Now I feel it.

And I will strive with them, if I cannot be

Yea, get the better of them. What stands it?

Bru A piece of work that will make sick men

whole.

Lig I am not one whole, though I were not sick.

Bru That must we also What it is my Cains
I shall unfold to thee as we are going 330
To whom it must be done

Li Set on your foot
And with a heart new fired I follow you
To do I know not what but it sufficeth
That Brutus leads me on
Bru Follow me then *[Exeunt]*

SCENE II *Cæsar's house*

Thunder and lightning Enter CÆSAR in his night gown

Cæs Nor heaven nor earth have been at peace
to-night
Thrice hath Calpurnia in her sleep cried out
Help ho! they murder Cæsar! Who's within?

Enter a SERVANT

Serv My lord?
Cæs Go bid the priests do present sacrifice
And bring me their opinions of success
Serv I will, my lord *[Exit]*

Enter CALPURNIA

Cal What mean you Cæsar? think you to
walk forth?

You shall not stir out of your house to-day
Cæs Cæsar shall forth the things that threaten
end me 10

Neither look'd but on my back when they shall see
The face of Cæsar they are vanished

Cal Cæsar I never stood on ceremonies
Yet now they fright me There is one within,
Besides the things that we have heard and seen
Recounts most horrid sights seen by the watch
A lioness hath whelped in the streets
And graves have yawn'd and yielded up their
dead

Fierce fiery warriors fought upon the clouds
In ranks and squadrons and right form of war 20
Which drizzled blood upon the Capitol
The noise of battle hurtled in the air
Horses did neigh and dying men did groan,
And ghosts did shriek and squeal about the
streets

O Cæsar these things are beyond all use
And I do fear them

Cæs What can be avoided
Whose end is purposed by the mighty gods?
Yet Cæsar shall go forth for these prodigions
Are to the world in general as to Cæsar

Cal When beggars die there are no comets
seen 30
The heavens themselves blaze forth the death of
princes

Cæs Cowards die many times before their
deaths

The valiant never taste of death but once
Of all the wonders that I yet have heard
It seems to me most strange that men should fear
Seeing that death a necessary end
Will come when it will come

Re-enter SERVANT

What say the augurers?

Serv They would not have you to stir forth
to-day

Plucking the entrails of an offering forth
They could not find a heart within the beast 40

Cæs The gods do this in shame of cowardice
Cæsar should be a beast without a heart
If he should stay at home to-day for fear
No Cæsar shall not Danger knows full well
That Cæsar is more dangerous than he
We are two lions litter'd in one day
And I the elder and more terrible
And Cæsar shall go forth

Cal Alas my lord
Your wisdom is consumed in confidence
Do not go forth to-day call it my fear 50

That keeps you in the house and not your own
We'll send Mark Antony to the senate house
And he shall say you are not well to-day
Let me upon my knee prevail in this

Cæs Mark Antony shall say I am not well
And for thy humour I will stay at home

Enter DECIVS

Here's Decius Brutus he shall tell them so

Dec Cæsar all hail! good morrow worthy
Cæsar

I come to fetch you to the senate house
Cæs And you are come in very happy time 60

To bear my greeting to the senators
And tell them that I will not come to-day
Cannot be false and that I dare not falser
I will not come to-day tell them so Decius

Cal Say he is sick

Cæs Shall Cæsar send a lie?
I have in conquest stretch'd mine arm so far
To be afraid to tell graybeards the truth?

Decius go tell them Cæsar will not come

Dec Most mighty Cæsar let me know some
cause

Lest I be laugh'd at when I tell them so 70

Cæs The cause is in my will I will not come
That is enough to satisfy the senate
But for your private satisfaction,
Because I love you I will let you know
Calpurnia here my wife stays me at home
She dreamt to-night she saw my statue

Which, like a fountain with an hundred spouts,
Did run pure blood, and many lusty Romans
Came smiling and did bathe their hands in it
And these does she apply for warnings, and
portents, 80

And evils imminent, and on her knee
Hath begg'd that I will stay at home to-day
Dec This dream is all amiss interpreted,
It was a vision fair and fortunate
Your statue spouting blood in many pipes
In which so many smiling Romans bathed,
Signifies that from you great Rome shall suck
Reviving blood, and that great men shall press
For tinctures, stains, relics, and cognizance
This by Calpurnia's dream is signified 90

Ces And this way have you well expounded it
Dec I have, when you have heard what I can
say

And know it now the senate have concluded
To give this day a crown to mighty Cæsar
If you shall send them word you will not come,
Their minds may change Besides, it were a
mock

Apt to be render'd for some one to say
"Break up the senate till another time
When Cæsar's wife shall meet with better
dreams"

If Cæsar hide himself shall they not whisper 100
'Lo, Cæsar is afraid'?

Pardon me Cæsar for my dear dear love
To your proceeding bids me tell you this,
And reason to my love is liable

Ces How foolish do your fears seem now, Cal-
purnia!

I am ashamed I did yield to them
Give me my robe for I will go

Enter PUBLIUS BRUTUS LICARIUS METELLUS,
CASCA TREBONIUS and CINNA

And look where Publius is come to fetch me

Pub Good morrow Cæsar

Ces Welcome Publius
What Brutus are you stirr'd so early too? 110

Good morrow Casca Caius Ligarius
Cæsar was ne'er so much your enemy
As that sameague which hath made you lean
What is't o'clock?

Bru Cæsar tis struck en eight

Ces I thank you for your pains and courtesy

Enter ANTONY

See! Antony that reveals long nights
Is notwithstanding up Good morrow Antony

An So to most noble Cæsar

Ces Bid them prepare with a
I am to blame to be thus waited for

Now Cinna now, Metellus what Trebonius!
I have an hour's talk in store for you, 121

Remember that you call on me to-day

Be near me, that I may remember you

Treb Cæsar, I will [*Aside*] and so near will I
be

That your best friends shall wish I had been
further

Ces Good friends, go in and taste some wine
with me

And we, like friends will straightway go to-
gether

Bru [*Aside*] That every like is not the same, O
Cæsar

The heart of Brutus yearns to think upon!

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III A street near the Capitol

Enter ARTEMIDORUS, reading a paper

Art "Cæsar, beware of Brutus take heed of
Cassius come not near Casca have an eye to
Cinna, trust not Trebonius mark well Me-
tellus Cimber Decius Brutus loves thee not
thou hast wronged Caius Ligarius There is
but one mind in all these men and it is bent
against Cæsar If thou beest not immortal look
about you security gives way to conspiracy
The mighty gods defend thee! Thy lover

Artemidorus"

Here will I stand till Cæsar pass along, 11

And as a suitor will I give him this

My heart laments that virtue cannot live

Out of the teeth of emulation

If thou read this O Cæsar thou may'st live

If not the Fates with traitors do contrive [*Exit*]

SCENE IV Another part of the same street before
the house of Brutus

Enter PORTIA and LUCIUS

For I prithee boy run to the senate house

Say not to answer me but get thee gone

Why dost thou stay?

Luc To know my errand madam

For I would have had thee there, and here
again

For I can tell thee what thou should'st do there

O constancy be strong upon my side

Set a hedge mountain 'tween my heart and tongue!

I have a man's mind but a woman's might

How hard it is for women to keep counsel!

Art thou here yet?

Luc Madam what should I do? 12

Run to the Capitol and to young Cicer

And so return to you and refresh Cicer

For yes bid me wait boy if this lord
will

For he went sickly forth and take good note
What Caesar doth what suitors press to him
Hark boy! what noise is that?

Luc I hear none madam

Por Prithee listen well

I heard a bustling rumour like a fray
And the wind brings it from the Capitol

Luc Sooth madam I hear nothing 20

Enter the SOOTHSAYER

Por Come hither fellow which way hast thou
been?

Sooth At mine own house good lady

Por What is't o'clock?

Sooth About the ninth hour lady

Por Is Caesar yet gone to the Capitol?

Sooth Madam not yet I go to take my stand

To see him pass on to the Capitol

Por Thou hast some suit to Caesar hast thou
not?

Sooth That I have lady if it will please Caesar

To be so good to Caesar as to hear me

I shall beseech him to befriend himself 30

Por Why know'st thou any harm's intended
towards him?

Sooth None that I know will be much that I fear
may chance

Good morrow to you Here the street is narrow

The throng that follows Caesar at the heels

Of senators of praetors common suitors

Will crush a feeble man almost to death

I'll get me to a place more void and there

Speak to great Caesar as he comes along *[Exit]*

Por I must go in by me how weak a thing

The heart of woman is O Brutus 40

The heavens speed thee in thine enterprise!

Sure the boy heard me Brutus hath a suit

That Caesar will not grant O I grow faint

Run Lucius and commend me to my lord

Say I am merry come to me again

And bring me word what he doth say to thee

[Exeunt severally]

ACT III

SCENE I Rome Before the Capitol the Senate
sit on above

A crowd of people among them ARTEMIUS and
the SOOTHSAYER Flourish Enter CAESAR, BRUTUS
CASSIUS, CALPURNIA, DECIMUS METELLUS, TREBONIUS
CICERO, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, POPILIUS, PLAIURUS
and others

Caes *[To the soothsayer]* The Ides of March
are come

Sooth As Caesar but not going

Art Hail Caesar! read this schedule

Dec Trebonius doth desire you to over read,

At your best leisure thus his humble suit

Art O Caesar read mine first for mine's a
suit

That touches Caesar nearer read it great Caesar
Caes What touches us ourself shall be last
served

Art Delay not Caesar read it instantly

Caes What is the fellow mad?

Pub Sirrah give place 20

Caes What urge you your petitions in the
street?

Come to the Capitol

*CAESAR goes up to the Senate House the rest
following*

Pop I wish your enterprise to-day may thrive

Caes What enterprise Popilius?

Pop Fare you well

Advances to CAESAR

Bru What said Popilius Lena?

Caes He wish'd to-day our enterprise might
thrive

I fear our purpose is discovered

Bru Look how he makes to Caesar mark him

Caes Calpurnia be sudden for we fear prevention

Brutus what shall be done? If this be known 30

Cassius or Caesar never shall turn back

For I will slay myself

Bru Cassius be constant

Popilius Lena speaks not of our purposes

For look he smiles and Caesar doth not change

Caes Trebonius knows his time for look you

Brutus

He draws Mark Antony out of the way

[Exeunt ANTONY and TREBONIUS]

Dec Where is Metellus Cimber? Let him go

And presently prefer his suit to Caesar

Bru He is address'd press near and second
him

Cic Calpurnia you are the first that rears your
hand 30

Caes Are we all ready? What is now amiss

That Caesar and his senate must redress?

Met Most high most mighty and most puis-
sant Caesar

Metellus Cimber throws before thy seat

An humble heart—*[Kneeling]*

Caes I must prevent thee Cimber

These couchings and these lowly courtesies

Might fire the blood of ordinary men,

And turn pre-ordinance and first decree

Into the law of children Be not fond

To think that Caesar bears such rebel blood 40

That will be thaw'd from the true quality

With that which melteth fools I mean sweet
words

Low crooked court'sies, and base spaniel fawning

Thy brother by decree is banished
If thou dost bend and pray and fawn for him,
I spurn thee like a cur out of my way
I know, Cæsar doth not wrong, nor without cause
Will he be satisfied

Met Is there no voice more worthy than my own

To sound more sweetly in great Cæsar's ear
For the repealing of my banish'd brother?

Bru I kiss thy hand but not in flattery Cæsar,
Desiring thee that Publius Cimber may
Have an immediate freedom of repeal

Cæs What, Brutus!

Cæs Pardon Cæsar Cæsar pardon

As low as to thy foot doth Cassius fall
To beg enfranchisement for Publius Cimber

Cæs I could be well moved if I were as you,
If I could pray to move, prayers would move me
But I am constant as the northern star

Of whose true fix'd and resting quality
There is no fellow in the firmament

The skies are painted with unnumber'd sparks,
They are all fire and every one doth shine,

But there's but one in all doth hold his place
So in the world 'tis furnish'd well with men

And men are flesh and blood and apprehensive,
Yet in the number I do know but one

That unassailable holds on his rank,
Unshak'd of motion and that I am he

Let me a little show it, even in this
That I was constant Cimber should be banish'd,

And constant do remain to keep him so

Cin O Cæsar—

Cæs Hence! wilt thou lift up Olympus?
Dec Great Cæsar—

Cæs Doth not Brutus bootless kneel?

Cæs Speak, hands for me!

Cæs first, then the other conspirators and
MARCUS BRUTUS stabs Cæsar

Cæs Et tu Brute! Then fall Cæsar! [*Dec*

Cin Liberty! Freedom! Tyranny is dead!

Run hence proclaim cry it about the streets

Cæs Some to the common pulpits and cry out

'Liberty, freedom and enfranchisement!'

Bru People and senators be not affrighted

Fly not stand still ambition's debt is paid

Cæs Go to the pulpit Brutus

Dec And Cassius too

Bru Where's Publius?

Cin Here quite confounded with this murder

Met Stand fast together lest some friend of

Cæsar's

Should chance—

Bru Talk not of standing Publius, good cheer,

There is no harm intended to your person,
Nor to no Roman else so tell them, Publius

Cæs And leave us Publius, lest that the people,
Rushing on us should do your age some mischief

Bru Do so and let no man abide this deed,
But we the doers

Re-enter TREBONIUS

Cæs Where is Antony?

Tre Fled to his house amazed

Men wives and children stare, cry out and run

As it were doomsday

Bru Fates, we will know your pleasures

That we shall die, we know, 'tis but the time

And drawing days out that men stand upon

Cæs Why he that cuts off twenty years of life

Cuts off so many years of fearing death

Bru Grant that and then is death a benefit

So are we Cæsar's friends that have abridged

His time of fearing death Stoop Romans, stoop

And let us bathe our hands in Cæsar's blood

Up to the elbows and besmear our swords

Then walk we forth even to the market place,

And, waving our red weapons o'er our heads

Let's all cry, 'Peace, freedom and liberty!'

Cæs Stoop then, and wash How many ages

hence

Shall this our lofty scene be acted over

In states unborn and accents yet unknown!

Bru How many times shall Cæsar bleed in

sport

That now on Pompey's basis lies along

No worthier than the dust!

Cæs So oft as that shall be

So often shall the knot of us be call'd

The men that gave their country liberty

Dec What shall we forth?

Cæs At every man away

Brutus shall lead and we will grace his heels

With the most bold and best hearts of Rome

Enter a SERVANT

Bru Soft! who comes here? A friend of An-

tony's

Ser Thus Brutus did my master bid me

kneel

Thus did Mark Antony bid me fall down

And being prostrate thus he bade me say

Brutus is noble wise valiant and honest

Cæsar was mighty bold and in his

Say I have killed him and I have killed him

Say I fear'd Cæsar honour'd him and lov'd him

If I will wish mischief to him

May safely come to me and be revenged

How Cæsar has deserved to be revenged

Mark Antony shall me love Cæsar dead

So well as Brutus living but will follow
 The fortunes and affairs of noble Brutus
 Thorough the hazards of this untrod state
 With all true faith So says my master Antony
Bru Thy master is a wise and valiant Roman
 I never thought him worse
 Tell him so please him come unto this place 140
 He shall be satisfied and by my honour
 Depart untouch'd

Ser I'll fetch him presently *[Exit]*
Bru I know that we shall have him well to
 friend

Cas I wish we may but yet have I a mind
 That fears him much and my misgiving still
 Falls shrewdly to the purpose

Bru But here comes Antony

Re-enter ANTONY

Welcome Mark Antony

Ant O mighty Cæsar! dost thou lie so low?
 Are all thy conquests glories triumphs spoils
 Shunk to this little measure? Fare thee well
 I know not gentlemen, what you intend 151
 Who else must be let blood who else is rank
 If I myself there is no hour so fit
 As Cæsar's death's hour nor no instrument
 Of half that worth as those your swords made
 rich

With the most noble blood of all this world
 I do beseech ye if you bear me hard
 Now whilst your purpled hands do reek and
 smoke

Fulfil your pleasure Live a thousand years
 I shall not find myself so apt to die 160
 No place will please me so no mean of death,
 As here by Cæsar and by you cut off
 The choice and master spirits of this age

Bru O Antony beg not your death of us
 Though now we must appear bloody and cruel
 As by our hands and thus our present act
 You see we do yet see you but our hands
 And thus the bleeding business they have done
 Our hearts you see not they are pitiful
 And pity to the general wrong of Rome— 170
 As fire drives out fire so pity pity—
 Hath done this deed on Cæsar For your part
 To you our swords have leaden points Mark
 Antony

Our arms in strength of malice and our hearts
 Of brothers temper do receive you in
 With all kind love good thoughts and reverence

Cas Your voice shall be as strong as any man's
 In the disposing of new duties

Bru Only be patient till we have appeased
 The multitude, beside themselves with fear 180
 And then we will deliver you the cause

Why I that did love Cæsar when I struck him
 Have thus proceeded

Ant I doubt not of your wisdom
 Let each man render me his bloody hand
 First Marcus Brutus will I shake with you
 Next Caius Cassius do I take your hand
 Now Decius Brutus yours now yours Me
 tellus

Yours Cinna and my valiant Cassa yours
 Though last not least in love yours good Tre
 bonius

Gentlemen all—alas what shall I say? 190

My credit now stands on such slippery ground
 That one of two bad ways you must conceit me
 Either a coward or a flatterer

That I did love thee Cæsar O tis true
 If then thy spirit look upon us now
 Shall it not grieve thee dearer than thy death
 To see thy Antony making his peace
 Shaking the bloody fingers of thy foes
 Most noble! in the presence of thy corpse?

Had I as many eyes as thou hast wounds 200
 Weeping as fast as they stream forth thy blood
 It would become me better than to close
 In terms of friendship with thine enemies
 Pardon me Julius! Here wast thou bay'd brave
 hart

Here didst thou fall and here thy hunters stand
 Sign'd in thy spoil and crimson'd in thy lethe
 O world thou wast the forest to this hart
 And this indeed O world the heart of thee
 How like a deer strucken by many princes
 Dost thou here lie? 210

Cas Mark Antony—

Ant Pardon me Caius Cassius
 The enemies of Cæsar shall say this
 Then in a friend it is cold modesty

Cas I blame you not for praising Cæsar so
 But what compact mean you to have with us?
 Will you be prick'd in number of our friends
 Or shall we on and not depend on you?

Ant Therefore I took your hands but was
 indeed,

Sway'd from the point by looking down on
 Cæsar

Friends am I with you all and love you all 220
 Upon this hope, that you shall give me reasons
 Why and wherein Cæsar was dangerous

Bru Or else were this a sad age spectacle
 Our reasons are so full of good regard
 That were you Antony the son of Cæsar
 You should be satisfied

Ant That's all I seek
 And am moreover sutor that I may
 Produce his body to the market place
 And in the pulpit as becomes a friend,

Speak in the order of his funeral 230
Bru You shall, Mark Antony
Ca Brutus, a word with you
 [Aside to BRUTUS] You know not what you do do
 not consent

That Antony speak in his funeral
 Know you how much the people may be moved
 By that which he will utter?

Bru By your pardon,
 I will myself into the pulpit first
 And show the reason of our Cæsar's death
 What Antony shall speak, I will protest
 He speaks by leave and by permission,
 And that we are contented Cæsar shall 240
 Have all true rites and lawful ceremonies
 It shall advantage more than do us wrong

Ca I know not what may fall, I like it not
Bru Mark Antony, here, take you Cæsar's
 body

You shall not in your funeral speech blame us,
 But speak all good you can devise of Cæsar,
 And say you do't by our permission,
 Else shall you not have any hand at all
 About his funeral and you shall speak
 In the same pulpit whereto I am going, 250
 After my speech is ended

Ant Be it so,
 I do desire no more
Bru Prepare the body then and follow us
 [Exeunt all but ANTONY]
Ant O pardon me, thou bleeding piece of
 earth

That I am meek and gentle with these butchers!
 Thou art the ruins of the noblest man
 That ever lived in the tide of times
 Woe to the hand that shed this costly blood!
 Over thy wounds now do I prophesy — 259
 Which like dumb mouths do ope their ruby lips
 To beg the voice and utterance of my tongue —
 A curse shall light upon the limbs of men,
 Domestic fury and fierce civil strife
 Shall cumber all the parts of Italy
 Blood and destruction shall be so in use
 And dreadful objects so familiar
 That mothers shall but smile when they behold
 Their infants quarter'd with the hands of war
 All pity choked with custom of fell deeds
 And Cæsar's spirit ranging for revenge 270
 With Ate by his side come hot from hell
 Shall in these confines with a monarch's voice
 Cry 'Havoc,' and let slip the dogs of war
 That this foul deed shall smell above the earth
 With carrion men groaning for burial

Enter a SERVANT

You serve Octavius Cæsar, do you not?

Serv I do, Mark Antony
Ant Cæsar did write for him to come to Rome
Serv He did receive his letters, and is coming,
 And bid me say to you by word of mouth — 280
 O Cæsar! — [Seemg the body]

Ant Thy heart is big, get thee apart and weep
 Passion, I see, is catching, for mine eyes,
 Seeing those beads of sorrow stand in thine,
 Began to water Is thy master coming?

Serv He lies to-night within seven leagues of
 Rome

Ant Post back with speed, and tell him what
 hath chanced

Here is a mourning Rome a dangerous Rome,
 No Rome of safety for Octavius yet, 289
 Hie hence, and tell him so Yet, stay awhile,
 Thou shalt not back till I have borne this corse
 Into the market place there shall I try,
 In my oration how the people take
 The cruel issue of these bloody men,
 According to the which thou shalt discourse
 To young Octavius of the state of things
 Lend me your hand [Exeunt with CÆSAR's body]

SCENE II The Forum

*Enter BRUTUS and CASSIUS and a throng
 of CITIZENS*

Citizens We will be satisfied let us be satisfied
Bru Then follow me, and give me audience,
 friends

Cassius, go you into the other street,
 And part the numbers
 Those that will hear me speak let 'em stay here,
 Those that will follow Cassius go with him,
 And public reasons shall be rendered
 Of Cæsar's death

1st *Cit* I will hear Brutus speak

2nd *Cit* I will hear Cassius, and compare their
 reasons

When severally we hear them rendered 10

[Exit CASSIUS with some of the CITIZENS]

BRUTUS goes into the pulpit

3rd *Cit* The noble Brutus is ascended silence!

Bru Be patient till the last
 Romans, countrymen and lovers! hear me for my
 cause and be silent, that you may hear believe
 me for mine honour, and have respect to mine
 honour, that you may believe censure me in
 your wisdom and awake your senses, that you
 may the better judge If there be any in this
 assembly, any dear friend of C 15
 that Brutus' love to Cæsar was
 If then that friend demand
 against Cæsar this is my
 loved Cæsar less, but that
 Had you rather Cæsar

slaves than that Caesar were dead to live all free men? As Caesar loved me I weep for him as he was fortunate I rejoice at it as he was valiant I honour him but as he was ambitious I slew him There is tears for his love joy for his fortune honour for his valour and death for his ambition Who is here so base that would be a bondman? If any speak for him have I offended Who is here so rude that would not be a Roman? If any speak for him have I offended Who is here so vile that will not love his country? If any speak for him have I offended I pause for a reply

All None Brutus none

Bru Then none have I offended I have done no more to Caesar than you shall do to Brutus The question of his death is enrolled in the Capitol his glory not extenuated wherein he was worthy nor his offences enforced for which he suffered death

Enter ANTONY and others with CAESAR's body

Here comes his body mourned by Mark Antony who though he had no hand in his death shall receive the benefit of his dying a place in the commonwealth as which of you shall not? With this I depart that as I slew my best lover for the good of Rome I have the same dagger for myself when it shall please my country to need my death

All Live, Brutus live live!

1st Cit Bring him with triumph home unto his house

2nd Cit Give him a statue with his ancestors

3rd Cit Let him be Caesar

4th Cit Caesar a better parts

Shall be crown'd in Brutus

1st Cit We'll bring him to his house

With shouts and clamours

Bru My countrymen—

2nd Cit Peace silence Brutus speaks

1st Cit

Peace ho!

Bru Good countrymen, let me depart alone

And for my sake, stay here with Antony

Do grace to Caesar's corpse, and grace his speech

Tending to Caesar's glories which Mark Antony

By our permission, is allow'd to make

I do entreat you not a man depart

Save I alone till Antony have spoke *[Exit*

1st Cit Stay ho! and let us hear Mark Antony

3rd Cit Let him go up into the public chair

We'll hear him Noble Antony go up

Ant For Brutus sake, I am beholding to you

[Goes into the pulpit]

4th Cit What does he say of Brutus?

3rd Cit He says for Brutus sake

He finds himself beholding to us all

4th Cit 'Twere best he speak no harm of

Brutus here

1st Cit This Caesar was a tyrant

3rd Cit Nay that's certain

We are blest that Rome is rid of him

2nd Cit Peace! let us hear what Antony can say

Ant You gentle Romans—

Citizens Peace, ho! let us hear him

Ant Friends Romans countrymen lend me your ears

I come to bury Caesar not to praise him

The evil that men do lives after them

The good is oft interred with their bones

So let it be with Caesar The noble Brutus

Hath told you Caesar was ambitious

If it were so it was a grievous fault

And grievously hath Caesar answer'd it

Here under leave of Brutus and the rest—

For Brutus is an honourable man

So are they all all honourable men—

Come I to speak in Caesar's funeral

He was my friend faithful and just to me

But Brutus says he was ambitious

And Brutus is an honourable man

He hath brought many captives home to Rome

Whose ransoms did the general coffers fill

Did this in Caesar seem ambitious?

When that the poor have cried Caesar hath wept

Ambition should be made of sterner stuff

Yet Brutus says he was ambitious

And Brutus is an honourable man

You all did see that on the Lupercal

I thrice presented him a kingly crown

Which he did thrice refuse was this ambition?

Yet Brutus says he was ambitious

And sure he is an honourable man

I speak not to disprove what Brutus spoke,

But here I am to speak what I do know

You all did love him once not without cause

What cause withholds you then to mourn for him?

O judgement! thou art fled to brutish beasts

And men have lost their reason Bear with me

My heart is in the coffin there with Caesar

And I must pause till it come back to me

1st Cit Methinks there is much reason in his sayings

2nd Cit If thou consider rightly of the matter Caesar has had great wrong

3rd Cit

Has he masters?

I fear there will a worse come in his place

4th Cit Mark'd ye his words? He would not

take the crown

Therefore tis certain he was not ambitious

1st Cit If it be found so some will dear abide it

2nd Cit Poor soul! his eyes are red as fire with weeping 120

3rd Cit There's not a nobler man in Rome than Antony

4th Cit Now mark him, he begins again to speak

Ant But yesterday the word of Cæsar might Have stood against the world, now lies he there,

And none so poor to do him reverence
O masters, if I were disposed to stir

Your hearts and minds to mutiny and rage,
I should do Brutus wrong, and Cassius wrong

Who, you all know, are honourable men
I will not do them wrong, I rather choose 130

To wrong the dead, to wrong myself and you,
Than I will wrong such honourable men

But here's a parchment with the seal of Cæsar,
I found it in his closet, 'tis his will

Let but the commons hear this testament—
Which pardon me, I do not mean to read—

And they would go and kiss dead Cæsar's wounds
And dip their napkins in his sacred blood,

Yea, beg a hair of him for memory

And, dying, mention it within their wills, 140
Bequeathing it as a rich legacy

Unto their issue

4th Cit We'll hear the will read it, Mark Antony

All The will, the will! we will hear Cæsar's will

Ant Have patience, gentle friends, I must not read it

It is not meet you know how Cæsar loved you

You are not wood, you are not stones, but men

And being men hearing the will of Cæsar,

It will inflame you, it will make you mad, 149

'Tis good you know not that you are his heirs

For if you should, O what would come of it!

4th Cit Read the will, we'll hear it Antony

You shall read us the will, Cæsar's will

Ant Will you be patient? will you stay awhile?

I have o'er-shot my self to tell you of it

I fear I wrong the honourable men

Whose daggers have stabb'd Cæsar, I do fear it

4th Cit They were traitors, honourable men!

All The will! the testament!

1st Cit They were villains, murderers, the will! read the will 160

Ant You will compel me then to read the will?

Then make a ring about the corpse of Cæsar

And let me show you him that is the will

Shall I deceive? and will you give me leave?

2nd Cit Come down

3rd Cit Descend

1st Cit You shall have leave

[ANTONY ENTERS]

4th Cit A ring stand round

1st Cit Stand from the hearse, stand from the body 169

2nd Cit Room for Antony, most noble Antony

Ant Nay, press not so upon me, stand far off

Several Cit Stand back, room, bear back

Ant If you have tears, prepare to shed them now

You all do know this mantle, I remember

The first time ever Cæsar put it on

'Twas on a summer's evening, in his tent,

That day he overcame the Nervii

Look, in this place ran Cassius' dagger through

See what a rent the envious Casca made

Through this the well-beloved Brutus stabb'd,

And as he pluck'd his cursed steel away 181

Mark how the blood of Cæsar follow'd it,

As rushing out of doors, to be resolv'd

If Brutus so unkindly knock'd or no

For Brutus, as you know, was Cæsar's angel

Judge O you gods, how dearly Cæsar loved him!

This was the most unkindest cut of all

For when the noble Cæsar saw him stab

Ingratitude more strong than traitors' arms

Quite vanquish'd him, then burst his mighty heart, 190

And, in his mantle muffling up his face,

Even at the base of Pompey's statue

Which all the while ran blood, great Cæsar fell

O what a fall was there, my countrymen!

Then I and you and all of us fell down

Whilst bloody treason flourish'd over us

O now you weep, and I perceive you feel

The dint of pity, these are gracious drops

Kind souls, what weep you when you but behold

Our Cæsar's vesture wounded? Look you here

[LIFTING CÆSAR'S MANTLE] 200

Here is himself, marr'd as you see, with traitors'

1st Cit O piteous spectacle!

2nd Cit O noble Cæsar!

3rd Cit O woeful day!

4th Cit O traitors, villains!

1st Cit O most bloody sight!

2nd Cit We will be revenged

All Revenge! About! Seek! Parn! Fire! Kill!

Slav! Let not a traitor live!

Dr Save countrymen 210

1st Cit Peace there! hear the noble Antony

2nd Cit We'll hear him, we'll follow him

We'll die with him

Dr Good friends, sweet friends, let me not stir you up

To such a riot, hear, though I have done you wrong

That have done you wrong, yet I do not know

What pains a gentleman like me should take

That made them do it they are wise and honourable

And will no doubt with reasons answer you
I come not friends to steal away your hearts
I am no orator as Brutus is 221
But as you know me all a plain blunt man
That love my friend and that they know full well

That gave me public leave to speak of him
For I have neither wit nor words nor worth
Action nor utterance nor the power of speech

To stir men's blood I only speak right on
I tell you that which you yourselves do know
Show you sweet Cæsar's wounds poor poor dumb mouths 229

And bid them speak for me but were I Brutus
And Brutus Antony there were an Antony
Would ruffle up your spirits and put a tongue
In every wound of Cæsar that should move
The stones of Rome to rise and mutiny

All Well mutiny
1st Cit Well burn the house of Brutus
3rd Cit Away then! come seek the conspirators

Ant Yet hear me countrymen yet hear me speak

All Peace ho! Hear Antony Most noble Antony!

Ant Why friends you go to do you know not what 240

Wherein hath Cæsar thus deserved your loves?
Alas you know not I must tell you then

You have forgot the will I told you of
All Most true The will Let's stay and hear the will

Ant Here is the will and under Cæsar's seal
To every Roman citizen he gives

To every several man seventy-five drachmas
2nd Cit Most noble Cæsar! We'll revenge his death

3rd Cit O royal Cæsar

Ant Hear me with patience 250
All Peace ho

Ant Moreover he hath left you all his walks
His private arbours and new-planted orchards
On this side Tiber he hath left them you
And to your heirs for ever common pleasures
To walk abroad and recreate yourselves
Here was a Cæsar when comes such another?

1st Cit Never never Come away away!
We'll burn his body in the holy place,
And with the brands fire the traitors' houses 260
Take up the body

2nd Cit Go fetch fire

3rd Cit Pluck down benches

4th Cit Pluck down forms windows anything
[Exeunt CITIZENS with the body]
Ant Now let it work Mischief thou art afoot
Take thou what course thou wilt!

Enter a SERVANT

How now fellow!

Serv Sir Octavius is already come to Rome

Ant Where is he?

Serv He and Lepidus are at Cæsar's house

Ant And thither will I straight to visit him

He comes upon a wish Fortune is merry 271

And in this mood will give us anything

Serv I heard him say Brutus and Cassius

Are rid like madmen through the gates of Rome

Ant Belike they had some notice of the people
How I had moved them Bring me to Octavius

[Exeunt]

SCENE III A street

Enter CINNA the poet

Cin I dreamt to-night that I did feast with Cæsar

And things unluckily charge my fantasy

I have no will to wander forth of doors

Yet something leads me forth

Enter CITIZENS

1st Cit What is your name?

2nd Cit Whither are you going?

3rd Cit Where do you dwell?

4th Cit Are you a married man or a bachelor?

2nd Cit Answer every man directly 10

1st Cit Ay and briefly

4th Cit Ay and wisely

3rd Cit Ay and truly you were best

Cin What is my name? Whither am I going?

Where do I dwell? Am I a married man or a

bachelor? Then, to answer every man directly

and briefly wisely and truly wisely I say I am

a bachelor

2nd Cit That's as much as to say they are

fools that marry you'll bear me a bang for that

I fear Proceed directly 21

Cin Directly I am going to Cæsar's funeral

1st Cit As a friend or an enemy?

Cin As a friend

2nd Cit That matter answered directly

4th Cit For your dwelling—briefly

Cin Briefly I dwell by the Capitol

3rd Cit Your name sir truly

Cin Truly my name is Cinna

1st Cit Tear him to pieces he's a conspirator 30

Cin I am Cinna the poet I am Cinna the poet

4th Cit Tear him for his bad verses tear him for his bad verses

Cin I am not Cinna the conspirator
4th Cit It is no matter his name's Cinna, pluck
 but his name out of his heart, and turn him
 going
3rd Cit Tear him, tear him! Come, brands ho'
 fire brands to Brutus', to Cassius' burn all
 some to Decius' house, and some to Casca's,
 some to Ligarius' away, go! [Exeunt]

ACT IV

SCENE I *A house in Rome*

ANTONY OCTAVIUS and LEPIDUS seated at a table

Ant These many, then, shall die, their names
 are prick'd

Oct Your brother too must die, consent you,
 Lepidus?

Lep I do consent—

Oct Prick him down Antony

Lep Upon condition Publius shall not live,

Who is your sister's son Mark Antony

Ant He shall not live, look with a spot I damn
 him

But Lepidus go you to Cæsar's house,

Fetch the will hither, and we shall determine

How to cut off some charge in legacies

Lep What, shall I find you here? 10

Oct Or here, or at the Capitol

[Exit LEPIDUS]

Ant This is a slight unmeritable man,

Meet to be sent on errands is it fit

The three fold world divided he should stand

One of the three to share it?

Oct So you thought him,

And took his voice who should be prick'd to die

In our black sentence and proscription

Ant Octavius, I have seen more days than you

And though we lay these honours on this man

To ease ourselves of divers slanderous loads, 20

He shall but bear them as the ass bears gold,

To groan and sweat under the business,

Either led or driven, as we point the way

And having brought our treasure where we will,

Then take we down his load and turn him off,

Like to the empty ass to shake his ears

And graze in commons

Oct You may do your will

But he's a tried and valiant soldier

Ant So is my horse Octavius, and for that

I do appoint him store of provender 30

It is a creature that I teach to fight

To wind to stop to run directly on,

His corporal motion govern'd by my spirit

And in some taste, is Lepidus but so

He must be taught and train'd and bid go forth,

A barren spirit'd fellow, one that feeds

On subjects, orts, and imitations,
 Which, out of use and staled by other men,
 Begin his fashion do not talk of him

But as a property And now Octavius, 40

Listen great things Brutus and Cassius

Are levying powers we must straight make
 head

Therefore let our alliance be combined

Our best friends made our means stretch'd,

And let us presently go sit in council

How covert matters may be best disclosed

And open perils surest answered

Oct Let us do so for we are at the stake

And bay'd about with many enemies, 49

And some that smile have in their hearts I fear,

Millions of mischiefs [Exeunt]

SCENE II *Camp near Sardis before Brutus's tent*

Drum Enter BRUTUS, LUCILIUS LUCIUS, and
 SOLDIERS, TITILIUS and PINDARUS meeting them

Bru Stand, ho!

Lucil Give the word ho! and stand

Bru What now, Lucilius' is Cassius near?

Lucil He is at hand, and Pindarus is come

To do you salutation from his master

Bru He greets me well Your master, Pindarus,

In his own change, or by ill officers

Hath given me some worthy cause to wish

Things done, undone but if he be at hand,

I shall be satisfied

Pin I do not doubt 10

But that my noble master will appear

Such as he is full of regard and honour

Bru He is not doubted A word Lucilius,

How he received you let me be resolv'd

Lucil With courtesy and with respect enough,

But not with such familiar instances

Nor with such free and friendly conference,

As he hath used of old

Bru Thou hast described

A hot friend cooling ever note Lucilius,

When love begins to sicken and decay 20

It useth an enforced ceremony

There are no tricks in plain and simple faith,

But hollow men like horses hot at hand

Make gallant show and promise of their mettle,

But when they should endure the bloody spur,

They fall their crests, and like deceitful jades,

Sink in the trial Comes his army on?

Lucil They mean this night in Sardis to be
 quarter'd

The greater part the horse in general,

Are come with Cassius

Bru Hark! he is arrived 30

Low march within

March gently on to meet him

Enter CASSIUS and his powers

Car Stand ho!

Bru Stand ho Speak the word along

1st Sol Stand

2nd Sol Stand!

3rd Sol Stand

Car Most noble brother you have done me wrong

Bru Judge me you gods! wrong I mine enemies?

And if not so how should I wrong a brother?

Car Brutus this sober form of yours hides wrongs 40

And wh n you do them—

Bru Cassius be content

Speak your griefs softly I do know you well

Before the eyes of both our armies here

Which should perceive nothing but love from us

Let us not wrangle bid them move away

Then in my tent Cassius enlarge your griefs

And I will give you audience

Car Pindarus

Bid our commanders lead their charges off

A little from this ground

Bru Lucilius do you the like and let no man 50

Come to our tent till we have done our conference

Let Lucius and Titinius guard our door *[Exeunt]*

SCENE III *Brutus's tent*

Enter BRUTUS and CASSIUS

Car That you have wrong'd me doth appear in this

You have condemn'd and noted Lucius Pella

For taking bribes here of the Sardians

Wherein my letters praying on his side

Because I knew the man were slighted off

Bru You wrong'd yourself to write in such a case

Car In such a time as this it is not meet

That every nice offence should bear his comment

Bru Let me tell you, Cassius you yourself

Are much condemn'd to have an itching palm 10

To sell and mart your offices for gold

To undeservers

Car I an itching palm!

You know that you are Brutus that speak thus

Or by the gods this speech were else your last

Bru The name of Cassius honours this corruption,

And chastisement doth therefore hide his head

Car Chastisement!

Bru Remember March, the ides of March remember

Did not great Julius bleed for justice sake?

What villain touch'd his body that did so? 20

And not for justice? What shall one of us
That struck the foremost man of all this world
But for supporting robbers shall we now
Contaminate our fingers with base bribes
And sell the mighty space of our large honours
For so much trash as may be grasped thus?
I had rather be a dog and bay the moon,
Than such a Roman

Car Brutus bay not me

I'll not endure it you forget yourself

To hedge me in I am a soldier I 30

Older in practice abler than yourself

To make conditions

Bru Go to you are not Cassius

Car I am

Bru I say you are not

Car Urge me no more I shall forget myself

Have mind upon your health tempt me no farther

Bru Away slight man!

Car Is it possible?

Bru Hear me for I will speak

Must I give way and room to your rash choler?

Shall I be frighted when a madman scares? 40

Car O ye gods ye gods! must I endure all this?

Bru All this? ay more fret till your proud
heart break

Go show your slaves how choleric you are

And make your bondmen tremble Must I
budge?

Must I observe you? must I stand and crouch

Under your testy humour? By the gods

You shall digest the venom of your spleen,

Though it do split you for from this day forth,

I'll use you for my mirth yea, for my laughter

When you are waspish

Car Is it come to this? 50

Bru You say you are a better soldier

Let it appear so make your vaunting true,

And it shall please me well for mine own part

I shall be glad to learn of noble men

Car You wrong me every way you wrong me,
Brutus

I said an elder soldier not a better

Did I say better?

Bru If you did I care not

Car When Caesar lived he durst not thus have
moved me

Bru Peace peace! you durst not so have
tempted him

Car I durst not! 60

Bru No

Car What durst not tempt him?

Bru For your life you durst not

Car Do not presume too much upon my love

I may do that I shall be sorry for

Bru You have done that you should be sorry for

There is no terror, Cassius, in your threats
 For I am arm'd so strong in honesty
 That they pass by me as the idle wind,
 Which I respect not. I did send to you
 For certain sums of gold which you denied me
 For I can raise no money by vile means 71
 By heaven, I had rather coin my heart
 And drop my blood for drachmas than to wring
 From the hard hands of peasants their vile trash
 By any indirection. I did send
 To you for gold to pay my legions
 Which you denied me: was that done like Cas-
 sius?

Should I have answer'd Caius Cassius so?
 When Marcus Brutus grows so covetous
 To lock such rascal counters from his friends, 80
 Be ready, gods, with all your thunderbolts,
 Dash him to pieces!

Cas I denied you not

Bru You did

Cas I did not: he was but a fool that brought
 My answer back. Brutus hath riv'd my heart.
 A friend should bear his friend's infirmities,
 But Brutus makes mine greater than they are.

Bru I do not till you practise them on me.

Cas You love me not.

Bru I do not like your faults.

Cas A friendly eye could never see such faults.

Bru A flatterer's would not: though they do
 appear 91

As huge as high Olympus.

Cas Come, Antony, and young Octavius, come,

Revenge yourselves alone on Cassius.

For Cassius is weary of the world,

Hated by one he loves, braved by his brother,

Check'd like a bondman, all his faults observed,

Set in a note-book, learn'd and conn'd by rote,

To cast into my teeth. O, I could weep

My spirit from mine eyes! There is my dagger,

And here my naked breast, within a heart 101

Dearer than Plutus' mine, richer than gold.

If that thou be'st a Roman, take it forth.

I that denied thee gold, will give my heart.

Strike, as thou didst at Caesar, for, I know,

When thou didst hate him worst, thou lovedst
 him better.

Than ever thou lovedst Cassius.

Bru Sheathe your dagger.

Be angry when you will: it shall have scope.

Do what you will: dishonour shall be humour.

O Cassius, you are yoked with a lamb 110

That carries anger as the flint bears fire,

Who much enforced shows a hasty spark.

And straight is cold again.

Cas Hath Cassius lived

To be but mirth and laughter to his Brutus,

When grief and blood ill temper'd vexeth him?

Bru When I spoke that, I was ill temper'd too.

Cas Do you confess so much? Give me your
 hand.

Bru And my heart too.

Cas O Brutus!

Bru What's the matter?

Cas Have not you love enough to bear with
 me,

When that rash humour which my mother gave
 me,

Makes me forgetful?

Bru Yes, Cassius, and, from henceforth,

When you are over earnest with your Brutus,

He'll think you mother chides and leave you so.

Poet [Within] Let me go in to see the generals,
 There is some grudge between 'em: 'tis not meet
 They be alone.

Lucil [Within] You shall not come to them.

Poet [Within] Nothing but death shall stay me.

Enter POET, followed by LUCILIUS, TITINIUS, and
 LUCIUS.

Cas How now! what's the matter?

Poet For shame, you generals! what do you
 mean? 130

Love, and be friends: as two such men should be,
 For I have seen more years in me sure, than y e

Cas Ha! ha! how vilely doth this cynic rhyme!

Bru Get you hence, sirrah, saucy fellow,
 hence!

Cas Bear with him, Brutus, 'tis his fashion.

Bru I'll know his humour when he knows his
 time.

What should the wars do with these jiggling
 fools?

Companion hence!

Cas Away, away, be gone!

[Exit POET]

Bru Lucilius and Titinius, bid the commanders

Prepare to lodge their companies to-night. 140

Cas And come yourselves and bring Messala
 with you.

Immediately to us.

[Exeunt LUCILIUS and TITINIUS]

Bru Lucius, a bowl of wine! [Exit LUCIUS]

Cas I did not think you could have been so
 angry.

Bru O Cassius, I am sick of many griefs.

Cas Of your philosophy you make no use.

If you give place to accidental evils.

Bru No man bears sorrow better. Portia is
 dead.

Cas Ha! Portia!

Bru She is dead.

Cas How scap'd I killing when I cross'd a

Q unsupportable and touching loss!
Upon what sickness?

Bru Impatient of my absence
And grief that young Octavius with Mark An-
tony

Have made themselves so strong—for with her
death

That tidings came—with this she fell distract
And, her attendants absent, swallow'd fire

Ca And died so?

Bru Even so

Ca O ye immortal gods!

Re-enter Lucius with wine and taper

Bru Speak no more of her. Give me a bowl
of wine

In this I bury all unkindness. *Cassius*

Ca My heart is thirsty for that noble pledge.
Fill, *Lucius*, till the wine o'erswell the cup. 161

I cannot drink too much of Brutus' love.

Bru Come in, *Titinius*! [*Exit Lucius*]

Re-enter Titinius with Messala

Welcome, good *Messala*!

Now sit we close about this taper, here

And call in question our necessities.

Ca Portia, art thou gone?

Bru No more. I pray you,
Messala, I have here received letters

That young Octavius and Mark Antony
Come down upon us with a mighty power

Bending their expedition toward Philippi. 170

Al Myself have letters of the selfsame tenour.

Bru With what addition?

Al That by proscription and bills of outlawry
Octavius, Antony, and Lepidus

Have put to death an hundred senators.

Bru Therein our letters do not well agree.

Mine speak of seventy senators that died

By their proscriptions; Cicero being one.

Ca Cicero one.

Al Cicero is dead.

And by that order of proscription. 180

Had you your letters from your wife, my lord?

Bru No, *Messala*.

Al Nor nothing in your letters worth of her.

Bru Nothing, *Messala*.

Al That methinks is strange.

Bru Why ask you? hear you aught of her in
yours?

Al No, my lord.

Bru Now, as you are a Roman, tell me true.

Al Then like a Roman bear the truth I tell.

For certain she is dead, and by strange manner.

Bru Why farewell, *Portia*. We must die.

Messala 190

With meditating that she must die once.

I have the patience to endure it now.

Al Even so great men great losses should en-
dure.

Ca I have as much of this in art as you.

But yet my nature could not bear it so.

Bru Well to our work alive. What do you think

Of marching to Philippi presently?

Ca I do not think it good.

Bru Your reason?

Ca This it is.

'Tis better that the enemy seek us. 199

So shall he waste his means, weary his soldiers,

Doing himself offence, whilst we, lying still,

Are full of rest, defence, and numbness.

Bru Good reasons must of force give place to
better.

The people, twixt Philippi and this ground,

Do stand but in a forced affection.

For they have grudged us contribution.

The enemy, marching along by them,

By them shall make a fuller number up.

Come on refresh'd, new added, and encouraged.

From which advantage shall we cut him off? 210

If at Philippi we do face him there.

These people at our back.

Ca Hear me, good brother.

Bru Under your pardon. You must note beside

That we have tried the utmost of our friends.

Our legions are brim-full; our cause is ripe.

The enemy increaseth every day.

We at the height are ready to decline.

There is a tide in the affairs of men

Which, taken at the flood, leads on to fortune.

Omitted, all the voyage of their life. 220

Is bound in shallows and in miseries.

On such a full sea are we now afloat.

And we must take the current when it serves.

Or lose our ventures.

Ca Then, with your will, go on.

We'll along ourselves and meet them at Philippi.

Bru The deep of night is crept upon our talk.

And nature must obey necessity.

Which we will niggard with a little rest.

There is no more to say?

Ca No more. Good night.

Early to-morrow will we rise, and hence. 230

Bru *Lucius*! [*Enter Lucius*] My gown.

[*Exit Lucius*] Farewell, good *Messala*!

Good night, *Titinius*. Noble, noble *Cassius*!

Good night, and good repose.

Ca O my dear brother!

This was an ill beginning of the night.

Never come such division 'twixt our souls!

Let it not, *Brutus*.

Bru Everything is well.

Ca Good night, my lord

Bru Good night, good brother

Tit Mes Good night, Lord Brutus

Bru Farewell every one

[*Exeunt all but BRUTUS*]

Re-enter LUCIUS, with the gown

Give me the gown Where is thy instrument?

Luc Here in the tent

Bru What, thou speak'st drowsily? 240

Poor knave, I blame thee not, thou art o'er-
watch'd

Call Claudius and some other of my men,

I'll have them sleep on cushions in my tent

Luc Varro and Claudius!

Enter VARRO and CLAUDIUS

Var Calls my lord?

Bru I pray you, sirs, lie in my tent and sleep,

It may be I shall raise you by and by

On business to my brother Cassius

Var So please you, we will stand and watch
your pleasure

Bru I will not have it so lie down, good
sirs, 250

It may be I shall otherwise bethink me

Look, Lucius, here's the book I sought for so,

I put it in the pocket of my gown

VARRO and CLAUDIUS lie down

Luc I was sure your lordship did not give it me

Bru Bear with me, good boy, I am much for-
getful

Canst thou hold up thy heavy eyes awhile,

And touch thy instrument a strain or two?

Luc Ay, my lord, an t please you

Bru It does, my boy

I trouble thee too much, but thou art willing

Luc It is my duty, sir 260

Bru I should not urge thy duty past thy might,

I know young bloods look for a time of rest

Luc I have slept, my lord, already

Bru It was well done, and thou shalt sleep
again

I will not hold thee long if I do live,

I will be good to thee

Music, and a song

This is a sleepy tune O murderous slumber,

Lay'st thou thy leaden mace upon my boy,

That plays thee music? Gentle knave, good

night 269

I will not do thee so much wrong to wake thee

If thou dost nod thou break'st thy instrument

I'll take it from thee and good boy good night

Let me see, let me see is not the leaf turn'd
down

Where I left reading? Here it is, I think

Enter the GHOST of CAESAR

How ill this taper burns! Ha! who comes here?

I think it is the weakness of mine eyes

That shapes this monstrous apparition

It comes upon me Art thou anything?

Art thou some god, some angel or some devil,

That makest my blood cold and my hair to stare?

Speak to me what thou art 281

Ghost Thy evil spirit Brutus

Bru Why comest thou?

Ghost To tell thee thou shalt see me at Philippi

Bru Well, then I shall see thee again?

Ghost Ay at Philippi

Bru Why, I will see thee at Philippi, then

[*Exit GHOST*]

Now I have taken heart thou vanishest

Ill spirit, I would hold more talk with thee

Boy Lucius! Varro! Claudius! Sirs, awake!

Claudius! 291

Luc The strings, my lord are false

Bru He thinks he still is at his instrument

Lucius, awake!

Luc My lord?

Bru Didst thou dream, Lucius, that thou so
criedst out?

Luc My lord I do not know that I did cry

Bru Yes, that thou didst didst thou see any
thing?

Luc Nothing, my lord

Bru Sleep again, Lucius Sirrah Claudius!

[*To VARRO*] Fellow thou, awake! 301

Var My lord?

Clau My lord?

Bru Why did you so cry out, sirs, in your
sleep?

Var and Clau Did we, my lord?

Bru Ay saw you anything?

Var No, my lord, I saw nothing

Clau Nor I my lord

Bru Go and commend me to my brother Cas-
sius,

Bid him set on his powers betimes before,

And we will follow

Var and Clau It shall be done, my lord 309

[*Exeunt*]

ACT V

SCENE I *The plains of Philippi*

Enter OCTAVIUS, ANTONY and their ARMY

Oct Now Antony, our hopes are answered

You said the enemy would not come down,

But keep the hills and upper regions

It proves not so their battles are at hand,

They mean to warn us at Philippi here,

Answering before we do demand of them

Ant Tut I am in their bosoms and I know

Wherefore they do it they eor ld be content

To visit o her places and come down

With fearful bravery thinking by this face 10

To fasten in our thoughts that they have courage

But tis not so

Enter a MESSENGER

Mess Prepare you generals

The enemy comes on in gallant show

Their bloody sign of battle is hung out

And something to be done immediately

Ant Octavius lead your battle softly on

Upon the left hand of the even field

Oct Upon the right hand I keep thou the left

Ant Why do you cross me in this exigent?

Oct I do not cross you but I will do so 20

March

*Drum Enter BRUTUS CASSIUS and their Army
LUCILIUS TITINIUS MESSALA and others*

Bru They scard and would have parley

Car Stand fast Titinius we must out and talk

Oct Mark Antony shall we give sign of battle?

Ant No Caesar we will answer on their charge

Make forth the generals would have some words

Or Sit not until the signal

Bru Words before blows is it so countrymen?

Oct Not that we love words better as you do

Bru Good words are better than bad strokes

Octavius

Ant In your bad strokes Brutus you give good words 30

Witness the hole you made in Caesar's heart

Crying Long live hail Caesar

Car Antony

The posture of your blows are yet unknown

But for your words they rob the flybells

And leave them honeyless

Ant Not stingless too

Bru O yes and soundless too

For you have stol'n their buzzing Antony

And very wisely threat before you sting

Ant Villains you did not so when your vile dangers

Hack'd one another in the sides of Caesar 40

You show'd your teeth like apes and fawn'd like

hound

And bow'd like bondmen, kissing Caesar's feet

Whilst damned Cassius kept his back behind

Struck Caesar on the neck O you flatterers!

Car Flatterers! Now Brutus, thank yourself

This tongue had not offend'd so to-day

If Cassius might have ruled

Oct Come come the cause if arguing make us sweat

The proof of it will turn to redder drops

Look 50

I draw a sword against conspirators

When think you that the sword goes up again?

Never till Caesar's three and thirty wounds

Be well avenged or till another Caesar

Have added slaughter to the sword of traitors

Bru Caesar thou canst not die by traitors hands

Unless thou bringst them with thee

Oct So I hope

I was not born to die on Brutus' sword

Bru O if thou wert the noblest of thy strain,

Young man thou couldst not die more honourable 60

Car A peevish school boy worthless of such honour

Join'd with a masker and a reveller!

Ant Old Cassius still!

Oct Come Antony away!

Defiance traitors hurl we in your teeth

If you dare fight to-day come to the field

If not when you have stomachs

[Exeunt OCTAVIUS ANTONY and thir army]

Car Whin now blow wind swell billow and swim bark!

The storm is up and all is on the hazard

Bru Ho Lucilius! hark a word with you

Lucil *[Standing forth]* My Lord?

BRUTUS and LUCILIUS converse apart

Car Messala!

Mess *[Standing forth]* What says my general?

Car Messala 70

This is my birthday as this very day

Was Cassius born Give me thy hand Messala

Be thou my witness that against my will

As Pompey was am I compell'd to set

Upon one battle all our liberties

You know that I held Epicurus strong

And his opinion now I change my mind

And partly credit things that do presage 80

Coasting from Sardis on our former ensign

Two mighty eagles fell and there they perch'd

Gorgon and feeding from our soldiers' hands

Who to Philippi here consorted us

This morning are they fled away and gone

And in their steads do ravens crows and kites

Fly o'er our heads and downward look on us

As we were tickled prey their shadows seem

A canopy most fatal under which

Our army lies ready to give up the ghost

If I believe not so

Car I but believe it partly 90

For I am fresh of spirit and resolved

To meet all perils very constantly

Bru Even so Lucilius

Car Now most noble Brutus,

The gods to-day stand friendly, that we may,
Lovers in peace, lead on our days to age!

But since the affairs of men rest still uncertain,

Let's reason with the worst that may befall

If we do lose this battle then is this

The very last time we shall speak together

What art you then determined to do?

100

Bru Even by the rule of that philosophy

By which I did blame Cato for the death

Which he did give himself, I know not how,

But I do find it cowardly and vile,

For fear of what might fall, so to prevent

The time of life arming myself with patience

To stay the providence of some high powers

That govern us below

Car Then, if we lose this battle,

You are contented to be led in triumph

Thorough the streets of Rome?

110

Bru No, Cassius, no think not thou noble

Roman

That ever Brutus will go bound to Rome,

He bears too great a mind But this same day

Must end that work the ides of March begun,

And whether we shall meet again I know not

Therefore our everlasting farewell take

For ever, and for ever farewell Cassius!

If we do meet again why, we shall smile,

If not why then this parting was well made

Car For ever and for ever, farewell Brutus!

If we do meet again we'll smile indeed

121

If not, 'tis true this parting was well made

Bru Why, then lead on O, that a man might

know

The end of this day's business ere it come!

But it sufficeth that the day will end

And then the end is known Come, ho! away!

[Exit

SCENE II *The same the field of battle*

Alarum Enter BRUTUS and MESSALA

Bru Ride, ride, Messala ride and give these
bills

Unto the legions on the other side [Loud alarum]

Let them set on at once for I perceive

But cold demeanour in Octavius' wing

And sudden push gives them the overthrow

Ride, ride, Messala let them all come down

[Exit

SCENE III *Another part of the field*

Alarums Enter CASSIUS and TITINIUS

Car O, look, Titinius, look the villains fly!

Myself have to mine own turn'd enemy

This ensign here of mine was turning back,

I slew the coward and did take it from him

Tit O Cassius Brutus gave the word too early

Who having some advantage on Octavius

Took it too eagerly his soldiers fell to spoil,

Whilst we by Antony are all enclosed

Enter PINDARUS

Pin Fly further off, my lord fly further off,

Mark Antony is in your tents, my lord

10

Fly, therefore noble Cassius, fly far off

Car This hill is far enough Look look, Titin-

ius,

Are those my tents where I perceive the fire?

Tit They are, my lord

Car Titinius, if thou lovest me,

Mount thou my horse, and hide thy spurs in him

Till he have brought thee up to yonder troops

And here again that I may rest assured

Whether yond troops are friend or enemy

Tit I will be here again, even with a thought

[Exit

Car Go, Pindarus get higher on that hill

20

My sight was ever thick regard Titinius

And tell me what thou notest about the field

PINDARUS ascends the hill

This day I breathed first time is come round,

And where I did begin there shall I end

My life is run his compass Sirrah what news?

Pin [Above] O my lord!

Car What news?

Pin [Above] Titinius is enclosed round about

With horsemen, that make to him on the spur,

Yet he spurs on Now they are almost on him

Now, Titinius! Now some light O he lights

too

31

He's ta'en [Shout] And hark! they shout for

joy

Car Come down behold no more

O coward that I am to live so long

To see my best friend ta'en before my face!

PINDARUS descends

Come hither sirrah

In Parthia did I take thee prisoner,

And then I swore thee, saving of thy life,

That whatsoever I did bid thee do

Thou shouldst attempt it Come now keep thine

oath

40

Now be a freeman and with this good sword

That ran through Cæsar's bowels search this

bosom

Stand not to answer here, take thou the hilts.

And when my face is cover'd, as 'tis now

Guide thou the sword [PINDARUS stabs him]

Cæsar, thou art revenged

Even with the sword that kill'd thee [Dies]
Pin So I am free yet would not so have been
 Durst I have done my will O Cassius
 Far from this country Pindarus shall run
 Where never Roman shall take note of him 50
 [Exit]

Re-enter TITINIUS with MESSALA

Alar It is but change Titinius for Octavius
 Is overthrown by noble Brutus power
 As Cassius legions are by Antony
Tit These tidings will well comfort Cassius
Alar Where did you leave him?
Tit All disconsolate
 With Pindarus his bondman, on this hill
Alar Is not that he that lies upon the ground?
Tit He lies not like the living O my heart!
Alar Is not that he?

Tit No this was he Messala
 But Cassius is no more O setting sun,
 As in thy red rays thou dost sink to night 60
 So in his red blood Cassius day is set
 The sun of Rome is set! Our day is gone
 Clouds dews and dangers come our deeds are
 done!

Mistrust of my success hath done this deed
Alar Mistrust of good success hath done this
 deed
 O hateful error melancholy's child
 Why dost thou show to the apt thoughts of men
 The things that are not? O error soon con-
 ceived

Thou never comest unto a happy birth 70
 But kill'st the mother that engender'd thee!
Tit What Pindarus! where art thou Pin-
 darus?

Alar Seek him Titinius, 'till I go to meet
 The noble Brutus thrusting this report
 Into his ears I may say thrusting it
 For piercing steel and darts envenomed
 Shall be as welcome to the ears of Brutus
 As tidings of this sight

Tit Hie you Messala,
 And I will seek for Pindarus the while

[Exit MESSALA]

Why didst thou send me forth, brave Cassius? So
 Did I not meet thy friends? and did not they
 Put on my brow's this wreath of victory
 And bid me give it thee? Didst thou not hear
 their shouts?

Alas thou hast misconstrued everything!
 But hold thee take this garland on thy brow
 Thy Brutus bid me give it thee and I
 Will do his bidding Brutus come apace,
 And see how I regarded Cæsar's Cassius
 By your leave, gods thus a Roman's part 89

Come Cassius sword and find Titinius heart
 [Kills himself]

Alarum *Re-enter* MESSALA with BRUTUS YOUNG
 CATO STRATO VOLUMNIVS and LUCILIUS

Bru Where where Messala doth his body
 lie?

Alar Lo yonder and Titinius mourning it
Bru Titinius face is upward

Cato He is slain

Bru O Julius Cæsar thou art mighty yet!
 Thy spirit walks abroad and turns our swords
 In our own proper entrails [Low alarms]

Cato Brave Titinius!

Look whether he have not crown'd dead Cæ-
 sars!

Bru Are yet two Romans living such as these?
 The last of all the Romans fare thee well!

It is impossible that ever Rome 100
 Should breed thy fellow Friends I owe more
 tears

To this dead man than you shall see me pay
 I shall find time Cassius I shall find time
 Come therefore and to Thasos send his body
 His funerals shall not be in our camp
 Lest it discomfort us Lucilius come
 And come young Cato let us to the field
 Labeo and Flavius set our battles on
 'Tis three o'clock and Romans yet ere night
 We shall try fortune in a second fight [Exeunt]

SCENE IV Another part of the field

Alarum Enter fighting SOLDIERS of both armies
 then BRUTUS YOUNG CATO LUCILIUS and others

Bru Yet countrymen, O yet hold up your
 heads!

Cato What bastard doth not? Who will go
 with me?

I will proclaim my name about the field

I am the son of Marcus Cato ho!

A foe to tyrants and my country's friend

I am the son of Marcus Cato ho!

Bru And I am Brutus Marcus Brutus I
 Brutus my country's friend know me for
 Brutus! [Exit]

Lucil O young and noble Cato art thou down?

Why now thou diest as bravely as Titinius 20

And mayst be honour'd, being Cato's son

1st Sold Yield, or thou diest

Lucil Only I yield to die
 There is so much that thou wilt kill me straight

Offering money

Kill Brutus and be honour'd in his death

1st Sold We must not A noble prisoner!
 and Sold Room, ho! Tell Antony Brutus is
 taken.

1st Sold I'll tell the news Here comes the general

Enter ANTONY

Brutus is ta'en, Brutus is ta'en, my lord

Ant Where is he?

Lucil Safe, Antony, Brutus is safe enough

I dare assure thee that no enemy

Shall ever take alive the noble Brutus

The gods defend him from so great a shame!

When you do find him, or alive or dead,

He will be found like Brutus, like himself

Ant This is not Brutus' friend, but, I assure you

A prize no less in worth keep this man safe,

Give him all kindness I had rather have

Such men my friends than enemies Go on

And see whether Brutus be alive or dead, 30

And bring us word unto Octavius' tent

How every thing is chanced *[Exeunt]*

SCENE V *Another part of the field*

Enter BRUTUS, DARDANIUS CLITUS STRATO and VOLUMINIUS

Bru Come, poor remains of friends rest on this rock

Cl Statilius show'd the torch light but my lord

He came not back he is or ta'en or slain

Bru Sit thee down Clitus slaying is the word,

It is a deed in fashion Hark thee, Clitus

Whispers

Cl What I my lord? No not for all the world

Bru Peace then! no words

Cl I'll rather kill my self

Bru Hark thee, Dardanius *[Whispers]*

Dar Shall I do such a deed?

Cl O Dardanius!

Dar O Clitus!

Cl What ill request did Brutus make to thee? 10

Dar To kill him, Clitus Look he meditates

Cl Now is that noble vessel full of grief,

That it runs over even at his eyes

Bru Come hither good Voluminius, list a word

Vol What says my lord?

Bru Why, thus, Voluminius

The ghost of Cæsar hath appear'd to me

Two several times by night at Sardis once

And, this last night here in Philippi fields

I know my hour is come

Vol Not so my lord 20

Bru Nay I am sure it is Voluminius

Thou seest the world Voluminius, how it goes

Our enemies have beat us to the pit

Low alarms

It is more worthy to leap in ourselves
Than tarry till they push us Good Voluminius,
Thou know'st that we two went to school to-
gether

Even for that our love of old I prithee,

Hold thou my sword hilt whilst I run on it

Vol That is not an office for a friend my lord

[Alarm still]

Cl Fly fly, my lord, there is no tarrying

here 30

Bru Farewell to you and you, and you,

Voluminius

Strato thou hast been all this while asleep

Farewell to thee too Strato Country men,

My heart doth joy that yet in all my life

I found no man but he was true to me

I shall have glory by this losing day

More than Octavius and Mark Antony

By this vile conquest shall attain unto

So fare you well at once for Brutus' tongue

Hath almost ended his life's history 40

Night hangs upon mine eyes, my bones would

rest,

That have but labour'd to attain this hour

Alarm Cry within "Fly, fly, fly!"

Cl Fly, my lord fly

Bru Hence I will follow

[Exeunt CLITUS DARDANIUS and VOLUMINIUS]

I prithee, Strato, stay thou by thy lord

Thou art a fellow of a good respect,

Thy life hath had some smatch of honour in it

Hold then my sword and turn away thy face,

While I do run upon it Wilt thou Strato?

Str Give me your hand first Fare you well,

my lord

Bru Farewell good Strato *[Runs on his sword]*

Cæsar now be still 50

I kill'd not thee with half so good a will *[Dies]*

Alarm Retreat Enter OCTAVIUS, ANTONY, MES-

SALA, LUCILIUS and the army

Oct What man is that?

Mes My master's man Strato, where is thy

master?

Str Free from the bondage you are in Messala

The conquerors can but make a fire of him

For Brutus only overcame himself

And no man else hath honour by his death

Lucil So Brutus should be found I thank thee,

Brutus

That thou has prov'd Lucilius saying true

Oct All that served Brutus I will entertain

them

Fellow wilt thou bestow thy time with me?

Str Ay if Messala will prefer me to you

Oct Do so good Messala

Mes How died my master Strato?

Str I held the sword and he did run on it

Mes Octavius then take him to follow thee

That did the latest service to my master

Ant This was the noblest Roman of them all

All the conspirators save only he

Did that they did in envy of great Cæsar 70

He only in a general honest thought

And common good to all made one of them

His life was gentle and the elements

So mix'd in him that Nature might stand up

And say to all the world This was a man!

Oct According to his virtue let us use him

With all respect and rites of burial

Within my tent his bones to-night shall lie

Most like a soldier order'd honourably

So call the field to rest and let's away 80

To part the glories of this happy day [Exeunt

AS YOU LIKE IT

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

DUKE SENIOR *living in banishment*
 FREDERICK, *his brother and usurper of his dominions*
 ANIENS
 JAKUES | *lords attending on the banished Duke*
 LE BEAU, *a courtier attending upon Frederick*
 CHARLES *a restler to Frederick*
 OLIVER
 JAKUES | *sons of Sir Rowland de Boys*
 ORLANDO
 ADAM
 DENNIS | *servants to Oliver*
 TOUCHSTONE, *a clown*
 SIR OLIVER MARTEXT *a vicar*
 CORIN
 SILVIUS | *shepherds*
 WILLIAM, *a country fellow in love with Audrey*

THREE LORDS *attending on the banished Duke*
 TWO LORDS *attending on Frederick*
 TWO PAGES *attending on the banished Duke*
 HYMN

A FORESTER
 ROSALIND *daughter to the banished Duke*
 CELIA *daughter to Frederick*
 PHIBE, *a shepherdess*
 AUDREY *a country wench*

NON-SPEAKING Lords Foresters and Attendants

SCENE *Oliver's house Duke Frederick's court and the Forest of Arden*

ACT I

SCENE 1 *Orchard of Oliver's house*

Enter ORLANDO and ADAM

Orl As I remember, Adam it was upon this fashion bequeathed me by will but poor a thousand crowns, and as thou sayest charged my brother on his blessing to breed me well and there begins my sadness My brother Jaques he keeps at school and report speaks goldenly of his profit for my part, he keeps me rustically at home or, to speak more properly, stays me here at home unkept for call you that keeping for a gentleman of my birth that differs not from the stalling of an ox? His horses are bred better, for besides that they are fair with their feeding, they are taught their manage and to that end riders dearly hired but I, his brother, gain nothing under him but growth for the which his animals on his dunghills are as much bound to him as I Besides this nothing that he so plentifully gives me, the something that nature gave me his countenance seems to take from me he lets me feed with his hinds, bars me the place of a brother and, as much as in him lies mines my gentility with my education This is it, Adam that grieves me and the spirit of my father, which I think is within me begins to mutiny against this servitude I will no longer endure it, though yet I know no wise remedy how to avoid it

Adam Yonder comes my master your brother

Orl Go apart, Adam, and thou shalt hear how he will shake me up 30

Enter OLIVER

Orl Now sir! what make you here?
 Orl Nothing I am not taught to make anything
 Orl What mar you then sir?
 Orl Marry sir I am helping you to mar that which God made a poor unworthy brother of yours, with idleness
 Orl Marry sir be better employed, and be naught awhile 39
 Orl Shall I keep your hogs and eat husks with them? What prodigal portion have I spent, that I should come to such penury?
 Orl Know you where you are, sir?
 Orl O sir very well here in your orchard
 Orl Know you before whom sir?
 Orl Ay, better than him I am before knows me I know you are my eldest brother, and in the gentle condition of blood you should so know me The courtesy of nations allows you my better in that you are the first born but the same tradition takes not away my blood were there twenty brothers between us I have as much of my father in me as you albeit, I confess your coming before me is nearer to his reverence
 Orl What boy?
 Orl Come come elder brother you are too young in this
 Orl Wilt thou lay hands on me villain?
 Orl I am no villain, I am the yo

AS YOU LIKE IT

598

of Sir Rowland de Boys he was my father and he is thrice a villain that says such a father begot villains Wert thou not my brother I would not take this hand from thy throat till this other had pulled out thy tongue for saying so thou hast rail'd on thyself

Adam Sweet masters be patient for your father's remembrance be at accord

Olis Let me go I say

Olis I will not till I please you shall hear me My father charged you in his will to give me good education you have trained me like a peasant obscuring and hiding from me all gentlemanlike qualities The spirit of my father grows strong in me and I will no longer endure therefore allow me such exercises as may become a gentleman, or give me the poor allortery my father left me by testament with that I will go buy my fortunes

Olis And what wilt thou do^s beg when that is spent? Well sir get you in I will not long be troubled with you you shall have some part of your will I pray you leave me

O I will no further offend you than becomes me for my good

Olis Get you with him you old dog

Adam Is old dog my reward? Most true I have lost my teeth in your service God be with my old master! he would not have spoke such a word [*Exeunt ORLANDO and ADAM*]

Olis Is it even so^s begin you to grow upon me? I will physic your rankness and yet give no thousand crowns neither Flolla, Dennis!

Enter DENNIS

Den Calls your worship?

Olis Was not Charles the Duke's wrestler here to speak with me?

Den So please you he is here at the door and importunes access to you

Olis Call him in [*Exit DENNIS*] 'Twill be a good way and to-morrow the wrestling is

Enter CHARLES

Chr Good morrow to your worship 100

Olis Good Monsieur Charles what's the new news at the new court?

Chr There's no news at the court sir but the old news that is the old Duke is banished by his younger brother the new Duke and three or four loving lords have put themselves into voluntary exile with him, whose lands and revenues enrich the new Duke therefore he gives them good leave to wander

Olis Can you tell if Rosalind, the Duke's daughter be banished with her father? 111

Chr O no for the Duke's daughter her cousin so loves her being ever from their cradles bred together that she would have followed her exile or have died to stay behind her She is at the court and no less beloved of her uncle than his own daughter and never two ladies loved as they do

Olis Where will the old Duke live?

Chr They say he is already in the forest of Arden, and a many merry men with him and there they live like the old Robin Hood of England they say many young gentlemen flock to him every day and fleet the time carelessly as they did in the golden world

Olis What you wrestle to-morrow before the new Duke?

Chr Marry do I sir and I came to acquaint you with a matter I am given sir secretly to understand that your younger brother Orlando hath a disposition to come in disguised against me to try a fall To-morrow sir I wrestle for my credit and he that escapes me without some broken limb shall acquire him well Your brother is but young and tender and for your love I would be loath to foil him as I must for my own honour if he come in therefore out of my love to you I came hither to acquaint you withal that either you might stay him from his intendment or brook such disgrace well as he shall run into in that it is a thing of his own search and altogether against my will

Olis Charles I thank thee for thy love to me which thou shalt find I will most kindly requite I had myself notice of my brother's purpose herein and have by underhand means laboured to dissuade from it but he is resolute I'll tell thee Charles it is the stubbornest young fellow of France full of ambition an envious emulator of every man's good parts a secret and villainous contriver against me his natural brother therefore use thy discretion I had as lief thou didst break his neck as his finger And thou wert best look to it for if thou dost him any slight disgrace or if he do not m^ostly grace himself on thee he will practise against thee by poison entrap thee by some treacherous device and never leave thee till he hath taken thy life by some indirect means or other for I assure thee and almost with tears I speak it there is not one so young and so villainous this day living I speak but brotherly of him but should I anatomize him to thee as he is I must blush and weep and thou must look pale and wonder

Chr I am heartily glad I came hither to you If he come to-morrow I'll give him his payment if ever he go alone again, I'll never wrestle for

prize more and so God keep your worship!

Oli Farewell good Charles. [Exit CHARLES]
Now will I stir this gamester. I hope I shall see
an end of him for my soul, yet I know not why,
hates nothing more than he. Yet he's gentle,
never schooled, and yet learned, full of noble
device, of all sorts enchantingly beloved, and
indeed so much in the heart of the world and
especially of my own people, who best know him,
that I am altogether misprised but it shall not
be so long, this wrestler shall clear all nothing
remains but that I kindle the boy thither which
now I'll go about. [Exit 180

SCENE II *Lawn before the Duke's palace*

Enter CELIA and ROSALIND

Cel I pray thee, Rosalind sweet my coz, be merry

Ros Dear Celia, I show more mirth than I
am mistress of, and would you yet I were mer-
rier? Unless you could teach me to forget a
banished father you must not learn me how to
remember any extraordinary pleasure

Cel Herein I see thou lovest me not with the
full weight that I love thee. If my uncle, thy
banished father, had banished thy uncle, the
Duke my father so thou hadst been still with
me I could have taught my love to take thy
father for mine so wouldst thou if the truth of
thy love to me were so righteously tempered as
mine is to thee

Ros Well, I will forget the condition of my
estate to rejoice in yours

Cel You know my father hath no child but I,
nor none is like to have and, truly, when he
dies thou shalt be his heir, for what he hath
taken away from thy father perforce, I will ren-
der thee again in affection, by mine honour, I
will and when I break that oath let me turn
monster therefore, my sweet Rose, my dear
Rose, be merry

Ros From henceforth I will, coz, and devise
sports. Let me see what think you of falling in
love?

Cel Marry, I prithee do, to make sport
withal but love no man in good earnest nor no
further in sport neither than with safety of a pure
blush thou mayest in honour come off again

Ros What shall be our sport then?

Cel Let us sit and mock the good housewife
Fortune from her wheel, that her gifts may
henceforth be bestowed equally

Ros I would we could do so for her benefits
are mightily misplaced and the bountiful blind
woman doth most mistake in her gifts to women

Cel 'Tis true for those that she makes fair

she scarce makes honest and those that she
makes honest she makes very ill favouredly

Ros Nay, now thou goest from Fortune's
office to Nature's. Fortune reigns in gifts of the
world, not in the lineaments of Nature

Enter TOUCHSTONE

Cel No? when Nature hath made a fair crea-
ture, may she not by Fortune fall into the fire?
Though Nature hath given us wit to flout at For-
tune, hath not Fortune sent in this fool to cut off
the argument? 50

Ros Indeed there is Fortune too hard for
Nature, when Fortune makes Nature's natural
the cutter-off of Nature's wit

Cel Peradventure this is not Fortune's work
neither, but Nature's who perceiveth our natural
wits too dull to reason of such goddesses and
hath sent this natural for our whetstone, for al-
ways the dulness of the fool is the whetstone of
the wits. How now, wit! whither wander you? 60

Touch Mistress, you must come away to
your father 61

Cel Were you made the messenger?

Touch No by mine honour but I was bid to
come for you

Ros Where learned you that oath, fool?

Touch Of a certain knight that swore by his
honour they were good pancakes and swore by
his honour the mustard was naught now I'll
stand to it the pancakes were naught and the
mustard was good and yet was not the knight
forsworn 71

Cel How prove you that, in the great heap of
your knowledge?

Ros Ay marry now unmuzzle your wisdom

Touch Stand you both forth now stroke
your chins and swear by your beards that I am
a knave

Cel By our beards if we had them thou art 79

Touch By my knavery, if I had it, then I
were, but if you swear by that that is not, you
are not forsworn no more was this knight,
swearing by his honour, for he never had any,
or if he had he had sworn it away before ever
he saw those pancakes or that mustard

Cel Prithee who is that thou meanest?

Touch One that old Frederick, your father,
loves

Cel My father's love is enough to honour
him enough! speak no more of him you'll be
whipped for taxation one of these days 91

Touch The more pity that fools may not speak
wisely what wise men do foolishly

Cel By my troth thou sayest true for since
the little wit that fools have was silenced, _

little foolery that wise men have makes a great
 how Here comes Monsieur Le Beau
 Ros With his mouth full of news
 Cel Which he will put on us as pigeons feed
 their young 100
 Ros Then shall we be news crammed
 Cel All the better we shall be the more mar-
 kerable

Enter LE BEAU

Bon jour Monsieur Le Beau what's the news?
 Le Beau Fair princess you have lost much
 good sport
 Cel Sport! of what colour?
 Le Beau What colour madam! how shall I
 answer you?
 Ros As wit and fortune will 110
 Touch Or as the Destinies decree
 Cel Well said that was laid on with a trowel
 Touch Nay if I keep not my rank—
 Ros Thou lovest thy old smell
 Le Beau You amaze me ladies I would have
 told you of good wrestling which you have lost
 the night of
 Ros Yet tell us the manner of the wrestling
 Le Beau I will tell you the beginning and
 if it please your ladyships you may see the end
 for the best is yet to do and here where you
 are, they are coming to perform it
 Cel Well the beginning that is dead and
 buried

Le Beau There comes an old man and his
 three sons—
 Cel I could match this beginning with an old
 tale

Le Beau Three proper young men of excellent
 growth and presence 120

Ros With bills on their necks Be it known
 unto all men by these presents

Le Beau The eldest of the three wrestled with
 Charles the Duke's wrestler which Charles
 in a moment threw him and broke three of his
 ribs that there is little hope of life in him so he
 served the second, and so the third Yonder
 they lie the poor old man the father making
 such pitiful dole over them that all the beholders
 take his part with weeping 140

Ros Alas!
 Touch But what is the sport monsieur that
 the ladies have lost?

Le Beau Why this that I speak of

Touch Thus men may grow wiser every day
 it is the first time that ever I heard breaking of
 ribs was sport for ladies

Cel Or I promise thee

Ros But is there any else longs to see this

broken music in his sides? is there yet another
 dotes upon rib-breaking? Shall we see this
 wrestling cousin?

Le Beau You must if you stay here for
 here is the place appointed for the wrestling
 and they are ready to perform it

Cel Yonder sure they are coming let us
 now stay and see it

Flourish Enter DUKE FREDERICK Lords ORLANDO
 CHARLES and Attendants

Duke F Come on since the youth will not be
 entreated his own peril on his forwardness

Ros Is yonder the man? 150

Le Beau Even he madam

Cel Alas he is too young! yet he looks suc-
 cessfully

Duke F How now daughter and cousin! are
 you crept hither to see the wrestling?

Ros Ay my liege so please you give us leave

Duke F You will take little delight in it I can
 tell you there is such odds in the man in pity
 of the challenger's youth I would fain dissuade
 him but he will not be entreated Speak to him
 ladies see if you can move him

Cel Call him hither good Monsieur Le Beau

Duke F Do so I'll not be by

Le Beau Monsieur the challenger the prin-
 cesses call for you

Orl I attend them with all respect and duty

Ros Young man have you challenged Charles
 the wrestler? 170

Orl No fair princess he is the general chal-
 lenger I come but in, as others do to try with
 him the strength of my youth

Cel Young gentleman your spirits are too
 bold for your years You have seen cruel proof
 of this man's strength if you saw yourself with
 your eyes or knew yourself with your judge-
 ment the fear of your adventure would counsel
 you to a more equal enterprise We pray you for
 your own sake to embrace your own safety and
 give over this attempt 190

Ros Do young sir your reputation shall not
 therefore be misprised we will make it our suit
 to the Duke that the wrestling might not go for-
 ward

Orl I beseech you punish me not with your
 hard thoughts wherein I confess me much guilty
 to deny so fair and excellent ladies any thing
 But let your fair eyes and gentle wishes go with
 me to my trial wherein if I be foiled, there is
 but one shamed that was never gracious if killed,
 but one dead that is will not be so I shall do
 my friends no wrong for I have none to lament
 me the world no injury for in it I have nothing

only in the world I fill up a place which may be better supplied when I have made it empty

Ros The little strength that I have I would it were with you

Cel And mine, to eke out hers

Ros Fare you well pray heaven I be deceived in you! 210

Cel Your heart's desires be with you!

Cha Come where is this young gallant that is so desirous to lie with his mother earth?

Orl Ready sir, but his will hath in it a more modest working

Duke F You shall try but one fall

Cha No, I warrant your Grace you shall not entreat him to a second, that have so mightily persuaded him from a first 219

Orl An you mean to mock me after, you should not have mocked me before but come your way

Ros Now Hercules be thy speed, young man!

Cel I would I were invisible to catch the strong fellow by the leg

They wrestle

Ros O excellent young man!

Cel If I had a thunderbolt in mine eye, I can tell who should down

Shout CHARLES is thrown

Duke F No more, no more

Orl Yes, I beseech your Grace I am not yet well breathed 230

Duke F How dost thou Charles?

Le Beau He cannot speak, my lord

Duke F Bear him away What is thy name, young man?

Orl Orlando my liege, the youngest son of Sir Rowland de Boys

Duke F I would thou hadst been son to some man else

The world esteem'd thy father honourable

But I did find him still mine enemy

Thou shouldst have better pleased me with this deed

Hadst thou descended from another house 240

But fare thee well thou art a gallant youth

I would thou hadst told me of another father

[*Exeunt* DUKE FREDERICK, *train*, and *LE BEAU*]

Cel Were I my father coz, would I do this?

Orl I am more proud to be Sir Rowland's son, His youngest son and would not change that calling

To be adopted heir to Frederick

Ros My father lov'd Sir Rowland as his soul

And all the world was of my father's mind Had I before known this young man his son I should have given him tears unto entreaties 250

Ere he should thus have ventured

Cel Gentle cousin,

Let us go thank him and encourage him

My father's rough and envious disposition

Sticks me at heart Sir, you have well deserved

If you do keep your promises in love

But justly as you have exceeded all promise,

Your mistress shall be happy

Ros Gentleman,

Giving him a chain from her neck

Wear this for me one out of suits with fortune,

That could give more, but that her hand lacks means

Shall we go, coz?

Cel Ay Fare you well fair gentleman

Orl Can I not say I thank you? My better parts 261

Are all thrown down, and that which here stands up

Is but a quintain a mere lifeless block

Ros He calls us back my pride fell with my fortunes,

I'll ask him what he would Did you call sir?

Sir you have wrestled well and overthrown

More than your enemies

Cel Will you go coz?

Ros Have with you Fare you well

[*Exeunt* ROSALIND and CELIA]

Orl What passion hangs these weights upon my tongue?

I cannot speak to her yet she urged conference

O poor Orlando thou art overthrown! 271

Or Charles or something weaker masters thee

Re enter LE BEAU

Le Beau Good sir I do in friendship counsel you

To leave this place Albeit you have deserved

High commendation true applause and love,

Yet such is now the Duke's condition

That he misconstrues all that you have done

The Duke is humorous what he is indeed

More suits you to conceive than I to speak of

Orl I thank you, sir and, pray you, tell me thus, 280

Which of the two was daughter of the Duke

That here was at the wrestling?

Le Beau Neither his daughter, if we judge by manners

But yet indeed the lesser is his daughter

The other is daughter to the banish'd Duke,

And here detain'd by her usurping uncle

To keep his daughter company whose loves

Are dearer than the natural bond of sisters

But I can tell you that of late this Duke

Hath taken displeasure 'gainst his gentle niece,

Grounded upon no other argument

But that the people praise her for her virtue

And pity her for her good father's sake

And on my life his malice against the lady
Will suddenly break forth. Sir, fare you well.
Hereafter in a better world than this
I shall desire more love and knowledge of you.
O! I rest much bounden to you, fare you
well. *[Exit LE BEAU]*
Thus must I from the smoke in the smother
From tyrant Duke unto a tyrant brother. 300
But heavenly Rosalind! *[Exit]*

SCENE III. A room in the palace

Enter CELIA and ROSALIND

Celia Why cousin why Rosalind! Cupid have
mercy, not a word?

Rosalind Not one to throw at a dog.
Celia No, thy words are too precious to be
cast away upon curs; throw some of them at me
come, lame me with reasons.

Rosalind Then there were two cousins laid up
when the one should be lamed with reasons and
the other mad without any.

Celia But is all this for your father? 10

Rosalind No, some of it is for my child's father.
O, how full of briars is this working-day
world!

Celia They are but burs, cousin, thrown upon
thee in holidays; foolery, if we walk not in the
trodden paths, our very petticoats will catch them.

Rosalind I could shake them off my coat; these
burs are in my heart.

Celia Hem them away.

Rosalind I would try, if I could cry, hem, and
have it in. 20

Celia Come, come, wrestle with thy affec-
tions.

Rosalind O, they take the part of a better wrestler
than myself!

Celia O, a good wish upon you; you will try
in time, in despite of a fall. But turning these
jesters out of service, let us talk in good earnest; is
it possible on such a sudden you should fall into
so strong a liking with old Sir Rowland's young
est son?

Rosalind The Duke my father loved his father
dearly. 31

Celia Doth it therefore ensue that you should
love his son dearly? By this kind of chase I
should hate him, for my father hated his father
dearly; yet I hate not Orlando.

Rosalind No, so far do I hate him now for my sake.

Celia Why should I not? doth he not deserve
well?

Rosalind Let me love him for that, and do you love
him because I do. Look, here comes the Duke. 41

Celia With his eyes full of anger.

Enter DUKE FREDERICK with Lords

Duke F. Mistress, dispatch you with your
safest haste.

And get you from our court.

Rosalind My uncle?

Duke F. You cousin.

Within these ten days, if that thou be st found
So near our public court as twenty miles
Thou dost for it.

Rosalind I do beseech your Grace.

Let me the knowledge of my fault bear with me.
If with my self I hold intelligence
Or have acquaintance with mine own desires, 50

If that I do not dream or be not frantic—
As I do trust I am not—then, dear uncle,

Never so much as in a thought unborn
Did I offend your Highness.

Duke F. Thus do all traitors
If their purgation did consist in words.
They are as innocent as grace itself.

Let it suffice thee that I trust thee not.

Rosalind Yet your mistrust cannot make me a
traitor.

Tell me whereon this likelihood depends.

Duke F. Thou art thy father's daughter, there's
enough. 60

Rosalind So was I when your Highness took his
dukedom.

So was I when your Highness banish'd him.
Treason is not inherited, my lord.

Or, if we did derive it from our friends,

What's that to me? my father was no traitor.

Then good my liege, mistake me not so much.

To think my poverty is treacherous.

Celia Dear sovereign, hear me speak.

Duke F. Ay, Celia, we stay'd her for your sake.

Else had she with her father ranged along. 70

Celia I did not then entreat to have her stay.

It was your pleasure and your own remorse.

I was too young that time to value her.

But now I know her, if she be a traitor.

Why so am I, we still have slept together.

Rose at an instant learn'd play'd eat together.

And wheresoe'er we went, like Juno's swans.

Still we went coupled and inseparable.

Duke F. She is too subtle for thee, and her
smoothness.

Her very silence and her patience. 80

Speak to the people, and they pity her.

Thou art a fool; she robs thee of thy name.

And thou wilt show more right and seem more
virtuous.

When she is gone, then open not thy lips.

Firm and unmovable is my doom.

Which I have pass'd upon her; she is banish'd.

Cel Pronounce that sentence then on me my
hege

I cannot live out of her company

Duke F You are a fool You, niece provide
yourself

If you outstay the time, upon mine honour 90

And in the greatness of my word, you die

(Exeunt DUKE FREDERICK and Lords)

Cel O my poor Rosalind whither wilt thou go?

Wilt thou change fathers? I will give thee mine

I charge thee, be not thou more grieved than I am

Ros I have more cause

Cel Thou hast not cousin

Pris thee, be cheerful know st thou not, the Duke

Hath banish'd me his daughter?

Ros That he hath not

Cel No, hath not? Rosalind lacks then the love

Which teacheth thee that thou and I am one

Shall we be sunder'd? shall we part sweet girl?

No let my father seek another heir 101

Therefore devise with me how we may fly

Whither to go and what to bear with us,

And do not seek to take your change upon you,

To bear your griefs yourself and leave me out,

For, by this heaven now at our sorrows pale,

Say what thou canst, I'll go along with thee

Ros Why, whither shall we go?

Cel To seek my uncle in the forest of Arden

Ros Alas, what danger will it be to us, 110

Maids as we are to travel forth so far!

Beauty provoketh thieves sooner than gold

Cel I'll put myself in poor and mean attire

And with a kind of umber smirch my face,

The like do you so shall we pass along

And never stir assailants

Ros Were it not better

Because that I am more than common tall

That I did suit me all points like a man?

A gallant curtle axe upon my thigh 119

A boar spear in my hand, and—in my heart

Lie there what hidden woman's fear there will—

We'll have a swashing and a martial outside

As many other mannish cowards have

That do outface it with their semblances

Cel What shall I call thee when thou art a man?

Ros I'll have no worse a name than Jove's own

page,

And therefore look you call me Ganymede

But what will you be call'd?

Cel Something that hath a reference to my state

No longer Celia but Aliena 130

Ros But, cousin what if we assay'd to steal

The clownish fool out of your father's court?

Would he not be a comfort to our travel?

Cel He'll go along o'er the wide world with me,

Leave me alone to woo him Let's away,

And get our jewels and our wealth together,

Devise the fittest time and safest way

To hide us from pursuit that will be made

After my flight Now go we in content

To liberty and not to banishment *(Exeunt)* 140

ACT II

SCENE I The forest of Arden

Enter DUKE SENIOR AMIENS and two or three

LORDS like foresters

Duke S Now, my comrades and brothers in
exile

Hath not old custom made this life more sweet

Than that of painted pomp? Are not these woods

More free from peril than the envious court?

Here feel we but the penalty of Adam,

The seasons' difference, as the icy fang

And churlish chiding of the winter's wind,

Which when it bites and blows upon my body

Even till I shrink with cold I smile and say

"This is no flattery these are counsellors 10

That feelingly persuade me what I am "

Sweet are the uses of adversity,

Which, like the toad ugly and venomous

Wears yet a precious jewel in his head

And this our life exempt from public haunt

Finds tongues in trees, books in the running

brooks

Sermons in stones, and good in everything

I would not change it

Ami Happy is your Grace

That can translate the stubbornness of fortune

Into so quiet and so sweet a style 20

Duke S Come shall we go and kill us venison?

And yet it irks me the poor dappled fools

Being native burghers of this desert city

Should in their own confines with forked heads

Have their round haunches gored

1st Lord Indeed my lord,

The melancholy Jaques grieves at that

And in that kind swears you do more usurp

Than doth your brother that hath banish'd you

To-day my Lord of Amiens and my self

Did steal behind him as he lay along 30

Under an oak whose antique root peeps out

Upon the brook that brawls along this wood

To the which place a poor sequester'd stag

That from the hunter's aim had ta'en a hurt,

Did come to languish and indeed my lord

The wretched animal heaved forth such groans

That their discharge did stretch his leathern coat

Almost to bursting and the big round tears

Cours'd one another down his innocent nose

Is piteous chase and thus the hairy fool

Much marked of the melancholy Jaques, *

Stood on the extremest verge of the swift brook
Augmenting it with tears

Duke S But what said Jaques?
Did he not moralize this spectacle?

1st Lord O yes into a thousand similes
First for his weeping into the needless stream
Poor deer quoth he thou makest a testament
As worldlings do giving thy sum of more
To that which had too much then being there
alone

Left and abandon'd of his velvet friends 50
Tis right quoth he thus misery doth part
The flux of company anon a careless herd
Full of the pasture jumps along by him
And never stays to greet him Ay quoth
Jaques

Sweep on, you far and greasy citizens
Tis just the fashion wherefore do you look
Upon that poor and broken bankrupt there?
Thus most invectively he pierceth through
The body of the country city court
Yea and of this our life swearing that we 60
Are mere usurpers tyrants and what's worse
To fright the animals and to kill them up
In their assign'd and native dwelling place

Duke S And did you leave him in this con-
templation?
and Lord We did my lord weeping and corn-
menting

Upon the sobbing deer
Duke S Show me the place
I love to cope him in these sullen fits
For then he's full of matter

1st Lord I'll bring you to him straight {*Exeunt*

SCENE II *A room in the palace*

Enter DUKE FREDERICK and his LORDS

Duke F Can it be possible that no man saw
them?

It cannot be some villains of my court
Are of consent and sufferance in this
1st Lord I cannot hear of any that did see her
The ladies her attendants of her chamber
Saw her a bed, and in the morning early
They found the bed untresured of their mistress
and Lord My lord, the roynish clown, at
whom so oft

Your Grace was wont to laugh, is also missing
Hesperia, the princess gentlewoman 10
Confesses that she secretly overheard
Your daughter and her cousin much commend
The parts and graces of the wrestler
That did but lately foil the ancient Charles
And she believes wherever they are gone
That youth is surely in their company

Duke F Send to his brother fetch that gallant
hither

If he be absent bring his brother to me
I'll make him find him do this suddenly
And let not search and inquisition quail 20
To bring again these foolish runaways {*Exeunt*

SCENE III *Before Orlando's house*

Enter ORLANDO and ADAM meeting

Orl Who's there?

Adam What my young master? O my gentle
master!

O my sweet master! O your memory
Of old Sir Rowland! why what make you here?
Why are you virtuous? why do people love you?
And wherefore are you gentle strong and valiant?
Why would you be so fond to overcome
The bonny priser of the humorous Duke?
Your praise is come too swiftly home before you
Know you not master to some kind of men 10
Their graces serve them but as enemies?
No more do yours your virtues gentle master
Are sanctified and holy traitors to you
O what a world is this when what is comely
Envenoms him that bears it!

Orl Why what's the matter?

Adam O unhappy youth!
Come not within these doors within this roof
The enemy of all your graces lives
Your brother—no no brother yet the son— 20
Yet not the son I will not call him son
Of him I was about to call his father—
Hath heard your praises and this night he means
To burn the lodging where you use to lie
And you within it if he fail of that
He will have other means to cut you off
I overheard him and his practices
This is no place this house is but a butchery
Abhor it fear it do not enter it

Orl Why whither Adam, wouldst thou have
me go?

Adam No matter whither so you come not
here 30

Orl What wouldst thou have me go and beg
my food?

Or with a base and boisterous sword enforce
A thievesish living on the common road?
Thus I must do or know not what to do
Yet this I will not do do how I can
I rather will subject me to the malice
Of a damned blood and bloody brother

Adam But do not so I have five hundred
crowns

The thrifty hire I saved under your father
Which I did store to be my foster nurse 40
When service should in my old limbs lie lame

And unregarded age in corners thrown
 Take that, and He that doth the ravens feed,
 Yea, providently caters for the sparrow
 Be comfort to my age! Here is the gold,
 All this I give you Let me be your servant
 Though I look old, yet I am strong and lusty,
 For in my youth I never did apply
 Hot and rebellious liquors in my blood,
 Nor did not with unbashful forehead woo 50
 The means of weakness and debility,
 Therefore my age is as a lusty winter,
 Frosty, but kindly Let me go with you,
 I'll do the service of a younger man
 In all your business and necessities
Orl O good old man, how well in thee appears
 The constant service of the antique world,
 When service sweat for duty, not for meed!
 Thou art not for the fashion of these times
 Where none will sweat but for promotion 60
 And having that do choke their service up
 Even with the having it is not so with thee
 But, poor old man, thou prunest a rotten tree,
 That cannot so much as a blossom yield
 In lieu of all thy pains and husbandry
 But come thy ways, we'll go along together,
 And ere we have thy youthful wages spent,
 We'll light upon some settled low content
Adam Master, go on, and I will follow thee 70
 To the last gasp, with truth and loyalty
 From seventeen years till now almost fourscore
 Here lived I but now live here no more
 At seventeen years many their fortunes seek,
 But at fourscore it is too late a week
 Yet fortune cannot recompense me better
 Than to die well and not my master's debtor

[Exeunt]

SCENE IV *The Forest of Arden*

*Enter ROSALIND for Ganymede, CELIA for Aliena,
 and TOUCHSTONE*

Ros O Jupiter, how weary are my spirits!
Touch I care not for my spirits, if my legs
 were not weary
Ros I could find in my heart to disgrace my
 man's apparel and to cry like a woman but I
 must comfort the weaker vessel as doubler and
 hose ought to show itself courageous to petticoat
 therefore courage, good Aliena!
Cel I pray you, bear with me, I cannot go no
 further 10
Touch For my part, I had rather bear with
 you than bear you, yet I should bear no cross if
 I did bear you, for I think you have no money
 in your purse
Ros Well this is the forest of Arden
Touch Ay, now am I in Arden, the more fool

I, when I was at home, I was in a better place
 but travellers must be content
Ros Ay, be so good Touchstone

Enter CORIN and SILVIUS

Look you, who comes here, a young man and an
 old in solemn talk 21
Cor That is the way to make her scorn you
 still
Sil O Corin, that thou knewst how I do love
 her!
Cor I partly guess, for I have loved ere now
Sil No Corin being old thou canst not guess,
 Though in thy youth thou wast as true a lover
 As ever sigh'd upon a midnight pillow
 But if thy love were ever like to mine—
 As sure I think did never man love so—
 How many actions most ridiculous 30
 Hast thou been drawn to by thy fantasy?
Cor Into a thousand that I have forgotten
Sil O thou didst then never love so heartily!
 If thou rememberst not the slightest folly
 That ever loved did make thee run into,
 Thou hast not loved
 Or if thou hast not sat as I do now,
 Wearying thy hearer in thy mistress' praise,
 Thou hast not loved
 Or if thou hast not broke from company 40
 Abruptly, as my passion now makes me,
 Thou hast not loved
 O Phebe Phebe, Phebe! [Exit
Ros Alas poor shepherd! searching of thy
 wound,
 I have by hard adventure found mine own
Touch And I mine I remember, when I
 was in love I broke my sword upon a stone and
 bid him take that for coming a night to Jane
 Smile, and I remember the kissing of her batler
 and the cow's dugs that her pretty chopt hands
 had milked and I remember the wooing of a
 peascod instead of her, from whom I took two
 cods and, giving her them again said with weep-
 ing tears, "Wear these for my sake" We that
 are true lovers run into strange capers but as all
 is mortal in nature so is all nature in love mortal
 in folly
Ros Thou speakest wiser than thou art ware of
Touch Nay, I shall never be ware of mine own
 wit till I break my shins against it 60
Ros Jove Jove! thus shepherd's passion
 Is much upon my fashion
Touch And mine but it grows something stale
 with me
Cel I pray you one of you question yond man
 If he for gold will give us any food
 I faint almost to death

Jaq 'Tis a Greek invocation, to call fools into a circle I'll go sleep, if I can, If I cannot, I'll rail against all the first born of Egypt
Am And I'll go seek the Duke his banquet is repaired
[Exeunt Severally]

SCENE VI *The forest**Enter ORLANDO AND ADAM*

Adam Dear master I can go no further O, I die for food! Here lie I down and measure out my grave Farewell kind master

Orl Why, how now, Adam! no greater heart in thee? Live a little, comfort a little cheer thyself a little If this uncouth forest yield any thing savage I will either be food for it or bring it for food to thee Thy conceit is nearer death than thy powers For my sake be comfortable hold death awhile at the arms' end I will here be with thee presently and if I bring thee not something to eat, I will give thee leave to die but if thou diest before I come, thou art a mocker of my labour Well said! thou lookest cheerly, and I'll be with thee quickly Yet thou liest in the bleak air come, I will bear thee to some shelter, and thou shalt not die for lack of a dinner, if there live any thing in this desert
 Cheerly, good Adam! *[Exeunt]*

SCENE VII *The forest*

A table set out Enter DUKE SENIOR AMIENS, and LORDS like outlaws

Duke S I think he be transform'd into a beast, For I can no where find him like a man
1st Lord My lord, he is but even now gone hence

Here was he merry, hearing of a song

Duke S If he, compact of jars grow musical, We shall have shortly discord in the spheres
 Go, seek him tell him I would speak with him

Enter JACQUES

1st Lord He saves my labour by his own approach

Duke S Why, how now, monsieur! what a life is this,

That your poor friends must woo your company?

What you look merrily!

Jaq A fool a fool! I met a fool in the forest,

A motley fool, a miserable fool!

As I do live by food, I met a fool

Who laid him down and bask'd him in the sun

And rail'd on Lady Fortune in good terms,

In good set terms and yet a motley fool

"Good morrow, fool," quoth I "No, sir"

quoth he,

"Call me not fool till heaven hath sent me fortune"

And then he drew a dial from his poke,

And looking on it with lack lustre eye,

Says very wisely, "It is ten o'clock"

Thus we may see," quoth he, "how the world wags"

'Tis but an hour ago since it was nine,

And after one hour more 'twill be eleven,

And so from hour to hour we ripe and ripe,

And then from hour to hour we rot and rot,

And thereby hangs a tale! When I did hear

The motley fool thus moral on the time

My lungs began to crow like chanticleer,

That fools should be so deep-contemplative,

And I did laugh sans intermission

An hour by his dial O noble fool!

A worthy fool! Motley's the only wear

Duke S What fool is this?

Jaq O worthy fool! One that hath been a courtier

And says, if ladies be but young and fair

They have the gift to know it and in his brain,

Which is as dry as the remainder biscuit

After a voyage, he hath strange places cramm'd

With observation the which he vents

In mangled forms O that I were a fool!

I am ambitious for a motley coat

Duke S Thou shalt have one

Jaq It is my only suit

Provided that you weed your better judgments

Of all opinion that grows rank in them

That I am wise I must have liberty

Withal as large a charter as the wind

To blow on whom I please for so fools have,

And they that are most galled with my folly

They most must laugh And why sir, must they so?

The 'why' is plain as way to parish church

He that a fool doth very wisely hit

Doth very foolishly, although he smart,

Not to seem senseless of the bob if not,

The wise man's folly is anatomized

Even by the squandering glances of the fool

Invest me in my motley give me leave

To speak my mind and I will through and through

Cleanse the foul body of the infected world

If they will patiently receive my medicine

Duke S Fie on thee! I can tell what thou wouldst do

Jaq What for a counter would I do but good?

Duke S Most mischievous foul sin in chiding sin

For thou thyself hast been a libertine

As sensual as the brutish sting itself,

And all the embossed sores and headed evils
 That thou with license of free foot hast caught
 Wouldst thou disgorge into the general world
Jaq Why who cries out on pride 70
 That can threin tax any private party?
 Doth it not flow as hugely as the sea
 Till that the weary very means do ebb?
 What woman in the city do I name
 When that I say the city woman bears
 The cost of princes on unworthy shoulders?
 Who can come in and say that I mean her
 When such a one as she such is her neighbour?
 Or what is he of basest function
 That says his bravery is not on my cost 80
 Thinking that I mean him, but therein suits
 His folly to the mettle of my speech?
 There then how then? what then? Let me see
 wherein
My tongue hath wrong'd him if it do him right
Then he hath wrong'd himself if he be free,
Why then my taxing like a wild-goose flies
Unclaim'd of any man But who comes here?

Enter ORLANDO with his sword drawn

Orl Forbear and eat no more
Jaq Why I have eat none yet
Orl Nor shalt not till necessity be served
Jaq Of what kind should this cock come of?
Duke S Art thou thus bolden'd man by thy
 distress 90
Or else a rude despiser of good manners
 That in civility thou seem'st so empty?
Orl You touch'd my vein at first the thorny
 point
Of bare distress hath taken from me the show
Of smooth civility yet am I inland bred
And know some nurture But forbear I say
He dies that touches any of this fruit
Till I and my affairs are answered
Jaq An you will not be answered with reason
 I must die 100

Duke S What would you have? Your gentleness
 shall force
 More than your force move us to gentleness
Orl I almost die for food and let me have it
Duke S Sit down and feed and welcome to our
 table
Orl Speak you so gently? Pardon me, I pray
 you

I thought that all things had been sav'd here
 And therefore put I on the countenance
 Of stern commandment But where'er you are
 That in this desert inaccessible 110
 Under the shade of melancholy boughs
 Lose and neglect the creeping hours of time
 If ever you have look'd on better days

If ever been where bells have knoll'd to church
 If ever sat at any good man's feast
 If ever from your eyelids wiped a tear
 And know what 'tis to pity and be pitied
 Let gentleness my strong enforcement be
 In the which hope I blush and hide my sword
Duke S True is it that we have seen better
 days 120

And have with holy bell been knoll'd to church
 And sat at good men's feasts and wiped our eyes
 Of drops that sacred pity hath engender'd
 And therefore sit you down in gentleness
 And take upon command what help we have
 That to your wanting may be minister'd
Orl Then but forbear your food a little while
 Whiles like a doe I go to find my fawn
 And give it food There is an old poor man
 Who after me hath many a weary step 130
 Lump'd in pure love till he be first sufficed
 Oppress'd with two week evils age and hunger
 I will not touch a bit

Duke S Go find him out
 And we will nothing waste till you return
Orl I thank ye and be blest for your good com-
 fort! [Exit

Duke S Thou seest we are not all alone un-
 happy
 This wide and universal theatre
 Presents more woeful pageants than the scene
 Wherein we play in

Jaq All the world's a stage
 And all the men and women merely players 140
 They have their exits and their entrances
 And one man in his time plays many parts
 His acts being seven ages At first the infant
 Mewling and puking in the nurse's arms
 And then the whining school boy with his satchel
 And shining morning face creeping like snail
 Unwillingly to school And then the lover
 Sighing like furnace with a woeful ballad
 Made to his mistress's eyebrow Then a soldier
 Full of strange oaths and bearded like the pard
 Jealous in honour sudden and quick in quarrel
 Seeking the bubble reputation
 Even in the cannon's mouth And then the justice,
 In fair round belly with good capon lined
 With a severe and bead of formal cut
 Full of wise saws and modern instances
 And so he plays his part The sixth age shifts
 Into the lean and slipshod pantaloon
 With spectacles on nose and pouch on side 150
 His youthful hose, well saved a world too wide
 For his shrunken shank and his big manly voice
 Turns again to a childish treble pipes
 And whistles in his sound Last scene of all
 That ends this strange eventful history

Is second childishness and mere oblivion
Sans teeth sans eyes sans taste sans every thing

Re-enter ORLANDO, with ADAM

Duke S Welcome Set down your venerable
burden
And let him feed
Orl I thank you most for him
Adam So had you need
I scarce can speak to thank you for myself 170
Duke S Welcome, fall to I will not trouble you
As yet, to question you about your fortunes
Give us some music, and, good cousin, sing

SONG

Ann Blow, blow, thou winter wind,
Thou art not so unkind
As man's ingratitude,
Thy tooth is not so keen,
Because thou art not seen,
Although thy breath be rude 179
Heigh ho! sing heigh-ho! unto the green holly
Most friendship is feigning, most loving mere
folly
Then, heigh ho, the holly!
Thus life is most jolly

Freeze freeze thou bitter sky,
That dost not bite so nigh
As benefits forgot
Though thou the waters warp,
Thy sting is not so sharp
As friend remember'd not
Heigh ho! sing, &c 190
Duke S If that you were the good Sir Row-
land's son,

As you have whisper'd faithfully you were
And as mine eye doth his effigies witness
Most truly linn'd and living in your face,
Be truly welcome hither I am the Duke
That loved your father the residue of your for-
tune,
Go to my cave and tell me Good old man
Thou art right welcome as thy master is
Support him by the arm Give me your hand
And let me all your fortunes understand *[Exeunt]*

ACT III

SCENE I *A room in the palace*

Enter DUKE FREDERICK LORDS and OLIVER

Duke F Not see him since? Sir, sir that cannot
be

But were I not the better part made mercy,
I should not seek an absent argument
Of my revenge, thou present But look to it

Find out thy brother, wheresoe'er he is,
Seek him with candle bring him dead or living
Within this twelvemonth or turn thou no more
To seek a living in our territory
Thy lands and all things that thou dost call thine
Worth seizure do we seize into our hands, 10
Till thou canst quit thee by thy brother's mouth
Of what we think against thee

Oli O that your Highness knew my heart in
this!

I never loved my brother in my life

Duke F More villain thou Well, push him out
of doors

And let my officers of such a nature
Make an extent upon his house and lands
Do this expediently and turn him going *[Exeunt]*

SCENE II *The forest*

Enter ORLANDO with a piper

Orl Hang there my verse, in witness of my
love

And thou, thrice-crowned queen of night,
survey

With thy chaste eye, from thy pale sphere above
Thy huntress name that my full life doth
sway

O Rosalind! these trees shall be my books
And in their barks my thoughts I'll character,
That every eye which in this forest looks
Shall see thy virtue witness'd every where
Run run Orlando, carve on every tree 9
The fair, the chaste, and unexpressive she *[Exit]*

Enter CORIN and TOUCHSTONE

Cor And how like you this shepherd's life,
Master Touchstone?

Touch Truly, shepherd in respect of itself,
it is a good life, but in respect that it is a shep-
herd's life it is naught In respect that it is
solitary I like it very well, but in respect that it
is private it is a very vile life Now, in respect
it is in the fields it pleaseth me well, but in
respect it is not in the court it is tedious As it
is a spare life look you it fits my humour well
but as there is no more plenty in it it goes much
against my stomach Hast any philosophy in
this shepherd?

Cor No more but that I know the more one
sickens the worse at ease he is, and that he that
wants money, means, and content is without
three good friends that the property of rain is to
wet and fire to burn that good pasture makes fat
sheep and that a great cause of the night is lack
of the sun, that he that hath learned no wit
nature nor art may complain of good
comes of a very dull kindred

Touch Such a one is a natural philosopher
Wast ever in court shepherd?

Cor No truly

Touch Then thou art damned

Cor Nay I hope

Touch Truly thou art damned like an ill
roasted egg all on one side 39

Cor For not being at court? Your reason

Touch Why if thou never wast at court
thou never sawest good manners if thou never
sawest good manners then thy manners must
be wicked and wickedness is sin and sin is
damnation Thou art in a parlous state shepherd

Cor Not a whit Touchstone those that are
good manners at the court are as ridiculous in
the country as the behaviour of the country is
most mockable at the court You told me you
salute not at the court but you kiss your hands
that courtesy would be uncleanly if courtiers
were shepherds

Touch Instance briefly come instance

Cor Why we are still handling our ewes
and their fells you know are greasy

Touch Why do not your courtiers hands
sweat? and is not the grease of a mutton as
wholesome as the sweat of a man? Shallow
shallow A better instance I say come

Cor Besides our hands are hard 60

Touch Your lips will feel them the sooner
Shallow again A more sounder instance come

Cor And they are often tarred over with the
surgery of our sheep and would you have us
kiss tar? The courtiers hands are perfumed
with civet

Touch Most shallow man! thou worms meat
in respect of a good piece of flesh indeed! Learn
of the wise and perpend civet is of a baser birth
than tar the very uncleanly flux of a cat Mend
the instance shepherd 71

Cor You have too courtly a wit for me I'll
rest

Touch Wilt thou rest damned? God help
thee shallow man God make incision in thee!
thou art raw

Cor Sir I am a true labourer I earn that I
eat get that I wear owe no man hate envy no
man's happiness glad of other men's good content
with my harm, and the greatest of my pride
is to see my ewes graze and my lambs suck

Touch That is another simple sin in you
to bring the ewes and the lambs together and
to offer to get your living by the copulation of
cattle to be bawd to a bell wether and to betray
a she lamb of a tuch smooth to a crooked pated,
old, cuckoldy ram, out of all reasonable match
If thou beest not damned for this the devil hum-

self will have no shepheard I cannot see else
how thou shouldst scape 90

Cor Here comes young Master Ganymede
my new mistress's brother

Enter ROSALIND with a paper reading

Ros From the east to western Ind,
No jewel is like Rosalind
Her worth being mounted on the wind
Through all the world bears Rosalind
All the pictures fairest lined
Are but black to Rosalind
Let no fair be kept in mind
But the face of Rosalind 100

Touch I'll rhyme you so eight years together
dinner and suppers and sleeping hours excepted
it is the right butter women's rank to market

Ros Out fool!

Touch For a taste

If a hart do lack a hind
Let him seek out Rosalind
If the cat will after kind
So be sure will Rosalind 110
Winter garments must be lined
So must slender Rosalind
They that reap must sheaf and bind
Then to cart with Rosalind
Sweetest nut hath sourest rind
Such a nut is Rosalind
He that sweetest rose will find
Must find love's prick and Rosalind

This is the very false gallop of verses why do
you infect yourself with them? 120

Ros Peace you dull fool! I found them on a
tree

Touch Truly the tree yields bad fruit

Ros I'll graft it with you and then I shall
graft it with a medlar then it will be the earl's ear
fruit the country for you'll be rotten ere you
be half ripe and that's the right virtue of the
medlar

Touch You have said but whether wisely or
no let the forest judge 130

Enter CELIA with a writing

Ros Peace!

Here comes my sister reading stand aside

Cel [Reads]

Why should this a desert be?

For it is unpeopled? No

Tongues I'll hang on every tree

That shall civil sayings show

Some how brief the life of man

Runs his erring pilgrimage,

That the stretching of a span

Buckles in his sum of age 140

Some, of violated vows

'Twixt the souls of friend and friend

But upon the fairest boughs,

Or at every sentence end,

Will I Rosalind write,

Teaching all that read to know

The quintessence of every sprite

Heaven would in little show

Therefore Heaven Nature charged

That one body should be fill'd 150

With all graces wide enlarged

Nature presently distill'd

Helen's cheek but not her heart,

Cleopatra's majesty,

Atalanta's better part

Sad Lucretia's modesty

Thus Rosalind of many parts

By heavenly synod was devised,

Of many faces, eyes and hearts,

To have the touches dearest prized 160

Heaven would that she these gifts should have,

And I to live and die her slave "

Ros O most gentle pulpit! what tedious homily of love have you wearied your parishioners withal and never cried 'Have patience good people!'

Cel How now! back, friends! Shepherd, go off a little. Go with him, surrah

Touch Come shepherd, let us make an honourable retreat, though not with bag and baggage, yet with scrip and scrippage 171

[*Exeunt CORIN and TOUCHSTONE*]

Cel Didst thou hear these verses?

Ros O, yes I heard them all and more too, for some of them had in them more feet than the verses would bear

Cel That's no matter the feet might bear the verses

Ros Ay but the feet were lame and could not bear themselves without the verse and therefore stood lamely in the verse 180

Cel But didst thou hear without wondering how thy name should be hanged and carved upon these trees?

Ros I was seven of the nine days out of the wonder before you came for look here what I found on a palm tree I was never so berhymed since Pythagoras time that I was an Irish rat, which I can hardly remember

Cel Trow you who hath done this?

Ros Is it a man? 190

Cel And a chain, that you once wore about his neck. Change you colour?

Ros I prithee who?

Cel O Lord, Lord! it is a hard matter for

friends to meet but mountains may be removed with earthquakes and so encounter

Ros Nay, but who is it?

Cel Is it possible?

Ros Nay, I prithee now with most petitionary vehemence, tell me who it is 200

Cel O wonderful wonderful, and most wonderful wonderful! and yet again wonderful and after that, out of all hooping!

Ros Good my complexion! dost thou think, though I am caparisoned like a man I have a doublet and hose in my disposition? One inch of delay more is a South sea of discovery, I prithee, tell me who is it quickly, and speak apace I would thou couldst stammer that thou mightst pour this concealed man out of thy mouth as wine comes out of a narrow mouthed bottle either too much at once, or none at all I prithee, take the cork out of thy mouth that I may drink thy tidings

Cel So you may put a man in your belly

Ros Is he of God's making? What manner of man? Is his head worth a hat, or his chin worth a beard?

Cel Nay, he hath but a little beard 219

Ros Why God will send more, if the man will be thankful let me stay the growth of his beard if thou delay me not the knowledge of his chin

Cel It is young Orlando, that tripped up the wrestler's heels and your heart both in an instant

Ros Nay but the devil take mocking speak, sad brow and true maid

Cel I faith coz, tis he

Ros Orlando?

Cel Orlando 230

Ros Alas the day! what shall I do with my doublet and hose? What did he when thou sawest him? What said he? How looked he? Wherein went he? What makes he here? Did he ask for me? Where remains he? How parted he with thee? and when shalt thou see him again? Answer me in one word

Cel You must borrow me Gargantua's mouth first 'tis a word too great for any mouth of this age's size To say ay and no to these particulars is more than to answer in a catechism 241

Ros But doth he know that I am in this forest and in man's apparel? Looks he as freshly as he did the day he wrestled?

Cel It is easy to count atomies as to resolve the propositions of a lover, but take a taste of my finding him and relish it with good observance I found him under a tree, like a acorn

Ros It may well be called Jove's tree when it drops forth such fruit 250

Cel Give me audience good madam

Ros Proceed

Cel There lay he stretched along like a wounded knight

Ros Though it be pity to see such a sight it will become the ground

Cel Cry holla to thy tongue I prithee it curvets unseasonably He was furnished like a hunter 259

Ros O ominous! he comes to kill my heart

Cel I would sing my song without a burden thou bringest me out of tune

Ros Do you not know I am a woman? when I think I must speak Sweet say on

Cel You bring me out Soft! comes he not here?

Enter ORLANDO and JAKES

Ros 'Tis he slink by and note him

Jaq I thank you for your company but good faith I had as lief have been myself alone 270

Orl And so had I but yet for fashion sake I thank you too for your society

Jaq God be wi' you let's meet as little as we can

Orl I do desire we may be better strangers

Jaq I pray you mar no more trees with writing love-sons in their barks

Orl I pray you mar no more of my verses with reading them ill favouredly

Jaq Rosalind is your love's name? 280

Orl Yes just

Jaq I do not like her name

Orl There was no thought of pleasing you when she was christened

Jaq What stature is she of?

Orl Just as high as my heart

Jaq You are full of pretty answers Have you not been acquainted with goldsmiths' wives and corned them out of rings? 289

Orl Not so but I answer you right painted cloth, from whence you have studied your questions

Jaq You have a nimble wit I think 'twas made of Atalanta's heels Will you sit down with me? and we two will rail against our mistress the world and all our misery

Orl I will chide no breather in the world but myself against whom I know most faults

Jaq The worst fault you have is to be in love 300

Orl 'Tis a fault I will not change for your best virtue I am weary of you

Jaq By my troth, I was seeking for a fool when I found you

Orl He is drowned in the brook look but in, and you shall see him

Jaq There I shall see mine own figure

Orl Which I take to be either a fool or a cipher

Jaq I'll tarry no longer with you farewell good Signior Love 310

Orl I am glad of your departure adieu good Monsieur Melancholy [Exit JAKES]

Ros [Aside to CELIA] I will speak to him like a saucy lackey and under that habit play the knave with him Do you hear forester?

Orl Very well what would you?

Ros I pray you what is't o'clock?

Orl You should ask me what time o' day there's no clock in the forest 319

Ros Then there is no true lover in the forest else sighing every minute and groaning every hour would detect the lazy foot of Time as well as a clock

Orl And why not the swift foot of Time? had not that been proper?

Ros By no means sir Time travels in divers paces with divers persons I'll tell you who Time ambles withal who Time trots withal who Time gallops withal and who he stands still withal

Orl I prithee who doth he trot withal? 330

Ros Marry he trots hard with a young maid between the contract of her marriage and the day it is solemnized if the interim be but a seignight Time's pace is so hard that it seems the length of seven year

Orl Who ambles Time withal?

Ros With a priest that lacks Latin and a rich man that hath not the gout for the one sleeps easily because he cannot study and the other lives merrily because he feels no pain the one lacking the burden of lean and wasteful learning the other knowing no burden of heavy tedious penury these Time ambles withal

Orl Who doth he gallop withal?

Ros With a thief to the gallows for though he go as softly as foot can fall he thinks himself too soon there

Orl Who staves it still withal?

Ros With lawyers in the vacation for they sleep between term and term and then they perceive not how Time moves 351

Orl Where dwell you pretty youth?

Ros With this shepherdess my sister here in the skirts of the forest like fringe upon a petticoat

Orl Are you native of this place?

Ros As the cony that you see dwell where she is kindled

Orl Your accent is something finer than you could purchase in so removed a dwelling 360

Ros I have been told so of many but indeed an old religious uncle of mine taught me to speak, who was in his youth an inland man, one that knew courtship too well, for there he fell in love I have heard him read many lectures against it, and I thank God I am not a woman, to be touched with so many giddy offences as he hath generally taved their whole sex withal

Orl Can you remember any of the principal evils that he laid to the charge of women? 370

Ros There were none principal they were all like one another as half pence are every one fault seeming monstrous till his fellow fault came to match it

Orl I prithee, recount some of them

Ros No, I will not cast away my physic but on those that are sick. There is a man haunts the forest that abuses our young plants with carving "Rosalind" on their barks, hangs odes upon hawthorns and elegies on brambles all forsooth deifying the name of Rosalind if I could meet that fancy monger I would give him some good counsel, for he seems to have the quotidian of love upon him

Orl I am he that is so love shaken I pray you, tell me your remedy

Ros There is none of my uncle's marks upon you he taught me how to know a man in love, in which cage of rushes I am sure you are not prisoner 390

Orl What were his marks?

Ros A lean cheek, which you have not a blue eye and sunken which you have not, an unquestionable spirit, which you have not, a beard neglected, which you have not but I pardon you for that, for simply your having in beard is a younger brother's revenue then your hose should be ungartered, your bonnet unbanded, your sleeve unbuttoned, your shoe untied, and everything about you demonstrating a careless desolation, but you are no such man, you are rather point-device in your accoutrements as loving yourself than seeming the lover of any other

Orl Fair youth, I would I could make thee believe I love

Ros Me believe it? you may as soon make her that you love believe it, which I warrant she is apter to do than to confess she does that is one of the points in the which women still give the lie to their consciences But, in good sooth are you he that hangs the verses on the trees wherein Rosalind is so admired?

Orl I swear to thee, youth by the white hand of Rosalind, I am that he that unfortunate he

Ros But are you so much in love as your rhymes speak?

Orl Neither rhyme nor reason can express how much 419

Ros Love is merely a madness, and, I tell you, deserves as well a dark house and a whip as madmen do and the reason why they are not so punished and cured is that the lunacy is so ordinary that the whippers are in love too Yet I profess curing it by counsel

Orl Did you ever cure any so?

Ros Yes, one, and in this manner He was to imagine me his love, his mistress, and I set him every day to woo me at which time would I, being but a moonish youth grieve be effeminate, changeable, longing and lily, proud, fantastical apish, shallow, inconstant full of tears, full of smiles for every passion something and for no passion truly anything as boys and women are for the most part cattle of this colour, would now like him, now loathe him, then entertain him then forswear him, now weep for him then spit at him, that I drave my suitor from his mad humour of love to a living humour of madness, which was, to forswear the full stream of the world and to live in a nook merely monastic And thus I cured him, and this way will I take upon me to wash your liver as clean as a sound sheep's heart, that there shall not be one spot of love in it

Orl I would not be cured, youth

Ros I would cure you if you would but call me Rosalind and come every day to my cote and woo me

Orl Now by the faith of my love, I will tell me where it is 450

Ros Go with me to it and I'll show it you and by the way you shall tell me where in the forest you live Will you go?

Orl With all my heart, good youth

Ros Nay, you must call me Rosalind Come, sister, will you go? [Exit

SCENE III The forest

Enter TOUCHSTONE AND AUDREY, JAKES behind

Touch Come apace, good Audrey I will fetch up your goats Audrey And how Audrey? am I the man yet? doth my simple feature you?

Aud Your features! Lord warrant features?

Touch I am here with thee and the most capricious poet, honest among the Goths

Jaq [*Aside*] O knowledge ill inhabited worse than Jove in a thatched house! 11

Touch When a man's verses cannot be understood nor a man's good wit seconded with the forward child Understanding it strikes a man more dead than a great reckoning in a little room Truly I would the gods had made thee poetical

Aud I do not know what poetical is is it honest in deed and word? is it a true thing?

Touch No truly for the truest poetry is the most feigning and lovers are given to poetry and what they swear in poetry may be said as lovers they do feign

Aud Do you wish that the gods had made me poetical?

Touch I do truly for thou sweetest to me thou art honest now if thou wert a poet I might have some hope thou didst feign

Aud Would you not have me honest?

Touch No truly unless thou wert hard favoured for honesty coupled to beauty is to have honey a sauce to sugar 31

Jaq [*Aside*] A material fool!

Aud Well I am not fair and therefore I pray the gods make me honest

Touch Truly and to cast away honesty upon a foul slut were to put good meat into an unclean dish

Aud I am not a slut though I thank the gods I am foul 39

Touch Well praised be the gods for thy soulness! slutishness may come hereafter But be it as it may be I will marry thee and to that end I have been with Sir Oliver Martext the vicar of the next villa who hath promised me meet me in this place of the forest and to couple us

Jaq [*Aside*] I would fain see this meeting

Aud Well the gods give us joy!

Touch Amen A man may if he were of a fearful heart stranger in this attempt for here we have no temple but the wood no assembly but horn beasts but what though? Courage! As horns are odious they are necessary It is said many a man knows no end of his goods right many a man has good horns and knows no end of them Well that is the dowry of his wife is none of his own getting Horns? Even so Poor men alone? No no the noblest deer hath them as huts as the rascal Is the single man therefore blessed? No as a walled town is more worthier than a villa is so is the forehead of a married man more honourable than the bare brow of a bachelor and by how much defence is better than no skill by so much is a horn more precious than to want Here comes Sir Oliver

Enter SIR OLIVER MARTEXT

Sir Oliver Martext you are well met will you dispatch us here under this tree or shall we go with you to your chapel?

Sir Oli Is there none here to give the woman?

Touch I will not take her on gift of any man

Sir Oli Truly she must be given or the marriage is not lawful 71

Jaq [*Advancing*] Proceed proceed I'll give her

Touch Good even good Master What ye call it how do you sir? You are very well met God ild you for your last company I am very glad to see you even a toy in hand here sir nay pray be covered

Jaq Will you be married motley? 79

Touch As the ox hath his bow sir the horse his curb and the falcon her bells so man hath his desires and as pigeons bill so wedlock would be nibbling

Jaq And will you being a man of your breeding be married under a bush like a beggar? Get you to church and have a good priest that can tell you what marriage is this fellow will but join you together as they join wainscot then one of you will prove a shrunk panel and like green timber warp warp 90

Touch [*Aside*] I am not in the mind but I were better to be married of him than of another for he is not like to marry me well and not being well married it will be a good excuse for me hereafter to leave my wife

Jaq Go thou with me and let me counsel thee

Touch Come sweet Audrey

We must be married or we must live in bawdry

Farewell good Master Oliver not— 100

O sweet Oliver

O brave Oliver

Leave me not behind thee

but—

Wind away

Be gone I say

I will not to wedding with thee

[*Exeunt* JACQUES TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY

Sir Oli Tis no matter ne'er a fantastical knave of them all shall flout me out of my calling

[*Exit* 109

SCENE IV The forest

Enter ROSALIND and CELIA

Ros Never talk to me I will weep

Cel Do I prithee but yet have the grace to consider that tears do not become a man

Ros But have I not cause to weep?

Cel As good cause as one would desire, therefore weep

Ros His very hair is of the dissembling colour

Cel Something browner than Judas' marry, his kisses are Judas' own children 10

Ros I' faith, his hair is of a good colour

Cel An excellent colour your chestnut was ever the only colour

Ros And his kissing is as full of sanctity as the touch of holy bread

Cel He hath bought a pair of cast lips of Diana a nun of winter's sisterhood kisses not more religiously, the very ice of chastity is in them

Ros But why did he swear he would come this morning, and comes not? 21

Cel Nay, certainly, there is no truth in him

Ros Do you think so?

Cel Yes, I think he is not a pick-purse nor a horse stealer, but for his verity in love, I do think him as concave as a covered goblet or a worm eaten nut

Ros Not true in love?

Cel Yes, when he is in, but I think he is not in 30

Ros You have heard him swear downright he was

Cel "Was" is not "is", besides, the oath of a lover is no stronger than the word of a tapster: they are both the confirmer of false reckonings. He attends here in the forest on the Duke your father

Ros I met the Duke yesterday and had much question with him: he asked me of what parentage I was, I told him, of as good as he, so he laughed and let me go. But what talk we of fathers, when there is such a man as Orlando?

Cel O, that's a brave man! he writes brave verses, speaks brave words, swears brave oaths, and breaks them bravely, quite traverse, athwart the heart of his lover, as a puisny tilter that spurs his horse but on one side, breaks his staff like a noble goose, but all's brave that youth mounts and folly guides. Who comes here?

Enter CORIN

Cor Mistress and master, you have oft inquired 50

After the shepherd that complain'd of love,
Who you saw sitting by me on the turf
Praising the proud disdainful shepherdess
That was his mistress

Cel Well, and what of him?

Cor If you will see a pageant truly play'd,
Between the pale complexion of true love
And the red glow of scorn and proud disdain,
Go hence a little and I shall conduct you,

If you will mark it

Ros O, come, let us remove

The sight of lovers feedeth those in love 60

Bring us to this sight, and you shall say

I'll prove a busy actor in their play [*Exeunt*]

SCENE V *Another part of the forest*

Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE

Sil Sweet Phebe, do not scorn me, do not, Phebe,

Say that you love me not, but say not so
In bitterness. The common executioner,
Whose heart the accustom'd sight of death makes hard

Falls not the axe upon the humbled neck
But first begs pardon: will you sterner be
Than he that dies and lives by bloody drops?

Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN behind

Phe I would not be thy executioner
I fly thee, for I would not injure thee
Thou tell'st me there is murder in mine eye 10

'Tis pretty sure and very probable,
That eyes, that are the frailst and softest things,
Who shut their coward gates on atomies
Should be call'd tyrants, butchers, murderers!
Now I do frown on thee with all my heart
And if mine eyes can wound, now let them kill thee

Now counterfeit to swoon: why now fall down

Or if thou canst not, O, for shame, for shame,
Lie not, to say mine eyes are murderers!
Now show the wound mine eye hath made in thee 20

Scratch thee but with a pin, and there remains
Some scar of it: lean but upon a rush,
The cicatrice and capable impressure
Thy palm some moment keeps, but now mine eyes

Which I have darted at thee, hurt thee not,
Nor I am sure there is no force in eyes
That can do hurt

Sil O dear Phebe,
If ever—as that ever may be near—
You meet in some fresh cheek the power of fancy,

Then shall you know the wounds invisible 30
That love's keen arrows make

Phe But till that time
Come not thou near me, and when that time comes

Afflict me with thy mocks, pity me not
As till that time I shall not pity thee

Ros And why, I pray you? Who might be your mother,

That you insult erule and all at once
O'er the wretched? What though you have no
beauty—

As by my faith I see no more in you
Than without candle may go dark to bed—
Must you be therefore proud and pitiless? 40

Why what means this? Why do you look on me?
I see no more in you than in the ordinary
Of nature's sale work. O'd's my little life

I think she means to tangle my eyes too!
No faith proud mistress a hope not after it
Tis not your ink-brows your black silk hair

Your bugle eyeballs nor your cheek of cream
That can entame my spirits to your worship
You foolish shepherd wherefore do you follow
her

Like foggy south puffing with wind and rain? 50
You are a thousand times a properer man
Than she a woman in such fools as you

That makes the world full of ill-favour'd chil-
dren

'Tis not her glass but you that flatters her
And out of you she sees herself more proper
Than any of her lineaments can show her
But mistress know yourself down on your
knees

And thank heaven fasting for a good man's love
For I must tell you friendly in your ear
Sell when you can you are not for all markets

Cry the man mercy love him take his offer 61
Foul's most foul being full to be a scoffer
So take her to thee shepherd fare you well

Pho Sweet youth, I pray you chide a year
together

I had rather hear you chide than this man woo
Ros He's fallen in love with your foulness and
she'll fall in love with my anger. If it be so as
fast as she answers thee with frowning looks I'll
saute her with bitter words. Why look you so
upon me? 70

Pho For no ill will I bear you
Ros I pray you do not fall in love with me
For I am faster than you are made in wine

Besides I like you not. If you will know my
house,

'Tis at the tuft of olives here hard by
Will you go sister? Shepherd ply her hard
Come sister Shepherdless look on him better

And be not proud though all the world could see
None could be so abused in sight as he
Come to our flock. 80

[Exeunt ROSALIND, CELIA and CORINUS]
Pho Dead shepherd, now I find thy saw of
truth—

Who ever loved that loved not at first a ghe?
Sil Sweet Phebe—

Pho Ha what say'st thou Sil vius?

Sil Sweet Phebe pity me

Pho Why I am sorry for thee gentle Sil vius

Sil Where'er sorrow is relief would be

If you do sorrow at my grief in love

By giving love your sorrow and my grief

Were both extenuated

Pho Thou hast my love is not that neighbour
ly? 90

Sil I would have you

Pho Why that were covetousness

Sil vius the time was that I hated thee

And yet it is not that I bear thee love

But since that thou canst talk of love so well

Thy company which erst was irksome to me

I will endure and I'll employ thee too

But do not look for further recompense

Than thine own gladness that thou art employ'd

Sil So holy and so perfect is my love

And I in such a poverty of grace 100

That I shall think it a most plentiful crop

To glean the broken ears after the man

That the main harvest reaps loose now and then

A scatter'd smile and that I'll live upon

Pho Know'st thou the youth that spoke to me
erewhile?

Sil Not very well but I have met him oft

And he hath bought the cottage and the bounds

That the old carlot once was master of

Pho Think not I love him though I ask for
him

'Tis but a peevish boy yet he talks well 110

But what care I for words? yet words do well

When he that speaks them pleases those that
hear

It is a pretty youth not very pretty

But sure he's proud, and yet his pride becomes
him

He'll make a proper man the best thing in him

Is his complexion and faster than his tongue

Did make offence his eye did heal it up

He is not very tall yet for his years he's tall

His legs are but so so and yet tis well 120

There was a pretty redness in his lip

A little riper and more lusty red
Than that mix'd in his cheek 'twas just the
difference

Between the constant red and mingled damask
There be some women Sil vius had they mark'd
him

In parcels as I did, would have gone near

To fall in love with him but for my part

I love him not nor hate him not and yet

I have more cause to hate him than to love him

For what had he to do to chide at me?

He said mine eyes were black and my hair black

And, now I am remember'd scorn'd at me
 I marvel why I answer'd not again 131
 But that's all one, omittance is no quittance
 I'll write to him a very taunting letter
 And thou shalt bear it wilt thou Silvius?
 Sil Phebe, with all my heart
 Phe I'll write it straight,
 The matter's in my head and in my heart
 I will be bitter with him and passing short
 Go with me, Silvius [Exeunt

ACT IV

SCENE I *The forest*

Enter ROSALIND CELIA, and JAQUES

Jaq I prithee, pretty youth, let me be better acquainted with thee

Ros They say you are a melancholy fellow

Jaq I am so, I do love it better than laughing

Ros Those that are in extremity of either are abominable fellows and betray themselves to every modern censure worse than drunkards

Jaq Why, 'tis good to be sad and say nothing

Ros Why then 'tis good to be a post 9

Jaq I have neither the scholar's melancholy which is emulation, nor the musician's which is fantastical, nor the courtier's which is proud nor the soldier's which is ambitious, nor the lawyer's, which is politic, nor the lady's, which is nice nor the lover's, which is all these but it is a melancholy of mine own compounded of many simples extracted from many objects and indeed the sundry contemplation of my travels in which my often rumination wraps me in a most humorous sadness 20

Ros A traveller! By my faith, you have great reason to be sad I fear you have sold your own lands to see other men's, then, to have seen much and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands

Jaq Yes I have gained my experience

Ros And your experience makes you sad I had rather have a fool to make me merry than experience to make me sad and to travel for it too!

Enter ORLANDO

Orl Good day and happiness, dear Rosalind!

Jaq Nay, then God be wi' you an you talk in blank verse [Exit

Ros Farewell, Monsieur Traveller look you lisp and wear strange suits, disable all the benefits of your own country, be out of love with your nativity, and almost chide God for making you that countenance you are or I will scarce think you have swam in a gondola Why how now, Orlando! where have you been all this

while? You a lover! An you serve me such another trick never come in my sight more 41

Orl My fair Rosalind, I come within an hour of my promise

Ros Break an hour's promise in love! He that will divide a minute into a thousand parts and break but a part of the thousandth part of a minute in the affairs of love it may be said of him that Cupid hath clapped him on the shoulder, but I'll warrant him heart-whole

Orl Pardon me dear Rosalind 50

Ros Nay an you be so tardy, come no more in my sight I had as lief be wooed of a snail

Orl Of a snail?

Ros Ay, of a snail, for though he comes slowly, he carries his house on his head a better jointure, I think, than you make a woman besides, he brings his destiny with him

Orl What's that?

Ros Why horns which such as you are fain to be beholding to your wives for but he comes armed in his fortune and prevents the slander of his wife

Orl Virtue is no horn maker, and my Rosalind is virtuous

Ros And I am your Rosalind

Cel It pleases him to call you so, but he hath a Rosalind of a better leer than you

Ros Come woo me woo me for now I am in a holiday humour and like enough to consent What would you say to me now, an I were your very very Rosalind? 71

Orl I would kiss before I spoke

Ros Nay you were better speak first and when you were gravelled for lack of matter, you might take occasion to kiss Very good orators when they are out they will spit, and for lovers lacking—God warn us!—matter, the cleanliest shift is to kiss

Orl How if the kiss be denied?

Ros Then she puts you to entreaty and there begins new matter 81

Orl Who could be out being before his beloved mistress?

Ros Marry that should you if I were your mistress, or I should think my honesty ranker than my wit

Orl What of my suit?

Ros Not out of your apparel and yet out of your suit Am not I your Rosalind?

Orl I take some joy to say you are because I would be talking of her 91

Ros Well in her person I say I will not have you

Orl Then in mine own person I die

Ros No faith die by attorney The poor world

is almost six thousand years old and in all this time there was not any man died in his own person *videlicet* in a love-cause Troilus had his brains dashed out with a Grecian club yet he did what he could to die before and he is one of the patterns of love Leander he would have lived many a fair year though Hero had turned nun if it had not been for a hot midsummer night for good youth he went but forth to wash him in the Hellespont and being taken with the cramp was drowned and the foolish chroniclers of that age found it was Hero of Sestos But these are all lies men have died from time to time and worms have eaten them but not for love

Orl I would not have my right Rosalind of this mind for I protest her frown might kill me

Ros By this hand, it will not kill a fly But come now I will be your Rosalind in a more coming-on disposition and ask me what you will I will grant it

Orl Then love me Rosalind

Ros Yes faith will I Fridays and Saturdays and all

Orl And wilt thou have me?

Ros Ay and twenty such

Orl What sayest thou?

Ros Are you not good?

Orl I hope so

Ros Why then, can one desire too much of a good thing? Come sister you shall be the priest and marry us Give me your hand Orlando What do you say sister?

Orl Pray thee marry us

Cel I cannot say the words

Ros You must begin, Will you Orlando—

Cel Go to Will you Orlando have to wife this Rosalind?

O I will

Ros Ay but when?

O I Why now as fast as she can marry us

R Then you must say I take thee Rosalind for wife

O I take thee Rosalind for wife

Ros I might ask you for your commission but I do take thee Orlando for my husband there's a girl goes before the priest and certainly a woman's thought runs before her actions

O I So do all thoughts they are winged

Ros Now tell me how long you would have her after you have possessed her

Orl For ever and a day

Ros Say a day without the ever No no Orlando men are April when they woo December when they wed maids are May when they are maids but the sky changes when they are

wives I will be more jealous of thee than a Barbary cock pigeon over his hen more clamorous than a parrot against rain more new fangled than an ape more giddy in my desires than a monkey I will weep for nothing like Diana in the fountain and I will do that when you are disposed to be merry I will laugh like a hyen and that when thou art inclined to sleep

Orl But will my Rosalind do so?

Ros By my life she will do as I do

Orl O but she is wise

Ros Or else she could not have the wit to do thus the wiser the waywarder make the doors upon a woman's wit and it will out at the case ment shut that and will out at the key-hole stop that will fly with the smoke out at the chimney

Orl A man that had a wife with such a wit he might say Wit whither wilt?

Ros Nay you might keep that check for it till you met your wife's wit going to your neighbour's bed

Orl And what wit could wit have to excuse that?

Ros Marry to say she came to seek you there You shall never take her without her answer unless you take her without her tongue O that woman that cannot make her fault her husband's occasion let her never nurse her child herself for she will breed it like a fool!

Orl For these two hours Rosalind I will leave thee

Ros Alas! dear love, I cannot lack thee two hours

Orl I must attend the Duke at dinner by two o'clock I will be with thee again

Ros As go your ways go your ways I knew what you would prove my friends told me as much and I thought no less that flattering tongue of yours won me this but one cast away and so come death! Two o'clock is your hour?

Orl Ay sweet Rosalind

Ros By my troth and in good earnest and so God mend me and by all pretty oaths that are not dangerous if you break one jot of your promise or come one minute behind your hour I will think you the most pathological break promise and the most hollow lover and the most unworthy of her you call Rosalind that may be chosen out of the gross band of the unfaithful therefore be aware my censure and keep your promise

O I With no less religion than if thou wert indeed my Rosalind so adieu

Ros Well Time is the old justice that examines all such offenders and let Time try adieu

[Exit ORLANDO]

Cel You have simply misused our sex in your love prate we must have your doublet and hose plucked over your head and show the world what the bird hath done to her own nest

Ros O coz, coz, my pretty little coz, that thou didst know how many fathom deep I am in love! But it cannot be sounded my affection hath an unknown bottom, like the bay of Portugal

Cel Or rather, bottomless, that as fast as you pour affection in, it runs out

Ros No, that same wicked bastard of Venus that was begot of thought, conceived of spleen, and born of madness, that blind rascally boy that abuses every one's eyes because his own are out let him be judge how deep I am in love I'll tell thee, *Aliena* I cannot be out of the sight of Orlando I'll go find a shadow and sigh till he come

Cel And I'll sleep

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE II *The forest*

Enter JAKUES, LORDS, and Foresters

Jaq Which is he that I illed the deer?

1st Lord Sir, it was I

Jaq Let's present him to the Duke like a Roman conqueror and it would do well to set the deer's horns upon his head for a branch of victory Have you no song, forester, for this purpose?

1st For Yes, sir

Jaq Sing it 'tis no matter how it be in tune, so it make noise enough

SONG

1st For What shall he have that killed the deer?

His leather skin and horns to wear

Then sing him home,

The rest shall bear this burden

Take thou no scorn to wear the horn,

It was a crest ere thou wast born

Thy father's father wore it

And thy father bore it

The horn, the horn the lusty horn

Is not a thing to laugh to scorn [*Exeunt*]

SCENE III *The forest*

Enter ROSALIND and CELIA

Ros How say you now? Is it not past two o'clock? and here much Orlando!

Cel I warrant you with pure love and troubled brain, he hath taken his bow and arrows and is gone forth to sleep Look, who comes here

Enter SILVIUS

Sil My errand is to you fair youth, My gentle Phebe bid me give you this I know not the contents, but as I guess By the stern brow and waspish action Which she did use as she was writing of it, 10 It bears an angry tenour pardon me, I am but as a guiltless messenger

Ros Patience herself would startle at this letter And play the swaggerer, bear this bear all She says I am not fair that I lack manners, She calls me proud, and that she could not love me,

Were man as rare as phoenix 'Od's my will! Her love is not the hare that I do hunt Why writes she so to me? Well shepherd, well, This is a letter of your own device 20

Sil No I protest, I know not the contents Phebe did write it

Ros Come, come you are a fool And turn'd into the extremity of love I saw her hand she has a leathern hand, A freestone colour'd hand, I verily did think That her old gloves were on but 'twas her hands She has a huswife's hand, but that's no matter I say she never did invent this letter, This is a man's invention and his hand *Sil* Sure it is hers 30

Ros Why 'tis a boisterous and a cruel style, A style for challengers, why, she defies me, Like Turk to Christian women's gentle brain Could not drop forth such giant rude invention, Such Ethiop words blacker in their effect Than in their countenance Will you hear the letter?

Sil So please you, for I never heard it yet Yet heard too much of Phebe's cruelty

Ros She Phebes me mark how the tyrant writes [*Reads*]

"Art thou god to shepherd turn'd That a maiden's heart hath burn'd?" 40

Can a woman rail thus?

Sil Call you this railing?

Ros [*Reads*]

Why thy godhead laid apart, Warr'st thou with a woman's heart?"

Did you ever hear such railing?

"Whiles the eye of man did woo me That could do no vengeance to me"

Meaning me a beast

"If the scorn of your bright eyne Have power to raise such love in mine, Alack in me what strange effect Would they work in mild aspect? Whiles you chide me I did love,"

How then might your prayers move¹
 He that brings this love to thee
 Little knows this love in me
 And by him seal up thy mind
 Whether that thy youth and kind
 Will the faithful offer take
 Of me and all that I can make
 Or else by him my love deny
 And then I'll study how to die

Sil Call you this chiding?

Ros Alas poor shepherd!

Res Do you pity him? no he deserves no pity
 Wilt thou love such a woman? What to make
 thee an instrument and play false strains upon
 thee? not to be endured! Well go your way to
 her for I see love hath made thee a tame snake
 and say this to her that if she love me I charge
 her to love thee if she will not I will never have
 her unless thou entreat for her If you be a true
 lover hence and not a word for here comes
 more company

[Exit SILVIUS

Enter OLIVER

Ol Good morrow fair ones pray you if you
 know

Where in the purlieus of this forest stands
 A sheep-cote fenced about with olive trees?

Cl West of this place down in the neighbour
 bottom

The rank of osiers by the murmuring stream 80
 Left on your right hand brings you to the place
 But at this hour the house doth keep it self
 There's none within

Ol If that an eye may profit by a tongue
 Then should I know you by description
 Such garments and such years "The boy is fair
 Of female favour and bestows himself
 Like a peevish sister the woman low

And browner than her brother Are not you
 The owner of the house I did enquire for? 90

Cl It is no boast being ask'd, to say we are

Ol Orlando doth commend him to you both
 And to that youth he calls his Rosalind

He sends this bloody napkin Are you he?

Ros I am what must we understand by this?

Ol Some of my shame if you will know of me
 What man I am and how and why and where
 This handkercher was stain'd

Cl I pray you tell it

Ol When last the young Orlando parted from
 you

He left a promise to return again 100
 Within an hour and pacing through the forest
 Chewing the food of sweet and bitter fancy
 Lo, what befel! he threw his eye aside,
 And mark what object did present itself

Under an oak whose boughs were moss'd with

200

And high top bald with dry antiquity
 A wretched rammed man, mergrown with hair
 Lay sleeping on his back about his neck
 A green and gilded snake had wreathed itself
 Who with her head numble in threats approach'd
 The opening of his mouth but suddenly 111
 Seeing Orlando it unlink'd itself
 And with indentèd glides did slip away
 Into a bush under which bushes shade
 A lioness with udders all drawn dry
 Lay couching head on ground with catlike
 watch,

When that the sleeping man should stir for tis
 The royal disposition of that beast
 To prey on nothing that doth seem as dead
 This seen Orlando did approach the man 120
 And found it was his brother his elder brother
 Cl O I have heard him speak of that same
 brother

And he did render him the most unnatural
 That liv'd amongst men

Ol And well he might so do
 For well I know he was unnatural

Ros But to Orlando did he leave him there
 Food to the sack'd and hungry lioness?

Ol Twice did he turn his back and purpos'd
 30

But kindness nobler ever than revenge
 And nature stronger than his just occasion 130
 Made him give battle to the lioness
 Who quickly fell before him in which hurtling
 From miserable slumber I awaked

Cl Are you his brother?

Ros Was't you he rescued?

Cl Was't you that did so oft contrive to kill
 him?

Ol 'Twas I but tis not I I do not shame
 To tell you what I was since my conversion
 So sweetly tastes being the thing I am

Ros But for the bloody napkin?

Ol By and by
 When from the first to last betwix us two 140
 Tears our recountments had most kindly
 bathed

As how I came into that desert place
 In brief he led me to the gentle Duke
 Who gave me fresh array and entertainment
 Committing me unto my brother's love
 Who led me instantly unto his cave
 There stripp'd himself and here upon his arm
 The lioness had torn some flesh away
 Which all this while had bled and now he
 fainted

And cried in fainting upon Rosalind

Brief, I recover'd him, bound up his wound,
And, after some small space being strong at heart,

He sent me hither, stranger as I am
To tell this story, that you might excuse
His broken promise and to give this nap in
Dyed in his blood unto the shepherd youth
That he in sport doth call his Rosalind

[ROSALIND SWOONS]

Cel Why, how now, Gany mede! sweet Gany mede!

Ol Many will swoon when they do look on blood

Cel There is more in it Cousin Gany mede!

Ol Look, he recovers 161

Ros I would I were at home

Cel We'll lead you thither

[Pray you will you take him by the arm?]

Ol Be of good cheer, youth you a man! you lack a man's heart

Ros I do so I confess it Ah, sirrah, a body would think this was well counterfeited! I pray you, tell your brother how well I counterfeited Feigh-ho! 169

Ol This was not counterfeit there is too great testimony in your complexion that it was a passion of earnest

Ros Counterfeit I assure you

Ol Well then, take a good heart and counterfeit to be a man

Ros So I do but, I'faith I should have been a woman by right

Cel Come, you look paler and paler pray you, draw homewards Good sir, go with us

Ol That will I for I must bear answer back
How you excuse my brother, Rosalind 181

Ros I shall devise something but I pray you, commend my counterfeiting to him Will you go? [Exeunt]

ACT V

SCENE I The forest

Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY

Touch We shall find a time, Audrey, patience, gentle Audrey

Aud Faith, the priest was good enough, for all the old gentleman's saying

Touch A most wicked Sir Oliver, Audrey, a most vile Martext But Audrey there is a youth here in the forest lays claim to you

Aud Ay, I know who 'tis, he hath no interest in me in the world here comes the man you mean 10

Touch It is meat and drink to me to see a clown by my troth, we that have good wits

have much to answer for, we shall be flouting, we cannot hold

Enter WILLIAM

Will Good even, Audrey

Aud God ye good even, William

Will And good even to you, sir

Touch Good even, gentle friend Cover thy head cover thy head, nay, prithee be covered How old are you, friend? 20

Will Five and twenty, sir

Touch A ripe age Is thy name William?

Will William, sir

Touch A fair name Wast born I' the forest here?

Will Ay, sir, I thank God

Touch "Thank God", a good answer Art rich?

Will Faith, sir, so so

Touch "So so" is good very good, very excellent good, and yet it is not, it is but so so Art thou wise? 31

Will Ay, sir I have a pretty wit

Touch Why, thou sayest well I do now remember a saying, "The fool doth think he is wise, but the wise man knows himself to be a fool" The heathen philosopher when he had a desire to eat a grape, would open his lips when he put it into his mouth meaning thereby that grapes were made to eat and lips to open You do love this maid? 40

Will I do sir

Touch Give me your hand Art thou learned?

Will No sir

Touch Then learn this of me to have, is to have, for it is a figure in rhetoric that drink being poured out of a cup into a glass by filling the one doth empty the other, for all your writers do consent that *ipse* is he now, you are not *ipse*, for I am he

Will Which he, sir? 50

Touch He, sir that must marry this woman Therefore, you clown abandon—which is in the vulgar leave—the society—which in the boorish is company—of this female—which in the common is woman which together is, abandon the society of this female, or, clown, thou perishest, or to thy better understanding diest or to wit I kill thee, make thee away translate thy life into death thy liberty into bondage I will deal in poison with thee, or in bastinado or in steel I will bandy with thee in faction I will o'er-run thee with policy, I will kill thee a hundred and fifty ways therefore tremble and depart

Aud Do good William

Will God rest you merry, sir

Enter CORIN

Cor Our master and mistress seeks you come away away!

Touche Trip Audrey! trip Audrey! I attend I attend [*Exeunt*]

SCENE II The forest

Enter ORLANDO and OLIVER

Orl Is it possible that on so little acquaintance you should like her? that but seeing you should love her? and loving woo? and wooing she should grant? and will you persevere to enjoy her?

Oli Neither call the giddiness of it in question the poverty of her the small acquaintance my sudden wooing nor her sudden consenting but say with me I love Aliena say with her that she loves me consent with both that we may enjoy each other it shall be to your good for my father's house and all the revenue that was old Sir Rowland's will I estate upon you, and here live an I die a shepherd

Orl You have my consent Let your wedding be to-morrow thither will I invite the Duke and all his contented followers Go you and prepare Aliena for look you here comes my Rosalind

Enter ROSALIND

Ros God save you brother 20

Oli And you fair sister [*Exit*]

Ros O my dear Orlando how it grieves me to see thee wear thy heart in a scarf!

Orl It is my arm

Ros I thou hast thy heart had been wounded with the claws of a lion

Orl Wounded it is but with the eyes of a lady

Ros Did your brother tell you how I counterfeited to swoon when he showed me your handkercher? 30

Orl Ay and greater wonders than that

Ros O I know where you are nay tis true there was never any thing so sudden but the fight of two rams and Cæsar's thrasonical brass of I came saw and overcame for your brother and my sister no sooner met but they looked no sooner looked but they loved no sooner loved but they sighed no sooner sighed but they asked one another the reason no sooner knew the reason but they sought the remedy and in these degrees have they made a pair of stairs to marriage which they will climb incontinent or else be incontinent before marriage they are in the very wrath of love and they will together clubs cannot part them

Orl They shall be married to-morrow and I will bid the Duke to the nuptial But O how

bitter a thing it is to look into happiness through another man's eyes! By so much the more shall I to-morrow be at the height of heart heaviness by how much I shall think my brother happy in having what he wishes for

Ros Why then to-morrow I cannot serve your turn for Rosalind?

Orl I can live no longer by thinking

Ros I will weary you then no longer with idle talking know of me then for now I speak to some purpose that I know you are a gentleman of good conceit I speak not this that you should bear a good opinion of my knowledge inasmuch I say I know you are neither do I labour for a greater esteem than may in some little measure draw a belief from you to do yourself good and not to grace me Believe then if you please that I can do strange things I have since I was three year old conversed with a magician most profound in his art and yet not damnable If you do love Rosalind so near the heart as your gesture cries it out when your brother marries Aliena shall you marry her I know into what straits of fortune she is driven and it is not impossible to me if it appear not inconvenient to you to set her before your eyes to-morrow human as she is and without any danger

Orl Speakest thou in sober meanings?

Ros By my life I do which I tender dearly though I say I am a magician Therefore put you in your best array bid your friends for if you will be married to-morrow you shall and to Rosalind if you will 31

Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE

Look here comes a lover of mine and a lover of hers

Phe Youth you have done me much ungentleness

To show the letter that I writ to you

Ros I care not if I have it is my study To seem despiteful and ungentle to you You are there followed by a faithful shepherd Look upon him love him he worships you

Phe Good shepherd tell this youth what tis to love

Sil It is to be all made of sighs and tears And so am I for Phebe 32

Phe And I for Ganymede

Orl And I for Rosalind

Ros And I for no woman

Sil It is to be all made of faith and service

And so am I for Phebe

Phe And I for Ganymede

Orl And I for Rosalind

Ros And I for no woman

Sil It is to be all made of fantasy,
All made of passion, and all made of wishes,
All adoration, duty, and observance,
All humbleness, all patience, and impatience,
All purity, all trial, all observance,
And so am I for Phebe

Phe And so am I for Ganymede

Orl And so am I for Rosalind

Ros And so am I for no woman

Phe If thus be so, why blame you me to love you? 110

Sil If thus be so, why blame you me to love you?

Orl If thus be so, why blame you me to love you?

Ros Who do you speak to, "Why blame you me to love you?"

Orl To her that is not here, nor doth not hear

Ros Pray you, no more of this 'tis like the howling of Irish wolves against the moon [*To SILVIUS*] I will help you if I can [*To PHEBE*] I would love you if I could To-morrow meet me all together [*To PHEBE*] I will marry you, if ever I marry woman and I'll be married to-morrow [*To ORLANDO*] I will satisfy you if ever I satisfied man and you shall be married to-morrow [*To SILVIUS*] I will content you if what pleases you contents you and you shall be married to-morrow [*To ORLANDO*] As you love Rosalind meet [*To SILVIUS*] as you love Phebe meet and as I love no woman I'll meet So fare you well I have left you commands 131

Sil I'll not fail if I live

Phe Nor I

Orl Nor I

[*Exeunt*]

SCENE III The forest

Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY

Touch To-morrow is the joyful day, Audrey, to-morrow will we be married

Aud I do desire it with all my heart, and I hope it is no dishonest desire to desire to be a woman of the world Here come two of the banished Duke's pages

Enter TWO PAGES

1st Page Well met honest gentleman

Touch By my troth, well met Come, sit, sit, and a song 9

2nd Page We are for you sit: the middle

1st Page Shall we clap into it roundly without howling or spitting or saying we are hoarse, which are the only prologues to a bad voice?

2nd Page I faith: faith, and both in a tune, like two gipsies on a horse

SONG

It was a lover and his lass,
With a hey, and a ho and a hey nonino,
That o'er the green corn field did pass
In the spring time, the only pretty ring time,
When birds do sing, hey ding a ding, ding 21
Sweet lovers love the spring

Between the acres of the rye,
With a hey, and a ho and a hey nonino,
These pretty country folks would lie,
In spring time, &c

This carol they began that hour
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,
How that a life was but a flower
In spring time, &c 30

And therefore take the present time,
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,
For love is crowned with the prime
In spring time, &c

Touch Truly, young gentlemen though there was no great matter in the dirty, yet the note was very unteachable

1st Page You are deceived, sir we kept time, we lost not our time 39

Touch By my troth yes, I count it but time lost to hear such a foolish song God be wi' you, and God mend your voices! Come Audrey [*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV The forest

Enter DUKE SENIOR AMIENS, JAKES, ORLANDO, OLIVER and CELIA

Duke S Dost thou believe Orlando, that the boy

Can do all this that he hath promised?

Orl I sometimes do believe and sometimes do not

As those that fear they hope, and know they fear

Enter ROSALIND, SILVIUS and PHEBE

Ros Patience once more, whiles our compact is urged

You say if I bring in your Rosalind,
You will bestow her on Orlando here?

Duke S That would I had I kingdoms to give with her

Ros And you say you will have her, when bring her?

Orl That would I, were I of all kingdoms king

Ros You say you'll marry me if I

Phe That will I should I die the hour

As we do trust they'll end in true delights

A dance

EPILOGUE

Ros It is not the fashion to see the lady the epilogue but it is no more unhandsome than to see the lord the prologue. If it be true that good wine needs no bush 'tis true that a good play needs no epilogue yet to good wine they do use good bushes and good plays prove the better by the help of good epilogues. What a case am I in then that am neither a good epilogue nor cannot insinuate with you in the behalf of a good play? I am not furnished like a beggar therefore to

beg will not become me my way is to conjure you and I'll begin with the women I charge you O women, for the love you bear to men, to like as much of this play as please you and I charge you O men for the love you bear to women—a I perceive by your snoring none of you hates them—that between you and the women the play may please. If I were a woman I would kiss as many of you as had beards that pleased me complexions that liked me and breaths that I defied not and I am sure as many as have good beards or good faces or sweet breaths will for my kind offer when I make curtsy bid me farewell
(Exeunt)

